

# Demon's Diary

(魔天记)

Chapter

001-190

Wang Yu

(忘语)

## Story Description:

Liu Ming, since he was young, lived in a savage prison named Savage Island where the prisoners aren't controlled by any guard or security. When the island sinks due to "mysterious" events, only a handful of people survive – those survivors are then pursued by the government.

On the other hand, two practitioners are worrying about what will happen to them because the young master that they were supposed to protect had died.

What will happen?

Original Story can be found here: [Link](#)

# Chapter 1: Escapee from Savage Island

In a remote jungle of Da Xuan Country, nestled between the Chu State and Whitewater City, a thin and weak figure leaned against a thick tree trunk, both his legs apart in a relaxed manner.

Shockingly, the figure belonged to a 13 or 14 year old teenager.

Aside from his unusually pale face, the boy had fairly common facial features. His clothes were loose fitting and by his side a bright shining steel sword was carelessly thrown.

The sword, although shiny, was also stained with spots of dried black blood.

A strip of cloth was wrapped multiple times around the teenager's shoulder forming a makeshift tourniquet, even though it was tight fresh blood still leaked out.

Closing his eyes, the young man became motionless against the trunk of the tree as if he was taking a nap.

Suddenly, a slight "Shaa...shaa..." noise came from within the jungle. Something was rapidly approaching the young man.

The young man opened his eyes and jumped up while his toe instinctively flicked to the side.

"Bang!"

The steel sword shot up and rested itself snugly within the young man's palm.

The young man looked towards the direction of the sound and without hesitation leapt in the other direction. With a few steps, he disappeared within the forest.

After a while, a group of black-armored warriors came out from the forest in a tight battle formation.

They were only 20 warriors, but everyone in the group was tall and sturdy, with looks that matched those of seasoned veterans. It was clear

that they were soldiers who were used to bloodshed and the like.

They came out from the side of the forest. With a low grunt from one of them, all 20 of them stopped and stood, perfectly straight, at the spot.

At the same time, one of the young warriors stepped forward hastily and squatted down in front of where the young one was. Using his hands, he quickly dug through the teen's resting place before soon standing up.

"Wang General, the fugitive has only recently fled. If we were to leave now, we might be able to catch him." The warrior reported to the only member within the group that was not wearing a black helmet and was instead showing off his bald head.

While the warriors were relatively tall, compared to this two meter giant next to them, they were shorter by quite a bit. They were like children standing in front of an adult.

"Hmph, there is no need to chase him; we've already secured the surrounding cities. No matter how cunning this brat is, he won't be able to escape. To that side, General Situ has already been waiting for a long time, all we have to do is to slowly make our way over to him." The giant snorted, staring in the direction the young man escaped to.

"Sir, this is a huge criminal that the state demanded be apprehended. If we capture him, we will have accomplished something great. Are we really going to give our prize away to General Situ?" An armored warrior asked blankly after hesitating for a while.

"Something great?? No matter. Whether General Situ gets our prize or not will depend on if he has the capability required to capture the fugitive. Regardless, let's slow down a bit so that we might be able to catch them both tired." The giant wiped his bald head, speaking emotionlessly.

"Sir, what do you mean by that? General Situ has far more people than we do, even if that young man knows a few skills, how would it be possible for him to stand against General Situ?" Astounded, the young soldier stared at his commanding officer.

“Yu Xin, you’ve been by my side for quite some time now, and I can tell that you are quite strong. However, if you were wanted by the government, what is the most you would be able to face and still be able to get away safely?” The gigantic man didn’t answer the young soldier directly, instead he replied with a deep question himself.

TL: Yu Xin is not an important name – no need to remember it.

“If I were fighting general detectives, then I could handle 7 or 8 of them without a problem. But if the numbers got over 10, then I would start having problems.” The young soldier wasn’t sure where his superior was going with his question but he had answered regardless.

“7 or 8! Hah. Ever since the arrest warrant for this kid was issued, the number of general detectives killed while trying to capture him has already surpassed that paltry sum tenfold!” The giant roared with laughter, coldly explaining why he had asked his original question.

“The general detectives have been trained by specialists, and even though they cant compare to us Black Tiger Guard, they definitely aren’t as weak as the average person!” The young soldier’s face had a look of disbelief, he couldn’t understand how the youngster was that strong.

“This youth, he has escaped from Savage Island, which in of itself is no small feat. The island was originally designed as a prison for the most diabolical of people; each prisoner locked away there possesses great talent and power. Never should they be underestimated.” The giant stated coldly.

“What, he escaped from Savage Island!?”

The young soldier sucked in a breath, and suddenly another thought came to him. Hastily, he asked,

“Sir, I’ve heard that Savage Island sank overnight. But didn’t they say that all of the prisoners sank with the island? The infamous Dead Sea surrounds it; a special Ebony Boat is required to traverse the waters: Nothing else is capable of staying afloat.”

“I’m not too sure of that myself, but other than that young man, at least

10 others escaped from the Dead Sea. If it weren't for the fact that we accidentally found one of escapee and interrogated him for information, I'm afraid that the Courts would not have known about this at all; consequently, the Black Tiger Guard would not have been sent to patrol the place either. No matter though, that young man we have to capture is the weakest criminal that escaped. Although he set up false trails and set us back half a month, all we need to do now is to head straight and we'll find him and once we do, he's as good as dead." Shaking his head, the giant slapped the back of his black spear.

"Of course, who doesn't know that Sir is ranked within top 100 in the entire state?" The young soldier praised as his respect for the taller soldier floated onto his face.

"Stop flattering me! We should get going!" Waving his fanlike hand, the giant commanded rather bluntly for the soldiers to move out.

Saluting, the young soldier returned to his spot amongst the others once more.

Immediately the soldiers began return to formation, each soldier quickly disappeared into the forest.

One cup of tea later, the soldiers left the jungle and entered into a small but spacious meadow. The sight that greeted left all of them stunned.

TL: Cup of tea later = time it takes for tea to cool/finish infusing

The meadow, that was originally lush green, blooming with plant life, was dyed crimson!

In the middle of all the blood, the corpses of similarly black armored soldiers were scattered across the ground.

On each of their faces a horrified expression remained, as if they had seen a truly dreadful sight before they died.

Each corpse had a thumb sized hole on their throat with blood still pouring out.

"There are 30 corpses altogether here, all of them under General Situ's

command. It would seem that no one was spared, however General Situ's body is not amongst the pile here."

The young soldier named Yu Xin reported with a pale and disturbed face after he quickly moved towards and examined the corpses.

The giant's face dropped as he listened to the report. With a glance to the other side of the meadow, something had caught his eye. He quickly went over.

The other soldiers followed him without hesitation but they were much more cautious than before and were on guard.

The giant quickly thundered to the tree and after looking down, his face twisted in anger and grief.

There was a tree there and under it was the withered body of a black armored soldier with a steel sword piercing through his throat, pinning him to the tree.

Near the tree, a long but pale silver blade was stabbed into the ground.

The rigid hands of the middle aged man grasped at the sword's blade. Every single finger bore multiple cuts and his eyes stared straight ahead even though his breath had ceased long ago.

.....

Liu Ming was jumping through the forest quickly with his entire body feeling sore, even the spoils of his battle, another silver blade, began to feel heavier in his hand.

Although he had trained himself in swordsmanship for 5-6 years, and thus was able to kill all of the warriors that were waiting for him, the ferocity of the warriors was beyond his expectations.

Even after he used a hit and run tactic to kill all of the warriors, the leader of the warriors kept on pursuing him without fear for his own life.

This forced him to use a secret technique he learned on Savage Island, one that left a burned his potential and reopened his old wound while he could barely kill that leader.

TL: Yes burning his potential (aka he'd be less able/agile for another few days)

Using something like that overworked his still adolescent body; he couldn't last much longer at this rate.

When Liu Ming thought about the effects, he couldn't help but take a glance at his shoulder.

The layered cloth strips wrapping shoulder had been soaked with blood and at the same time, waves of pain kept on pulsing from his arm.

Even with his stubborn personality, enduring the burning after effects was simply too much.

Black Tiger Warriors deserved their title as Da Xuan's elites; they were far superior to the normal government detectives that had gone after him.

The him right now could only hope that the slaughter from before made the other Black Tiger Warriors wary of him; too scared to pursue him closely.

Once one or two days passed, the 'Air Closure Technique' after effects would also wear off and he could jump into a nearby river to escape.

Even though Liu Ming wasn't too old, he had learnt quite a few rare and non-mainstream techniques.

TL: Non-mainstream = not popular/not extremely useful in a lot of circumstances

If he hadn't, even with someone protecting him on Savage Island, he wouldn't have been able to survive there for seven to eight years as a child.

As Liu Ming thought back, a scarred face of a man floated before his eyes. Even though his demeanour was quite ferocious, when Liu Ying saw it his heart felt warm.

Suddenly Liu Ming's face turned dark and his body that was speeding forward suddenly twisted itself to shift to the left and curled into a ball during the process.

At the same, “shou shou” sounds rang ahead of him.

A dozen half a foot long crossbow bolts came shooting out in front of him, whizzing out of the forest and with a couple of flashes, barely passed by the young man and pierced into a grey white tree behind him.

The bolts were coldly shining under the sun: it was obvious that they were made of high grade steel. Most of the bolts were stuck to the tree and were quivering slightly.

“Who is it?”

The young man took a tumble into a nearby bush and pressed his silver blade in front of him as he coldly called out.

“Pretty good. No wonder you were able to live for so long under the pursuit of Black Tiger Warriors. But now that you’ve met us two, prepare to die.” A sharp feminine voice came from ahead and two shadows, one of a man and the other of a woman, flickered out from a tree ahead of the young man.



## Chapter 2: Desperate Teenager

The woman was big and stout and looked around 30 years old. She wore crimson red clothes and had a giant red flower in her hair. Her face was rough and ugly, in her hand was a mace whose length was nearly the height of a grown man.

The man next to her was around 40 years old and had an ordinary looking face. He wore blue silk robes and had a short sword hanging around his waist in a yellow wooden sheath. In his hand was a 3 foot long crossbow. It was not loaded since he had just fired it at Liu Ming as an opening attack.

“You two are not from the Black Tiger Guards, right?” Liu Ming took a deep breath and asked, as he eyed the two people closely.

After living on the Savage Island for such a long period, he had learned a long time ago to probe for his enemy’s weakness before starting a fight.

His question was both a probe as to how strong they were and a way to stall for time.

In actuality, as soon as their gazes met, Liu Ming’s brain had already started working.

The woman, with her thick arms and heavy footstep, is obviously a strength type. She is possibly a bit inferior in speed but with that weapon in her hand, even the slightest contact cannot be allowed. The man has white and steady hands and a shady look. He most likely has some kind of special skill. Against him, full attention and caution is required...

The other two naturally did not know that the weak looking teenager could be thinking about so much information in such a short time. But this was their first time facing such a young opponent and they could not help but reveal an expression of interest.

The man grabbed a new bolt with one hand and reloaded his crossbow that had multiple vents, while saying icily, “Liu Yang Zong, from the Yang City in the south. Seven years ago, he deceived the king and was sent to

the jail in Nan Lan County; he later died of sickness in jail. His son however, was given a chance to live due to his young age although he would have to live out the rest of his life imprisoned on Savage Island. However, a month ago, Savage Island sunk to the bottom of the Dead Sea for reasons unknown. Most of the prisoners died in the waters, despite that only Liu Ming and 11 other people escaped from the Dead Sea. Now the Ministry of Justice has issued out silver ranked bounties for the escaped convicts: dead or alive. Am I right?”

The man’s voice faded, as the red woman next to him let out a sharp laugh, “Little brat, this man died 7 days ago by our hands. Was he your comrade?”

She casually tore a leather bag from her waist and threw it on the ground.

Dok. The bag flipped around and out rolled a bloody head.

The head was covered by quite a bit of facial hair making him look around the age of 40. The head had a coarse and dark expression while the mouth hung limply open.

Liu Ming glanced at the head and his heart instantly dropped. He whispered a name, “Steel-head...”

“So, I wasn’t wrong. Looks like you do recognize him. Brat, if you quietly let us arrest you, the two of us can give you some leeway and you might survive after being judged. However if you decide to make a move now, we will kill you without fail,” Said the man dressed in blue after he finished reloading his crossbow.

“The two of you know so much about me already so you two are probably from the Ministry of Justice. What level are you two? Using such empty promises to deceive me; are you lying to me because I’m young? The Imperial law cannot be defied. With the number of Black Tiger Guards I’ve killed, I’m afraid that even if the king himself was in my defense, I’d still be hacked into pieces.” Liu Ming blinked his eyes and did not believe in the man in blue at all

The man snorted at his answer and he neither denied nor confirmed

anything.

The red woman to the side laughed and said, "It's unbelievable that this child is so young and still understands the Imperial laws so well; the people from Savage Island are extraordinary. Even if they are young, you cannot underestimate them. You are right that he, my husband, and I, the wife, serve the Ministry of Justice, specifically, we're at the Silver Scale level. Little brother, when you die and reach the Huang Quan, don't blame us for bullying the weak. Husband, do it!"

TL: Huang Quan = Chinese interpretation of where souls go

When the ugly woman finished talking, her expression suddenly turned cold. She attacked, the swing of her mace whistled fiercely through the air as it sped towards the young man.

Despite her large body, she was abnormally agile; even though the mace in her hand was gigantic, she swang it as if it were weightless.

With perfect coordination, the man in blue on the other side lifted the giant crossbow and fired a dozen bolts that shot forth like cold rays of light, towards Liu Ming's sides.

The young man grimaced. If he dodged to the left or right, he would be jumping straight in front of the crossbow bolts but if he remained in the center, then he would have to face the attack of the ugly woman.

Their coordination was flawless, it was no wonder that the two were husband and wife.

As Liu Ming looked at the scene, his face changed. However his mind continue to move, in the next moment he took in a breath of air, as his arms clutched tightly onto his silver blade. His sword became a streak of light as he swung it at the ugly woman's head.

Even when face to face with the giant mace, the boy paid it no heed. It was basically trading fatal hits.

The ugly woman's eyes narrowed. Although she knew that her foe was not trying die together with her, she was not willing to actually risk her life. She was forced to change her stature and pull her mace back a little

in order to block the silver sword.

Liu Ming's flicked his wrist and the silver sword retracted in a blur to prevent collision with the mace. Then , he viciously swung the sword twice, once to the left and once to the right.

Dang Dang. Two bolts that were swerving towards Liu Ming were instantly knocked away.

"Brat!" From a distance, when the man in blue saw his bolts stopped, he could not bite back the curse. Grasping something at his waist his waist, he once again started to reload the crossbow.

The special move he used earlier to secretly control the path of the bolts had dealt with countless strong enemies; he never would have guessed that it would be ineffective against the young man.

The ugly woman was also surprised but quickly regained her focus. She furiously swung her mace and started up the battle with the young man once more.

Every time she swung the massive weapon, wind would rage alongside it. Her whole body grew huge in ferocity, as if transforming into a humanoid beast. Her strength was unstoppable.

In contrast, the Liu Ming's silver sword did not clash with the mace at all. It transformed into a ray of silver light as he circled around the ugly woman, trying to avoid most of the attacks.

Although he was at a disadvantage, every attack of his was aimed at a vital spot of the ugly woman. And every time, she had to slow down her offence in order to protect herself.

In such a situation, even though the woman's martial prowess was far above Liu Ming's, she yelled out in frustration.

But Liu Ming did not care; he strengthened his resolve and continued to endlessly dance around the ugly woman.

Looking at him right now, he almost seemed relaxed. However, in reality he had once again used a secret technique to squeeze out the last bit of

strength from his body. Otherwise, his weak body would have been blown away by the violent winds created by the mace, let alone attack the woman.

From afar, as the man in blue saw the situation, his heart grew in shock.

He was fully aware of how powerful his wife was.

Although they would often practice with each other, he would never dare to fight directly in such a straightforward manner. But this boy, he was still in his teens and he could actually accomplish such a thing.

It was as if the boy started training martial arts while in his mother's womb.

To his knowledge, some wealthy nobles would have their descendant train from an early age in body strengthening techniques. They would use various medicinal baths and have them ingest elixirs nonstop, but even the most intense training would not produce someone as strong as the young man in front of him.

Fortunately, the young man was still young and his strength was obviously not enough. If another 3 or 4 years passed, even if the husband and wife fought as hard as they could, they wouldn't have been able to safely get away.

Of course, the young man would not have that chance now that they had found him.

As the man in blue thought of this, his killing intent rose even more. He lifted his crossbow with one hand and with his other hand he took out his short sword from its wooden sheath.

The short sword was gray and was almost weightless: it was made out of bone!

With the slightest motion, the man stealthily rushed to the battlefield without a sound.

Liu Ming only took a glance and was able to see the man in blue's

deceptive actions. His already tense heart sank deeper into despair.

He could barely face one of them alone. If the two of them attacked together, then his life would truly end here.

Looks like he couldn't help but risk his life once more.

He thought up to this point and his heart no longer had any hesitation. Against the giant mace, he actually stopped dodging. Raising his sword with his arm, he whispered, "Through the throat.."

Veins popped in Liu Ming's arm and his arm suddenly grew by at least a full circle.

The silver sword made some strange movements, transforming into a silver ray that directly pierced the woman's throat. The speed of it was vastly higher than previously demonstrated.

The woman was startled by the scene and wanted to retract her mace to defend but it was too late.

Though she was in rage, her heart made a decision . She relaxed both her arms and threw her mace straight at the young man's chest.

In her mind, if she tried to use deadly attacks, he would most likely retreat backwards to protect his life.

But the corner of Liu Ming's eyes only made a slight twitch and his movements did not change at all. He sucked in a large gulp of air, and then twisted his waist so that his chest became unbelievably flat.

Clang.

The giant mace gouged into the young man's chest, leaving behind deep grooves of blood. Blood splattered out immediately.

But Liu Ming's expression did not change at all, as if the one that took such a heavy hit was not him. With a twist of his hands, the silver sword was pulled from the hole in the woman's neck.

The woman let out a scream with both hands clutching her throat. Her fat body twitched endlessly on the ground.

All of this happened lightning fast!

The man in blue just made it to the front lines and saw everything clearly. He roared in shock and hefted his crossbow to fire 10 bolts. At the same time, the bone dagger in his hand immediately stabbed toward the empty area next to Liu Ming.

As Liu Ming was about to deal another strike at the woman, his intuition warned him of great danger. Without thinking, he instantly turned his shoulder to the side.

Blood flashed and an invisible sharp thing grazed past the Liu Ming's face, cutting some of his hair that was flying around.

"Enchanted weapons, you are a practitioner!" With a flip of Liu Ming's body, he landed on his feet. As he gave a deeper look at the object in the man's hand, he couldn't help but cry out.

From the dagger in the man's hand, several abnormal rays came out, flashing with a faint white light.

# Chapter 3: Practitioner

“Brat, you dare hurt my wife! You’re definitely dead now.” The man’s face was shown to be somewhat twisted under the reflection of the bone sword in his hand. He quickly threw away the crossbow in his other hand, took out a red pill and shoved it into his mouth.

Obviously that logic-defying attack wasn’t something that he could easily perform.

Seeing that, Liu Ming screamed, “Projectile incoming.” He then threw a white blob towards the still twitching woman on the ground while leaping backwards and scrambled into the forest besides him.

Seeing this, the man paused before going into a fit of rage. He couldn’t leave the woman on the ground alone and so had to shift sideways and use the bone sword to stab into the air in front the incoming projectile.

With a hong, the white blob was hit by an invisible thing mid-air and exploded.

A glob of gray-white powder spread out and covered everything within a few meters.

Seeing this, the blue-robed man became cautious and didn’t dare let the powder touch him. He quickly held the bone sword in front of his chest. His other hand lightly pushed outwards while he said the two words: “Elemental Wall.”

With the words, the bone sword let out a faint light as an invisible air wave came from it and pushed away the surrounding powder.

Then, the man quickly knelt down and ran his finger across the powder-covered floor. He smelled his finger and immediately stood up in a fit of rage.

“It was only common flour. Brat, I will cut you into a thousand pieces.”

The blue-robed man cursed a few more times before running over to check on the ugly woman.



The woman was tightly holding onto her neck with both hands. Her breath had already slowed to become indiscernible; there was no hope in her recovery.

“Darling, rest easy. I am going to kill that brat and have him accompany you to the afterlife.”

The blue-robed man gritted his teeth as he spoke. He stood up once again and tightened his grip onto the bone dagger. He yelled “Lighten” and ran in the direction that the young man ran off in.

His movements changed to become much faster than before: he seems just like a ghost flashing through the field.

Although his body did not have much Yuan Li, he was drawing support from the red pill that he ingested earlier; he could use four or five more spells for another quarter of an hour. This was more than enough to chase and kill any normal person.

TL: Think of Yuan Li as a special strength and

.....

Liu Ming was violently running in the forest while his legs felt heavier and heavier. At the same, his chest was burning as the violent activity made blood flow profusely from the wound.

As for the shoulder wound from before, it had completely reopened, leaving half of his body numb.

Liu Ming had no intention of stopping to bind his wounds and kept running towards a single direction.

Suddenly, his eyes lit up as the dense shrubbery was replaced by a large field.

At the end of the field was a huge river that had roaring waters flowing through.

Seeing this, Liu Ming felt a sense of happiness but suddenly his eyes darkened. With a stumble, he almost fell down.

With a sense of urgency, he quickly bit his tongue, causing a hint of

blood to fill his mouth. Only then was he able to regain his senses and not fall.

But right then, the bitter voice of the blue-robed man came from the forest behind him.

“Brat, where do you think you’re going!”

Right when the voice died down, the blue-robed man came out from behind a tree and quickly ran toward Liu Ming.

Looking back, Liu Ming saw how fast the blue-robed man was coming and quickly threw his silver blade backwards while sprinting towards the river.

The blue-robed man flicked his bone sword and deflected the incoming Silver Blade. In addition, he didn’t so much as pause because of the parry.

With one running and the other chasing, the two ran forward a dozen meters.

After another few leaps, Liu Ming finally got to the side of the river. Making a huge jump, he was about to land right into the river.

Seeing that, the blue-robed man had only a few meters left to catch up to Liu Ming but he knew that he wouldn’t make it before Liu Ming sank into the river. Thus, he used all of his Yuan Li and pushed them into his bone sword.

Instantly, the bone sword shone so bright that it hurt to look straight at it!

The man roared lowly and slashed forward, causing an almost invisible sword projection to jump out of the sword. With one blink, it strangely got right behind Liu Ming and plunged into him.

“Pu!”

Liu Ming was pierced through the stomach and dropped heavily into the river. Afterwards, he disappeared under a white wave.

Only then did the blue-robed man get to the side of the river, and seeing the raging waves, he furrowed his brow.

He believed that combined with his bone sword's attack and the ferocity of the river, Liu Ming had no chance of survival. However, he couldn't be so sure without seeing the corpse.

But, he didn't know how to swim and this river water's power was enough to run the corpse to a far, far place.

The man thought about it for a while and then looked at the bone sword in his hand.

The weapon, which was called a Practitioner Weapon, no longer had the bright shine it did before and was back to its original state.

The blue-robed man lingered for a moment and when Liu Ming's body didn't float, he could only leave in frustration.

.....

Three days later, at a river along the border between Chu Zhou and Feng Yun state, two men in yellow robes, one tall and one short, were blankly staring at a well-dressed corpse.

Besides the corpse in front of the two, there were seven or eight more corpses that all had grey jumpsuits. However, unlike the well-dressed corpse, these corpses all had horrible wounds such as being cut in half or having their head bashed in.

"What do we do? Since young master died so easily, what do we say to our family head?" The speaker was a short and skinny man that had a sword behind his back. His face was quite narrow and his eyes were triangular, giving off an impression of him being quite deadly. However, his face was full of worry as he asked his companion.

"Gu Lao San, if you ask me, who do I ask? Who knew that this 'young master' was so stupid. To let a thief get close to him and cut his throat when he's a low level practitioner. Even though we had quite a few spirit medicines that the family head gave us, he still didn't have a chance of survival." The tall companion had a square face but also showed an frustrated face.

TL: Lao San = Third brother – Usually not related by blood

“Guan Lao Da, no matter how stupid he is, he’s still the family head’s adopted son. In addition, the family head paid a huge price to get the place for him in the ceremony. Now that he died halfway there, how are we going to tell the family head!? I fear that us getting beat is inevitable.” Gu Lao San sighed as a vague sense of fear appears on his face.

TL: Lao Da = First brother or Elder brother

“Hmpn, If getting beat is enough punishment for this; I’ll be burning incense.” Guan Lao Da face muscles shuddered and said a sentence that Gu Lao San did not expect.

TL: In china, you burn incense for the dead so hes implying they are going to die.

“Guan Lao Da, what do you mean by that? You and I are true middle level practitioners. Even if the family head loved his adopted son dearly.... Don’t tell me that we really have to repay this with our lives?” Gu Lao San looks at his fat companion with his eyes wide.

“You think this youngster’s identity is simply the adopted son of the head? Although this ‘young master’ has a spiritual pulse, his attitude is horrible and he’s quite brutal. He has almost no chance to approach the family head. Why do you think such a person would be adopted by our family head!? Let me tell you. This ‘young master’ is the family head’s illegitimate child born from a mistress. The ‘adopted son’ just an excuse for this kid to become the family head’s son.” Guan Lao Da sneered as Gu La San stared dumbstruck at him.

“What? ‘Young master’ is really the family head’s own flesh and blood? Guan Lao Da, how do you know such a crucial thing?” The thin person shuddered as he started to stutter.

“Whatever, I guess there is no reason to hide it from you now. You know that my relationship with family head’s wife’s personal maid was pretty good. Once she protested about the family head’s injustices and with a slip of her tongue, she spoke this secret to me. This could not be fake!” Guan Lao Da sighed.

“So it is like that. I was thinking that even though the Barbarian Ghost

Sect was ranked quite back in the largest of Sects in Da Xuan Country, the Spiritual Opening Ceremony is quite expensive. Why would our Bai Clan let someone that isn't closely related to the family take that spot. If the kid actually had their spiritual pulse opened, he would be a true Spiritual Student and become much, much more powerful than either of us. If he gets some special chance and becomes a Spiritual Master, the even if the current emperor sees him, the emperor would have to greet him with much respect." Finally, Gu Lao San realized the inside story.

"Spiritual Students aren't that easy to become! Not only do you have to have a Spiritual Pulse, you can't be older than 15 when you participate in the Spiritual Opening Ceremony. Every year, only a handful of participants pass the ceremony and a majority of them die in the ceremony. Even if one luckily survives, one has to work under the Sect as a normal practitioner for twenty years. Head's decision to send his son this time was probably a bet. Even though Bai Clan had quite a few Spiritual Pulse members, most of them have failed in the Spiritual Opening Ceremony. Those that survived are stuck in the Sect and being used as raw labor. Only Lady Yan had a success Spiritual Opening and became a Sky Moon Sect's Spiritual Student. Unfortunately, Lady Yan is a girl and will marry someone one day. Head definitely wants his own son to become a Spiritual Student so that Bai Clan can keep it's Practitioner Clan status for another few dozen years." Guan Lao Da explained even more.

"Looks like family head put great hope into this young master. But the more hope put into this young master, the more chance that we'll die when we go back. How about let's escape from Da Xuan Country and never return to Bai Clan. With our status as Middle Tier Practitioners, we'd be respected everywhere." Gu Lao San's eyes rolled quickly and he stated through closed teeth.

# Chapter 4: Bai Clan

“Ha! Leave the Da Xuan Country? You really think the heart nourishing pill given to us by the Family Head was Spiritual Medicine. Think about what happened to the people that betrayed the Bai Clan before. In addition, our families are both still living in the Bai Clan. If we leave, how are they going to live? If I remember correctly, you married a beautiful lady last year and she became pregnant earlier this year. According to doctor Zhang, there’s an eighty percent chance it will be a boy.” Guan Lao Da spoke loudly, but his expression was grave.

“This...” Gu Lao San heard this and felt as if cold water was poured onto his head. He stood motionless without a word.

“If it really does not work, I do have a desperate plan. Though the chances to live do not exceed twenty percent. This plan will also use up all the savings we’ve had throughout the years.” Guan Lao Da’s eyes flashed for a bit before saying this.

“Use up all our savings and still only have a twenty percent chance to survive?” Hearing this, Gu Lao San’s face became bitter.

“Hmph. If I didn’t have some relationship to the Family Head’s main wife, even this small chance would not be here. If you are unwilling, I will not force you.” Boss Guan said calmly.

“You misunderstand, Guan Lao Da. How could I refuse? If it can preserve our lives, using all our wealth is not a big deal.” Gu Lao San said quickly in shock and smiled apologetically.

“If you understand, then great! Let’s not waste time, before the news go back to the clan, we need to sneak back in order to prepare quickly.” Boss Guan’s expression relaxed a bit.

This time, Gu Lao San only nodded his head, not daring to show any unwanted expressions.

Then, the two discussed a little more in front of the new grave. From his chest, Guan Lao Da pulled out a pair of green gloves made of unknown

materials and shouted.

From the pair of green gloves, a layer of bright white light rushed toward the ground in front of him.

Boom.

Soil and countless wild grasses flew in different directions and a three feet deep pit appeared in front of the two.

Gu Lao San moved and circled around the pit before kicking the corpses into it.

When he walked to the young man's corpse, he hesitated a bit before reaching behind his back and pulling his sword out of its sheath.

With a swipe of his finger over the sword, a green light scattered from its surface.

With a twist of Gu Lao San's wrist, he prepared to use his sword to do something to the corpse.

However, although Guan Lao Da was simply watching from the side, his ears twitched and his expression changed. He turned toward the river and said, "Who is it? Who dares to sneak around and eavesdrop on us!"

As soon as he finished talking, Boss Guan moved his arm. On his fist, a light shone and a frightening air mass flew out.

A muffled noise!

About a 100 feet away, the underbrush started to shake violently. A weak figure crawled out, before lying on the ground motionless.

Guan Lao Da saw this and walked over. With a kick, he flipped over the weak looking figure to have him face up.

Surprisingly, it was a young man with his eyes shut. His clothes were in tatters and he was completely unconscious.

"Could it be he came from the river? Looks like I don't even have to do anything and he still won't live for much longer." Boss Guan gave the young man another glance and relaxed after confirming there was no

threat.

“Still, hurry up and finish him off. What we just said cannot be leaked out.” Hearing that, Gu Lao San relaxed besides the hole, but he still called for a murderous act without hesitation.

“You don’t need to tell me that, I know. Hm, this kid’s appearance...” Guan Lao Da was slightly annoyed at Gu Lao San and the gloves on his fist started to shine once more. But as the light swept across the young man’s face, a shocking face appeared.

“What’s happening, what’s wrong with his appearance?” As Gu Lao San saw Guan Lao Da lower his glove, Gu Lao San was naturally curious.

“If you come over, you’ll know!” Guan Lao Da pulled his fist back and waved Gu Lao San over with a strange expression.

Seeing that, Gu Lao San’s curiosity grew. He didn’t think much as sheathed the sword in his hand and walked over to Guan Lao Da.

“Who is this kid and why does he look exactly like young master?” After the thin man saw the young man’s appearance, he couldn’t help but exclaim in shock.

“It’s somewhat close but his face is somewhat pale. His brows are also much thicker and he has many scars on his face. In addition, his skin is somewhat rough and much different to young master’s smooth skin of never having to work hard.” Guan Lao Da took a breath and observed closely before coming to a conclusion.

“There are a lot of people that have similar appearances in this world. It isn’t too weird to meet someone that has an appearance similar to young master. In addition, now that young master’s dead, no matter how close this kid looks like young master, it’s useless since young master had a spiritual pulse and he’d be a practitioner like you and me.” Gu Lao San also calmed down and carefully analyzed the situation.

“However, if this kid has a spiritual pulse, I have a better plan of preserving our lives. However, I don’t think that there’s such a coincidence in this world. For Practitioning Clans, they borrow the power



of their blood relations in order to give birth to ones with Spiritual Pulses. For normal people, there are only one in a thousand that have a Spiritual Pulse. In addition, even if a normal person knows that they have a Spiritual Pulse, without enough resources of methods of training, they can't possibly become practitioners. Remember us? As soon as we realized that we had Spiritual Pulses, we decided to join the Bai Clan and thus we could get to the height we are at today." Guan Lao Da was still lamenting over his future as he said that.

"That's right. Those that have been sent to this ceremony were the best of the best in the Practitioning Clans. Thinking about that, we have no chance to beat those who were born into the Bai Clan." Gu Lao San didn't think much as he responded.

"Nothing we say helps right now. Let's first try our best to keep our lives. Seeing that this kid is quite young, I'll leave him with an intact body." Guan Lao Da didn't say much more and tensed his arm up. On the tip of his hand were nearly invisible green sparkles.

Naturally, Gu Lao San had no objections to the killing of this kid.

With a shake of his arm, Guan Lao Da's greenish fist landed silently on the young man's Dan Tian.

TL: Dan Tian – <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dantian>

Even though this attack seemed extremely weak, Guan Lao Da had used the power of his practitioner weapon and the power within the strike was enough to shatter the kid's internal organs and thus take his life within seconds.

As soon as Gu Lao San saw the green light on Guan Lao Da's fists, he turned around and was about to "manage" his young master's corpse.

But right then, a surprised yelp came from behind him:

"No way, this kid has Yuan Li. He has a Spiritual Pulse."

Guan Lao Da's voice was quite shaken as he called out.

Hearing that, Gu Lao San quickly looked backwards.

He saw Guan Lao Da holding his fist while the green light on his fist had completely disappeared.

However, on the young man's stomach, a ring of near invisible white light was silently pulsing and looked as if it was about to die out at any time.

"Yuan Li Protection. This kid definitely has a Spiritual Pulse and probably has quite a decent Yuan Li foundation too." Gu Lao San was quite stunned.

"Haha, this time, it's a true miracle. Gu Lao San, we don't need to go back to Bai Clan anymore. With this kid, we can live our lives without worry." Guan Lao Da stared blankly at the kid who was still in a coma before laughing freely. A hint of insanity was visible on his face.

"Guan Lao Da, what do you mean. Why does this kid having a Spiritual Pulse save our lives?" Gu Lao San blinked his eyes and was still quite confused...

"Why does the Family Head want to kill us?" Guan Lao Da stopped laughing and asked back.

"Because young master died while we were supposed to protect him!" Gu Lao San looked even more confused.

"Hehe, but isn't young master right here!?" Guan Lao Da pointed at the kid in front of him and sneered.

"What, you're going to..." Gu Lao San wasn't stupid and realized the intentions of Guan Lao Da immediately. However, his face became much paler than before.

"Correct. We will be taking this kid to The Barbarian Ghost Sect and leave him with the person in charge of collecting those that will be undertaking the ceremony. Afterwards, we can go back to Bai Clan and say that we already sent the person there. Once Head receives a mail that young master was actually sent to the Sect, we won't get punished and we might even be rewarded." Guan Lao Da was extremely calm as he said those words.

“That does work but this kid doesn’t look too much like young master and what would happen if he gets exposed. In addition, we don’t know where he’s from, so how would he agree to this?” Gu Lao San’s face darkened as he thought about the possibilities of failure.

“Hmph, what are you afraid of? Once this kid gets into the Barbarian Ghost Sect, it’ll be a couple of years before the Bai Clan sees him again. In addition, seeing how dangerous the Spiritual Opening Ceremony is, this kid doesn’t even have a chance of survival since he hasn’t gone through any of the preparatory training. If he does die, then we’re basically free and worriless. As for his appearance, did you forget what you did before you became a practitioner?

“He doesn’t have to look perfectly like young master, just being similar is enough. The sect only has a picture of the young master a year ago, having some sort of change is a normal thing.” Guan Lao Da said with confidence.

“And if he really completes the Spiritual Opening Ceremony and becomes a Spiritual Student, what should we do?” Gu Lao San was still hesitant.

“Becoming a Spiritual Student? Are you still asleep? In the past years, only a few disciples became Spiritual Students. In addition, as soon as we get back, we’ll try to get rid of the poison that Head gave us and then try to leave with our families. Even if that kid doesn’t die and does something, what does it have to do with us? For now, as long as we can save our lives, everything else can be discussed. As for convincing this kid, we’ll do this....” Guan Lao Da leaned closer to Gu Lao San and whispered indistinguishable words.

# Chapter 5: Waking Up

“What you say indeed makes sense. Well, we’ll do it as you say. After we’ve dealt with the present disaster, I will leave the Bai Clan with you.” With a flash of his eyes, Gu Lao San firmed his resolve.

“Haha, that’s the spirit. You and I both have known each other for so many years, if I had no confidence, how am I supposed to complete the task? You go ahead and deal with the body of the ‘young master’, but remember to leave behind the clothes and equipment; I’ll go ahead and save this kid. By the looks of things if I don’t hurry up, he’s really going to kick the bucket and this is going to cost me a lot of Yuan Qi.” Guan Lao Da patted Gu Lao San’s shoulder with a smile.

Gu Lao San nodded, and strided towards the pit.

Guan Lao Da dealt with the kid’s clothes with a few swift motions, immediately exposing the vicious wounds all over his body, along with numerous other scars.

Even for someone who had seen as many things as Guan Lao Da, he couldn’t help but gasp in shock, yet his hands unhesitatingly flew towards the youth’s wounds and started to pat the area around them, at first sporadically, then furiously increased his intensity until the beatings sounded like the firing of firecrackers.

The youth’s body turned bright red and his body that used to be swollen because of the water reverted back to normal.

All of a sudden Guan Lao Da stopped his actions midway and reached into his robes, pulling out a yellow wooden case.

Patting the box gently with a few fingers, the lid popped open automatically with a “pong”, revealing several extremely fine-tipped silver needles of varying sizes

With just two fingers, he reached into the case, and with just a mere touch, he pulled out a single silver needle with a well practiced motion.

With an intense expression, Guan Lao Da moved his arm and it

instantly became a blur as he swiftly jabbed several points on the youth's body.

Liu Ming had no idea when he came out of the river, but found that his head felt unbearably painful, like it was being split open, while every inch of his body felt unnaturally burning hot. However, while he wasn't paying attention, a cooling sensation had swept across his entire body, bringing him such relief that he nearly cried out loud. At the same time, he felt an immense wave of sleepiness descend upon him and unknowingly fell into a deep sleep.

As he slept like a baby, numerous scenes flashed through his consciousness one after another, one of which depicted the shadows of a middle-aged couple whose faces were unclear, yet there were a bunch of weird demonic faces as well, surrounding him and incessantly speaking to him in a language he couldn't understand

The couple gave him a sense of familiarity.

The youth tried his best to hear clearly what was being said, but it was clearly an impossible task given the other disturbances around him; in his desperation he tried to push the demons away, but found himself without an ounce of strength. His heart became heavy as his emotions boiled.

He had no idea how long he remained in that state but after a while, Liu Ming gradually woke up as he felt a ball of warmth flowing through and around his body.

The moment he opened his eyes, he found himself face to face with a square-faced middle-aged man.

The man, upon seeing Liu Ming awaken, immediately barked at him.

"Don't think of anything, hurry up and train. If you don't, all the effort from earlier will be wasted."

Liu Ming felt a chill run through his body as he heard this and without thinking too much, mentally brought out a familiar breathing technique, and begin to direct this warm flow to different parts of his body.

It was at this moment that Guan Lao Da released the breath he was

holding and withdrew the hand he'd placed on the kid's chest, stood up, and observed Liu Ming's actions with a detached gaze.

After a while, the youth's pale pallor finally gained some color, and opened his eyes looking at Guan Lao Da.

"Many thanks to elder for your merciful rescue, if not this kid would have been dead by now." Liu Ming stood up and bowed respectfully while saying this.

He had no idea who this person standing in front of him was, but since he'd rescued him, it was natural that he felt extremely grateful towards his benefactor.

At this point he looked around, getting a better idea of his surroundings, and found himself in a pit not too far from the river. He had also been dressed in brand new clothes, while his wounds had all been bandaged. The slightly cool sensation from the wounds told him that they'd evidently used extremely high quality medicine.

As for the side effect from the skills that he used before, the part that he was most worried about; the internal injuries that should have burst open long ago had all been well suppressed with help from the other party.

However, no matter how skilled this stranger was, the disastrous condition of his body was simply too devastating; it was only a matter of time before his injuries began acting up again.

While he was on the Savage Island, he learned some forbidden techniques from the prisoners there that were extremely effective against enemies but the price paid for using them was extremely high as well. It was basically a double-edged sword.

If it wasn't for the teachings of 'Uncle Qian' from whom he'd learnt a set of breathing techniques that allowed his recovery to far surpass that of an ordinary human being, he would never even have considered using these secret techniques so casually.

The fact that he didn't die from his injuries when he fell into the river

was largely due to the effectiveness of this nameless breathing technique.

Seeing the composure of this youth, Guan Lao Da was slightly taken aback but presented a smile as he replied.

“It’s nothing, saving you was just a little thing”

“Ah, you don’t seem to be alone?” Liu Ming asked unexpectedly.

“I have a partner who went to settle some other stuff but he’ll be back soon. By the looks of things you haven’t eaten in a number of days. Eat up first, then we’ll talk about other things” Guan Lao Da said with a hearty smile.

Guan Lao Da walked away a few steps and bent over, pulling out a package wrapped in a flowery cloth from some unknown place. Upon opening it, revealed that it was full of all kinds of delicious snacks, which he brought and placed in front of the youth.

Indeed Liu Ming had been starving for a long time and with a word of thanks, received the package before stuffing his face ravenously.

In a flash, he’d devoured 7 or 8 pastries of varying sizes, upon which he slowed down his eating speed.

“There’s no need to rush young one, if there’s not enough I still have more with me. Ah right, may I have the pleasure of knowing your name? Why were you in such a place with such ridiculously heavy injuries?” Guan Lao Da asked as he laughed.

“I am a merchant, my name is Yang Yuan. Originally I was transporting a shipment of extremely valuable cargo with my uncle, ready to do business somewhere else, unfortunately we met a bunch of bandits on the way. I escaped into the river while I have no idea if my uncle managed to survive.” Liu Ming gave a fake name as he sighed with a sorrowful expression

While he was on the Savage island, Liu Ming learned from a well known fraud, a technique to manipulate his emotions and control his facial muscles and was a simple matter for him to produce such an expression.

Now that he was a wanted fugitive, carelessly giving his real name would bring him trouble no end.

“Ah brother Yang, it was such misfortune for you to encounter bandits. Indeed in recent times the world is in turmoil, but to think that these bandits would have the nerve to commit these crimes in broad daylight, they really have no fear. When we return I will get the head to report to the officials to put out several wanted posters, making sure this band of bandits will definitely be arrested.” Guan Lao Da expressed his fury upon hearing about the bandits and inadvertently revealed his true feelings.

If not for the bandits that killed the young master they were escorting, the pair would not have fallen into such dire circumstances.

“If that is true, my uncle’s spirit in heaven will definitely thank you.” Liu Ming replied with a somber expression.

“This is a small issue, don’t worry about it. But from your injuries I saw it looked as though you experienced a fierce battle, and even used abilities that burned your potential. If not, then the healing process would not have been so troublesome.” Guan Lao Da asked while looking troubled.

“My uncle and I had both learnt a handful fighting skills and were schooled in some secret techniques and we engaged the bandits in a fierce all out battle. Due to their overwhelming numbers I had only one escape route which was the river.” Liu Ming replied without too much thought.

“Brother Yang, you are too humble. You have a spiritual pulse within your body, clearly a well trained practitioner of some caliber, how can it be that you only know a handful of techniques? To be able to force you into the river, they cannot be any ordinary bandits.” Guan Lao Da replied while laughing at Liu Ming’s reply

“Spiritual pulse? What’s that? I have heard people speaking of practitioners before...” Liu Ming replied truthfully.

“Could it be that you don’t know that practitioners are people that have spiritual pulse? And even then they are the lowest ranked amongst spiritual pulse wielders? If you really were unaware, from where could



you possibly have learnt the method to train your spirit and even more so how did you get such a decent size of Yuan Li...” Guan Lao Da looked at the youth through squinted eyes.

“I honestly don’t know what ‘Yuan Li’ is but when I was young, I found a nameless breathing technique which had the effects of strengthening my body and have been practicing it all these years. Perhaps this might be the Yuan Li training technique Uncle Guan speaks of!” Liu Ming’s eyes lit up as realisation dawned upon him.

“So it was like that...that is indeed a possibility. Although the methods to train Yuan Li have always been controlled by the Practitioner Families, there are still some low profile techniques that exist. It’s such a pity, if only you knew a few more skills that Practitioners use and had a Practitioner Weapon by your side, then a band of bandits would have been no match for you.” Guan Lao Da said as he shook his head, evidently not intending to pursue the matter any further.

“Does this mean that the technique elder used to heal me was one based on the use of Yuan Li? Then conversely, this also means that elder is a Practitioner!” Liu Ming exclaimed while looking peaceful even though his heart was in turmoil.

While in the midst of escaping, he unexpectedly ran into practitioners but yet another one appeared before his eyes, this was definitely a rare accident.

While he was on the Savage Island, he’d heard numerous rumors regarding practitioners from the mouths of the prisoners.

From what he heard, these Practitioners were a rarity within Da Xuan Country, normal people would have extremely little contact with them but they all possessed unbelievable abilities. They could move light-footedly through the air or they could take control of the air directly to injure people. Even more incredible feats include being able to wield super strength, invulnerable to sword and spear attacks and even immune to drowning or burning, enough so that one man could be the equivalent of a thousand men.

The only way to recognize them was that when they released their power, they would often be holding something known as an 'Practitioner Weapon', which upon activation would give off all kinds of light.

Of course, some of the prisoners spoke of the stronger Practitioners who could utilise their full power without the Practitioner Weapons.

Therefore, when Liu Ming first saw that blue robed man using his Practitioner Weapon, he immediately turned tail and ran for his life.

If not, he would have lost his life to some bizarre attack long ago.

Of course now that he was told that he possessed spiritual pulse and could be considered a Practitioner, he couldn't help but be taken aback

In an instant, the unknown breathing technique 'Uncle Qian' taught him was immediately brought to mind.

# Chapter 6: Practitioner Weapon

“Heh heh, Indeed, I am a mid level Practitioner! If not how could I have detected your spiritual pulse with just one glance?” Guan Lao Da smiled as he replied and naturally didn’t bring up his original intention to kill the youth.

“I too had no idea that I could be considered a practitioner.” Liu Ming murmured, as he came to some sort of understanding.

“Did you know that a Practitioner is one of the lowest levels of Spirit Pulse wielders. With your age, if you are able to access your Spirit Sea, you may be able to find a Sect and become a Spirit Apostle.” Guan Lao Da showed a strange expression as he said this.

“Apostle? Sect?” Liu Ming furrowed his eyebrows at these two unfamiliar terms.

Guan Lao Da chuckled but just as he was about to explain, there was a disturbance in the distant grass patch and a skinny figure carrying a big bag walked towards them.

“Brother Gu, come over here, let me introduce you to Brother Yang (Liu Ming’s fake name). Without the guidance of a qualified Practitioner, he managed to train his Yuan Li on his own.” Guan Lao Da waved to Gu Lao San the moment he appeared and said with a profound meaning.

“That’s great news” Gu Lao San said as he walked across, smiling at the his luck.

“My greetings to Uncle Gu!” Liu Ming said without hesitation and stood up immediately to give a small bow.

“Ah haha, little brother, you don’t need to be so courteous. Big Brother Guan, I bought everything I needed. You know, anybody else would have taken at least half a day more.” Gu Lao San boasted as he tossed the bag to Guan Lao Da.

“Of course I knew that, that’s why I asked you to personally make the trip. Right, this isn’t the place to be chit chatting. Let’s find somewhere

less conspicuous” Guan Lao Da said while nodding his head.

Liu Ming and Gu Lao San had no objections, and after packing up walked away from the river.

After they passed by a mound of freshly packed earth, Liu Ming casually glanced over it.

While normal people would not be able to notice anything out of the ordinary, the youth smelt the odor of fresh blood and though it was weak, it was not able to escape the notice of one who had been through as many bloody struggles as he had.

Liu Ming felt his heart skip a beat, knowing that whatever was buried within definitely had something to do with the other two men. While they were by no means saints and under their “friendliness” was definitely some hidden agenda.

After an hour, as the sky began to darken. Thus, the three of them took refuge in an abandoned shrine and started a fire to keep warm.

Gu Lao San gutted a rabbit he had killed during the journey and began roasting it over the open flame.

As the three men huddled around the fire, an irresistible smell soon wafted into the air.....

“Those commonly referred to as Practitioners refers to Spirit Pulse users who have successfully undergone their spirit awakening and accessed their Spirit Reservoir. Due to the fact that once a Spirit Pulse user passes their fifteenth birthday, the Spirit Pulse begins to solidify, and from then on would have no more chance to access their Spirit Reservoir, and thus there is a very strict age limit regarding the awakening process. Those that have their Spirit Reservoirs opened will be able to convert Yuan Li to mana and then use mana to wield mana weapons and perform spells. These people are like gods to us. The Sects are places where Spiritual Apostles are trained and normal people don’t even know about these sects. Some extremely powerful sects even have the power to determine the fate of a country with a mere word!” Guan Lao Da seemed almost to have forgotten about the rabbit roasting in front of him, revealing to Liu

Ming the existence of a secret and mystical world.

“They can decide who’s in charge of the government? The emperor has a personal army, how could he accept such a thing?” Liu Ming took in a deep breath and couldn’t help but ask.

“Hehe, this is all determined by power. Us mere Practitioners cannot possibly be compared to those Spiritual Apostles. No matter how hard a Practitioner trains, when faced up against an army, the most he can do is kill a few more people and in the end the only option is death. As for those Spirit Apostles and Spirit Masters, they wield the incomparably powerful forces of nature within their palms and have the ability to summon Demons and Familiars, not to mention their ability to fly through the sky or burrow through the earth; regardless the number of troops, no matter how armies gathered, they would still not be enough to even tire them out. In any case, members of the imperial household and high ranking officials who have been marked by the Sects can only resign themselves to their fate and simply wait to die.” Gu Lao San chuckled while explaining.

“However, if one wishes to become an apostle, then one must first undergo an Awakening Ceremony and every awakening will consume an immense number of Spirit Ingredients that the Sects had painstakingly procured over the course of many years. As such, apart from Spiritual Pulse apprentices the Sect has personally raised, ordinary Practitioners who wish to join the Sect must first fork over a horrifyingly large sum of resources. In addition, a Sect in the Kingdom of Da Xuan that is about to perform their Awakening ceremony very soon”

“So that’s how it is!” Liu Ming exclaimed as a glint flashed in his eyes, but he didn’t say anything more.

Gu Lao San saw this, and couldn’t leave it alone so he suddenly remarked in an enticing manner:

“Young Brother, don’t you wish to become part of the Sect? Once you become a Spirit Apostle, not only will you attain unbelievable power, your life force will increase tremendously as well, enough for you to easily live

to 200 years old.”

“In the first place, I am merely a commoner and only now have I just found out that I have always had the capability to become a Practitioner, I couldn’t possibly dream of such impossible things. Furthermore, I have never believed in having anything handed to me on silver platter anyway.” The youth unexpectedly rejected Gu Lao San’s proposal.

This reaction left Gu Lao San momentarily lost for words.

Upon seeing his companion’s flustered reaction, Guan Lao Da glared at him fiercely and after sighing deeply, faced the youth and said to him

“Young Brother you’ve probably noticed as well. Well, I won’t deceive you. Indeed, while the two of us had ulterior motives for rescuing you, this is also an unbelievable opportunity for you. Once you pass over it, you will most likely regret it for the rest of your life. Would you just hear me out?”

“Since both uncles have said so, then I will listen to what you have to say.” Liu Ming’s expression did not change as he agreed hesitantly.

“Well, here’s the deal; The two of us are simply henchman for the Bai Clan. This time we’ve received the order to send the young master Bai Cong Tian to take part in the Awakening Ceremony hosted by the Barbarian Ghost Sect...” Guan Lao Da was no fool either and knew that Liu Ming already harbored some suspicions towards them. Thus, he no longer had any intention of hiding the impending crisis that was about to befall the two men and completely spilled the beans in front of Liu Ming.

“There was no other choice and thus we wish to use you to replace the young master to take part in the Awakening Ceremony. If you were to go, not only would the two of us escape this life-threatening predicament, this would also represent a great opportunity for yourself. This is the kind of opportunity that wouldn’t present itself no matter how much the other members of the Bai Clan begged for it. My guess is that the source of your troubles also isn’t as simple as meeting a bunch of bandits but once you become an Spirit Apostle of the Sect, there is nothing in the world of mortals that you cannot solve.” Guan Lao Da said with a heavy heart.

There was a slight change in Liu Ming's expression as he listened up to this point.

"This Awakening ceremony....should be very dangerous shouldn't it? What would happen if I didn't successfully complete it?"

"In order to achieve great power, one must also experience a certain degree of danger, but I'm sure it will be no problem for our Young Brother here. Even if you don't pass, that is a small matter and you simply have to stay with the Sect for a few years and perform services." Guan Lao Da replied easily with a straight face.

The youth furrowed his brows slightly.

He knew that Guan Lao Da definitely wasn't telling him the whole truth but also knew that it wouldn't come out no matter how much he asked.

Most importantly, he did feel somewhat interested in the Awakening Ceremony itself.

After spending such a long time on the Savage Island, the youth learnt early on that so long as one wielded enough power, he would then be free to do as he liked.

All the numerous desires he buried deep in his heart all this while clawed at him to be extremely strong in order to fulfill them.

In any case, even if he disagreed, it seemed like the two Practitioners in front of him also wouldn't let him go so easily.

Furthermore, since they had already divulged such sensitive information, should he decide to be uncooperative, it was most likely that only the word 'Death' would be enough for them to safely protect their secret.

After contemplating in his heart for a long time, Liu Ming finally decided:

"Alright, I will agree. However, let me just make it clear; This situation will definitely be extremely dangerous and after I help you this once, I will consider my debt for being rescued as having been paid in full.

Furthermore, in order to bring me to the Barbarian Ghost Sect, I wish for the two of you uncles to promise me two things.”

“If only you are willing to replace the young master to take part in the Awakening Ceremony, no matter how many conditions you throw at us, we will agree to them all” Gu Lao San proclaimed excitedly upon hearing Liu Ming’s words.

After some consideration, Guan Lao Da also nodded his head.

“Both uncles know that even though my body has Yuan Li, I have no knowledge of any of the Practitioner techniques, and thus I hope that during the course of the journey you guys would pass on to me some skills that would help me preserve my life. The other condition is that I wish to obtain this young master’s Practitioner Weapon. Being a Young Master, the Practitioner Weapon he used shouldn’t be too shabby and thus in the event I encounter any problems within the Barbarian Ghost Sect, I should still be able to deal with it to some degree” Liu Ming laid out his demands without reservation.

“The first condition is a good one and in any case even if you had not mentioned it, it was a given that we would have done so anyway. As for the second condition....that Practitioner Weapon contains immense power and I fear it may not be easy for a beginner such as yourself to wield.” Gu Lao San mentioned with some hesitation.

“Even still, I would at least like to give it a shot” Liu Ming replied, with no intention of backing down.

“This...”

“Alright, we’ll give you the Practitioner Weapon.” Guan Lao Da gritted his teeth and agreed to this demand.

Gu Lao San displayed some reluctance upon hearing his words but in the end, raised no objections.

“Right then, from now on I’ll do my best to accommodate the request. However I still don’t know what the previous Young Master was called, I will need to use his name from henceforth after all.” Liu Ming said as he



nodded his head.

“Young Master was named Bai Cong Tian. Here, young brother you should take his possessions.” Gu Lao San opened the massive bag behind his back with a slight movement of his hand and pulled out a small white parcel.

Liu Ming immediately opened the parcel upon receiving it and took a look inside.

Inside it were a number of clean clothes along with a few small accessories but most prominent out of all the objects was a small bracelet.

The bronze bracelet was fashioned in an ancient style and had rows and rows of silver flower patterns imprinted on the front; It gave one the impression that it was abnormally heavy for its appearance.

# Chapter 7: Yuan Li Manipulation

Liu Ming couldn't help picking up the Bronze Bracelet with an astonished expression on his face.

This bronze bracelet was as light as the wind, as if it was weightless.

"Is this Young Master Bai's totem?" Liu Ming carefully inspected the bracelet in his hand before asking.

"That's right. The Tiger's Bite Bracelet is a rarely seen upper tier totem with both offensive and defensive capabilities and can be ranked amongst the top ten totems even within the Bai Clan." Gu Lao San explained while looking at the bracelet with an air of reluctance.

"However, for the young brother to activate it, I fear you must first learn the most basic skills to control your Yuan Li. As for these techniques, we will teach them to you as we journey on. We will definitely help you activate the bracelet as soon as possible." Guan Lao Da added on.

"Then I give my sincere thanks to both the Uncles." Liu Ming said with a hint of joy as he placed the bracelet onto his right wrist and felt a cooling sensation emanating from it.

"Very good but your current appearance is still slightly imperfect, and needs to be adjusted so that the Apostles of the Sect won't see through our ruse." Guan Lao Da was nodding his head while observing Liu Ming's face.

"Adjusted...in what manner?" Liu Ming frowned as he heard this.

Even though Liu Ming had an average appearance, he was still unwilling to let others change his appearance to any large degree.

"Ah, relax young brother! We will definitely not damage your original appearance, we only need to make some slight adjustments to your hair and skin tone. In this area, Gu Lao San is an expert and you can leave it to him." Guan Lao Da immediately saw through the youth's worries, and reassured him with gentle laughter.

"If it's just like that, then I don't mind. Gu Uncle, I'm sorry to bother

you” Liu Ming set down the worries he was carrying in his heart and agreed to their request.

“Heh heh, this is a small matter. In the days before I became a Practitioner, I once held the title of [The Man with a Hundred Faces]” Gu Lao San boasted with a laugh.

At this, he turned around and from his massive bag pulled out a number of vials, along with some small yet unnaturally sharp blades and gestured for the youth to go over.

After some hesitation, Liu Ming stood up and walked towards him.

After an hour, in front of Liu Ming was a shiny bronze mirror that cast light upon his facial features.

“The eyebrows are slightly lighter and the hairs that were originally crooked have been fixed, while a silver hair band has been to the forehead, giving off an air of elegance. But the biggest change is still...”

Liu Ming raised both his hands which could originally be considered to be a rather healthy pair and discovered that they’d become abnormally white, giving him the appearance of a pampered noble.

“Take this vial of Skin Washer, apply it to your body once every night. I’ll brew a few more bottles for you during our journey and thus in doing so, by the time we reach the Barbarian Ghost Sect, your skin color will remain as such for some time. By the time the color begins to fade, nobody will notice it anyway. Even without using this appearance changing skill for so many years, looks like I’m still pretty good at it.” Gu Lao San remarked delightedly as he held the bronze mirror.

Gu Lao Da gave the youth a look over and gave his look of approval.

The current Liu Ming definitely looked more suave than his previous self. So long as it was not a person who was closely acquainted with the young master of the Bai Clan, the disguise would not be so easily seen through.

Even though Liu Ming had never met the young master before, judging from the satisfied looks on the two men’s faces, he knew that the

transformation was a success and inwardly heaved a sigh of relief.

Now that he was in deep with these two men, if they were unable to scam their way through, his own life would also be in jeopardy.

“Ah that’s right, you are our master from now on, please refrain from calling us uncle. Just address us as Guan Da or Gu San will be fine, just to prevent any slip ups when we get there” Guan Lao Da remarked.

“I got it” Liu Ming replied with a heavy expression.

.....

One day later, a small yellow vessel could be seen travelling downstream.

On this small boat, while holding onto the rudder with both hands, Gu Lao San occasionally took a glance into the cabin.

Within the cabin, Liu Ming was sitting cross-legged under the guidance of Guan Lao Da.

In front of him was a small wooden table upon which the Tiger’s Bite Bracelet was placed.

All of a sudden, Liu Ming let out a low cry and aimed a finger towards the bronze bracelet.

Poof

The bracelet trembled slightly, after which it didn’t move again.

Liu Ming frowned at this sight.

“Not bad. To be able to form a reaction between your Yuan Li and the Tiger’s Bite Bracelet within such a short time, seems like you are rather gifted in controlling totems.” The middle aged man standing by the side was rather pleased unlike Liu Ming’s dissatisfaction.

“Didn’t you say I only have 2 months to train?” Liu Ming slowly asked.

“Young master may not know, but the Tiger’s Bite Bracelet is a upper tier totem and by that virtue should not be that easy to control. According to my knowledge, the Bai Clan should have a secret technique specific to

the controlling of this totem. Right now I only have normal techniques to pass on to you and thus the effect is greatly lessened. Of course with your talent, 2 months will be more than enough to grasp the basics of manipulating this totem” Guan Lao Da explained to him.

“Since Guan Da says it is so, then there should be no problem. However, even after understanding the Tiger’s Bite Bracelet, there are still attack and defence techniques to be learnt, and I’m afraid those might take some time as well.” Liu Ming responded.

“Young master need not worry. So long as you can master the art of control and are able to synchronise with the totem to a certain degree, everything else is a small matter of practice and familiarity.” Guan Lao Da replied without hesitation.

“So that’s how it is. Then I’ll spend these few days focusing on my control. That’s right, exactly what kind of a school is the Barbarian Ghost Sect? Guan Da should have at least some knowledge in this area.” Liu Ming suddenly thought of this and asked.

“If Young Master wishes to know about the Barbarian Ghost Sect, this might be a slightly difficult request to accomodate. Although its ranking amongst the Sects in the Kingdom of Xuan is closer to the bottom, if one were to talk merely about secrecy, no other sect can come close the Barbarian Ghost Sect in the way they so jealously guard their secrets.” Guan Lao Da said with an uneasy expression on his face.

“Oh? But why?” Liu Ming was taken aback.

“This is because the Barbarian Ghost is a school that specialises in manipulating demons. I’ve heard that the sect is built in a terrifying place where humans are unable to live and is surrounded by miasma all year round. As for apostles and masters who practice the techniques of this school, all of them have a strong connection with the river styx and can thus summon and subdue demons to use against their foes. But it is because of this that the participants for the Barbarian Ghost Sect awakening ceremony are rather few and most capable practitioners opt instead to join other sects. Of course this is all just hearsay. Anything else

regarding the sect and I honestly can't say for sure anymore." Guan Lao Da replied after thinking for a long while.

"Manipulation of demons does indeed sound extremely terrifying. However, apart from the Barbarian Ghost Sect, the other sects in the Kingdom of Xuan are...?" Liu Ming asked curiously.

"I'm actually more familiar regarding the other sects. In the Kingdom of Xuan apart from the Barbarian Ghost Sect, there are the Heavenly Moon Sect, the Hall of Blood, the Nine Enlightenment Mountain, and the Firestorm Way. These are the four biggest sects." Guan Lao Da recited their names by heart.

"Oh, then what techniques do these schools specialize in?" Liu Ming asked excitedly

"Heavenly Moon Sect is a sect that specializes in wielding swords; it's said that the students under the Sect can wield flying swords that kill hundreds of meters away. The Hall of Blood is..."

At his request, Guan Lao Da starting describing the Sects without withholding any information

.....

Half a month later, a pitch black carriage drawn by four horse was flying down an official road.

Gu Lao San was sitting peacefully in the coachman's seat without moving.

Within the carriage, Liu Ming was seated cross-legged with his eyes firmly shut and had both hands on his knees while he was breathing lightly in a steady pattern.

As he breathed, the bronze bracelet he wore on his hand vibrated continuously as it followed his breathing patterns.

It was almost as if there was some form of resonance between the two of them.

Guan Lao Da nodded his head as he watched this scene from the

opposite side of the carriage.

To be honest, he'd originally thought that the youth's potential was average at best, but was treated to a surprise with the intensity in which the youth showed in the Yuan Li manipulation exercises performed throughout their journey.

Apart from the time spent sleeping, Liu Ming practically spent every available minute moving Yuan Li throughout his body, searching for a feel of the resonance with his Tiger's Bite Bracelet.

Even during mealtimes, one could get a glimpse of the bracelet on his hand vibrating and producing light yellow light.

This form of training was extremely dry and boring and required the highest levels of concentration and discipline from the practitioner.

No matter how insistent ordinary Practitioners were, they would be able to keep this up for at most a few hours a day. Any longer than that and it would definitely take a toll on their spirit causing them to be unable to focus and would basically become a sisyphian task.

Unable to contain their curiosity, the two men asked Liu Ming how he accomplished such a feat.

In the end Liu Ming revealed to them his innate ability to split his consciousness, which left them speechless.

TL: To be able to do two things at once

Now they realized how, even without the supervision of a teacher, this youth managed to train himself to attain such an high amount of Yuan Li.

.....

A month later, Guan Lao Da and Gu Lao San were standing atop a knoll, staring attentively into the distance.

Liu Ming was sitting hundreds of feet away from them with his eyes closed, while raising the arm on which the Tiger's Bite Bracelet was worn.

All of a sudden, he opened his eyes, flicked his wrist slightly, and called out, "Element Shield!"

In an instant, the bracelet made a buzzing noise and gave off a brilliant flash of light, a small round shield appeared and fixed itself to his forearm.

The shield was glowing yellow and was apparently made entirely of Yuan Li.

“Finally! Even though it is the most basic of Yuan Li defence techniques but it is suffice to say you have already mastered the basics of using the Tiger’s Bite Bracelet. Originally I thought it would take the Young Master at least two months to reach this stage, I never expected it to be finished so quickly.” Guan Lao Da let out a sigh of relief, while at the same time being unable to cover up his surprised expression.

“This is also all thanks to the patient efforts of the two of you; me reaching this stage. Now that I have this totem to protect me, I can say to a certain extent that I am less worried about the awakening ceremony now.” Liu Ming replied cheerfully and with a flick of his wrist, extinguished the shield.



# Chapter 8: Purple Clothed Maiden

“Since young master has already mastered the art of manipulating Yuan Li, young master can now learn a couple of skills for the totem. However, if young master would like to master these skills quickly, it’s best to only pick two or three of them instead of many of them. After all, I can only teach you basic skills for your totem while the Sect can offer you many more skills.” Guan Lao Da suggested.

“Alright. Besides an attack skill, the remaining two skills should be intended to protect my life. How about Yuan Fortress and Lighten?” Liu Ming had obviously considered this before and answered without any hesitation.

TL: These skills have many names – Yuan Fortress, Yuan Block etc.

“Sure. You don’t need to choose for the attack skill since totems usually have the same method of attacking. All you need to do is just concentrate the Yuan Li within you and then have the totem release it. Take my glove totem, the attack that is emitted is a Yuan Li blob. Gu Lao San’s totem, which is a short sword, concentrates Yuan Li into a light blade. As for young master’s Tiger Bite Bracelet, I have not personally witnessed it in action. However, the power is definitely not low. I’ll teach the methods to you later and you can slowly dissect them. If you have anything that you don’t understand, the two of us will be here for you.” Guan Lao Da explained.

“When you fight with someone, no matter what skill you use for your totem, you must record the number of times that you have used a skill. We practitioners cannot compare to Apostles since we have very limited Yuan Li within our bodies. Everytime we use our totem, a huge cost is extracted onto our bodies. Especially for young master who’s a beginner Practitioner, I’m afraid that you can only use your totem three or four times before you run out of Yuan Li. A practitioner without Yuan Li is only slightly stronger than a normal person. Young master must remember that.” Gu Lao San reminded by the side.

“If it’s like that, we Practitioners don’t need a second totem. So strength is not determined by the number of totems that one has.” Liu Ming was somewhat surprised.

“Normally it’s like that. After all, beginner and middle tier Practitioners have limited Yuan Li. They wouldn’t have much use of more totems. However, for high tier Practitioners, it’s different. They have quite a bit more Yuan Li and thus with more totems, they have more options, which in turn leads to them being able to respond to attacks or attack appropriately. However, no matter how many totems he has, he can only use one totem at a time. I heard that the Spirit Apostles and Spirit Masters have some kind of method to use more than one totem but the details aren’t very clear to Practitioners like me and Gu Lao San.” Guan Lao Da said seriously.

“Thanks for the advice, I finally understand a bit more. I will be more careful about these things next time.” Liu Ming cupped his hands and said seriously.

.....

Two months later, on a winding path of a very dark and daunting mountain, Liu Ming’s group was slowing climbing up bit by bit.

This mountain path was abnormally dangerous with bottomless cliffs and precipices on two sides. The path was also very narrow, only one person could pass at a time. Furthermore, the rock steps of stairs were covered with green moss due to no one walking it for years, which made the path even more slippery.

If the three were not Practitioners, who were much more agile than normal people, they would have fallen long ago down the cliffs by the side.

Even like this, Guan Lao Da and Gu Lao San walked with utmost caution while sweat poured down their backs.

However, the young man between the two stayed calm, as if he could not see the dangers in front of him.

While being surprised by the youth's lack of response, Guan Lao Da and Gu Lao San began to respect his courage.

To Liu Ming, the danger in climbing this mountain was nothing compared to the dangers he experienced on Savage Island.

After climbing for four hours, the three finally reached the top of the huge mountain.

After looking around, all three were dumbstruck.

The top of the mountain was a huge field quite a few acres large, but not even a single human shadow could be found.

"Guan Da, this is right place, where the Sect designated for us to come to, right?" Liu Ming furrowed his brows and asked.

"Young master, this is an extremely important matter. How could I not remember where to go? Maybe the envoy hasn't come yet." Guan Lao Da wiped the sweat off of his forehead and bitterly responded.

"How long is it until the deadline that the Sect set?" Liu Ming thought about it for a second before asking again.

"About two days." This time, it was Gu Lao San who answered.

"Since we still have time, let's wait here for a while." Liu Ming looked around before deciding.

The him now had completely been immersed in the character of Bai young master.

Guan Lao Da and Gu Lao San naturally agreed.

Thus, the three of them found a clean rock and started to rest on it.

Time went by little by little and soon, it was noon with the sun up high.

At this time, sounds of footsteps came from the other side of the mountain. The resting Liu Ming and group quickly opened their eyes and looked in that direction.

Quickly, five people came out from another path that led to the top of the mountain.

There were two middle-aged men, one elder and one middle-aged women who all crowded around a girl dressed in purple.

The two middle-aged men were fit with colorful clothes. They both had knives at their waist.

The elder had a green robe and somewhat skinny. His eyes seemed to be eternally narrowed and he had a goatee.

The middle-aged woman looked normal but had skin whiter than normal. She was dressed in green servant clothes.

The purple clothed maiden looked to be about eleven or twelve. She looked extremely cute with a jade-like carved face. With two pitch-black eyes, whenever she looked around, a sense of eccentricity was conveyed.

When the five people saw that there was already someone at the top of the mountain, they all paused for a second. After examining Liu Ming and his group for a few seconds, the elder whispered something to his group.

Thus, the five led the girl to the other side of the space and found a few rocks to rest on as well. They were almost directly across from Liu Ming and his group.

Seeing this, Liu Ming had a hint of doubt and turned his head to use a gaze to question Guan Lao Da and Gu Lao San.

“Young master need not worry. They are not from the Barbarian Ghost sect; they are probably other participants in this ceremony and waiting for the envoy from the sect. Hehe, looks like we found the right place.” Guan Lao Da smiled and explained.

“That’s why. So that means that someone else will come.” Liu Ming looked like he was pondering a serious matter.

“I can’t say for sure. It depends on whether the nearby Practitioner Families are willing to take out enough resources to buy a spot for their kids to go to the ceremony.” Guan Lao Da answered.

Liu Ming nodded and closed his eyes to rest again.

Although Liu Ming looked like he was resting, in reality, the Yuan Li

within was orbiting under some special rhythm. At the same time, the Yuan Li resonated with the Tiger Bite Bracelet to make it lightly pulse.

However, this all was covered by Liu Ming's robe and thus no one could see what he was doing.

Not long after, one of the middle-aged men stood up and came walking towards Liu Ming's group.

Seeing this, Guan Lao Da and Gu Lao San's eyes sparkled, with feelings of caution etched on their faces.

Liu Ming also seemed to have sensed something and opened his eyes.

"I'm Guang Lin City's Mu Clan's member, Tie Yun. I'm here to greet you, by my lady Ming Zhu's orders. You three are..." The middle-aged man didn't come too close and stopped about seven to eight meters away from the three.

"So it's the famous Mu Clan. I am Yu Mu City's Bai Clan's guest, Guan Da. This is my young master Bai Chong Tian." Guan Lao Da became serious as he quickly stood to return the greeting.

"Ah, so it's Bai Clan's young master. Our two clans have quite a good relationship, why don't you come over and sit with us?" The man was initially taken aback before he reacted and smiled.

"Hm. Our young master doesn't feel well so we won't go bother lady Ming Zhu." After hesitating, Guan Lao Da declined respectfully.

"Oh, that's quite regretful. Then we can only wait until our young masters get accepted into the sect before they interact." The middle-aged man showed some surprise and looked deeply at Liu Ming. However, he didn't insist anything and after cupping his hands, he turned around.

"Guan Lin Mu Clan, is it powerful, famous?" After the middle-aged man left, Liu Ming turned around to ask.

"Famous would be an understatement! Mu Clan is the strongest Practitioner Family in the entire Da Xuan. Although Mu Clan and Bai Clan look to be about the same, it'd probably take three or four Bai Clans to be

equal to a single Mu Clan. I have heard that the Mu Clan has at least four Spirit Apostles in various sects.” Gu Lao San seemed to be quite fearful of Mu Clan.

“So it’s like that. However, why does he want for me to go over there? Would he see through our deception?” Liu Ming continued to ask.

“I don’t think so. Although Bai Clan and Mu Clan had a period of communication when our previous family head was still alive, our two clans haven’t had much relation ever since the new Family Head took control. These people have at most heard your name but never met you in person.” Guan Lao Da confidently said.

Gu Lao San to the side also nodded his head in agreement.

Seeing this, Liu Ming relaxed his worries.

At the same time, among the Mu Clan members, the girl named Mu Ming Zhu showed a peculiar expression when she heard the middle-aged man’s report.

“Uncle Tie, I didn’t think that they would be from the Bai Clan. I think I heard the name Bai Chong Tian from my father before but I don’t have a deep impression of him. Third Uncle, do you know this Bai Clan young master?” The girl turned her head and asked the skinny elder besides her.

“Bai Chong Tian. Hmm, Bai Clan does have such a young master. He should be the unrecognized son of their family head and now has the title of adopted son.” Hearing the girl, the skinny elder smiled and slowly said what he knew.

Although his words were slow and careless, he exposed a secret that the family head of the Bai Clan had been desperately hiding.

“Hmph, Bai Clan’s family head owes my aunt a lot. That action of his isn’t too out of character. However, Bai Family head must really value his “adopted” son to the point where he even convinced the other members of his clan to send Bai Chong Tian to the opening ceremony.” The girl said with a hint of arrogance.

## Chapter 9: Receiving the Envoy

“Regardless of what the Bai Family head did, since he had them deliver that Young Master here, I reckon that they intend to stake everything on this one throw. From what I know, the Bai Family’s strength has declined quite a bit since their peak and taking out this amount of resources is a major strain for them. I guess they have no other choice, since in the entire Bai Clan, only Bai Yan Er became a spirit apostle. In fact, there aren’t many Bai clan members that survived the various Awakening ceremonies either. This Bai Chong Tain should be carrying the hopes of Bai Clan.” The Elder said faintly.

“The reason as to why Bai Clan chose this Barbarian Ghost Sect, which is ranked the lowest among the largest sects in Da Xuan, is because of how little the Sect requires for other people to join in their Awakening Ceremony. If not for Aunt Yun in this Barbarian Ghost Sect, I would never have come to this sect. I don’t like how the Barbarian Ghost Sects deals in demons and ghosts.” Mu Ming Zhu pouted her lips.

“Hmph, how many times have I told you? The Awakening Ceremony is extremely dangerous and even though you’ve displayed decent talent in training, it’s not set in stone until you pass the Awakening Ceremony. Your Aunt Yun should have a position in this Awakening ceremony so even though she can’t help you much, she can save your life if you should fail. Or else, our Mu Clan would send you to a better Sect than this; we do not lack the resources.” The green-robed elder responded with a solemn face.

“Yes, Zhu Er understand she’s wrong.” Seeing that the elder was turning angry, the purple-dressed young girl immediately dropped her face, not daring to say another word.

“Even though Bai Clan and we Mu Clan have had a little uneasiness because of your aunt, our two clans are much closer compared to other clans. We’ve always exchanged gifts at events and never skipped out on any of them. In addition, for Bai Chong Tian to be able to come to this Awakening Ceremony, his talent is probably quite good. Try to get close

to him before the ceremony and if he really does pass the Awakening ceremony, then Bai Clan and Mu Clan could go back to the old days. Although your aunt's matter is a little saddening, we have to think of the big picture." The green robed elder slowly spoke.

Even though Mu Ming Zhu didn't want to do anything like that at all, she could only nod her head like a chicken pecking for rice.

This "Third Uncle" was a top tier Practitioner and was only second to the family head in Mu Clan. Unless she became a Spirit Apostle, she would have to listen to him.

However, because of this Uncle's speech, Ming Zhu was instinctively annoyed at "Bai Chong Tian".

Liu Ming, who was still resting and training his Yuan Li on his rock didn't realize what was happening.

Even if he had the talent to do two things at once, his time in training was a little low; thus, if he wanted to become better, it was not going to be easy at all.

Like this, with the two sides not bothering each other, they stayed at the top of the mountain for an entire day.

On the second day, another two people came up from the path where the Mu Clan group first appeared.

This time it was an old man and a young man.

The old man had a grey robe with creases all over his face; in his hand was a smoke stick.

The young man was about as old as Liu Ming and wore a brand new blue robe. His skin was slightly dark, while he looked extremely honest.

When the young man saw that there were already people on the mountain peak, he paused for a second.

The grey robed old man wasn't surprised at this situation and after calling out to the young man, found a place to sit.

"Are they also from a practitioner clan?" Seeing this, Liu Ming couldn't



help but ask his companions.

“It doesn’t look like they are. They are probably Loose Practitioners.” After appraising the two, Guan Lao Da concluded.

“Huh? Wasn’t the Awakening Ceremony only applicable to members in Practitioner Clans?” Liu Ming asked, surprised.

“It’s not specifically open to members of Practitioner Clans but normally, only Practitioner Clans can afford to have their children sent to these expensive ceremonies. However, if loose practitioners can also pay as much, then the Sects have no reason to decline their resources. Although these occurrences are very rare, when they do occur, the Sects would pay quite a bit of attention to these loose practitioners. It’s said that the chances of these practitioners passing the Awakening Ceremony is even higher than the chance of practitioners that were trained by the Sect.” Guan Lao Da said quite seriously.

“Oh, why is that?” Liu Ming was still quite confused.

“Hehe, if buying a spot is quite straining for Practitioner Clans, then for loose practitioners, this spot is equal to the work of a couple or even tens of generations of work. If the kid is not extremely talented and has a 30 to 40 percent chance of passing the ceremony, they would not gamble at all.” This time, it was Gu Lao San who answered.

“So, he has at least a one third chance of becoming a Spiritual Apostle.” After hearing that, Liu Ming was quite surprised but when he tilted his head to look at the tall young man, he could find no peculiarities of the latter.

“Even though there usually are loose practitioners that come to these Awakening Ceremonies, their numbers are definitely low. Since young master is going to be going to the sect with this young man, it would be a good idea to familiarize yourself with him. There will definitely be benefits if you do that.” Guan Lao Da hesitated before adding the final part.

“I know what to do.” Liu Ming stared at the tall young man deeply once more before closing his eyes again.

On the other side, Mu Clan's Third Uncle also realized the status of the newcomers and also explained the situation to the purple-dressed maiden. However, they did not go up to make a greeting.

Under this awkward atmosphere, the three groups of people waited patiently.

After another day and night passed; when the rays just peaked over clouds, a buzzing noise sounded. At first, it was as soft as a whisper but it soon became thundering.

The three groups that were still resting immediately stood up and looked towards where the noise was coming from.

In the sky, a black cloud quickly flew towards the mountain.

"It's the envoy. After this, us two can no longer be together but I have told you everything about the Bai Clan and common knowledge among Practitioners. Don't make any mistakes! As long as you join the envoy, you'll be fine." Guan Lao Da quickly reminded Liu Ming.

Even though Guan Lao Da didn't show it, his heart was pounding rapidly.

In Gu Lao San's eyes, a strange light flashed.

However, since the two weren't normal people, when the black cloud neared the mountain, their faces were as blank as they could be.

When the black cloud was directly atop the mountain, the buzzing sound suddenly stopped. In place of it was a man's cold voice.

"Those that are here for Awakening Ceremony, come up with your Verification Sills. Once I finish examining them, I still have to go to other places."

When his voice faded, the black cloud violently rumbled before a cloud ladder extended downwards towards the center of the mountain peak.

"Verification Sill". When Liu Ming heard those words, he paused slightly and before he could ask anything, Guan Lao Da shoved something into his hand while smiling.

“Please be carefully young master. All you have to do is give this pill to the leader of the envoy.”

After going through a couple of thoughts, Liu Ming didn't say anything more and walked towards the cloud ladder.

In the other two groups, Mu Ming Zhu and the tall young also nervously went towards the cloud ladder after hearing the final parting words from their respective guardians.

Moments later, the three got to the cloud ladder at the same time and after pausing, they looked at each other.

“Hurry up. If we miss the timing, I will cancel your qualifications to open your spirits.” The man on the black cloud was already somewhat impatient.

At this declaration, Mu Ming Zhu and tall young man jumped up in shock and fear, no longer daring to tarry any further, they hastily rushed up the escalade towards the black cloud.

Liu Ming smiled before likewise lifting his foot to move.

The escalade looked like a curled up fog but when stepped on, it possessed a force that supported the body, making one feel as if he was stepping on real ground.

In his heart, Liu Mu felt mystified at this, yet he did not dare to tarry as he followed behind the other two as they ascended towards the skies.

A short period of effort later, Mu Ming Zhu who was at the front finally reached the underside of the black cloud, as she looked towards the surging black gas in front of him, she gritted her teeth and dashed in.

The tall and well built youth who was right behind hesitated for a moment before putting on a brave front and walked in, though his movement was clearly more rigid than before.

Behind them, Liu Mu had witnessed the two's actions, however he had no hesitation and with one swift movement, he entered into the black fog.

In the instant when his body made contact with the black cloud, it felt

slightly cold. However when the light shined once again in his eyes, he had actually the side reached an immensely huge square platform.

The entire platform was about one acre large and shaded entirely in white. On its edges, more than ten strange sculptures were erected which were covered in a dazzling white light.

In the middle of the platform, about a hundred youths stood in twos and threes, all of whom were currently sizing up the three who had just entered with curious gazes.

Something occurred to Liu Ming as he lifted his head to look up.

All he saw was an ash-colored cloud quietly floating seven or eight meters above, while atop the clouds, a black clothed middle aged man sat cross legged.

The man had some pockmarks on his face, but his two eyes flickered as he stared coldly at the trio.

“Are there only the three of you, whatever: Take out your sills and then announce your names, I am going to inspect your identities.”

# Chapter 10: Lei Zhen

“Yes, Spirit Master. I am Mu Ming Zhu from the Mu Clan in Guan Lin. This is my Verification Sill.” Mu Ming Zhu quickly took out a black metal sill and held it out with both hands.

“Oh! You are a clansmen of Mu Sister! Anyhow, I am not a Spirit Master, I’m only a Spirit Apostle. A Spirit Master wouldn’t show his face to mortals that have not even awakened their spiritual sea.” The man’s cold expression loosened as he said this, and waved his hand a little.

“Whoosh!”

The metal plate that the girl in purple had shot up into the air before landing firmly in the man’s hands.

The escort then formed a one-handed technique, and with black light floating on his finger, pointed at the sill.

With a popping noise, the metal plate shook slightly, before expelling a misty white light mirror.

Within the light mirror, another girl in purple appeared. Besides the difference in clothing, her facial demeanor was very similar. Perhaps she was slightly younger in the light mirror.

“Yes, this is you without a doubt. You can go stand over there.” The man gave a glance over to the side and nodded his head.

When Mu Ming Zhu heard this, she happily agreed and headed over to the middle of the platform in a pleased manner.

“I... I am Gao Chong. It’s a pleasure to meet the Emissary!” The tall young man also took out a similar metal sill from his chest and nervously held it up high.

“Gao Chong... You are one of the three loose practitioners in this Awakening ceremony. Not bad, maybe you’ll become a fellow disciple with me. Let me see your Verification Sill.” Amazingly, the man in black squeezed out a smile and spoke very politely.

With the same hand, the spell was cast again.

Naturally, Gao Chong passed without any problems.

“Bai Clan’s Bai Chong Tian. Please inspect my Verification Badge.” Liu Ming took a deep breath and also passed the item in his hands up.

Even though he was very nervous on the inside, no abnormalities could be seen from the outside.

This time, the man casually swept his eyes over Liu Ming, before quietly taking the sill.

The same white light came out of the sill and another “Bai Chong Tian” came out in a lifelike manner.

Liu Ming gave a glance at the white light and his heart skipped.

The “Bai Chong Tian” in the white light looked almost eighty to ninety percent similar to him. Though, at the time, he was wearing a white shirt and had an arrogant look. This and a few other points were a little different from Liu Ming.

“Huh.”

The man inspected the “Bai Chong Tian” in the image a few times and looked down at Liu Ming. His face showed an expression of surprise.

Liu Ming’s heart sank and the bronze bracelet started to shake a little. However, he remained still.

“Hmm. In this one year, you changed quite a bit. Looks like you’ve made quite a bit of preparation for this awakening ceremony. That previous impetuous aura seems to have disappeared.” The man said slowly.

Liu Ming heard this and in his heart he let loose a sigh of relief. He quickly bowed and replied, “I know that my talent is mediocre, so I could only work hard in order to gain a slight chance in the awakening.”

“Haha. Awakening the spiritual sea is not something hard work can help you through. But whatever, telling you this stuff now is useless. Later, you will naturally know more about this. Find a place to sit down, we will be going to the next location.” The man lightly chuckled but did

not say much more besides the orders.

The other youths heard this and sat down cross-legged.

Seeing this, Liu Ming and the other two also found a place to sit down as well on the platform.

It's unknown if it's due to them being escorted from the same place, but the trio did not separate to sit with other people.

However, though the trio looked at each other, nobody said anything.

At this time, the man in the air flipped his hand and took out a white disk. With a flash, it flew up into the air and disappeared into clouds.

The next moment, the surrounding statues let out a buzzing sound before shining in a soft light. Then, with a loud noise, the platform starting to move toward a direction with a large inertia.

Many young men and women that did not sit tightly fell over.

The girl in purple in front of Liu Ming was also unprepared and her delicate body twisted and started to fall. Luckily, the tall young man to the side had good reflexes and quickly grabbed onto the girl's arm and steadily pulled her back.

"Thank you brother Gao!" Mu Ming Zhu steadily sat down again and with a flush spoke to the tall young man.

"It's... it's nothing. It's just a small matter." When Gao Chong saw the girl's response, he had a bit of a helpless look.

After the girl in purple gave a smile to Gao Chong, she turned around toward Liu Ming and gave him a glare.

Liu Ming only gave a faint smile that didn't look like a smile.

He sat steadily from the beginning and could have obviously given the young girl a hand. However, he had no intentions of helping.

Due to this, Mu Ming Zhu's impression of him worsened.

However, at this time, Liu Ming shifted his gaze from the two toward a white statue near him.

The statue was very strange. It was like a monkey but not a monkey, like a bat but not a bat. It was as if it was monkey that had a pair of bat wings growing out. Due to this, the statue was extremely ferocious, making others feel chills in their hearts as they looked at it.

“Hmph. A small clan really is a small clan. You actually don’t even know about night-crawlers, one of the most basic type of ghosts.” Mu Ming Zhu scoffed and said in a sarcastic tone.

“Oh, Miss Mu knows what this is?” Liu Ming asked curiously.

Next to him, the Gao Chong also had widened eyes.

At first, Mu Ming Zhu didn’t want to talk with Liu Ming any further, but seeing Gao Chong’s expression, she once again remembered what her third uncle had said. With a thought, she put on a smile and said, “Since Brother Gao wishes to know, then I will share my a bit of my small knowledge. Night Crawlers are also called Yecha ghosts and are the most common of the 108 ghosts in the hundred ghost diagram. Besides being able to fly, they don’t really have any special powers.” Mu Ming Zhu was worthy of being a daughter of the Mu family. Even though she was not a part of the Barbarian Ghost sect yet, she still knew so much about ghosts. Not only did she explain every detail of night crawlers, she also spoke of the other statues of ghosts nearby. This attracted many other young men and women over.

“Ha. What’s the point of understanding these low Soldier rank ghosts? Once we really join the sect, you’d at least have to tame a General rank ghost to not waste learning the art of exorcism.” A tall, brown haired teenager sneered to the side.

“You talk pretty big. According to what I know, even amongst Spirit Apostles within the sect, over half of them can only tame Soldier rank ghosts. Only a small number of disciples can tame a Captain rank ghost. As for General rank ghosts, even amongst Spirit Masters, only a few are able to tame them.” Mu Ming Zhu looked at the brown hair teenager, and responded without reservation.

“Even if others cannot do it, that does not mean I, Lei Zhen, cannot do



it.” The brown hair teenager responded with a smile.

“Lei Zhen? You are from the Lei Clan?” Mu Ming Zhu heard the name of the teenager and the color of her face changed.

The others around also sucked down a cold breath as they heard the name; their eyes displayed a trace of fear.

Although the Bai Clan can be said to be a first-rate family in their area, the Lei clan can rank in the top three within the entire Da Xuan Country. Within the clan, they have dozens of Spirit Apostles, and even have a Spirit Master.

“Even if you are from the Lei Family, this type of speech should wait until after the Awakening ceremony.” Mu Ming Zhu was secretly surprised but held onto her pride. She was reluctant to lose face for her family.

However, this time, Lei Zhen did not say any more. He took a glance at the tall teenager next to the girl and left with a laugh.

From beginning to end, he did not even glance at Liu Ming.

Liu Ming sat on the ground without moving, and turned a blind eye to everything in general.

On Savage Island, the more hidden one is, the better. Because, this was the only way to survive a bit longer.

Those with a lot of strength that enter into the spotlight, generally wouldn't live past a year.

Although the outside world is different from Savage Island, Liu Ming did not try to change this aspect of himself.

At this time, Mu Ming Zhu and Gao Chong could clearly be seen to be closer, speaking warmly to each other. Every now and then, a small giggling could be heard. Whether intentionally or unintentionally, they excluded Liu Ming completely.

But Liu Ming does not care at all and once again focused his mind; he started training once more right there.

In the remaining seven to eight days, the platform would stop every half a day, picking up anywhere from three to tens of youths.

Once the platform held around three to four hundred people and could not hold any more, the man in black stopped picking up any more youths and directed the black cloud to return back to the sect.

Half a month later, the giant black cloud flew over many rolling mountains and went straight into the depths of a dark forest.

In one breath, they entered over 100 miles, appearing in front of a mountain range with over a dozen mountains.

On the other side of the sky came a rumbling noise, and another black cloud came toward the same mountain range.

After a while, the two black clouds both arrived at the mountain range and landed on the side of one of the mountains.

“Go down, the gate of the sect is here.”

The man in black suddenly appeared in midair and ordered, As the platform landed firmly on the ground, the black cloud and light disappeared.

Many of the young boys and girls excitedly jumped off the platform.

Liu Ming stopped at the edge of the platform and carefully looked around at his surroundings.

# Chapter 11: Barbarian Ghost Sect

The the place where the platform landed was a grassy plain. Not far from the plain was a sparsely filled forest that hid a couple of rock houses.

Liu Ming took a couple of looks at the rock houses before looking around the plain.

Another forty to fifty meters away from him, there was another platform that also many youths step down from it.

“Go down. How much longer are you going to stay?” An impatient voice came from behind Liu Ming and when he looked, the middle-aged man was darkly rushing towards him.

At this time, almost everyone had left the platform and his pause at the edge of the platform was a little eye-catching.

Liu Ming lowered his head and apologized before walking with the crowd in front of him. Finally, he gave the mountain in front of him a look.

The mountain was incredibly tall and the bottom half was covered with varying structures. A long, deep mountain path twirled around the mountain like a serpent and led straight to the top of the mountain.

The top half of the mountain was hidden behind white clouds and couldn't be seen well.

Blobs of grey clouds flew down from the top half of the mountain and on top of these clouds were single or multiple people that had varying attire. They were old and young, male and female; and because of their height, their faces were indistinguishable.

These people were obviously Spirit Apostles in the Barbarian Ghost Sect and when they passed over the plain, a few of the more curious ones took a peek while others just flew by without so much as glancing down. This demonstration of power created excited buzz among the waiting youths.

There were even some that started daydreaming of their life after

becoming a Spirit Apostle.

At this time, the middle-aged man left the platform and after seeing the messy and loud youths, criticized without reservation.

“This is Barbarian Ghost Sect, not your home. Everyone shut up and line up behind me.”

After this the man jumped onto a nearby path that led towards the rock houses. The few hundred youths quickly made a couple of questionable lines and followed him.

On the other platform, a female dressed in white led the other group of youths down another path.

A little while later, the two groups met at an intersection in the forest.

Without any orders, the two groups naturally joined together and combined, they quickly walked out of the forest. What greeted them was a grass field with rows of stone houses.

At this time, there were about a dozen green-clothed people waiting there respectfully.

“I have brought the people with Shun Senior. You guys organize them. There is still half a month before the Opening Spirit Ceremony and during this time, they can wander around this hill but not leave it. If they do, their qualifications to attend the Opening Spirit Ceremony will be taken away.” The middle-aged man coldly glared at the green-clothed people before ordering coldly.

“Yes! Zhang Senior, Shun Senior. We will definitely take care of them.” Of them, a vicious-looking male, walked up and respectfully answered.

“Oh, Fang Xiong Junior’s work is quite reassuring. I’ll be going to Administration Hall to get my reward.” The middle-aged man nodded and responded with an easy expression.

Then he and the white-cloaked female muttered a few words before grey clouds sprouted under their feet. With a shudder, they flew towards a mountain.

“Alright, you brats heard him. You will be living here for half a month and during that time, you are not allowed to leave this forest. If I find someone disobeying my orders and leaving this forest, the first time I find you will result ten Snake Whips, second time will be thirty Snake Whips and third time I find you, I will take away your qualifications to participate in the Opening Spirit Ceremony.” The man named Fang Xiong waited until the middle-aged man left before standing up straight and rudely yelled at the hundreds of youths waiting.

“What? Didn’t the person from before say that we could walk around a little? How did it become not leaving the forest? I came to participate in the Opening Spirit Ceremony, not to be imprisoned!” Hearing Fang Xiong’s words, someone in the crowd protested.

“Brat, what did you say!”

Fang Xiong’s face darkened as he grabbed the air in front of him. Immediately, a well-built youth from the crowd was pulled out of it and stumbled to the front.

When the youth stood back up again, he had a knife in one of his hands. With eyes full of anger, he stared at Fang Xiong, but knowing the difference in strength, he didn’t actually run forward to vent his anger.

“I’ll tell you the truth. We were the same as you a couple of years ago. We were also participants of the Opening Spirit Ceremony; however, since we weren’t successful in opening our Spirit Seas, we were forced to adhere to the rules and work for twenty years. Seeing that there are seven to eight hundred of you here right now, you guys would be lucky if even ten people became Spirit Apostles. In the Opening Spirit Ceremony, at least two thirds of you will die and the rest will become Outer Sect Members like us. Therefore, don’t even think of being all arrogant. If you guys don’t listen, we won’t hesitate to use force. What Zhang Senior said before was out of respect. This place is way too big for us to let you brats run amok. One more thing: the weakest of us is a High Tier Practitioner and I’m an Elite Practitioner. If someone says that they don’t agree with my conditions, they are free to come up and fight with me. If someone beats me, I’ll let him or her do whatever he wants.” Fang Xiong looked at

the youths and said savagely.

TL: Ranks of Practitioners and most things go like Low Tier -> Middle Tier -> High Tier -> Elite Tier

When the youths heard this speech, their excitement from earlier left them and was instead replaced with fear and sadness.

Seeing that Fang Xiong was an Elite Practitioner, the youths who were at most Low Tier Practitioners didn't do something as dumb as challenge Fang Xiong.

When Liu Ming heard the speech, no expression was shown on his face. However, when he heard that Fang Xiong was an Elite Practitioner, his heart gave a violent beat.

Fang Xiong was at most thirty and already so powerful. Even if Liu Ming failed the Opening Spirit Ceremony, staying at the Barbarian Ghost Sect wasn't a bad option.

However, he had to live through the Opening Spirit Ceremony first.

"Listen up now. We will be dividing the rooms and if you're called, step forward." Seeing the effect of his words on the youths, Fang Xiong smiled.

Of course, there were still a few youths with great backgrounds that didn't care; but it did not matter to Fang Xiong. As long as most of the youths would accept management, it was fine.

Those youths with special backgrounds were people that even Fang Xiong didn't dare offend.

Even taking away their backgrounds, these youths had a much greater chance to pass the Opening Spirit Ceremony and thus become Fang Xiong and his group's boss.

At this time, a thirty year old female walked forward and took out a light yellow book. Quickly, she started to call out names.

Soon, at least a hundred youths were called and taken to one of the stone houses by the female.

Like this, each outer Sect Member brought a group of youths to each

stone house. Almost instantly, the field was left about seventy to eighty youths.

Liu Ming, Gao Chong, Mu Ming Zhu and Lei Zhen were all in this group.

“No need to call names anymore. All of you follow me, I’ll personally see to you brats.” Fang Xiong looked at the rest of youths and said with decisively.

Hearing this, the other Outer Sect Members all showed an carefree expression and left.

However, when the youths heard that Fang Xiong, who was like a Vicious Thug, was going to arrange their living quarters, at least half of their faces paled.

Fang Xiong ignored them and turned around to walk towards a group of stone houses.

With a laugh, a youth, walked out of the crowd and followed Fang Xiong.

It was Lei Zhen from the Lei Clan.

When the rest of youths saw that someone else was already following Fang Xiong, they also started walking forward.

Liu Ming walked among them, not attracting any attention.

When the youths disappeared out of sight, a nearby tree rippled and transformed into two shadows.

The first person had a face that was slightly yellow with a gown. He had a yellow wood hairpin in his hair and both of his hands behind his back. The other person had messy hair, bare feet and chest with a scarlet Gourd at his waist.

“Junior, how do you feel? Do you think that there are any talent in these youths?” The gowned person watched the disappearing youths and asked.

“Hmph, Gui Senior is asking when he knows the answer. How am I supposed to know now? Don’t we pick our division members after the

ceremony? Does senior want to place bets onto these kids early this year?" The messy-haired man with a smiling round face muttered after hearing the question.

"It's not like you don't know how our division is; if there really are Nine Spiritual Pulse Sect members, the other division would get first pick. If we want to get some talent, we have to look in these outside youths. I heard that there are some loose practitioners joining this year, maybe they are decently talented." The gowned man slowly said.

"Even if senior is right, how are we supposed to glean anything right now? However, when the Opening Spirit Ceremony finishes, the other divisions will definitely steal the talents."



# Chapter 12: Multitasking

“Hmph, we aren’t fighting with them for our Sect trained members. If they dare try to take these outsiders, I will definitely fight them for it. Even though our faction has been weak for many years, we won’t let others trample over us.” The gowned man replied.

“Since Shi Xiong has already decided, Zhong Shi Di and I will support you. Our faction has only three Spiritual Masters so we must do everything as one.” After a few seconds, the messy-haired man said.

Just as the messy-haired man barely finished, his face changed and he started coughing violently. Quickly, he took the red gourd at his waist and drank the crisp green liquid that was inside.

A thick wine scent wafted in the air; what was in the gourd was an unknown powerful wine.

After drinking, the messy-haired man face recovered.

“Zhu Shi Di, are you okay? The chill in your body has been there for many years and just using Medicinal Wine to suppress it isn’t something that’s a long term solution.” Seeing this, the gowned asked with a worried face.

“It’s fine. As long as I can drink this ‘Three Sun Wine’ in time, I can control the chill. You don’t need to worry about it.” The Shi Di replied with a smile, as if he didn’t care about his chill.

“It’s all my fault. I knew that you had just became a Spiritual Master and should have insisted that you rest and familiarize yourself with your new power. Instead, you went Nightmare valley. If you didn’t do so, you probably wouldn’t have gotten that chill.”

“This isn’t Shi Xiong’s fault. I requested to go of my will. After all, Shi Xiong was at an important point of his training and couldn’t leave our sect. However, Zhong Shi Di was in a life or death situation and we couldn’t waste any time.”

“After this Opening Spirit Ceremony, I’ll go ask Shi Shu for some Pure

Sun Pills. Even though these pills can't cure your chill, they can at least alleviate your pain."

"It's fine. Shi Shu is still trying to make a breakthrough and our previous interruptions have caused displeasure with the other factions. If we go again, they would definitely make trouble." With a bitter smile, the messy-haired man said.

"You don't need to worry about that. If they really do come, I will take care of it." The gowned man said with a cold hmph.

After hesitating for a second, the messy-haired man stayed silent.

Soon, the two disappeared in a gust of mist.

.....

At this time, the youths had finally gotten to their newly constructed stone houses. Under the arrangements of the man leading, they quickly found their respective homes.

When Liu Ming pushed open his fresh wooden door, a room that was about 4-5 meters in length appeared before his eyes.

There was a Green Wood Table, a chair of the same material and an greyish stone bed. On the bed was a thin layer of blanket and there was nothing else in the room.

Seeing this, Liu Ming didn't show displeasure and instead lightly sighed. With a few steps, he jumped onto his bed.

The simple arrangement within the stone house made him recall his tough life on Savage Island. For an instant, he felt as if he was back on that deadly, ruthless place.

After a long time, Liu Ming finally came back to his senses. Then, he sprang into action by inspecting every possible corner of the room before finally relaxing and recalling past memories on the bed.

Back then, Liu Ming was sent to Savage Island because his father was taken in by the government. Even though many years had past, he could still recall every single detail of the ordeal.

When it all began, there was only his father and a couple of servants in the house.

As for his mother, he had never seen her since he was able to think. What he was told was that his mother died when he was young, of a miscarriage.

As for his relatives and his parent's friends, he had never heard his father speak of them.

However, when he asked others, they told him that his father moved here when he was still an infant. Even they did not know where the father and son duo came from.

His father was always very strict; ever since Liu Ming could understand things, he was forced to learn and memorize ancient texts.

A few days before Liu Ming's father was taken in, his father suddenly made Liu Ming, who was only a couple years old, memorize this secret place. Only when Liu Ming memorized the place and was told to not tell a third person about this place did his father finally let the matter go.

And a few days later, his father was taken in while he was sent to Savage Island.

Maybe those officers didn't think that a small kid would have any useful information.

However, even if Liu Ming never said a word of it to anyone else, Liu Ming would still smile bitterly whenever he remembered that place.

When he was still small, he didn't know the meaning behind that place. For him now, who knew exactly what that place was, it was no different than an Tiger's cave or a Dragon's lair.

If he didn't have enough power then going there would be suicide.

Liu Ming was not stupid and realized that since his father was so serious in him memorizing that place, there was probably some kind of huge secret centered around it and probably had something to do with his father being taken in.

And the hand behind the scene used the sentence of “Great Disrespect to the King” to kill his father. This was definitely the act of someone with a lot of power and normal detective skills were bound to alert that someone and bring trouble to himself.

But the death of his father was something that had to be avenged.

When Liu Ming thought about that, a glint of coldness that was uncharacteristic of his age flashed across his eyes.

Before now, he had no chance in avenging his father but now, if he could become a Spiritual Apostle or at least live through the Spiritual Opening Ceremony, he could easily take revenge.

However, when he thought about the fraction that the envoy man mentioned, Liu Ming’s heart sank a little.

During his time with Guan Lao Da and Gu Lao San, Liu Ming had asked about the Opening Ceremony.

Unfortunately, the two were only high end servants in the Bai Clan and didn’t know much. All they knew was that this ceremony would stabilize and show the Spiritual Pulses within one and create a Spiritual Sea within the participants that passed.

Once one had a Spiritual Sea, one could slowly transfer Yuan Li into Fa Li and the speed at which one trained Yuan Li would also increase by leaps and bounds.

The Spiritual Sea was something of a mystery to Guan Lao Da and Gu Lao San so Liu Ming could not gain much information before hand.

All he could do was practice his Yuan Li Manipulation.

Even though Liu Ming didn’t know if having better Yuan Li Manipulation could help his chances of passing the Opening Spirit Ceremony, it was all he could do right now.

Suddenly, Liu Ming thought of his special talent and a quick smile came to his face.

This talent did not come to Liu Ming when he was born. Instead, after

he taken to Savage Island, he had a huge fever after seeing the ruthless and bloody scenes on the island and when he woke up, he strangely got this talent.

This talent would let Liu Ming split his conscious into two and control both halves of his body to do different things at the same time.

However, this talent was slightly different from the well known “Being able to do two things with one mind”.

His two conscious’ could be individually trained to be stronger and he could also have one half actively working while the other half was sleeping.

However, in the “Being able to do two things with one mind”, this would never happen.

After Liu Ming realized that he had this new talent, he carefully asked the friendly inhabitants on Savage Island and looked through quite a few scrolls before confirming that he had a strengthened mutation off of the “Two things, one mind”.

As for what this mutation truly was and what side effects it would bring, Liu Ming knew nothing of those matters.

Either way, after gaining this new talent, Liu Ming never wasted any time and after years of training his two conscious, his consciousness was about twice the amount of a normal person’s.

If not for his conscious, he would have died long ago under the pursuit of the Black Tiger Guards.

He also didn’t display this talent in front of Guan Lao Da and Gu Lao San; being able to allow alternate half of his conscious was no longer something as simple as one plus one.

TL: One plus one in chinese means that it wasn’t something that had an addition property.

On Savage Island, Liu Ming could train in a technique for five or six days before taking one nap to recover to peak condition.

Basically, his training time was quite a few times greater than the normal person's. Which was why, at such a young age, Liu Ming could already smoothly perform so many techniques.

As Liu Ming thought of this, he closed his eyes and started training on the stone bed.

To him, relaxing was a luxury that he could not afford.

In the next half month, Liu Ming would be training his Yuan Li Manipulation every second, only pausing when it was time to eat.

The Tiger Bite Ring which was originally quite hard to use became much smoothly controlled with the half a month training.

At the same time, some of the other youths trained as recklessly as Liu Ming, some walked around the forest and some began to start forming relationships with the other youths.

As for Fang Xiong and the outer Sect Members, they ignored the youths as long as they didn't walk out of the forest.

Like this, the day of the Opening Spirit Ceremony finally came.

# Chapter 13: Spirit Convergence Stage

As Liu Ming sat, cross-legged in the stone house, he suddenly heard the envoy person's voice:

“Everyone come out, the Opening Spirit Ceremony will be held today. I will bring all of you to Spirit Convergence Stage where the ceremony will proceed.”

Though the voice was not loud, it resounded all around the stone house, causing Liu Ming to be able to hear each word perfectly.

With a deep sigh, Liu Ming got off the stone bed and pushed opened the door as he proceeded to walk out.

What greeted his eyes were countless young men and women who were crowding and rushing like a pack of angry bees along the small pathway. At the end of the path, through the cracks of the forest, two barely discernable ash-colored stages sat quietly on the grasslands.

The man from Liu Ming's envoy, ‘Zhang Shi Xiong’ was wearing black and the woman wearing a white cloak, ‘Xun Shi Jie’, were each standing on two gray clouds floating above the platforms.

Fang Xiong and the ten or so Outer Sect members were standing near the platforms, making a respectful pose with both hands clasp together; a very different face from the overbearing ones they wore earlier in front of Liu Ming and the rest.

When the young men and women saw this scene, they subconsciously fell into a respectful manner. They slowed their steps as they entered the platform in an orderly manner.

After the final person had entered, the man in black swept his gaze downwards. Finding that everyone was here, he nodded his head and waved his hand as words of power took shape in his mouth. A disk of light formed; this was a single hand pinch art.

As his chant completed, the disk immediately let out a faint light!

With a “pu” sound, countless spirit markings on the surface of the

platform lit up at once. Another layer of white light, much similar to the one before, appeared, enveloping the entire platform in its glow.

Following which, the demon statues surrounding the stage shuddered in unison as they opened their mouths to let a thick black fog spew forth.

As the black fog surged forward and spread out, it transformed into a black cloud, gobbling up the entire platform together with the light show.

“Mmmmmmmmm” The two platforms slowly started to rise up into the air before gently flying towards a huge mountain in the distance.

Liu Ming stood near one of the statues as he looked at the spirit light that glittered across the surface, his gaze dull as if he were deep in thought.

Not far from him, shockingly, Mu Ming Zhu and Gao Chong were discussing something in hushed tones.

It had only been ten days since they last met, yet this couple had become even more intimate.

While at the center of the stage, Lei Zhen proudly stood. Coincidentally, he was surrounded by a crowd of about thirty members from the various influential families.

At other spots on the platform, groups of seven to ten people would crowd around certain individuals.

These past few days, many young men and women had spontaneously formed many small groups.

It looked like quite a few people had realised that their chances at the Spiritual Opening Ceremony were not too optimistic. Thus they placed all their hope on others who had chances to become Spiritual Apostles. This way, even if they became an external Sect member of the Barbarian Ghost Sect, they would still have someone to rely on.

As to why these people from influential families did this, it was likely due to prior instructions from their clan elders. Furthermore, some of them had probably even been given a list of targets to attach themselves



to.

Else they would not have formed groups so quickly.

Surprisingly, there were also about five or six young men and women around Gao Chong and Mu Ming Zhu. Compared to ten days before, the tall young man looked much more confident.

Looks like quite a few people have looked favorably upon this loose practitioner's future prospects.

Ever since Mu Ming Zhu and Gao Chong had come aboard the platform, they did not seem to have any intentions of calling out to Liu Ming, whom was a 'companion' they had initially arrived with.

Even more so, Liu Ming would not be the one to initiate a conversation with others. He was more like a lone wolf who would only watch on detachedly at others.

Because the platform was completely wrapped up in black clouds, Liu Ming and the others were unable to see what was happening outside. It was quite a while later before the platform slightly shuddered and the man's voice once again sounded out from within the light show:

"We have reached the Spirit Convergence Stage, all of you can get off now."

Just as his voice faded away, the black clouds rumbled as they started to disperse. At the same time the light show also disappeared after one final flash.

Liu Mu lifted his head and swept his gaze about the now visible surroundings. As the new view entered his eyes, he could not help but gasp.

To everyone's astonishment, they were currently in a huge circular plaza. Just outside the plaza was a ring shaped viewing tower. The tower was filled to the brim with about four to five thousand people. The sounds from this restless crowds could be heard even from a distance away.

Out of these people, only a small portion were true Spirit Apostles, the rest were just tag-along Outer Sect Disciples of the Barbarian Ghost Sect. These tag-alongs were akin to servants of the Spirit Apostles.

On closer inspection, there seemed to be an obviously higher level in the ring-shaped viewing tower. At this level, seven or eight figures shrouded in different colored lights were faintly discernable.

They stood shoulder to shoulder as they discussed something in hushed tones.

At the center of the plaza, there were over a hundred Barbarian Ghost Sect Outer Sect Disciples dressed in green gowns. Each one held a pen in hand as they drew thick, twisting silver lines on the ground.

In the air above them, seven or eight Spiritual Apostles flew back and forth on clouds, inspecting the work.

These spirit lines crisscrossed and squirmed about. Viewed from above, a huge silver picture could be vaguely seen as it gradually formed.

Within the picture, countless thick silver lines weaved together and overlapped with one another, roughly forming into many queer silver colored words. Anyone who stared too long at these words would start to feel dizzy and nauseous.

Liu Ming only glanced a few times at some of the weird characters in the picture before withdrawing his gaze, not daring to stare any further.

As they were urged on, the group of young men and women walked down the platform one by one and stood in bewilderment just outside of the silver picture.

At this moment, a rumbling sound suddenly thundered from the heavens; the third black cloud descended from the skies.

After the black clouds dispersed, a group of young men and women clothed in the garbs of Outer Sect Disciple orderly stepped off from the platforms.

These young men and women were different from Liu Ming and the

others from influential families. They were all eerily calm and surrounded by a faint cold aura. As they walked down the stage, they noiselessly arranged themselves in an orderly manner.

The descendants from influential families next to Liu Ming were stunned.

At this point, everyone realized that these people were the Spiritual Pulse Apprentices under the tutelage of the Barbarian Ghost Sect.

If one out of every hundred from influential families could become a Spiritual Apostle, then out of the carefully nurtured Spiritual Pulse Apprentices, every one in ten would be able to successfully open the Spiritual Sea.

A Spiritual Pulse Apprentice's chances of success was about ten times of those in influential clans.

It was no wonder that the sect took advantage of the wealth of the rich Practitioner Clans and pay little to no heed to their Awakenings.

Liu Ming's pupils shrunk as he watched the young men and women opposite him.

The icy calmness each Spiritual Pulse Apprentice possessed was incomparable to any regular practitioner youth, it was likely that they had gone through special training and were no stranger to violence and blood.

At this time, the silver picture at the center of the plaza was finally completed, the Outer Disciples who had completed their task immediately withdrew from the plaza.

Yet the few Spiritual Apostles from the Barbarian Ghost Sect remained. Together, they took out about a hundred fist-sized clear crystals and placed the crystals in succession on various pre-determined points marked by grooves.

After the Spiritual Apostles had finished their work, they once again did a final check from above.

At this time, from the highest section of the viewing tower, a glowing red figure suddenly laughed and then opened his mouth:

“Fellow disciples, I’ve heard that this batch of Spiritual Pulse Disciples are quite decent. Among them there are even a few who could be outstanding. I’ve even heard that one of them managed to cause an argument between Chu Shi Di and Lin Shi Mei; is this true?”

“Sect Leader, I hope that you will be impartial and bring justice to this matter! That disciple was first found by me, yet Chu Shi Xiong ignored the rules and coerced the disciple into his group.” A slender figure within the light angrily exclaimed as she heard these words.

The identity of the glowing red figure who had first spoke was unexpectedly the Sect Leader of the Ghost Barbarian Sect.

“Lin Shi Mei, those words are not right. There are only so many good seedlings within this batch of disciples, not even enough to split one for each group. Since your Dancing Ghost group has already set their sights on one of the good seedlings, please leave to child, Jia Lan, to our Evil Spirit group.” Nearby, another tall figure bathed in a greenish glow chuckled as he bantered, not a single trace of anger in his voice.

“Humph, our Barbarian Ghost Sect is divided into eight divisions, our division is the most appropriate for women to train their techniques. Stealing Jia Nan is not only an insult to her beauty and talent but also detrimental to the growth of the sect.” Lin Shi Mei bluntly retorted, furthermore, she brought the Sect’s interest into the argument.

“Lin Shi mei need not worry about that, I will let Bin Shi mei to take Jia Nan as a disciple and guide her along. Hehe, Bin Shi mei’s technique is also suitable for a woman to practice, it will absolutely not affect this child’s potential.” Chu Shi Xiong chuckled as he replied.

“You.....”

“Forget it, stop fighting. This matter will wait till the disciple has opened her Spiritual Sea. Even possessing an astonishing soul will be useless if the Spiritual Sea is not opened.” The Sect leader interjected with a wave of his hand.

Hearing the Sect Leader utter these words, Chu Shi Di and Lin Shi Mei could not continue to argue, they could only utter a 'tch' as they lapsed back into silence.

"Right, Gui Shi Di, your Nine Infant Division should also decide on a disciple. If you delay any further, you'll be left empty handed again." The Sect Leader turned his head as he reminded a certain individual who was clothed in an ash-colored light.

"Many thanks to Sect Leader for his reminder. Though there are quite a few disciples within the Spiritual Pulse Apprentices who possess a special soul this time, our group is unable to contest for them. I guess we'll just have to pick a few from the influential families' disciples." The ash-colored figure slightly bowed as he replied.

Astonishingly, this voice belonged to the scholar that had originally appeared in the Green Jade Forest.

"Descendants of the influential families? Could there possibly be good seedlings in this batch, I wonder which few Gui Shi Xiong has his eye on, do share with the few of us too." Chu Shi Di asked while seemingly interested, a surprised expression on his face.

"I have no choice but to select from the aristocratic family group; how can there truly be any good seedlings there." Senior Disciple Gui indifferently replied.

"Hehe, Gui Shi Xiong has always been known as the 'Demon Calculator', we don't quite believe those words. Exactly which few does Gui Shi Xiong have his eyes on, could you be afraid that the rest of us would contest for them if you revealed them?" Lin Shi Di laughed before saying.

# Chapter 14: Jia Lan

“Since Lin Shi Di has said it like this, then I will say them. I believe that although the various Shi Dis here love talent, they wouldn’t lose face and fight for the Clan Descendant members with us, the Nine Infants.” After hesitating, the scholar said with a sarcastic tone.

Once these words left the scholar’s mouth, the members from the other factions felt great embarrassment.

Even though the Nine Infants Faction was much weaker than the other factions, to hear it put so bluntly made everyone feel ashamed.

“Relax Jia Shi Di. Take your pick, and if anyone decides to challenge your right to do so, I will take care of it. No matter the talent that comes out of the Clan Descendant members, your sect will have priority in choosing.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader acknowledged the difficulties faced by the Nine Infant Sect Members and said solemnly.

“Thank you, Sect Leader Shi Xiong!” Hearing that, the scholar smiled and thanked the Sect Leader.

Naturally, the others had nothing to say.

“To be honest, of the Clan Descendant members, there are only a few of decent talent. It’s still uncertain if they will pass the Opening Spirit Ceremony. Of them, Zhu Shi Di and I have already made contact with the three Loose Practitioners. From our estimates, the member called Gao Chong has a quite high chance of having a Nine Spiritual Pulse. Another member called Yu Cheng has some sort of innate talent in his eyes and can practice the Ghost Dove Techniques from our faction. There’s some hope of him being able to master the unmastered Dove Eye Technique. As for the last loose practitioner, he has very ordinary training talent, but he has eaten a Rotting Poison Spirit Grass, and now his Yuan Li has a Rotting Poison attribute. If he can pass the Opening Ceremony, there may be other surprises. As for the others, we’ve also made contact with a few clan members. However, only Lei Zhen is worth paying attention to. He will probably have a Nine Spiritual Pulse and probably have some of that

bloodline power of the Lei Clan.”

Once the scholar revealed his thoughts, the other faction members all showed signs of greed, but with the words from the Sect Leader, they could only stay quiet.

“Jia Shi Xiong, Lei Zhen is my nephew, so I plan to personally train him.” A shadow that had been silent up until now finally spoke with a low voice.

“I guessed that you would say something of that nature, so I only observed him without making contact.” The Scholar didn’t show any emotions except slight disappointment.

“Thank you for your understanding!” Lei Shi Di said with an hint of apology.

“So Jia Shi Di would like to use your faction’s three spots on the three Loose Practitioners?” Chu Shi Di couldn’t help but speak up.

“Yes. What? Does Shi Di want to trade your faction’s pick of sect-trained members for these spots?” The scholar replied with a smile.

“Haha, since Shi Xiong has put his sights on them, as your Shi Di, I won’t be forcing them away.” Chu Shi Di yawned and quickly gave up.

Even though Gao Chong and the other two Loose Practitioners were quite talented, they were obviously less important than the sect-trained members.

“Okay. If these three Loose Practitioners pass the Opening Spirit Ceremony, they will be under the Nine Infant Faction. I wish for the Nine Infant Faction to recover its lost fame, and with our eight factions together, our Barbarian Ghost Sect can become even stronger!” Seeing this, the Barbarian Ghost Sect leader said slowly.

Hearing this, some faction leaders nodded while other didn’t move.

The Sect Leader’s brow furrowed upon seeing such a sight, but as he was about to say something, a Spiritual Apostle flew over with a grey cloud.

“Sect Leader, the Spirit Converging Stage has been finished. It can be activated at any time.”

“Since it is done, activate it.” The Sect leader replied without hesitation.

“Yes, Sect Leader!” The Sect Member bowed and flew back to where he came from.

.....

At the same time, Liu Ming was surrounded by youths from influential clans, staring at a girl in the file of the Barbarian Ghost Sect’s own practitioners.

Actually, it wasn’t only him. There were countless gazes that were going there.

There were even Sect Practitioners that were sneaking gazes towards her.

This was because the girl was just too pretty.

Even though she only looked to be about thirteen or fourteen, she had snow-like skin and a delicate face. Jet black hair went past her shoulders, and there was an alluring glint in her eyes. Every move she made would make one’s heart beat faster.

The young girl seemed to be accustomed to being watched by many people: she retained her smile without showing any embarrassment.

Liu Ming watched the girl for a while before suddenly realizing and biting his tongue to force his view away from her face. At the same time, he whimpered in his heart – scary!

Was this the legendary Aphrodite Body!? At such a young age, the girl was already luring people in; imagine the power she would have if she was a bit older.

What made Liu Ming more scared was that the girl had been in the line for a long time but no one noticed her before. How was it that it was only after a while that he realized that such a pretty girl was there?

In addition, Liu Ming felt a cold sweat when he realized that even the



girls had a hint of love in their gazes towards the pretty young girl.

This girl was definitely strange; it would be better to be farther from this girl – Liu Ming quickly made a decision.

However, other people didn't have as strong of convictions as Liu Ming, and their sneaky gazes turned to outright stares after realizing that the girl in question didn't care.

After some time, the young girl furrowed her brow and looked towards the youths from the Practitioner Clans.

The youths that met her gaze all lowered their heads with their cheeks flushed, but there were a few, like Lei Zhen, who returned her gaze boldly.

When the young girl's gaze passed over Liu Ming and found that he wasn't looking at her like the others were and was instead looking at the Spirit Convergence Stage, she was slightly stunned but did not dwell on it.

“Hong!”

A milk-white beam shot out from the silver diagram and converged towards the sky.

The clear crystals and silver lines embedded in stage also lit up, while the entire stage rumbled softly.

At almost the same time, Liu Ming felt the air around him stiffen with something extra in it.

After hesitating slightly, he took a deep breath and felt a refreshing sense wash over him.

With such a drastic event, the youths who were still lost in the young girl's charm woke up and showed surprised expressions as they looked to the stage.

In addition, on the high platform, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader ordered after seeing the stage successfully activated.

“Lei Shi Di, as discussed before, you will hosting this ceremony with the other Shi Dis helping. The Opening Spirit Ceremony is a large event for our sect and can not be treated carelessly.”

“Yes.” Hearing that, the others on the platform bowed.

The youths waiting suddenly saw a couple of shadows fly up from the high platform and speed towards the stage.

The youths from influential clans were all stunned by this sight while the Barbarian Ghost Practitioners kneeled down on one leg and shouted:

“Greetings to our Shi Shus!”

TL: Shi Shu is a Shi Di/Shi Xiong of one's Shi Fu(master/teacher)

“Stand. In a while, we will split you guys into files of a hundred to enter the Spirit Convergence Stage. In it, you're life will be in jeopardy but if you open your Spiritual Sea, you will no longer be a mortal! I'll ask you one more time, is there anyone who would like to forgo this chance?” A shadow who was Lei Shi Di spoke softly and slowly.

Hearing this, neither Barbarian Ghost Practitioners or youths from influential families spoke up – no one was dumb enough to let so many resources go to waste.

“Good, very good!” Lei Shi Di said two goods and nothing else.

Liu Ming was hidden within the crowd and curiously looking at the Shi Shus in the air.

However, he couldn't see the real faces of these people because of the layer of light that surrounded them.

However, when he looked back towards the Barbarian Ghost Practitioners, he realized that the pretty girl who was drawing everyone's attention had disappeared. In fact, he could barely remember where that girl was last standing!

Even though Liu Ming could be considered to be quite brave, he still felt a tinge down his back, much like seeing a ghost in broad daylight.'

The crowd that Liu Ming was in also seemed to have realized that they couldn't find the girl anymore. With the realization came a decent sized commotion while many had a look of disbelief on their faces.

On the high platform, when the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader saw this

and looked towards a slightly pretty girl, he smiled at Lin Shi Mei who didn't fly up and host the ceremony.

“Jia Lan's Aphrodite Body is truly amazing. It has quite a large effect even before she opened her Spiritual Sea, I think she will be quite impressive when she becomes a Spiritual Apostle.”

“Hmph, if not for that, why would I fight with Chu Shi Xiong over her. Unfortunately, even though this Spiritual Body is quite rare, the owner of the body has many more obstacles in training and the Aphrodite Body isn't very useful again those that are of a higher level than the owner.” Lin Shi Mei bragged proudly before starting to list out the inadequacies of that Spiritual Body.

# Chapter 15: Awakening (Part One)

“The Aphrodite Body has unimaginable powers against opponents of the same level. Thus, as long as the child successfully awakens, even if her training talent is slow, we would use spirit medicines to push her level up.” Said the Barbarian Ghost Sect leader resolutely.

“Yes. This child will be very important to our sect in the future and will possibly become one of our pillars. However, besides Lei Zhen, there’s nothing special about the rest of the kids from the clans. Even if some of them can barely become Spirit Apostles, they probably won’t have more than a Three Spiritual Pulse. That is the lowest type of talent and have no hope of becoming Spirit Masters. If the three Loose Practitioners cannot complete the Awakening Ceremony and there’s no talent amongst the practitioners from the clans, I’m afraid Gui Shi Xiong will have to return disappointed.” Lin Shi Mei said after pondering the crowd.

“From past years, Loose Practitioners have at least a one-third chance of becoming Spiritual Apostles. However, when you say the other Practitioners are useless, I do not agree.” The Sect Leader mused for a bit, and said as he shook his head.

“What? Did I miss someone and there are more good talents within the family disciples? No, even if I miss them, how could Gui Shi Xiong also miss them?” Lin Shi Mei said, startled.

“As for the others I do not know but this kid is a bit interesting.” The Sect Leader smiled slightly. Suddenly, he pointed his finger into mid air and drew a circle that lingered in air. Suddenly, a green light flashed and the circle turned into a mirror that was clear as water, revealing a youth dressed in a bright robe.

The youth, who was then looking up at the Spirit Masters without blinking, was Liu Ming.

“This kid? He doesn’t seem any special. Does he have one of the mythical hidden Spiritual Bodies?” Lin Shi Mei looked at the Liu Ming through the lens for a while before asking slowly.

“I don’t know whether or not he has a hidden Spiritual Body but his mental energy is probably a lot higher than the average person.” The Sect leader replied patiently.

” Oh? How does Sect Leader Shi Xiong know?” Lin Shi Mei heard this and was naturally curious.

“Very simple. Earlier when Jia Lan’s Aphrodite body accidentally leaked out, only this kid did not get affected at all and could actually control himself to look away from Jia Lan. Just this self control is already worth complimenting.” The Sect leader replied with a smile.

” So it’s like that. Then, this kid really is worth looking forward to.” Lin Shi Mei said.

Liu Ming naturally did not know that due to the charming girl from earlier, he became known in the eyes of two Spiritual Masters.

Currently he was spending all his focus feeling the energy the magical formation on the stage was giving off. The surroundings had many different abnormalities.

As he ran through his nameless technique, the Yuan Li in his body started to run one and a half times faster than before. As he raised his arm, he could clearly feel a sluggishness. Although it’s weak enough that it could be ignored, it definitely existed.

Liu Ming’s face showed his surprised and looked at the silver formation with a hint of anticipation.

If he could have such a startling feeling outside the formation, then once he entered, the results must be even more amazing.

“Time is up, instill the Spirit Drops.” The Lei Spirit Master commanded.

As the sound fell, dozens of Spiritual Apostles flew from the tall platforms around.

These Barbarian Ghost Sect Spiritual Apostles were all wearing black robes while holding light green bottles. As they arrived toward the edge of the formation, they simultaneous smacked the bottoms of the bottles.

“Puff, puff!”

A milky white substance poured from each bottle, forming dozens of white lines shooting toward the top of the formation. Then, the milky white light started to fall from the air down.

“Practitioners of our sect, enter the formation!” The Lei Shi Di in the air said with a shout.

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Practitioner heard this and instantly sprinted onto the stage and chose a seat to sit down on with a set distance from each other.

” Enough.”

As soon as the formation reached a hundred people, the Spirit Master in the air said and waved his arm downwards.

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Practitioners that wanted to entered after his command instantly felt an invisible wall and were pushed back.

These Practitioners felt a bit disappointed and stood waiting outside.

Liu Ming and the other clan youths, without any orders, could only keep their eyes open and stand in place without moving.

They did not have any resentment. This Opening Spirit Ceremony was initially for the Barbarian Ghost Sect Practitioners so even if they were last to go, they could not have any resentment.

For some, they would actually use this chance to first see how the Barbarian Ghost Sect practitioners open their Spirit Seas.

Even though the elders of their respective families have explained the process countless times, being able to see it with their own eyes was a completely different story. They may gain something by seeing it, allowing them to gain a small extra chance during their own awakening.

Liu Ming especially could not give up this chance to see the Opening Ceremony first hand and stared at a select few that he had noticed before.

At this point, the Spirit Masters in the air saw that all the Practitioners sat down and finished making their preparations. With a flash they all

moved to their respectively planned positions and started their own chant, letting out a horrifying spiritual pressure.

The Practitioners outside the formation quickly rushed backwards as they felt the pressure. Several useless and weak Practitioners grew pale and fell down without strength.

However, the Practitioners within the formation seemed to be protected in some way and could not feel the horrifying pressure; some Practitioners even peeked at the Spirit Masters in the air out of curiosity.

Lei Spirit Master's aura, under his chant, grew stronger and stronger. He lifted one of his arms and pointed out one of his fingers.

With a soft hum, a drop of silver liquid went from his finger into the white light created by the spirit drops.

At this moment, an amazing scene appeared.

The white light, as if gaining a mind of its own, shot toward the silver liquid and quickly merged together with it.

In a moment, a man-sized white circle formed soundless in mid air.

“Go.”

Lei Spirit Master's hand pointed toward the white light.

Under Lei's control, the white light sank like a meteor, shooting accurately at a Barbarian Ghost Sect Practitioner that was sitting down.

This Practitioner was only around thirteen to fourteen years old and had a handsome face. But as the white light touched him, he fell flat on the ground with four limbs spread out.

It was as if the white light was an incredibly heavy weight.

Even more strange, as the white light pressured the youth, it did not disappear instantly. Instead, under Lei Spirit Master's control, it moved around a bit and wrapped completely around the youth.

The silver drop at the center of the light also merged into the youth's body and disappeared without a trace.

The youth on the floor let loose a deep breath and crawled back up from the floor with a roar. With a struggle, he once again sat down in lotus position, \ and circulated his inner energy with his eyes closed.

This same scene was happening around him.

The other spirit masters also let loose a silver liquid and let the large white light fall onto the Practitioners below.

Most Practitioners reacted similar to the youth-instantly being pressed to the ground without being able to move. Only a few with particularly strong bodies could sit and withstand the pressure and look at the light being absorbed by the body.

The Spirit Masters saw this and nodded secretly while noting each of these Practitioner's locations and faces.

The Spirit Masters cast their spell very quickly and rapidly gathered a hundred silver drops to let each disciple be enveloped by the light.

At this time, Lei Spirit Master reached into his sleeve and pulled out a green token. Without a word, he waved it at light formation below.

With a muffled sound, a finger-sized green light shot from the face of the token and into a crystal in the center of the formation.

Boom!

With a flash, the white light around the entire formation flashed and many white light pillars started to rise toward the air.

The remaining white light in the air grew blurry and started to fall down like rain.

Even outside the formation, Liu Ming could feel the change in his surroundings and unconsciously started to squint.

At this time, Lei Spirit Master said from the air, "Under the power of the formation, we have already caused the energy in the air to grow to maximum concentration. At the same time, we imparted a bit of our own energy onto your body to increase your chances. What you need to do now is use this outside strength to awaken the spirit energy in your body and



create your spirit sea in your dantian in one breath. This will cause unimaginable pain, as if a thousand blades were cutting into you. However, whether you end up with life or death, become an immortal or mortal, is all up to you. Following up, I will use some mantra in order to guide you through the awakening process.”

After Lei Spirit Master said this, he looked at the other spirit masters. Then, he willingly took out a golden scroll and threw it in front of him.

# Chapter 16: Awakening (Part Two)

The golden scroll flew through the air and, in a flash, transformed into a film of golden light floating in the air.

Within the light screen, grain-sized silver characters started to appear and flash in a faint light.

The Lei Spirit Master then formed a sign with one hand, and at the same time the light around his body cracked open, revealing his true form.

Shockingly, it was a huge bearded man dressed in a purple robe. He had a wide chest and just by standing he gave off an imposing feeling.

Lei Spirit Master stared at the characters in the golden light. He changed his hand signs while he used his mouth to start his chant.

Liu Ming surprisingly found that he suddenly could not hear anything. He glanced over at the other Clan Practitioners.

He found out that most of them also had stunned faces.

Obviously, he was not the only one who couldn't hear anything.

As Liu Ming's gaze shifted toward the formation again, he found the Barbarian Ghost Sect Practitioners showing expressions of pain as soon as the bearded man had started to chant. Some of their faces immediately twisted and the white light that surrounded them flashed strangely.

A Spirit Master's techniques were really mysterious. Their mantra could actually focus on a specific area, leaving everything outside the formation completely unaffected.

Liu Ming couldn't help but start to look forward to the "spells" of a Spirit Master.

They obviously were not on the same level compared to Practitioners who could borrow the strength of talismans to cast some small techniques.

"Bang, Bang." Two muffled sounds were heard.

The faces of two of the youths that were sitting in the formation convulsed, before their heads suddenly exploded from within. The white light that was surrounding them also disappeared, allowing their headless bodies to fall directly to the ground.

Seeing the bloody scene, some of the more timid Clan Practitioners let out a cry while the others couldn't help but turn pale.

The Practitioners of the Barbarian Ghost Sect that hadn't entered the formation also couldn't help but feel a hint of unease.

But the Spirit Masters in the air and the Spirit Apostles within the formation acted as if they did not see it at all.

Right as Liu Ming finished looking at the two headless bodies, a third Barbarian Ghost Sect Practitioner stood up. His hands waved frantically for a bit before his head also cracked open.

"Hmph. How useless. We just started and there are people that already cannot withstand the energy. The next time our sect chooses Practitioners, we should probably be a bit more strict." The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader said unhappily as he saw this from the high platform.

"Sect Leader Senior. Without going through the awakening ceremony, we can only predict the Practitioner's talent. For there to be some mistakes is unavoidable. The Practitioner that just died, was actually one that I had high hopes for. During the training before, he performed quite well." Junior Lin forced a smile from the side.

"No matter how it is said, our sect invests a large amount of resources on each Practitioner. To be more strict in choosing Practitioners can't really be wrong." The Sect leader replied, unmoved.

"Yes. Junior and the other Seniors will definitely deliberate more over the next batch of disciples, in order to choose even more talented Practitioners." Junior Lin could only reply as such.

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader heard this and gave a slow nod. He continued watching the rest of the Practitioners still going through the ceremony.

After the three deaths on the stage, there were no more instant deaths. But as time went on, the white light started to form into strands that frantically tried to squeeze through the Practitioner's skin.

The face of the Practitioners that had this white light in them started to convulse and shake. Quite a few had eyes that glowed incredibly red, showing hints of madness within them.

After a couple of soft sounds, another four to five corpses fell into their own pool of blood.

Liu Ming saw the situation and the corner of his eye couldn't help but twitch.

At this time, the Spirit Rain in the formation started to slow down and the white light on the Practitioners' bodies shrunk quite a bit. It was to the point that some of their limbs could be seen.

A Spirit Master saw this and waved his hands without a word.

The Spirit Apostles outside the formation immediately used the bottles in their hands. Streams of Spirit Rain formed into white strings and shot out from them.

The white light inside the formation shone once again, and automatically flew toward each of the Practitioners. The white light surrounding them was repaired to how they were at first.

Thick Spirit Rain also started to fall again from the sky.

Suddenly, one of the youths that was sitting lost all traces of pain from his face. Instead, he had a very comfortable expression.

He suddenly opened his mouth and let loose a clear sound. At the same time the sound came out, clear white lines appeared on his body. One stripe, two stripes, three stripes, it continued to six stripes before finally stopping.

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Practitioner was at loss at first but when he saw the six stripes on his body, he cried out in immense happiness.

TL: Spiritual Pulses appear in three's. They would appear in either a

three, six, nine, or twelve pattern

“I successfully awakened my Spiritual Sea! I have Six Spiritual Pulses! I am a Spirit Apostle.”

“Why are you shouting? There are others that have not succeeded. Stay inside and stabilize your Spiritual Sea. Once you leave, there won’t be a chance as good as this for you to take advantage of.” A Spirit Master saw this and chided softly.

This Barbarian Ghost Sect Spirit Apostle’s mind cleared up and he quickly sat back down to take advantage of the energy.

As the first Spirit Apostle appeared in the formation, the second and third also made appearances. There were also some that could not withstand the energy and died with their heads exploding.

After half an hour passed, when the ninth Spirit Apostle appeared, more than a fourth of the Practitioners had already died. The rest of the Practitioners were holding on and continuing, but clearly to no avail.

Lei Spirit Master saw this and coldly announced, “Time is up. The rest of the Practitioners that did not awaken successfully will become our Sect’s Outer Disciples. Everyone must leave the formation now while the second batch of disciples may enter.

As Lei Spirit Master’s voice dropped, the formation stopped abruptly. The light on the Practitioners within all disappeared.

The pain of the disciples still trying to open their Spiritual Sea stopped immediately.

They immediately became dejected as soon as they understood what had happened.

Within the sect, the difference between an Outer Disciple and a Spirit Apostle was like heaven and earth. No matter how outstanding they were before, they could only become the lowest type of existence within the Barbarian Ghost Sect after their Spiritual Seas failed to open.

The nine successful disciples, who held similar positions as them while

they were Practitioners, would be much superior to them now. Not only would the successful ones receive the sect's careful nurturing but they will also be introduced to and practice unimaginable spells, like ones that will allow them to fly through the air and tunnel through the earth. Even their longevity will be increased incomparably.

At this time, the blood stains and corpses within the formation were cleaned up by tens of Outer Disciples that came out of nowhere. Even the floor was washed with clean water, rinsing away even the last drop of blood within the formation.

The second batch of Practitioners, under Lei's Spirit Master's command, also entered the formation and sat down.

The same scene was acted out once more.

The only difference is that there was a different Spirit Master using the mantra.

Lei Spirit Master landed outside the formation and started to rest with his eyes closed.

Using the power of mantra for two hours was a huge exertion for a Spirit Master. They could not help but rotate and rest.

The awakening process took about two hours every time.

The remaining three batches of Barbarian Ghost Sect Practitioners finished their awakening ceremony after six hours.

Within the first batch, the best awakened Spirit Apostle had Six Spiritual Pulses.

Within the second batch, there were twelve Spirit Apostles and two of them had Nine Spirit Pulses.

For the third batch, only eight people awakened successfully but there were three with Nine Spirit Pulses.

There were actually fifteen people that had awakened successfully in the fourth batch. However, there was only one Nine Spiritual Pulse Apostle.

From the high platform, the Sect Leader couldn't help but let out a sigh of relief when the "Jia Lan" girl awakened successfully with Six Spiritual Pulses.

Even though Six Spiritual Pulses could only be considered average within the Spirit Apostles, with the sect's full support, it was not impossible to cultivate to a Spirit Master.

As for the other Spirit Masters, their moods started to become different.

Some of them with successful pre-picked Practitioners, secretly became immensely happy. While the ones that had their picks fail, with some even dying in the formation, felt very depressed.

As for the vacant slots, they could only be filled by the other Spirit Apostles.

Although the Clan Practitioners were great in number, only a few would succeed in awakening. Besides the ones Gui Spirit Master named, the rest had little to no hope.

With a shout from Lei Spirit Master, it was finally time for the Clan Practitioners like Liu Ming.

After the first batch of Clan Practitioners entered the formation for two hours, the result caused the faces of Liu Ming's group to turn ugly.

Out of the hundred Clan Practitioners, not a single one of them successfully in opening their Spiritual Seas. In addition, almost two-thirds of them immediately died.

The remaining thirty people walked out of the formation like corpses while the other Clan Practitioners did not dare walk into the formation.

"If the rest of you are not willing to enter, that's good. Our sect can save on a large amount of resources. You can all become Outer Disciplines." Lei Spirit Master smiled coldly as he saw the situation and did not urge the people at all.

The cultivation world was originally a world of survival of the fittest. He would not treat any of the Clan Practitioners with pity.

“Hmph. Why are we still backing out now. I’m going up!” One of the Clan Practitioners spoke and walked out first, taking large steps.

This was Lei Zhen from the Lei Clan.

The Lei Spirit Master saw this from midair and was startled, but quickly started to smile without saying anything else.

With someone taking the lead, the rest of the youths finally took up the courage and followed along.

Liu Ming’s gaze shifted for a bit, and he lightly took in a breath before walking up with this group.



# Chapter 17: Awakening (Part Three)

Liu Ming willingly went out to the edge of the stage and sat down calmly.

He saw that since Lei Spirit Master and the rest of his group had already initiated the Opening Spirit Ceremony several times, they had a hint of tiredness in their demeanor.

Also, the crystals surrounding the entire formation no longer shone as brightly and piercing as they did originally.

Even though Liu Ming did not know how many times the Spirit Masters can use their mantra under normal circumstances or the effect the crystals would cause when depleted, he definitely does not wish to be in the last batch to test it out personally.

Also, after observing it several times, Liu Ming had already seen everything he needed to see. Even if he waited till the end, he wouldn't really gain any benefits. Thus, it would be better to just be in an earlier batch and start opening his Spirit Sea.

Quite a few of the family disciples were able to think through this point. However, with the horrific death rate, some of them unconsciously flinched and waited it out.

Still, a hundred people quickly walked in.

To Liu Ming's surprise, Gao Chong and Mu Mingzhu were also within the formation, causing him to unconsciously give the two a glance.

Mu Ming Zhu's face did not look too good and it carried a hint of fear – obviously shocked by the earlier scene.

However, although the huge teenager by her side was a bit pale, his expression was notably more stable compared to the girl.

“Begin.”

When Lei Spirit Master saw that there were enough people, he immediately put out a command. Suddenly, an excited buzz spread

throughout the formation as tens of streams of Spirit Drops started to head toward the formation, creating a thick spirit rain once more.

“Boom.” After the sound, a huge white light fell from the sky, falling steadily toward Liu Ming’s body.

Liu Ming felt as if his shoulders were carrying ten thousand pound weight. His chest started to heat up and his body collapsed onto the ground as he was unable to withstand the pressure.

At this time, Liu Ming could not care about other people anymore. He could see himself being wrapped up by the white light. Then, a chill went down his back as it felt like something was squirming quickly into his dantian.

After seeing other people’s awakening, Liu Ming did not panic. He knew that this was the Spirit Master’s energy entering himself. Hitting the floor with both his hands, he tried to lift his body back up.

But using only his two arms, his body remained firmly on the ground.

Liu Ming felt a bit aghast.

Although he saw earlier how hard it was for others to get up, he did not think it would be hard to this degree.

He was not the type to be born with godly strength, nor did he specifically train in his strength. Thus, trying to get up via normal means was not easy.

When Liu Ming thought of this, his breathing started to quicken. But after taking a couple of deep breaths, he once again slammed the ground as he shouted, letting his body slowly leave the floor.

During this time, he actually used a secret technique that allowed his arm’s strength to momentarily multiply to allow his body to sit back up.

During this, Liu Ming could hear his own bones crunching while his skin started to turn red under the pressure.

After a while, Liu Ming was finally able to sit up straight. He spared a few moments to glance at others which resulted in a disappointed smile.

He was definitely not the first to get up. Many of the other Clan Practitioners had already sat up, including girls like Mu Mingzhu.

The other Clan Practitioners were obviously similar to Barbarian Ghost Sect Practitioner in that they had training in this area or have control over techniques like Liu Ming's that increases physical energy.

But when he saw Lei Zhen, Liu Ming's gaze couldn't help but pause.

Lei Zhen had a clear and relaxed expression. His clothes doesn't even have the slightest wrinkle, it seemed as if he was never hit by the white light's pressure at all.

As Liu Ming silently guessed why, the formation in the air started to spout out an obscure sound from the spells. The origin of the sound felt as it came from an extremely far location but at the same time, the sound felt like thunder roaring right next to Liu Ming's ear.

Suddenly, Liu Ming's body felt like it was boiling. The Yuan Li that was unmoving before started to circulate faster and more fiercely in every corner of his body.

Although this was anticipated, Liu Ming still felt a heat that tore apart his body while his Qi Paths were relentlessly bombarded by heaven and earth's energy. It was as if countless little knives were continuously cutting him, with each cut being more violent and wild.

Liu Ming's eyes lit up but his face did not reveal a huge painful expression.

On Savage island, in order to learn all the different secret techniques, Liu Ming's didn't even remember how many times he felt torture that made death seem more appealing. And also, whenever he finished casting the secret techniques, he would always end up with immense pain.

After practicing the secret techniques for over a thousand times on Savage Island, Liu Ming's pain tolerance is far beyond what one can imagine. It can be said it has reached the point of numbness for him.

At this time, Liu Ming could easily rid the effect the pain has on his focus. He could fully focus on using his Yuan Li Manipulation Technique

combined with the guidance from the mantra to forcibly gather the violent Yuan Li a shred at a time and force them into his dantian.

The other Clan Practitioners were not able to resist pain like Liu Ming. Under the pain, some of the ones with weaker wills completely lost control over the Yuan Li, letting it rush to their heads.

After a few small cycles of violent entering, the heads of these people started to crack open. And as time passed, other Clan Practitioners also continued to enter the death toll.

In the blink of an eye, an hour had passed. Within the formation, less than half of the people were still sitting firmly on the ground.

At this time, Lei Zhen letting out a long howl. Along his body, stripes of crystal light started to appear, coming out with nine stripes in all. In addition, each stripe of light had hints of lightning coursing through them.

He awakened extremely early and had Nine Spiritual Pulses.

“It really is, within the Elemental Spiritual Pulses, the Lightning Type Spiritual Pulse. And it’s even a Nine Spiritual Pulse.” From the high platform, the Barbarian Ghost Sect leader saw clearly what occurred on Lei Zhen’s body and immediately became immensely happy.

“Looks like our sect picked up a treasure this time. If it was only a Lightning type Spiritual Pulse or a Nine Spiritual Pulse, then it’s not too rare. But with both of them combined, his value to the sect is not any lower than Jia Lan’s Aphrodite body. I had thought that Lei Shi Xiong wasn’t too active in picking disciples but he had actually already put his hopes onto his own nephew. That single kid wins over other disciples by a thousand times.” Lin Shi Mei murmured, while looking at Lei Zhen with a passionate gaze.

“Lei Shi Di also has Lightning Element Spiritual Pulse. Thus, having him to teach this child is very appropriate.” The Barbarian Sect Leader said.

Lin Shi Mei heard this and murmured a sound of pity. With their blood relation, there’s no way other factions could take Lei Zhen.

“It’s a good thing Lei Clan’s Lei Shi Di is already in our Barbarian Ghost Sect. Otherwise, this kid might not have been sent to our sect. With his talent, he would have huge value in other sects as well.” Lin Shi Mei seemed as if she was on the side of the sect and said with a smile.

“Definitely. Especially with the Wind-Fire Sect. They originally became famous through Lightning type Techniques. If they were able to get this kid, they would probably treat him as the greatest treasure,” The Sect Leader said with a laugh.

“With this kid awakening successfully, only the Loose Practitioner “Gao Chong” is worth looking forward to. Oh yes. The kid with the huge mental energy that Sect Leader Shi Xiong pointed out is also within this batch. I wonder if he will awaken successfully.” As Lei Zhen sat down once more, Lin Shi Mei gave a glance at the rest of the people in the formation.

“Success or failure, we will naturally know the result in less than an hour.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect leader’s tone once again became calm.

But as his voice dropped, a huge noise boomed from the formation. Following, a strange energy wave started to roll out, causing the entire plaza to shake.

“What’s going on, what happened?” Lin Shi Mei jumped in fright.

Even the Sect Leader was dumbfounded, and stared at the formation without a word.

At this time, a Practitioner started to tremble and rose slowly up into the air. At the same time, the white light started to twirl around his body, creating a white misty aura.

“This is... Could it be that that thing has appeared? The Sect Leader saw the scene, and could no longer stay calm. He instantly went inside the formation without care.

At this time, the white light on the Practitioner in the air actually started to create a second white aura.

“Earth Rank Spiritual Pulses. This is effect of an Earth Rank Spiritual

Pulses being born. How can this be possible...” Lin Shi Mei finally awoken from her stupor and transformed into rays of light as she quickly rushed towards the Practitioner.

Above the formation, the Lei Spirit Master, Chu Shi Di and the other spirit masters also understood the situation. Almost all of them became incredibly excited as they rushed to that Practitioner, looking and counting at the streaks of light appearing before their eyes open.

At the moment, the one in midair chanting the Mantra was actually the Gui Scholar. When he saw the scene, it was obvious how shocked he was. Unfortunately, the mantra was still not complete so he could only stay in the same position. However, his gaze landed on the Practitioner with heavy passion.

This Practitioner had a huge physique and an honest face. It was Gao Chong from the Loose Practitioners.

At the same time, seated in the corner of the formation and under nobody’s notice, a number of white lines had also started to fill Liu Ming’s dantian. Under the control of a huge mental energy, the white lines started to crisscross at an unbelievable rate. Through gradual integrations, it slowly formed into a single white silver string ball.

# Chapter 18: Earth Rank Spiritual Pulse and Mu YunXian

At this time, all the Spirit Masters including the Barbarian Ghost Sect leader stared unblinkingly at the tall youth drifting down from the air. Nobody would split their focus on the other Practitioners.

With a puff sound, the twelfth light ring formed onto Gao Chong's body. He opened both his eyes and involuntarily raised his head to roar.

The roar was deep and long. After dozens of breaths, he finally started to calm down.

TL: Breaths is an ancient measurement of time, about 3-4 seconds

"Ah, I, this..." Gao Chong found himself in midair and his startled body immediately started to sink and fall back toward the ground.

"Child, do not be afraid!"

At this time, an ancient old voice rang next to Gao Chong's ear.

"Bang."

The youth, under the support of an enormous power, stopped steadily in midair. Following that, a silhouette shook and a blond old man appeared in a hemp garment. His face was filled with a smile while he scanned up and down without stop.

The voice just now was the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader. Unknowingly, he had revealed his true face at some point.

Almost at the same time, the wind started to pick up at the side. Lei Spirit Master, Lin Shi Mei, Chu Shi Di, and several other Spirit Masters appeared at the same time but after seeing the Sect Leader getting there first, they couldn't help but look at each other.

"Sect Leader Shi Xiong, this kid is..." Chu Shi Di hesitated for a bit and wanted to say something.

"You all don't have to say anything. The Spirit Opening Ceremony has

not been finished yet. Wait until all the Practitioner awaken, then we can talk about this kid. First return to protecting the formation, otherwise the consequences of our sect rules awaits.” The Sect leader waved his hands and said harshly in an uncompromising manner.

The others looked at each other for a bit. Although they were unwilling, under the Sect Leader’s valid words, they can only say “Yes” and return to their original positions.

But over half of them still stared at Gao Chong without stop.

And when Gao Chong understood the old man in front of him was the Barbarian Ghost Sect leader, he frantically started to bow and pay his respects.

“No need to be too ceremonious. You already formed an Earth Spiritual Pulse. The formation here and the Spirit Rain won’t have too much of an effect for you. Follow me over there, I want to ask you a few questions.” The Sect leader stopped the teenager’s kneeling with one hand and said in a strangely warm manner.

Although Gao Chong still didn’t fully understand yet, he naturally couldn’t decline under such shocking treatment.

The old man then grabbed the youth’s forearm, and flew directly back to the high platform.

Lin Shi Mei saw this and followed along without saying another word.

The only ones remaining were Chu Shi Di and his group of Spirit Masters who could only curse silently in their heart.

And at the top of the formation, the Gui Spirit Master, who had been chanting without stop, grew very frantic watching the situation.

According to the agreement, the Loose Practitioners would belong to their Nine Infants Faction. But the actions of the Sect Leader obviously showed that he wished to go back on the agreement.

This made him anxious, and he could only wish that the ceremony would immediately end. That way, he could follow the Sect Leader and



question him.

And it was not only him who had such thoughts. The rest of the Spirit Masters almost wished the Practitioners within the formation just quickly all died, so that they did not have to waste anymore time for them.

It should be known, every moment they spend here is a moment more for the Sect Leader to pull that “Earth Rank Spiritual Pulse” youth into his faction.

This type of Twelve Spiritual Pulse talent is something that occurs only once in a hundred years in Da Xuan. The last time the Barbarian Ghost Sect received talent of this level was at least several hundred years ago.

And for talent above Earth Rank Spiritual Pulse, the Fifteen Spiritual Pulse “Heaven Rank Spiritual Pulse” had never been seen before in the Barbarian Ghost Sect.

Only the top sect in Da Xuan, Heaven’s Moon Sect, had had this type of talent a thousand years ago.

This disciple helped lay the foundation for the Heaven’s Moon Sect to have power over the rest of the other sects for the next thousand years.

An Earth Rank Spiritual Pulse could not be compared to an Heaven Rank Spiritual Pulse. Still, as long as Gao Chong matured, it was very possible that Barbarian Ghost Sect would rise in power and strength.

With such terms, all the Spirit Masters including Chu Shi Di of each faction would naturally would use their utmost efforts to try to take this Earth Rank Spiritual Pulse disciple into their faction. This could easily allow their faction to become the number one power within the Sect.

As time went on, even though there was not much time till the end of the ceremony, many Clan Practitioners died painfully deaths. For a while, no one was able to awaken successfully.

Gui Ru Shen, Chu Shi Di and the others did not take this to heart at all and their gaze swept across the high platform.

What they saw on the platform was the Sect leader saying indiscernible

words Gao Chong who kept nodding his head like a chicken eating rice.

Seeing this, Chu Shi Di and all the Spirit Masters in the formation grew pale.

At this time, a cry came out of the formation. The white light around Liu Ming flashed and started to form white lines. As the lines appeared, the formation began to dance wildly while the air around started to make a buzzing sound.

With such large movement, some Spirit Masters finally noticed and turned their gaze over.

Seeing this strange scene, they had hope in their hearts that another good talent appeared.

But in contrast to what the Spirit Masters expected, there were only three light rays around Liu Ming's body when the white light stopped and disappeared. He was actually only a Three Spiritual Pulse.

Chu Shi Di and Lei Spirit Master saw this and felt disappointed. Immediately, they no longer bothered looking at Liu Ming and changed their gaze back to the high platform.

Gui Scholar's eyebrows slightly wrinkled before shaking his head as he no longer gave any attention to Liu Ming.

But at this moment, Liu Ming showed a very happy expression.

At this time, the silver light ball circled around his body nonstop. After a deep breath, Liu Ming shivered, it felt like every hair on his body started to absorb a cool stream from the outside world.

Although he only formed Three Spiritual Pulses, he had awakened his spirit sea. Thus, he was definitely a Spiritual Apostle.

In reality, if not for the fact that during the last crucial moment, Liu Ming split his immense mental energy in two – one half to guide the energy into his dantian and the other half to weave the energy inside his dantian to force it to form a circle. If he didn't do such a thing, it would have been a completely different story on whether or not he would have

been able to awaken his spirit sea.

This feat was due to him mastering Yuan Li Manipulation and having a strong conscious that could be split into two. If it was another disciple, there was no way they could have accomplished this.

While Liu Ming was still immersed in his immense happiness, the endless mantra finally stopped. Then a silhouette appeared and Lei Spirit Master blurrily appeared at the top of the formation. He announced without any expression, "Time is up. The Practitioners that were not able to awaken their spirit seas will all need to leave. There will be people that will take you away from this field. As for the Disciples that successfully awakened their spirit sea, please rest to the side for a bit. Later, we will go together to the Ancestral Halls. "

As the voice fell, the formation came to a stop with a buzz.

Chu Shi Di and the other Spirit Masters did not say anything and immediately shot toward the high platform.

When the Lei Spirit Master saw them, he rolled his eyes and after saying a few more words, he also flew along.

Liu Min saw this occurrence and looked at the high platforms intently. Afterwards, he walked out of the formation but stopped when he saw a dazed girl.

This girl was Mu Ming Zhu.

The girl did not die during the ceremony but also failed to awaken her Spirit Sea. With her arrogant personality, the disappointment in her heart could be imagined.

But at this time, a young female Spirit Apostle within the formation that looked similar to Mu MingZhu walked over and hugged the girl and started consoling her softly.

The young girl in purple could not hold back the pain in her heart and cried out loud.

In the end, the girl was only eleven to twelve years old. Receiving this

large of a shock, it was impossible for her to control her emotions any longer.

Liu Ming shook his head and started to walk away from the two girls.

But at this time, the pretty young woman suddenly called out and asked with a smile, “You are Young Master Bai, right? I, Mu YunXian, saw your father several times. Your successful awakening is something to celebrate. If you’d like, why don’t you find a chance to visit me? I can introduce several of my good friends to you.”

“So you are an acquaintance of father. Once I manage to have some free time, I will definitely come over for a visit.” Liu Ming’s quickly turned and connected his hands in a polite reply.

“Haha. Then I will wait patiently for you. Oh yes, now that you have become a Spirit Apostle, we will be fellow disciples under the same sect. You do not need to be overly polite. If you don’t mind, you can call me Sister Yun.” Mu Yun Xian smiled sweetly, with her eyebrows showing a hint of seduction.

Liu Ming acted as if he did not see it and left after a few words.

“Aunt Yun. This Bai Clan kid is only a Three Spiritual Pulse disciple. There’s no way he will become a Spirit Master. Is he even worth roping in?” Mu MingZhu asked quietly while her eyes were still red. She finally stopped crying when she heard their conversation.

“Ming Zhu, what would you know. It is not that easy to become a Spirit Master; our sect has over a thousand Spirit Apostles but less than 30 Spirit Masters. From that, you can see how hard to accomplish. Even the Nine Spiritual Pulses, they simply train a little faster than Six Spiritual Pulses like mine. Their chances of becoming a Spirit Master is only higher by one or two percent. Moreover, to keep a foothold in the sect is not an easy thing. If that kid can add a shred of strength to my circle, it would be worth it to rope him in; there are no disadvantages.” Mu YunXian shook her head and said in a voice that almost could not be heard.

“Aunt Yun, is your position in the sect not too good? Do I need to...”

“Relax. You don’t need to worry about me. Although you did not become a Spirit Apostle, as long as I am here, you won’t have to experience too many grievances. This isn’t a place to speak too much; go down first. About the situation in the Sect and the different taboos, I will find another chance to let you know in detail.” The young aunt cut off the young girl’s words, and said solemnly.

Mu MingZhu felt her heart tremble and naturally nodded her head before following her aunt out of the formation.

At this time, Liu Ming already arrived in the midst of the Barbarian Ghost Sect Disciples that successfully awakened their Spirit Sea. Then he casually sat next to a delicate and sweet looking young girl.

The young girl turned her head and looked carefully at his face. A strange look flashed in her eyes but her face quickly grew emotionless as she turned back around.

# Chapter 19: Sect Disciple

Though Liu Ming thought it was odd, he did not put it to heart. He glanced at the high platform in the distance.

Over there, a group of Spirit Masters were circling a tall youth and seemed like they were talking about something with him. However, due to the large distance, Liu Ming could not hear the contents of the discussion. He could only faintly feel that the atmosphere felt a bit tense over there.

At the same time, on the other circular high platforms, there were also quite a few groups discussing with each other.

“Si Ma Shi Xiong. It looks like our days in the future won’t be easy. Haha, this year actually has three extremely talented disciples. One with an Aphrodite Body, Nine Spiritual Pulse of the Lightning Attribute, and an Earth Rank Spiritual Pulse that’s only seen once in a hundred years. This batch of disciples are probably far more important to our master’s eyes than us,” A tall and skinny young man who was wearing a long green robe while wielding numerous bone spears on his back, smiled and said towards a man next to him that exuded a chilling aura.

“Hmph. Even if their talent is great, so what? Zhao Shi Xiong, Lan Shi Jie used to have far higher talent than us but where are they now. Although our sect values individual talent, they also push for free competition between disciples and survival of the fittest. Otherwise, the yearly Small Competitions, the Big Competition and Life and Death trial every three years would be a joke. Although these three Shi Dis and Shi Meis have overwhelming talent, they will still need to train for many years before they can threaten us. More so, even if there are people that should worry that their position in the sect, I’m afraid it won’t even be us. Yang Shi Xiong and Qian Shi Jie will have to worry about this even more.” The gloomy man closed his eyes, before replying with a cold smile.

“Haha. That’s true. They always place as the top ten core disciples. Now that we suddenly have so many impressive Shi Dis and Shi Meis, they won’t be able to sit so calmly anymore.” After hearing that, the tall and

skinny young man laughed lightly.

At the same time, on the other side of the circular high platform, two girls that were between a group of female Outer Sect Disciples started to discuss the same topic.

“Earth Rank Spiritual Pulse. I truly did not expect it to appear in our sect. Cui Er, looks like you will have a strong foe in the future. Before, in terms of cultivation speed, your Spirit Marrow Body would definitely be at the top. This allowed you to become a High Level Spirit Apostle from a Low Level Spirit Apostle in three years. However, the Earth Rank Spiritual Pulse contains twelve Spiritual Pulse. This allows him to absorb Heaven and Earth Energy several times faster than the average disciple which is probably faster than you by a bit. In addition, when an Earth Rank Spiritual Pulse tries to reach the Spirit Master realm, they have a much easier time compared to a Spirit Marrow Body.” An older woman in yellow said lightly to a fifteen to sixteen old girl in a green dress.

“Is the Earth Spiritual Pulse really that amazing? I still can’t believe that with my Spirit Marrow Body, I still can’t compare to his cultivation speed. If it comes to it, I’ll just play less in the future and focus more time training.” The pig-tailed girl stuck her tongue out, revealing a very cute face.

“I knew you weren’t putting in your full focus in training! From now on, you will live with me. I will personally supervise your training.” A blue dressed girl said happily while revealing a beautiful smile.

“Qian Shi Jie, please don’t....” The green dressed young girl’s face instantly turned miserable.

When the Outer Sect girls saw this, and couldn’t help but smile secretly.

“So how do all of you view our new Earth Spiritual Pulse Shi Di?” A large man dressed in a tight suit moved his gaze from the high platform to the companions next to him.

Standing next to him were actually Spirit Apostles that were quite old, around thirty to forty years old. There was even an elder that had fistfuls of white hair.

“Wu Shi Xiong’s question is a bit strange. We have already passed the age to fight for a Core Disciple position. The hope to become Spirit Master to us is basically nonexistent. Even if this tiny Shi Di has amazing talent, it doesn’t have anything to do with us.” Another dark skin large man around the age of thirty asked back in curiosity.

“That might not be certain. Feng Shi Xiong, how do you see it?” The big man dressed in the tight suit turned around to asked the elder with white hair.

“Wu Shi Di, if you have something to say then say it directly. We have known each other for quite a while now; there’s no need for all these twist and turns.” The white haired old man replied expressionlessly.

When the others heard this, they also revealed questioning gazes.

“Haha. Since Shi Xiong said it, then I will be frank. I’m planning to lead us to go and submit to that kid: our “Gao Shi Di.” The vigorous man said with a laugh and did not hide anything anymore.

“What? Submit to that kid that just became a Spirit Apostle?” Immediately, there was someone that couldn’t control his voice.

“Right. Don’t any of you know that because we are too old to compete for a core disciple position, the resources we get from the sect is many times lower than before. Normally we can only risk our lives to accomplish missions in order to gather Contribution Points to continue training. Under this kind of situation, do you think we have a chance to aim for Spirit Master? According to what I know, everybody over thirty years old that becomes a Spirit Master use an enormous amount of resources. In addition, they rely on the help of other Spirit Masters and good luck in order to barely enter the Spirit Master realm.” The vigorous man said slowly.

“Oh. Wu Shi Di means that we should bet on the fact that the Earth Spiritual Pulse kid will definitely become a Spirit Master. And if we go submit to him now, then later on he may help us out when he becomes a Spirit Master.” The gray haired old man eyes opened, as he understood what the vigorous man meant.



“Feng Shi Xiong is right, that is what I meant. The sect has strict rules and us older disciples cannot compete with the new disciples. Still, rules are dead and people are alive. If it’s just a bit of indirect help, our little Shi Di shouldn’t refuse. Also, this type of stuff have been done before.” The vigorous man replied with confidence.

“Yes, this is definitely a way.” As everyone understood what the big man meant, they couldn’t help but grow interested.

Looking at the situation now, relying only on their own strength to break into the Spirit Master realm was definitely impossible. But if it was with the help of another Spirit Master, then a shred of hope would appear.

“You all can do that but I will not participate.” The gray haired old man was quiet for a while, before saying while shaking his head.

“Feng Shi Xiong, why not?” Wu Shi Di was very surprised.

“All of you Shi Dis can still considered young. As for me, after battling with a Thousand Foot Ghost once, I sacrificed over half of my life force to cast a forbidden technique. Even my appearance has turned this old. Even if a Spirit Master helps, there is still no chance of becoming a Spirit Master for me. So, a few days ago I already applied at the Duty Hall to leave the sect and establish my own clan. Haha, even if I cannot become a Spirit Master, I still cannot let my own bloodline disappear.” The gray haired old man gave a wry smile and explained.

As others heard this, their expression grew dim.

In a hidden room within a mountain in the Barbarian Ghost Sect, a person had his eyes closed while sitting in an area filled with black air.

Suddenly, the one of the secret holes in the room opened and a piece of paper quickly flew in.

“Those guys. Didn’t I say to not disrupt my cultivation unless there was something important?” The dark shadow saw the scene and grew frustrated. However, with a move of his hand, the piece of paper fell upon his palm. He lowered his head and gave it a quick glance.

“What? This year not only had the Jia Lan girl’s Aphrodite Body but also a Nine Spiritual Pulse with an Lightning Attribute? Even the legendary Earth Rank Spiritual Pulse appeared! Haha! This is amazing. I, Yang, was just thinking that the sect’s big competition was getting boring. But it looks like the I can look forward to the upcoming years.” After the dark shadow saw the paper, he was no longer angry and instead laughed out in happiness.

The laughter shook the entire room. The dark air also started to shake violently and spread out. Faintly, an enormous skeleton tens of feet tall could be seen standing behind the dark shadow.

Liu Ming gave a calm look outside the formation. As the Clan Practitioners saw that Liu Ming and many others were able to become Spirit Apostles, they grew excited and the third batch quickly assembled.

And as the people on the high platform finally finished what they were saying, Lei Spirit master, Gui Scholar and other Spirit Masters also flew back with a gloomy expression.

After that moment, the buzzing sound of the formation rung and the Opening Spirit Ceremony started once more.

Half a day later, as the daylight grew dim, the last surviving batch of the Clan Practitioners walked numbly out of the formation.

Out of the eight remaining batches of Clan Practitioners, only six people successfully awakened their Spirit Seas. In addition, most of them were on the level of Liu Ming with three Spiritual Pulses.

From the other two Loose Practitioners, only the red haired youth was able to become a Spirit Apostle.

But the Spirit Masters present didn’t pay much attention and hurriedly announced the end of the Opening Spirit ceremony. Besides one of them staying behind, the rest of them flew back to the high platform once more. Obviously when they were speaking with Gao Chong earlier, there were no results.

The remaining Spirit Master slowly landed in front of the group of Spirit

Apostles. As the light dispersed from his body and showed his appearance, it was surprisingly a woman in her forties. She wore rough clothing and had an ordinary appearance but her gaze was abnormally cold.

“I am your Li Shi Shu. Follow me. You will first arrive and wait in the Ancestral Halls and the Sect Leader will arrive there shortly.” The lady said this and performed a technique with one hand. Opening her mouth once more, she blew out rich dark air.

The dark air scattered in four directions before turning into black cloud the size of an acre. It floated quietly, as if it was flat ground.

The lady walked up the black cloud without a single word. As the disciples saw this, they also hurriedly rushed on.

Liu Ming stood on the black cloud and looked at the headless corpses in the formation that still hadn't been cleaned up before the dark cloud rose up, carrying tens of new Spirit Apostles toward a faraway mountain peak.

# Chapter 20: Belonging

The Barbarian Ghost Sect had dozens of mountains of differing sizes; however, most of them belong to the eight different Factions within the sect. Only the largest mountain of them did not belong to any Fraction and instead housed the Duty Hall, Scripture Library, Alchemy Room and other very important structures that belong to the Sect. Even at night, there were carefully selected disciples to patrol and guard the area.

Since the ancestral halls is where all the Barbarian Sect Disciples pay their respects to their ancestors, it was naturally constructed on this largest mountain.

The giant dark cloud started to descend upon a flat platform at the middle of the mountain. From a nearby hall, many green robed disciples flew out to pay their respects to the lady on the black cloud. They said, "Welcome Li Shi Shu. Everything within the ancestral hall has been readied. All that is left is the Sect Leader and all of the Shi Shus."

"Good. First lead the new disciples inside. After a while, the Sect Leader will also come along." The lady ordered very casually.

"Yes, Shi Shu." The green robed disciples nodded and then headed toward Liu Ming and his group of people. After a greeting, they brought the new Disciples toward the large hall.

The lady stood in place without moving as if she was going to wait outside for the Barbarian Ghost Sect leader and others.

Sandwiched between the group of people, as Liu Ming entered the hall doors, he glanced upwards.

Hanging from above was a long silver plaque. On it, the words "Ancestral Hall" were written in golden letters, with a faint crystal light swirling on the plaque.

As soon as they entered the large door, quite a few disciples took a deep cold breath.

From the outside, the building looked like a normal temple hall, but the

inside was actually a hall hundreds of feet tall and stretching acres wide.

Within the hall there were hundreds of black chairs. At the end of the hall there was a long ancient painting.

The painting portrayed the back of a person in green. On his head, a long hairpin could be seen while he had a long sword without a sheath swung over his back. His feet were stepping on two abnormal and hideous skulls that had a layer of black aura, giving off an extremely mysterious feeling. Beneath the drawing, there was a silver altar around fifty to sixty feet long. To each side, a lantern was lit. At the center, there were fifteen to sixteen golden tablets with different names written in black on them.

And in front of the altar there was a large green cauldron. Scores of scented candles burned down over half way were still stuck in it, allowing it to give off a solemn feeling.

After the green robed disciples led all the other disciples to stand in the hall, they returned to standing straight at the doorway, not caring in the least about the newest disciples.

As all the youths saw this, they couldn't help but look at each other. However, being affected by the solemn feeling in the hall, nobody dared to whisper secretly. They could only stand in place and wait honestly.

Liu Ming sized up the four corners of the huge hall, and unconsciously let his gaze fall back into the huge drawing hanging at the front.

For this painting to be hung in such an important spot, the figure within the painting would probably be the founder of the Barbarian Ghost Sect. However the fact that the painting only showed a backline was quite peculiar.

Liu Ming's random thoughts didn't last long since after a couple of minutes, footsteps sounded from the entrance of the hall. The Green-robed disciples bowed in unison and said: "Greetings to the Sect Leader and various Shi Shus!"

"Stand." The Barbarian Ghost's Sect Leader faintly came and many Spirit Masters came in from the entrance. At the end of their line was

the Barbarian Sect Leader.

At this time, the Spirit Masters had dispersed their Protecting Light and showed their true faces.

Liu Ming and the new disciples quickly followed suit and bowed.

However, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader did not let everyone rise. Instead, he brought the others to go to the ceremonious table and place a candle within the bronze three-footed pot. Afterwards, he turned around to allow everyone to rise.

“I am Huang Shi. I think that over half of you know me so I will not waste my time. Since all of you have opened your Spirit Seas, you will become a true Barbarian Ghost Sect Disciple after you pay your respects to our founder. The painting within this Ancestral Hall is our founder ‘Six Yin’. Of the eight factions that our sect has, six of them were founded from him. The slates below the painting represent ancestors that have stepped into the Crystallization State. Without them, our sect definitely would have fallen. Now, all of you will pay your respects to them and state your name at the same time.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader solemnly said.

“Crystallization State? Is there a state above the Spirit Master State?” Liu Ming heard this phrase for the first time and felt a tinge in his heart. As someone who wasn’t a practitioner from birth, he really knew too little about this world.

Seeing how the other disciples were shocked by this, they probably knew about this beforehand.

While Liu Ming was thinking about those thing, Gao Chong, who was an Earth Spiritual Pulse Disciple, under the direction of the Sect Leader, kneeled down first in front of the painting and said: “Disciple Gao Chong, after being accepted in Barbarian Ghost Sect today, wishes for the founder and various ancestors to look after me. I will try my best to bring pride and power to the Sect.”

Afterwards, he stood up and placed a candle into the huge bronze pot before returning to his place.

With someone starting it off, the youths gradually walked up to pay their respects. Their words were all alike to Gao Chong's.

As soon as all of the disciples finished paying their respects, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader once again stood in front of everyone. He said with a motionless expression, "Our sect has three forbidden rules, thirty-six sect laws. Break a single one of them and the worst will be destruction of your flesh while pulling out your soul, the easiest would be the sealing of your Fa Li while being thrown into the black wind valley to go experience the wind-lightning punishment. As for the full descriptions of these sect rules, someone will tell you in detail in a few days. All of you better take care of yourselves."

TL: Fa Li is the Spirit Apostle version of Yuan Li

"Yes." The group of disciples replied loudly with all their heart.

"Also, our sect also splits into eight factions: Dancing Ghost, Baleful Yin, Mysterious Glyphs, Nine Infants, Poisonous Spirit, Corpse Refinery, Heaven's Secret, and Blood Control. According to traditional practice, the Shi Shus from each of the eight sects will take turns picking you. Do any of you have any comments?" The Barbarian Ghost Sect leader asked patiently.

Naturally, none of the disciples would actually speak out and object.

Seeing this, the Sect Leader continued satisfied, "Since it's like that, then let an old man like me represent the Blood Control faction to first pick a disciple. Gao Chong, your talent is not bad; are you willing to join the Blood Control faction and become my personal disciple?"

As soon as the words were out, the Barbarian Ghost Sect leader's gaze fell sharply onto the tall youth.

"Gao Chong is willing to become Sect Leader's disciple." As the tall youth heard the old man, he walked out of the group without hesitation and gave a large bow to the old man in respect.

"Good, child, you can get up. From now on you are this old man's seventh personal disciple. Your other Shi Xiongs and Shi Jies will be

introduced to you later when you follow me to our residence.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect leader laughed loudly and allowed the tall youth to get up and retreated to the side with him.

The Ru, Chu and Lei Spirit Masters had ugly faces when they saw this but didn’t actually speak up against this.

“I am Chu Qi, the faction leader of Baleful Yin. Ru Lan, come over here.” Chu Spirit Master then walked out and waved to a girl that was mixed in among the crowd.

Chu Spirit Master, who showed his true face, actually looked about thirty years old and was quite handsome.

“What? She’s the one who has the Aphrodite’s body!”

“No way. I know her, isn’t her name is Shu Er?”

“Stupid, she used a fake name!”

The disciples next to the girl quickly made way while the other disciples started muttering among themselves.

The girl treated all of this commotion as if it was nothing and walked out of the crowd with a calm face. After slightly bowing to Chu Qi, she stood up without any orders.

Chu Qi showed approval and nodded before bringing the girl to his side.

“Aphrodite’s Body!” Liu Ming stared at the girl again before remembering the extremely beautiful girl that he saw while waiting for his Opening Spirit Ceremony. Suddenly, he connected the dots and realized the relationship between the two.

“Lei Zhe, what are you waiting for? Get over here.” The Lei Spirit Master stood where he was and yelled at Lei Zhen among the crowd.

The edges of Lei Zhen’s eyes twitched as he walked out of the crowd as if he was unwilling.

Like this, the eight factions picked their first disciple. Eight of the most talented disciples quickly followed behind the various Spirit Masters.



The Gui Spirit Master helplessly choose a Nine Spiritual Pulse disciple. It seemed like this was the best disciple he could gather under the approval of the Sect Leader.

For the Nine Infant Faction Leader, being able to have a Nine Spiritual Pulse Disciple was definitely something that was worthy of celebration. However, when he thought about the Earth Spiritual Pulse Disciple that was promised to his faction, he could only force his smile.

As for the other factions, they all chose Nine Spiritual Pulse Disciples.

In the second round, all the factions basically choose the remaining Nine Spiritual Pulses, Six Spiritual Pulses and disciples that showed talent in a particular subject.

As a Three Spiritual Pulse Disciple, Liu Ming naturally wasn't able to be chosen in the first few rounds.

However when the Six Spiritual Pulse Disciples were all chosen, someone finally noticed Liu Ming.

It was Ghost Dance Faction's Lin Spirit Master. Her full name was Lin Caiyu and looked like a twenty year old girl. When her gaze swept across Liu Ming, she remembered how the Sect Leader said that Liu Ming's mental energy was much stronger than normal people.

Their Sect relied quite heavily on the art of illusions and thus needed some Disciples that had decent mental energies.

After pondering for a moment, Lin Spirit Master decided that when it was her turn again, she would choose Liu Ming.

As for the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader, he was already planning out the training route for Gao Chong and completely forgot about Liu Ming.

However, something happened beyond Lin Spirit Master's expectations.

"Oh, you're name is Bai Chongtian right? Are you willing to our Nine Infant Faction?" When it was the Gui Spirit Master's turn, he pointed to Liu Ming and asked in a carefree voice.

# Chapter 21: Recorded Disciple

“Yes, I am willing!” Liu Ming was naturally unable to decline a Spirit Master, even if the other party seemed like he had not put any thought into his words.

“Good, you can also stand to one side.” Gui Spirit master instructed in a carefree manner.

Currently, there were already two standing besides Ru Scholar. Besides the one he had chosen at the start called ‘Xiao Feng’, a nine Spiritual Pulse disciple, the other was a red haired Loose Practitioner named Yu Cheng.

However, the two were wearing completely opposite expressions. Xiao Feng was gloomy and depressed while Yu Cheng looked happy as he smiled at Liu Ming.

Lin Caiyun could not help but hesitate inwardly when she saw Liu Ming being picked first by Ru Spirit Master.

If it were some other faction, she would only need to ask and the other party would not reject her request for a three Spiritual Pulse disciple. However, the Nine Infant Faction did not have good relations with the other factions. In addition, they had forced out of a Earth Spiritual Pulse this time. If she once again suggested to exchange disciples, it was very likely that the other party would see it as a form of provocation.

“It’s better to forget about it!”

Lin Spirit Master weighed her options in her heart for a while before sighing lightly as she finally made up her mind.

After all, this “Bai Cong Tian” was only a Three Spiritual Pulse Disciple. It was not worth to risk angering another Spirit Master for him.

The Faction head of the Dancing Ghost Faction did not open her mouth in the end. When it came to her turn, she casually picked one of the other three Spiritual Pulse Disciples.

In the blink of an eye, the tens of disciples had been completely cleaned

up by the various factions of the Barbarian Ghost Sect. The Faction Leaders then brought their newly chosen disciples and left the Ancestral Hall one after another to return to their respective mountain tops.

With Gui Spirit Master's spells, Liu Ming and a few others were brought towards one of the mountain tops at the fringe of the mountain range through a grey cloud.

This mountain top was the base of the Nine Infant Faction, also known as the "Nine Infant Peak". However, the buildings on this mountain top were clearly unable to match up to the other mountain peaks. Especially at the very peak; only a few huge temples could be seen.

The grey cloud suddenly scattered and Liu Ming and the rest landed on a plaza right in front of one of the temples.

Here, there were already ten or so Nine Infant Faction disciples all clad in green gowns waiting.

Right at the front of these disciples was a thirty year old man with dishevelled hair and a vermillion gourd at his waist. Seeing Gui Spirit Master, Liu Ming and the rest, the man's eyes shone as moved forward to welcome them:

"Shi Xiong, how did it go? I heard that an Earth Spiritual Pulse Loose Practitioner appeared in the recent Opening Spirit Ceremony. Did you bring him back?"

"What do you think Shi Di, with such a high tier disciple, would the main faction give him to us? However, there was a good haul this time, I brought back a nine Spiritual Pulse Disciple. The few of you come and pay your respects to your Shi Shu Zhu Chi." Gui Spirit Master let out a bitter laugh before gesturing for the new disciples to come forward.

"Our respects to Zhu Shi Shu!" Liu Ming and the rest did not dare to tally as they immediately came forward to pay their respects.

"No need for so much bowing, please stand up. Then the main division has taken the Earth Spiritual Pulse Disciple; nothing weird about that. If the main division left such a gem for us, then there would be something

fishy about it.” As Zhu Chi heard these words, he first waved his hands about before his expression turned gloomy.

“This is not a good place to talk. Let us first enter before we continue our discussion.” Gui Spirit Master cut the conversation with these words.

Naturally, Zhu Chi Yuan had no issues with that and immediately accompanied Gui Spirit Master in as they both walked towards the temple behind them. The rest of the disciples quickly followed suit.

The new disciples and the original Nine Infant disciples subconsciously split into two groups as they sized each other up.

Liu Ming somewhat curiously sized up the ten old disciples in one glance.

Half of the group was male and the other half was female and most of them were around seventeen or eighteen to twenty years old. The oldest was a determined looking twenty seven or eight year man. He had a heavy aura around him as if there was more to him than the eye could see and he also gave one a steadfast feeling.

At this moment, the man also realized that Liu Ming’s attention was on him and he lightly smiled at the latter.

Liu Ming likewise returned the gesture with a good-natured smile.

Among the other disciples, only two other females also drew his attention.

One had an goose-egg-shaped face, fair skin and was rather tall. Overall she gave others an exceptionally gentle feeling. The other was had relatively thick and black eyebrows and eyes like water while she also had an exceedingly ample figure.

The appearance of these two women were extraordinary. It was easy to imagine them drawing the gazes of many young men wherever they went.

On Liu Ming’s side, besides Xiao Feng and Yu Cheng, there was also one male and female disciple. Both of which were three Spiritual Pulse disciples casually picked by Gui Spirit Master in the end.

While Liu Ming was still secretly pondering to himself, the group walked into the temple. Gui Spirit Master and Zhu Chi both sat down somewhere at the front while the rest of the disciples could not help but stand after splitting into two rows.

“Shi Chuan, these are your new juniors. This is your Shi Shi Xiong. As of now, every ordinary matters in the mountain are handled by him.” Gui Spirit Master muttered to himself for a while before beckoning towards the twenty seven or eight year old man and introducing him to the rest.

“Fellow Shi Dis and Shi Meis, if you have any needs while in the mountain, you can come and find me.” Shi Chuan cupped his fist at the new disciples and said with a smile.

Liu Ming and the rest did not dare to delay as they one by one bowed in return.

“In our factions, besides the two Spirit Masters, Zhu Shi Shu and me, there is still one more called Zhong Shi Gu. However, she is currently in seclusion for a breakthrough so all of you would be unable to see her. Additionally, Zhu Shi Xiong and I have limited energy and thus we are unable to take every single one of you as personal disciples. We will only take on Xiao Feng and Yu Cheng, the rest of you will be considered as Recorded Disciples.” Gui Spirit Master’s gaze swept across Liu Meng and the rest as he slowly explained.

TL: Shi Gu = female version of Shi Shu

At these words, Liu Ming felt somewhat depressed in his heart but he did not let it show on his face.

The other two three Spiritual Pulse youths showed disappointed expressions but naturally did not dare to speak back.

“All of you need not worry. Whether you are a Recorded Disciple or a Personal Disciple, you will only learn the most basic techniques of the sect at the initial stage. There is not much difference even if we personally impart these techniques as your progress will mainly depend on your own comprehension. Even though the few of you are somewhat lacking in the talent department, as long as one shows that he or she is

exceptionally gifted during training, Gui Shi Shu and I can also once again take you on as a personal disciple. If you have any problems in your training, you can first approach your Shi Xions and if they are unable to answer your queries, then come and find the two of us. However, there are not many Spirit Masters in our faction, the three of us also need time in seclusion for training and we also need to frequently go away to complete missions assigned by the sect. If all three of us are somehow not at the mountain, there is still an Wisdom Hall set up by the sect. Every half a month, a Spirit Master will be there to pass on his own specialized techniques and at the same time answer any questions the attending disciples have. You can also go there, I believe that it would certainly be an excellent experience for you.” Zhu Chi supplemented from one side.

“Good, from now on, you will slowly understand about the matters of the sect. Shi Chuan, you will first bring these three disciples down to the Duty Hall to take their things and then arrange living quarters for them. Also remember to inform them about the rules and taboos of the sect.” Gui Spirit Master nodded as he gave out instructions.

“The three Shi Dis and Shi Meis, please!” Shi Chuan nodded and gestured respectfully to Liu Ming and the other two.

After which, he brought the trio towards the door and left.

In the instance when they walked out of the door, Liu Ming faintly heard Gui Spirit Master command the remaining disciples:

“Besides Xiao Feng and Yu Cheng, the rest of you can also leave. In another two months, it would be time for the small competition. All of you need to be more diligent in your training such that you can win honor for our faction!”

Naturally, the acknowledging sounds of the disciples followed.

“Three Shi Dis, follow me. I will first help arrange your dwellings before we go to the Duty Hall. Oh, that’s right, I still do not know your names!” Shi Chuan brought the trio out of the entrance while he asked with a smiling expression.

“Shi Shi Xiong is too courteous, I am called Bai CongTian!”

“Xue Shan”

“Wan XiaoQian”

Liu Ming and the other two hastily answered.

Xue Shan had a rather sturdy figure and a dark complexion while Wan XiaoQian, who could not be considered good-looking, did have a trace of a firmness that was rarely found in a woman between her eyebrows.

“So it's Bai Shi Di, Xue Shi Di and Wan Shi Di. Our faction has only ten or so disciples. Compared to the hundreds that the other seven factions have, our numbers are rather lacking. Furthermore, according to our rules of our sect, any disciple over the age of thirty is not allowed to continue staying on the mountain. They need to find their own cave dwellings outside, thus there are not many disciples living in the mountain and the dwellings we have here are rather plentiful. The three of you can go ahead and take your pick of the dwellings, this can count as one of our faction's few luxuries.” Shi Chuan gently smiled.

“From Shi Xiong's tone, can it be possible that there is something we have to pay special attention to when we pick a dwelling?” As Liu Ming heard these words, a thought flashed in his head and he turned to inquire of Shi Xiong.

Xue Shan and Wan XiaoQian exchanged a glance at Liu Ming's words.

“Bai Shi Di is indeed a smart person. For normal training, it is better to choose a dwelling where the Yuan Qi is thicker. Although most of the dwellings are constructed in such areas, there are still minute differences between them. In addition, according to the different techniques a disciple chooses to practice, different dwellings would be more suitable. For example, if one practises a Light or Strength attributed technique, he would naturally want to dwell in a place where the sun will be able to shine anytime during a day. Those that pick a technique that is more Dark attributed will have an opposite opinion. They would love to stay underground where all twenty four hours will be spent away from the sunlight. This way, they will save effort and obtain better results during their training.” Shi Chuan opened his mouth to lecture.

“So that is how it works!” Liu Ming and the two suddenly exclaimed in a flash of understanding.

“However, since the three of you have just started training, you need not think too much on this matter. As long as you choose a place where the Yuan Qi is relatively thicker, your training progress will be slightly faster.” Shi Chuan once again explained.

“Many thanks to Shi Shi Xiong for your advice!” Xue Shan somewhat gratefully replied.

“Heh heh, we are already disciples from the same sect. You three need not be so courteous. Although our faction is weaker than the other factions, our disciples are always rather united because of that. Compared to the other factions, we end up with less of those messy and annoying situations of in-fighting. Since the three of you have joined our faction, you can be at ease and concentrate on your training. Alright, I will bring all of you to the empty dwellings to take a look around. If you see any place that you fancy, feel free to speak up.” Shi Chuan had reached the plaza they had initially arrived at when they came to the Nine Infant Peak and soon after started to chant some phrases, in preparation to cast a spell.



# Chapter 22: Duty Hall

A dark cloud that was ten feet in length slowly condensed and rose up in front of the four.

Shi Chuan beckoned towards the three and brought them flying down the mountain.

Standing on the dark grey cloud, Liu Ming felt that the cloud under his feet was soft and spongy. This was a huge contrast to Li Shi Shu's black cloud's hard and solid ground. In addition, this cloud of Shi Chuan's didn't fly very fast. Except for being able to be moving high in the air, it's actual speed wasn't much faster than Liu Ming's speed before he became a Spirit Apostle.

"Shi Shi Xiong, I see that everyone in the sect can call on the clouds to use as transportation. What kind of spell is this and how fast can one go with the cloud?" Finally, Liu Ming couldn't help but ask his question.

"Bai Shi Di, this is called Soaring Sky Technique. It's an extremely simple spell; all Shi Di has to do is convert your original Yuan Li to Fa Li to be able to perform it. As for the speed, it's very slow. It's only suitable for short distance flying, if you're going to be traveling a moderate distance, it would be smarter to use other methods." Shi Chuan answered without pause.

"Hearing Shi Xiong's tone, there are more than one flying techniques?" Liu Ming's eyes brightened.

"Of course! If you want to fly, there are quite a few ways to besides the Soaring Sky Technique. However, these methods require Glyphs or Totems to perform. For example, one could use a special flying totem or the Godspeed Glyph. Or if one practices one's own cultivation method to a certain level, one can perform the unique Escape Technique associated with it. For example, the famous 'Sword Flight' is the Escape Technique associated with Sword Practitioners. However, the former are much simpler. As long as Shi Di reaches the Middle Spirit Apostle level, you will have the strength to activate a couple of the simpler Glyphs. At High

Spirit Apostle level, you will be able to use a couple of the single-functioned Totems. As for the latter, there are few in the Sect that know or have achieved such a level in their cultivation technique such that they know Escape Techniques.” Shi Chuan thought about it for a moment before replying.

“What is a totem? Is it the same thing as a Practitioner Weapon?” Liu Ming asked again.

“Haha. Of course they are not the same. The power between the two is far from the same and after bonding to a Totem, you change the size of the Totem and use it based on your liking. The two things are not even on the same level. However, Totems are extremely rare and besides the Shi Shus and other on their level, there are only a few Spirit Apostles that have Totems. In our faction, besides Zhu Shi Mei, all of us disciples are still using Practitioner Weapons.”

“Zhu Shi Mei?”

“She’s Zhu Shi Shu’s daughter, you should have seen her in the main temple earlier.”

“So it’s like that. Thanks for your help.” Liu Ming finally understood the differences and recalled the two girls’ pretty faces.

“Shi Shi Xiong, does our faction have numerous entrance Cultivation Methods that we can choose from like the other factions? If Gui Teacher isn’t going to teach us personally, then where are we supposed to learn these Cultivation Methods?” The girl named Wan Xiaoqing also pipped up.

“If Shi Mei wants to learn the entrance Cultivation Methods, then the Scriptures Pavilion has the thirteen entrance Cultivation Methods for all disciples to learn free of charge and restrictions. However, since our Sect is split into eight factions, there are favorable methods for each faction. For example, in order to learn our Nine Infant Faction’s most famous Cultivation Method is called Dark Styx Devil Method, one should choose Earth Spirit Method or Dark Sunflower Method as their entrance Cultivation Method. If you choose to start with a different method, you’ll

have much trouble practicing the Dark Styx Devil Method and not be able to achieve the higher forms of the method. In addition, a couple of the more powerful sect techniques require certain Cultivation Methods to be at a certain level. Thus, it can be said that picking a entrance Cultivation Method is very important.” This time, Shi Chuan was extremely serious when he was speaking.

“Shi Shi Xiong, I have another question. I heard that...”

Like that, Shi Chuan slowly brought the three to their possible dwellings and answered the questions that they may have had.

Under Shi Shi Xiong’s suggestions, the three found their dwellings after some time.

The dwelling Liu Ming chose was a three house courtyard that was at the waist of the mountain. Not only was its position extremely far and distanced, it was also quite quiet.

Afterwards, Shi Chuan brought them to the mountain in which the Duty Hall was at.

Not long after, the dark cloud which was carrying everyone landed in front of a 300 foot tall tower.

“Bai Shi Di, this tower has three levels and is owned by the Duty Hall. Each level has a different function: the first level is for the various chores and assigned missions within the Sect. The second level is for the posted missions that can be taken in order to earn Contribution Points and Spirit Stones. The third floor is Duty Hall’s disciples’ temporary resting place.”

“Contribution Points! Spirit Stones!” Liu Ming eyes slightly closed while he thought about the two new terms.

On the way to the Duty Hall, he had learned that normal disciples within the sect could only learn the entrance Cultivation Method and a couple faction techniques for free. For the powerful and secret techniques, one had to earn enough Contribution Points in order to learn from the Scripture Pavilion. These Contribution Points could as be exchanged for pills, Glyphs, and various other materials or be used as

entrance fees to special training places within the sect.

As for Spirit Stones, they were the most universal currency in the Practitioner World. They were basically stones that contained Worldly Qi and were cut into slabs the size of an inch in length and width.

The huge crystals that were used in the Opening Spirit Ceremony were original Spirit Stones that had not been cut into individual small pieces.

Even though it was the first time Liu Ming had heard of these two objects, he knew that if he wanted to excel within the sect, these two things would be extremely important. The gaze in which he looked at the huge tower also grew heated.

At this time, there were few disciples entering and exiting the huge tower; probably because it was quite late.

Quickly, Shi Chuan brought the trio through the huge door of the tower.

The first floor of the tower was only about a half acre large and had a long, rectangular stone table with an old man with muddled eyes behind it. In front of him were about five to six disciples listening to what the old man was saying.

“Okay, you can leave. I will count this mission as complete. However, if your next mission is still as bad, I will penalize your Contribution Points. Take out your name plates.” Finally, the old man impatiently said.

“Thank you, Hu Enforcer!” The outer sect disciples were all smiles as they hurriedly took out white jade slates and placed them on the large stone table.

The Hu Enforcer also took out a light gold stick and tapped the white jade slates before putting away the stick.

After this was done, the outer disciples smiled as they left the stone counter.

“Hu Shi Xiong, I have brought a couple of new Shi Dis to receive their things.” Seeing this, Shi Chuan quickly brought the trio forward and

respectfully said to the Hu old man.

“I was wondering who it was. So it’s Shi Shi Di. These few disciples are the new disciples in your faction? They all look promising. Oh right, the Dark Qi Stones that Shi Di brought last time, are there any more of those? I’ll be buying them all at the same price as before.” Once the old man saw Shi Chuan’s face, he immediately smiled and ignored Liu Ming and the new disciples after a curious glance.

“Hu Shi Xiong, I’ve been busying training recently and haven’t had time to go to the Dark Sand Valley.” Shi Chuan’s eyebrows furrowed as he faintly said.

“Haha, no problem. When Shi Shi Di has time, remember to bring Shi Xiong a couple pieces. Oh, I’ll retrieve the things for the three Shi Dis. Your names are....”

The old man with the last name Hu showed disappointment on his face but soon cheered up as he turned to Liu Ming and the new disciples.

Liu Ming and the others quickly said their names and after verifying that these names were all correct, the old man walked to the blank green stone wall behind him.

The result scared the new disciple trio.

Right after making contact with the wall, a bright white light shone from the old man and after the light disappeared, the old man was gone.

“Bai Shi Di, you don’t have to be so surprised. That was just an extremely simple Passing Object Technique along with a couple of seals.” Shi Chuan smiled as he explained.

Hearing this, the shock on Liu Ming’s trio’s faces diminished a little.

After a while, Hu Old Man came out again with a flash of light. In his hands were quite a few things that he placed on the stone table.

“Each person will get one nameplate, one Dust Avoidance Suit, one Practitioner Sword and five Spirit Stones. Also, I will remind you that new Disciples can get five Spirit Stones from here every month, but you also

need to finish a mission in order to receive their five stones. Alright, each of you must mark the slates in front of me with a drop of blood in order to activate them.” Hu Old Man lightly said.

“The nameplate is a thing of the sect that will show one’s identity and Contribution Points. By itself, it’s a special Practitioner Weapon that will bond to one after a drop of blood is placed onto it. After bonding, it can only be used by one person.” Shi Chuan explained at the side.

Even though Liu Ming still didn’t really understand, he knew that now was not the time to ask and moved his finger to his mouth. After biting a small wound onto the tip of his finger, he let a drop of blood fall onto the slate.

The drop of red blood landed squarely and was sucked into the Jade Slate.

Instantly, the nameplate shone with a layer of soft white light and a couple of weird silver glyphs before turning back to normal.

Liu Ming curiously picked up the normal nameplate and poked around.

“Bai Shi Di, once you have Fa Li, all you need to do is insert a tiny bit of Fa Li into this and you will learn how to use it.” Shi Chuan said.

Nodding, Liu Ming quickly put away the nameplate and grabbed a green Sect Disciple clothing and a yellow sheathed sword.

Xue Shan and Wan Xiaoqing copied Liu Ming’s actions and quickly finished.

After saying thanks to the Hu Old Man, the three followed Shi Chuan out of the stone tower.

“We still have some time right now. Bai Shi Di, do you guys want to go to the Scripture Pavilion to look around?”

Right after exiting, Shi Chuan stopped and asked after some hesitation.

# Chapter 23: Ruan Shi Shu

“We must go to the Scripture Pavilion!” Xue Shan and Wan Xiaoqing heard this and happily agreed.

Of course, Liu Ming had no problem with the arrangement.

Thus, Shi Chuan quickly made a symbol in his hands and created the dark cloud which brought the four of them to a certain place.

After the time it took to drink of a cup of tea (10 minutes), the four of them landed at the middle of a mountain. In front of them was a man-made green rock pillar forest and at the end of it was a temple that was leaning on the mountain. Half of it was exposed outside while the other half was within the mountain.

On the banner of the temple, two great purple-red words that showed expertise in calligraphy read “Scripture Pavilion”. To the sides of the entrance to the pavilion were two Demons Statues that were twenty feet in height. They both were expertly crafted to the point where they looked real. However, their dark skin that looked like metal betrayed their real identity as statues.

“You all must remember that since the Scripture Pavilion is one of the most important places in the sect, you must not come to the pavilion in any other way than the one we just took. Even if you are flying, you must not come within five thousand feet of the pavilion. Or else, you might trigger the mechanisms hidden within and be killed by the Golems guarding the pavilion. This has happened before.” Shi Chuan seriously said.

“What! The Golems that were mentioned, it’s not these two large fellows right?” Wan Xiaoqing said in a surprised voice while glancing at the two statues.

“Correct, it’s them. Don’t look down on them being golems; once activated, they are on par with Spirit Masters and can easily kill us Spirit Apostles. However, using them wastes too many Spirit Stones.” Shi Chuan explained as they went in the pavilion.

Liu Ming glance forward within the temple and showed surprise.

Right after entering, there was a small and narrow room that only had a chair and nothing else.

However, Shi Chuan didn't show any surprise. With a flick of his wrists, his nameplate appeared in his hand and he placed it against the wall to his opposite.

After a "Pu Chi" sound, a white light flew from the nameplate and shot into the wall without leaving behind any traces.

Afterwards, Shi Chuan waited with Liu Ming and the others without showing any signs of impatience.

A little while later, white light sprayed from the wall and a chubby old man with a high hat came out while yawning. He seemed as if he still wasn't too awake.

"Disciple Shi Chuan, greetings to Ruan Shi Shu!" After seeing the chubby old man, Shi Chuan quickly went up and respectfully said.

"Oh so it's you, the kid from Nine Infants Faction. Already bringing your new Shi Dis to pick their Cultivation Methods." The old man glanced at the party and lazily said.

"The Shi Dis want to come take a look at the Cultivation Methods offered but whether they choose now is up to them." Shi Chuan answered without thinking.

"Alright. According to the rules, the new disciples to indeed have a chance to browse the Scripture Pavilion once for free. I will also be explaining the advantages and weaknesses of each Cultivation method. However, rules are rules and I can only bring one person in at a time. Who will go first?" The chubby old man said fairly.

"Elder, I will go first." Xue Shan immediately took a step forward and said with much anticipation.

"Hehe, then you better come with me brat." After the "hehe", the old man waved his sleeves and a bright white light came pouring out.



Liu Ming and the rest could not help but close their eyes. When they opened their eyes again, Xue Shan and the chubby old man had both disappeared.

“This....” Wan Xiaoqing said while looking shocked.

“No need to worry. Ruan Shi Shu just used the formation power within the temple and directly transported Xue Shi Di to the Scripture Pavilion.” Shi Chuan didn’t seem surprised and explained quickly.

Hearing this, Wan Xiaoqing relaxed.

However, Liu Ming’s brows furrowed as he asked:

“Shi Shi Xiong, is this Ruan Shi Shu always looking after the Scripture Pavilion? Also, which faction is he a Spirit Master under?”

“Haha, I know what Shi Di is worried about. Relax, the Scripture Pavilion has always been guarded by Ruan Shi Shu and since his situation is quite special, he doesn’t belong to any one faction.” Shi Chuan smiled as he asked/

“Oh okay.” Liu Ming let out a small breath in his heart.

Afterwards, he and Wan Xiaoqing asked Shi Chuan about the Scripture Pavilion and was answered in full.

After the time it took to have a meal (about 30 minutes), the wall in front of them flashed as the chubby old man and Xue Shan, who had a large smile, came out.

“Congratulations Xue Shi Di! It looks like you have already found the Cultivation Method for you!” Shi Chuan’s eyes flashed as he smiled.

“Haha, it was all due to Ruan Shi Shu’s guidance.” Xue Shan quickly nodded as he spoke.

“Who’s next.” The old man didn’t respond to Xue Shan and instead looked towards Liu Ming and Wan Xiaoqing.

“Wan Shi Mei, why don’t you go first.” Seeing this, Liu Ming courteously said to the girl beside him.

“Since Bai Shi Xiong is being courteous, then Shi Mei will thank you.” Wan Xiaoqing didn’t fake more gestures as she took a step forward.

“Good.”

The chubby old man nodded and waved his sleeves. After an explosion of white light, Wan Xiaoqing was also teleported away.

“Xue Shi Di, what Cultivation Method did you choose?” At this time, Shu Chuan asked Xue Shan.

“I picked the “Earth Spirit Method” described by Shi Xiong before. Ruan Shi Shu checked my talents and helped me analyzed the various Cultivation Methods. After hearing everything, I felt that this method was best for me.” Xue Shan spoke truthfully.

“Hehe, then I’ll congratulate Shi Di. I also practice “Earth Sprit Method” and also at the early stages, this Cultivation Method cannot compare to the other methods, there are extremely few bottlenecks in which you don’t find your strength increasing for long periods of time. This is also one of the most practiced methods within the Sect. After you practice this method to a certain extent, you can also change to the Dark Styx Devil Method.” Shi Chuan smiled as he explained.

“What? Shi Shi Xiong also practices this “Earth Spirit Method”? Great! Then when Shi Di has any questions about the method, can I ask you for help?” Xue Shan replied happily.

“Of course. If Shi Di has any questions for “Earth Spirit Method”, feel free to come and ask me.” Shi Chuan responded without any hesitation.

Hearing this, Xue Shan quickly and repeatedly said thanks.

Liu Ming stood by the side smiling.

The time which Wan Xiaoqing took wasn’t long and after only about half the time Xue Shan took, she and the old man appeared in the room.

Wan Xiaoqing also had a happy expression which made it obvious that she didn’t return empty handed.

This time, before Liu Ming could ask anything, the chubby old man

waved his sleeve towards Liu Ming.

All Liu Ming saw was a vast expanse of white light and suddenly he felt like he was free falling. After stumbling a step, he almost fell to the floor.

Thankfully, Liu Ming's reaction time was far from normal and with a near impossible twist of his waist, he steadied himself.

"Huh? Pretty good. You're quite agile. The two kids before couldn't stand after being teleported." The old man's voice came floating into Liu Ming's ears.

Recovering himself, Liu Ming looked towards his surroundings.

Liu Ming saw that he was in the middle of a foreign hall while the chubby old man was about two meters away.

The entire hall was a couple acres large and split into different regions by five-colored light walls. In each region, there was a stone table and on top of the tables were various scrolls in different shapes and sizes. Each pile of scrolls were covered by a colorful light lid.

"Before, I had learned some mortal techniques and thus have a reaction time faster than others." Suddenly coming back to his senses, Liu Ming quickly bowed to the old man before explaining.

"You don't have to explain anything to me. I was only randomly asking. Come with him, all the entrance Cultivation Methods are here." The old Spirit Master waved his hand and walked towards a certain light wall.

After a bitter smile, Liu Ming followed behind.

"Peng!"

Under an arc drawn by the old man's nameplate, the light wall was immediately broken into sparkling dust.

After walking into the region, Liu Ming showed surprise on his face.

"These are the free entrance Cultivation Methods that you can learn right now! What, do you have any thoughts?" After glancing at Liu Ming, the old man asked without much surprise.

“Ruan Shi Shu, I heard from Shi Shi Xiong that there were only thirteen entrance Cultivation Methods in our sect. However, there are much more than thirteen Cultivation Methods here.” Liu Ming glanced at the hundreds of stone tables as he asked.

“Our Sect only has thirteen entrance Cultivation Method but after being founded for thousands of years, we have also found and collected other entrance Cultivation Methods. There’s nothing surprising about that. However, I would suggest new disciples like you to not choose any of the other entrance Cultivation Methods. There’s a reason for our Sect only having thirteen main entrance Cultivation Methods. Many of the other methods either don’t have a more powerful method corresponding to it or that practicing requires some special environment. Thus they are not suitable.” The old man answered lazily.

“Shi Shu, thank you for your advice. Do you have any suggestions for the right Cultivation Method for me?” After Liu Ming heard the old man, he looked over nearly a hundred stone tables before asking again.

“What Spiritual Pulse are you?” Without even thinking, the old man asked.

“I am a Three Spiritual Pulse!” Liu Ming answered respectfully.

“Three Spiritual Pulse! Okay!” After nodding, the old man suddenly waved his arm and beckoned to the air in front of hi.

Liu Ming suddenly felt his body tighten as if it was bounded by some unknown force. Then with a “sou” sound, he was pulled towards the chubby old man.

After an initial shock, Liu Ming stopped struggling.

Then, he saw the old man chanting as the old man’s palms starting lighting up. Then, they transformed into shadows as the old man started patting Liu Ming.

However, Liu Ming felt nothing from the pats. Instead, after every pat, there was a warmth that would dive under his skin and even into his bones.

## Chapter 24: Dark Bone Method

“Decent bones, still has some potential for growth. Ligaments and muscles are extremely flexible. Seems like you have had some special training. However, there are many torn places in your body. If you want to avoid the consequences of such tears, you should exchange for a couple bottles of “Healing Ligament Pills” once you get Contribution Points. Your meridians are quite strong and can accept more energy than normal kids of your age. Huh? Your Spiritual Sea is quite strange. It seems to be much more solid and thick than other Three Spiritual Pulse Disciples.” As the chubby old man patted Liu Ming, he started mumbling. However, at the last sentence, his hands stopped as an expression of shock showed on his face.

Taking this chance, Liu Ming escaped from the grasp of the old man and asked surprised:

“Oh? Ruan Shi Shu, are the other Spiritual Seas different from mine?”

“They aren’t really different. It’s just that such a solid Spiritual Sea usually appears in Nine Spiritual Pulse Disciples. Are you really a Three Spiritual Pulse Disciple and not lying to me?” After staring at Liu Ming, the chubby old man said with a serious expression.

“How would I dare to lie to Shi Shu. I really am a Three Spiritual Pulse Disciple, it’s just that during the Opening Spirit Ceremony, I used a small trick to open my Spirit Sea.” After thinking for a moment, Liu Ming said with some reluctance.

“What trick? Tell me.” Hearing this, the chubby old man asked.

“When I formed my Spiritual Sea, I used my mental energy to shape my Yuan Li into threads and weaved them together like clothing.” After a slight pause, Liu Ming didn’t feel that it was a great secret and said.

“What? You can use your mental energy to control the Yuan Li to this extent? That must mean your mental energy is exceptionally strong.” After hearing Liu Ming’s experience, the chubby old man concluded.

“Yes, my mental energy is indeed stronger than most people.” Liu Ming slightly nodded his head.

“A Three Spiritual Pulse with mental energy that’s exceptionally strong! Tsk tsk, that Cultivation Method is pretty much made for you.” The chubby old man seemed to have thought of something and after looking at Liu Ming for a couple more seconds, he exclaimed.

“Which Cultivation Method? Is Shi Shu not talking about the thirteen entrance Cultivation Methods!” Liu Ming heard the meaning behind the old man’s words and asked quickly.

“According to your potential, I can give you two choices. The first is the “Phantom Yang Method” and the “Ghost Spirit Method” of the entrance Cultivation Methods. However, these two methods aren’t really popular in the Nine Infant Faction and when you want to change Cultivation Methods in the future, you’ll have quite a bit of trouble. As for the other Cultivation Methods, you’d be wasting your talent in mental energy and after thirty to forty years, you’d be like the other two out there: a High Spirit Apostle level or even a Middle Spirit Apostle for the rest of your life. However, you can also choose to practice a Cultivation Method outside of the thirteen entrance ones. This Cultivation Method is extremely special since it has two requirements to practice – to have a mental energy that is stronger than the normal person and have a Three Spiritual Pulse. You fit these two conditions.” The chubby old man said.

“Even though Shi Shu has already said so much, could I first look at the three methods before deciding?” After hearing that, Liu Ming’s mind was still quite undecided and he asked.

“No problem.” With a hand symbol, the chubby old man pointed at three stone tables.

With three sounds of “Peng”, the light barriers on the tables all shattered. From within the tables flew two scrolls and a black bamboo scroll. They all flew before Liu Ming and strangely floated two feet in front of Liu Ming.

Taking a light yellow colored scroll, Liu Ming saw the three words

“Phantom Yang Method” written in large purple-red color at the front.

After looking through a few pages, Liu Ming then folded the scroll and placed it back in front of him. With a slight movement of his arm, Liu Ming got the silver colored “Ghost Spirit Method” and started looking through it.

This time, Liu Ming looked through over a dozen pages before placing the scroll. After thinking for a while, he nodded to the chubby old man and said:

“I’ve seen the requirements for practicing these two methods. Since my mental energy is stronger than other, it is indeed easier for me to practice these two methods. However, the Phantom Yang Method said that the continuations of the method is more focused on illusions. For the Ghost Spirit Method, it’s more focused on slaving ghosts and refining corpses.”

“Why would I lie about such a thing? The Phantom Yang Method is one of the more important methods for the Ghost Dance Faction while Ghost Spirit Method is for the Corpse Refinery Faction. Your Nine Infant Faction is more focused on refining demon heads to assist you in battle and not extremely good with illusions or slaving ghosts.” The chubby old man said with a smile.

“But I heard that if I get enough Contribution Points, I could directly exchange for a high leveled Cultivation Method.” Liu Ming slowly asked.

“If you have enough Contribution Points, you can indeed get a high leveled Cultivation Method, including the three secret methods that the Sect was founded on. However, do you know how many Contribution Points are needed for a high leveled Cultivation method? There are countless disciples that have not practiced their methods for years and only performed Sect missions for quite a few years and still not been able to get a Cultivation Method. Do you think that you can get that many Contribution Points? In addition, you’d need various pills, glyphs during your everyday life. All these need Contribution Points.” After hearing this, the chubby old man said sarcastically.

“Thank you for your advice. I’ll look at the suggested method first.” Liu

Ming's eyelids twitched as he said.

Picking up the black bamboo scroll, Liu Ming started looking through it. However, after two seconds, he raised his head up.

"Ruan Shi Shu, what is this?" Liu Ming asked the chubby old man in a surprised voice.

The bamboo scroll was broken in some places and had green words carved onto it. However, the green words were all curly and in a language that Liu Ming wasn't sure of.

"Hehe, this is the ancient spirit language, 'Green Death'. It's not strange that you don't know it. Here. This is the translated Dark Bone Method that I did." The old man smiled before slowly fetching out a thin book and gave it to Liu Ming.

Liu Ming was slightly speechless as he took the book and started looking over it.

The chubby old man patiently stood next to Liu Ming and acted as if the events occurring had nothing to do with him.

"This Dark Bone Method does indeed require the practitioner to have a Three Spiritual Pulse with his or her mental energy as strong as possible. What? There are a total of nine levels, the first level would take about a year to finish. The second level would take two. The third would take four while the fourth would take eight years. In addition, there only seems to be four levels here." As Liu Ming was reading, his face started to turn ugly.

"Hmph kid, look carefully. Once you finish the first level, you will have the strength of a Beginner Spirit Apostle. The second level goes to a Middle Spirit Apostle while the third level goes to a High Spirit Apostle. As for the fourth level, if you manage to master it, then you can be like me, a Spirit Master! As for the later levels, once you get the fourth level, I will give them to you. What are you so antsy about? In addition, in comparison the entrance Cultivation Methods of the sect, this method has one major advantage." The chubby old man snorted and rolled his eyes.



“Advantage?” Liu Ming asked questioningly.

“When practicing this Dark Bone Method, while you are a Spirit Apostle, all you need to follow what’s written on it and you won’t meet any bottlenecks while cultivating. If you don’t believe, flip to the last page and look at it carefully.” The old man said with a harsh tone.

“Is that true?” Hearing that, Liu Ming’s heart started beating heavily. Quickly flipping to the last page, Liu Ming confirmed what the old man said.

“How is it? Did I lie? If I were you, I would definitely choose this Cultivation Method. As long as you are little persistent in training, you should have no problem in becoming a High Spirit Apostle and can start to tackle the Spirit Master barrier. In addition, after you become a Spirit Master, you won’t have to go through the trouble of changing your Cultivation Method and can keep using this Dark Bone Method.” The old man shook his head as he said.

“However, I heard that a lot of the fighting techniques in the Sect require one of the entrance Cultivation Methods of the Sect to perform. If I practice this Dark Bone Method, would I still be able to use such techniques?” After thinking for a long time, Liu Ming asked another question.

“You haven’t practiced this Dark Bone Method yet and thus naturally don’t know about how the training in the first few levels are extremely similar to the Ghost Spirit Method of the Sect. I’m guessing that all the techniques that the Ghost Spirit Method can use should also be usable by this method without any problems.”

“You’re guessing that it should be without problem?” Hearing this, Liu Ming’s mouth twitched.

“Kid, this method can promise you get to the High Spirit Apostle level in about a dozen years and you don’t need to worry about changing methods. You’re lucky that I’m even offering you the chance to practice this method. What else do you want? If you keep being so long-winded and don’t want to practice this method then never mind. Give it back to me. If

not for you fitting the requirements of this method, I would have never taken it out.” The old man seemed slightly mad as he started grabbing for the book.

“I’m sorry Shi Shu. I will be learning this Dark Bone Method.” Liu Ming jumped in surprise and quickly shoved the book into his pocket.

“At least you’re somewhat sensible. Oh right, when you leave later, do not tell anyone about the Dark Bone Method, instead tell everyone else you’re practicing the Ghost Spirit Method.” Seeing this, the old man seemed to calm down.

# Chapter 25: Soul Shaking Chain and Spirit Communication Technique

“Yes, Martial Uncle!” This time, Liu Ming answered easily.

“Good. I’ll help you a bit more, here are two secret techniques that are from the Ghost Spirit Method. Why don’t you go and practice them. This way, when you fight against someone, they won’t question your Cultivation Method.” Seeing Liu Ming who was answering much quicker now, the old man smiled. Taking two scrolls from his pockets, he threw them at Liu Ming.

“Thank you very much, Martial Uncle!” After catching the scrolls, Liu Ming bowed as he thanked the old man.

“According to the Sect rules, all disciples that take Cultivation Methods and Secret Techniques from the Scripture Pavilion must swear upon the natural order that they won’t teach or give their methods and techniques to another person. The punishment for violating this rule ranges from having your Fa Li wiped out and having you imprisoned for the rest of your life to certain death. This is our Sect’s Natural Order Contract, swear upon it.” The old man nodded and seriously took out a sheet of paper that had black fog swirling around it. In addition, the words on the paper were written in a blood red color.

With a slight hesitation, Liu Ming agreed.

“First put a drop of blood onto it and then repeat what I say.” The old man said as he threw the page forward and muttered a curse at it.

Slowly, the page turned into a blob of dark fog that floated in the air. From it, sounds of ghostly wails and wolf howls could be heard while a bloody scent, that would make one want to vomit, was scattered from it....

After the time it took to drink a cup of tea (10-15 minutes), Liu Ming and the old man appeared in front of Shi Chuan and the other two disciples.

“Ruan Martial Uncle, sorry to bother you.” Seeing this, Shi Chuan smiled as he thanked the old man.

“Since I am in charge of the Scripture Pavilion, it is my duty to give you young ones some guidance. Alright, now that everything is done, leave. I still need to sleep.” The old man expressed irritation as he waved his hand and disappeared with a flash of white light.

“Let’s go. Ruan Martial Uncle’s Cultivation Method is a little weird in that Ruan Martial Uncle needs to be sleeping for most of the year.” Shi Chuan wasn’t surprised in the slightest as he brought the trio out of the small room.

At this time, the sky outside had already darkened.

Shi Chuan once again cast a spell to generate the dark cloud and brought the new disciples to the Nine Infant Mountain.

On the way, Liu Ming found out that Wan Xiaoqing’s Cultivation Method was the other Cultivation Method that fitted the Nine Infant Faction, Dark Sunflower Method. With the discovery came a bitter smile.

It looked like the situation Liu Ming had encountered was a little special and could be either good or bad for him.

However, under those conditions, Liu Ming had no other choice.

This “Ruan Martial Uncle” was basically shoving the Dark Bone Method onto him. If Liu Ming had declined, Ruan Martial Uncle probably would have grown angry and forced Liu Ming to practice this Cultivation Method.

Ruan Martial Uncle was a Spirit Master with an extremely high position in the Sect while Liu Ming was only an ordinary disciple. If Ruan Martial Uncle wanted Liu Ming to do something, Liu Ming had no choice but to accept.

In comparison to making Ruan Martial Uncle force Liu Ming to practice the Dark Bone Method, it was much smarter to just agree on practicing the Method.

However, no matter what intentions Ruan Martial Uncle had for making Liu Ming practice the Dark Bone Method, as long as the effects described were actually manifested, practicing the Dark Bone Method might be a

good decision.

As for the possible consequences, it was too early to tell, and Liu Ming could only choose the best path available.

.....

When Shi Chuan and the other disciples asked Liu Ming about what Cultivation Method he had chosen, Liu Ming's answer was naturally "Ghost Spirit Method".

This made everyone else surprised, but Liu Ming pushed the blame to the old man.

He said that Ruan Martial Uncle saw that his mental energy was quite strong and thus had said that the Ghost Spirit Method was more suited for him.

Shi Chuan definitely knew how mental energy was essential when practicing the Ghost Spirit Method, and thus, although he was a little confused, he could understand the reasoning of Ruan Martial Uncle.

Xue Shan and Wan Xiaoqing showed jealousy after hearing about Liu Ming's possibly quicker training speed. However, when they heard Shi Chuan talk about the deficiencies of practicing such a method, they felt much more balanced.

The two choices were: to be able to train faster but having to worry about later Cultivation Methods versus to be training at normal speed but not needing to worry about succeeding Cultivation Methods. This was indeed a tough choice.

"It's unfortunate that Shi Di didn't go to the Corpse Refinery Faction. There Shi Di wouldn't need to worry about such a problem." Shi Chuan said regretfully.

"It's alright. If it really comes to it, I'll save some Contribution Points and exchange for a succeeding Cultivation Method." Liu Ming confidently said.

"That might be your only choice. As long as it's not the unique

Cultivation Method that's special to the Corpse Refinery Faction, you should be able to obtain it." Shi Chuan slightly nodded as he spoke.

Like this, they all returned to the Nine Infant Mountain and were sent back to their respective dwellings by Shi Chuan.

After returning to his courtyard, Liu Ming organized a couple things before feeling hunger. He took out the dry rations and, after eating them, fell asleep on his bed.

After experiencing the Opening Spirit Ceremony earlier in the day and then choosing a Cultivation Method, Liu Ming was exhausted and thus it was not weird for him to fall asleep so quickly.

Liu Ming didn't know how long he slept for, but when he opened his eyes again, the sun outside his window was already at the top of the sky.

With a lazy yawn, Liu Ming walked out of the room and into the courtyard.

In the courtyard was a well that a previous disciple had dug out.

Using a wooden bucket to fetch the water, Liu Ming used his hands to drink a few gulps. Unlike any water that he had tasted before, this water was extremely sweet and had a refreshing cold that went down to the stomach.

After quenching his thirst, Liu Ming dunked his head in the bucket and washed his face. Afterwards, he went back to his room and sat before a yellow wooden desk.

After a slight pondering, Liu Ming took out the two scrolls that the old man had given him yesterday. Placing them on the desk and unrolling them, Liu Ming started to read them.

They contained the techniques "Soul Shackling Chain" and "Spirit Communication Technique".

Soul Shackling Chain involved extracting the souls of demons and ghosts and refining them into chains to act as weapons. Spirit Communication Technique was meant to allow the user to communicate

with demons and ghosts in order to enslave them.

As Liu Ming was reading, a thought popped up into his head: “These two Secret Techniques really do match the Ghost Spirit Method.”

However, when he saw the requirements for the two techniques, his brow furrowed.

The two techniques required for Liu Ming to be at the Beginning Spirit Apostle and Middle Spirit Apostle level respectively to learn. Until Liu Ming passed the first and second level of the Dark Bone Method, he had no way of practicing these two methods.

With some depression, Liu Ming started to silently memorize the two techniques.

With a strong mental energy and the talent to do two things at once, this was naturally not a hard task.

After four hours, Liu Ming had memorized both techniques, and as long as he silently rehearsed them in his head once in awhile, he could be sure of remembering both.

Taking a deep breath, Liu Ming returned the two scrolls to his pockets, took out the book for the Dark Bone Method, and flipped open to the first page.

However, before Liu Ming could start reading, he heard knocking sounds from his door while Xue Shan’s rough and careless voice sounded:

“Bai Senior, are you inside? Wan Shi Mei and I have come.”

Pausing for a moment, Liu Ming returned the book to his pockets and left the room.

Beyond the half-closed door of the courtyard were three people.

Besides Xue Shan and Wan Xiaoqing, there was one other person that was about forty years in age and male. His hair was only a couple of inches long while he wore the clothing of outer sect disciples.

“Xue Shi Di, Wan Shi Mei, why did you come? Also, who is....”

Walking up and pulling the door open, Liu Ming said with some confusion.

“Haha, let me introduce you all. This is my cousin Xue Yuanhai who has been an Outer Sect Disciple since twenty years ago.” Xue Shan smiled as he pointed to the man behind him.

“Oh so it’s brother Xue. Sorry for my confusion earlier.” After a slight pause, Liu Ming brought his hands up and cupped them.

“No! Once a person becomes a Spirit Apostle, all outer sect disciples must call him or her Senior. In the future, I will need to rely on you all here.” Xue Yuanshan quickly returned the gesture and said with a smile.

“Yuanhai cousin, you are my older cousin. I can’t let you call me Senior. However, for Bai Senior and Wan Shi Mei, you guys can use any pronunciation you feel fit.” Xue Shan quickly said.

“Haha, since Brother Xue is older than Xue Shi Di, then me and Wan Shi Mei can’t mess up the order. How about this, me and Wan Shi Mei will call you ‘Brother Xue’.” Liu Ming said with a smile.

TL: Brother in this context means someone who is older

To the side, Wan Xiaoqing also agreed.

“Since it’s like this, then I will call you guys ‘Wan Shi Mei’ and ‘Bai Senior’.” After another few courtesies, Xue Yuanhai agreed.

“Bai Senior, my cousin is an outer disciple under the Nine Infant Faction and understands a lot of inner-workings of the sect. Yesterday, although Shi Senior explained quite a few things to us, the time was too short and thus there are still a lot of things that we don’t know. Therefore, I thought that cousin Xue could help us gain a better understanding of the Sect and help us avoid common mistakes that neophytes, like us, make.” Xue Shan said with a smile.

“Oh, I see. Brother Xue, why don’t you come on in.” Liu Ming quickly moved aside as he invited three inside.

After a few seconds, the four people were seated besides the table in one



of the rooms.

....

After about four hours, Xue Shan and Wan Xiaoqing left with heavy expressions.

Liu Ming had a smile on his face as he sent his guests out but once he returned to his room, his smile also disappeared.

“Wow. I never knew that the difference between a Recorded Disciple and a Personal Disciple was so huge. Also, the fight to become a Core Disciple is also quite scary with the possibility of death. Looks like the amount of work necessary to survive in this sect isn’t small at all. In order to get enough resources, I must become a core Disciple.” Liu Ming muttered to himself before sinking into deep thought.

“Whatever. I’ll first practice the Dark Bone Method until I achieve the first two levels. In order to have a chance at becoming a Core Disciple, I must have the strength of a Middle Spirit Apostle. Once I have strength, I’ll also find surviving in the sect to be much easier.” After a while, Liu Ming let out a deep breath as he came to his conclusion.

# Chapter 26: The Pill of Fasting and Training

However, before Liu Ming could officially start practicing his Cultivation Method, he first needed to retrieve a few Pills of Fasting and some scrolls for simple spells from Nine Infant Mountain.

According to what Xue Yuanhai said, these things were not only free, but they were also absolutely essential for a Beginner Spirit Apostle's training.

After Liu Ming decided he was going to the mountain, he immediately changed into his dust resistant clothing and left his dwelling to follow a winding path towards the peak of the mountain.

While ascending the mountain, he met a few outer disciples carrying large sacks and parcels going up and down the mountain.

When the others saw the light-green, dust resistant clothes that Liu Ming wore, they respectfully moved aside and let him pass. Only after Liu Ming had gone past them did they dare to continue on their way.

In the Barbarian ghost sect, the status of a Spirit Apostle Disciple and an Outer Sect Disciple were as different as heaven and earth; they could not even be mentioned in the same sentence.

This small road that led directly to the peak was rather steep. Even having trained his body with mortal techniques and having started halfway up the mountain, it still took Liu Ming half an hour or so to finally arrive at the mountain peak.

After Liu Ming set foot inside the mountaintop plaza again, he instantly decided that after he converted a bit of Yuan Li to Fa Li, the first thing he would learn would be the Soaring Sky Technique

Otherwise, if he were to go to another mountain, a round trip would take over half a day. That would be far too inconvenient.

As Liu Ming walked along the plaza, a pair of young girls across from

him, walked past.

The more well-developed girl, after looking at Liu Ming, smiled sweetly and said,

“Huh, isn’t this Junior Bai? O, Little Junior Disciple, you are going to the Outer Duty Hall to claim your things right?”

Liu Ming was briefly startled, before he realized that the two females across from him were the pair of female disciples from yesterday’s meeting with the disciples of the Nine Infant Faction. Liu Ming quickly stopped and respectfully said:

“Oh, my two senior sisters, I am indeed going to the Outer Duty Hall to fetch a few Pills of Fasting.”

TL: Senior female = Shi Jie

“Hehe. Looks like Junior Bai does not know our names. Remember this: I’m Gu Meishan and this is your Senior Zhu, Zhu Xinglian.” Gu Meishan said with a smile.

Zhu Xinglian was slightly surprised when she heard Gu Meishan give her name to Liu Ming, but after a slight blush, she respectfully greeted him.

“I dare not forget your names, I promise to remember them.” Liu Ming said with a serious face.

“Okay. Junior Bai, you should quickly go to the Outer Duty Hall, it’s that way. If you’re late you might have to wait until tomorrow to get the Pills of Fasting.” After pausing for a second, Gu Meishan pointed in the direction of the Outer Duty Hall.

Afterward, Gu Meishan held onto Zhu Xinglian as she cast the Soaring Sky Technique.

In an instant, the two flew away on a cloud.

After watching the two leave, Liu Ming walked towards the direction Gu Meishan had pointed at earlier.

Passing through a couple of buildings, Liu Ming arrived at a small hall

named “Outer Duty Hall”.

Even though it was called a hall, the actual building was only slightly larger than a decently sized auditorium.

As Liu Ming walked in, he saw a male Outer Sect Disciple sitting behind a table. The disciple had his head lowered as he calculated something with a golden abacus. Next to him was an opened, thick accounting book.

“Oh, are you a new Senior, coming to claim your Pills of Fasting?” The disciple had great reaction time as he quickly stopped what he was doing right after Liu Ming came in and greeted Liu Ming with a smile.

“Yes. Is it true that all disciples can receive three months worth of Pills of Fasting for free?” Liu Ming asked without thinking.

“Definitely. Could senior please take out your name-plate? After I record it, you will be able to receive your Pills of Fasting.” The man quickly said.

“Okay.” Without any hesitation, Liu Ming took out his name-plate and passed it to the man.

After flipping the accounting book to a certain page, the outer disciple pressed the name-plate onto the page.

Immediately, “Bai Chong Tian” appeared as silver words on the page.

“So it’s Senior Bai. Here are your Pills of Fasting. You should take one pill at a time and everytime you do, you won’t need to eat anything, but you will still need to drink a little bit of water during those three days.” The man quickly pulled a palm sized grey sack from the shelf filled with various materials behind him. Along with the name-plate, he respectfully passed them to Liu Ming.

Taking the small cloth sack and his name-plate, Liu Ming opened the sack and dished out a pill with his hand. The pill was slightly yellow and had a faint fragrance.

It was exactly as Xue Yuanshan described it.

Nodding, Liu Ming put away the two things and after a short pause,

asked the man:

“Oh right. I want to borrow a few basic spell books. Where should I go?”

“Oh. If senior wants to learn spells, go to the Spirit Spell Pavilion. Just follow the path out this door and you should see it after a bend in the road,” said the man carefully.

Hearing this, Liu Ming smiled and said his thanks before leaving for the Spirit Spell Pavilion.

.....

“You can only borrow three beginner spell books at a time and each book costs one Spirit Stone to borrow.” In front of Liu Ming was an extremely skinny girl that used a harsh tone when speaking to him.

“Senior, isn’t borrowing spell books free?” After hearing the female Spirit Apostle’s words, Liu Ming paused for a second before asking.

“Hmph. It’s only one Spirit Stone for a spell book, that’s basically free. If you don’t have enough Spirit Stones, come back after the Sect distributes Spirit Stones next month to borrow a few books.” The skinny girl said in a condescending tone without leaving any face for her new junior.

“Okay, I’ll borrow these three books first.” Liu Ming was slightly angry in his heart but didn’t show his displeasure. Liu Ming quickly handed the three books from the stack he had beside him, three Spirit Stones and his name-plate over.

The Spirit Stones that he passed over were three pinkie-sized rectangular crystals. They were all about the same size and were pulsating with a soft white light.

The skinny girl took the three books and after looking at the covers impassively said:

“Soaring Sky Technique, Flame Technique and Condensation Technique. You must return these books after a month.”

As soon as she recorded Liu Ming’s identity with his name-plate, she

threw the three books along with the name-plate towards Liu Ming and instantly put away the three Spirit Stones.

After being cheated out of his Spirit Stones, Liu Ming naturally did not want to stay and after catching the things thrown at him, he quickly left.

However, soon after leaving, he encountered two people that were going to the Spirit Spell Pavilion as well.

The person leading the way was Shi Chuan with his straight and somewhat handsome face. The person behind him was the red-haired Yu Cheng who had been accepted as a personal disciple.

“Huh?” After seeing Liu Ming, Shi Chuan smiled as he said. “Oh, Junior Bai also came to borrow spell books. I’m bringing Junior Yu to pick out books to borrow.”

The red-haired youth also nodded to Liu Ming.

After smiling and returning the greeting, Liu Ming seemingly offhandedly asked. “Senior, does borrowing spell books at the Spirit Spell Pavilion require Spirit Stones?”

“What? Senior Zhao is charging Spirit Stones from people borrowing spell book again? Outrageous! I am sorry about that. Senior Zhao has some relations to Teacher Gui and thus sometimes goes overboard with what she does. If you can, don’t take her actions to heart. Oh right, how many Spirit Stones did Senior Zhao take? I’ll pay you back.” Slight anger showed on Shi Chuan’s face before he smiled in frustration while taking out his Spirit Stones.

“What do you take me for Senior? I don’t care about a few Spirit Stones. Now that I know Senior Zhao and Teacher Gui are related, I don’t care about them anymore. Senior Shi and Junior Yu, I will be taking my leave now.” Liu Ming waved his hand and immediately left.

Shi Chuan stared at Liu Ming’s back before sighing and taking Yu Cheng towards the Spirit Spell Pavilion.

.....

When Liu Ming finally got back to his dwelling, it was already afternoon.

However, Liu Ming didn't have any intentions of resting. Instead, he went straight to the well to get a bucket of fresh, cold water. Afterwards, he brought the bucket back into one of the rooms that had nothing but a futon, put the bucket down and sat down onto the futon.

Taking out the cloth sack that had the Pills of Fasting, Liu Ming took one out and popped it into his mouth.

The seemingly solid Pill of Fasting turned into a liquid as soon as it touched the insides of Liu Ming's mouth and went straight into his stomach.

Immediately, a warm feeling filled Liu Ming and he even felt slightly full.

After confirming the reactions he felt, Liu Ming felt a tinge of excitement in his heart.

These Pills of Fasting really did have a strong effect. After eating just one of these, he would not have to worry about eating anything else and could focus on his training.

Quickly, Liu Ming fetched out the book that had the Dark Bone Method recorded and started reading the Cultivation Method from start to finish.

Although much of Liu Ming's early life was spent on the Savage Island, there were many well-educated people imprisoned there. With his unique talent of multitasking, Liu Ming was able to absorb much of the information and knowledge, and was probably as well-educated as some of the "famous" geniuses in literature.

However, even with his knowledge, Liu Ming felt that every sentence and word in the Dark Bone Method had two or three meanings which made quick comprehension impossible.

With slight shock, Liu Ming's expression turned slightly serious. With his fingers pressing on his temple, he activated his double mind talent. His mental conscious immediately split into two; one half concentrating

on the Cultivation Method while the other half went into a deep sleep.

Soon, Liu Ming became entirely immersed in understanding the Cultivation Method and was ignorant of everything else.

.....

After a really long period, an extreme pain due to hunger entered Liu Ming's brain and he was jolted awake. Just as he was about to stand up, Liu Ming's eyes darkened as he almost fainted.

With a shocked and pained expression, Liu Ming quickly took out a Pill of Fasting and swallowed it. Right after, Liu Ming grabbed the bucket by his side and drank a few gulps of water before his face turned back to a healthier shade.

Even after all that, Liu Ming still felt as if his head was splitting apart, which was a symptom of the overuse of his mental energy.

This time, his pondering of the Cultivation Method had taken five days and five nights. Had it not been for his hunger, Liu Ming might have still been dissecting the Cultivation Method inextricably.

The Dark Bone Method was definitely scary!



# Chapter 27: The Beginnings of Spells

What made Liu Ming feel even more depressed was the fact that he was only able to understand about thirty to forty percent of the Dark Bone Method's first level.

This Cultivation Method was entirely different from the Practitioner Method that he practiced previously. A lot of the sentences had double, sometimes triple interpretations that made it hard to determine the text's true meaning.

Under this situation, there were two things that Liu Ming could do: He could ask someone to explain the method sentence by sentence or he could read some texts on cultivation experiences and determine the true meaning based off of those experiences.

Clearly the first would yield quicker results. However, Ruan Martial Uncle had warned Liu Ming about telling others about the Dark Bone Method, and thus Liu Ming could only choose the second option.

After confirming that the second option was his only choice, Liu Ming put the book away and left his dwelling. Once again, he set out for the Spirit Spell Pavilion.

When Liu Ming came back, he had acquired two extremely thick books on cultivation experiences while his final two Spirit Stones were gone.

However, Liu Ming had quite a bit of excitement on his face.

The two books on cultivation experiences were written by two Spirit Masters of the Barbarian Ghost Sect, and contained careful explanations of the various intricacies in entry-level Cultivation Methods which was just what Liu Ming needed.

However, when Liu Ming returned to his dwelling, he did not dive straight into comprehending the Dark Bone Method. Instead, he went straight to his room and fell onto his bed.

His slept for a full day and night.

When Liu Ming opened his eyes again, he quickly went to the courtyard

to wash his face before walking back into the room that was designated for his training.

Sitting down cross legged, Liu Ming opened the two borrowed books and the Dark Bone Method in front of him. After some slight hesitation, he also took out a small cloth pouch and poured out quite a few Pills of Fastening which he then shoved into various places in the Dark Bone Method book.

With this precaution, Liu Ming would no longer face situations where he might accidentally starve himself to death.

After taking a deep breath, Liu Ming began reading the pages of the book. Soon after, Liu Ming became immersed in the text...

.....

Half a month later, a burst of wild laughter came from Liu Ming's training room.

From his seated position, Liu Ming suddenly stood up and raised his head, laughing.

However, Liu Ming's appearance told a completely different story. His hair was scattered into thick, tangled strands that stuck together, his clothes were full of wrinkles, and he faintly carried with him a pungent, sour scent.

But there could be no doubt as to why Liu Ming was in such a bad state!

For the past half month, whenever Liu Ming was hungry, he would eat a Pill of Fasting; whenever he was thirsty, he would take a gulp from the bucket beside him, and whenever he was tired, he would sleep on the futon below him. He had not even once, taken a step outside of the room this whole time.

However, because of Liu Ming's persistence, he finally understood the first level of the Dark Bone Method; all he needed to do now was slowly train in it until he got to the Middle Spirit Apostle level.

After Liu Ming overcame his excitement, he quickly realized the

inadequacy in his appearance and thus, with furrowed brows, he dragged the wooden bucket out of the room.

After taking off his clothes, Liu Ming washed himself with water from the well and once again, became what some might call “presentable”.

With his wet hair, Liu Ming put on the dust resistant clothing and returned to the training room.

Although there were wrinkles on the dust resistant clothing, it was made of a special material and was not dirty in the slightest. In addition, even if water was poured on it, the water would just flow till it hit the ground and not affect it in the slightest.

Sitting back down, Liu Ming didn't start practicing the Dark Bone Method. Instead, he took out the three spell books and started reading them over.

The original obscure sentences in the methods now seemed to be extremely simple in Liu Ming's eyes.

After spending nearly 4 hours, Liu Ming memorized the three techniques.

Liu Ming let out a light breath as he placed all the books to the side, then closed his eyes and held up strange hand signs above both of his knees.

A second later, Liu Ming felt as if his mind sank into his body, and suddenly he could see his inner self which was currently a jumble of lights.

Liu Ming could see the subtle pulsation of his regular meridians. The three thick Spiritual Pulses that wrapped around his entire body and the fist-sized silver Spirit Sea that was quietly sitting within his Dantian.

With a slight thought, Liu Ming's Spirit Sea started spinning faster and faster.

With a few popping sounds, a couple of white Yuan Li strands flew from Liu Ming's Spirit Sea and pushed themselves into Liu Ming's meridians

before they were finally transported all over Liu Ming's body.

Like this, Liu Ming finally took the first step into the training of Dark Bone Method.

Three days later, Liu Ming was still seated on his futon. However, he was muttering some chant as his hands furiously made symbol after symbol.

Before him, a small grey fog was forming. As time went by, more and more grey fog formed until it finally became a small grey cloud after ten to fifteen minutes.

“Rise!”

Seeing the grey cloud below him, Liu Ming changed the symbol in his hand without any hesitation.

With a “peng” sound, the cloud rose and carried Liu Ming as it slowly flew higher.

Seeing this, Liu Ming face showed happiness. However, while Liu Ming was busy celebrating, his hand symbol had been altered slightly.

With another “peng”, Liu Ming fell from the disappearing cloud and heavily crashed onto the ground.

Thankfully, the cloud had not risen more than a couple of feet above ground. Thus, Liu Ming did not suffer any damage besides a slight bruise.

Although he fell, Liu Ming showed an exuberant expression.

This was only Liu Ming's third attempt at the Soaring Sky Technique, to already have mastered the technique to such an extent was beyond Liu Ming's expectations.

According to the cultivation experience books, even the simplest spells need dozens to hundreds of repeated practices before they could be performed.

It looked like the above average mental strength and talent of his, gave him two benefits:: One was boosting his cultivation training, the other helped him master spells much faster than other disciples.

Once Liu Ming transformed more Yuan Li into Fa Li and was more practiced with the technique, he would master the Soaring Sky Technique.

As Liu Ming thought about what uses the Soaring Sky Technique had besides transportation, he started make another hand sign and started practicing in the other two spells.

.....

After most of the day, Liu Ming was still sitting quietly on the ground. However, one of his hands suddenly formed a sign while his other hand started to move forward with its palm facing the sky.

With a “pu”, a ball of fire the size of an egg started to burn within his palm.

With a light smile, Liu Ming made a fist with that hand and the fire immediately extinguished.

Afterwards, Liu Ming started chanting as his fingers danced in front of him.

A line of white mist started to form in the air before Liu Ming, and when he spat out the final word of the chant, it condensed to form a clear water ball the size of Liu Ming’s fist. It unsteadily hung in midair and appeared as if it would fall down at anytime.

At this time, Liu Ming’s hands finally stopped. Liu Ming slowly extended a finger, poking the ball of water. Afterwards, he quickly withdrew his wet finger and tasted the water before finally smiling with a sense of achievement.

.....

About a dozen days later, Liu Ming was sitting on a decently-sized grey cloud as he flew back and forth a few hundred feet above his dwelling.

Feeling the strands of wind that passed him by, Liu Ming had an excited expression that was hard to hide.

Even though Liu Ming was usually much more calculating and mature

than other youths of his age, Liu Ming right now, looked like a regular kid.

Soon, Liu Ming felt that his Fa Li was about to run out. Immediately, he made a hand sign and the grey cloud slowly descended towards the ground.

Liu Ming couldn't sustain the Soaring Sky Technique for long right now, but the time in which he could perform it was more than enough for him to use it as a method of transportation.

As for the Flame Technique and Condensation Technique, Liu Ming had also achieved quite a high level of mastery in them.

Unfortunately, these three techniques were the most basic spells and were mainly used to introduce new disciples to the art of spell casting. They had very little use in actual combat.

It looked like the next time Liu Ming went to the Spirit Spell Pavilion, he needed to pick out two combat spells.

However, when Liu Ming thought about the Spirit Spell Pavilion, the first thing that came to his mind was Senior Zhao that was in charge of the pavilion. All she ever saw was "money" and it showed through her narrow and skimpy face.

When Liu Ming thought of money, he suddenly remembered that he had been in the sect for almost a month now. Thus he had to go to the Duty Hall to receive a chore sect mission, or else he would have no Spirit Stones for the next month!

However, Liu Ming didn't rush out of his dwelling. Instead, he quickly returned to his training room and began to recover his Fa Li.

Thankfully, Liu Ming was still quite weak and the amount of Fa Li he needed to recover was not large, which meant that recovering the Fa Li did not take that long.

After an hour Liu Ming was once again sitting on a grey cloud, flying towards the Duty Hall.

When Liu Ming went into the Duty Hall, his face was instantly filled with surprise.

The first floor was filled with fifty to sixty people. However, most of them were Outer Sect disciples while only seven or eight of them were disciples with the clothings of Inner Sect disciplines.

“Could I ask you a question, Senior? What is going on right now? Are there usually this many people here?” Liu Ming blinked his eyes and walked towards a Inner Sect Disciple around the age of 20 that was standing by the door. After greeting the senior with his hands together, Liu Ming began asking his questions.

“Oh, you’re a new Disciple Junior right? Haha, today is the Duty Hall’s annual rotation in the various Sect chores and missions. Therefore, a lot of people have came early in order to pick a better mission or chore. However, the reality is that the good missions that pay quite handsomely have already been reserved by others.” This Inner Sect Disciple was extremely friendly and after glancing at Liu Ming, explained the situation in detail.

“Oh I see. Thank you for your advice.” Liu Ming, was not dumb and instantly realized the situation.

“Hehe, I am Li Zong from the Corpse Refinery Faction. What is your name and which faction are you under?” Seeing how respectfully Liu Ming was despite his age, the Inner Sect disciple got a fairly favorable impression of him and thus carelessly asked him another question.

“My name is Bai Chong Tian. I am under the Nine Infant Faction.” Liu Ming answered without hiding anything.

“Oh, so junior is under Gui Martial Uncle’s teachings. However, the Nine Infant Faction has been quite weak for many years now so junior’s future doesn’t look too great.” Hearing this, Li Zong expression became one of sympathy.

“It’s alright. I think that my seniors are quite caring about us juniors.” Liu Ming answered back without showing any emotion.

“Hehe. Within the factions, everyone is friendly. However, when the Large Competition and the following Trials start, you will come to understand the pain of being in a weak faction.” Li Zong shook his head as he slowly muttered.

“Oh? The Large Competition and Trials! Although I have heard people talk about them, I really do not know the specifics. Could senior Li enlighten me about them?” Hearing this, Liu Ming became thoughtful.



# Chapter 28: Sect Chores

“Uh... Okay. Since Junior will hear about it later, I might as well tell you about them right now.” After a slight hesitation, Li Zong didn’t decline.

“Our sect has a Small Competition every year and a Large Competition every three years. The Small Competition is for each individual faction and, basically is a check of the faction’s disciples’ spell mastery and progress in the training of their Cultivation Methods. The rewards are usually given by the older generation in the faction, who are in charge of the competition.

Although the rewards aren’t high, these small competitions has a friendly air to it. It’s completely different for the Large Competition that’s held every three years. All Spirit Apostles in the sect are required to attend this competition, and the top hundred disciples of this competition will be accepted as Core Disciples.

In addition, their names will be imprinted on the Sect’s Lunar monument for all disciples to see. More importantly, these Core Disciples will receive the Sect’s special treatment during the next three years. The higher their placement, the more rewards they will get.

Of course, the Large Competition also determine how many resources a faction will get in the sect based on how many Core Disciples came from their factions. Thus, even the Spirit Masters pay extreme attention to the competition. To my knowledge, the Nine Infant Faction has always been at the bottom of the Large Competition for the past dozen years. Thus, the resources that the Nine Infant Faction receives is the least amongst all the factions.

Because of this, the Nine Infant Faction has an extremely hard cycle of never performing well. In addition, although there are Spirit Masters hosting the competition, they are sometimes incapable of stopping a fight before it’s too late and thus, deaths in that competition are extremely common. In fact, these Large Competitions are also called “Blood Challenges”. Li Zong said all that in a complete breath as Liu Ming

started nodding like a chicken.

“Okay. I think I understand the Small and Large Competitions. However, what’s the Life and Death Trial about? I heard that name from someone before.” Liu Ming asked again.

“The Life and Death Trial involves not only our Barbarian Ghost Sect. In fact, the other four Sects of the Da Xuan Country host this Trial with our Barbarian Ghost Sect. It determines the rankings of the Sect and is bloody beyond our imaginations. Deaths and injuries in the Large Competition are quite few compared to the fact that less than half of the disciples that go the Life and Death Trial comes back alive. In the past few hundred years, our Barbarian Ghost Sect has not been performing well in these Life and Death Trials and thus we are often in last place.” Li Zong said with a sigh.

“If the Life and Death Trial is so dangerous, then how does the sect pick the disciples that go to it? A normal disciple would be extremely wary of such a trial.” Hearing that, Liu Ming sucked in a breath of cold air.

“Hehe. Even though this Life and Death Trial is extremely dangerous, as long as one can return alive, there are many benefits beyond your imagination. From what I know, a majority of the older generation of each faction had experienced the Life and Death Trial. Thus, even if normal disciples wanted to join the trial, they would still be rejected.

The ones that are allowed to join the Life and Death Trial are the top ten Core Disciples in the Lunar Monument. In addition, as long as one gets one of the top ten spots, the entire sect would give him or her the best possible training and treatment so that he or she can help the sect gain better footing in the Da Xuan Country.” Li Zong replied without thought.

“Oh I see. Thank you for sharing your knowledge.” After Li Zong finished, Liu Ming was silent for a while before he whole-heartedly thanked Li Zong.

“Haha. It’s nothing, you really aren’t like others in the sect. Oh right, when you ask for your Sect Chore later, if you want a better chore you can

tell them my name and then secretly give the one in charge something good. With that, you should be able to get a good chore.” Li Zong laughed as he winked.

Liu Ming also smiled and thanked Li Zong again before joining the long line.

There were many people entering and exiting the Duty hall and thus the line went by quite fast. Soon, it was Liu Ming’s turn.

Before Liu Ming was a bald, middle aged man wearing Enforcer clothing.

However, Liu Ming did not have any Spirit Stones to bribe the Enforcer with, and thus did not offer up Li Zong’s name. Instead, Liu Ming obediently gave his nameplate to the Enforcer and said:

“I am a new disciple and here to receive my Sect Chore.”

“Oh, you’re a new junior. Let me see what chores are still available.” The bald Enforcer seemed to be extremely friendly and after receiving Liu Ming’s nameplate, he quickly started flipping through a thick book beside him.

“The available chores that are suitable for new disciples are chopping down wood on Sky Bamboo Mountain and farming in the South Spirit Valley. Which one would you like to choose junior?” After a few seconds, the Enforcer looked up again and asked Liu Ming.

“What? Chopping down wood and farming?” Liu Ming thought that he heard wrong.

According to Liu Ming’s previous understandings, these Sect Chores were probably along the lines of standing guard somewhere or patrolling a particular mountain and not what he had just heard.

“I know junior has some questions, but they should be answered after you start the chore.” The bald Enforcer seemed to be accustomed to reactions like Liu Ming’s and spoke with a hint of mystery.

“Then... I’ll choose to farm.” Even though Liu Ming was still confused,

he could only suppress his confusion and choose one of the tasks.

At the very least, Liu Ming had once farmed half an acre of mixed oats while on Savage Island.

“The farming chore must be completed within three days or else the chore will be counted as incomplete.” Hearing his answer, the bald Enforcer held up Liu Ming’s name plate and pressed it down onto a certain page in the book beside him.

After taking back the nameplate, Liu Ming left while still confused. Suddenly, he realized that he did not know where the South Spirit Valley was.

Right as he was about to ask the Enforcer, he saw that there was another disciple talking to the Enforcer and the line had become extremely long.

When his gaze turned, Liu Ming suddenly saw that Li Zong was still around the main entrance of the hall and had yet to leave. Instantly, Liu Ming walked over.

“Bai Junior, what chore did you get? Hopefully it’s not taking care of Spirit Beasts. That’s one of the most troublesome chores!” Seeing Liu Ming walk over, Li Zong actively greeted him.

“Li Senior. It’s great that you haven’t left yet. My chore isn’t taking care of Spirit Beasts but farming. However, I don’t know where South Spirit Valley, where I will be farming, is located.”

“Farming! Hm, it’s not a good chore but also not a bad one. South Spirit Valley? Here, I have a self-made map of the sect and since I have no use of it now.. Here you go.” After pondering for a slight while, Li Zong took out a beast skin map and threw it towards Liu Ming.

“Thank you senior. I won’t be too courteous. Oh right, Li senior, why do we have to farm? With the Pills of Fastening, does our sect really need food?” After receiving the map, Liu Ming smiled and asked with some confusion.

“Haha. When I first joined the sect, I also had the exact same questions

as you. Relax. When you get there, you will understand why there's a farming chore. You might even receive some good things." Hearing this, Liu Zong laughed and did not answer Liu Ming's question.

Seeing Li Zong's avoidance, Liu Ming knew that Li Zong wasn't going to answer his question. After thanking Li Zong again, he walked out of the hall.

Right after Liu Ming came outside, he cast the Soaring Sky Technique to generate a small grey cloud and flew off.

Following the instructions on the map, Liu Ming flew past a couple of mountains and finally landed in a decently sized valley.

A short distance from where Liu Ming landed was a square field that split into, about a hundred acre large, smaller fields.

Within the field, there were numerous people that were wearing the clothing of inner disciples and using light silver hoes as if they were normal farmers tending to their farms.

While Liu Ming was watching the scene absentmindedly, a cough suddenly sounded from behind him.

The cough wasn't loud but the sudden appearance of it caused Liu Ming to jump in surprise and quickly turn his head.

Behind Liu Ming was a dark-skinned elder that had somehow appeared behind Liu Ming. The elder's body was slightly bent as he was holding a burnt yellow smoke pipe and emotionlessly appraising Liu Ming.

"A new disciple of the sect?"

"Yes, elder is?"

Even though the elder didn't look like much, he gave Liu Ming a sense of pressure to the point where Liu Ming answered without any thought.

"Hmph, how could those Duty Hall people send me a new disciple like you? What do they think this place is? Whatever, take this and take charge of a piece of land like those over there. In three days, you must hoe over the entire piece of land in three days such that each inch of the

land has been hoed half a feet and not have a single piece of weed in it.

If you cannot finish it, leave immediately and don't ever let me see you again." The old farmer coldly said. After touching his waist, he was suddenly holding a hoe that was about as high as a person and threw it before Liu Ming.

This scene made Liu Ming stunned.

"What are you looking at? Get to work. That was a Storage Glyph that cannot be used until you are at the Spirit Master level." The old man said one more sentence impatiently and turned around without waiting for a response. After taking a few steps, a black cloud appeared below his feet and carried him towards a forest beside the farmland.

"Storage Glyph". At this moment, Liu Ming would not be Liu Ming if he did not realize that the old farmer was a Spirit Master. After muttering a few words he bent down to pick up the silver hoe and quickly walked towards an empty field.

The acre of field might not seem that big, but it was completely filled with weeds that were almost a feet tall.

After stretching a little, Liu Ming raised the hoe above his head with both hands and chopped into the ground.

# Chapter 29: Spirit Farms

With a “peng”, sparks flew from the ground.

Liu Ming felt as if his hands were on fire and under a great rebound, the silver hoe almost flew out of his grip.

The ground was as hard as steel, and the hoe wasn't even able to enter the dirt.

After a slight pause, Liu Ming quickly bent down and observed the ground. Only then did he realize that the ground here was different from normal farmland. The dirt was actually of a purple-red color.

The weeds also had dirt covered roots that dug far down into the ground, which made the plants seem as if they were one in the same with the ground.

With furrowed eyebrows, Liu Ming poked the purple red dirt and realized that it was uncharacteristically cold and hard.

“Kid, stop examining the ground. This isn't ordinary dirt but a special dirt called Resting Dirt which is used to plant Spirit Rice. It can't be hoed with normal methods.” A half-naked large man that was sporting extensive muscles saw Liu Ming's actions and smiled as he lectured Liu Ming.

‘Resting Dirt.’ Naturally, this was the first time Liu Ming heard such a name, so he stood up to look at the other inner sect disciples working their fields.

The disciples within the surrounding fields were all furiously waving their hoes, but not much was accomplished by them. Only a thin layer of dirt an inch deep was hoed over.

In addition, the silver hoes in their hands were pulsing with white light. Obviously, this wasn't a simple farming activity.

“This thing is actually a Practitioner Weapon.” Liu Ming retrieved his gaze, and, after looking at his own hoe, he realized that there were lightly carved Spirit Tattoos on the surface of the hoe.

“Since this is a Practitioner Weapon, I might as well insert a little Yuan Li into it.” Liu Ming thought for a while and started urging the Yuan Li in his body to pour into the silver hoe in his hands.

However, Liu Ming face changed after a while had passed.

No matter how much Yuan Li he poured into the hoe, the Spirit Tattoos didn't change in the slightest. It was as if Liu Ming had wasted all of his previous efforts.

Liu Ming furrowed his brows, and, after another few seconds, he tried pouring his newly converted Fa Li into the hoe.

In an instant, the Spirit Tattoos on the silver hoe lit up, and a soft white light shone from the hoe.

This was the trick!

No wonder there were only Inner Sect Disciples in these fields and no Outer Sect Disciples. In order to hoe these fields, one must use Fa Li.

After Liu Ming understood how to use his hoe and why this was a Sect Chore, he crashed the hoe down again.

With a “pu” sound, the silver hoe landed on the ground and brought up a thin layer of purple red dirt and weeds.

Taking a light breath, Liu Ming started furiously hoeing.

After the majority of a day, Liu Ming was resting within the field and after a long time, he slowly opened his eyes. However, as soon as he looked at his field that had just been hoed, he smiled bitterly.

The Resting Dirt was extremely hard to hoe and in Liu Ming's attempt to hoe the field, not only did he exhaust all of his Fa Li, his arms were also extremely tired and in pain.

What made Liu Ming even sadder was that although he had just hoed the field, there were already weeds growing from the Resting Dirt. Even though these weeds were extremely small, their roots were just as strong and would be a great pain to Liu Ming when he hoed the field for a second time in order to hoe to the required depth of half a foot.



For some of the twenty-plus year old Inner Disciples, that had a huge reservoir of Fa Li, hoeing the field was easy, and they had already finished and left after giving their hoes to the elder within the forest.

As for the disciples that were about seventeen to eighteen, they had already hoed their field a couple of inches deep and would probably be able to finish in half a day.

After seeing all of this, Liu Ming could only bitterly smile.

He couldn't compare to the older disciples with his shallow Fa Li and could only barely finish the task of hoeing half a foot deep in three days. He didn't even have a lot of time to rest.

What made Liu Ming even more depressed was the fact that he seemed to be the only new disciple working the fields.

However, after giving it some thought, Liu Ming realized that it wasn't so unexpected.

The Opening Spirit Ceremony only yielded a few tens of Spirit Apostles and each new Spirit Apostle received his or her sect chore at different times which meant that getting the same sect chore was pretty rare.

After thinking about his situation for a while, Liu Ming stood up again and walked to the edge of his field. After a flash of white light from his hoe, he swung his hoe down again.

.....

At the morning of the second day, the other fields had already been hoed while Liu Ming was the only disciple left still hoeing his field.

However, when it was at noon of the second day, Liu Ming was standing at the middle of his field and could only stare helplessly at his arms that were red and swollen like radishes.

Because of excessive force, Liu Ming's arms were swollen to the point where, even if he moved his arms, he would feel an extreme pain and thus could no longer swing a hoe.

"Not bad, there aren't many new disciples that have endured as long as

you have.”

Suddenly, a soft voice came from behind Liu Ming,

Liu Ming turned around in shock and saw the Spirit Master that was dressed like an old farmer behind him.

However, the old farmer’s gaze had a bit of approval when he looked at Liu Ming.

“Hello Martial Uncle!”

Without pausing, Ling Ming quickly greeted the Spirit Master.

“What faction are you under and what’s your name.” The old farmer asked.

“My name is Bai Chong Tian and I am under the Nine Infant Faction.” Liu Ming answered truthfully.

“Nine Infant. That’s Gui Senior’s faction. What Spiritual Pulse are you and are you a Personal Disciple?” The old farmer asked again after looking over Liu Ming again.

“I am only a Three Spiritual Pulse. How could I possibly be a Personal Disciple?” Liu Ming replied respectfully.

“Only a Three Spiritual Pulse. You’re talent is a little low. It’s a pity because with your mental fortitude, I would have liked for you to become my disciple.” Hearing this, the old farmer sighed.

“I am very sorry, martial uncle is...” A thought popped into Liu Ming’s mind and he couldn’t resist asking the Spirit Master.

“My first name is Su. You can call me Su Martial Uncle. However, looking at your current state, it’s impossible for you to keep on going. I’ll teach you the set of Exercise Punches, and if you perform it a couple of times, the swelling of your arms should go away.”

“Thank you for your generosity.” Hearing this, Liu Ming had a great smile on his face.

“You don’t need to thank me. These Exercise Punches can be learned by

all disciples that have been in the sect for an entire year. I'm just teaching it to you early." Su Martial Uncle said indifferently.

Then, the Spirit Master's body flickered, and suddenly he was in a strange body position. Then, he started to slowly perform each movement of a peculiar boxing technique while muttering a mysterious chant.

Liu Ming had seen countless secret techniques on Savage Island and was naturally interested in this boxing technique that looked like a secret technique. Using his talent of being able to do two things at once, Liu Ming started to memorize each movement and word the Spirit Master performed.

In the end, the old farmer only had to perform the boxing technique three times before Liu Ming had memorized the technique completely and was able to perform the boxing technique without fail.

Seeing this, Su Spirit Master showed an expression of regret and left without saying anything else.

Liu Ming, who was completely absorbed in the Exercise Punches, performed it seven or eight times until his body was emanating heat and his swollen arms had returned to normal.

Not only did his body feel great, Liu Ming felt as if his mental energy had also grown a little.

Finally, Liu Ming realized that Su Martial Uncle was no longer beside him. While still excited, Liu Ming immediately went and picked up the hoe on the ground and started hoeing the field.

During the night of the third day, Liu Ming threw his hoe to the ground and stretched backwards. Below his feet was a field that had been hoed half a foot deep with not a single weed in it.

Just when Liu Ming wanted to rush into the forest and return the quest to Su Martial Uncle, a sound of breaking air came from the horizon and ash colored clouds descended from the sky one after another.

Shockingly, those were the old disciples who were hoeing with him two days ago.

These disciples stood at the side of the field silently but on the face of every disciple, there was happiness that could not be hidden.

In Liu Ming's mind, he felt curious. Just when he was about to go and ask the disciples what happened, that Su Martial Uncle rode on a cloud, flying from the forest, and appeared on top of the Spirit field.

In one of his hands was a small golden bowl, while the sleeves of his other hand fluttered constantly. Faintly, there were lots of golden granules being tossed from the sky, evenly covering every field.

When Liu Ming saw that the Spirit Master's cloud flying towards his own field, he dodged aside hastily.

After a while, the old farmer's grey cloud stopped. Immediately after, he tossed the golden bowl up high and after mumbling some words, the golden bowl unbelievably grew to the size of a water tank.

Then, with a 'gululu' sound of water, spring water that was as white as milk flowed out from the tank and fell as rainwater on every field below.

Although Liu Ming was standing outside the field, he could still clearly sense the condensed Yuan Li that was in the field.

Something that was even stranger was that as the rain continued to fall, seedlings of rice emerged from under the field and subsequently grew at an amazingly fast speed that the eye could see and started to tassel.

After two hours, the rainwater finally stopped as the hundred acre field had turned golden with gigantic grain stalks that were over five feet tall and were full of rice.

"Old rules, everybody can go to your own field, collect ten Spirit Rice stalks and leave on your own," The faint voice of the old farmer commanded then he rode on his cloud and flew back towards the forest.

The disciples who were waiting outside the field bowed and thanked the disappearing Spirit Master before rushing towards their own fields and picking the rice they wanted. In addition, they started using all kinds of Practitioner Weapons to collect the stalks.

Incredibly, every one of them were really honest and collected only ten stalks of rice, not one person dared to take more.

After looking for a while, Liu Ming uncontrollably went and grabbed a seventeen or eighteen year old disciple who finished collecting the stalks and was about to leave, and asked, "Senior, what can these grains do? Why is every senior so joyous about it?"

"Hmph, this is Spirit Rice. It will be beneficial after cooking it. Go back and try it yourself, and you will know," The male disciple unwillingly and hastily offered two sentences and after that, left.

# Chapter 30: First success of training

Although Liu Ming was being glared at by the disciple as if he was a country bumpkin, he did not get angry. Instead, he went to his own field without any hesitation and picked the best Spirit rice stalks. Then he used his standard Practitioner Sword, which he brought with him anywhere he went, to collect it.

He then took out a yellow cloth from his arms, packed the Spirit rice stalks in carefully and strolled towards the forest.

After two hours, Liu Ming had returned the completed chore and gone back to his own dwelling.

Sitting down in front of his desk, he opened the cloth pack and spread out the Spirit rice stalks again to carefully observe them.

Every Spirit rice stalk was half a foot long, the grains on it were as big as soy beans. However, each rice stalk only seemed to have about seven to eight rice grains that had the shiny gold coverings as if they were made of gold.

After examining it for a while, Liu Ming raised his hand and plucked a grain from the rice stalk, putting it between his hands and rubbed it.

The covering broke and dropped off like paper mache, showing the greenish, translucent rice grain. Putting the single grain of rice under his nose, Liu Ming realized that it was giving off a faint fragrance.

There was a slight sense of happiness in Liu Ming's heart; not hesitating anymore, he found a small ceramic can in another room, poured some water into it and then removed the coverings as he placed the Spirit rice grains from a couple of stalks into the can.

With one hand, Liu Ming lifted the crock can and made some one-handed finger gestures with the other while mumbling something.

With a 'peng' sound, red flames emerged from his palm, covering the ceramic can, burning ferociously.

This was the Flame Spell Liu Ming had just learned.

After some time, a special smell of rice came out from the ceramic can, stirring Liu Ming's appetite.

Liu Ming made the flames smaller and, after waiting for a while, he felt that it was almost ready. Then with a 'puchi' sound, he cancelled the spell completely before quickly placing the hot can on the table. After that, he opened the can's cover.

A layer of rice that was as white as snow appeared in front of his eyes together with a distinctive fragrance.

Liu Ming took out a wooden spoon that he had prepared a long time ago and impolitely took a spoonful of rice from the can. With just one spoonful, half of the rice in the can disappeared into Liu Ming's mouth.

He ate the spoonful of boiling rice and immediately, an indescribable feeling of smoothness filled the mouth.

The rice grains wiggled around as if living and entered into Liu Ming's stomach one after another. The delicious taste this rice brought was a first for Liu Ming in his life.

Liu Ming failed to resist his temptations and ate all of the rice in the can quickly and cleanly.

The next moment, Liu Ming immediately felt a surge of hot breath rushing from his stomach and spreading out into his four limbs rapidly.

"Eh? This is....."

This hot breath was an extremely pure Worldly Qi!

Without thinking about it too much, Liu Ming sat down cross-legged and began practicing his Dark Bone Method.

When Liu Ming opened his eyes again after two hours, his face had a pleasantly surprised expression on it.

The increase in his Fa Li during this training session, which lasted only for two hours, was far greater than the increase in Fa Li he would have received from training an entire day.

It was surprising how much Spirit rice could help in his training.

No wonder Li Zong said that the chore of farming might bring surprising benefits.

If Liu Ming could eat this Spirit Rice several times a day, his training speed would grow at an exponential pace.

However, after this thought circled several rounds around Liu Ming's mind, he immediately shook his head and rejected it.

In addition to the probable rareness of the Spirit, rice which meant that normal disciples could not expect it from the Sect, the feeling of fullness from his stomach right now was a few times stronger than the Pills of Fastening. Even if there was enough Spirit rice supplying him, one person could only eat it once every six or seven days.

If that was so, the speed of one's training could only be increased by twelve to fifteen percent.

Compared to the results when he used his innate talent of doing two things at once, this kind of increase was far from useful.

After having such thoughts, the excitement in Liu Ming's heart had calmed without him noticing.

When Liu Ming finished packing the Spirit rice that was left, he went back to his room and sat down cross-legged.

In the month before, Liu Ming had used the Dark Bone Method to convert all the Yuan Li in his body into Fa Li and thus, his training was quite quick.

Now that the Yuan Li inside Liu Ming's body had been completely converted; if Liu Ming wanted to continue to increasing his Fa Li, he could only depend on his own training.

Liu Ming knew from the two books of Cultivating Experiences that higher level Cultivation Methods would also have higher mental energy consumption rates which forced one to put aside a lot of time for mental energy recovery.

Of course, generally as one improves his or her strength, his or her



mental strength would also slowly build up.

So when the new disciples and the Middle to Late Spirit Apostle disciples were both training on the same Cultivation Method or technique, the Middle to Late Spirit Apostle disciples had obvious higher training speeds than the new disciples.

As for the Cultivation Methods such as the Earth Spirit Method, normal new disciples would have no choice but to rest for ten to twelve hours after training for the same amount of time before being able to train again.

But when Liu Ming was using his multi-tasking talent to train on the Dark Bone Method, he did not need to care about this at all; a day's sleep was what he needed to train with full energy for a continuous five to six days.

The amount of time Liu Ming spent training was almost twice as much as the other disciples training time.

Also, from the two books of Cultivation Experiences, Liu Ming learned that he could not compare to the Six or Nine Spiritual Pulse disciples in his training speed.

Spending two hours on his training, Liu Ming's Three Spiritual Pulse would yield a result that was half of the result that a Six Spiritual Pulse disciple would achieve during two hour and only one-third of the result of a Nine Spiritual Pulse.

Because of this, even though the time Liu Ming spent on his training was far longer than the other disciples, the actual increase in his Fa Li and his training speed was equal to a Six Spiritual Pulse disciple.

It was no wonder that the Spirit Masters were only interested in the Six Spiritual Pulse disciples and did not even care about the Three Spiritual Pulse disciples.

If Liu Ming was the leader of one of the factions, he would also focus his resources on the Six Spiritual Pulse disciples since the difference between the training results of high pulsed disciples and low pulsed

disciples was frightening.

From this, Liu Ming could only imagine how incredibly fast Gao Chong would be improving once he started to train with his Earth Spirit Pulse.

With twelve spiritual pulses in his body, Gao Chong's training speed would be four times faster than the normal Three Spiritual Pulse disciples.

Even with Liu Ming's talent of doing two things at once, his training speed was only about half of the of Gao Chong's training speed.

As for some elemental spiritual pulses such as the Thunder Spiritual Pulse and Wind Spiritual Pulse, they would not have a great effect during training but when the owner casts techniques or spells that were of the same element as his or her Spiritual Pulse, the spells would have extremely increased power. Thus, they could also be noticed by the sect and given more resources than normal disciples.

Besides Spiritual Pulses, some cultivators had innate talents and abilities from their bloodline or some congenital occurrence...

Some of these talents and abilities could increase one's training speed, some could allow the owner to train Secret Techniques and Cultivation Methods that normal people could not and some would even have strange effects.

These abilities and talents had not been clearly tallied by the training world and those with such abilities were said to have 'Spirit Bodies'

Compared to the Nine Spiritual Pulse and Elemental Pulse, the appearance of a Spirit Body disciple was far more unusual.

However, not all the Spirit Bodies were useful to their owner. Rather, most of the known kinds of Spirit Bodies were all unimportant useless abilities.

Along these lines, Liu Ming's talent of doing two things at once could also be classified as one of the Spirit Bodies.

However, his ability differed from the normal Spirit Bodies. Other Spirit

Bodies were innate, Spirit Bodies that were with them since they were born, while on the other hand his multi-tasking talent was an acquired ability which appeared after an accident.

Whether these two were related or not, Liu Ming himself also could not tell.

As Liu Ming thought of these things in his room, he began to feel morose in his heart. However, he was also much more determined and had a lot more perseverance than other people. Very quickly he calmed the thoughts that were bothering him, and using the Dark Bone Method he began to train.

.....

Half a year passed by in a blink of an eye!

During this time, besides going out to do the Sect Chores and going to the Spirit Spell Pavilion to borrow some useful spells, Liu Ming had never went out of his dwelling one step.

He just used his whole heart to train on the Dark Bone Method, boosting his Fa Li with incredible speed.

Today when Liu Ming was training, his body suddenly shivered, the sound of metal hitting metal came from within his body. Then, when he opened his mouth, thick black gas was spit out and it transformed into dark gusts of wind, trapping his body inside.

Inside the gusts of wind, there were several faint, black tentacles fluttering, but in a blink of an eye they completely disappeared.

A clear sound of incantation came from inside the winds, and after a low groan the gusts of wind stopped, showing Liu Ming's standing shadow again.

"This first level of Dark Bone Method is finally completed. Heh heh, one year? For me, half a year is enough!" Said Liu Ming, a strand of laughter emerging on his face as he raised his arms and saw strands of dark gas winding between his fingers.

Suddenly when Liu Ming raised his hand, and the Tiger Bite Bracelet on his wrist glimmered before him, he pointed towards a wall that was not far away.

With a 'pu' sound, a black gust of wind shot out from the bracelet, making a small hole in the wall.

Seeing this, Liu Ming's heart jumped with joy.

This kind of strength could completely prove that he and the highest level of practitioners were at the same level. It looked like Liu Ming had really entered the Beginner stage of a Spiritual Apostle.

Because of this, Liu Ming could finally start training in the "Soul-shackling Chains" technique that he had.

At this time, there was bell's sound of 'dang dang' coming from outside of his dwelling.

Liu Ming was shocked. He went out hastily and looked towards the mountain top.

The bell sounds came from the peak of the Nine Infant Mountain and each sound was louder than the previous one, until the bell had rung nine times.

"Nine-rings? Could it be that today is Nine Infant Mountain's day of the Small Competition!" Liu Ming said with a surprised look on his face after listening to the bell sounds.

At this time, grey-colored clouds came from foot of the mountain and flew towards the mountain top.

Looking at the situation, Liu Ming hesitated for a while before making some hand signs and casting the Soaring Sky Technique to form a grey-colored cloud at his feet to help him ascended the mountain.

Soon after, seventy to eighty disciples gathered around the field on Nine Infant Mountain peak, and they were all looking at the three people at the center with serious expressions.

# Chapter 31: Small Competition

The three people in the center were the Gui Scholar, Zhu Chi and a beautiful, long haired thirty-year-old daoist nun.

Liu Ming already knew that the Gui Scholar, who was a Spirit Master, was known by Gui Ru Quan. The beautiful daoist nun who was standing together with them, was obviously the Zhong Martial Aunt who had been training when Liu Ming first arrived at the Nine Infant Mountain.

As for the other disciples, besides the new disciples and the disciples that Liu Ming saw last time, there were many new faces who were above thirty years old.

Although the faces of the older disciples were unfamiliar, all of them had a sense of power; it was obvious that most of them were far along in their cultivations.

Soon, about a dozen inner disciples landed around the field but after that no one else appeared.. After a small cough, Gui Ru Quan opened his mouth and spoke.

“Excellent, except for the disciples who could not make it because of the Sect Missions, all of our Nine Infant Sect’s disciples are here. This is the first time that our sect has organized a Small Competition since the addition of several new juniors. Whoever performs well in the competitions will be rewarded, and the disciple who performs the best will receive extra rewards. Zhu junior, go ahead and take out all the competition’s tools.

The scholar’s last words were spoken towards Zhu Chi.

“Don’t worry, senior, I have already prepared everything.” The shaggy-haired man grinned and walked ahead. Suddenly, yellow-coloured Glyphs appeared in his hands and were thrown out.

TL: Glyphs –

<http://www.sos123.com/uploadfile2/2012727153426594.JPG>

With ‘ping ping’ sounds, white smoke appeared. When the smoke

cleared, several items had appeared out of thin air and were lying in the middle of the field.

Seeing this, Liu Ming's eyes brightened as he realized that the glyphs that Zhu Chi had used were the Storage Glyphs mentioned by his Su Martial Uncle.

To be able to place so many things in such a small glyph, the Storage Glyph was indeed incredible.

Five jet black steel locks of different sizes, a cloudy white rock monument about five feet tall and seven to eight simple puppets the size of normal people. These puppets were all different: some had armor on while others had giant swords the size of a person.

TL: Locks – [http://www.warrior-supplies.com/images\\_products/149\\_large.jpg](http://www.warrior-supplies.com/images_products/149_large.jpg)

“According to the old rules, this competition will be conducted by dividing all of you into three groups. The new disciples will be in one group, the disciples whose ages are above thirty in one group and the rest of the disciples in another group. The subjects for the competition are strength, spells and also actual combat. Zhu Junior will be in charge of the test of those who are above thirty years old, Zhou Junior will take charge of those who are under thirty years old and I, personally, will be in charge of the new disciples.” Gui Ru Quan briefly explained.

Zhu Chi and the Zhong Martial Aunt naturally did not have any objections.

After a short discussion with each other they decided to start with the new disciples, before testing the disciples under thirty before finally getting to the old disciples above thirty.

After a slight cough, the scholar walked out and said:

“New disciples, step forward and let your seniors know who you are. Our Nine Infant Faction might not be the strongest within the Sect, but our faction is the most united of all factions.”

Hearing the scholar, Liu Ming and the other four new disciples walked

out and introduced themselves while greeting the surrounding disciples.

The other disciples replied with smiles on their faces.

“Yu Cheng, as a personal disciple, you will start the competition. Let me see the result of your half year of training.” The scholar said to the red-haired teen after looking at Liu Ming and the four other.

When the red-haired teen heard those words, he bowed and walked towards the five jet black steel locks and stood before the smallest lock.

Even though this wash-bowl-sized lock was the smallest of the five, it weighed a hefty four to five hundred pounds. Normal people would not even be able to shake it.

For the previous Liu Ming, if he didn't use his technique which burned his potential, he would have also had a hard time shaking it.

After a low roar, the red haired youth grabbed the two handles on the steel lock and started lifting.

The steel lock shifted slightly but didn't actually rise from the ground.

Seeing this, the red haired youth's face flushed. Chanting something, his body suddenly became shrouded with a pale yellow light and seemed somewhat changed.

With another roar, a couple of yellow Spirit Tattoos appeared on Yu Cheng's arms and he shakily lifted the steel lock.

With a “peng” sound, the steel lock was dropped back to the ground and made a small crater.

“Looks like you have trained your Earth Spirit Method to the first level. You wouldn't be able to lift this lock with a simple use of your Fa Li. Do you want to try the second one?” Seeing Yu Cheng's performance, Guan Ru Quan smiled but did not compliment him on the fact that he could raise the first steel lock.

The other inner disciples on the field watched this scene with smiling faces and did not show surprise at Yu Cheng's performance.

“I have already used all my strength in raising this one. It's impossible

for me to raise the second one.” The red haired youth took a deep breath and calmed his heaving chest before responding respectfully.

“Okay. Next, use your strongest spell to attack this stone monument made of White Myanmar Crystals from ten steps away. The scars that you make in ten breaths (twenty seconds) on the monument will be used to measure the power and understanding of your spells.” The scholar slowly said.

“Yes, teacher Gui!” Yu Cheng answered and quickly walked to distance himself ten steps from the cloudy white monument. With a serious expression, he started to form hand signs and, after a few breaths, a green blade the size of his hand appeared between his hands before steadily growing brighter.

Suddenly, Yu Cheng yelled: “Wind Blade.” Raising his hand, the green blade flew forth.

With a “pu” sound, a half inch deep scar appeared on the smooth surface of the stone monument.

The stone monument was incredibly sturdy.

Once again, Yu Cheng started making hand signs and chanting. However, before the wind blade in his hands could fully form, Gu Ru Quan emotionlessly said: “Time is up!”

The red-haired youth could only dissipate his unfinished spell as his face showed some frustration.

“Good. To be able to leave a half inch scar on the monument shows that you have spent quite a bit of time on this spell, and you can be considered to have understood this spell. However, you must continue to practice hard until you can release two attacks in ten breaths. That would mean that you have begun to master the spell. As you train further, the difficulty of improvement also increases, so you must be prepared for such a thing.” The scholar took a look at the stone monument and nodded.

The red-haired youth quickly agreed.



“I can only give you a “moderate” grade for the first two tests. The grade that you receive, will highly depend on how you do in actual combat. Since you are a new disciple, you only have to fight against the weakest golem.” The scholar said as he walked over to the golems.

Stopping before the shortest golem with no weapon, Gu Ru Quan put a Spirit Stone into a notch in the chest area of the golem. Afterwards, he gently poked at the head of the golem, inserting a wisp of black air.

Immediately, the previously immobile golem’s eyes flashed red, and walked in large strides towards a circle already drawn in the field. After entering the circle, it stopped.

“You will fight with this golem that has a low level war soul in this circle. Whoever leaves the circle first loses. The score you receive depends on how long you manage to stay in the circle.” Gu Ru Quan said with his hands behind his back.

Quickly, Yu Cheng drew a green dagger from a pocket at his waist and carefully walked towards the circle.

Right as Yu Cheng’s feet entered the circle, the seemingly clumsy golem pounced like the wind towards Yu Cheng.

With shock, the red-haired youth instinctively slashed his dagger towards the golem that was decently far away.

With a “pu” sound a faint green light blade flashed past, but when it hit the golem the golem only paused for a moment before continuing to pounce towards Yu Cheng.

With the incoming golem, Yu Cheng was obviously shaken as he backed away.

As he continued to wave his short dagger around fruitlessly, he was not able to finish the chant for wind blades as he made errors while chanting.

After a moment, the golem already neared Yu Cheng and with a single brush, it knocked Yu Cheng out of the circle.

“A ‘low’ grade for actual combat. Your overall grade will be ‘moderate to

low’.” Gu Ru Quan emotionlessly said while shaking his head.

Yu Cheng did not suffer any actual injuries from the exchange and could only walk back towards the other disciples with low head.

Seeing Yu Cheng’s performance, Liu Ming and the new disciples exchanged glances with each other.

“Next. Xue Shan.” Gu Spirit Master called the next name immediately.

Xue Shan gave a forced smile as he walked up.

As expected, Xue Shan who hadn’t even finished the first level of his Cultivation Method did poorly. He could not even raise the first steel lock, barely made a scratch on the stone monument with his Flame Technique and was knocked out of the circle before even touching the golem.

His final grade was a “low”.

Wan Xiaoqing, who was next, had a better overall performance.

Even though she didn’t do as well as Yu Cheng in terms of strength and spell power, she had the idea of placing a Lighten Spell on herself at the start of the actual combat and managed to stick through the attacks of the golem with a wind type support spell for the time it took to drink a cup of tea (fifteen to twenty minutes). In the end, she also got a “moderate to low” grade.

“Bai Chong Tian!”

The scholar’s gaze finally landed on Liu Ming.

Taking a deep breath, Liu Ming started using his Dark Bone Method and immediately, a layer of black gas emerged on his skin. Then, Liu Ming started walking towards the steel locks.

Seeing this, the scholar’s gaze became focused.

At Gu Ru Quan’s side, Zhu Ci was originally saying something to the Daoist nun beside him, but when he saw the state Liu Ming was in, he could not help but forget what he was saying.

The Daoist nun to his side furrowed her eyebrows as she asked:

“What is the matter, Zhu senior?”

“Zhong junior might not know but this kid is only a Three Spiritual Pulse, and the Cultivation Method he chose was the Ghost Spirit Method that our faction doesn’t practice. Looking at him, he obviously finished the first level of the Ghost Spirit Method. That’s quite unexpected.” Zhu Ci said slowly.

“Oh? Looks like this kid isn’t a simple Three Spiritual Pulse then.” The pretty nun heard Zhu Ci’s explanation and immediately gazed at Liu Ming with an interest in her eyes.

# Chapter 32: Evaluation

“It all depends on his performance.” Zhu Ci said with some thought.

At this time, Liu Ming gave a low roar as his arms suddenly thickened. Quickly, he raised the steel lock above his head with ease before putting it back down again.

Liu Ming’s performance brought forth quite a few surprised expressions from the crowd.

Because Liu Ming had shown that he mastered the first level of his Entrance Cultivation Method, it was no surprise that he could lift the lightest lock. However, the easy manner in which Liu Ming lifted it was quite surprising.

Some disciples were quite curious if their new junior could lift the second steel lock.

Contrary to their expectations, Liu Ming took a deep breath and restored his arms back to normal before walking towards the stone monument.

After chanting, a green wind blade shot out and left a scar on the monument, similar in size to the one that Yu Cheng had left.

This barely decent result left Zhu Ci and the nun quite disappointed.

“For the first two events, the first is a ‘moderate – high’ and the second is a ‘moderate’.” The scholar appraised after thinking a bit.

Hearing this, Liu Ming looked at the golem inside the circle and instinctively rubbed the Tiger Bite Bracelet on his wrist.

The moment he stepped into the circle, the golem immediately, and furiously, rushed towards him.

However, Liu Ming was well-prepared; his feet slightly moved and with a strange angle, he dodged the straightforward attack from the golem. Afterwards, he shook the Tiger Bite Bracelet on his wrist and whispered: “Lighten”.

The Tiger Bite Bracelet shone with a white light!

Instantly, Liu Ming's body became a few times lighter than before, and among the twists and turns, he seemed to have become much more agile.

After the golem's punches all missed it suddenly opened its arms. After spinning crazily around like a spinning top, several illusory arms, created by high spinning punches, appeared and attacked Liu Ming.

For a moment, there were shadows of punches all around Liu Ming, trapping him in the middle without any way of escape.

Seeing this, Liu Ming's eyes flashed as the black smoke on his body suddenly thickened. Then, he suddenly passed through the punches of the golem with incredible agility and ended up right in front of the golem.

With a slight move of his arm, the hand that had the Tiger Bite Bracelet was placed onto the crystal at the golem's chest. Then, Liu Ming called out: "Tiger's Roar".

With a slight buzz, a yellow tiger head surfaced from the bracelet and roared, creating a white sound wave blasted ahead.

With a "hong" sound, the golem was blasted backwards by the sound wave. After stumbling a few steps backwards, it suddenly became motionless with a noisy creak.

Even though the golem was not harmed in the slightest, the Spirit Stone lodged in its chest had completely shattered.

"Haha. Good. Not bad. To be able to find the weak spot of this low-level golem in such a short amount of time. That was pretty good. Looking at your reaction time and movement, you have some real combat experience right?" Gu Ru Quan laughed as he saw the golem defeated.

"I have previously trained mortal secret techniques and have thus been in quite a few fights." Liu Ming vaguely answered.

"Great. For your final event, I will give you a 'good' grade. Therefore, your average grade is a 'moderate to good' and with this grade, you should be eligible for the extra awards at the end." The Spirit Master peacefully

said while showing a smile.

“Thank you teacher Gu!” Liu Ming felt joy in his heart as he made a bow to the scholar and returned to his place among the new disciples, whom now surrounded him with surprised gazes.

“Senior Bai, you’re so strong. To actually find a method to directly defeat the golem, that’s incredible.” Wan Xiaoqing was still incredulous when Liu Ming returned.

“That’s right. Senior Bai, have you really finished the first level of the Ghost Spirit Method? If it was not for us going through the Opening Spirit Ceremony together, I would have never thought that you would be a Three Spiritual Pulse like us.” Xue Shan said with envy.

The red-haired teen standing at the side also looked at Liu Ming with a complex look.

“Didn’t you listen to what Teacher Gui said? This time, I was just lucky to find the golem’s weakness so that I could beat it in one attack. If the first one to be tested was me, surely I would not have been able to do a thing,” Liu Ming replied with a smile.

Although these words sounded a bit empty, the disciples Xue Shan and Yu Cheng finally found some reasons to their previous failures and their hearts were finally at ease.

Only Wan Xiaoqing was still staring at Liu Ming and after a while, the corners of her lips slightly curled, showing that she did not believe Liu Ming’s words.

However, Liu Ming did not care about whether a girl believed in his words or not, and instead put all of his attention on the last new disciple to be tested, Xiao Feng.

Xiao Feng was quite handsome with only his nose being a little flat. However, as a Nine Spiritual Pulse disciple, before he even appeared in the field, a lot of people were already taking secret glances at him.

Earlier on, even though he was standing amongst the new disciples, he did not talk to anyone; his eyes even showed disdain towards the results of

Xue Shan and the other new disciples.

However, when he saw Liu Ming defeat the golem in one hit, his face finally showed a hint of seriousness.

When Gu Ru Quan finally called his name, he finally came out of his trance and stepped forward.

Taking a few steps towards the steel locks, he did not stop in front of the smallest lock and instead stopped at the second lock. After taking a light breath, threads of green light appeared beneath his skin and made him seem as if he had turned into a light green human.

TL: Here comes Hulk!

Zil: Glowing One! He's radioactive!

"That's the Withering Wood Method. Teacher Gui actually taught him that method. In addition, from the looks of it, he has even finished the first level of the method."

The older inner disciples, who were watching Xiao Feng, flinched in surprise as someone yelled out Xiao Feng's Cultivation Method.

Although the Withering Wood Method was an entrance Cultivation Method, it was one of the hardest methods of the thirteen entrance Cultivation Methods. If one did not have someone guiding them, or exceptional talent, it was impossible to actually learn it!

After the green flash of light under Xiao Feng's skin faded, he bent down and slowly raised the second steel lock above his head.

This incredible feat silenced the buzzing crowd that was still discussing Xiao Feng's Cultivation Method.

After throwing down the steel lock, Xiao Feng did not leave. Instead, he started chanting on the spot.

"Is he trying to..."

Some of the disciples understood what Xiao Feng was doing and showed expressions of surprise.

After a second, a flash of blue light sparkled and an icicle that was about a foot long appeared in Xiao Feng's hand. With a light flick of Xiao Feng's wrist, the icicle shot towards the stone monument thirty steps away.

The result was an explosive sound. The upper half portion of the monument had been covered by frost, while in the middle of the monument there was a small hole with a radius of half an inch!

"He actually mastered the spell – Icicle Technique. It really is incredible. Did he really start training half a year ago?" Another buzz sounded throughout the crowd.

Seeing this, the scholar nodded his head as he showed a pleased expression:

"Very good. I had thought that because you were practicing the Withering Wood Method, your spells would be a little weak. It looks like that I worried needlessly. Your comprehension abilities are extremely good and for the first two events, you deserve 'good' grades for both. However, I hope that you don't disappoint me in the actual combat event."

After replying "yes", Xiao Feng fished out a light green ring and walked towards the circle.

With a "huchi" sound, the golem, which had a new Spirit Stone, pounced towards Xiao Feng.

Xiao Feng did not show any intentions of dodging and instead lowly roared. Instantly, his skin turned into a shade of strange, oily green.

With a "peng", the golem's punch landed on Xiao Feng's shoulder. However, the only effect of that punch was Xiao Feng leaning back a bit while his feet were firmly planted on the ground.

Not only did the punch not have much of an effect, Xiao Feng used the time in which the golem had not retracted its arm and punched three times with both of his arms towards the golem.

With a "hong" sound, the golem was sent flying, and when it finally



landed, it could no longer stand.

The Spirit Stone in its chest had turned to dust after the three hits.

“Haha. Good. Feng Er, to be able to push your advantages to the max and using the Withering Wood Method’s defense ability to help you make that crucial attack. Impressive! This event also deserves a ‘good’ grade. With this, your average grade is ‘good’.” The scholar praised happily.

“It’s the result of Teacher Gui and Martial Uncle Zhu’s teaching. I do not dare to take credit.” Even though Xiao Feng was extremely gleeful, he didn’t forget to bow and humbly give the credit to his teachers.

“If not for your outstanding talent, you would not get such a result no matter how much I tried to teach you. However, you can’t be too full of yourself. Also, look at your seniors in their events. For now, you can go back to the new disciples.” The scholar smiled as he walked back towards Zhu Ci and the nun.

“Junior Zhu and Junior Zhong, how do you think Feng Er did? Can he be of use in the next Large Competition?” Once the scholar neared to the other two Spirit Masters, he immediately asked.

“Feng Er did quite well and really stands over the other disciples which was to be expected since he is a Nine Spiritual Pulse. However, I think that him performing in the next Large Competition is too hasty. No matter how fast he trains, he will at most be a Middle Spirit Apostle by the next Large Competition.” Zhu Ci first nodded before furrowing his eyebrows.

“I’m not expecting Feng Er to gain a Core Disciple spot at the next Large Competition. I just hope that our faction will look a bit better. Our Nine Infant faction has really underperformed in the past few Large Competitions. Not only do we not have a spot in the top ten Core Disciples, we don’t even have that many disciples with potential.” Gu Ru Quan sighed.

“Since senior is thinking like that, then it’s alright. However, that personal disciple named Yu Cheng is quite ordinary. He’s probably not worth your efforts while that Three Spiritual Pulse disciple named Bai

Chong Tian performed quite well. However, how could he have possibly finished the first level of the Ghost Spirit Method with his talent? Does he have a hidden Spirit Body?" The pretty nun finally spoke up.

# Chapter 33: The Three-Star Shield

“I don’t think that he has a hidden Spirit Body, or it would have been exposed during the Opening Spirit Ceremony. From what Shi Chuan said, this disciple has a strong mental energy. Because of this attribute, Ruan Senior of the Scriptures Pavilion had him practice the Ghost Spirit Method, since having a strong mental energy is beneficial in practicing that method. Maybe that was why he was so quick in finishing the first level of the Cultivation Method,” Gu Ru Quan said slowly.

“A strong mental energy! If that’s the case, then the question of his training speed can be answered. However, won’t he have huge problems in the future with other Cultivation Methods? Will he have to take the route of the Corpse Refinery Faction?” The nun said with furrowed brows.

“Since he has chosen that Cultivation Method, he has to accept its consequences. However, even though Bai Chong Tian isn’t old, I can tell that he has quite some experience in actual combat and has his own opinions. How about this. We won’t take him under our wings but instead give him some extra resources? Who knows? Maybe we will have ourselves a nice surprise,” said Zhu Ci after musing over the situation.

“I agree with Junior Zhu’s words.” The scholar said.

“Alright, then I will personally meet with this disciple.” The pretty nun paused before nodding in agreement.

After discussing for a short time longer, the nun walked out and continued hosting the competition for disciples under thirty.

.....

After about ten to twelve hours, Liu Ming was completely immersed in watching a frightening fight that was taking place in front of him.

A forty year old disciple was hiding behind a floating ice shield while casting various spells.

Not far from him were two enormous creatures landing hit after hit on each other.

One of them was a thirty foot tall golem that was wielding a giant sword. The other was a pure white skeleton that had black smoke swirling around it. It had green flames dancing in its empty eye sockets, and it wielded two bone saws as blades.

Both of them were not even trying to avoid each other's attacks; instead it seemed as if they were trying to flourish their weapons as fast as possible.

In moments, the jet black armor on the golem had become tattered.

However, half of the skeleton's bones had cracks in them. In addition, half of its head was missing due to a swipe from the golem's large sword.

At this time, the middle aged disciple behind the ice shield pointed towards the skeleton and muttered a chant.

Instantly, a surprising scene took place.

The black smoke on the skeleton thickened and all the damage it had sustained was repaired quickly enough that it could be watched with the naked eye. In a few seconds, the skeleton was back to its prime.

"Peng, peng!"

The bone blades in the skeleton's hands furiously hacked forward and shattered the armor on the golem to reveal the Spirit Stone that was firmly embedded in its chest.

With one last attack, the skeleton shattered the Spirit Stone.

Immediately, the golem fell heavily to the ground and did not stand back up again.

Only then did the middle-aged disciple happily wave his hands while dissolving the ice shield in front of him.

Instantly, the skeleton turned around and shrunk as it flew towards the middle aged disciple. In seconds, it was the size of a palm, but still wrapped in black smoke.

"Tsk tsk. The White Demon Skeleton of Senior Xin's has gotten even stronger. It seems as if it has reached the realm of 'Hundred Bones' and

even the competition golem can't last too long against it."

"Previously, senior Xin's luck really changed when he got a Spirit Yin Bone and was able to refine that into this demon. If only I had such good luck."

"So what! No matter how strong this White Demon Skeleton is, Senior Xin is stuck at the Late Apostle level, unable to advance. His age is also above thirty and, like us, he is without much hope of becoming a Spirit Master."

"That's right. Back then, Senior Xin was too devoted in refining that demon, and didn't spend enough time on his own training. If one were to really fight with him, all that would be needed to win is to restrain the movements of the demon and then defeat it's owner. Senior Xin's personal combat abilities are still quite weak, and he will probably not be able to become a Core Disciple during the next Large Competition."

"I never knew that the 'Spirit Communication Method' would do so well when paired with Demons. Maybe I should go and practice that spell."

"Don't bother. Our faction's entrance Cultivation Method doesn't really pair well with the 'Spirit Communication Method'. Senior Xin had picked the 'Mysterious Yin Method' for his Cultivation Method which is why he was able to practice such a spell."

The disciples on the field chatted among themselves as they discussed their different opinions of Senior Xin.

"Is it really the 'Spirit Communication Method' that I have? To be able to control and order demons and ghosts, incredible!" Liu Ming muttered to himself.

Even though Liu Ming had heard about Barbarian Ghost disciples being able to control ghosts and demons, this was the first time he had seen such a display.

He was not the only one, other disciples also looked on with dumbfounded expressions; even the Nine Spiritual Pulse Disciple, Xiao Feng's eyes shone when the White Demon Skeleton appeared.

This was different from the normal spells like the Wind Blade Technique and the Flame Technique, since Demonic things had a shroud of mystery while in the mortal world.

Although Liu Ming and the other people had prepared themselves beforehand when they heard about the Barbarian Sect, after witnessing it with their own eyes, the impact on them was beyond their expectations.

But because of that, Liu Ming was growing excited about the 'Spirit Communication Method' that he had stashed away.

Then, after half a day, when a beefy fellow covered in golden light used one punch to pulverize a golem's head, the Small Competition was finally over.

The only person who received a 'good' grade was Xiao Feng.

There were five people that had a 'moderate to good' grade, including Liu Ming, the Senior Xin from before and the eldest disciple, Shi Chuan.

As for Zhu Ling Xin and Gu Mei Shan, they performed ordinarily.

During the competition, Liu Ming never saw Zhu Ling Xin use the totem that she was rumored to have.

In addition, based on the grade received, all of the disciples received different rewards.

For those that had a grade at or below 'moderate', they were awarded with three Returning Energy Pills.

This pill would increase Fa Li recovery by a large amount after being taken.

For Liu Ming and the other four disciples that had a 'moderate to good' grade, they received a Calming Heart Incense along with the three Returning Energy Pills.

The Calming Heart Incense looked just like any other incense. However, if one were to light it when they were mentally exhausted, it would aid the recovery of their mental energy. In addition, it would have a profound effect when one was trying to understand secret techniques or spells.

Thus, its worth was far above the value that of the three Returning Energy Pills.

As for Xiao Feng, he received a Penetrating Spirit Liquid in addition to the Returning Energy Pills and the Calming Heart Incense.

It was said that drinking the Spirit Liquid before a battle could boost one's Fa Li by twenty percent for an entire hour.

Afterwards, Gu Ru Quan announced the end of the Small Competition and that the disciples could now leave.

Quickly, the disciples bowed towards the three Spirit Masters and flew away on their respective clouds.

Right when Liu Ming was about to leave with the crowd, Zhong Martial Aunt called to him.

"Martial Aunt, do you have any orders?" Even though Liu Ming was confused, he made sure to not show any emotions on his face. Instead, he simply walked forwards and respectfully said.

"You did quite well in the combat event. Were it not for the fact that my Cultivation Method is not a suitable choice for you, I would have been willing to take you on as my personal disciple. Regardless, since you already have some foundation in combat, you can take some time to receive some Contribution Point missions that aren't too dangerous; they can be found on the second level of the Duty Hall. The importance of Sect Contribution Points is so much more than what you new disciples think. After all, the path of cultivation isn't as simple as to be found through locking yourself in your room." The pretty nun said to Liu Ming.

"Thank you for your advice, I will try to follow it." Hearing this, Liu Ming quickly nodded.

"Is the Bronze Ring your Practitioner Weapon? Its sound wave attack is quite strong; however, it's probably quite lacking when it comes to defense. How about this, I'll give you a defensive Practitioner Weapon from my earlier years? Although you cannot use two Practitioner Weapons at once, you can rotate between using them when you need to."

After thinking for a while, the nun took out a palm sized triangular steel plate from her sleeve.

“Thank you for your kindness! This Practitioner Weapon is.....” Liu Ming said happily after seeing the Practitioner Weapon.

“This Three-Star Shield is different from most other Practitioner Weapons. It has no offensive capabilities and can only be used for defending. Nevertheless, you will know how to use it once you begin to refine it.” The nun calmly said as she passed the steel plate to Liu Ming.

After Liu Ming received the triangular-shaped, steel-plated Practitioner Weapon, he thanked the nun.

“You can leave now. I expect much from you, do not disappoint me,” The smiling nun said as she turned and left.

After Liu Ming respectfully bowed again, he took a few steps backwards and ascended into the air.

On the cloud, Liu Ming eyes rolled diagonally and he saw that Xiao Feng and Yu Cheng had not left the square and were standing beside Gui Ru Quan and Zhu Chi. Xiao Feng and Yu Cheng’s faces carried a respectful manner for the other two, obviously listening to their advice.

It seemed like he had made the right choice this time to show off some of the results of his training during this Small Competition, otherwise Liu Ming wouldn’t have been one of the disciples that was called to stay behind, and even receiving the defense Practitioner Weapon.

As Liu Ming touched the Three-Star Shield in his sleeve, there was a hint of happiness showing on his face.

Not counting the Standard Glyph Blade, he had long wanted to get a useful Practitioner Weapon.

To the normal disciples, controlling two Practitioner Weapons would be the stuff of dreams, but for Liu Ming, who could divide his consciousness into two, it was an easy thing to do.

With two Practitioner Weapons, Liu Ming could definitely manage to



take some easy contribution point quests, just as what Zhong Martial Aunt had said.

After all, Liu Ming would definitely meet some difficulty while training; and because the Dark Bone Method was special, he would not be able to ask Shi Chuan or anyone in the Nine Infant Faction for help. Thus, spending contribution points to enter the Heavenly Intelligence Pavilion to seek answers would be the best solution.

However, before doing this, Liu Ming decided to first train the Soul-Shackling Chains technique that he got from Ruan Martial Uncle.

As Liu Ming was planning his next moves, he subconsciously flew into the courtyard of his dwelling.

Seeing the small tree that was twenty feet high in his courtyard, Liu Ming had a strange smile as he started chanting, and after seven to eight breaths, raised both of his hands.

“Pu, pu” with two sounds, two pure green wind blades shot out from his hands and cut the small tree into three sections.

# Chapter 34: Grey Market

“So that was initial spell mastery! When I was training in the Wind Blade Spell the other day, suddenly I felt optimistic; not only did the spell release become faster, the strength was also thirty percent stronger. However, this result only appears after training diligently until finally, the spell becomes near instinct.

If there is a initial spell mastery, certainly there must be a complete spell mastery. And in this case, the Nine Spiritual Pulse Disciples might be the same as the Three Spiritual Pulse Disciples, without any advantages. As for me, I can use my talent of doing two things at once to train on spells alternately; it can be a great advantage for me in this case.” Liu Ming said to himself, his face carrying a curious but excited look.

TL: We assume that Liu Ming has gone to the Intelligence Pavilion since he mentions going at the end of last chapter

Today, among many of the older disciples at the Small Competition, there were definitely disciples who trained their spells until they achieved the initial spell mastery level. But the number of disciples who reached such a level did not number more than ten, and the spells they mastered were mostly easy spells such as Wind Blade or Fire Bullet.

No one had trained in higher-level spells, such as Icicle Technique or Flame Snake Technique, until the initial spell mastering level.

Thinking carefully, that was not strange at all.

High-level spells were much more confusing to cast and the amount of Fa Li needed to cast them was far greater than the low-level spells, that made them a few times harder to practice.

Obviously the most important thing that most disciples spent their time on was training their Cultivation Method and their own Fa Li. It was rare for people to view the training of spells as important.

After all, one’s cultivation status was the basis for everything. Becoming

a Spirit Master like the Gu scholar meant that one's life expectancy would rise drastically and have many, many more opportunities to become stronger.

For Liu Ming, if he did not have the talent of doing two things at once, he would have probably made the same decision to pursue the path of training Fa Li. However, knowing that his talent can be a great advantage in this situation, Liu Ming, who chased after strength wholeheartedly, would make a different choice.

Mastering the confusing high-level spells would be quite a stretch for Liu Ming. But for easy spells like Wind Blade, Liu Ming decided that he could make time to practice them in the future and see if there are any more surprises.

After Liu Ming stood in the courtyard and thought about his future path for a while, he finally went into his training room and sat down cross-legged.

He hesitated for a while before taking out the Calming Heart Incense he had just acquired from his sleeve. Then, he set it aflame with a finger swipe and stuck it nearby.

Following the rise of the wisps of green smoke, a strange fragrance filled the whole room.

Liu Ming took a deep breath, closed his eyes, became motionless and began to meditate.

Lines of incantations composed of gray letters emerged in his mind; this was the method of training for 'Soul Shackling Chains'.

Even though the scroll for the Soul Shackling Chains had been given back to the Scriptures Pavilion, the actual contents that were recorded on it had long since been perfectly imprinted into Liu Ming's mind.

Although Liu Ming hastily went over it when he was trying to memorize the technique, when he saw the requirements of being a Beginning Spirit Apostle to practice it, he gave up on comprehending it immediately and did not continue exploring the meanings behind each word.

Now, with help of the Calming Heart Essence, Liu Ming planned to completely understand the secret technique in one go.

Time passed day by day while Liu Ming stayed in the room, not going out for five days and nights.

In the morning of the sixth day, Liu Ming finally opened his eyes with exhaustion filling his face.

“In order to practice this Soul Shackling Chain, I have to refine a live ghost. If I remember correctly, there’s a special place in the sect that nurtures ghosts called ‘Soul Swamp’. As long as I pay a certain amount of Sect Contribution Points, I can go in for a certain amount of time to catch a live ghost. Also, in the sect, there’s a Grey Market where disciples trade different things with each other; maybe there will be people selling live ghosts there. Without any Contribution Points right now, I’ll start with the second way.”

After Liu Ming quickly considered his options, he made his decision. However, before that, he needed to sleep for a long time in order to relax his overworked mind.

In the morning of the second day, Liu Ming, riding a cloud, left his dwelling.

Following the map that Li Zong gave him, Liu Ming flew towards a specific spot in the sect.

At the end of mountain range for the Barbarian Ghost Sect, an inconspicuous bamboo forest was located between two mountain peaks.

At times, some inner disciples of the sect would ascend and drop down into the empty area at the center of the bamboo forest.

After Liu Ming descended in the bamboo forest, he examined his surroundings with curious eyes.

Around the empty area, there were already simple booths of various sizes set up. Behind each booth was a Barbarian Ghost Sect Disciple; most of them were inner sect disciples while there were a couple of outer disciples.

There were also a couple of disciples that were walking from booth to booth and occasionally picking up an item to examine more carefully. There were even a couple of people in a heated debate with the stall owners over items that caught their fancy. This scene gave Liu Ming the feeling that he was in a mortal country market.

After calming down, Liu Ming copied others as he slowly walked from booth to booth and occasionally picked up an item to look at.

The things placed on the booths ranged from Pills to Glyphs to various materials to even Totems! It could be said that almost anything could be found within this grey market.

There were also some weird and unique things that Liu Ming had never heard of. For example, the “Stinger of Bloody Corpse Bees” , “Wing Feathers of Corpse Eating Eagles” or “Fine Blood from a Hundred-Year Fish Demon”.

As for the plain and regular ghost that Liu Ming was looking, it was available at various booths. However, when Liu Ming asked for the price for them, he was stunned.

A low quality ghost costed ten Spirit Stones, a regular quality ghost costed thirty Spirit Stone. As for high quality ghosts, no one at the grey market were even selling them and instead, some of the booth owners expressed interest in buying a high quality ghost for hundreds of Spirit Stones.

Even though Liu Ming was quite tight on Spirit Stones, he took the chance to understand the use and appearance of “ghosts”.

Ghosts were usually sealed in porcelain bottles that had special glyphs on them. Once the cap to the bottle was opened, it would turn into a cloud of black smoke as it rushed out of the bottle. While in cloud form, it would turn into various shapes and figures such as a tiger, leopard or a ghost’s face.

As for the attacks that ghosts could use, it could use simple illusion spells to affect one’s consciousness at close distances and was extremely biting cold by nature.

Overall, a ghost could not be considered a true demon. It was only a 'thing' that was born of miasma and had no intelligence of its own. Its attacks were more instinct than thought out actions.

TL: Miasma is like a type of Qi unlike Worldly Qi that's in Spirit Stones

Thus, catching normal and low quality ghosts was not a hard task.

However, for high quality ghosts, the situation was entirely different.

First, high quality ghosts were extremely rare with only one being born out of a hundred ghosts. In addition, they hate moving and love to hide within thick miasma.

Secondly, high quality ghosts have an extra skill of being able to split into clones when trying to escape. Thus, catching them was also a matter of luck.

In the legends, ghosts of a quality higher than high quality ghosts existed but this was only a rumour; no one had ever seen one with their own eyes.

TL: We'll call those super high quality ghosts – perfect ghosts

Of course these ghosts were all caught from the Soul Swamp by the inner disciples who paid Sect Contribution Points to catch them before coming here to sell them at a high Spirit Stone price.

Liu Ming asked and inquired around. In a short while, he gained all the knowledge that was needed. At the end, Liu Ming still gritted his teeth and paid ten Spirit Stones to buy a low quality ghost in order to first familiarize himself with the whole subject of ghosts.

Once he bought what he wanted, Liu Ming was ready to ride the cloud and leave but he was suddenly stopped by a girl's shout coming from behind.

"Eh, isn't this Junior Bai!"

Hearing this, Liu Ming paused and looked back. There was a male and female couple standing behind him.

The male was twenty one or twenty two years old and was wearing blue

clothes. His brows were high while his expression was quite haughty and cold. The female was a girl that was at about the same age and wore a white dress. Her face was quite pretty as she smiled; she was Mu Xiao Yun of the Mu Clan that Liu Ming had met in the Opening Spirit Ceremony.

“Oh, it’s Lady Mu. Hello.” Even though Liu Ming felt a little surprised, he still cupped his hands together.

“Junior Bai, you had agreed to come visit me. It’s already been half a year and I’ve been waiting this whole time for you to come.” Mu Xiao Yun smiled with her red lips as she spoke.

“Ehem.....Lady Mu, don’t blame me. After I joined the Sect, I was forced to train in the mountain with my peers and was unable to leave. This senior is.....” Liu Ming replied ambiguously and looked at the emotionless teen who was standing at her side.

“Du Hai of the Baleful Yin Faction,” the teen answered simply, his face showing no expression.

“So you are a senior from the Baleful Yin Faction,” Liu Ming said, his complexion changing slightly.

Among the many factions in the Barbarian Ghost Sect, the Baleful Yin was among the strongest, one of the top three factions. Also, this faction had quite a grudge with the Nine Infants Faction which meant that the relationships between the respective faction’s disciples had never been good.

“Junior Bai, don’t worry, Senior Du is a good friend of mine that I have known for a long time, His relationship with us won’t be affected by the relationship of our Factions. Oh yeah, what does Junior Bai wants to buy coming to Grey Market? I know some friends here, so maybe I can help you in one or two things.” Mu Xian Yun offered two sentences as explanation and asked, laughing.

“Thank you Lady Mu for your kindness but I already bought what I wanted, so I will not bother you,” Liu Ming pondered quickly on the offer and kindly rejected it.

“If that is so, then I will not impose myself upon you. By the way, junior, do you need some Sect Contribution Points?” Mu Xian Yun was a little bit surprised by the rejection but remained as her normal self and asked.

“Sect Contribution Points?” Liu Ming heart moved a bit by hearing these words.

“That’s right. Recently, I, Senior Du, and some other friends are preparing to take an important mission but we are still missing two people. If you, junior, are interested, we can count you in,” Mu Xian Yun said without thinking much.

“If it is an important mission, I am afraid I cannot help as I only joined the sect half a year ago. And even if I do, how do you plan on dividing the Sect Contribution Points,” Liu Ming replied with his eyes sparkling.

“Junior, do not worry, this mission is special. It does not need much strength but rather a team of people in order to complete it without failure. As for the Contribution Points, we took the mission together so naturally we will divide it equally.” The young woman explained in detail as she saw Liu Ming’s interest.

“Alright then, if there is no danger and it does not need much strength, then count me in,” Liu Ming promised after considering it for a while, thinking that he might as well see what a Sect Contribution Mission looked like.

“Junior, you made a wise choice. This kind of mission, that requires a team, is the best for neophytes like you. After three days, come to the second level of the Duty Hall; we will gather there and take the mission together.” Hearing Liu Ming’s words, Mu Xian Yun replied as an alluring smile crept up on her face.



# Chapter 35: Soul Shackling Chains

Liu Ming considered the proposal and thought that there were no problems, so he agreed.

After he was exhorted by the woman to go to the Duty Hall early, he said goodbye to the two and left the bamboo forest, carried off by a cloud.

“Junior Mu, he is only a Three Spiritual Pulse Disciple who just entered the sect, why did you bother to entice him. Low quality disciples like him can be found all over the sect; at most he will probably become a Middle Spirit Apostle.” Du Hai opened his mouth and said to Mu Xian Yun after Liu Ming left.

“Senior, you should know that the Nine Infant Faction’s Small Competition just ended a few days ago,” replied Mu Xian Yun with a light laugh.

“Nine Infant Faction’s Small Competition, I heard someone talk about it once. What, did this brat perform well in the Small Competition?” Du Hai’s expression slightly changed and surprisingly, he guessed part of it correctly.

“Correct. In the Nine Infant Faction’s Small Competition, this junior Bai Cong Tian was the only one who received the compliment of ‘moderate to good’ as a Three Spiritual Pulse Disciple,” Mu Xian Yun replied heavily.

“That being said, he has some potential,” Du Hai said while thinking about it.

“Yes, if it was not so, even if I wanted to entice people to join, I would not go and randomly find a new disciple to join our mission three days later. After all, this mission, like I said, is not dangerous; it is just a bit bothersome and time-consuming. If I didn’t have some relationships, I would not have known that this mission will be given out in the morning after three days,” Mu Xian Yun said.

“If it is so, then I have nothing to say. This mission will basically be an investment on this kid. I hope that he will not make us disappointed. By

the way, I heard that Ou Yang Xin annoyed you a few days ago,” Du Hai said with a cold flash in his eyes after he nodded his head.

“That’s right. A few days ago, when I went to collect some webs of the Blinding Spiders, I didn’t think I would meet this beast, but luckily Lady Wu was next to me so he didn’t dare to be rampant,” Mu Xian Yun said, smiling bitterly.

“Hmph, Ou Yang Xin just became a Middle Spirit Apostle and he dares to use filthy words on you. If it was not because of Martial Uncle Ou Yang, I would have shown him my power long ago. However, Yun Er, don’t worry, one more year at the most and I can become a Late Spirit Apostle. At that time, I can officially send the Mu Clan a request to marry you. At that time, Martial Uncle Ou Yang will most likely not stop it,” a trace of kindness showed on Du Hai’s face as the iciness on his face melted away.

“Senior Du, I appreciate your kindness. Back then, even though my husband by name had already died, we had already exchanged our birthdays. The Mu Clan had also received the dowry of the Ou Yang Clan. If I want to marry someone else, it would be a difficult matter. In addition, my joining of the Barbarian Ghost Sect was largely in part due to the help from Teacher Ou Yang. Senior Du, it is a blessing to be maintaining the relationships that we have right now,” Mu Xian Yu had a complicated expression when she heard Du Hai’s words and showed a sorrowful expression when she replied to him.

TL: Exchanging birthdays is a sacred “event”/shows trust since birthdays are extremely important in the Chinese Culture.

“If being a Late Spirit Apostle is not enough, then I will become a Core Disciple in the Large Competition in a few years. No matter what, you will be my wife.” Du Hai showed a savage expression as he spoke without hesitation.

Hearing this, gratefulness floated to Mu Xiao Yun’s face but she said nothing.

.....

Liu Ming sat cross legged in his room while playing with a porcelain

bottle that was sealed shut with a blood red glyph. Within the bottle was the low quality ghost that he had just bought.

After silently rehearsing the training method for the Soul Shackling Chain again, Liu Ming beckoned with one hand to pull a wood bowl that he prepared in advance towards him.

The wood bowl was full of pungent black and red blood and there were some purple black cotton like things floating within the bowl.

Liu Ming had bought the things within the bowl from the Outer Duty Hall of the Nine Infant Mountain for one Spirit Stone. The bowl contain various materials such as black dog blood that would aid him in the refining of a ghost.

After thinking for a while, Liu Ming ripped the Glyph off of the porcelain bottle and opened the cap of the bottle.

After a strange “wu wu” cry, a wisp of black smoke flew out of the bottle and after spinning around mid air, turned into a black ball of light that floated in the air. The ball of light had no shape or form and lightly shivered mid air.

TL: Who got the pun?

Liu Ming held his breath as he was completely still, while his gaze was locked onto the ball in mid air.

After a few seconds, the black ball let out a piercing shriek and started a rapid nosedive.

With a “peng” sound, the ghost dived into the liquid in the wood bowl and disappeared.

Liu Ming slowly closed his eyes as his hands started moving. Immediately, he formed a couple of hand signs with his hands.

Instantly, the black red liquid in the bowl shuddered and flew out of it. With the blood flying out of the bowl, the ghost that had been swallowing the blood in large gulps appeared.

Liu Ming’s hand sign changed once more.

After some “chi, chi” sounds, the purple black cotton in the blood seemed to have come to life as they formed a web that bound the ghost.

An incredible sight appeared!

When the ghost tackled the web that seemed like it would break apart with a touch, it suddenly dissolved into black smoke that was contained within the web. Even though the ghost charged left and right, it could not break the confines of the web.

Liu Ming took a deep breath and extended his hands without hesitation.

The skin on his hands was shining brightly, because of a coat of unknown oil, before they plunged into the wood bowl.

Liu Ming face was solemn as he muttered chant after chant....

Two days later, the door to Liu Ming’s training room opened and Liu Ming walked out with excitement on his face.

Twirled around Liu Ming’s arm was a black chain with the thickness of about a finger.

Walking into the courtyard, Liu Ming looked around and saw the segmented tree that he had cut with Wind Blades before.

Liu Ming made a hand sign.

After a slight trembling, one end of the black chain shot out like a viper attacking and in the blink of an eye, wrapped itself around the remaining trunk of the tree. The other end of the chain stayed wrapped around Liu Ming’s arm.

“Return.”

Liu Ming’s arm lightly pulled back as he said the word.

With incredible speed, the black chain released the trunk of the tree and returned to Liu Ming’s arm.

Seeing the responsiveness of the chain, Liu Ming nodded and showed an expression of satisfaction.

The main purpose of the Soul Shackling Chains was not to attack

enemies but rather to bind and distract them. The fluid responsiveness and speed that the chain showed was proof that Liu Ming had succeeded in refining the ghost. However, if he wanted to achieve a faster speed and even quicker responses, Liu Ming needed to practice using the chain a lot more.

It was only one day until Mu Xian Yun's Sect mission, which meant that Liu Ming definitely had no time to effectively practice his Cultivation Method or his spells and techniques. Thus, Liu Ming could only familiarize himself with his new Practitioner Weapon – the Three Star Shield.

Deciding his course of action, Liu Ming walked back to his room.

.....

At the morning of the second day, Liu Ming had rested well the previous night. After preparing his things, he flew away from the Nine Infant Mountain and went straight to the Duty Hall.

Because it was still early, there weren't too many people in the Duty Hall. In fact, the Enforcer of the first floor had his head buried in his arms as he slept on the table.

Without wasting time on the first floor, Liu Ming went straight to the second floor.

It was the first time Liu Ming actually went to the second floor of the Duty Hall. After taking a glance at his surroundings, Liu Ming showed faint surprise on his face.

The second floor had about the same amount of space as the first floor; it even had a similar stone table that had a middle aged enforcer sitting behind it.

However, at the middle of the second floor was a square crystal monument that was about forty feet high.

On the crystal monument were line after line of small golden words. At the left edge of the monument, there were even numbers that corresponded to each mission.

Mu Xiao Yun, Du Hai and two other disciples, a male and a female, were standing under the monument discussing something and when they saw Liu Ming arrive, they immediately beckoned him over with smiles.

“Junior Bai, you have finally come. Now that we have everyone, we can go accept the mission that had just been posted. Oh right, let me introduce you to the others in our group, this is Junior Mei and Senior Wu.”

“I am Junior Bai Chong Tian. Hello seniors.” Liu Ming glanced over the two and stepped forward as he spoke with a smile.

The “Senior Mei” was a inner disciple that seemed to be about seventeen to eighteen. He was carrying a pitch black steel bar and seemed quite strong.

“Senior Wu” was a beautiful woman who looked two or three years older than Mu Xian Yun. Her expression seemed as if she was eternally calm and wore a green Inner Disciple’s woman clothing. On her waist were a couple of bulging leather pouches that had something within.

When the two of them saw Liu Ming, they also started appraising him. Although, they returned the greeting, they did not open their mouths.

Liu Ming could clearly sense the belittlement in their gazes. However, besides a small smile, he did not feel any other emotions.

For a new disciple like Liu Ming that hadn’t even been cultivating for an entire year, it was natural for the older disciples to belittle him.

“Senior Mu, what mission are we taking?” Liu Ming turned his head to ask Mu Xian Yun.

“We will be taking mission Number 23 that requires us to collect 100 Blood Wire Fruits. The reward is 25 Contribution Points and 100 Spirit Stones. If we evenly split the rewards, everyone will be getting a quite high income.” Mu Yun Xian explained as she brought them towards the stone table.

Liu Ming gazed towards the crystal monument and found the mission with the same number. The information on the monument about the

mission was also the same as what Mu Yun Xian said. Thus, he simply nodded and stayed quiet.

Walking before the stone table, everyone gave their nameplates to the Enforcer and successfully claimed the mission.

“Alright, even though we have claimed this mission, other people can still claim the mission. Therefore, we need to hurry. The Blood Wire Fruits grow on the Rock Tuo Mountain that isn’t too far from the sect. The only problem is that the Blood Wire Fruit is the favorite food of Black Cloud Butterflies. Anywhere where Blood Wire Fruit appears, there will definitely be flocks of Black Cloud Butterflies. Before this, I asked a good friend of mine for a bottle of Spirit Attraction Dust which can attract the Black Cloud Butterflies away for a while. At that time, we will split into two groups: Junior Mei and Senior Wu, you guys will be in charge of attracting the butterflies while Senior Du and I will be picking the Blood Wire Fruits.” Mu Xiao Yun said with solemnity after exiting the Duty Hall.

# Chapter 36: Ou Yang Xin

Liu Ming and the other people heard these conditions did not have any problems with them. And so the group used the Soaring Sky Technique to ride on clouds and flew out towards a particular direction.

Once they flew out of the borders of the sect, Liu Ming looked curiously at the tall and low mountains below.

It was only natural as this was the first time Liu Ming left the Barbarian Ghost Sect since he joined; so naturally he couldn't help but be interested in everything outside.

The other four people grouped up into pairs and were chatting as they flew.

Among them, Senior Wu, Du Hai and Senior Mei did not even have the slightest bit of intention to interacting with Liu Ming; only Mu Xian Yun would turn her head to occasionally say one or two sentences to Liu Ming.

Liu Ming carried an expression telling that he did not care either way.

This time, his main goal of coming out was to increase his experience in completing Sect Contribution Points Missions. This way, he could test the grounds for taking missions alone in the future. As for the attitudes of the others, he did not care.

In a blink of an eye, the group had already flown for more than an hour. Suddenly there was a buzzing sound in front of them, followed by a gray cloud which was heading straight at them.

Mu Xian Yun and the others saw this and were slightly shocked.

However, when they clearly saw who the person flying towards them was, Du Hai's expression turned dark, the expressions of Mu Xian Yun and the other disciples did not look too good either.

"Eh, isn't it Senior Mu! Senior, where are you going? Do you need me to accompany you?" On the approaching gray cloud stood a youth wearing a white robe; he looked quite handsome, but when his pair of filthy eyes looked at Mu Xian Yun, they showed nothing but obscene thoughts.



Du Hai uncontrollably flew forward without waiting for Mu Xian Yun to speak and said with glaring eyes, "Hmph, Ou Yang Xin. Where we are going has nothing to do with you."

"Du Hai, you are a Baleful Yin disciple. Since when could you start to interfere with the business of Dancing Ghost disciples? I am talking to Senior Mu, you don't need to speak out of turn. Also, speaking of relationships, Senior Mu is my sister in law and being her brother in law, caring for her is a normal thing to do," said the white-robed Ou Yang Xin with a cold laugh.

Once Du Hai heard these words, green veins popped out on his forehead, and he placed his hand onto the large blade tied to his back.

Mu Xian Yun also started frowning.

Senior Wu sighed and flew out before slowly talking to Ou Yang Xin. "Junior Ou Yang, Junior Mu and I are going to do this Sect Contribution Point Mission together. We already have enough people; even if we want to increase the number of people, junior you would have to go to the sect and take the mission first,"

"Heh heh, that's alright. I don't care about that small amount of Sect Contribution Points. That brat, looking at you, you're a new disciple. Now I'm giving you a chance; you can return immediately and I will help you and complete this mission for you. At that time, the Contribution Points will naturally be added to your nameplate." Ou Yang Xin arrogantly said while grinning, pointing at Liu Ming who was among the disciples.

Hearing this, Liu Ming's brow jumped. When he saw the pleading gaze from Mu Xian Yun, he suddenly understood how awkward his situation was.

Du Hai, Senior Wu and the other disciples also heard these words and looked at Liu Ming with different expressions!

In his heart, Liu Ming felt even more nervous.

He had literally had a huge problem fall onto him, despite not doing anything.

This Ou Yang Xin who dared to use this kind of tone to talk to Mu Xian Yun and the other disciples, was obviously a powerful disciple in the Sect. If Liu Ming did not accept Ou Yang Xin's request, this man would definitely remember Liu Ming's rejection. On the other hand, if he accepted, he would definitely be on the bad side of Mu Xian Yun and the others.

When Ou Yang Xin saw Liu Ming showing hesitation, his expression went dark and yelled:

"Brat, don't you dare reject a good intention! You can go back and ask who I, Ou Yang Xin, am. I'm giving you face right now, are you sure you do not want it?"

When Liu Ming heard these words, he became angry; but he had made his decision and replied with a snort:

"Although this is the first time I have heard your name, but seeing as it is not among the martial uncles of the sect. If you really want to give any orders to me, wait until you are a Spirit Master!"

"What did you say!?" Ou Yang Xin became angry when he heard this and rushed forward.

But at this time, Du Hai moved and blocked the path, pressing his hand on the hilt of his blade and said with cold words:

"Looks like Junior Ou Yang has forgotten the rules of our Sect: disciples who start a fight without permission will be whipped or even have his or her Fa Li taken away. Do you need me to teach you a lesson about that?"

At this time, Senior Mei also flew out without saying anything and stood shoulder to shoulder with Du Hai.

"Good, very good. Fine. If Senior Mu won't let me join, I will not be forceful. "Ou Yang Xin hatefully said while examined the two men in front of him, quenched the anger in his chest.

Urging the gray cloud below him, he flew past the group.

However, when he passed Liu Ming, he deliberately used a low-pitch but

still audible voice to fiercely say, "Brat, I'll remember your face. Next time, don't let me meet you on your own."

When his voice stopped, he increased his speed several times and shot out into the distance.

When the others heard this, their expressions changed slightly; but Liu Ming just frowned and quickly regained his calm expression as if nothing had happened.

"Junior Liu, I am quite sorry for bringing you into our conflict." Mu Xian Yun said with gratitude.

"I didn't think Junior Bai was a man with such courage. Junior Mu really has great judgement. If junior has time in the future, feel free to come sit at my dwelling." Senior Wu smiled as she said.

Even though Du Hai and Senior Mei did not speak, their gazes changed to be more peaceful and accepting towards Liu Ming.

"It's nothing. To be honest, I was seriously thinking of accepting his offer for a second there since I would be able to gain Contribution Points without actually doing anything. However, the words that he spoke later were much too harsh. Even though I do not want to offend anyone, I'm also not someone that can be easily pushed around." Liu Ming replied with a smile.

"That's right! For us cultivators, we have to go against hardship. If we cannot even hold on to our values, we will never go anywhere, even if we have great talent." Du Hai nodded as he praised Liu Ming's words.

At the same time, Du Hai sent a message that could not be heard by anyone else to Liu Ming:

"Junior Bai, this time, I owe you a favor. I will definitely repay this favor in the future."

Liu Ming paused before he smiled towards the serious youth.

Afterwards, the group kept on flying towards their destination.

Another four hours passed and a large mountain, full of scatter rocks

appeared in the mountain range.

Not only was this mountain over tens of thousands feet tall, the rocks on the mountain were all of a green-grey color and were strangely shaped compared to normal mountain stones.

“This is the Rock Tuo Mountain. Let’s all descend nearby first and then walk there in order to prevent Black Cloud Butterflies from finding us.” Mu Xian Yun said.

The others heard these words and naturally agreed; they urged their grey clouds and descended into the forest below them one by one.

“Senior Wu, this is a bottle of Spirit Attraction Dust. Could you and Junior Mei go first and attract the Black Cloud Butterflies away from the mountain for an hour? Since the Blood Wire Fruit is found in sheltered areas where not much sunlight shines, if the time is too little, then we might not be able to get enough fruits to complete the mission. Junior Liu, this is the Blood Wire Fruit. Once the Black Cloud Butterflies leave, me, Senior Du and you will have to collect the Blood Wire Fruit in the mountain with as much speed as possible. If we can find extra Blood Wire Fruit, that would be the best. These fruits are rare alchemist ingredients and we can sell the extras for Spirit Stones.” Mu Xian Yun orderly gave out instructions as she flipped her wrist to reveal a bright red fruit the size of a bean and a pitch black bottle.

“Got it. Junior Mei and I have brought Godspeed Glyphs with us and should be able to distract the butterflies for at least an hour.” Senior Wu said with a smile.

Liu Ming stared at the red fruit for a couple of seconds before nodding his head to confirm that he had memorized the shape and color of the fruit.

Immediately, the group started to act.

Senior Wu and Senior Mei started to fly towards the mountain.

Right when the two were about to reach the mountain, Senior Wu, who was in front, flicked her wrist and a small black bottle appeared.

However, it's lid was missing.

With a "pu" sound, a wiff of white smoke flew out from the bottle and spread with the wind.

At the same time, an extremely spicy scent began to spread.

Immediately, the silent mountain became abuzz with sound. Countless butterflies the size of one's palm began to fly out from behind the strange looking rocks and formed a black cloud as they chased after the two.

Seeing this, the two didn't immediately run from the mountain. Instead, they each placed a glyph on themselves. After a flash of green light, the grey clouds below them suddenly sped up immensely. Satisfied with their speed, the two started to circle the mountain in hope of attracting more butterflies out of the mountain.

When the two had circled the mountain seven or eight times, the black butterflies chasing behind them had formed a huge black cloud that was fifty to sixty feet in length!

The destruction that the cloud of black butterflies could bring was extremely frightening!

At this time, Senior Wu called out to Senior Mei and the both of them shot out towards a direction away from the mountain.

With an intense buzzing sound, the black cloud followed after the two.

"Alright, let's go." Seeing the cloud of butterflies gone, Mu Xian Yun decisively ordered.

Quickly, the three of them rose into the air and flew towards the mountain.

After a short couple of seconds, the three landed at different places on the mountain and started flipping through the strange stones in search of the Blood Wire Fruit.

Time flew by, before they knew it, the time it took to eat a meal had gone by!

TL: 15-30 minutes

With a “peng” sound, a black chain pulled apart a strange rock that was about half the height of a person and revealed two stalks of green vines that were only inches long. Each of the stalks had a blood red fruit at the end of it.

Smiling, Liu Ming bent down to pick the two red fruits. Afterwards, he took out a green colored wood case to place them in.

After doing all of that, Liu Ming stretched his waist lazily.

The two fruits that he had just found made the total number of fruit that he found to rise to 24. The speed at which the other two were picking Blood Wire Fruit should have been around the same and thus, accomplishing the mission wasn't going to be that hard.

Right as Liu Ming was thinking about their chances to finish the mission, the strange rocks under his feet visibly shook. Immediately after, a violent trembling wave was emitted from the bottom of the mountain. At the same time, roaring sounds sounded at the peak of the mountain as countless stones started to rain downwards.

# Chapter 37: Ye Tian Mei

Liu Ming was shocked with the new development and threw his thoughts about Blood Wire Fruits to the back of his mind. He instantly made a sign with one hand and grey clouds gathered beneath him, ready to ascend towards the sky and fly away.

But at this moment, the mountain rocks in front of Liu Ming suddenly cracked open. A green thing shot out from the crack; its speed was so impressive that one could not clearly see what it was.

Liu Ming's heart trembled as he urged the grey cloud to shoot backwards.

With Liu Ming's action, the green thing changed direction in mid air and disappeared into the mountain in the blink of an eye.

"You still want to run away? You evil creature. Come out!" The cold voice of a woman echoed in the sky.

Immediately after, an unbelievable scene occurred before Liu Ming.

A large amount of clouds suddenly appeared in the clear blue sky and began to spiral together. After the clouds gathered together, a smooth and glowing palm appeared from inside the clouds and thrust down onto the mountain.

"Hong!"

Although Liu Ming was already dozens of feet away from the mountain, he still felt the indescribable power pouring downward. He heard a buzzing noise and Rock Tuo Mountain, shattered like a mirror. With a final groan, it collapsed into a fine powder puff.

Liu Ming was dumbstruck seeing this scene.

At this time, a "sou" sound came from a tree below him. The green shadow once again shot out and dashed towards him without hesitation.

Liu Ming smelt a foul breath and a soul trembling with murderous aura coming towards him.

Liu Ming's body and mind froze, to the point where he could not even move a finger, let alone hide or defend himself. All he could do was watch as a big, bloody mouth appeared in front of him, charging for his head, biting down.

"Go away evil creature! You still want to suck people's blood to heal yourself?" At this moment, an air wave appeared in the empty space beside Liu Ming and an attractive figure appeared in a flash. The woman waved her hand and silver lightning flashed, crushing the bloody maw in an instant.

After a cry was heard, the green shadow stumbled and tumbled away before managing to correct itself into a firm stance.

Liu Ming then felt a warm sensation on his body, with his mobility recovering. At the same time, he could see the true form of the green shadow clearly.

Surprisingly it was a huge, green rat, about the size of a goat. Its eyes were blood-red and it stared fiercely at the mysterious person that appeared beside Liu Ming.

Liu Ming swallowed his saliva and was about to turn to look at the figure beside him when the huge rat moved. The rat turned into a green flash and shot outward, trying to run away.

"You evil creature! Still trying to escape?" The attractive figure beside him spoke with a cold voice. She hesitated before grabbing Liu Ming's shoulder as she started glowing with a silver light. They transformed into a silver flash and went chasing after the huge green rat.

Liu Ming could only see bright silver lights before his eyes and was blinded by it. All he could sense was the "hu hu" like sounds howling beside his ears while some ear-splitting cries were occasionally heard. He felt as if his entire body was floating while being bounded by some power which caused him to be unable to move.

Even though Liu Ming was braver than many, he too felt afraid at that moment.



“Peng.”

After an indescribable amount of time, Liu Ming realized that the “hu hu” sound had stopped and he found himself standing on the ground. When he regained his freedom, he immediately opened his eyes and glanced around quickly. His heart nearly jumped out of his mouth when he saw his surroundings.

He was now standing on a huge rock on top of a mountain peak

Not too far, across from him, was another mountain peak. The huge green rat was standing atop a gigantic tree that was on that mountain’s peak. It was looking furiously at where Liu Ming was standing.

A meter long deep cut appeared on the body of the huge green rat this time. Silver-colored fire was burning vigorously on the cut and Liu Ming could occasionally smell the subtle smell of burnt flesh.

However, the mysterious person who brought Liu Ming here had vanished.

Facing the huge green rat, Liu Ming felt stiff and cold despite his usual courage. He gritted his teeth and ripped apart the fine rope on his neck that was tied to the Three-Star Shield. He then made a single-handed sign.

Three dark lights blinked on the steel plate and a dark misty light shield appeared before Liu Ming. The shield was quite large and covered over half of Liu Ming’s body.

That huge green rat did not care for what Liu Ming was doing. It’s eyes were looking around, trying to find something.

Liu Ming felt a little relieved when he saw that, but he still had no intention of making rash movements.

Before Liu Ming could think about what his next action should be, the rat shook its body and an area of hair on its back shot out like arrows.

As Liu Ming heard the sound of pins whistling through the air, numerous green light beams cascaded down like rain in a storm. Liu

Ming's face immediately turned deathly pale.

He knew that, even though he had a lot of faith in his Three-Star Shield Practitioner Weapon, the light shield could not possibly defend against that powerful strike.

“Peng.”

An earthy yellow alms bowl suddenly appeared in front of Liu Ming. The alms bowl spun and a five-colored beam shot out from within it.

All the green beams paused mid air before they were sucked into the alms bowl by the five-colored beam.

The green rat ran away when it saw this light, but it was already too late.

A gentle shout appeared in the sky and a silver ray whirled down. With just a flicker, the huge rat was surrounded by it.

After a weird scream, a bloody shower fell as the huge green rat was blended by the silver vortex. All that was left of it was a lump of thick and sticky dark liquid, struggling to survive and breaking through the light.

The silver beam flashed and a woman wearing a silver imperial dress appeared. Her beautiful eyes glanced downward for a few seconds before she spoke in a cold voice, TL: Imperial Dress – <http://www.guzhuangwang.com/lsszjz/.html>

“You evil creature, it seems you are already at the Fake Crystal Level. So that's why you've killed so many people. The stronger you are, the more I can't let you live. Silver Sky, annihilate!”

TL: Spirit Master -> Crystal Level, so fake crystal means that it's about to get to the crystal level

Her voice had just dropped when the shining silver light surrounding the black, round bubble in mid air, started to stir even more violently.

In the space of a few breaths , the black ball of liquid had flickered perilously before it finally exploded into countless black crystals. However, as it exploded, the explosion managed to break a hole through

the surrounding silver light.

After a strange roar, some black smoke among the crystals flew out from the silver light. With a “peng” sound, it split into hundreds of wisps of black smoke and escaped in every direction.

“Still trying to leave! Hundred Sword Art!” The brows of the silver lady were raised as she made a hand sign.

The silver light in mid air trembled before shooting out hundreds of small swords. After a slight pause, each of the swords wildly chased a wisp of black smoke.

Moments later, the black wisps of smoke were all destroyed by the silver swords.

“Return.”

The Imperial Dressed lady made a hand sign and all the small silver swords shot back. Before they reached her, they combined to form a longsword that disappeared within her sleeves.

TL: Check the image to see why she can do this.

Afterwards, the lady beckoned at Liu Ming.

With a buzz, the alms bowl shot towards the lady. After catching it, the lady started chanting and pointed at the alms bowl.

With “sou, sou” sounds, the black crystals from the explosion and the blood and flesh from the huge rat flew upwards and gathered into the alm bowl.

After finishing all of these things, the lady turned to Liu Ming and emotionlessly said:

“You are a disciple of the Barbarian Ghost Sect. This time, you distracted the beast’s attention for a while. That was of some help. I, Ye Tian Mei, never owe anyone anything. Some blood and flesh from the beast still remains, and I am too lazy to search for them. You can have them as compensation.”

By her last sentence, the lady was already shining with silver light and

as soon as she said her last word, she flew away in a flash of silver light.

The lady called Ye Tian Mei didn't give Liu Ming any chances to talk but instead left a extremely deep imprint of her extremely cold but pretty face in his mind.

Staring in the direction that the lady disappeared in, Liu Ming was stupefied for quite a while before he finally withdrew his sight.

"That was probably the true supernatural power of flight and a true Escape Technique. So cultivators can reach that level. I really have been shortsighted. However, I don't think that she was just a simple Spirit Master."

After Liu Ming muttered to himself, he finally recovered. However, a burning fire was deep within his eyes.

The helplessness that he had felt when his life was in danger gave him a sense of great insecurity. In addition, a mysterious feeling took root in his heart.

After staying on the large rock for a couple of more seconds, Liu Ming cast the Soaring Sky Technique and flew upwards. He first flew towards the spot where the large rat had been killed.

Even though he did not know the uses of the blood and flesh of the beast, with her status, she certainly would not take out some useless things to give to him.

Just as Liu Ming was searching for these fragments of blood and flesh, the Imperial Dressed lady was already flying hundreds of miles away.

All of a sudden, the lady's face changed. She stopped completely before turning to a nearby mountain and saying:

"So Fellow Yan had been waiting here. I was wondering why you hadn't appeared when I was fighting that beast."

"Fellow Ye's strength has truly become more refined. I must admit that I thought I was completely concealed. But to have been seen through so easily..." A puff of white smoke curled up from the mountain below and

after it disappeared, an elder with his hair arranged into a triangular spike above his head appeared and greeted the lady.

“Hmph, this is the territory of the Barbarian Ghost Sect. Besides Fellow Yan, why would there be any other fellows of the Crystal Level!” Ye Tian Mei said with some disdain.

“So that’s why. I had thought that Fellow Ye had reached the Fake Pill Level.” The grey-robed elder heaved a sigh of relief and said with a bitter smile.

TL: Crystal Level -> Pill Level

“Do you think it’s so easy to enter into the Fake Pill Level? However, why is Fellow Yan hiding around here sneakily? What are you planning?” Ye Tian Mei said without affirmation.

“For Fellow Ye to have made such a ruckus on my territory, isn’t it time to give me an explanation? Even though our Barbarian Ghost Sect is weak, we won’t let others take such liberties with us.” Hearing this, the grey-robed elder became serious.

# Chapter 38: Strange Omens

“How dare you say these words. If it was not for me finding that Rat Monster killing people in between our sects’ borders and if it was not for me who continued to chase it until here, you wouldn’t know how large of a negative consequence that rat had on the training world of the Kingdom of Xuan. Now, without hearing a single word of gratitude from Fellow Yan, you actually plan to find trouble with me; maybe Fellow Yan really thinks he can presume on his seniority? Or is he planning to not wait for the Immortals’ Meeting and wants to fight with me right now?” Ye Tian Mei frowned and showed murderous aura on her face when she heard those words.

“Fellow, don’t be so angry. My old bones won’t be able to withstand you making such large claims. With Fellow’s perfected art of Sword Flight, would you really need to chase it to my Barbarian Ghost Sect before being able to kill it? That’s a little far-fetched.” The grey-robed elder seemingly jumped at those words and hurriedly waved his hands as he said with a serious face.

“What do you know? This is a Rat Monster that had already cultivated to the peak of the Liquid Level and is only one step away from having a Crystal Level strength like me. Was it not for the rat being in some kind of a confused state where it could only act instinctually, I would never have been able to kill it.” Ye Tian Mei said coldly.

TL: Liquid Level = Spirit Master. I know this is kinda confusing but this is a monster so it can’t really be a Spirit Master/Spirit Apostle.

“What? A peak Liquid Level Rat Monster? Are you joking? Rat Monsters are the absolute lowest level of monsters, how could it possibly have cultivated to that level.” The grey-robed elder said with surprise.

“Do you think I’m lying? Hmph, alright, look at what this is!” Ye Tian Mei let out a hmph and flicked her wrist. Instantly the muddled yellow alms bowl appeared in her hand.

With a light pat on the alms bowl, a piece of black crystal jumped out

of the alms bowl and with a flick, the crystal was sent flying with a “sou” sound towards the elder.

The crystal had the speed of an arrow leaving its bow, extremely deadly and powerful as it shot towards the elder.

The elder narrowed his eyes but didn't move at all. However, a strange gust of wind blew before him and within the muddy cloud of wind came forth a ghostly hand that was filled with green scales. The hand then caught the crystal that was speeding towards the elder.

“Looks like Fellow Yan hasn't wasted time these past years. Your Green Metal Zombie is about to evolve into a Silver Zombie right?” Seeing this, Ye Tian Mei's eyes widened and coldly asked.

“Hehe, you are surely joking. For an Metal Zombie to evolve into a Silver Zombie, countless resources would have to be used. How would I have so many resources to waste?” The grey robed elder smiled and nonchalantly took the black crystal from the hands of the zombie. He then started to examine the crystal.

Hearing this, a sneer appeared on Ye Tian Mei's face but she did not pursue the subject anymore.

Moments later, the face of the grey-robed elder changed. He then placed the crystal under his nose and after a few seconds, his face changed from surprised to ugly.

“It is indeed a Liquid State Monster. From the smell of it, it is also a Rat Monster. How would this have happened? Is the rat a mutated monster that advanced its strength in the mutation?”

“I also thought that. However, I will bring these things to my Senior for her to examine.” Ye Tian Mei slowly said.

“With Fellow Leng Yue's experience, she can definitely give a clearer answer.” When the grey-robed elder heard the mention of “Leng Yue”, he lightly coughed to hide his surprise.

“If Fellow Yan has found no problem then you will probably forgive me for intruding upon Barbarian Ghost territory. I'll be taking my leave. The

next time we meet will be at the Immortals' Meeting." Ye Tian Mei said emotionlessly as she flared into a silver ball that flew away, disappearing into the edge of the sky in just a moment.

The grey-robed elder did not attempt to stop her and instead, furrowed his brows after the lady left.

At this time, another shockwave appeared in the mountain below and another person rode a black cloud as he also ascended into the air.

"Teacher! Was that the Elder Ye who is the only one that has mastered the art of Sword flight?" When the second person reached the grey-robed elder's front, he asked respectfully.

The second person had a chubby face and was the "Martial Uncle Ruan" that should have been guarding the Scriptures Pavilion.

"Yes, it's her. After a few years, she has walked farther along the path of Sword Cultivation. Maybe even her Senior, Fellow Leng Yue, can't defeat her." The grey-robed elder sighed lightly.

"However, teacher's Green Metal Zombie is about to advance into a Soaring Silver Zombie. At that point, no matter how strong her Sword Techniques are, we will not fear her." Martial Uncle Ruan said with a smile.

"Even though the metal zombie is one step away from advancing, it's like what I just said. It's not easy for the metal zombie to advance into the next level. Who knows how much effort it will take me." The grey-robed elder said.

"With teacher's strength, it should only be a matter of time before the metal zombie advances. There cannot possibly be any other problems." Martial Uncle Ruan said.

"Hopefully so. Oh right, I heard that another disciple practicing your Dark Bone Method had exploded when trying to become a Spirit Master. Have you still not given up on that Cultivation Method?" The grey-robed elder nodded before turning serious.

"It was my good senior, the Sect Leader, who told you, right?" Hearing



this, Martial Uncle Ruan's face changed.

“Hmph, why would I need for your senior to tell me? Every time a Three Spiritual Pulse disciple is a Late Spiritual Apostle and fails to become a Spirit Master, your Dark Bone Method is the cause. Haven't I already told you? Even though that Dark Bone Method is one of the few legacies of our Sect Founder, he only found the first half of that method. And only after a lot of research did he translate the first three levels of the Cultivation Method. So, one can only successfully become a Late Spirit Apostle. Even though you are an expert in the language of Green Death, how could you compare to the Sect Founder? It's definitely because of your incorrect translation of the fourth level of the Cultivation Method that no disciple that practices the Dark Bone Method are able to successfully enter the realm of Spirit Masters. If this news ever leaks out, do you know how much of an impact it would have to our sect?!” The grey-robed elder showed some fury on his face.

“Teacher! I really am not content with such a result! In order to translate the fourth level of the Dark Bone Method, I spent countless hours on it. I even went so far as to leave my own cultivation and stay in the Scriptures Pavilion in hopes of some disciple being able to achieve the fourth level of the Dark Bone Method and become a Spirit Master. If that happens, our sect's Three Spiritual Pulse disciples will be useful again, providing us with quite a few Spirit Masters. At that time, our sect's power will definitely skyrocket.” Martial Uncle Ruan's heart fell as he quickly explained his actions.

“I have heard those words countless time. If not for the potential when this truly succeeds, why would I have let you do as you please for so long? However, this is the seventh disciple that has exploded. Even though excuses are easy to find and the only people that know the real reason of the incident are me, you and the Sect Leader, someone has definitely noticed. Why else would your Sect Leader tell me about the latest death? Okay, say no more. The Dark Bone Method is done. I will not allow you to teach it to any other sect disciple, or I will not consider our bond as teacher and student.” The grey-robed elder was still furious.

“Yes. With teacher’s orders, I will not teach that method to any other sect disciple. However, there are still two disciples practicing that method. What should I do?” Martial Uncle Ruan’s heart trembled as he hurriedly said.

“As long as you know what is good and what is bad, this won’t be a huge problem. As for the two people that have already learned the Dark Bone Method, let them fend for themselves. Alright, you can return to the Scripture Pavilion while I will go back to the Forbidden Land. Do not tell anyone that I came out.” The elder relaxed as he said.

“Yes, teacher. Then I will take my leave.” Standing up, Martial Uncle Ran took a bow before flying towards the Barbarian Ghost Sect.

The grey-robed elder lingered for a while longer. Then, he smiled and transformed into a gust of grey-white smoke as he sped away.

.....

Liu Ming was currently staring intently at a black wood box in his hands.

The wood box was half-filled with indiscriminate chunks of meat. A majority of these meats were mixed with the dirt and the largest piece of meat was only the size of a thumb with about a dozen small threads of straight green furs.

Liu Ming had already spent the majority of two hours in the forest where the rat was first killed to find these fragments from the huge rat.

From how small these chunks were, it could be seen how strong the Imperial Dressed Lady’s silver sword was.

The cold and pretty face once again flashed in Liu Ming’s mind. However, he pushed it away with a shake of his head. Securing the wood box, Liu Ming was about to cast the Soaring Sky Technique to leave the place.

However, at this time, a small sound sounded in the ground below his feet. Immediately afterwards, Liu Ming’s foot felt a brief coldness, as if something had entered Liu Ming.

Shocked by this sudden development, Liu Ming quickly made signs and allowed his mind to sink into his body. Quickly, he started examining the interior of his body.

Legs, Dantain, Body, Arms, Head....

After Liu Ming's examination, nothing out of the ordinary jumped out for Liu Ming.

At this point, Liu Ming's forehead was full of sweat. Returning back to his senses, Liu Ming took off the shoe on his foot. However, the shoe was completely fine without any signs of wear or tear. In addition, the ground around his foot was completely normal.

This led to Liu Ming thinking that it really might have been his imagination.

With a stormy face, Liu Ming scanned his surroundings. Even though nothing was wrong, Liu Ming felt as if there was a strange sense around and felt his back grow cold.

After a heavy stomp, Liu Ming decided that he would no longer stay. After confirming the general direction he needed to go to, Liu Ming flew off into the sky.

This flight of Liu Ming's took an entire two hours before he was able to return to the Rock Tuo Mountain where he had started off.

When Liu Ming started to near the strange stones, four grey clouds suddenly ascended from the forests nearby. On these grey clouds were Mu Xian Yun, Senior Wu and the rest of Liu Ming's party.

"Junior Bai, you have finally returned."

"Are you alright? What happened? We saw you get taken away by that elder..."

.....

Seeing Liu Ming come back, the rest of party showed surprise as they asked.

# Chapter 39: Returning Spring Pavilion

“It was nothing. I just ran into an elder chasing after a monster to kill it. Unfortunately, I was caught up in the exchange and warped to a far away place. The elder ended up killing it and as soon as she left, I hurried back.” Liu Ming didn’t hide everything but gave a simple account of his experience.

“Chasing a monster! So that’s why I thought that I saw a green glob. However, for this elder to have made such a ruckus, she must not be any regular Spirit Master. Junior Bai, did she tell you her name?” Mu Yun Xian looked back at the collapsed Rock Tuo Mountain with fear in her eyes.

“Yes, the elder seemed to be called ‘Ye Tian Mei’. She also did not seem to be someone of our sect. Has Senior ever heard of that name?” Liu Ming asked hopefully.

“Ye Tian Mei... I really have not heard that name. Senior Wu, you have travelled outside of the sect, do you know any sect that has an elder by that name?” After shaking her head, Mu Xian Yun turned towards Senior Wu.

“I have never heard that name before either. However, that’s not strange. There are countless strong people in Da Xuan Country. However, for us to still be alive and not hurt despite the dangers, this turn of events has really been quite lucky for us.” Senior Wu was quiet for a while before she replied.

“That is true.” Mu Xian Yun sighed.

The other people did not grill Liu Ming anymore, probably thinking that a person of such power would not interact with Liu Ming who was a mere Spirit Apostle.

“Oh right, after I left, have Senior Du and Senior Mei found enough Blood Wire Fruits?” Liu Ming remembered the real reason why he was here and asked.

“After Rock Tuo Mountain collapsed, a lot of the Blood Wire Fruit in the

mountain was buried under a thick layer of rubble. All we could find were eighty Blood Wire Fruits. Junior Bai, before you left, you also picked some Blood Wire Fruits right?” Du Hai slowly said.

“I have a little over twenty fruits. That should be enough to complete the mission.” Liu Ming smiled as he replied.

“Great! If that’s the case then we really haven’t wasted time. Let’s go back to the sect to return our mission.” Mu Xian Yun smiled as she suggested it.

The other people heard this and agreed.

After exchanging a few more sentences, the entire group summoned grey clouds to help them fly towards the direction of the Barbarian Ghost sect.

.....

After a couple of hours, Liu Ming parted ways with the group, flush with five new Contribution points and twenty Spirit Stones.

These five Contribution Points were enough for Liu Ming to go the Heavenly Intelligence Pavilion to listen to a Spirit Master’s teaching or enter into the Soul Swamp for two whole hours.

However, Liu Ming was not in a rush to do these things. Instead, he hurried towards a particular location in the sect.

After the time it took to drink a cup of tea\*, Liu Ming landed within a forest of purple and red trees. Before him was a small and delicate white wood building. The entire building was built of wood and not a single stone could be seen.

\*TL: 5-10 minutes

At the top of the door to the building was a green plaque engraved with characters that read: “Returning Spring Pavilion”.

Although the door to the pavilion was shut tight, near the door was a wooden rack that was as tall as a person. Under the rack was a light silver bell with a similar colored hammer nearby.

Liu Ming walked towards the door and after a slight bit of hesitation, he picked up the hammer and lightly tapped it against the bell.

The bell made a clear “dang” sound.

The originally shut door suddenly opened without a sound.

After taking a deep breath, Liu Ming walked into the building. However, the moment he entered and looked around, he was taken aback.

In the spacious hall, there was only a light red wood table and behind the table was a girl dressed in green and sitting on a bamboo chair.

At this time, the girl was absorbed in her thin book and didn't even raise her head when Liu Ming entered.

“If you want to heal sickness or wounds, go to the second floor. If you want to cure poisons or curses, go to the third floor.”

“Thank you senior for your advice.” Liu Ming unconsciously nodded his head and walked towards the empty staircase. However, when he was halfway across the room, he suddenly remembered something. Turning he asked: “Could I ask if... you are Senior Jia Lan?”

Hearing this, the girl trembled and raised her head, revealing a delicate and simple face to Liu Ming.

The girl was Jia Lan who had the Aphrodite's Body.

For some reason, this girl was present here of all places.

“You are....” There was confusion on the face of the girl as she did not remember a junior that looked like Liu Ming.

“I am your junior, Bai Chong Tian and became a Spirit Apostle with senior. However, didn't Senior Jia Lan join the Baleful Yin faction? Why would you be here in the Returning Spring Pavilion?” Liu Min smiled and answered.

The Aphrodite's body of this girl in front of him had given him quite the scare before. Now that he had found her again, he naturally wanted to ask some questions.

“Oh so it’s Junior Bai. This Returning Spring Pavilion is managed by one of my Martial Uncles. Thus, it is not strange for me to be here. Alright, why don’t you go tend your own business. I still need to read.” The green-clothed girl finally remembered Liu Ming and after emotionlessly explaining her situation, she went back to reading her book.

Faced with the cold treatment, Liu Ming pulled at his mouth and after cuffing his fists, he went upstairs.

The second floor of the pavilion was composed of a single room that was emmating with pill fragrances. However, a white cloth was placed at the doorway of the room and made the contents of the room indiscernible.

After a slight pause, Liu Ming went towards the third floor.

The moment Liu Ming set foot on the third floor and before he could see anything, a cold feminine voice sounded by his ear: “What kind of strange poison did you get exposed to? Why did you not go to your faction’s elders and instead came here.”

The moment the woman’s voice fell, Liu Ming felt a white tornado fall towards him. Liu Ming made a spin uncontrollably and was pulled towards a spot with a great force.

When he came to his senses in shock, he suddenly realized that he was standing in front of a woman covered in a green cloak.

Even though there was a cloak between the two of them, Liu Ming could still feel her bright pair of eyes on him, as if interested by Liu Ming’s arrival.

The room in the third floor was extremely well decorated. Not only were there multiple chairs and a bed, there were even a couple mysterious flower trees in a corner.

“Martial Aunt, I don’t think that I have been poisoned. Instead I think that I have attracted some kind of evil spirit, which is why I am here.” Liu Ming said respectfully.

The Returning Spring Pavilion was something that Liu Ming had

learned about through a conversation. It was said that a Spirit Master that had great medical skills presided over the pavilion and was extremely effective in curing strange poisons and curses.

And Liu Ming had felt extremely shaken by the wisp of cold air that he felt enter his body. Fearing that it was the evil spirit of the dead Rat Demon, Liu Ming rushed to the Returning Spring Pavilion as soon as he parted ways with his group.

He really didn't want anything foreign in his body.

"Evil Spirit! That's quite interesting, I don't see that too often. Let me check." The cloaked woman paused before her eyes glittered with even more vigor.

Immediately, she made a hand sign in one hand while her other arm extended out a finger to point on Liu Ming's forehead.

Liu Ming was a little shocked with this treatment. However, when he wanted to struggle free, he realized that no matter what he did, he was couldn't avoid the simple poke.

"Relax your mind. Do not resist. Let me check if you truly have an evil spirit within you." The cloaked woman coldly ordered.

Liu Ming quickly obeyed her orders and relaxed his mind.

Instantly, he felt a foreign energy enter his body from his forehead. The foreign energy quickly started scanning through his body, not leaving behind a single inch of Liu Ming's body unsearched.

"Strange, there are no unusual places. Is it an evil spirit that has an extremely high concealment ability?" After muttering, the woman retrieved her finger and took out a delicate bronze mirror from her sleeve.

"This is a Warding Evil Magic Mirror. If you are hit with a curse or have attracted something undesirable, the mirror will reveal it. However, the process is a little painful. Just bear with it." The cloaked woman said offhandedly.

"What? Painful?" Liu Ming was expecting for the Spirit Master to



explain what kind of pain he would feel when suddenly she pointed the bronze mirror at him. Immediately, a cloudy white light bar shot from the mirror and into Liu Ming's body.

When the light entered Liu Ming's body, Liu Ming felt as if the blood within had started boiling. In addition, a wave of pain that felt like a million bugs biting surfaced on the spot where the white light fell.

Even though Liu Ming had a high pain tolerance, he painfully screamed in shock.

"Be quiet. I will be done soon." The cloaked woman ignored Liu Ming's scream and instead waved her hand to both bind and silence Liu Ming.

Then, the white started moving around over Liu Ming.

With the intense pain, Liu Ming had cold sweat over his head and felt as if he was being dissected with a thousand cuts. The pain was even more intense than the pain that he felt during the Opening Spirit Ceremony.

"How dare you lie to me. You have no evil spirit in your body." Suddenly, the woman returned the bronze mirror and yelled at Liu Ming with some anger.

"What? How did that not find it? Martial Aunt, could you try another method!" Even though Liu Ming gained control of his body and the searing pain had also left, his heart dropped when he heard the Martial Aunt's words.

"Hmph. I have never failed to detect anything with the Warding Evil Magic Mirror. Are you questioning my capabilities! Leave!" The cloaked woman flew into a rage at Liu Ming's words.

"I don't dare to think such a thing!" When the Martial Aunt started letting her aura seep out, Liu Ming quickly realized how foolish he was. He could only back away slowly while saying "sorry."

He was afraid that if he didn't leave soon enough, the Martial Aunt might really give him a thrashing.

“Wait. Leave twenty Spirit Stones. Do you think that my time can be wasted so easily?!” A glint flashed through the cloaked woman’s eyes.

Hearing this, Liu Ming quickly took out the twenty Spirit Stones that he had just earned and left the third floor.

# Chapter 40: Strange Changes

When Liu Ming returned to the big hall feeling gloomy, the lady dressed in green was still busy reading the manuscript in her hand. She did not even lift her head when Liu Ming returned.

Liu Ming looked at the lady deeply and left the pavilion.

This time, even though he gained nothing and even lost the spirit stones that he had, at least he felt a lot more relieved because the Spirit Master that was experienced in the art of curses said that there was nothing wrong with him.

Maybe the cold sensation he felt in the sole of his feet before was just a delusion.

Right now, he could only comfort himself with such thoughts.

Liu Ming once again used the Soaring Sky Technique to rise up and fly away. Flying directly to his courtyard and going back into his training room.

After Liu Ming had sat crossed-legged, he examined his internal body again. When nothing out of place was found, Liu Ming stopped worrying. He then took out the small half-full box of blood and flesh from the monster and scrutinized it.

To find out about the use of these fragments, Liu Ming planned to go to the Spirit Spell Pavilion on the Nine Infant Mountain to check some manuscripts. After doing so, he would decide on what to do with the remains.

Liu Ming had just finished a Contribution Points mission and was not planning to take another mission for a while. He planned to strengthen himself first before accepting some easy missions which he could complete by himself.

After all, even though Liu Ming's trip had awarded him with some Contribution Points, he had nearly lost his life between the jaws of the monster rat. This gave him the urge to raise his power first.

Moreover, on this trip he offended a Middle Spirit Apostle by the name of Ou Yang Xin. It would be better for him to avoid any exposure for a while.

The best way to strengthen himself in a short period of time would be by mastering the Three Star Shield that he had just gained. Afterwards, he had to get his other spells to the point of Initial Spell Mastering.

When Liu Ming made his decision, he put away the wooden box which housed the bone and flesh of the monster rat. He then placed the triangular steel plate in the palm of his hand and calmed his heart and mind. After that he slowly started cultivating.

.....

After two days, Liu Ming was returning after a trip to the Spirit Spell Pavilion with an thick and ancient manuscript. From time to time, great surprise lit up on his face as he was reading the it.

He completely lost track of time as he was reading. When he finally closed the ancient manuscript, his face showed intense excitement.

According to the ancient manuscript, even the body of low tier monsters were treasures.

By eating the meat of monsters, one's cultivation strength and Fa Li could increase. If someone ate pills that were made from the body of monsters, the effects would be even better. Eating pills would also prevent a person from some of the negative effects caused by the meat of monsters.

However, the negative effects would only manifest in people who consume the meat of monsters long-term. Eating the meat of monsters once in awhile would not bring any harm to the consumer.

The furs, skins, bones and internal organs of monsters were the best material for weapon crafting.

The lady named Ye Tian Mei was at least a Spirit Master. Therefore, a monster that was pursued by her could not have been a monster of a low level.

Liu Ming's face flashed with different emotions. Suddenly, he raised his hand and took out the wooden box that housed the Rat Monster's flesh and bones.

After Liu Ming opened the lid, he found himself a pair of bamboo chopsticks. He did not mind the smell of blood and started to fiddle with the meat of the huge rat bit by bit. He was carefully separating the bloody flesh from the furs and bones of the huge rat.

After a good deal of sweat and effort, Liu Ming had successfully separated the meat residue from a big piece of the huge rat's skin and three smaller pieces of rat skins. On the skins of the rat were twenty strain of silver-green fur. Besides the fur, there were also thirteen pieces of bone residue of various sizes.

Liu Ming then took out another small box and place the furs and the bones residues of the huge rat into the box. Looking at the bloody meat of the huge rat left in the first wooden box, he hesitated. Liu Ming gritted his teeth and picked up a small piece of rat meat using two of his fingers.

Using one handed signs, pure water poured down and washed away the dirt on the rat meat.

With a change of hand signs, fire came out from between his two fingers and burned the rat meat within seconds. Pleasant smells of meat started to diffuse out.

Liu Ming slightly moved his wrist, threw the half-cooked rat meat directly into his mouth and started chewing it.

The next moment, Liu Ming suddenly winced his eyes.

This rat meat was surprisingly good. There was an indescribable freshness and juicyness in every bite. When Liu Ming swallowed the meat, the meat changed into balls of heat and was stored in the Spirit Sea within Liu Ming's dantian.

Liu Ming only needed to slightly push his Spirit Sea in order to convert the pure Yuan Li energy into his own Fa Li.

Due to excitement, Liu Ming lost interests in enjoying the freshness of

the meat. He swallowed all the rat meat in his mouth with just a few bites. Then, he started concentrating on his cultivations.

The next time when he opened his eyes, the day had already mostly come and gone.

When Liu Ming checked the growth of his Fa Li, he was surprised to find that his Fa Li had increased at a rate that was comparable to the increase in Fa Li he would get with half a month of cultivation.

Liu Ming paused for a long time. Then, he turned his head to look at the large amount of huge rat meat still left beside him. He could not control himself anymore and burst into laughter.

The meat of the rat monster did not give Liu Ming the feeling of fullness and was also extremely helpful in enhancing one's Fa Li.

This meant with just two small pieces of meats every single day, he could achieve the second level of the Dark Bone Method and easily become a Middle Spirit Apostle.

As Liu Ming stopped laughing, he started to ponder and was swayed by considerations of gain and lost.

If just eating these few pieces of monsters' meats was all that was required to advance to the next level, there was no reason for the Spirit Apostle disciples to train so hard. There had to be more to it.

Liu Ming looked at the rat meat in the wooden block beside him and started to feel doubtful.

Liu Ming did not know that even though normal monsters also had to power to enhance Fa Li, their effects were not that superb.

Monsters which were at the peak of Liquid Level were hard for even Spirit Masters to encounter and kill, let alone Spirit Apostle disciples.

After all in all of Da Xuan Country, there were extremely few monsters in the Liquid Level and there probably was not another monster at the peak of Liquid Level.

Monsters at this level had already infused every part of its body with its

Fa Li. When its meat was consumed by a Beginning Spirit Apostle, the effects were definitely going to be unbelievable

If an Late Spirit Apostle consumed the meat, the effects would have much less of a surprise.

As for a Spirit Master, the effects of consuming of such a small piece of the rat's meat was equal to the effects of having a bowl of high quality Spirit Rice.

As for Ye Tian Mei and the grey robed elder of the Barbarian Ghost Sect, the effects of eating this meat did not bring much effects to them as their levels were already too high.

With just a little training a day, their Fa Li would increase much more than the Fa Li that would come from eating the meats of these monsters.

Liu Ming thought for quite a while in the same spot but he did not make any conclusion; however, he did make a guess that the effect was because of the level of the huge rat creature being much higher than much than his level.

By just consuming the meat of this rat, Liu Ming's Fa Li had increased by an incredible amount. If he handed the meat over to Alchemists and asked them to make it into pills, the effects should be even more tremendous.

Liu Ming could not refrain himself to think that way, because according to the ancient manuscript, eating the meats of monsters could bring harm. This gave Liu Ming a doubtful feeling.

But then, if the news of him getting the meat of monster was spread out, his Sect would not leave him, a Three Spiritual Pulse Disciple, any meat at all. In addition, if this news were to spread to people with bad intentions, something bad might even happen.

To stop the worst from happening, Liu Ming could only ignore the negative effects.

Although according to the manuscript, eating the meat of the monsters may bring side effects, the details of what those were was not in any way

clear enough. However, it was fine as there was only a half box's worth of rat meat. This amount of rat meat could be consumed in a short time and would not bring any harm to Liu Ming, who would not be consuming the meat for a long-term.

Liu Ming was a very resolute person, and he hesitated a few times before he finally made his choice.

Liu Ming did not waste anymore time and lifted up his hand to pick up another small piece of rat meat from the wooden box. Then, he started to wash and barbeque it....

Twenty days later. Liu Ming was doing cultivating and sat cross-legged on the floor.

As he was inhaling and exhaling, many foot-long strands of dark gas were writhing around Liu Ming like a living entity. This scene appeared to be supernatural.

Time passed unknowingly for Liu Ming. As he opened his eyes, the dark gas was quickly absorbed into him.

As Liu Ming once again calmed himself and examined his training progress, he grinned.

The training over the last twenty days was unexpectedly smooth. Liu Ming's Fa Li had grown a few times stronger than before and he was not far from mastering the second stage of Dark Bone Method. With just three or four more days, he could enter the Middle Spirit Apostle level.

This kind of insane training speed made him feel that the last twenty days were just a dream and everything was an illusion.

Thankfully, things were true and the daily increase of his Fa Li was still there. His Spirit Sea had grown a lot stronger, if not for this Liu Ming would be sure that he was dreaming.

Liu Ming shook his head and looked at the wooden box beside him. His face showed sorrow.

The box was half filled with bloody meat at first but now, only a little



was left. It seemed that in just a few days, Liu Ming would have finished eating the meat.

Liu Ming was still thinking as he lifted up his hand and stretched towards the wooden box to grab a piece of meat.

At this moment, Liu Ming's face suddenly changed. He stopped and his eyes showed a glint of fear.

"This is impossible, how could something like this happened!"

Liu Ming cried and immediately positioned himself by sitting cross-legged. Then, he started cultivating.

Strands of dark smoke re-appeared out of Liu Ming's body and withered crazily....

After the time it took to eat a meal, Liu Ming was still sitting cross-legged. However, his back was drenched in sweat. In addition, the black smoke surrounding him had visibly become much smaller.

Two hours had gone by and the dark gas revolving around Liu Ming's body became much thinner. His cultivation level had got back to what it was twenty days ago when he started to eat the rat's meat.

After a long exhalation, Liu Ming opened his eyes.

This time, he looked really unhappy.

The Spirit Sea in his body which had already grew bigger returned to its original size. The Fa Li which surged like the torrential tide in his body had now reduced to a level that was even lower than the Fa Li he had before eating any of the rat's meat.

# Chapter 41: The mysterious space

The culprit behind the changes was a round and translucent object, like a small bubble about the size of a pellet of rice, that appeared in the center of Liu Ming's Spirit Sea.

Liu Ming could swear that there was never such a thing in his Spirit Sea before.

But it was this thing that spun crazily and wolfed down all the Fa Li that Liu Ming trained out before finally calming down.

"Perhaps this thing was the cold air that drilled into my body before, or else there wouldn't be an explanation for this situation."

Liu Ming forced down the fear in his heart, his mind turning quickly before finally finding a reasonable explanation.

However, this thing did not look like any evil spirit or soul that was recorded in the ancient book. If so, Liu Ming would have been seriously worried.

Liu Ming did not even have time to wipe the sweat of his forehead, he hastily focused his mind and entered the Dantian of his body and carefully looked at the small bubble in his Spirit Sea.

This bubble looked full but it was strangely clear inside. But no matter how you looked at it, it did not look like it could have eaten so much Fa Li.

After a short while, Liu Ming still did not see anything useful with his mind.

And this object in his Spirit Sea was not moving at all, like it was dead.

Liu Ming became hesitant. However, after steeling himself and gritting his teeth, he controlled his mind and lightly touched the surface of the bubble, wondering if he could enter the bubble to examine it.

A 'peng' sound rang out.

The bubble broke like a mirror the moment Liu Ming's mind touched it.

Liu Ming was shocked and, before he could react, heard a 'weng' sound,

which was as loud as thunder, around his ear. His head sank and his eyes went dark before he entered a strange, unfamiliar, grayish place.

“This place is.....”

Liu Ming was scared when he saw this. He looked around and saw walls of grey fog surrounding him, leaving only a square space that was a hundred forty to a hundred fifty feet in both length and width.

Liu Ming then raised his head to look up before looking down; the sky and the ground were also made up of grey fog, but the space between the floor and the ceiling was only fifty to sixty feet tall.

Liu Ming could only feel his heart beating crazily. After a while, he finally calmed himself down and started to think about the whole process he went through to get here.

Without a question, the reason he came here was because he touched the bubble in his Spirit Sea.

But what was the bubble? And why did it send Liu Ming to this strange space without any signs after it broke? The correlation between the two events was indecipherable.

And looking at the dead atmosphere of this space, it did not look like there were other creatures living here, it rather looked like a prison cell to jail criminals in.

Standing in the same place with a worried expression, Liu Ming thought for a while, but still he could not come to a reliable conclusion. Even after he shouted a few times, nothing strange appeared.

Liu Ming steeled his heart and carefully bent down to use one of his hands to wipe at the fog he was stepping on.

His whole hand only went about an inch into the fog before it was blocked by a strong but invisible layer.

Liu Ming's eyes glittered as he stood up. He mumbled a few sentences, took a deep breath and opened his mouth towards what was below him.

“Hu!”

A strong gust of wind rushed out from his mouth and hit the wall underneath the fog.

An unbelievable scene appeared!

The moment the strong gust of wind touched the fog, the wind entered the fog without a sound and disappeared.

Liu Ming's expression changed slightly, and with one handed signs, the incantations from his mouth also changed.

With two 'pu pu' sounds, two sharp, green wind blades shot out from Liu Ming hands. However, when they sliced into the fog below, they strangely disappeared again with a flash and nothing else happened.

Liu Ming's complexion turned green but he did not give up and started trying the Fireball Spell and other spells that he had learned to attack the fog below.

But it was all a waste, nothing happened.

This thing that looked like normal grey fog could actually absorb and eat spells.

Finally, Liu Ming stopped attacking but stayed in the same place, quietly thinking. Then using one handed signs, he made grey clouds gather beneath him to lift him up. Then, once the cloud flew a few feet from the ground, it suddenly stopped.

Liu Ming stuck his two hands into the fog and started slowly checking through the fog wall.

After a long time, Liu Ming sighed and dropped out of the air, seeming as if he did not obtain anything.

However, afterwards, Liu Ming no longer hesitated and walked with big step in one direction. With a twist of his arm, the Tiger's Bite Bracelet started to glow. Then, Liu Ming pressed his hand on the fog wall with his five fingers spread apart.

"Tiger Roar! "

Black smoke started surfacing on Liu Ming's body as he suddenly yelled

out.

The bronze bracelet on Liu Ming's wrist became a ball of bright yellow light on the spot. Within the light, a blurred tiger head suddenly appeared and a white sound wave rushed towards the fog wall in front of Liu Ming.

“Pu”.

The white sound wave slightly rocked the surface of the fog a few times, before it too completely disappeared.

After seeing that his strongest attack skill had no effect, Liu Ming's complexion became ugly and unnatural,

With the current situation, Liu Ming was trapped here alive!

What made matters even worse was Liu Ming did not have many Pills of Fastening with him. After all, he was originally supposed to go retrieve his new portion in half a month's time.

As for the problem of drinking water, it was actually an easy problem to solve. He could conveniently use the Condensation Technique to collect a mass of water with it.

For the next three days, Liu Ming naturally would not be willing to wait helplessly for death. So, Liu Ming got to checking almost every inch of the whole area and used all of the different methods he knew, however, he could do nothing to the surrounding fog walls.

This time, he could only helplessly accept his own helplessness as he sat in the center of the space cross-legged with a gloomy complexion, waiting.

However, waiting in this narrow space by himself, even knowing that he was slowing awaiting death, was definitely something that would test Liu Ming's state of mind.

Liu Ming sat there like this for half a day before he smiled bitterly and start to make hand signs and cultivate.

But a scene that amazed him appeared.

No matter how Liu Ming pushed, gathering as much of the Natural

Yuan Li from the outside into his body as he could, the Fa Li that gathered in his Spirit Sea did not increase by even a sliver.

As for the bubble that originally appeared in the spirit sea, its trace was nowhere to be seen.

Under Liu Ming's surprise, he became ever more depressed.

Since it was impossible to increase Fa Li, continuing to cultivate the Dark Bone Method was naturally pointless.

Under this helpless situation, he could only slowly start practicing the Fireball Technique, Water Arrow Technique and his other techniques.

Time passed by bit by bit, in a flash, something like seven or eight days had already passed by.

There was nothing like sunset or sunrise in here and the reason why Liu Ming could still accurately predict time was all thanks to the roughly made, small and bronze hourglass that he carried with him.

The hourglass was specially made by him back in the days at Savage Island. The fine sand inside flowed especially slow, taking no less than a whole day for the hourglass to have the sand completely flow from one side to the other.

Because he has some affection for it, Liu Ming always carried it with him. He never thought that it would now be of great use now.

However after a few days, Liu Ming was again in exultation after discovering something.

After this long time period, he unexpectedly never felt any hunger or thirst.

Although this was slightly unimaginable, it was definitely something worth celebrating for him.

And thus, at long last, he did not need to worry about starving to death in a short amount of time in this place.

Since these worries about the future were temporarily eliminated and he was still unable to leave, Liu Ming simply started concentrating on

practicing the few Techniques and Spells he knew.

Everyday, during this period, Liu Ming would carve a line on the lid of the wooden box that he carried with him so that he could accurately remember the amount of time that had passed.

Since Liu Ming no longer needed to waste time doing other things and with his talent of doing two things at once, in the time of three-four months, Liu Ming evenly practiced all his techniques and spells all to the point of Initial Spell Mastering.

In the following time period, Liu Ming concentrated on practicing his Wind Blade Technique which was his fastest attacking technique of all the basic techniques.

If Liu Ming did not do this, perhaps he would really lose his mind staying in this boring environment by himself.

One month, two months, three months, half a year hurriedly passed by.

One day, Liu Ming woke up from meditation. After feeling that the energy he had consumed in previous few days had recovered anew, an incantation came out of his mouth as he made a hand sign with two hands. Then, Liu Ming raised both of his hands at the same time.

After a few “sou, sou” sounds, six slightly green wind blades were fired consecutively. Like always, they all completely disappeared into the fog ahead.

“In the time of ten breaths, I can send out six wind blades. This should be the Complete Spell Mastering of the Wind Blade Technique.” Seeing this scene, Liu Ming muttered to himself.

However afterwards, he brought his hands together in front of him and more incantations came out of his mouth.

Liu Ming’s two hands spread apart again, a bright wind blade, three to four times bigger the blades that were generated before, appeared before him. But when it just condensed to half the size, a “bang” sound suddenly could be heard and the giant wind blade again dissolved into points of light.

Liu Ming saw this phenomena and slightly knit his brows.

This method of combining the power of several wind blades at the same time was something he naturally thought of not too long ago when his speed of releasing the wind blades had reached a certain limit.

But to make this come true, one aspect was that there had to be enough Fa Li while another aspect was that one had to be more proficient with the Wind Blade Technique.

Liu Ming thought of this while habitually forming a hand sign with both hands to continue practice the Wind Blade Technique.

But at this moment, Liu Ming suddenly heard a “hum” in both ears. With the sound, his head sank while both of his eyes closed involuntarily. Then, after opening them again, his body impressively appeared in a sunlit room.

In fact, Liu Ming was sitting cross-legged on a futon while both of his hands were mid-hand signs. It was as if Liu Ming had just sat down.

“This is...”

This time, Liu Ming was really stupefied.

This room as well as the familiar surrounding environment was indeed the practicing room that Liu Ming had disappeared from half a year ago.

He just returned to this place like this?

Liu Ming just felt that his head was blank. He unconsciously and slowly looked around, unable to think about other things for a while.



# Chapter 42: A Dream

When Liu Ming's eyes fell upon a wooden chest by his side, he regained some consciousness.

Surprisingly, inside the wooden chest, there were still a dozen pieces of bright red rat meat. The color of the meat remained the same from when Liu Ming found them, there were no visible changes.

Liu Ming was amazed.

Since the meat of monsters had Fa Li infused into it, it kept fresh longer than normal meat. But naturally it would be a joke if someone claimed that it could still maintain its freshness after half a year.

Liu Ming's expression changed several times. He then shifted his glance to the nearby wooden barrel that was still filled with water. Afterwards, he touched his back; it was still wet, as if he had just been sweating.

Liu Ming's face became even uglier. But suddenly, he remembered something and quickly pulled out two items from his sleeves, a simple looking green wooden chest and a roughly made copper hourglass.

The green chest looked ordinary and the hourglass remained quietly in Liu Ming's hand. All of the sand was cornered up in one end.

"So that's how it is.", Liu Ming said while taking a deep breath. His face became flushed.

The chest and the hourglass are both tools that Liu Ming used for calculating time.

Liu Ming remembered clearly that when he left the area that he was stuck in, the surface of the wooden chest was already engraved with dense scratches.

The copper hourglass was made to conveniently track time and it was always left on the ground of that mysterious space. He never took it when he left.

The previous mysterious space Liu Ming had experienced seemed as if it

was all an illusion, and Liu Ming thought that he had never been in any kind of space.

The half year that Liu Ming been trapped seemed all but a simple dream.

But the past six months, in which he was trapped in the foggy, room seemed too real. Liu Ming could even clearly remember how he practiced his techniques everyday.

After Liu Ming had calmed down, he clenched his teeth and sank his consciousness into his body to take another check at the situation in his Spirit Sea.

He ended up feeling relieved.

Liu Ming's Spirit Sea was empty and the broken little air bubbles had disappeared.

It was lucky that Liu Ming had gotten rid of this evil thing through just a heavy dream.

As Liu Ming thought about how lucky he was, he still started practicing the Dark Bone method to give the Spirit Sea a slight push.

Liu Ming's expression changed instantly and he yelled out by instinct:

"Impossible, how could the disappeared Fa Li be regained?"

After pushing the Spirit Sea, Liu Ming found that he had regained a lot of his Fa Li from before. More than half of the Fa Li that was swallowed by that air bubble had returned.

What surprised him even more was that, even though he had less Fa Li than before, it was now much more pure.

Still amazed, Liu Ming quickly observed his Spirit Sea again.

Liu Ming's Spirit Sea was still the same size as it was before but the silver glow it gave off was much softer and it seemed as if it was slightly more solid.

According to the records, this was indeed an after effect of Fa Li being

purified.

But purifying Fa Li was not only extremely dangerous, but also a very time consuming task!

Generally when a Spirit Apostle or Spirit Master has been stuck at a bottleneck for several years and there has been no improvements in cultivation, they take the risk and give refining their Fa Li a try.

A cultivator that had quite pure Fa Li would be able to store more Fa Li in his body than other cultivators of the same level. In addition, his spells and totem activations would be more powerful.

To Liu Ming, this was a very good thing!

Needless to say, this purified Fa Li was caused by the absent air bubble.

As Liu Ming's happiness slowly faded away, he couldn't help but wonder.

To figure all this out with the limited knowledge, Liu Ming meditated for an entire hour before coming back to his senses.

Where did that air bubble come from? Why did it swallow Fa Li? And after going through a dream, half of the purified Fa Li was returned. This is too complicated!

Liu Ming's head swelled up but still couldn't figure out the relations between the events.

"Whatever. That thing has already disappeared. And losing half of the consumed Fa Li to gain back a purified half of it isn't too much of a loss either." Liu Ming thought, shaking his head.

At the same time, Liu Ming turned and looked at the only opened window of the house.

The sun was high up in the sky, scorching brightly.

Liu Ming squinted his eyes.

If he remembered correctly, before he was pulled into that weird space, the sun was also in that very same position.

Thus, all that he had gone through happened in a short moment's time.

Thinking of that, Liu Ming stood up, opened the wooden door and walked out of the house.

Liu Ming stood in the little garden and threw his arms wide open, embracing the warm sunshine. After that, he felt much better.

Having to live in that mysterious space for half a year was definitely a test of the will.

Even thinking about it now made Liu Ming afraid.

Thankfully, he came out of that space after six months. If he were to stay there any longer, even if it was a dream, he could become mentally damaged.

Thinking of his mental strength, Liu Ming opened his eyes.

He realized that his mental energy was slightly stronger now than before. It wasn't obvious, but it did indeed increase in strength.

Liu Ming smiled bitterly.

So in the end, he had received a blessing in disguise.

Still musing, he turned his glance to a big tree outside his courtyard.

Beside the tree there used to be a smaller tree. But now all that was left was a bare trunk.

TL: He cut the small tree with wind blades a few chapters earlier

Seeing it, Liu Ming laughed inside. He lifted his arms and casually murmured a spell.

"Tut Tut," two fireballs appeared on Liu Ming's palm. And in a flash, they became two glowing light balls racing towards the big tree.

"Boom! Boom!"

The big tree was eaten up by flames and instantly burnt into ashes.

Liu Ming's smile disappeared from his face. He froze.

This was the "Fireball Technique" that he had practiced to Initial Spell

Mastery in the mysterious space. Wasn't it all a dream? How could he so skillfully display this technique here?

Liu Ming's mouth twitched. Suddenly, he changed the incantation, flung his arm, and shot out a white streak of light.

A flash soared!

Two little holes the size of thumbs appeared on a big rock beneath the burnt tree.

This was the "Water Arrow Technique" that Liu Ming had practiced to Initial Spell Mastering.

Liu Ming licked his chapped lips. His eyes were filled with a fiery expression. Without pausing, he chanted another incantation and lifted his arms.

"Pu, pu, pu!" Six green wind blades were shot out in a blink of an eye and instantaneously sliced the big rock into a dozen slices.

This was the "Wind Blade Technique" that Liu Ming had practiced the most.

"So it is true, the training on the techniques in the mysterious space was effective." Liu Ming murmured. His face was filled with excitement.

Liu Ming continued to cast out different techniques in the courtyard until he had exhausted all of his Fa Li. He then stopped with exhaustion, laid down on the grass and closed his eyes.

"What a pity. If only I knew that the mysterious space had this effect, I would have stayed longer." Liu Ming sighed, slowly opening his eyes.

Liu Ming clearly knew that what happened in the mysterious space was much more complicated than just a mere dream.

However, the little bubble did not exist anymore, which was a pity.

Liu Ming could probably never repeat this experience again. He could only pretend that what happened at the mysterious space was a destined chance.

Finally, Liu Ming recovered a normal state of mind and returned to the training room.

A few days later, when Liu Ming finally ate and refined the last of the rat meat, he stayed in his accommodation and continued to train for a majority of a month.

After a few months, Liu Ming felt that he had made all his preparations and finally, he left his dwelling and went to the Duty Hall.

Four months later...

A few hundred miles outside of the Barbarian Ghost Sect's gate, at the side of a pool which emitted a strange coldness was a bamboo pole. One of its end was thrust a few inches deep into the mud and on the other end hung a white rope.

At the bottom of the rope hung a fat grey rabbit!

This rabbit only kicked lifelessly once in awhile. How long the rabbit had hung was unknown.

With a 'huala' sound, a strange fish, which had an eagle's mouth and a snake's body, emerged from the pool and bit at the fat rabbit.

With a 'pu' sound, a black rope shot out from the bush near the pole and wrapped around the strange white fish in the blink of an eye. Afterwards, it pulled the fish until it was in front of the bush.

Under a feeling of fear, the strange fish let out a weird "gugu" cry and opened its mouth to shoot out a spout of white water, which made the surrounding ground into a hideous mess.

After a some hard struggles, the weird fish became dispirited and stopped moving. In the end, the spout of water coming from its mouth stopped and it could only lie on the ground, unmoving.

"This Eagle Beak Fish is actually really crafty but after waiting two days and two night, it still obediently took the bait."

The sound of light laughter spread from the surrounding bush; an average looking teenager in green robes stepped out with a smile on his

face.

It was Liu Ming.

He walked in front of the weird fish and only after kicking it with his feet did he take out a fish basket from his back in no hurry and put the weird fish into it.

Just when Liu Ming wanted to turn around and leave, he suddenly noticed the grey rabbit on the bamboo pole and couldn't help saying to himself:

“This time, it can said that you helped me big time, I'll let you live.”

Just when Liu Ming finished speaking, he raised his arm and a slightly green wind blade suddenly shot out, cutting the rope into two.

Once the fat grey rabbit in the air was free, it immediately splashed down and swam to the shore, before leaping into the nearby underbrush with surprising speed.

Seeing this, Liu Ming smiled a little, immediately formed a hand sign, and was about to start flying while carrying the fish basket.

# Chapter 43: A Small Fight

But at this moment, footsteps were heard coming from the forest not far away. Suddenly, three young male disciples wearing Barbarian Ghost Sect clothes came out. They all looked like they were in their twenties, when they saw Liu Ming with his fish basket besides the swamp they paused for a second.

When Liu Ming saw this, he slightly knit his brows. He then nodded his head to show respect and continued to use his Soaring Sky Technique. Grey clouds started to condense beneath his feet.

At this moment, the disciple standing in the middle of the three disciples looked at the slanted bamboo pole stuck into the mud and some fish scales from the strange fish that were scattered beside the swamp. Immediately, his eyes shined and he moved his arms. One of his hands, with a golden fighting glove on, hit towards where Liu Ming was standing.

“Peng!”

A misty ball of golden light shot towards Liu Ming.

Liu Ming was startled. Without hesitation he moved his legs and jumped off the grey cloud, successfully landing at a spot just a few feet away from his previous position.

The grey clouds produced by the Soaring Sky Technique vanished after a loud explosion, caused by coming into contact with the golden gas ball.

“You three seniors, what do you mean by this?” Liu Ming stared at three seniors. His face showing unhappiness.

“Ha Ha, Don’t be angry junior, I’m just here to ask whether you had already caught the Eagle Beak Fish.” The disciple in the middle, who looked pale and was in his twenties, said jokingly.

The two disciples beside him, who looked about the same age, turned their eyes towards the bamboo fish basket behind Liu Ming. Their eyes showing unrestrained greed.

“What if I say yes? What if I say no?” Liu Ming appraised the three as



he said this using a faint voice.

“If you say ‘yes’, then everything will be easy. What a coincidence, the three of us were given the task to catch the Eagle Beak Fish alive. Now that we have arrived, are you going to let us go home empty-handed?” The disciple with fair skin said as he yawned.

“ Oh, then what will the three of you do?” Liu Ming replied after he sighed in his heart.

This was his third time facing this kind of situation after he started accepting Contribution Point Missions alone.

However, Liu Ming had met a lone Barbarian Ghost Sect Disciple both previous times and was able to beat them up. This time though, things were not going to be so easy with three disciples.

It was no wonder that many of the sect disciples worked in groups when they carried out these Contribution Point Missions.

Liu Ming used his mental strength to look at his surrounding. He could approximately guess that the two disciples standing at the right and left of the middle disciple had Fa Li more or less at the same level as himself. However, for the one with fair skin standing in the middle, his Fa Li was a level above Liu Ming’s.

Through the four months of intensive training, Liu Ming was about to master the second stage of the Dark Bone Method. This meant that the disciple with the fair skin was at the Middle Spirit Apostle level.

While Liu Ming was still analyzing the power of his opponents, the disciple with fair skin spoke with a grin:

“Very easy, this Sect Mission will gives a total of ten Contribution Points with thirty Spirit Stones. You just need pay each of us twenty Spirit Stones, or just give us the Eagle Beak Fish and I will give you twenty Spirit Stones. How about it?”

“Twenty spirit stones? Clearly the three of you are here to rob. Don’t you guys feel scared of the consequences of breaking the rules?” Liu Ming spoke with a face without expression.

“If junior feels that we are here to rob, then just accept it. However, about the rules, you don’t have to worry about it so much. Although the rule itself says, disciples within the sect were not allowed to fight against each other, in reality, every Faction’s disciples are encouraged to follow the law of strong. The strong are allowed to bully the weak and as long as we do not fight in front of the Martial Uncles or Enforcer Disciples, we will be fine. Ha ha, it seems like junior’s time in this sect hasn’t been that long. There are still plenty of things you don’t know. However, after today, you will learn a new lesson.” One of the disciples who had a big head said with a tone of sarcasm.

“Enough nonsense, if junior doesn’t want to hand over the Eagle Beak Fish, then let’s fight. I’m scared that if we waste anymore time, someone is going to come interrupt.” The disciple with fair skin said.

When he finished his sentence, he punched out twice, causing two “hu” “hu” sounds. Immediately, two gold gas balls dashed towards Liu Ming.

The other two disciples started to mumble simultaneously. With a lift of their hands, a white threadlike-thing shot out from each of their hands.

“Spider Silk Technique!”

Liu Ming winced his eyes and instantly understood the background of the white thread.

This kind of technique, which can be used to capture an enemy alive, was most commonly used technique among the disciples when they fought against each other.

Liu Ming deeply inhaled and on his wrist, the Tiger Bite Bracelet flashed. Following that, Liu Ming’s legs grew a wider and the green veins on his skin started bulging. He then changed into a green shadow and dashed out.

“Pa” “Pa”, the two white threads changed into long webs that were a few feet long and fell on the spot where Liu Ming used to be. Two golden gas balls also roared through, but all the attacks caught nothing.

On the opposite side, the disciple with the fair skin showed some seriousness on his face.

In that instant, a great “peng” sound was heard.

One of the disciple who had just used his Spider Silk Technique, knelt down on the floor with his face flushed red.

Liu Ming pulled out his hand, which was surrounded by dark wisps of gas, from the caved in stomach of the disciple and used a hand sword to knock on the neck of the disciple. Immediately, the disciple fainted on the ground.

Liu Ming had used the Lighten Technique and another mortal secret technique to increase his speed. Within seconds, he had reached the disciple and gave him two deadly blows to incapacitate him.

“ Lu junior..... you brat, I will kill you!”

The disciple standing at the opposite side, who had a big head, shouted angrily when he saw his partner being beaten up by Liu Ming. He pulled out a black steel ruler and threw it towards Liu Ming with all his power.

The yellow light on the steel ruler blinked as an strong invisible power dashed towards Liu Ming.

But with a twist of the body, Liu Ming successfully evaded from the strike of the strong invisible power.

Seeing this, the disciple was also startled. Right when he thought about calling his Practitioner’s Weapon back, it was already too late.

A fist with strands of dark gas gave a strike on the disciple’s stomach. Within seconds, the disciple kneeled to the ground and was unable to move.

Both of these Barbarian Ghost Sect’s disciples were about twenty years old but they were still Middle Spirit Apostles. It was clear that their training talent wasn’t the highest.

When both of the disciples saw that Liu Ming was still young, and knew that Liu Ming had just entered the sect, they looked down on him. This

caused them to fall to the lightning quick strikes of Liu Ming when he used both Lighten Technique and a mortal secret technique to increase his speed.

“You..... you are a Body Cultivator?” When the fair skin disciple at the opposite side saw his companions getting beat up by Liu Ming within seconds, his face clearly showed that he was terrified and he lost his voice when he spoke.

“Body Cultivator, perhaps.” When Liu Ming heard this, his heart moved. However, he slowly walked towards his opponent, without showing any expression on his face.

“Hmph, it doesn’t matter even if you are a Body Cultivator, how strong can you be at your age?” The disciple with fair skin rolled his dark eyes and calmed himself. A golden ring on his hand suddenly turned blurred and transformed into a golden light shield in front of him. At the same time, the disciple used a one handed sign and started to chant.

In an instant, a strand of blue light shot out and a half feet long crystal icicle formed. After forming, it started rapidly spinning on the disciple’s hand.

Seeing this, Liu Ming’s pupils slightly shrank. With some energy, he stomped down and changed into a green shadow, shooting up.

When the disciple with fair skin saw Liu Ming’s movement, his face showed ruthlessness. With a flick of his wrist, the icicles shot out with a frozen light.

With the strength of the Icicle Technique and the unique freeze that accompanied it, if Liu Ming was hit by it, he would definitely get severely wounded, he might even dying.

But Liu Ming, who was rushing forward with high speed, ignored the projectile and instead twisted his waist. Instantly, his body became like a snake, without bones and swaying vigorously.

The Icicle brushed past Liu Ming’s shoulder.

At this moment, the face of the fair skinned disciple turned crafty and

he changed his hand sign immediately and spit out the word “explode” from his mouth.

“Peng”, the icicle blinked and scattered into many pieces of blue ice. An freeze started to diffuse in the air.

Liu Ming became startled and, without thinking too much, he vigorously flicked his wrist. A round light shield appeared and went to protect his shoulder.

Still, Liu Ming’s action was too late.

Liu Ming felt his shoulder freeze and become numb. His shoulder was now covered by a thin layer of icy frost which slowed his pouncing body.

The fair skinned disciple sneered. Next, he changed his incantation and spit out a thick white thread which turned into a dozen feet long web from his head. The web came rushing towards Liu Ming’s head.

Even though it was the same “Spider Silk Technique”, in the hands of the fair skinned disciple, the power difference was huge compared to when it was used by the other two disciples.

Liu Ming suddenly stopped and stood on the spot. He stared at the web as it was dropping down at him. He gave a fast mumble and swung both of his hands. Two fireballs, the size of a fist, instantly shot out.

One of the fireballs dashed at the web while the other flew towards the fair skinned disciple who was standing just a few feet away.

“Peng”, before the web fell, it had been burnt to ashes.

The disciple was terrified and immediately charged his Practitioner Weapon, which was in the form of a light shield with Fa Li.

Even though it was just a normal fireball, with such a short distant, the disciple could not completely ensure that his Practitioner Weapon could block the fireball.

With a “Hong”, sparks flew in front of the fair skinned disciple.

As for the light shield, after some vigorous shaking and some rattling noise, a couple of fine cracks appeared.

When the disciple saw this, his heart felt a bit relieved. As he was about to attack Liu Ming once again, he felt a tightening on his waist. A black rope was twinned around him without him knowing.

“Soul Shackling Chains.”

When the disciple with fair skin saw this, the color drained from his face. He shook the golden fighting gloves practitioner weapon on his hand wanting to do something but it was already too late.

The black rope was like a venomous snake that twined speedily around the disciple's waist for a few times and tightened up. Dark gas started to seep out from the rope and after a huge pain in his waist, the disciple was unable to move.

Liu Ming then walked towards the disciple arrogantly. Without saying anything, he aimed the neck of the disciple and gave a knock to make the disciples faint instantly.

Liu Ming let out a breath and used the Dark Bone Method to accumulate his Fa Li to his shoulder.

As a result, dark smoke appeared and under it, the thin layer of frost on Liu Ming shoulder melted. In an instant, there was nothing left.

# Chapter 44: The Fight for the Spirit Fruits

Liu Ming looked at the unconscious disciple with fair skin lying down beside his feet and let out a sigh.

There was a great difference between the fight with these cultivators and the previous fights that he had experienced. A simple Icicle Technique transformed into something out of his expectations.

What was even more alarming was that his opponent was just a Middle Spirit Apostle who probably did not practice many Secret Techniques.

If Liu Ming had faced someone who had cultivated longer, or a Spirit Apostle who had a strong Spell or Secret Technique, it would be even more tough for Liu Ming to win.

After reminiscing about how dangerous it was to win fights between cultivators, Liu Ming exercised his shoulder slightly. Ensuring that everything was alright, he started to search the three disciples for their valuables.

After a careful search, Liu Ming found three Practitioner Weapons, more than thirty Spirit Stones, half a bottle of Pills of Fastening and some odd materials. Some of the materials looked like medical herbs, while others were some unknown bones.

Liu Ming packed all these things together and carried them on his shoulder. He then rose up and flew back to the Barbarian Ghost Sect.

Half a day later, when Liu Ming once again entered the second floor of the Sect's duty hall, the hall was filled with people. However, half of the people were squeezed in front of the crystal task monument and were talking about something on the monument.

When Liu Ming saw this, he felt curious. However, he was not hasty to walk over and instead walked towards a stone table on the other side.

He then placed his fish basket on the stone table.

A middle-age Enforcer gave a quick look into the fish basket. He then nodded his head and praised:

“Not bad, this is the real Eagle Beak Fish. Although Junior Bai is still young, recently you have completed quite a number of missions. I have good expectations for you junior. Keep working hard.”

At the same time, the Enforcer took the nameplate of Liu Ming easily. He then touched the nameplate with a golden stick and threw out a bag filled with Spirit Stones.

“Thanks for your praise, senior. What is the new mission? Why were there so many seniors gathered around?” Liu Ming asked with a smile as he took back his nameplate and the bag.

“He he. the task is from Martial Uncle Bai from Poisonous Spirit Faction who needs a few number of disciple to look after his forge. The Contribution Point reward is almost negligible when compared to the other reward of having a chance to learn the art of alchemy. That is why so many people are interested in it. In addition, Martial Uncle Bai is also the best alchemist in our Barbarian Ghost Sect.” The middle-aged Enforcer said while sarcasm was dripping off his face.

“Senior, is there some trickery?” Liu Ming asked when he saw the Enforcer’s face.

“Hehe, junior can look back and see what kind of people are lining up to take the chore?” The middle-aged Enforcer said while slightly laughing.

Liu Ming heard these words and was a bit surprised. Turning his head, Liu Ming looked back.

After a while, Liu Ming could not help but show surprise on his face as the middle-aged Enforcer started speaking again:

“Martial Uncle Zhang gave out several chores like this before and there were... who knows how many disciples who went to take it, but there was not a single person who actually completed it. The disciples who went to take the chore, besides being scolded fiercely by Martial Uncle Zhang and wasting several months, they did not even receive anything on the art of Alchemy. Therefore, when this mission gets posted again, it gets ignored by older disciples. Only those young juniors think that they have a chance at becoming an alchemist and attempt it.”



“So that is how it is, thank you senior for your advice,” Liu Ming realized the truth behind the mission.

Although the Enforcer did not say much, Liu Ming clearly realized that this ‘Martial Uncle Zhang’ from the Poisonous Spirit faction was not someone who could be served easily; so he gave up on the thought of taking this mission.

Failure of the mission could be acceptable, but wasting several months was definitely not worth it.

From before, Liu Ming had realized that Alchemists, Spirit Formation Masters, Spirit Plant Masters and Spirit Beast Masters were people who had special abilities and were greatly popular in the cultivation world. The Alchemists were the rarest of all these groups and were absolutely essential to a sect.

Deep in Liu Ming heart, he was definitely interested in becoming an Alchemist.

Afterall, if Liu Ming was an Alchemist then he could have refined the Huge green rat’s meat into pills and consumed them for the greatest effect.

As Liu Ming thought of the potential benefits for an Alchemist, he left the stone table. When he passed by the crystal monument, he glanced upwards and quickly found the mission posted by the Martial Uncle Zhang.

Like the words of the middle aged Enforcer, tending the forge for three months would result in a hundred Contribution Points and knowledge of Alchemy. However, there was an extra condition of having to meet the standards of Martial Uncle Zhang or else none of the rewards would be given.

Liu Ming grinned at the new disciples who all looked excited and left the Duty Hall without hesitation and started flying far away.

....

In the next two months, Liu Ming did not leave the Nine Infant

Mountain and instead focused on cultivating the Dark Bone Method.

One day, Liu Ming who was cultivating in his room suddenly felt his body lighten. In addition, a feeling that made his soul tremble was emitted from his Dantian. Instinctively, Liu Ming opened his mouth and started roaring.

Liu Ming's roar was like the waves of an ocean, unceasing and overlapping. After half the time it took to drink a cup of tea, Liu Ming finally stopped.

With anticipation, Liu Ming started to examine himself and feel the abundant Fa Li in his body.

He had finished the second level of the Dark Bone Method and was finally a Middle Spirit Apostle!

At the same time, in a hall at the peak of the Nine Infant Mountain, the Scholar Spirit Master listened attentively to the roar and after hearing it stop, he smiled to the shaggy haired Spirit Master to the opposite of him.

"From the intensity of this roar, it seems as if a disciple of our sect has successfully become an Middle Spirit Apostle. Quite good luck for our faction. This might even be a foreshadowing of the success of what will happen."

"I hope so to. I never knew that something I did so carelessly would bring our faction such an opportunity. However, because of my lack of enthusiasm and effort back then, those two geezers will definitely not be content in following our agreement." Hearing this, Zhu Chi bitterly smiled.

"Hmph. Unless they don't want to keep the face of the Nine Enlightenment Mountain, I want to see how they will open their mouths to break our agreement. After all, they proposed this in the first place." Martial Aunt Zhong who was also sitting at the side rose her eyebrows as she said.

"Break our agreement? Those two are Spirit Masters with a reputation to keep, so they wouldn't do such a low thing. However, if they proposed

some other requirement, it's hard for us to reject it." Zhu Chi said slowly.

"What? Junior Zhu, did you receive any message?" Hearing this, Gu Ru Quan looked towards Zhu Chi.

"Yes, right before I came, I received a letter from a disciple of the Nine Enlightenment Mountain. Senior Gu and Junior Zhong might as well look at it." Zhu Chi sighed as he flicked his wrist and took out a faint yellow scroll. Afterwards, he threw it at the scholar.

After catching it, Gu Ru Quan immediately started looking through it.

However, after a couple of seconds, Gu Ru Quan's face darkened.

Seeing this, Zhong Spirit Master also showed curiosity.

"Junior, come look at it." The scholar finally gave the scroll to his junior and closed his eyes to meditate.

"What? They actually requested to have a competition for those Spirit Fruits? And the participants can only be new disciples that have not been in the sect for three years yet? Aren't they taking advantage of how our disciples haven't been training for very long? The Nine Enlightenment Mountain is known for their Puppet techniques and as long as their disciples have one or two powerful Puppets, their strength will immediately increase. How can our faction's disciples fight with them!" After reading the letter, Zhong Spirit Master immediately flew into a rage.

"The Spirit Fruit Trees are under their control. In addition, according to my understanding, the new disciples in the Nine Enlightenment Mountain are only one year older than our disciple. Finally, they even agreed that their disciples would not use any puppets above the third tier." Zhu Chi said.

"However, we only have five new disciples. In addition, only Xiao Feng has advanced to become a Middle Spirit Apostle. How can the other disciples even contend against them?" Spirit Master Zhong quickly said.

Hearing this, Zhu Chi's brows furrowed.

"Hmph, since they are providing the details, we definitely have room to

argue. We definitely can't have 5 fights with them. So respond by telling them that we will have 3 fights. This way, no matter how bad we are, we will have the chance of getting one third of the Spirit Fruits." Gu Ru Quan opened his eyes and said forcefully.

"Three fights? That's a good idea! With Feng Er's strength, there is quite a high chance of winning one match." Hearing this, a smile surfaced on Zhu Chi's face.

"What about the other two matches? Who do send? Do we just forfeit them?" The Zhong Spirit Master cried out.

"For the other two people. Yu Cheng has been training quite hard recently. Why don't we count him. As for the other person, the disciple called Bai Chong Tian who has been at the Beginning Spirit Apostle level since half a year ago. At the least, he should have a bit more Fa Li and he does have some experience in fighting. Even if both of them lose, it's fine. As long as one person wins, we will have earned a lot." Gu Ru Quan said after a slight thought.

Both Spirit Master agreed after hearing Gu Spirit Master's words.

After discussing finer details for a while, Gu Ru Quan took out a blank scroll and quickly wrote a reply. Then, he beckoned for a disciple and gave the return letter to him.

A while later, a grey cloud rose up from the Nine Infant Mountain and left the Barbarian Ghost Sect. The direction it was flying towards was the Nine Enlightenment Mountain.

....

Half a month later, Liu Ming, who was still trying to comprehend the third level of the Dark Bone Method, suddenly heard a clear male voice from outside his room:

"Junior Bai, are you there? I'm here to call you up the mountain per request of teacher."

The voice's owner was Shi Chuan.

# Chapter 45: Competition and Spirit Elixir

Once Liu Ming heard this, he became stunned for a second. He then answered as he left the room, entering the small courtyard.

With a glance, Liu Ming saw Shi Chuan and the red haired youth beside him, Yu Cheng, standing outside the courtyard.

When Yu Cheng saw Liu Ming come out, he had a complicated expression on his face.

“Senior Shi, is Teacher Gui looking for me?” Liu Ming asked as he walked across.

“Not only is it Teacher Gui, but Martial Uncle Zhi and Martial Aunt Zhong are also waiting for you and Junior Yu at the hall on the mountain peak.” Shi Chuan spoke with a smile, but his complexion changed after sharply looking at Liu Ming and he exclaimed “Hm... Junior Bai, you advanced to a Middle Spirit Apostle!”

Since Liu Ming had just become a Middle Spirit Apostle, he was unable to freely control his Fa Li. Thus, by his Fa Li fluctuations, his actual level was seen through immediately by Senior Shi.

“Senior’s perception really is sharp, I have indeed just recently reached Middle Spirit Apostle, just a few days ago.” Liu Ming didn’t intend to hide anything, so he calmly confirmed it.

As soon as Shi Chuan heard this, although he was usually unflustered, he still couldn’t refrain from revealing an expression of surprise.

As for Yu Cheng, who was beside Shi Chuan, he was dumbstruck after hearing Liu Ming’s response.

“So Junior is actually a genius at training, reaching the Middle Spirit Apostle in the short time period of a year, this training speed is perhaps on par with Xiao Feng’s training speed.” It took a while before the shocked expression of Shi Chuan disappeared from his face.

With a forced smile Liu Ming calmly replied, “How can I be regarded as a genius at training, I only borrowed and utilized external powers and was

lucky enough to improve so quickly and reach the Middle Spirit Apostle level.”

“Junior Bai is too modest, even if junior really did consume some type of Fa Li increasing pills, a Middle Spirit Apostle and a Beginning Spirit Apostle are vastly different. Beginning Spirit Apostle only requires you to have enough Fa Li, which anyone can easily have, but there is a bottleneck to becoming a Middle Spirit Apostle. According to what I know, many Three Spiritual Pulse Disciples are caught in the Beginning Spirit Apostle stage for many years without improvement. At the same time, Junior Bai’s reliance on the power of pills to improve Fa Li isn’t a smart idea. Fa Li still requires one to slowly train in order to have good purity, and if you ever reach a bottleneck in the future, the pure Fa Li will make the resistance of the bottleneck be much lower.” After listening to what Liu Ming said, Shi Chuan showed an expression of understanding. Afterwards, he shook his head and spoke seriously.

Once Yu Cheng heard what Shi Chuan said, he also revealed an expression of understanding.

Shi Chuan obviously attributed Liu Ming’s training speed to pills that could increase one’s Fa Li.

In the Barbarian Ghost Sect, there were indeed several types of pills that could increase one’s Fa Li, but they only had an effect on Spirit Apostle disciples, and the amount of Contribution Points needed to exchange for them was frightening. There were few disciples that were willing to exchange for them.

Afterall, to the majority of disciples, if there wasn’t a bottleneck during their Spirit Apostle stage, as long as they spent a certain amount of time training and cultivating, their Fa Li would slowly increase without fail. However, when they did reach the bottlenecks, consuming Fa Li increasing pills would be completely useless. Therefore, with the importance of Sect Contribution Points, their points were naturally saved up for other things.

Of course, relying on pills to increase Fa Li, is indeed like what Shi

Chuan said; incomparable to the purity of self-cultivated Fa Li.

But when Liu Ming ate the remains of the giant rat and converted the remaining energy in the meat into his own Fa Li, he did not suffer from these consequences.

Afterall, the Fa Li in the flesh was cultivated by the monster itself, and for it to remain in the body without scattering after the monster had died, the purity of the Fa Li was definitely extremely high.

But to simply rely on monster remains to increase Fa Li was much more unreliable compared to the method of relying on pills.

Afterall, only consuming the remains of a monster with a higher level than oneself would have an effect on increasing Fa Li but when actually fighting a monster this strong, the matter of who's eating who was not something so easily determined. Also, if one ate a lot of monster remains, there would also be other after effects and consequences.

Even if there someone that was willing to try cultivating by consumption, monsters in the kingdom of Da Xuan were just simply too rare, and High Spirit Master level monsters were extremely rare and few in numbers.

After looking through several books, Liu Ming naturally knew about this, but after seeing the two misunderstand him he just smiled and didn't bother to further explain.

Since all the remains of the Green-haired Giant Rat had already been consumed, there was nothing other sect members could do, even if they found out. However, not having them find out was naturally better.

"Many thanks for the advice Senior, I will definitely engrave it in my memory. Anyways, I wonder why Teacher Gua is looking for Junior Yu and me, could senior spare me a bit of detail?" Liu Ming replied vaguely and curiously asked.

"I am actually quite unsure, I just know that it has something to do with Nine Enlightenment Mountain. Other than you two, Junior Xiao Feng was also called to go." Shi Chuan replied slightly hesitantly.

“Nine Enlightenment Mountain?” Liu Ming heard what was said and felt surprised.

The Nine Enlightenment Mountain was one of the five great sects of Da Xuan Kingdom, with its strength ranked above the Barbarian Ghost Sect. Other than knowing that they seemed to be extremely proficient at Puppet Techniques, Liu Ming did not know anything else about that sect.

Still feeling a little surprised, the three of them flew into the sky on clouds and went straight for the mountain peak.

.....

After a short while, Liu Ming, Yu Cheng and Xiao Feng all arrived arrived in the hall.

Not too far in front of them, the three Spirit Masters separately sat on chairs.

However, the Gui Scholar unhappily stared at Liu Ming, who exceeded his expectations and had become a Middle Spirit Apostle. His brows were tightly knit and only after a long time did he shake his head and say:

“You actually utilized pills to reduce your training time, this has made me slightly disappointed. However, for what I am about to tell you, this is actually an unexpected, pleasant surprise. So I will not say any more. Junior Zhu, tell the three about this matter.”

At this time, Martial Aunt Zhong also looked at Liu Ming with disappointment in her gaze.

Within the three Spirit Masters of Nine Infant Mountain, only Martial Aunt Zhong regarded Liu Ming with slight importance. In the misunderstanding that Liu Ming had consumed pills to improve quickly to become a Middle Spirit Apostle, she naturally felt disappointed.

“The reason for calling you three over is because of an agreement between Da Shang and Da Zhi of the Nine Enlightenment Mountain and us back in the day...” After hearing what his senior had said, Zhu Chi slowly started to explain.



Originally, seven or eight years ago, Zhu Chi and the Martial Aunt Zhong were invited by two Spirit Masters of the Nine Enlightenment Mountain to go together to some place of danger to explore the unknown. In the end, they found a fruit tree covered with unknown Spirit Fruits. However, these Spirit Fruits had just formed not long ago and were far from being ripe. Thus, they made an agreement with each other; once the fruits had become ripe, they would split the Spirit Fruits evenly. However, a few days ago, the two of them had received a letter from a Nine Enlightenment Mountain Sect disciple stating that these soon-to-be ripe fruits would be split based on battles between the newly accepted disciples.

And after a haggling between Nine Infant and Nine Enlightenment Mountain Spirit Masters, they finally decided to hold three competitions.

The three of them, Liu Ming, Yu Cheng and Xiao Feng were the disciples that the Nine Infant Spirit Masters had chosen to participate in these competitions.

“Although these competitions are not battles of life or death but since these competitions are connected to the Spirit Fruits, no one will want to easily give up. Thus, it is life-threatening to a certain degree. If any of you do not want to participate, you can say so now and us three will not force you to participant. Also, since we are having you fight, you will naturally receive benefits too. After carefully investigation through manuscripts, we have discovered that the fruits on the tree are the legendary Sky Jade fruit. The main use for this fruit is to create a type of Spirit Elixir, which is extremely helpful to low level cultivators; spreading this Spirit Elixir on the body has an astonishing effect of remoulding one’s body. If you do compete, as long as we win, you will receive this Spirit Elixir as a reward. Of course, for the disciples that win, your share will be much greater.” Zhu Zhi finally said.

“I am willing to compete in this battle” As soon as Zhu Chi finished talking, Xiao Feng yelled out without the slightest hesitation.

He, who just became a Middle Spirit Apostle, was already extremely confident about his abilities. His confidence definitely was not inferior to

any other Spirit Apostles of the same level.

“I am also willing to fight for our faction!” Yu Cheng also seemed eager.

Liu Ming was not going to give up such a great chance for his cultivation path either. After a slight pause after Yu Cheng, he too expressed his willingness to compete.

“Very well, you three are the most outstanding disciples out of our new disciples. However, the disciples from the Nine Enlightenment Mountain will not be easy to defeat. So for the next month, you three are to temporarily stay at the mountain peak and familiarize yourselves with battle methods effective against people who specialize in Puppet Techniques. We three will personally teach you; this way, your chances of winning will be able to increase by a bit.” After seeing this, Gui Ru Quan spoke with satisfaction.

After Liu Ming and the two others heard this, they naturally all nodded continuously in agreement.

As a result, for the following month, Liu Ming and the two other stayed at the mountain peak in some training ground. Each day, they would battle against some low level puppets.

Although Gui Ru Quan and the other two did not have in-depth knowledge about the Puppet Technique, controlling a few low level puppets and replicating some of the more common attacks used in the Puppet Technique was not a big hassle for them as they were Spirit Masters.

The different types of attacks from different types of low level puppets, as well as the myriad ways of attacking Puppet Technique practitioners had, all caused Liu Ming and the other two to broaden their scope of possibilities of cultivation attacks.

Of course, in these types of practices, Liu Ming did not use all of his different attacks and tricks. Instead, he performed averagely within the three, not making Gui Ru Quan pay extra attention nor make them feel disappointed.

A month passed in a blink of an eye.

Today, Liu Ming and the other two, as well as Spirit Master scholar and the Spirit Masters all arrived at the square.

Only after Zhu Chi said a few words of farewell to the Spirit Master scholar did he take out a faint yellow glyph while forming a hand sign with one hand. He then threw the glyph in front of himself.

After a puff of white smoke, a seventy to eighty feet long green, wooden boat appeared in front of everyone.

The boat was long and narrow and dark green in color, with a weird, light silvered colour pattern all over the green paint, giving people a mysterious feeling.

“Haha, with Junior Zhu’s Flying Jade Spirit Boat, traveling won’t take up too much time.” Once Gui Ru Quan saw the green coloured, wooden boat, he immediately said while playing with his beard.

“Yes, if it wasn’t for Senior Zhu to accidentally discover a Thousand Year Jade Spirit Wood, as well as spending such huge costs to invite Master Yu to spend three years of his time, how could it be possible for us to obtain a Flying Totem. With this Totem, as long as one doesn’t fight anyone proficient in Escape Techniques, then one will be more than able to escape.” The Martial Aunt Zhong said while smiling sweetly.

# Chapter 46: Suppressing Serpent Dragon Island

Upon hearing this, Liu Ming and the other two couldn't help but stare at the wooden boat in front of them.

This was their first time seeing a Totem, and an extremely rare Flying Totem at that!

Zhao Chi called out to them as he boarded the wooden boat with Martial Aunt Zhong.

This time, Gui Ru Quan was not coming with them, as he had to watch over Nine Infants Mountain.

Zhu Chi waited until Liu Ming and the other two disciples carefully boarded the wooden boat before forming an one handed sign. Immediately, a single layer of an aqua colored light screen appeared, enveloping the entire boat.

Zhu Chi immediately continued shooting several different types of hand signs onto the boat's exterior, making it slowly rise up in the air.

After Zhu Chi said "Go," the wooden boat immediately shot forward, making the three Spirit Apostles seated inside sway as they almost fell over.

Only when Liu Ming lowered his center of gravity did his body stand up straight again, quickly thereafter he looked out at the aqua colored light screen.

The white clouds outside the boat quickly passed by at a speed observable with the naked eye. At the same time, the tall mountains beneath them became nothing more than small, black and green dots. It was simply impossible to see anything clearly at the speed which they were traveling.

This Flying Jade Spirit Boat was actually several tens of thousand feet high up in the sky while traveling at an astonishing speed, as if it were

shooting through the sky.

“Even with the Jade Spirit Boat, it will take a dozen or more days to get to our destination. In this time period, other than when we temporarily land in a few places, you all should properly rest in the boat.” After saying this, Zhu Chi walked to the front deck of the boat and stood there without moving, wholeheartedly controlling the boat as it advanced.

After hearing that, Liu Ming and the two others sat down and crossed their legs in succession.

As for Martial Aunt Zhong, ever since she entered the wooden boat, she sat with her legs crossed in a corner at the back of the boat. Her eyes were slightly closed as she completely ignored the outside world.

Liu Ming wasn't actually cultivating with the time. Instead he placed his hand on his knees, with lines of words and chants floating through his head. These words were the explanations on how to practice the Spirit Communication Technique.

Although Liu Ming did not have the Spirit Incense with him, a few days ago, he had already understood a large portion of the technique. All he needed now was to completely understand it, and then he could go find a suitable ghost and use the Spirit Communicate Technique to tame it.

This technique was the main combat technique used by Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples.

To his side, Yu Cheng had slightly closed eyes. His red hair slightly breezed about while at the same time there was a bit of a heat wave spreading outwards.

This odd heat wave was likely not the result of entrance Cultivation Method and instead seemed more like Yu Cheng was training at some type of secret technique.

As for Xiao Feng, his body was enveloped by a layer of faint green light, obviously cultivating his “Withering Wood Method” that was passed down to him by Spirit Master Gui.

Since Xiao Feng, like Liu Ming, had just become a Middle Spirit Apostle,

he needed to do extra strengthening on his new level.

Time passed by bit by bit as the Flying Jade Spirit Boat carrying the five of them became a ball of green light, shooting through the sky and flying towards the west.

During the journey, at nighttime, they would find an area of clear wilderness where they could stop and rest for a few hours. The rest of the time was spent aboard the Spirit Boat.

There were no problems during the trip and after a period of ten days, the flying boat finally arrived at a lake that stretched as far as the eye could see. Without hesitation, the boat flew towards the center of the lake.

At this time, the flying boat already descended to an altitude of less than a thousand feet high. The water ripples caused by the soft wind blowing on the lake could now clearly be seen by the people on the boat.

After the time it takes to drink a cup of tea (5-10 minutes), a green and black island could be faintly seen up ahead.

Ed Note: Is it just me or does the author really not want people who don't drink tea know how long it takes for him to reach an area?

“Ok, we have finally arrived at Slaying Dragon Island. You all should prepare for landing.” Zhu Chi said as he stood up and looked at the island ahead.

After Liu Ming and the others gave an affirmation that they heard him, they stopped their training and stood up as well.

The Flying Jade Spirit Boat soon arrived above the skies of the island and stopped at the center of the island.

Liu Ming's looked down and saw a pile of greyish-white rocks. The area directly under them also seemed to have about a dozen shadows.

The Flying Jade Spirit Boat quivered a bit and the light screen on the surface suddenly disappeared as it slowly started descending downwards.

“Haha, Fellow Zhu, Fellow Zhong, you have finally arrived. We haven't

seen each other for such a long time, but after seeing you two today I see that the elegance and grace in the two of you is still the same as before”. The Flying Boat landed on the ground and from nearby, a white haired elder immediately walked out amongst the dozen people waiting. He was amiable in appearance and greeted Zhu Chi and the Zhong Spirit Master with a smile.

Zhi Chi first walked out of the wooden boat first and looking ahead, plainly said “Fellow Da Zhi also looks just as young as before, with no decrease in vigor. However, you brought quite a lot of disciples with you this time, is it possible that they all want to compete?”

“How is that possible? Since we have already decided that the competition will have three rounds, we will naturally only send three disciples to compete. The other disciples are just those who were originally left here, responsible for looking after the tree. They have stayed here for seven or eight years, even if they aren’t rewarded, they should still be recognized for their efforts.” A grey haired elder wearing a wooden crown, not standing with the Nine Enlightenment Mountain group, spoke without expression.

After Martial Aunt Zhong heard what was said, she instead snorted and said “Hmph, why do I remember that originally, Senior Gui also wanted to leave a few disciples to guard this place as well. However, the two of you brought out plenty of excuses to make sure that your disciples would be the ones to train near the Spirit Tree. Training close to the Spirit Tree helps increase one’s training speed, even more so than consuming common Spirit Rice. One’s Fa Li would also get somewhat naturally purified. Seeing how energetic all your disciples look, they must all have greatly increased their Fa Li.”

She was currently leading Liu Ming and the other two as they flew off the flying boat.

“What Fellow Zhong said is incorrect. If it was like what you said, why would we split the Spirit Fruit with you two? Back in the days, the cave where the Suppressing Serpent Dragon Master once lived was discovered by the two of us, and we also helped, in a large part, with breaking the

seal afterwards. Oh well, why are we even mentioning the past? It can be said that we have been friends for many years, so we cannot get mad over some Spirit Fruit. Also, Fellow Zhu has already accepted that the Spirit Fruit shall be split through battle, which shows that he should have some confidence. I also heard that brother Gui has accepted a new Nine Spirit Pulse disciple, I do wonder who it is.” The white haired elder did not seem aggravated at all and instead casually explained. His gaze then swept over the three disciples.

TL: Serpent Dragon will be Dragon from now on. Note that it isn't an actual dragon but a lesser serpent dragon

“What Fellow Da Zhi said is correct, there is no benefit to mentioning the past. Xiao Feng, come and greet the two elders, Da Shang and Da Zhi.” After thinking for a short while, Zhu Chi did not bother to say any more and waved behind him.

“I greet the two elders!” Xiao Feng did not dare to neglect, he hurriedly walked forward and bowed.

“Eh, already a Middle Spirit Apostle, he really is a genius.” The Da Shang and Da Zhi looked and analyzed Xiao Feng, they could not help but to say a few words of praise.

Zhu Chi waved his hand, allowing Xiao Feng to return and became more serious as he asked:

“I have also heard that the two of you have also acquired an very talented disciple after the last Spirit Awakening Ceremonies. I heard that this new disciple has the talent of being able to do multiple things at the same time. I wonder if you will allow me to see him.”

“Doing multiple things at the same time?” After hearing this, Liu Ming's heart suddenly quivered.

“Oh, Fellow Zhu must be talking about Yu Er. Yu Er, come meet your two elders of Nine Infants Mountain.” After hearing what Zhu Chi said, the White-haired elder Da Zhi laughed a bit, and also waved behind him at the group of disciples in the same manner.



A youth wearing a blue robe, who also looked slightly gloomy, walked forward a few steps. Without showing any expression he greeted in the direction of the two Spirit Masters of Nine Infant Mountain from quite far away. Then, without saying anything, he returned to the group of disciples.

This all made Zhu Chi and the other people slightly startled.

“Fellow Zhu, Fellow Zhong, please do not be offended. Jin Yu, this child, grew up by himself in the mountains, after that he has devoted all of his energy to training, so he doesn’t really understand matters about human interaction. He definitely did not mean any disrespect to the two of you.” The White-haired elder hurriedly explained but the manner in which he spoiled Jin Yu was obvious to everyone.

After hearing this, Zhu Chi knit his brows. After a long while did he finally force a smile and said:

“It seems like the child’s talent of doing multiple things at once really is important to the two of you, otherwise you two would not say words like these. Whatever, Junior and I became Spirit Masters long time ago, we will not lower ourselves to argue with a new disciple. How about we first go have a look at the Spirit Tree, then decide the specific matters regarding the competition?”

“If you want to see the Spirit Tree, that is naturally not a problem. Ye Feng, you will be leading the way.” Da Zhi replied without the slightest hesitation and immediately gave out orders.

A youth around the age of twenty immediately stood out and replied, turned around and walked towards a tall and large pile of rocks.

Seeing this, Zhu Chi took out a faint yellow glyph and after waving it towards the Flying Jade Spirit Boat, a white light shone out of the glyph.

The Flying Jade Spirit Boat started to blur and then disappeared under the white light.

Only after this did Zhu Chi collect and store the glyph and bring Liu Ming and the others to follow behind the Nine Enchantment Mountain

disciple in no hurry.

When the group of people approached the giant rock pile that was seemed at least a hundred feet high, the youth leading the way raised a hand, formed a hand sign and hit it onto the rock pile.

After a series of peculiar tremors, the rock pile in front of them disappeared without a trace. Replacing it was a huge stone house that seemed extremely old and weathered.

To the side of the stone house, there were a few tall, big, old and badly damaged stone pillars. These pillars were slightly yellow in color, with a few blurred, unclear patterns, seeming to have been in existence for a long time.

“Who would have thought, that after a few years of not visiting, this place would still be the same as when we first broke the seal.” When Zhu Chi saw the wooden house, he softly coughed before speaking.

“That is natural, after all, it was the two of us who especially ordered the disciples guarding this place to not destroy anything here.” Da Zhi replied with a beaming smile.

“Hmph, it seems that you still haven’t given up on that thing.” Martial Aunt Zhong coldly replied after she heard what was said.

“According to the investigation results from before, this place should be the last secret dwelling of the Suppressing Dragon Master. It is reasonable to say that ‘that’ thing should be hidden here.” This time, the white haired elder hesitated a bit, before speaking with some regret.

“Hehe, this can not be so easily said. Although the last time we came here, the gains were not small, the remains of the Suppressing Dragon Master have never been found. Perhaps this place is only a slightly more important dwelling of his. Also, after this many years, it is unknown how many times the two of you have searched this place, if it really still had any treasures, how can you two have not found it.” Zhu Chi said coldly.

# Chapter 47: Fighting With Spells (Part One)

“Maybe it’s so,” The old, white-haired man sighed, obviously not willing to talk about this topic.

By this time, the group had already entered the stone house. Walking to a stone staircase leading downwards, they descended downwards.

Liu Ming was following Zhu Chi closely, examining everything around him.

The entire stone staircase was made of green rocks, and every few meters there was a stone sconce on the wall that lit up the area around it.

After descending three hundred feet down, the road in front of them opened up as they walked into a hall with pathways leading in all directions.

All around this hall were several stone doors that had been broken open. However, the areas behind these doors were unknown.

The youth leading the way turned left without hesitation and went into a tunnel.

However, it was only a short time after that another hall appeared in front of them. This hall also had several tunnels connected to it.

This place was a mini man-made underground maze.

However the disciples of the Nine Enlightenment Mountain had clearly explored this place before, and after bringing Liu Ming and the others left and right as they went on, they finally arrived at a red-violet bronze door.

When Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong saw this bronze door, their composure slightly changed.

“Ka cha!”

The bronze door was slowly opened by two Nine Enchantment Mountain disciples.

Looking at how they were straining themselves, it seemed as if the door weighed tens of thousands of pounds.

The moment the bronze door opened, a burning hot gust came rushing out. This made Liu Ming and the other Barbarian Ghost disciples flinch.

When Zhu Chi felt the heat wave, he knit his eyebrows together. However, he walked in with Martial Aunt Zhong without hesitation.

Liu Ming quickly followed behind Zhu Chi and entered through the bronze door. After looking at the surroundings, an expression of surprise showed on his face.

The cavern behind the door was at least a few acres large. The ground was laid in solid green rock slabs. At the edges of these slabs were small, faintly red gems. In the middle of the cave was a decently tall, bright red tree. On it were thirty or so emerald green fruits, the size of one's fist.

The entire tree was shrouded in a faint blue light, while the ground at the roots of it were dark red in color. Heat waves were continually emitted from this patch of ground and made everyone in the cave feel as if they were in a hot oven.

However, both Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong did not seem surprised by this.

Zhu Chi stared at the Spirit Tree for a few seconds before saying:

“Looks like our prediction was correct. Soon after the Spirit Fruits mature, the volcano will erupt. It really is a pity about this Spirit Tree, since we would be able to get some Sky Jasper Fruit after a few more years.”

“If we didn't see notice such a thing would happen, neither you nor I would have let this Spirit Tree go so easily. Needless to say, we also wouldn't be standing here and splitting the Spirit Fruits so amicably.” Da Zhi said with a smile.

“When the volcano erupts, the entire Suppressing Dragon Island will be gone. In addition, this Spirit Tree was planted here a long time ago. Once its Spirit Roots aren't nourished by the volcanic magma, the tree will

with. Alright, I've already counted, there are thirty three Spirit Fruits on the tree like before. No fruit has been lost. We should start talking about the competition." Zhong Spirit Master said.

"Since it's our disciples fighting, it doesn't need to be too complex. How about this, since there are thirty three Spirit Fruits, we can split them into three groups. Each group will have eleven Spirit Fruits and will be picked by the winner. Of course, since this is only a competition, either you or me can intervene in order to save a disciple from harm. However, intervening would basically mean that you have forfeited the round." Da Shang, who had not talked much since the group arrived, spoke up.

"Looks like Fellow Da Shang has already thought this through. I do not have any objections. However, the two of you have already promised that no disciple of yours will be using a high tiered puppet. If someone uses a puppet of Third Tier or above, it also counts as a loss." Zhu Chi's eyes flashed as he said.

"Of course." Da Zhi also agreed.

After working out a few more details about the competition, Da Shang sharply stepped down. His foot was at least a few inches within the ground. Then, his body blurred and when he appeared again, an acre wide circle had been drawn into the hard rock ground.

Through this feat, Da Shang, who looked old and senile, seemed to have not been made of blood and flesh.

"Alright, leaving the circle and losing the capability to move are both counted as a loss! Now, each sect can send out their first disciple." Da Shang slowly drifted back as he said without emotion.

Just as his voice fell, a girl around fifteen or sixteen years old walked out from among the Nine Enchantment Mountain disciples. Her sleeves were rolled up while she had a yellow animal skin bag at her waist. Her hair was tied into seven or eight braids while her eyes were extremely bright and she seemed quite mischievous.

"Yu Cheng, she is also a Beginning Spirit Apostle. Why don't you go?" Seeing the girl's strength, Zhu Chi called upon Yu Cheng.

This was not the time to use tactics. If they dared to send in a Middle Spirit Apostle like Xiao Feng or Liu Ming, they would most likely be able to take this first round but at the same time, forfeit the other two rounds. This kind of action that would ruin their reputation and forfeit their chances of getting more than one third of the Spirit Fruits was definitely something that the two Nine Infant Mountain Spirit Masters did not want.

After answering, Yu Cheng walked into the circle with excitement. The moment he stepped foot within the circle, his aura grew while a layer of yellow light appeared around him.

When the girl saw this, she smiled and dug around in the bag at her waist. Moments later, she threw out a round yellow ball made of dirt.

TL: Think small, like golf ball size

After some creaking, the yellow ball expanded into a six feet long black serpent the moment it hit the ground. From its segmented body and the reflective scales, it was apparent this serpent was a puppet beast.

“Go!”

The girl made a hand sign with one hand and poked her head with the other. Then, she started controlling the puppet.

“Pu!”

The puppet swung its tail and slammed the ground before shooting like an arrow towards Yu Cheng.

“Good!”

Under the instructions of the Spirit Master, Yu Cheng was much more familiar with puppet beasts and was not afraid when this serpent came lunging at him. He calmly crouched down and pushed at the ground. On his arm, a couple of yellow Spirit Tattoos flashed into appearance.

With a muffled sound, a large green stone slab rose up from the ground and acted as a stone wall in front of Yu Cheng.

Seeing this, the girl's expression changed slightly, but the black puppet

serpent kept going straight and rammed into the stone slab.

With a “hong” sound, the stone slab was completely shattered and became dust that scattered in the air. The black serpent was also pushed back and fell to the ground.

However, once the puppet beast touched the ground, it suddenly opened its mouth and started glinting.

The glints were actually needles the size of a cow’s hair, they shot through the dust. With “peng, peng” sounds, they stabbed onto something.

Hearing this, the girl’s face showed excitement. Her hand sign changed and was about to drive the puppet beast forward again when a yellow flash appeared above her head. A yellow stone that was at least the size of a person’s head appeared after the flash ended and smashed down heavily.

Surprised, the girl twisted her waist and narrowly dodged the falling rock that went by her shoulder.

However, at this time, a sound of “hu” appeared.

A crimson fireball shot out without warning from the dust, and in an instant, it was near the face of the girl.

With panic, the girl only had time to put one of her arms before her to block the attack.

“Hong!” The fireball exploded and engulfed the girl within it.

“Haha!”

Yu Cheng laughed widely as he walked out from the dust. At the moment, his entire body was covered in a layer of thick dirt. The dirt layer acted like a dirt armor.

The needles that the puppet beast had shot out were all stuck on the dirt armor, leaving Yu Cheng unscathed.

Seeing this, Liu Ming’s brows raised up slightly while he was somewhat regretful that he couldn’t learn such a technique.

This technique was called “Earth Armor Technique” and was exclusive to the Earth Spirit Method. Cultivators of other cultivation methods that wanted to learn it would not find much success and would instead be wasting their time.

“Senior, I think you’re laughing much too early.”

A thread of anger came from within the fire. With a “sou”, the fire was swept away by a violent gust of wind and the girl once again came into vision of everyone.

However, at this time, there was a red-yellow shield before her arm that was held defensively in front of her and in her other hand was a crimson glyph. The glyph was sprouting a red light that covered the girl within it. In addition, the girl showed no signs of being burned or even hurt.

When Liu Ming saw the glyph in the girl’s hand, he showed an expression of surprise.

Even though Liu Ming only joined the cultivation world not too long ago, he knew the rarity of Glyphs like the one in the girl’s hand, which contained special techniques and spells.

Other than a couple of Glyphs that could be used over and over again, Glyphs that only had a one-time use were rare, even for Spirit Masters.

“Avoiding Fire Glyph! The two of you have really spent a grand sum for this competition! Not only is the material for making this glyph extremely hard to find, a normal Glyph Maker has a success rate of less than one percent! How could your disciple obtain such a rare Glyph?” Seeing the Glyph in the Nine Enchantment Mountain girl’s hand, Zhu Chi’s face became ugly.

“Haha, you two Fellows have wronged us. This Glyph was not from us. Do you know what the surname of this girl is?” Da Zhi wasn’t surprised at this situation and asked with a laugh.

“What is it?” Zhu Chi felt odd at the nonchalance Da Zhi was showing.

“Her surname is Nan!” Da Zhi said proudly.



“Nan? Does this girl have some relation with Master Nan?” Zhu Chi paused for a second before suddenly remembering something.

“Haha, Fellow Zhu has finally understood. This girl is one of the more loved granddaughters of Master Nan. However, ever since she was young, she has loved Puppet Techniques, which is why she is under the two of us. Thus, having Glyphs on her is extremely common.” Da Zhi slowly said.

# Chapter 48: Fighting With Spells (Part Two)

“Master Nan’s favorite granddaughter?”

Hearing Da Zhi’s words, Zhu Chi and martial aunt Zhong showed a bitter smile on their faces.

Liu Ming, who was at the side, was extremely curious as to who this “Master Nan” was, as well as what kind of person he was.

When Yu Cheng saw that the girl was unscathed, he didn’t feel down. Instead, he started quickly chanting while raising both of his hands. A light green Wind Blade flew from each of his hand. Afterwards, he clenched his fists and pounced towards the girl.

The girl on the opposite side saw this and decided not to use her puppet snake. Instead, she “hmp”ed, the round, yellow bamboo shield and the blood red glyph in her hand disappeared in seconds. Replacing them were a couple of yellow glyphs. Casting them, six fireballs appeared in a line and shot out.

Seeing this, Yu Cheng became extremely surprised, it was too late for him to dodge.

The thick yellow dirt on him had made him much slower than before. The first two fireballs collided and dissipated with the two Wind Blades, while the third and fourth fireballs landed on him directly. Within the two blasts, Yu Cheng was forced backwards against his will.

However, when the fifth and sixth fireball arrived, at almost the same time, Yu Cheng barely took out a short blade from his sleeve in time and split open one of the fireballs. However, the other fireball landed harshly on him.

This time, Yu Cheng let out a blood curling scream as the thick dirt layer on him shattered into pieces under the blazing fire. Immediately, the fire enwrapped Yu Cheng within it.

“Ahem, this round, we have lost!”

A long sigh!

Zhu Chi who was outside the circle flashed and appeared by the side of the red-haired youth. Immediately, he waved his sleeve to generate some large winds, blowing out the fire.

Zhu Chi then looked deeply at the girl before turning around and leaving.

As for Yu Cheng, because of how timely Zhu Chi's intervention was, he had not suffered any major damages. Only his hair was really burned and his skin was only covered in a layer of ash. He was actually only slightly red, with a couple of burn blisters, nothing serious.

However, instead of showing pain, Yu Cheng hung his head low when he followed Zhu Chi out of the circle.

His defeat this time had been caused by the number of glyphs the Nan girl could take out and his own mistakes. He could have timely canceled the Ground Armor Technique, which made him extremely slow, and dodged many of the attacks. At the very least, he would have lost much slower.

It must be known that when Yu Cheng was practicing on the Nine Infant Mountain, he never used the Ground Armor Technique. He had originally wanted to use the technique as an ace up his sleeve but it actually became the reason for his defeat for his defeat.

This made Zhu Chi a little annoyed at the red haired youth.

For the second round of the competition, the Nine Enlightenment Mountain did not send a disciple up immediately. Obviously, they were waiting for the Nine Infant Mountain to send a disciple first before deciding who would go up.

ED: Nine Infact Mountain confirmed

“Chong Tian, you....”

“Wait, Junior! For this round, let Feng Er go up.”

Martial Aunt Zhong originally wanted to send Liu Ming up, but Zhu Chi suddenly interrupted.

“Senior’s meaning behind this is...?” Martial Aunt Zhong was slightly surprised by this decision.

“If we lose two in a row, the pressure on Feng Er might be too high. It seems that the other side wants to take all three rounds. Thus, if we send up Feng Er, they will send out the Jin Yu kid. Why don’t we go for it right now?” Zhu Chi said.

“What senior said does make sense. Feng Er, what do you think...?” Martial Aunt Zhong pondered for a moment before she nodded and turned around to as Xiao Feng.

“Martial Uncle, Martial Aunt, please be at ease. No matter what kind of puppet this Jin Yu person brings out, I won’t lose.” Xiao Feng said confidently.

“Yes, you have mastered that technique. You should have quite a good chance at winning. Why don’t you go up first.” The Martial Aunt Zhong finally agreed.

Securing approval, Xiao Feng smiled and walked up confidently.

Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong quickly shot their gazes to the Nine Enchantment Mountain group.

The disciples of Nine Enchantment Mountain parted and the youth called Jin Yu walked out.

Seeing this, the hearts of the two were raised involuntarily.

According to the reports, in the Opening Spirit Ceremony of the Nine Enchantment Mountain, this youth named Jin Yu only had the talent of a Six Spiritual Pulse. However, his innate talent of doing multiple things at once made him more sought after than many Nine Spiritual Pulse disciples. After a huge fight, he was taken in by Da Shang and Da Zhi and was viewed as their successor.

ED: WAIT WAIT! So Jin Yu is literally a powered up version of Liu

Ming... Except his talent isn't as good probably.

Seeing the caring expression of the two Spirit Masters, Liu Ming smiled bitterly in his heart.

It looked like the two did not have high hopes for him winning his round and instead, put all their hopes onto Xiao Feng. Otherwise, they would have at least asked for his opinion.

This lack of attention to him was in part due to his acted performance in Nine Infant Mountain, but it still left a bad taste in his mouth.

“Do what you can. Otherwise, once I start getting serious, you won't have a chance.” The moment Jin Yu walked into the circle, he spoke these words as if they were a fact.

“Hmph. That's what I wanted to say to you.” Xiao Feng became enraged at these words and after a blur of his hands, a wind blade appeared in one of them.

“Alright, then I won't be courteous.” Jin Yu didn't change his expression at Xiao Feng's provocation and instead waved his sleeves. A green round ball, the size of one's fist, came rolling out. In an instant, it transformed into a three feet high green Praying Mantis puppet.

The new puppet beast was slightly different from the black serpent puppet, besides its two forearms looking extremely sharp, the rest of its body was covered in a light green light. This made the puppet seem extremely agile.

“Green Light Mantis! You guys have actually given such a puppet to a new disciple. He probably won't even be able to utilize it well.” Seeing the mantis puppet, Zhu Chi's face changed drastically.

“Hehe, this Green Light Mantis is indeed a little hard to create, but it is still a tier two puppet beast. As for utilizing the puppet, Fellow Zhu does not need to worry about it. Jin Yu's talent of doing multiple things at once will definitely surprise you two later.” Da Shang said happily.

“Really? Then we will wait and see. I want to see how strong this tier two puppet beast, which is the hardest one to master from your sect,

really is.” Zhu Chi said with some contempt and stopped talking.

Xiao Feng saw the puppet beast of the other party and waved his arm. Immediately, the green Wind Blade flew towards Jin Yu. In an instant, many different hand signs were performed to build up the strength within Xiao Feng’s body and his skin became a bright emerald color.

“Peng peng”

The two forearms of the Green Light Mantis moved slightly and knocked away the Wind Blade attack.

In response to the attack, Xiao Feng shook his arm and took out a green practitioner weapon blade that buzzed loudly. His face turned somewhat savage as he swung the blade at Jin Yu.

A surprising scene appeared.

After the swing of the green blade finished, it visibly dimmed. However, a bright light, a few feet in length, appeared and shot out.

At the same time, Xiao Feng threw away the dimmed practitioner weapon and started making a hand sign. Immediately, his body started seeming somewhat hazy. Afterwards, he started running at a dizzying speed around Jin Yu.

Seeing this, Liu Ming narrowed his eyes.

However, he didn’t do that because he was impressed with Xiao Feng’s speed like the other disciples were, instead, he faintly saw some extremely tiny seeds fall out of Xiao Feng’s sleeve as he ran.

“Hong!”

Jin Yu and his puppet only had to move slightly in order to dodge this seemingly powerful attack from Xiao Feng that left a large trench behind the puppet and puppeteer. After he looked at the running figure, he immediately laughed,

“Trying to compare speeds with me. Laughable. Green Light, go.”

Right as Jin Yu’s voice fell, the Green Light Mantis Puppet rubbed its two forearms together before turning into a green shadow and also

shooting forward. It's speed was even greater than Xiao Feng who was already sprinting.

Seeing this, Xiao Feng was quite surprised. Before he could even react, the Mantis Puppet had already closed the distance and was ready to strike.

The Mantis Puppet's forearms flashed a dozen times in a matter of seconds as strike after strike rained towards Xiao Feng.

Even though Xiao Feng was extremely proud, his heart fell when he saw this attack. As he tried to dodge, he made a hasty hand sign.

From Xiao Feng's sleeve came "sou, sou" noises as two green arrows came shooting out.

However, all the Mantis Puppet did was pull back its forearms and easily shredded through the two arrows.

Xiao Feng used this pause to create distance between him and the puppet. Immediately afterwards, he changed his hand sign and started laughing wildly at Jin Yu,

"Kid, you are definitely dead now. Raining Thorn Technique!"

Right after Xiao Feng's words fell, the places in which he had run past suddenly shined brightly. Hundreds of black thorns sprouted out of the ground and grew towards Jin Yu, who was surrounded by the thorns.

"If this is your ace, it's funny."

Seeing this, Jin Yu sighed and poked his forehead.

With a "sou" sound, the Green Light Mantis returned to Jin Yu's side. Afterwards, it spread its wings and started running circles around Jin Yu.

However, it was too late. The black thorns were already in position to penetrate through the makeshift defense and were making sharp air whistles with their speed.

Still, Jin Yu showed no emotions and stood as still as a rock. All he did was focus on his puppet beast.

Suddenly, all the thorns were stopped!

There were four Mantis Puppets surrounding Jin Yu and each of them defended the thorns in that direction. With their forearms, they cut down all of the thorns that dared to try to get past them.

Xiao Feng's gloating smile froze on his face.



# Chapter 49: Fighting With Spells (Part Three)

After all of the black thorns had been destroyed, with a 'sou' sound, a green mantis puppet appeared in front of Xiao Feng like a demon. Its forearms moved to attack, changing into two light beams, slicing towards Xiao Yan like a dragon.

Xiao Feng was shocked by the attack and did not have time to release any defense. With determination, his arms started shining with a green light as they moved towards the forearms of the mantis.

"Stop it! Your Withering Wood Method is only trained to level two; you cannot use your body to block this kind of attack!"

"Dang" Dang" Two sounds rang out!

With a gloomy expression, Zhu Chi appeared before Xiao Feng. He flicked his finger left and right, dispersing the attacks.

On top of that, the puppet was even forced to retreat several steps back after being struck.

Seeing this, Jin Yu's eyes flashed. At the same time, the Green Light Mantis rubbed its two forearms together and was about to sprint forward.

However, Da Zhi appeared besides Jin Yu and patted his shoulder to stop him from controlling his puppet. Afterwards, he smiled and heard Zhu Chi say,

"We have lost this round. The talent of doing multiple things at once is indeed extremely useful for your sect's puppet techniques. With his performance, it can be said that even if you were to personally control this Green Light Mantis, you wouldn't be doing much better. You two have truly found a suitable disciple." Zhu Chi looked deeply at Jin Yu and sighed after admitting the defeat.

Martial Aunt Zhong, who was outside of the circle, also sighed when she heard Zhu Chi's word.

It couldn't be said that Xiao Feng had done poorly, rather it was Jin Yu's control of his puppets that was truly impressive. With the speed of the Green Light Mantis', it was possible that if he attacked first, the other party would not even get a chance to cast a single spell or technique.

Complete and utter defeat was now a fear come true for the Nine Infant Mountain.

Thinking about their futile trip, Martial Aunt Zhong bitterly smiled in her heart. At the same time, she turned her head towards Liu Ming; what entered her eyes gave her quite a surprise.

Liu Ming didn't show any expressions of fear or insecurity. Instead, he quietly stood there, as if the result of the two previous matches did not even phase him.

"Good. To be able to keep a clear mind at this point is extremely difficult. For the last match, you need not worry too much. Just do your best." When Zhu Chi brought back Xiao Feng, who had his unwillingness to accept his defeat written all over his face, and saw how calm Liu Ming was, Zhu Chi also showed an expression of surprise and praised Liu Ming.

"Yes, Martial Uncle Zhu, I will do my best." Liu Ming slightly bowed and respectfully replied.

At this time, a fifteen to sixteen year old youth that was well built walked out from the Nine Enchantment Mountain disciples. There was a long, blood red scar on his forehead and two swords on his back. While he stood still in the center, he emitted a powerful and fierce aura.

"This aura.... No way. This is a Body Cultivator! Da Zhi, Da Shang, is he really a disciple under the two of you?" After sensing the aura of the well built youth, Martial Aunt Zhong changed her expression and questioned the two Spirit Masters with some panic in her voice.

"Fellow Zhong, Wu Fei is indeed a disciple that we took in during an Opening Spirit Ceremony. He could withstand the pain of the ceremony using nothing but his own body and was one of the few disciples that weren't forced to the ground. Even though our sect is known for our

Puppet Techniques, it is not strange for some disciples to go down the path of a Body Cultivator.” Da Shang stroked his beard and said with a smile. The gloating manner in his eye was visible to anyone who bothered to look.

The path of a Body Cultivator was not a path any Spirit Apostle could take. Not only did all of them have a body much stronger than normal cultivators, they could also withstand inhuman levels of pain without flinching. After all, every single one of them toughened their bodies through extremely painful and extreme methods.

For most Spirit Apostles, a Body Cultivator of the same level was a counter that they could not win against. Even in the Spirit Master realm, Body Cultivators could, under certain circumstances, show powers that were not within the normal range of Spirit Masters. Thus, even though Body Cultivators were extremely hard to come by and develop, each of the large sects would choose a couple of disciples from every Opening Spirit Ceremony to become one of these special cultivators.

The disciples that Da Shang and Da Zhi brought this time were indeed new disciples, but every single one of them had a extraordinary skills or backgrounds that would leave them with an unimaginable advantage. Why would they have requested such a competition if they didn't have such an advantage?

Seeing this, Zhu Chi could only bitterly smile and stayed quiet.

When he and Martial Aunt Zhong saw how calm Liu Ming was, they thought that there was some hope for the last round. However, after seeing Liu Ming's opponent, they no longer had any thoughts about winning the Spirit Fruits.

When Liu Ming first experienced the fierce aura emitted by well built youth, he furrowed his brow. However, he quickly relaxed and slowly walked up.

The moment Liu Ming set foot within the circle, the well built youth's expression become one of slight anger. His arms moved, pulling out the two swords on his back. At the same time, he started chanting and a

golden luster started shining from all over his body. After a slight blur, his height grew a few inches, even his arms and legs seemed to have become thicker. With just a casual glance, he seemed like Liu Ming after he activated his mortal secret techniques.

Seeing this, Liu Ming's eyes shone. He also started chanting and wisps of black smoke started to appear from within his body.

The well built youth lowly roared and the two swords were twirled like wheels in his hands. Afterwards, he stomped onto the ground and charged forward in a flash.

“Pu!”

A fireball that was visibly larger than a normal fireball was shot out from Liu Ming and easily landed on the charging youth, who did not even attempt to avoid the attack.

The Fa Li in Liu Ming had all been refined and thus, with the same Fireball Technique, the fireballs that he cast would be stronger than the fireballs a normal Spirit Apostle made.

With a “hong” the fire exploded into waves of flames, making the charging youth slightly pause.

However, the well built youth roared once more and the wind around his two blades strengthened and blew away all the flames. After dispelling the flames, the youth started charging again; in seconds he was already within a hundred feet of Liu Ming.

Seeing the fierce charge of the youth, Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong shared a bitter smile after seeing the hopelessness in each other's eyes.

At this moment, the two of them held no hope for Liu Ming's victory.

“Pu, pu.” Another two crimson fireballs flew from Liu Ming's hands and landed on the charging youth.

With such strong fireball attacks, even if the well built youth's body was much stronger than the average person, when he barely cleared the waves of flames around him, he felt his arms becoming incredibly tired.

With panic, the youth realized that if he didn't defeat Liu Ming in this charge, he would most definitely lose. With a final roar, he squeezed out the final strength of his arms and cut open a path amongst the loose waves of flames around him. Then, he began to transform into a shadow, pouncing towards Liu Ming.

The youth assumed that a person who had already released so many fireballs would not have time to cast any more spells. And, as a Body Cultivator, all he had to do was get into close combat with the other party to end the match.

The well built youth would reach Liu Ming in a matter of seconds, but he was still unable to find any trace of fear on Liu Ming's face. Instead, Liu Ming's lips curved into a mocking smile.

"Wait...."

The well built youth suddenly felt that something was wrong the split second he saw Liu Ming's face. However, it was already too late for him to do anything.

Liu Ming's lips parted and raised his two hands; another two crimson fireballs appeared and shot out.

"Hong, hong." After two sounds, the well built youth's two swords flew out from his hands while his own body was pushed back and engulfed by the corresponding wave of flames.

"Initial mastery of the Fireball Technique. No, with such a fast cast time, it seems he's already entered the Initial Master of the Fireball Technique for quite some time already."

The sudden turnaround of events left Da Zhi unable to control his voice. Da Shang, on the other hand, had already rushed into the circle and waved away all the flames on the well built youth.

However, the power of the two fireballs was not something as simple as a mere couple of flames. Even with Da Shang's aiding hand, the well built youth had burn wounds all over and was unconscious.

"Good, very good. I never would have thought that a new disciple would

have such a mastery over the Fireball Technique. We lost without regrets. The Fa Li in his body has also been refined right? A normal Spirit Apostle's Fireball Technique doesn't have such a strong power. Fellow Zhu and Fellow Zhong, you both have really left the best for last." Da Shang eyed the unconscious youth on the ground with some pain in his eyes while his gaze was cold as ice when he looked at Liu Ming.

"Haha, we're innocent. I didn't even know that this disciple of mine had practiced the Fireball Technique to such a high level." A shadow solidified besides Liu Ming and Zhu Chi's voice came booming across the circle. With a pat on Liu Ming's shoulder and an expression of surprise on his face, anyone could tell that Zhu Chi was more than satisfied with this turn of events.

Martial Aunt Zhong also showed a face of pleasant surprise.

The unexpected victory from Liu Ming was outside of their expectation, but more importantly, it made it so that their trip was not in vain. If they left empty handed, the entire Nine Infant Faction would be in shame.

As for how Liu Ming got his Fireball Technique to the Initial Spell Mastering and how pure Liu Ming's Fa Li was, those were small matters compared to the Spirit Fruits.

The gazes they showered Liu Ming with were also full of praise, not with questions.

"Alright, two wins in three matches. You two can take one-third of the Spirit Fruits. However, I have a suggestion. Would you two fellows be interested in having one more round?" Da Zhi waited until someone from the Nine Enchantment Mountain tended to the well built youth before sweeping his gaze over Liu Ming and asked.

"What do you mean by this?" The happiness on Zhu Chi's face dimmed.

Martial Aunt Zhong also walked up with a stormy face and stood next to Zhu Chi.

"It's very simple. From what I saw, your disciple is quite strong. Why not have him go at another round with Jin Yu! If Jin Yu wins, then the

Spirit Fruits that you have will go to us. However, if your disciple wins, we will give you our two-thirds of the Spirit Fruits. What do you two Fellows think? No matter how you look at it, you Fellows are in the advantage!” Da Zhi and Da Shang exchanged gazes and as if he read Da Zhi’s mind, Da Shang spoke up.

“What? Gambling your two-thirds of the Spirit Fruits for our one-third!?” Hearing this, Zhu Chi’s heart started beating rapidly.

# Chapter 50: Mechanical Plating

“No need, we two are already very happy with the current result, there is no need to continue.” Martial Aunt Zhong suddenly opened her mouth and said.

“Indeed, Cong Tian this child only won this match by a fluke. If he was against Jin Yu, the chances of victory are just too low.” Zhu Chu also realized the intentions of the other two and directly declined.

Even if the stakes were more weighted towards their side, if they couldn't win, it would naturally be useless.

“If so, how about we add another 50 kilograms of Iron Essence?” After knitting his brows, Da Zhi unexpectedly raised the stakes again.

After this was said, Zhu Chi was stumped for words, and Martial Aunt Zhong's expression was frozen.

“If I heard correctly, the two of you, for this final third of the Spirit Fruits, are actually willing to add on 50 kilograms of Iron essence on top of the two thirds of the Spirit Fruits. The price of fifty kilograms of Iron Essence is definitely not inferior to the price of all of these Spirit Fruits.” After breaking out of his daze, Zhu Chi said unbelievably.

“The truth is, Fellow Zhu and Fellow Zhong, this time, these Spirit Fruits are a necessity to us. Either we take none of them or we take all of them. As for the reason, we cannot tell you. However, both rest assured, if your disciple loses today, we are willing to leave behind the 50 kilograms of Iron Essence as compensation.” The Da Shang replied solemnly. .

Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong glanced at each other, both seeing the surprise in each other's eyes.

“Please wait a moment, I need to discuss this with my Junior before deciding.” Zhu Chi could only reply like this.

“This is natural, please do not hesitate to discuss, we two can wait.” The Da Shang naturally agreed without reservations.

“Cong Tian, Take this time and rest. It is very possible you will compete



again in a while.” Martial Aunt Zhong did not disagree, and instead turned around to speak with extreme gravity to Liu Ming.

“Yes.”

Liu Ming replied and sat down with legs crossed where he was standing. He then began circulating and recovering Fa Li without making a sound. However, he was still naturally bewildered in his heart, not knowing what the two Spirit Masters of Nine Enlightenment Mountain were thinking.

At this moment, Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong walked to the other side, with their lips moving but not producing any sound. It was the extremely mysterious Whisper Technique.

This technique could only be learnt after reaching Late Spirit Apostle level. Therefore, this was also the first time Liu Ming had seen it. After looking at it, he couldn't help but feel very curious.

Ever since Liu Ming won by accident, the expression of Yu Cheng and Xiao Feng both became complicated, especially Xiao Feng, who felt extremely embarrassed.

He, who was a Nine Spiritual Pulse disciple, was not able to win a match. However, Liu Ming, who was a Three Spiritual Pulse disciple, could get a round under his belt. Also, as it seemed that he was going to compete again; this obviously made him feel unwilling at heart.

The gaze in which he used to look Liu Ming could not help but contain a hint of envy.

After no less than the time it takes to drink a cup of tea (10 minutes), Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong finish discussing, and walked over again.

After seeing this, Da Zhi and Da Shang roused their spirit, ready to hear their reply.

“Since the two of you have agreed to give 50 kilograms of Iron Essence whether we win or lose, the two of us naturally cannot refuse. However, we have one condition!” Zhu Chi spoke with no expression.

“What condition?” Da Zhi and Da Shang looked at each other, with Da Shang saying hurriedly.

“This competition, if our disciple loses, the two of us will naturally say no more and immediately leave this place with the Iron essence. All the Spirit Fruit belonging to the two Fellows. However, if he wins, then you two Fellows must tell us the real reason as to why you care so much about these Spirit Fruits.” Zhu Chi said without thinking any further.

“Tell you our reason? Sure, if we lose these Spirit Fruits, I naturally will have no need to continue hiding this information.” After hearing what he said, Da Zhi’s expression changed slightly but after thinking about it, he opened his mouth and agreed.

“Ok, then it is a deal.” Zhu Chi raised both brows and extended out a palm.

With three sounds of “pa” “pa“ ”pa”, the white haired elder and Zhu Chi hit their palms together. Afterwards, the four Spirit Masters all walked out of the ring.

“Cong Tian, I don’t know if you still have other methods but feel free to use them all in the next round. As long as you can win against that kid called Jin Yu, I can make sure that the benefits you will get will be a tenth of all the rewards.” When Zhu Chi passed by Liu Ming, he suddenly turned serious and said a sentence.

“That is correct, as long as you win the match, I will definitely keep that promise.” Martial Aunt Zhong also seriously added a sentence.

“I understand and will definitely try my utmost.” Once he heard he could receive a tenth of all the rewards, Liu Ming’s heart could not help but suddenly jump and he hurriedly replied in a submissive manner.

At this time, Da Zhi and Da Shang also instructed a few sentences seriously to the Jin Yu before also leaving.

Jin Yu entered the ring with no expression on his face, shook his sleeve and threw out a green colored ball. Once again, the ball changed into a Green Light Praying Mantis puppet.

“Junior, how do you feel about Cong Tian’s chances of winning?: Zhu Chi, standing outside the ring, suddenly asked Martial Aunt Zhong.

“If it was before the previous match, I would only say that he has a five percent chance. But since his Fireball Technique has already reached Initial Spell Mastering and moreover, he won the previous match effortlessly. He should still have other tricks up his sleeve that he has not used yet. But even if so, the chances of victory should only be at a maximum of 30 percent. Afterall, Jin Yu’s talent of doing many things at the same time, combined with the Green Light Praying Mantis puppets, is extremely powerful.” Martial Aunt Zhong remained silent for a moment, before replying like so.

“Thirty percent. This is enough for us to gamble. Looking at the manner of Da Zhi and Da Shang, if we don’t compete in this last round, perhaps they will not let us leave here easily.” Zhu Chi replied with a cold laugh.

“En, I am actually more curious about why the two of them are so attached to these Spirit Fruits.” The Martial Aunt instead replied unhurriedly.

“Hehe, if Cong Tian wins, we will naturally be able to know. But if it does not happen, taking back fifty kilograms of Iron Essence can also be considered as returning from a rewarding journey.” Zhu Chi replied with a small chuckle.

“Indeed, all we can do now is to patiently wait for the result.” The Martial Aunt nodded slightly.

At this time, Liu Ming had already stood up and wisps of black smoke started escaping from his body. He then formed a sign with one hand. The bronze bracelet on his wrist lit up, and quickly Liu Ming hit a hand sign into his own body.

At this, the bronze bracelet produced a “weng weng” sound, and a round light shield which tightly stuck to his arm appeared.

“So this is your Practitioner weapon, doesn’t seem like much!” Jin Yu glanced at Liu Ming’s Bronze Bracelet and coldly said.

“Whether it is powerful or not, you will know after trying it personally.” Liu Ming stared at his opponent and spoke plainly.

“Oh really, then I will try it.” An ominous glint flashed in Jin Yu’s eyes, immediately pointing a finger towards his forehead.

The Green Light Praying Mantis immediately knocked its two forelimbs together. Then, it suddenly opened up both wings and lunged forward towards Liu Ming with a speed that left afterimages.

After Liu Ming saw this, he quickly chanted a technique and brought both of his hands together in front of his chest. This immediately caused waves of aqua light to flash past and one by one, thin, aqua coloured blades appeared in Liu Ming’s hands at lightning speed. Then, Liu Ming flicked his wrists.

“Sou” “Sou” “Sou” sounds echoed!

Three wind blades practically formed a straight light as they shot forwards. The speed at which they were travelling were much faster than Liu Ming’s Fireball Technique from before; it was even about the same as the speed of the Green Light Praying Mantis Puppet.

After seeing this, Jin Yu became slightly alarmed and hurriedly controlled the puppet beast.

In between three sounds of “dang” “dang” “dang”, the forelimbs of the praying mantis danced at lightning speed. Although it deflected the three wind blades, it also couldn’t help but consecutively take several steps backwards.

Jin Yu’s expression became heavy, with his empty hand, he suddenly formed a hand sign and pointed towards the praying mantis in the air.

The puppet immediately rushed forward again. However, this time, it started trembling its wings at the same time and turned into four blurry shadows, which were indistinguishable between each other as they all rushed towards Liu Ming.

Liu Ming’s pupils shrank but his chanting of his technique became even more hurried, again raising both hands.

A deafening sound could be heard!

Again, four wind blades shot out and destroyed three praying mantis shadows in a flash. The final mantis moved its forelimb, knocking the wind blade away but its mid-air body was affected by the power of the wind blade and helplessly flew backwards.

Right at this time, Liu Ming suddenly raised his sleeve into the air, with a flash of black, a black rope flew straight towards the praying mantis puppet like a poisonous snake.

“Pu.”

Right when the unsuspecting praying mantis was about to get caught in the black rope, the puppet beast suddenly flapped its wing and shot to the side at an oblique angle.

The black rope immediately missed its target.

Taking advantage of the moment when Jin Yu was distracted, Liu Ming, who was on the other side, raised both hands. With another deafening sound, he shot forwards another two wind blades, but not with the praying mantis puppet as the target now. Instead, after shooting forwards with a flash, the wind blades were like ghosts as they appeared before Jin Yu.

When Liu Ming fought previously, he impressively did not use his full power.

With his pure Fa Li and his Complete Spell Mastering in the Wind Blade Technique, the speed of Liu Ming's wind blades would be thirty or forty percent faster than before if he was to give it his all.

Even though Jin Yu had a coarse and wild personality, after seeing this situation he couldn't help but be frightened. However, he had not time to dodge even if he wanted to.

“Peng, peng”.

The wind blades landed solidly on the Jin Yu's front chest, but only caused a yellow flash and dull thud, as if they landed on dead wood.

“Mechanical Battle Armor. Da Zhi and Da Zhang, you two actually gave this treasure to him, this round of competition cannot be counted!” Zhu Chi, who was originally so happy that he could jump around, immediately yelled to the other two Spirit Master while feeling alarmed and angry at this scene.

After Martial Aunt Zhong saw this situation, her expression also became unnatural and ugly.

“Hmph, look carefully. Yu Er’s Mechanical item, is not our Mechanical Battle Armor from before, but instead Mechanical Plating that was created by him.”

TL: Yu Er is an affectionate name for Jin Yu

Da Shang replied with a difficult smile and a white face, obviously the scene that just occurred also gave him a great fright.

“Mechanical Plating.”

After hearing this, Zhu Chi was slightly stumped for words.

At this time, after snorting coldly, Jin Yu suddenly tore off his clothes, revealing a set of tight, white color clothes underneath. However, in front and behind these new clothes, there was a round, mirror-like wooden piece tightly protecting his chest and back.

# Chapter 51: Victory

The two wooden pieces seemed abnormally smooth and were marked with black coloured inscriptions. They were tightly bound to Jin Yu's body by a thick mass of ropes.

The two Wind Blades carved two inch deep marks onto the front of the wood piece. However, the Wind Blades were unable to cut through it in a single stroke.

The expression of Liu Ming, who was opposite to Jin Yu, was naturally slightly dismayed. He obviously did not think that the previous attack would fail.

Jin Yu slapped the piece of wood onto his chest with his palm.

A "peng" sound rang out.

The two seemingly ordinary wood pieces suddenly began to change and stretch, in the blink of an eye a simple wooden armor covered Jin Yu's upper body, protecting him from various harms.

"And you still say you did not give him this Mechanical Battle Armor!" After seeing this situation, Zhu Chi immediately became angry.

"This object really wasn't from us, this we can swear that with a Heart Oath. However, even after this Mechanical Plating has transformed, it is very simple and crude and is far from being called Mechanical Battle Armor. Tsk tsk. Yu Er, this child, can actually already create such complex Mechanical Equipment." Da Shang hurriedly explained, before continuing to speak with a gratified look on his face.

Da Shang, who was to the side, also had an expression of being pleasantly surprised.

Judging from their praise of Jin Yu, he had something up his sleeve that even his teachers did not know about.

Hearing the two of them say they would be willing to make a Heart Oath, Zhu Chi became stunned for a moment. Afterwards, he choose to stay quiet.

At this time, Jin Yu, who was half-covered in Wooden armor, pointed his hand towards his forehead again. Then, he flipped his other hand over and grabbed hold of a short stick that was about a thumb thick. Afterwards, he pointed the stick towards the Liu Ming without saying anything.

Several sounds of “Pu, pu, pu” echoed.

Two azure colored streaks shot out from the stick and appeared in front of Liu Ming after a few flashes.

They were two inch-long bamboo nails, covered in azure light and seemed extremely odd.

At the same time, the Green Light Praying Mantis Puppet, which was in the sky, started to vibrate its wings. And after a weird cry, it rushed towards Liu Ming.

With “peng, peng” sounds, Liu Ming reacted subconsciously and raised the light shield on his wrist and blocked the two bamboo nails. However, they suddenly broke apart.

A white liquid explosively shot into the sky and condensed into a white silk net before falling downwards.

“Spider Web Technique”

Liu Ming’s heart trembled a little and a chant flew out of his mouth quickly before he raised one hand. A scarlet red fireball immediately shot out, hit the white silk net and exploded into flames.

But the scene that appeared afterwards startled him.

The original silk net, which Liu Ming thought would be reduced to ashes, was actually untouched. In addition, after being slightly heated up by the flames, it put the flames out in a second and continued falling downwards.

The expression on Liu Ming’s face changed and he suddenly changed his hand signs, With a wave like motion above his head, bits of grey colored smoke appeared from nowhere, forming a grey cloud that was a



foot large.

This was actually the Spirit Cloud that Spirit Apostles could form using the Soaring Sky Technique.

The falling white silk net was immediately stopped by the grey cloud, unable to fall any further.

This scene not only caused Jin Yu to stare blankly, it also caused the spectators outside the ring, Zhu Chi, Da Zhi and the other people, to helplessly look at each other.

To use the Soaring Sky Technique as a defensive method, this was their first time seeing that.

However, after Liu Ming did all these techniques in such a flurry, the Green Light Praying Mantis Puppet had already reached Liu Ming. Waving its two blade like forearms, it created a dozen or more cold lights when it chopped downwards.

“Pu”.

Liu Ming immediately dispelled his light shield. He held his arm with the bronze bracelet pointed towards the Praying Mantis puppet and a yellow tiger head replaced the shield. The tiger head composed of light then opened its mouth and spat out a blurry white sound wave

“Gu dong”.

Although the blades created by the forearms of the praying mantis puppet were as sharp as ever, the opposing sound wave was a shapeless attack that was unblockable. It was able to crash into the mantis, even though it was emitted after the mantis swung down its forearms, and managed to push the mantis back several steps.

However, the next moment, the Puppet Beast once again flashed forward towards Liu Ming.

Liu Ming’s expression sank, stimulated the Fa Li in his body and another sound wave came out of the tiger head, causing the praying mantis to retreat once again.

Although this sound wave attack was very mysterious, it was a pity that the power of the attack would decrease greatly as the distance increased. In addition, even though it hit the praying mantis puppet twice, the puppet did not appear to take any damage. Instead it would pounce forward unceasingly with Jin Yu's commands.

It was evident that Jin Yu knew that the attacks from Practitioner Weapons like the Tiger's Bite Bracelet took little time to activate but wasted large amounts of Fa Li. Even if Liu Ming was a Middle Spirit Apostle, it was impossible to maintain this type of attack for too long.

Liu Ming naturally knew this. After hitting the Green Light Praying Mantis puppet back again, he suddenly gave a deep, loud shout. Both of his calves started to become thicker and larger. He then ferociously stepped on the ground, shooting his body towards Jin Yu like a crossbow bolt.

With the support of Liu Ming's mastery of the second level of the Dark Bone method and the Lighten Technique from the Tiger's Bite Bracelet as well as the use of a Mortal Secret Technique that aroused his potential, Liu Ming's speed increased by quite a bit. Although this leap in speed did not place him at the level of the Green Light Praying Mantis puppet, his speed definitely was not inferior by that much.

Thus, after recovering, the praying mantis puppet lagged behind Liu Ming and was not able to block Liu Ming when Liu Ming charged towards Jin Yu.

However, Jin Yu gave out a "hmpf" and stood his ground, neither escaping or avoiding Liu Ming. With just a flick of his wrist, a flash of green light immediately shot out of the short stick in his hand; another two green colored bamboo nails once again shot towards Liu Ming.

"Sou, sou".

Liu Ming raised both of his hands, two white lines shot out from them and after a flash, sent the two green colored bamboo nails flying.

The bamboo nails were pushed back in a smart, flexible manner and did not explode.

The two white lines were impressively two water arrows created using the Water Arrow Technique.

After the two water arrows hit the nails, Liu Ming had already come within three to four feet away from the gloomy teenager. With a one handed hand sign and reciting a chant in his mouth, Liu Ming formed a vague wind blade in his hand instantly.

Seeing that, Jin Yu still did not retreat. Instead, he threw down the short stick in his hand before reaching towards his waist at lightning speed. A metal cylinder with the thickness of a forearm appeared in his hand, while the opening of the cylinder was aimed at Liu Ming.

Although Liu Ming did not know what was in the cylinder, his experience from countless life-or-death scenarios caused him to suddenly have a feeling of extreme danger.

Without thinking, he slammed his palm against his chest and after three flashes of black light specks, a black light shield immediately appeared around his body.

Almost at the same time, a few scarlet red inscriptions appeared on the metal cylinder. Moments later, a scarlet red flame shot out from it and enveloped Liu Min.

At the moment the flames sprayed out, a black coloured sphere rolled out from Jin Yu's hand. After another finger pointing towards his forehead, the sphere turned into a giant, half person tall tortoise puppet, with a "ga beng" sound.

The giant tortoise reversed before standing up and acted like a huge black shield, protecting Jin Yu behind it.

Jin Yu then walked up and patted the shell of the giant tortoise with lightning speed.

"Ga beng"!

Dozens of small holes immediately appeared on the thick shell of the giant tortoise. After a glass-shattering sound came from within it, dozens of steel darts shot out it like a burst of torrential rain, covering almost

everything in front of it in its attack range.

When Da Shang and Da Zhi, who were outside the ring, saw this, they suddenly became overjoyed, while Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong both became gloomy.

“Sou”.

There was a shadow of movement in the flames. Liu Ming shot out towards one side, effectively dodging the attack of the steel darts, and then somehow managed to instantly change directions while still in mid-air. He arced with unbelievable speed and shot directly towards Jin Yu.

This unexpected scene caused Jin Yu to become greatly shocked. He hurriedly turned around, trying to think of some method to defend himself, but it was already late.

When he had turned around halfway, he suddenly heard the sound of wind by his ears. Both of his arms felt a heavy weight on them and two lightning fast palms were placed on them. At the same time, a plain voice could be heard:

“Don’t move. Move again and I will behead you.”

In between the two palms, there were two faintly discernible wind blades flashing about.

Jin Yu expression immediately became ashen.

Even though Jin Yu had the Mechanical Battle Armor to protect his body, the area near his neck had no type of protection whatsoever.. If the close range wind blade chopped towards it, even if he had other combat abilities, he would not be able to protect his feeble life.

However, even though Jin Yu ended up in such a situation, he still turned his head a little, looking at the rival standing beside him with an ominous glint.

At this time, the light green clothes Liu Ming wore had already become grey shreds. He was covered in a burnt smell and the exposed skin on his nape, wrists and other places were covered in red blisters. It was

obviously an appearance of being heavily harmed by flames. However, he looked at Jin Yu with a smile.

When Jin Yu swept his gaze across Liu Ming again, he immediately realized something.

He saw a long black rope appear to be wrapped on Liu Ming's calf, with the other end going into the ground where he was standing, going down into an unknown depth.

Before, the reason why Liu Ming could increase his speed as well as change his direction mid air to suddenly appear on the other side of Jin Yu was obviously all due to borrowing the power of this black rope.

But when did Liu Ming deploy the rope at such a close distance? Jin Yu actually did not notice when that happened at all.

"Good tactic! However, if it was a real one on one fight, you are definitely not my opponent." Jin Yu stared at Liu Ming and chewed on each word slowly.

"Real fight? If I too could have this many mechanical items with the help of two or three puppets, it can be put into consideration." Liu Ming said while smiling a bit.

"Haha, Cong Tian, you did well. You did indeed not disappoint the two of us. Fellow Da Zhi and Da Shang, how is this round?" After seeing this situation, Zhu Chi, who was outside the ring, was unable to restrain the joy in his heart and started to smile.

Martial Aunt Zhong to his side also naturally had a smile on her face.

"Hmph, losing is losing. Don't tell me Brother Zhu is scared of us backing out? Yu Er, return. Your disciple is very shrewd and scheming, you have picked up a good disciple." Da Zhi said with a sound of hmph while carrying an ugly expression on his face.

Jin Yu actually lost in this competition; this was just extremely unexpected.

"Then about the stakes...." Zhu Chi said without thinking.

“All these Spirit fruits belong to you, and we will send our sect’s disciples to personally deliver the fifty kilograms of Iron Essence later.” Da Zhi spoke, almost as if he was gnashing his teeth. Da Shang also had a gloomy expression, not saying a single word.

“Keke, then much thanks to the rich rewards of the two fellows.” After hearing this, Zhu Chi spoke with great joy.

“However, you two fellows should probably also tell us, why are these Spirit Fruits so important to you?” Martial Aunt Zhong asked with a flash in her eyes.

# Chapter 52: Sudden Change

“Since the we have already lost our two portions of Spirit Fruits to you two Fellows, the information is now useless to us. You two Fellows should know that the Sea Race’s Market is opening again. This time, one of the items that the Sea Race wants is the Sky Jasper Fruit.” Da Shang indifferently said.

[TL: There are ways to forcefully mature the Spirit Fruits (explained in an author note later). Thus, the author uses Sky Jasper Fruits instead of Spirit Fruits from these few chapters on.]

“What? The Sea Race’s Market is opening again!? You two fellows are not joking right? In which nation is it located? Why haven’t the two of us received even the slightest bit of information about this?” Zhu Chi exclaimed in shock.

“Hmph, it is within the Hai Yue nation. If it were not for members of our sect doing business there, we would not have known about this either.” Da Shang snorted in reply.

“Hai Yue nation... No wonder. Haha, thank you Fellows for your honest response!” Zhu Chi laughed.

After listening to this, Martial Aunt Zhong’s expression became one of pleasant surprise.

“Fellow Zhu shouldn’t be too excited so early. Although the Sea Race’s Market has all sorts of innumerable heavenly treasures, one must have enough luck in order to obtain these treasures, otherwise one could end up returning with nothing and merely end up uselessly aiding the Sea Race.” Da Zhi said unhappily.

“Do not worry about this Fellow Da Zhi. Having earned this incredible opportunity, we will obviously plan carefully before advancing.” Zhu Chi restrained his smile as he replied.

Including Liu Ming, this was the first time all of the disciples present heard of the Sea Race’s Market; all of them were confused.

“Okay. Chong Tian, use this to knock down all the Spirit Fruits and load them into the basket. Remember, the Sky Jasper Fruit is a fire type Spirit Fruit so whatever you do, do not touch it with your body. Otherwise it will dissipate into fire type Fa Li.” At this time, Martial Aunt Zhong retracted her smile and suddenly retrieved two Glyphs from her sleeve. After throwing them forward, in mid air, they immediately turned into a scarlet colored wicker basket and a small hammer of a similar color.

“Yes, I understand.” Liu Ming bowed his head and responded upon hearing her. He moved forward and picked up both items. However, this irritated the burn injuries on his body, and he couldn’t help but twitch his mouth.

“Wait, I have a bottle of Spirit Medicine that you can rub on your wounds before continuing.” After seeing what happened, Martial Aunt Zhong’s expression changed, she then took a bottle out from her sleeve and gave it to him.

“Thank you Martial Aunt.” Liu Ming was pleased and received the bottle at once. Inside the bottle was a clear Spirit Liquid that he rubbed on his burns. A refreshing sensation covered his body and the pain was greatly reduced.

After Liu Ming’s spirit recovered, he put the bottle away, picked up the wicker basket and hammer, and walked towards the Spirit Tree.

Once Liu Ming arrived at the blue colored curtain of light surrounding the tree he slightly hesitated. However, after seeing that Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong didn’t express anything, he continued moving forward.

The light in front of him flashed!

He merely felt his body cool and after entering the curtain of light, a heat wave much hotter than air outside rolled over him.

Liu Ming furrowed his brows and faintly expedited his Fa Li. A trace of black fog began to emit from his body, mitigating the sensual heat.

Only then did Liu Ming walk to the Spirit Fruit tree; standing beside it



he lifted the small hammer and hit a green Spirit Fruit.

“Pu.”

The Sky Jasper Fruit had seemingly been ripe for a while and fell from the branches and straight into the red wicker basket waiting for it below.

After seeing this, Liu Ming had no more hesitations and promptly wielded his small hammer.

One by one the Spirit Fruits fell down and eventually, the wicker basket was almost completely filled.

On the outside, Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong couldn't help but look at each other and smile.

Da Zhi and Da Shang could only bitterly smile at this scene.

“We should leave. Considering that there are no Spirit Fruit for us, there is no point in staying here.” Da Shang said.

Hearing this, Da Zhi naturally did not have any idea of opposing it.

Thus both of them bid farewell, took their sect's disciples and were about to leave the underground cave.

At this time, Liu Ming had just finished knocking down the last Sky Jasper Fruit and was faintly smiling; he then took the wicker basket back to Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong.

However, just as he took a few steps, his body abruptly stiffened. He couldn't help but hastily turn around and blankly stare.

Unexpectedly, a dozen large scarlet glyph symbols appeared in front of the Spirit tree, and after a subsequent rumbling sound, a water jar sized flame pillar shot up from within the earth. Within a moment, the Spirit tree was engulfed by the pillar and transformed into ashes.

The rolling flames instantly spewed out in all directions.

Liu Ming turned pale with fright and without thinking, he instantly moved his body and fled. Just as he moved to flee, he suddenly saw two silhouettes; Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong had unexpectedly appeared

at his side at the same time.

One of Zhu Chi's hands formed a symbol as his sleeve lashed out in front of him. Immediately, the flames in front of him rolled around and returned.

Martial Aunt Zhong on the other hand, stood in front of Liu Ming and told him to be careful. Her gaze fell on the fire and she stopped speaking.

At this time, the nearby sound of space ripping apart arose once again. The two Nine Enchantment Mountain Elders who had already left the cave unexpectedly had swiftly returned. Their faces were full of astonishment as they stared at the scarlet flame.

After a little while, the flame had completely dissipated, but in its place a large ten foot scarlet formation had been left behind. All around, approximately a dozen scarlet glyph symbols lightly flickered while radiating residual heat.

Once Zhu Chi clearly saw the formation, his expression changed as he said "Small Teleportation Formation"

"That's correct; this formation is not fake. Hei hei, this really is a surprise; Suppressing Dragon Master really did set up a secret area here. I did not expect that only when the Spirit Tree had been destroyed would the entrance be revealed." Da Zhi, staring at the scarlet formation, said while smiling.

Although Martial Aunt Zhong and Elder Mu Guan didn't say anything, everyone could see their shocked expressions.

"It seems that both Fellows are planning on exploring the area now. But we haven't done any preparations.. So to enter it now, wouldn't it be too rash?" Zhu Chi took the lead and voiced his hesitation to Da Shang.

"What preparation? Since the Spirit Tree has already been destroyed, the volcano will soon erupt. When that happens, the entire island will be destroyed. How will we be able to look for Suppressing Dragon Master's treasures then? How about this, first let us remove our sects' disciples from the island, then the four of us can work together to scout inside?"

Regarding whom the treasures will belong to, it will be entirely left up to one's luck." Da Zhi said as he shook his head.

Zhu Chi's expression changed and after a short period of time he clenched his teeth and responded. "Alright, then I will take a risk as well."

After a slight hesitation, Da Shang and Martial Aunt Zhong ultimately did not express dissent.

Thus the four of them commanded their disciples to retreat from the cave.

Before leaving with everyone else, Liu Ming gave the Spirit Fruits in the wicker basket to Zhu Chi.

After the time it took to eat a meal (15-30 minutes), Liu Ming and Yu Cheng's group as well as the dozen or so disciples from Nine Enlightenment Mountain flew atop the center of the island and were directly above a pile of rubble. They quietly waited there for Zhu Chi and the others.

However they were naturally split into two factions, distantly opposing one another.

Time continued to pass and quickly, an hour had gone by. Yet there were no signs of movement from the cave beneath their feet.

All of the disciples were slightly worried, some even started to whisper with each other.

At this time, there was a sudden boom from underground. The stone house from earlier exploded without warning as a ray of light flew out from within it and subsequently turned into innumerable scarlet rays that shot in all directions.

"Quickly get out of the way! Those are Sword Qi's! This is not something you can handle!" A strict voice suddenly came from below. Following the voice, several silhouettes flashed: Zhu Chi and the other 3 rapidly flew out of the hole made in the ground. Their clothes were now in tatters and their heads were full of sweat. It seemed as if all of them had just experienced a fierce battle.

However their warning was still too late. After a series of red rays and a few miserable cries, there were a number of people whose bodies were now split into two parts.

Unexpectedly, that also included Yu Cheng of the Night Enlightenment Mountain disciples.

Xiao Feng and Liu Ming's reactions could be considered fast amongst the disciples, but after barely dodging the red rays, their heads couldn't help but sweat profusely.

Before they could react further? Silhouettes flashed into their vision; Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong split apart and grabbed a disciple each.

Zhu Chi waved his sleeve and a Glyph shot out. After a white mist surged about, the Flying Jade Spirit Boat appeared in front of their eyes.

Both of their bodies flashed, bringing Liu Ming and Xiao Feng into the flying boat.

After a "Pu" sound, Zhu Chi didn't say anything as he made a hand sign. The Flying Jade Spirit Boat then transformed into a green light as it quickly shot away

.

At the same time, both Da Shang and Da Zhi of the Nine Enlightenment Mountain Sect, quickly released a flying totem that seemed like a tower. They then grabbed the remaining disciples and fled in the opposite direction.

Both sides had used a flying totem and after using their full effort, one could well imagine their speed. After what seemed like an instant, both parties had arrived at the island's border.

The island beneath them suddenly emitted a deafening, rumbling noise as a pillar of fire shot into the air. Instantly, the entire island was transmogrified into a sea of fire.

Concurrently, from within the sea of flame came a long bird's cry that was exceptionally ear piercing. It couldn't help but make the listeners feel

numb.

“This isn’t good Senior. It has almost completely awakened already. We had better go a bit faster because we absolutely cannot be caught.” Martial Aunt Zhong turned pale as she spoke in a flurry when she heard the bird cry.

“Junior, lend me a hand. I’ll use a forbidden blood technique.” Zhu Chi said while clenching his teeth, he was also greatly alarmed when he heard the bird cry.

“Alright, I understand. The both of you should quickly sit down.” Martial Aunt Zhong responded without hesitation and quickly gave instructions to Xiao Feng and Liu Ming.

Xiao Feng obviously had not yet recovered from the scene of Yu Cheng’s death and could only subconsciously nod his head.

Liu Ming felt a shiver in his heart when he heard those words and quickly sat down. He further held onto the flying boat’s wall.

Although Martial Aunt Zhong could see what state Xiao Feng was in, she didn’t have the time to deal with the situation right now. She merely moved and quickly stood behind Zhu Chi. She used both her hands to support his back while she started emitting a layer of white light.

Zhu Chi let out a low pitched shout, spitting out a mouthful of blood as both of his hands quickly formed a sign.

# Chapter 53: Spirit Scarlet Serpent Dragon

The blood immediately turned into a red mist and made its way into the ship.

A “wu wu” sound was immediately heard

The Spirit Jade Flying Boat’s speed was instantaneously increased by almost a half, transforming into a green ray that seemed to split the sky as it travelled.

Xiao Feng was still in shock and when the ship suddenly sped up, his back resolutely smacked the wall of the ship making him cry out in pain.

After Liu Ming used a bit of force with his arms and was able to sit still in his original position.

Once Zhu Chi completed his technique, he sat heavily on the deck; his face was several times more pale.

Martial Aunt Zhong retracted both her arms but her face was still full of worry as she constantly looked back.

A moment later, the Spirit Jade Flying Boat had already flown dozens of miles and the once visible sea of fire gradually grew out of sight. From the beginning to the end, no object was seen chasing them.

Having witnessed this, Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhongs’ expressions relaxed.

“It seems the evil creature has only recently awakened and is not willing to use his strength to chase us down. Alas, the four of us are lucky to have escaped this calamity!” Martial Aunt Zhong softly said.

“After we return, we must inform our senior, the Sect Leader, to immediately send people to eliminate it. Examining the state of that creature, it seems to have just recently entered the Crystal Level. If 100 years were to pass and it were able to stabilize in this level, then I’m afraid that many Sects will be in trouble.” Zhu Chi’s face was gloomy as he spoke.

“At the time, everyone knew that Suppressing Dragon Master was harboring a Liquid Level, Spirit Scarlet Serpent Dragon, but when he died a few years ago, this Serpent Dragon suddenly disappeared. It was believed then that the Suppressing Dragon Master reluctantly eliminated it to ensure that it wouldn’t be able to wreck havoc. Who would believe that this Serpent Dragon unexpectedly had concealed itself underneath this island in a sea of fire and bitterly trained. Furthermore, it stealthily advanced into the Crystal level and furtively refined the Totems of Suppressing Dragon Master.” Martial Aunt Zhong was still uneasy as she spoke.

“We were lucky that when we entered, the Serpent Dragon was only half awake. Furthermore, we were fortunate that it was still in the process of refining that Suppressing Dragon Sword and was forced to detonate the sword; otherwise if it were to still possess that Spirit Sword, then in the future subduing it will be much more difficult.” Zhu Chi bitterly laughed as he spoke.

“However Disciple Chen was unable to escape the calamity. When we return, I still don’t know how to explain this to Senior.” Martial Aunt Zhong’s expression darkened.

“Disciple Chen’s situation undoubtedly is extremely unfortunate. Nonetheless, we could not do anything about this. Who would have known that when this Serpent Dragon forcibly stopped his refining, he still had enough force left to send the Suppressing Dragon Sword above ground and make it explode there. In addition, not only we were hurt, the Nine Enlightenment Mountain might have experienced greater losses. Da Zhi’s disciple who was embarking on the path of a Body cultivator apparently also did not escape this misfortune.” Zhu Chi lightly coughed as he replied, his eyes displaying helplessness.

After hearing this, Liu Ming and Xiao Feng could vaguely understand what happened.

It seemed like after Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong entered the teleportation formation, not only did they not find any treasures, but they also came across an extremely terrifying Serpent Dragon who forced the

four Spirit Masters to flee.

Moreover, once Liu Ming heard the words “Liquid Stage” and “Crystal Stage” when the two were talking, his heart couldn’t help but tremble.

Could it be that the cultivation path is not only divided into just Spirit Apostles and Spirit Masters, but into even higher realms?

Regarding this matter, he had never heard people mention it or read about it in ancient texts.

Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong seemed to have no further interest in continuing the conversation; one gloomy expedited the Spirit Boat as the other sat cross legged on the floor and started to meditate.

After ten days, the group finally returned to Barbarian Ghost Sect.

Once they returned to Nine Infant Mountain, Zhu Chi let Liu Ming and the Xiao Feng return to their dwellings first while he and Martial Aunt Zhong went to the mountain top to find Gui Ru Quan.

A short while later, Scholar Gui hurriedly left Nine Infant Mountain with both of them.

Two hours later, the main mountain peak in the Barbarian Ghost Sect which housed the Master’s Hall suddenly emitted bell rings.

Subsequently, various Spirit Masters, regardless if they were in the midst of training or teaching disciples, quickly stopped what they were doing and immediately sped towards the Main Peak.

Barbarian Ghost Sect’s remaining outer disciples were even more shocked and within a short period of time were all speculating with each other.

At the same time, having returned to his dwelling, Liu Ming’s face was buried in a pillow on his bed snoring loudly as he slept. He seemed to not have heard the bell sounds coming from outside his window.

In the morning of the second day, when Liu Ming awoke, an outer disciple was already waiting for him outside to notify him that Scholar Gui and others would like to see him to discuss a few matters.



After Liu Ming expressed his thanks to the outer disciple, he immediately rushed on his cloud to the mountain peak.

When Liu Ming entered the large hall, Scholar Gui, Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong were already waiting. Moreover, they seemed to have just finished discussing something with their troubled looks.

“Greetings, Teacher Gui, Martial Uncle Zhu and Martial Aunt Zhong!” Liu Ming took a step forward before bowing in respect.

“Stand up. Cong Tian, I have already heard about your performance on Suppressing Dragon Island from you Master and Martial Aunt. This time you can be considered to have executed a great deed for this Sect.

“I dare not say so; I merely completed what any disciple should have done.” Liu Ming naturally was incessantly unpretentious.

“You do not need to say these things. Although our Nine Infant Mountain is a weaker faction among the sect, it does not pale in rewards. Furthermore, Junior Zhu has said that they have promised to bestow a tenth of the rewards to you. Since this is the case I do not have any opposition to this idea. Junior Zhu, why don’t you take out the items.” Scholar Gui faintly smiled before conferring his order on Zhu Chi.

Zhu Chi nodded his head and used a hand to grab a leather bag hanging on his waist. From there he took out several kinds of items and subsequently laid them on a table to his side.

Remarkably the items were three round emerald fruits, a scarlet wooden box and three glistening ferrous metals.

TL: Ferrous ~ Iron

“These are three Sky Jade Fruits and three half kg top quality Iron Essences. Their value is approximately a tenth of this trip’s rewards and now they are all yours. However, I still have two suggestions for you; please listen.” Scholar Gui said slowly.

“Yes!” Liu Ming respectably said as he forcibly suppressed the joy in his heart.

“My first suggestion is that you can sell the three Sky Jade Fruits and the three Iron Essences to us three in exchange for approximately six to seven thousand Spirit Stones. This large sum of Spirit Stones is enough to allow you to live in this Sect for 10 years without fiscal worries. Thus you can concentrate on training without having to worry about Spirit Stones. My second suggestion is that I can help you bring the three Sky Jade Fruits to the Sect’s best alchemist, gather all the other materials needed and then have him three bottles of Marrow Washing Spirit Liquid for you. As for the price of this, however, I will take back the three Iron Essences. What do you think Cong Tian?” Scholar Gui said with a smile on his face.

“I will choose the second option!” After hearing the propositions, Liu Ming immediately made his decision without much consideration.

“You should think over it more.” After hearing how quickly Liu Ming responded, Gui Ru Quan was a bit surprised and asked again.

“There is no need to. This disciple knows his own inferior aptitude and since this Spirit Liquid has the ability to wash my marrows and reform my tendons, I naturally will not waste such an opportunity.” Liu Ming said resolutely.

TL: Wash marrows + reform tendons is like making one’s

“Fine; since this is the case, come back here in ten days to retrieve the Marrow Washing Spirit Liquid.” Scholar Gui said without further exhorting, and nodded his head.

Liu Ming happily expressed his thanks.

Following this, Scholar Gui asked Liu Ming a few questions regarding cultivation and then sent him back to his dwelling.

“Senior, Cheng Er is no longer here; do you really not plan on recruiting this child as your own personal disciple?” Once Liu Ming’s figure had disappeared from the entrance, Martial Aunt Zhong could not help but ask this.

“Although this disciple’s performance on Suppressing Dragon Island was not bad, he is only a Three Spiritual Pulse. Furthermore, he has

already used pills to increase his Fa Li, thus I'm afraid that he will not have much potential. Even if he uses the Marrow Washing Spirit Liquid, he will most likely be stuck at the late Spirit Apostle Stage his entire life. He really is not worth spending effort to raise. Not only this, but our Faction's resources are finite so using it on disciples like Feng Er (Xiao Feng) whose aptitudes are better will give our Nine Infant Mountain a chance to rise again. After all, it comes down to the number of Spirit Masters to ultimately determine whether a Faction is weak or strong." Scholar Gui said as he spoke.

"Even like this, it still is a bit of a pity. This child's fighting techniques are very astonishing and if is able to enter the late stage of a Spirit Apostle, there might be a chance for him to help our faction gain a core disciple spot." Zhu Chi said.

"What use is a mere core disciple spot? In comparison, if we are able to produce a Spirit Master, our influence will completely change." After hearing what was said, Gui Ru Quan still persisted with his opinion.

Listening to Scholar Gui speak like this, Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong looked at each other and did not say anything more.

"Oh, that's right! How are we going to deal with the Sea Race's Market? Other than the three Spirit Fruits we conferred upon Cong Tian, we still have 30 pieces. This should be enough to enter the Sea Race's Market and pick an object." Zhu Chi's eyes flashed and he changed the topic.

"Correct. The opening of the Sea Race's Market really is an opportunity bestowed by heaven and we cannot let it go. Perhaps there is a possibility that we can exchange for an object worth 10-100 times the price of Sky Jasper Fruits there. However, the Sea Races are all cunning and very few people have been able to come back from the market with a lot of gains. How about this: in the future I will invite a person who possesses an Innate Spirit Eye. This will give us a better chance of obtaining a good item." Scholar Gui replied after pondering for a bit.

When Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt heard this they naturally nodded their heads in agreement.

“Senior Gui, I heard that teacher had already come out of secluded training and is rushing to Suppressing Dragon Island without stopping to rest.” After talking for a while, Martial Aunt’s expression stiffened and asked a question to Scholar Gui.

“This really is the case. The Serpent Dragon is originally an extremely rare Demonic Beast and every part of it is a treasure. If teacher is able to obtain some of this dragon’s blood and finds an alchemist who is able to create a legendary pill with it, perhaps it may be able to aid his training and help him increase a stage. However, now that people of the Nine Infant Mountain know about this dragon’s existence, I’m afraid that Senior Ling Yu will immediately receive news about this and immediately head out.” Scholar Gui slowly replied.

“Since there are two Crystal level seniors setting out, that evil Serpent Dragon will probably find it hard to run away and will ultimately perish.” Said Martial Aunt Zhong

“Hmph, you shouldn’t be excited so soon Junior. If we were to compare those on the same level, high level Demonic Beasts are stronger than our human cultivators by a margin. Moreover, since that evil Dragon has travelled with Master Fu Jiao for so long, it most likely learned some things from him. Besides, from what you told me, Master Fu Jiao’s personal Totems have already fallen into that Dragon’s hands and have almost been fully refined. If this is the case, then even Teacher and Senior Yu Ling setting out at the same time will not mean a 100% chance of the death of this Dragon.” Scholar Gui harrumphed as he replied.

# Chapter 54: Spirit Communication Technique

“If it really is like that, then our Kingdom of Xuan will have no peace. With the ability of the Crystal Level dragon, if an ordinary level Spirit Master such as me meets it, we will definitely not be so lucky as to escape.” The expression on Martial Aunt’s face changed greatly.

“Do not worry Junior. Although what Senior has said is not wrong, do not forget that there are multiple elders at Crystal Level from the two sects, Heavenly Moon Sect and Hall of Blood. Even if the Serpent Dragon is able to escape from the attacks of Martial Uncle and Elder Ling Yu, once it provokes the two sects of Heavenly Moon Sect and Hall of Blood, the elders from the two sects will act. No matter how great its abilities are, there is only certain death for it then. Especially the Flying Sword Techniques of Heavenly Moon Sect, they are exceptionally powerful. This Serpent Dragon, without the Suppressing Dragon Sword, no matter how ferocious and vicious it is, will be unable to resist.” Zhu Chi instead spoke with a different opinion.

“Once the Flying Sword Techniques of the Heavenly Moon Sect has been properly practiced and mastered by a disciple, it indeed is a weapon of mass destruction. However, the Blood Blade Secret Technique from the Hall of Blood sect is also incomparably vicious. Once a person has reached complete mastery of it, as long as they can scratch the dragon, it will definitely die. But then again, it’s not just these two sects, all of the major sects have hidden treasures and techniques, even our Barbarian Ghost sect. If it was possible to summon the Founder’s Barbarian Strength Ghost King permanently, which shook several countries back in the days, it would be enough sweep away all the various sects. However, what is the use of saying all this now? Ever since the Founder passed away, the Barbarian Strength Ghost King disappeared completely, unable to be summoned by any other person.” After hearing what was said, Martial Aunt Zhong also sighed in admiration.

After the scholar and Scholar Gui looked at each other, they could not help but have a bitter smiles.

Back in the day, the Barbarian Ghost Sect was the leading sect, but afterwards it became worse with each generation. If it were not for the reluctant support of a Crystal Level Martial Uncle right now, perhaps its placement in the five great sects would not be as stable.

This caused them, the younger generation, to feel ashamed.

“Alright, although this evil dragon is a big inconvenience, with Martial Uncle and the other people, it cannot create too big of a storm. We should now discuss some things regarding our own faction.” The scholar said with a slight cough.

After Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong heard this, they naturally did not object, immediately beginning a conversation with a new subject.

Ten days later, Liu Ming was sitting cross-legged in the training house while playing around with a pure white, faultless jade bottle.

There were two exactly alike bottles placed on the ground near Liu Ming.

These were the three bottles of Marrow Washing Spirit Liquid which Liu Ming had obtained from the scholar today.

According to what the scholar said, when using these liquids, it was best to first exercise fiercely before then using all of it within a few days. This way, the best results could be achieved.

Of course, the process is naturally not too comfortable.

Liu Ming thought for a while in silence before suddenly placing the bottle in his hand onto the floor with the others. He got up and walked with large steps out the door to the center of the small yard.

“Pi la”

He casually pulled off his clothes, revealing a somewhat robust and sturdy upper body. After taking a small breath, he started to practice a weird looking martial art.

Again and again!

His fists constantly made sounds of breaking wind. This was the exact boxing technique Liu Ming learnt when planting at the Spirit Farm.

As time passed, bit by bit, Liu Ming's skin slowly began to turn red, with drops of sparkling and translucent sweat appearing on his back. He also started to give off steaming hot air which became thicker and thicker, until even the seemingly fierce wind coming from his fists were unable to scatter it.

Liu Ming's hands suddenly stopped; panting slightly he returned inside the house with large strides.

After Liu Ming took off his pants with lightning speed, he picked up one of the small bottles from the floor, flipped the lid off and poured the milky white fluid onto his hands. Afterwards, he directly spread and rubbed it all over his body.

When the fluids first touched Liu Ming's hand, a bone chilling, ice cold feeling could be felt. After spreading it onto his scarlet red skin, it became a forceful, sharp pain, as if Liu Ming was being cut by a knife.

Liu Ming grimaced, but his hand movements were not affected in the slightest as he continued to spread it over every inch of his body with lightning speed. Afterwards, he sat down cross-legged exactly where he was, still naked, and silently began to cultivate.

Everytime Liu Ming revolved the Fa Li in his body, the bone chilling coldness on his skin became colder by a little bit. After a full revolution, he felt as if his blood had frozen over.

However, Liu Ming was forewarned by the scholar and knew that this was the most crucial period. He clenched his teeth, purposefully continuing to forcefully revolve the Fa Li around his body without stopping. Only when his body felt extremely numb did he closed his eyes, slowly forgetting about time and everything else.

After an unknown length of time, the coldness on Liu Ming's skin finally disappeared. At this moment, a black, malodorous, grease-like substance

was excreted from all of his pores.

Despite this, Liu Ming's face was abnormally red and glossy, with a layer of glittering light constantly moving about.

After a long sigh, Liu Ming finally opened both eyes, but after looking at his own body he immediately frowned. After a few lines of chanting, he pointed a hand sign to the top of his head.

After a few sounds of "pu" "pu", a few clusters of clean water showered down on Liu Ming, washing and cleaning away all of the black filth that covered his skin.

After sweeping his hair backwards, Liu Ming suddenly thought of something and slowly closed both eyes. Sending his attention into his body, Liu Ming inspected his body at lightning speed.

His bones, skeletons, blood vessels, spirit sea and other parts all had a somewhat indescribable change. His Fa Li also increased a bit, although not a lot, it was about equal to the results from half a month's worth of hard training.

Liu Ming knit his eyebrows, then suddenly raised his arm and clenched his five fingers with a bit of strength. It seemed that his strength, compared to before, had increased by quite a bit. He then casually examined his whole body and realized that he had grown a bit taller too.

However, ever since Liu Ming began cultivating the Dark Bone Method, even without the support of Fa Li, his strength always seemed to slowly increase. Although it was not by much every time, but over the course of a year, the accumulated strength was not a small amount anymore. He was now twice as strong compared to the time before he entered the Ghost Barbarian Sect.

In the beginning, Liu Ming thought it was the effect of the Exercise Boxing technique he habitually performed before he cultivated. However, after investigating the matter by slyly mentioning the subject to older Nine Infants Mountain disciples, he found out that although the Exercise Boxing did have an effect of changing the body and increasing strength, it was definitely not as dramatic as his increases.



In this way, Liu Ming figured out that his constant increase in strength was most likely due to his cultivation of the Dark Bone Method.

Frankly, although this cultivation method seemed extremely similar to the Barbarian Ghost Sect's Ghost Spirit Method, the actual effect was barely the same. No additional secret techniques and spells unique to this method existed, or at the very least, the Martial Uncle Ruan from the Scripture Pavilion did not translate and write them in the cotton book.

So it could be said that other than the spells and secret techniques of a similar nature that can be found in the Barbarian Ghost Sect, there was no hope for the Dark Bone Method to provide any special techniques to be used in actual combat.

Ever since Liu Ming realized this, thinking about it always made him feel very gloomy at heart.

In this way, if it wasn't for the fact that he had mastered several spells, he would have looked more and more like a Body Cultivator.

Pondering these things, Liu Ming shook his head and then once again sat down cross-legged, raised another small bottle, and began to spread the liquid all over his body.

On came the same chilling cold, the same sharp pain, causing Liu Ming to grimace again....

Three days later, when Liu Ming walked out of the house, his shoulders were clearly thicker than before and his height was now half a head taller.

At this point, if it wasn't for his slightly immature facial features, perhaps everyone would think that he was a teenager of eighteen or nineteen years of age.

Each subsequent washing had resulted in a small change in his overall build, but the overall effect was extremely shocking.

After Liu Ming exercised his limbs, he again practiced the Exercise Boxing once again.

The result was that the wind coming from his punches was able to raise a curtain of dust off the nearby ground.

This surprising result naturally could not be achieved by him three days ago.

Liu Ming himself was also extremely pleased with the effect of the three bottles of Marrow Washing Spirit Liquid.

After stopping his movements, Liu Ming once again returned to the training house to tidy up. After calming his spirit, he began to study the Spirit Communication Technique.

Among the disciples of the Barbarian Ghost Sect, this technique could be counted as one of the most practiced techniques. After all, if you could order a ghost around, it was as if you had an extra helper by your side. When exploring dangerous areas, the ghost could be used to scout out unknown dangers.

Although the cultivation methods of some disciples were not compatible with Spirit Communication technique, they would still purposely and forcefully practice it a little. For them, even if they could only summon the weakest type of ghost, it was still better than nothing.

Liu Ming had already understood eighty to ninety percent of the technique with his previous comprehension session.

According to the Spirit Communication Technique, in order for a Spirit Apostle to obtain a strong ghost to control with the technique, there were two methods.

One method was to be like the Senior in the Small Competition that practiced the Spirit Communication Technique. One would develop or find a special demon puppet like the White Demon Skeleton and then use the Spirit Communication Technique to subdue some lonely wild spirit or ghost. These subdued ghosts could then be trained to be Battle Spirits with combat awareness and techniques before directly fusing them with the demon puppets they had.

[TL: Demons + Ghosts aren't supposed to mix in english but ghosts in

china also incorporates demons. Think of solid ghosts.

Demon puppet = dead demon or puppet. Think of this as sealing souls to dead things.]

This method was viable since low level Battle Spirits were extremely easy to train, and as long as one could find a demon puppet, one would be able to obtain powerful ghost allies.

However, the later growth in strength for this type of ghost was extremely slow. Whether it was the training of the Battle Spirit, or the non-stop refining of demon puppets, enormous time and effort was required by this method.

It could not be known how many Barbarian Sect Disciples, due to this choice, abandoned their own cultivation and were unable to make up for their loss.

The second method was much simpler. It was to borrow the Barbarian Ghost Sect's spell formation, which was personally laid by the Six Yin Master back in the days. The formation could directly transport one to a mysterious dimension called "Ghost Hell Region". There, one could personally find a real, powerful, ferocious ghost to subdue.

The ghosts subdued by this method often retained most of their intelligence. As long as they stayed in areas full of Yin energy, they would cultivate by themselves, slowly increasing their own strength.

[TL: Think of yin as dark.]

However, the Ghost Hell Region was extremely dangerous and normal Spirit Apostle disciples wouldn't dare to go too far into the place. Therefore, most of the ghosts subdued were of the lowest level, Soldier Level Ghosts. Helping this type of ghost cultivate would also lead to an unthinkable waste of time in the later stages.

# Chapter 55: Glyph Crossbow and Shooting Sun Arrows

The two methods had their pros and cons, and it naturally fell on each individual's choice as to which method they would choose.

Generally speaking, however, disciples that were incapable of training the Spirit Communication Technique to a high level and had no shortage of Spirit Stones would use the first method.

After all, aside from the exorbitant fee required to create or find a puppet, to refine and control a low level Battle Spirit was an exceptionally easy task.

On the other hand, disciples who were proficient in the Spirit Communication Technique but had a shortage of Spirit Stones would often choose the second method of finding a ghost.

This method, aside from having to pay Contribution Points to enter this Ghost Hell Region, did not require much expenditure. Furthermore, if one's luck was good enough to find a ghost with large potential, then it was entirely possible that it could evolve into a ghost at the Warrior or General level.

TL: Author never states this but is common sense that Soldier < Warrior < General

If the ghost really did rise up in level, the disciple's strength would rapidly increase by up to a couple times. Moreover, their position within the sect would undergo a complete change.

These cases had occurred quite a few times in the sect.

Thus, if anyone had a bit of confidence in their Spirit Communication Technique, seventy to eighty percent of them would choose to enter the Ghost Hell Region and search for a compatible Spirit Ghost.

Although Liu Ming had earned a few hundred Spirit Stones from completing the Sect's missions, he could not be counted as wealthy. Thus

he naturally chose the second method.

However, once Liu Ming realized he would have to use 100 Contribution Points in order to use the Ghost Hell Region teleportation formation, he felt great sorrow.

100 Contribution Points roughly corresponded to successfully completing 30 Contribution Point missions. Thus this expenditure would use the great majority of Liu Ming's Contribution Points.

After thinking about this, Liu Ming cursed under his breath before returning his attention to understanding the Spirit Communication Technique.

The entire Spirit Communication Technique did not have any distinct stages of success, instead it was like other techniques: the more effort one put into training, the better one could control and communicate with ghosts and other spirits.

After 7-8 days, Liu Ming was able to understand the entire technique and could recite the incantation word for word.

In the following months, Liu Ming bitterly cultivated the Dark Bone Technique while he also trained the Spirit Communication Technique. When he finally felt that he grasped the basics of the technique, he got onto his cloud and left his dwelling, heading straight for the Barbarian Ghost Sect's main peak.

Before deciding to enter the Ghost Hell Region, Liu Ming naturally wanted to test his Spirit Communication Technique proficiency first. Otherwise, if he had incorrectly understood the technique and was unable to use it correctly when needed, wouldn't it be the same as wasting 100 Contribution Points?

The Barbarian Ghost Sect had an area prepared with imprisoned low level ghosts and demons and was meant for Sect disciples to test techniques and train for combat.

Half a day later, Liu Ming flew out of a large grey hall on the main peak; his face was full of satisfaction.

He had used three Contribution Points and been able to subjugate and communicate with three different ghosts. His training of the Spirit Communication Technique clearly had no issues.

Even if it was like this, however, Liu Ming still did not plan to immediately enter the Ghost Hell Region.

After all, this Ghost Hell Region was not any sort of a benevolent area. Although there were a hefty amount of Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples who had used the teleportation formation, most of them did not stay very long in the area. Additionally, there were many cases of a disciple coming across an extremely powerful ghost and getting swallowed by these powerful ghosts instead of being able to subdue them.

Liu Ming naturally had no desire to become a ghost's snack.

Thus, he decided to fly first to a small ravine affiliated with the Heaven's Secret Faction.

In the span of time it takes to have a cup of tea, Liu Ming arrived underneath an abnormally smooth cliff within the ravine. Not far in front of him were two large brass knockers that lay on an enormous scarlet door. It seemed as if the door was imbedded directly into the smooth rock wall.

Although the large large door was shut tightly, from time to time sounds of construction would escape from inside.

Liu Ming's eyes flashed and he walked towards the door with large strides

.

Lifting his hand, he grabbed one of the brass knockers on the door and beat it twice.

"Dang, dang" After two resonating knocks, the sounds of construction from inside came to a sudden stop.

"Would you like something?"

After a little while, the large door was opened and out walked an

abnormally tall giant; he coldly looked at Liu Ming as he barely opened his mouth.

This large man's hair was a coarse brown color giving people an oppressing feeling of facing a ferocious monster. Moreover, behind the man was a corridor that permeated a dry heat. One could vaguely make out a wall full of various weapons in the large hall beyond the corridor and in this hall, there was an incessantly flashing red light.

"I was introduced by Senior Li Zong, and I would like a small glyph crossbow of high quality with a few customised glyph arrows that can restrain ghosts." Liu Ming said in a calm manner after he finished looking beyond the large man.

"A small glyph crossbow and 13 Shooting Sun Arrows comes to a total of 180 Spirit Stones!" The large man's expression slightly changed before sizing up Liu Ming and offering his price.

Liu Ming had already expected such a price and without saying another word took a bulging leather bag from his waist. He then threw it at the large man.

Once the large man received the leather bag, he immediately opened it up and inspected it before nodding his head and turning around. He then retreated and shut the door.

Liu Ming was not surprised at all and calmly waited outside the door.

In a little while, the large door was opened again and the man appeared with a animal skin package.

"Everything is in here; take a look!" The large man gave the package to Liu Ming and stood there waiting with his arms crossed.

Liu Ming opened the bag and exposed a half foot long azure colored glyph crossbow. At its side laid 13 scarlet crossbow arrows that were similar in length.

"When I forged this glyph crossbow, I embedded some wind attributed copper into it. If you can install a Wind Attributed Spirit Stone into the crossbow then it will be able to shoot arrows further and faster. As for

the 13 Shooting Sun Arrows, I can guarantee that half of them are effective. After all, these items were made out of pure interest and are not made by a specialized Blacksmith. Otherwise, they wouldn't be this cheap even if we were in the same sect." The large man pointed at an ordinary notch in the glyph crossbow as he spoke indifferently.

"It is already enough if only half are effective. However, Wind Attributed Spirit Stone are not easy to find and Senior probably has extras. I am willing to pay a high price to purchase one." Liu Ming said to the large man as he grabbed the glyph crossbow and tested it out slightly before nodding his head.

"I only have one Wind Attributed Spirit Stone I left and the Yuan Li within it has already been half used up. If Junior is really willing, then it will only be 30 Spirit Stones." After a brief hesitation, the large man finally spoke.

As a cultivator, Liu Ming often made transactions with Spirit Stones. Normally these spirit stones were attributeless and made of pure Yuan Li. However, there were some spirit stones that could gain an attribute through luck while in the process of condensing. Thus they would transform into an attributed Spirit Stone.

These attributed Spirit Stones had unique uses and compared to normal Spirit Stones, they were much rarer. In addition, for some that did not fall under any of the five common attributes, their price would be exponentially higher than normal Spirit Stones.

These attributed Spirit Stones were also like regular Spirit Stones in that they had levels as well.

To Liu Ming and the large man whom were both Spirit Apostles, however, the stones which they were talking about were low grade spirit stones.

Liu Ming was fully aware of this and once the large man finished speaking, he did not hesitate to take out 30 Spirit Stones from his bag and give it to the other party.

The large man took out a small and dirty bag from his sleeve and gave it



to Liu Ming in return.

Liu Ming fished out a flashing green crystal the size of a thumb in the bag. Seeing the luster of the stone, a satisfied expression appeared on Liu Ming's face and immediately afterwards, he said goodbye to the large man.

Subsequently, Liu Ming went to the Grey Market of the Sect once again. He collected a few worn and old Glyphs meant for subduing ghosts from a disciple who was in the midst of learning to make Glyphs.

Although this disciple expressed with confidence that these glyphs were effective, based on the price of these glyphs, Liu Ming did not have large expectations. Instead he tentatively bought them and was only slightly hopeful that they would be useful.

In addition, Liu Ming also bought Black Dog Powder, Sky Sunflower Blood and a few other objects that could scare ghosts away. Finally, he bought more than ten Fasting Pills before returning to his dwelling and cultivating to get him into peak shape.

TL: It's like garlic to vampires

Three days later, Liu Ming appeared in a secret hall in the Barbarian Ghost Sect. He then waited in the empty large hall with his hands together. It seemed as if he was waiting for someone.

After a while, sounds of footsteps came from outside the temple. A male and a female then entered.

When Liu Ming instinctively raised his head to look and what he saw made him slightly startled.

The male and female were about the same age as Liu Ming and the handsome male youth was surprisingly the Thunder Spirit Pulsed Lei Zhen who entered the Sect with him.

As for the young girl beside him who seemed gentle and delicate, she seemed very familiar. She had most likely entered Heaven's Secret Faction as a disciple with Lei Zhen.

Lei Zhen paused when he saw that there was already someone inside the hall but after looking at Liu Ming's face twice, an expression of confusion flashed on his face. It seemed he was not able to discern who Liu Ming was.

This was to be expected.

The last time Liu Ming saw him was over a year ago. Also, Liu Ming had recently used the Marrow Washing Spirit Liquid to undergo large changes in his body shape and thus, the opposite party was unable to recognize him.

Lei Zhen's face was full of arrogance and did not greet Liu Ming. He spoke two sentences to the young woman beside him and they waited in a corner of the hall together.

Some time later, footsteps sounded once again from outside the hall. Shockingly, another two people entered.

The person in front was a beautiful woman whose face was full of anger. In contrast to her full head of white hair, she had an extremely beautiful face like a young girl.

Behind the older woman was a quiet looking young girl wearing cyan clothes.

# Chapter 56: Elder Ghost

“Jia Lan!”

Once Lei Zhen saw the girl’s face, he immediately let out a surprised shout.

“Junior Lei?” The cyan clothed young lady saw Lei Zhen and proceeded to speak indifferently. However, when her eyes fell on Liu Ming a flash of astonishment arose.

“Junior Lei? You are Senior Lei’s nephew?” Once the beautiful woman in front heard this, her eyes swept across the youngster like a knife as she coldly asked a question.

“Greetings Martial Aunt Bing!” After hearing the remark, Lei Zhen looked at the cyan clothed girl once more before hastily bowing to the Martial Aunt.

The small girl to his side also bowed in a flurry.

“Stand up. My relationship with Senior Lei is quite good so you do not need to be so polite.” The beautiful woman’s expression slightly relaxed as she raised her hands to allow the two of them to stand. Her eyes then involuntarily fell on Liu Ming.

“Disciple Bai Cong Tian of Nine Infants Mountain greets Martail Aunt Bing!” Although Liu Ming was unsure of who this beautiful woman was, he could only summon his courage and slowly bow.

“Nine Infants Mountain!” The beautiful woman nonchalantly nodded her head and without seeming to care about it and brought Jia Lan to a corner of the large hall. Soon after, she also stood still, waiting in her spot without moving.

Due to the beautiful woman present, Lei Zhen and the small girl naturally did not casually converse.

For a while, the entire large hall was extremely quiet.

This time only took the time it takes to have a cup of tea before the one

of the side doors to the large hall was opened. From this doors walked in a black robed man who seemed to be around forty years old. He had a massive aquiline nose and his features were rather gloomy.

“Sister Bing, what are you doing here?” The black robed man saw the beautiful woman in the large hall and was immediately startled.

“Senior Li, why can this younger sister not come here? This time I am going to bring Jia Lan into the Ghost Hell Region to accomplish a few things.” The beautiful woman calmly said while exuding familiarity with the black clothed man.

“So it was like this. However, Junior should be well aware that the Contribution Points required to transport a Spirit Apostle and a Spirit Master are completely different.” Once the black robed man heard this, his expression became very serious.

“Of course I am aware of this so before coming here I collected enough contribution points. It should be enough to enter once.” The beautiful woman was indifferent as she replied.

“If Junior is willing to spend contribution points like this, then there is no problem.” The black clothed man’s face relaxed.

The beautiful woman faintly smiled and did not say anything else.

At this time, the black clothed man’s eyes fell on Liu Ming and the others and after glancing over them he said:

“Since there are another three people here, it should be enough for a teleportation. All of you come over here.”

After speaking, he ignored the three Spirit Apostles and took out a sinister looking ghost head iron medallion from his sleeve. He then walked towards one of the tall walls in the large hall without regard for the Spirit Apostles.

The beautiful woman leisurely took Jia Lan over there.

Lei Zhen, Liu Ming and the others naturally followed.

The black robed man’s arm moved; he waved the iron medallion

towards the nearby wall. A black light shot out from the medallion and entered the wall before disappearing with a flash.

A second later the wall became indistinct, and a dazzling white light door suddenly appeared on the wall.

Without the slightest hesitation, the black man walked into it with large strides.

The rest of them naturally followed him through the light door.

Liu Ming saw the white light exploded in front of him as he entered the door, and suddenly he appeared in a small secret room.

The light from the portal door reflected off the metallic sheen of all four walls. On closer inspection it could be seen that many profound and beautiful Spirit Marks were engraved on the walls. The entire room radiated an unspeakably mysterious feeling.

In the middle of the secret room laid a 3 meter long silver formation. At the edge of the formation were a special notches meant for Spirit Stones.

Once the black robed man withdrew the iron medallion, the light door behind him disappeared in a flash and a faintly golden short rod appeared in his hand instead

When everyone else saw this, they passed over their name plates one after the other and paid their Contribution Points.

The black robed man put away the golden rod after collecting all the Contribution Points and took out a few crystals the size of a thumb. He then put them in the notches at the edge of the formation.

TL: No idea why the author starts using crystals instead of Spirit Stones. They are the same thing tho.

These crystals were completely different from any that Liu Ming had seen before. They unexpectedly emitted a faint black light like small black stars.

When the cyan robed young girl saw these crystals, her expression changed.

“These are space attributed crystals and are not Spirit Stone of the normal five attributes. Thus they are extremely rare items. Or else, just transporting you guys to the Ghost Hell Region would not have cost so many contribution points. Normally three to four crystals would be enough to transport you but with me included, the cost is now more than ten times the usual.” The beautiful woman seemed to be able to discern her disciple’s curiosity and indifferently resolved it in a few sentences.

After hearing this, not only did the cyan clothed young girl nod her head but Liu Ming and the others also came to a sudden realization.

Although they had heard of space attributed crystals before, this was the first time they had actually seen these items.

Liu Ming further examined these items closely as if he was trying to engrave them into his mind.

The black robed man acted as the beautiful woman had said; he placed over 30 space attributed crystals around the formation in one go. Then he stopped, turned around and said in a solemn voice:

“Okay, you can now enter the formation. Although you probably know about the dangers of the Ghost Hell Region, I still have to warn you. That area is a genuinely ghost area with lots of Miasma. No matter how high one’s cultivation is, he or she can stay there for at most one month. If one were to surpass this time, his or her body and spirit would be assimilated by the Miasma. There would be a very high probability of becoming a ghost. Thus you must return to the teleportation formation within a month. Any later and you must bear the consequences on your own.

After saying this, the black robed man formed a sign with his hand above the formation.

A buzzing sound rang in the air and the entire formation started to radiate a multicolored light.

The beautiful woman, Liu Ming and the others naturally did not hesitate to successively stand on the colorful formation.

A violent fluctuation arose again and the beautiful woman, Liu Ming

and the others flashed and disappeared.

The black robed man let out a soft breath of air and sat down cross-legged nearby. He calmly closed his eyes and started to meditate.

.....

Liu Ming felt a fierce wave of dizziness before finally opening his eyes.

Astonishingly, the beautiful woman and company were standing in a different secret room. Below them was another similar looking golden formation,

Moreover, the surrounding walls were made of an unknown black rock and there was half closed stone door. Besides them, there was no one else in the room.

“Let’s go!” The beautiful woman said indifferently before bringing the cyan clothed young girl outside of the formation. She then pushed open the door and they left.

Lei Zhen and the young girl looked at each other and also proceeded to leave.

Within a few moments only Liu Ming was left.

Liu Ming lightly sucked in a breath of air and felt that the nearby Yuan Li was a lot more sparse than the Barbarian Ghost Sect. Further, there was an indiscernible cold and negative energy mixed within the air. Even breathing would even make the body feel strained.

Liu Ming shook his head and walked out of the stone doorway.

Outside the room was an extremely large plaza.

The ground of the plaza was made of the same black stone and on the edge of the plaza stood tall bronze columns. The outside beyond the plaza was enveloped by an abnormally thick layer of milky white light.

In the center of the plaza lay thirty to forty black stone rooms.

In between each stone room were approximately ten Ghost Barbarian Sect disciple assembled together and chatting with each other.

“Hey, is this your first time in Ghost Hell Region?”

As Liu Ming observed his surroundings, he suddenly heard a shrill voice from behind him.

Liu Ming jumped with fright and quickly turned his body. He discovered a yellow leather gowned elder with green hair sitting next to the stone door.

In the elder’s hand was an unremarkable silver disk adorned with scarlet red arrows on one side. More importantly, Liu Ming had failed to sense the elder despite him being so close.

“Recently I just saw that girl Bing here. Ze Ze. Since that girl has become a Spirit Master, this is her first time coming here; this is very rare.” The old man said.

“Senior is...”

The old man had lowered his head so Liu Ming could not see his face but after hearing his tone of voice, Liu Ming didn’t neglect his manners as he asked his question.

“You can call me Elder Ghost. I am the person in charge of the formation that sends you back to the sect.” The old man leisurely replied before finally raising his head.

When Liu Ming saw the Elder’s face, even with his bold courage, his heart still froze.

The Elder looked no different from a regular old man except for his eye sockets which were empty without eyes. Instead there were two pea sized green flames that faintly flickered in the place of the eyes.

“Junior greets Elder Ghost!” Once Liu Ming’s thoughts had passed, he forcefully suppressed his fear and once again spoke with courtesy.

“Not bad! Amongst the youngsters who see me for the first one, you can be considered one of the brave ones. Since this is the case, I have something for you to do. If you finish it, there will naturally be benefits.” Elder Gui said as the green flames flashed.



“I do not know the task, but my Fa Li is insignificant and thus may not prove to be very beneficial.” Liu Ming hesitated slightly after hearing this.

“Hehe, its only a trivial matter and absolutely does not require a lot of Fa Li. I have a Miasma Compass here that can accurately show a ghost’s location to an extent of a thousand feet. If you are able to find some Ghost Faced Fish in a Miasma River for me then I will give you this compass.” Elder Gui laughed as he spoke. He then showed the silver compass to Liu Ming.

“It can show a ghost’s location? Are you not joking!” Once Liu Ming heard this, his heart stirred.

“With my status do you think I would trick you? One and a half kilometers in that direction is a Miasma River; quickly go and come back.” Elder Gui seemed a bit impatient.

“Since it is only 1.5 kilometers, I will attempt to finish the task.” Liu Ming was still a bit perplexed, but after hearing the distance and seeing the compass in the Elder’s hands, he ultimately agreed.

# Chapter 57: Ghost Hell Region

Liu Ming formed a sign with his hand and proceeded to jump on his cloud and fly in the direction Elder Ghost pointed to.

Once Liu Ming exited the milky white light screen, he entered a desolate area shrouded in black mist. The entire sky was covered densely in a black cloud with not a single hint of sunlight which gave people a stifling feeling.

Liu Ming started to use his Dark Bone Method and instantly felt threads cold Miasma energy rapidly rush into his body. Although this made his body feel very uncomfortable, the Fa Li in his Spirit Sea seemed to immediately pulsate.

Liu Ming sighed.

This Ghost Hell Region really was just like people said; cultivating the Ghost Spirit Method and other Miasma Methods would be largely accelerated, but the body would not be able to withstand the devouring Miasma energy.

Thus he could only abandon the idea of using Miasma energy to help cultivate his Fa Li.

After traveling 1.5 kilometers, Liu Ming had yet to come across any ghosts and finally saw the Miasma River which Elder Ghost had pointed to.

However, once he flew closer, he couldn't help but bitterly smile.

The Miasma River in front of him, rather than being a river, was more like a large stream.

It wasn't any wider than 10 feet, and the river water was not transparent at all. Instead it was composed of an incredibly mud like yellow color. Furthermore, on top of the river was a white fog which continued to spiral on top of the river and gave off a strange feeling.

Liu Ming got off his cloud on top of a black rock that was close to the Miasma River. Before he could think about how to catch a Ghost Faced

Fish, a “pu” sound rang in the air and a white object jumped out of the water.

Startled, Liu Ming reflexively shook his sleeve, and a large black rope shot out. After an indistinct movement, it furiously whipped at the object jumping out at him.

The white object let out a peculiar cry after being hit, but could only flop on the ground.

Liu Ming finally had time to look at the object he had just hit.

Astonishingly, it was an extremely unusual fish-like creature that was approximately half a foot long. The lower half of its body was exactly like a black carp, but the upper half was a small and hairy cyan ghost head. Further, there were two black claws on its abdomen.

At the moment the fish’s mouth was open and faintly, one could make out two rows of sharp and fragmented teeth. It looked exceptionally frightening.

“It seems like this thing is the Ghost Faced Fish.” Once he recovered from his shock, Liu Ming laughed.

The Soul Shackling Chains fiercely whipped at the fish again, smashing viciously on its ghost head.

The Ghost Faced Fish let out a peculiar shrill cry once again before fainting on the spot.

Liu Ming then took out a net fish basket and used the Soul Shackling Chains to put the Ghost Faced Fish in the basket.

Soon after, he walked off the stone and donned an air of cautiousness as he crept closer to the Miasma River.

This time, nothing jumped out of the river.

However, Liu Ming’s brows furrowed, and he once again sent out the Soul Shackling Chain into the shallow depths of the Miasma River before quickly retracting it.

The front end of the Soul Shackling Chain astonishingly was covered by

a layer of frost!

Liu Ming sucked in a breath of cold air!

Unexpectedly, this Miasma River was incomparably cold.

Thus, Liu Ming did not dare stand too close to the Miasma River and instead held a fair distance from the stream as he followed the stream.

In the end, a Ghost Faced Fish would jump out of the water every short distance. Each fish was about a foot long to a couple of inches short.

Liu Ming naturally did not hesitate to use his Soul Shackling Chain to knock them out and put them into the fish basket. Not even an hour had past and he had already gathered 78 Ghost Faced Fish to fill the fish basket to the brim.

He then immediately jumped on his cloud and flew back.

.....

“Not bad, these are the Ghost Faced Fish that I need. This Miasma Compass now belongs to you.” Once Elder Ghost saw Liu Ming descend from the sky with the basket full of Ghost Faced Fish, he spoke exultingly and proceeded to toss the silver compass to Liu Ming.

Although Liu Ming was somewhat taken aback, once he received the silver compass he gave the fish basket in his hands to the other party.

A “pu” sound rang out.

The originally seated Elder Ghost unexpectedly stood up, but both of his legs were not human legs. Instead an immense pair of shiny, jet-black eagle legs appeared, and he then grabbed the largest fish with them. The fish immediately entered his mouth and a crisp sound of digestion followed.

“Not bad, the taste of this Ghost Faced Fish is still memorably delicious.” Elder Ghost chewed while critiquing with an enraptured expression.

Although Lei Ming had the Miasma Compass in his hands, he couldn’t help but be dumbstruck.

“Haha, Junior Bai, it seems that you have been duped into catching Ghost Face Fish.” From within a nearby stone room walked out a youth. Once he realized Liu Ming’s circumstance, he couldn’t help but laugh.

“Huh; it’s Senior Du. Would Senior mind elaborating on the dupe that you mentioned earlier?” Liu Ming turned his head towards Disciple Du and was slightly taken aback.

The youth who just talked was wearing a blue robe and had a long and narrow curved blade on his back. His features were grim and callous and he was the Du Hai from Baleful Yin Faction.

Ever since that time, after Liu Ming and the others offended Ou Yang Xin, their relationship improved greatly. Further, they even joined hands to complete a few contribution points missions; each time, they were left extremely satisfied.

Thus Liu Ming, Du Hai, and the others were quite close.

“This Elder Ghost is actually the ghost that Six Yin Master subdued in his time. Apart from proficiency in some hallucination methods, it can make its upper body exactly like us humans even though it really is not a human, it has no actual skill. Therefore Six Yin Master sealed him nearby the teleportation formation and made him take charge of safeguarding the formation and the disciples. After all, the Miasma here is too thick, so only ghosts can stay here for an extended period. Regarding his Miasma Compass, it really is just a simple totem; every disciple who comes here can get one for free. However, because this Elder Ghost likes to eat the Ghost Faced Fish in Miasma Rivers, he frequently masquerades the compass as a gift and makes new disciples catch food for him. In reality, even if you did not go catch him Ghost Faced Fish, he would still have to give the compass to you.” Du Hai faintly laughed as he spoke.

“I see!” Liu Ming was somewhat dumbstruck and after his gaze swept across Elder Ghost, he found that there was a light silver chain wrapped around an eagle leg which was attached to the stone wall.

At this moment, Elder Ghost seemed to turn a blind eye to Liu Ming and Du Hai’s conversation as he incessantly devoured one fish ravenously

after the other.

This made Liu Ming somewhat moved.

“That’s right, Junior Bai, since you don’t even know about this, did you come here by yourself?” Du Hai’s smile disappeared and his brows furrowed as he asked.

“Junior really did plan on travelling by himself. Don’t tell me that Senior is here to also catch ghosts?” Liu Ming calmly replied.

“I did not spend time on the Spirit Communication Techniques so I cannot catch any ghosts. However, I was planning on searching for a few native Spirit Plants with Xian Yun to bring back.” Du Hai shook his head and replied.

“Senior Mu really did come. Where is she now?” Liu Ming was quite surprised but after a brief glance around he was unable to find her familiar figure.

“Xian Yun is renting a Spirit Room to rest; I can take you to see her. Junior shouldn’t rush to leave this area now. This Ghost Hell Region is rather dangerous and Junior should listen to our advice before setting out.” Du Hai zealously said.

“Since Senior believes I should, I will naturally obey.” After pondering a while, Liu Ming nodded his head in affirmation.

When Du Hai saw this, he excitedly brought Liu Ming to a stone room.

A little while later, Du Hai knocked on the door and from within walked out the young and beautiful Mu Xianyun.

Once she saw Liu Ming, she was slightly dumbstruck and after evaluating Liu Ming again, she asked in an astonished voice:

“Why are you here, Junior Bai? Could it be that you have already advanced to a Middle Spirit Apostle? And in addition you have cultivated the Spirit Communication Technique to a proficient level! Junior has undergone large changes since the last time we met.”

According to ordinary disciple cultivation speeds, Liu Ming already

advancing to a Middle Stage Spirit Apostle was quite shocking. Comparatively, the change to his external appearance after washing his marrows was something that many people accepted quickly.

After all, Barbarian Ghost Sect had many cultivation methods that let one's appearance completely change.

"I had just recently received a bit of opportunity and luckily broke into the Middle Stage of a Spirit Apostle. Otherwise, I would not be in such urgent need of a compatible Spirit Ghost and instead would be focused on increasing my strength." Liu Ming was naturally modest as he spoke.

"Tsk tsk. No matter what method, although a Three Spiritual Pulsed disciple becoming a Middle Staged Spirit Apostle isn't unheard of, there are not too many cases. Happening in such a short time is even more rare. It seems that Senior Du and I must show respect for Junior Bai's unbelievable performance." Mu Xianyun deeply looked at Liu Ming before sweetly smiling.

"Senior must be joking! Senior Mu and Senior Du seem to have been to the Ghost Hell Region before and thus should be very familiar. Perhaps you could give some advice to me." Liu Ming said with a solemn expression.

"Since Junior is so anxious, we will discuss information regarding this area first. I know that Junior perhaps may have heard some things about this area before, but I can guarantee that the Ghost Hell Region's actual peril is much higher than you could possibly imagine. I have even seen seven or eight Sect Disciples lose their lives here. It's not like what they say outside where only a few disciples die." Mu Xianyun's jade features froze over.

"That's right, although the Sect will have ten to twenty of its disciples in the Ghost Hell Region standing guard, every new disciple that enters has a large chance of not returning. Most of these people are eaten by a terrifying ghost or perish in the Two Large Calamity Areas.

"Two Large Calamity Areas?" When Liu Ming heard this phrase, he was a bit astounded. After hearing the rest, he was further stupefied.

# Chapter 58: Search

“That’s right, they are the Soul Clouds and Ghost Hornet respectively. If one were to encounter either of Ghost Hell Region’s calamities, even us elder disciples would perish if we were not careful. Soul Cloud’s calamity is especially dangerous. Since there are no signs of it breaking out, it is impossible to avoid.” Mu Xianyun explained.

“Could Senior elaborate a little?” When Liu Ming noticed their grave expressions, he couldn’t help but shiver in fear.

“This so called Soul Cloud is caused by a low leveled ghost called “Corpse Soul” in the Ghost Hell Region. This ghost born from Miasma but doesn’t even have any strength so it’s movement is very slow like a corpse. The only thing that prevents people from provoking it is that once this ghost dies, its body dissipates into an extremely poisonous cloud that enshrouds several meters long. Furthermore, this Corpse Soul’s life expectancy is exceptionally short and if it is unable to advance into a higher level ghost, it will normally only live a few years. Additionally, it likes to travel in groups. Thus when Corpse Souls are at the end of their lives, they will transform into a terrifying poison cloud that travels with the wind until it disappears while extirpating any living thing it comes across. Thus they are called Soul Clouds. The Ghost Hornet calamity is brought about by a type ghost that has the characteristics of hornets. This Ghost Hornet Colony likes to migrate from place to place every so often. They often move in tens of thousands and are unparalleled in power. Thankfully, their migration follows a pattern and people can avoid it if careful. Aside from Soul Cloud and and Ghost Hornet, the Ghost Hell Region also has very dreadful and dangerous areas so Junior must be more prudent. For instance, if Junior were to come across a marshy area, you would have to be inordinately careful of middle stage ghosts called “Rotten Ghosts”. They...” Mu Xianyun explained.

Liu Ming naturally was rapt with attention as he listened.

Mu Xianyun’s talk lasted the time it takes to drink a cup of tea before she finally closed her mouth.



“Many thanks for Senior’s advice. Junior certainly did not know about these perilous areas in Ghost Hell Region and it seems I must be more careful.” After speaking, Liu Ming cupped his hands and expressed his thanks.

“Junior Bai shouldn’t be too worried. Although this Ghost Hell Region is immensely dangerous, as long as you don’t leave the area set up by our sect’s ancestor, you should be completely safe. After all, ghosts that were too strong have already been eradicated by the sect’s elders. Since Junior has just learned the Spirit Communication Technique, you cannot subdue any powerful ghosts. Within 50 kilometers from here, you should be able to find a suitable target! Even if you do not succeed the first time, Junior can come back another time and fulfill your goal.” Mu Xianyun amorous glance rippled as she spoke.

“I hope I can do that. One other thing: since Senior Mu and Du are not here to spiritually communicate with a ghost, is there anything that disciple can help with?” Liu Ming bitterly laughed and asked a question.

“Thank you for your good intentions Junior Bai. The two of us have stayed here for the majority of the month and already have a general idea of what we need so there is no need to trouble Junior.” Mu Xianyun laughed as she replied.

In that case, Junior wishes the two of you good luck. I will take leave now and not take up any more of your time. “ Liu Ming nodded and took his leave.

“One more thing; if Junior Bai still has Spirit Stones, you can go to Elder Gui and purchase a map of the surrounding area and a specialized record that describes the Ghost Hell Region’s unique ghost. If you have these two items, I believe that Junior will find things much more convenient.” Du Hai reminded.

Once Liu Ming hear this, he was overjoyed and expressed his thanks again before exiting the stone room.

“Having given this information to Junior Bai, we have returned the favor from before.” When Liu Ming exited the room, Du Hai turned his head to

the young woman and spoke.

“That’s right. The information that we gave him was collected from our life and death experiences. How could we nonchalantly tell someone? It’s a pity that the information was just enough to counteract the favor and not enough to make him owe us something. It would be better if it weighed more than his favor.” Mu Xianyun muttered.

“Ah? Does Xianyun think highly of Junior Bai?” When Du Hai heard this, he betrayed a slightly astonished expression.

“It’s not as simple as thinking highly of Junior Bai. If I wrote a letter to my elder brother and betrothed Ming Zhu to Junior Bai, what would you think of this?” Mu Xianyun suddenly said.

“What?! You want to espouse younger sister Ming Zhu to Junior Bai? There is not a high probability of this occurring. To the best of my knowledge, Ming Zhu has an extremely favorable impression of the youth who possesses a Earth Spiritual Pulse. There is almost no prospect of your elder brother agreeing to this.” Du Hai said in a fright.

“Hmph! My elder brother is fooled by that Gao Chong who possesses a Earth Spiritual Pulse and he still wants to recruit him into the family through marriage. With Gao Chong’s aptitude, there will inevitably be many women Spirit apostles who wish to become his wife. Why would he want to marry a outer-sect disciple who doesn’t even have a Spirit Pulse? To be frank, Ming Zhu probably does not even have a chance of becoming his concubine! The reason why he is still interacting with Ming Zhu is because he is still young and can be considered pure. Furthermore, with the strict restriction of Sect Leader, there is no way he has had many opportunities to interact with other female disciples. As for Ming Zhu’s current occasional intercommunication with that youth, this was probably meticulously planned by Sect Leader. Don’t forget what kind of Cultivation Method that kid is using!” Mu Xianyun said with a gloomy face.

“What? Don’t tell me Great Martial Uncle wants to have Ming Zhu become...” Du Hai’s expression greatly changed and he involuntarily cried

out.

TL: Great Martial Uncle = Martail Uncle of one's teacher

“Correct! I’m afraid that Sect guy wants to use Ming Zhu as that kid’s Human Cauldron in order to train his emotions.” Mu Xianyun didn’t even use the word “leader” as she coldly spoke.

Listening to you, if it is really like this, Ming Zhu being betrothed to Junior Bai would not be a bad idea. Although Junior Bai is also a Middle Spirit Apostle, he only has a three spirit pulse so the chance of advancing into ensuing stages is not that high. Moreover, with your Mu family’s influence, I’m sure that the Bai Clan will be jubilant with this decision. However, Ming Zhu will not be easily convinced.” Du Hai let out a sigh, but was quite endorsing of this suggestion.

“Ming Zhu is still small so she naturally will not understand the magnitude of this. I will find an opportunity to persuade her but we do not need to delay telling Bai Clan of this event. I will let my elder brother immediately proceed with this. After all, Ming Zhu did not become a Spirit Apostle and her marriage affair will be decided by her family.” Mu Xian Yun slowly said.

“This is the only way to proceed. But if we really do follow through, I’m afraid that Ming Zhu will hate you the rest of your life.” Du Hai said as he sighed.

“Even if that does happen, I must continue like this otherwise she will perish and become a Human Cauldron that will not be able to live or die.” Mu Xianyun bit her teeth and spoke.

This time, Du Hai lightly walked forward and held onto Mu Xianyun’s delicate hand. He didn’t say anything.

Mu Xianyun let out a soft sigh and laid her head on Du Hai’s shoulder. She also did not say anything.

The two of them became increasingly reticent as time passed, but there was an indescribably flippant atmosphere that manifested.

.....

Liu Ming's hands were clusped around a coarse animal hide map and he was slowly flying forward three to four hundred feet off the ground.

The current him had already travelled over tens of kilometers away from the plaza and was regularly cautiously probing his surroundings.

Although Mu Xian Yun said that the area within 100 kilometers was not too dangerous, with Liu Ming's disposition he naturally would not carelessly believe this.

In route, besides from a few low leveled ghost lizards, he did not discover any other ghosts.

Liu Ming did not find this too strange.

After all, throughout the past thousand years, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Disciples had thoroughly combed out the ghost in this nearby area countless times. If Liu Ming were to easily find a suitable Spirit Ghost in this area, it would be considered extremely strange.

Liu Ming flew 30 to 40 kilometers in a breath before resting in front of a dwarf scarlet forest.

Although the area of this Miasma Maple Forest was not big, its trees were the favorite meal of a low leveled spirit ghost called "Double Boned Ox". Despite having been scoured by countless people before, if one's luck was good enough, he or she could reap in rewards here.

Liu Ming rode on his cloud above the red forest for a few loops before dejectedly leaving.

His next target was a Yin Pond 10 kilometers away. That area harbored a low level Corpse Crocodile.

Two hours later, however, he irritably left the black pond that with enshrouded with grey mist and flew in a different direction.

Like this, within the next four days, Liu Ming used the map to examine every area within a 100 kilometers that had a chance of harboring a Spirit Ghost. In the end he did not find anything.

Today, Liu Ming stood on top of a small hill and looked at the

surrounding desolate holes that once housed Ghosts but were now just pits into the ground. He couldn't help but furrow his eyebrows.

He didn't realize that it was this difficult to find a suitable low level Ghost. After all, there was no point in using Ghost Lizards that weren't even as strong as an ordinary beasts as his Spirit Ghost.

However, this was the last area on the map within a 100 kilometers where a Ghost could potentially reside. If he still wanted to follow the map to search, he would have to travel a farther distance.

With this thought in mind, Liu Ming took out the map and his eyes once again swept over it.

On this animal hide map, the closer the area was to the teleportation formation, the more detailed they were. The farther away, the more crude they were. After a distance of 1000 kilometers, the map was entirely blank.

"It seems that I must bear the rise or otherwise, I will have wasted 100 Contribution Points." Liu Ming muttered as he put the map away.

This was a loss he could not afford!

Even if he was able to scrape together Contribution Points for a subsequent trip, there was no guarantee that he would succeed.

# Chapter 59: Ghost Bees and the Black Desert

Once Liu Ming made up his mind, he immediately put away the map and continued to fly onwards.

Seven days later, within a peculiar black forest, Liu Ming stood motionless underneath a gigantic tree that was dozens of meters tall. He squinted his eyes and gazed at three monkey-like green furred Ghosts in the tree.

Among the three Ghosts, one was big and the other two were small; the two small ones were only a foot tall and their green fur was of a lighter shade. The larger one was four feet tall and was covered in a forest green fur. Furthermore, on his head was a small green horn. He would often bare his fangs at Liu Ming and threateningly growl.

It was a low leveled Ghost called “Rotten Horn Monkey”

A grown Rotten Horn Monkey was extremely fast and nimble. Its strength was not small, and it was able to spit corrosive gas. One would barely have to foster it in order for it to have a Warrior level strength, and thus it could be considered as a fairly good Spirit Ghost choice.

Liu Ming’s sleeve shook, and the Soul Shackling Chains shot out like a viper towards the Rotten Horn Monkey.

After a few odd cries, the two small Rotten Horn Monkeys promptly leapt towards the other trees in an attempt to flee. Only the larger one revealed an ominous glint and in a flash dodged the black rope. It spread its arms and transformed into a green blur as it leapt off the tree.

Its 10 jet black fingertips were as sharp as knives, and before they had reached Liu Ming a breath of corrosive gas appeared. However, Liu Ming did not dodge. Instead, he mumbled something and a moment later, a scarlet flame flew out of his hand with a “pu-chi” sound.

The torrid flame instantly expunged the corrosive gas and made the Rotten Horned Monkey feel a sense of extreme fear. A peculiar screech

rang out, and its tail that was several feet in length suddenly spun; the monkey unexpectedly shifted horizontally and avoided the ball of flame.

Yet at this time, the black rope swiftly reappeared, overcame the monkey's vulnerable defence, and firmly snagged it.

A "peng" sound resonated.

The Rotten Horned Monkey was not able to move and resolutely smashed to the ground in front of Liu Ming. Moreover, because of the erosion caused by the Soul Shackling Chain, the green hair on its body started to emit a cyan smoke. It couldn't help but let out cries of pain and anguish.

Liu Ming didn't say anything and raised his foot. He proceeded to tap the monkey's head with his foot.

"Hong!"

Under an excessive force, the majority of the Rotten Horn Monkey's head was immediately buried in the ground. Its two eyes rolled completely around as it passed out.

Liu Ming let out a soft sigh and grabbed the Rotten Horn Monkey. He held its shoulder and started to perform a technique.

Suddenly, a grey cloud appeared under Liu Ming's legs and he flew out of the forest towards a distant place.

An hour later, Liu Ming arrived at a cave that was quite far from the black forest and threw the Rotten Horn Monkey that was on his shoulder onto the ground.

The entrance to this cave was located under a large stone and was well hidden. The interior was also quite large with a couple dozen square yards.

When Liu Ming found it, the interior was completely empty. He did not know what type of powerful ghost had made and abandoned it.

Liu Ming had discovered the Rotten Horn Monkeys in the area one day ago but, instead of hunting them immediately, he initially sought a

hidden area in the vicinity before making his move today.

Liu Ming observed the Rotten Horn Monkey on the ground, and when he was sure it was unconscious, he retrieved a light black gourd from his sleeve. He then pulled the cork and poured a light yellow powder on the ground.

Afterwards, he walked around the monkey once to create a light yellow powder circle around it. Subsequently, he strode into the circle and sat down. Slowly, he closed his eyes and started to meditate.

After a while, Liu Ming opened his eyes once again and started to rapidly conjure a technique.

Many tendrils of black gas poured out from his body at an ever increasing rate.

Meanwhile, Liu Ming's cheeks and the exposed skin on his arms and neck started to reveal faint grey Spirit Markings. They quickly spread to every inch of his body.

“Pu!”

Liu Ming's arm moved and brought the Rotten Horned Monkey closer. His other hand prodded and stilled at its head.

From his mouth came a soft mutter, and the black gas on Liu Ming's body instantly transformed into a violent tentacle. The grey inscriptions on his body moved slightly and then impetuously rushed towards his hands on the monkey's head. They subsequently rushed and disappeared into the Rotten Horn Monkey's head.

The originally quiet and motionless Rotten Horn Monkey immediately woke up, revealing its extremely red eyes and started to incessantly struggle.

However, Liu Ming's two hands seemed to be made of steel and firmly grabbed onto the Ghost. At the same time, the rate at which the inscriptions rushed to his hand and into the monkey became quicker.

A short while later, the Rotten Horn Monkey started to vomit green spit



and its struggling instantly became much weaker.

When Liu Ming saw this, his face revealed delight and his incantation sped up once again.

In the next moment, however, black veins on both sides of the Rotten Horn Monkey's head abruptly appeared, expanded, and unexpectedly exploded.

A green liquid immediately spewed out in all directions.

Startled, the black gas on Liu Ming's body vigorously lashed out and blocked the liquid shooting at Liu Ming.

However, because of this pause, a ball of black gas managed to emerge from the Rotten Horn Monkey's newly headless corpse and speedily fled towards the exit of the cave.

Yet, once the black gas reached the boundary of light yellow powder, it seemed to collide with an invisible wall and recoiled back. It then perpetually threw itself at the invisible wall like a housefly, but was completely unable to step foot outside the encirclement

"Pu!"

A scarlet ball of flame rocketed forward, instantaneously engulfed the black gas, and completely erased it.

It was Liu Ming who had finally acted. Afterwards, he threw away the Rotten Horn Monkey's corpse gloomily.

"This is already the third time I have failed. I didn't realize that taming a low level Ghost was this challenging! It seems that the Ghosts that I experimented with in the sect had been used by countless people in the past and lacked even the slightest amount of viciousness. Therefore I was able to easily use the Spirit Communication Technique to subdue them. On the other hand, these Ghost Hell Region ghosts are extremely vicious and and difficult to tame." Liu Ming muttered to himself in a dejected voice.

No wonder!

Liu Ming had already risked travelling over five to six hundred kilometers from the base, but including the Rotten Horn Monkey in front of him, he had only seen three low level ghosts. When he tried to tame them, he had failed every time.

It seemed like he could only continue forward. Although he had travelled a long way from the base, the animal skin map still had a few low leveled ghost locations ahead of him. He may still have some chance of winning a Ghost.

Liu Ming could only think hopefully like this.

Thereupon he somewhat tidied up the cave, hopped on his cloud and then left.

Three days later, Liu Ming appeared in a desolate highland, flying at a low altitude.

Suddenly, a rumbling sound came from the sky behind him. At first the sound was only faint, but it gradually grew to be deafening.

Liu Ming's heart trembled, and he hurriedly looked behind him. What greeted him turned his face deathly white.

He saw that the grey sky had unexpectedly turned scarlet about a dozen kilometers away. The scarlet red "sky" then proceeded to slowly fly in his direction.

"Oh he\*!; I actually ran into a migrating Ghost Bee Swarm! But this isn't right; this path should not be near any migrating Ghost Bees.

Liu Ming involuntarily cried out, immediately abandoned all previous plans, and abruptly urged his cloud to fly to one side.

He remembered distinctly that although this Ghost Bee Swarm was terrifying, as long as one stood clear of its migration path, he or she would be able to preserve his or her life.

However, though he rapidly changed directions and flew a few kilometers in that direction, he found that the red sky was growing closer and closer. There seemed to be no chance of escaping its reach, and he

started to grieve silently in his heart.

The reason for this was because he had encountered an inordinately large Ghost Bee Swarm. A normal swarm of ten thousand wouldn't cover this much area.

Without any other ideas, Liu Ming could only grind his teeth and evoke his Lighten Technique. He then stopped feeding Fa Li to the gray cloud under him and fell from the sky. After landing, he leapt to his feet and frantically started running away from the red sky.

Although the Soaring Sky Technique was very convenient, its maximum speed was not very fast, and it naturally wasted more energy than travelling by foot.

Liu Ming frantically dashed with all his efforts, and his speed was even faster than his flying speed! In a few moments he had turned into a small black dot.

However, at this time, the scarlet sky behind him was now within his vicinity.

The so called scarlet sky was composed of thumb sized red Ghost bees. Their bodies were shriveled and almost flat, but their tails were an eerie white with large stingers that would cause anyone's heart to race.

.....

Three days later, Liu Ming was standing in an endless black desert. Looking at the omnipresent black sand, he couldn't help but bitterly smile.

Over the past two days he had used every method he could think of and finally escaped the clutches of the Ghost Bee Swarm, but in his befuddled state he had consequently stumbled into a strange and unknown desert.

This desert was clearly located over a thousand kilometers from the base and was not marked on the map. However, from the threads of cold air and the oppressive feeling, this area was extremely rich in Miasma. Thus there was a high probability of Ghosts living here. On the other hand, this place probably also contained obscure dangers.

After considering his options, Liu Ming still felt that he was in no rush to return. Instead, he would explore the desert to find a suitable ghost.

But before doing that, he needed to replenish his virtually exhausted Fa Li.

Consequently, Liu Ming found a small hole at the bottom of a sand dune and retrieved his black gourd. He sprinkled a little yellow powder in a circle and sat cross legged in the center.

One day later, his two eyes flashed brilliantly as they opened. The Fa Li in his body was close to being completely recovered.

Liu Ming did not hesitate and summoned the grey cloud. After jumping on, he withdrew his Miasma Compass and consciously flew in a direction.

A hundred kilometers away, a skeletal Ghost in the shape of a decomposing human slowly walked about, the meager flesh left on its carcass visibly rotten.

Suddenly, the sand under its feet split apart, and two gigantic dark black pincers instantaneously caught its small legs and abruptly pulled down. The human shaped ghost was immediately pulled under the dunes.

The surrounding sand surged and the human shaped Ghost disappeared without a trace.

# Chapter 60: White Bone Scorpion

Liu Ming was cautiously flew hundreds of feet above the black sand. He would often look at the silver compass in his hands.

The grey cloud suddenly jolted and he came to a stop. He subsequently lowered his head and examined the silver compass a few times before he suddenly read out a technique and thrust a hand downwards.

A red ball of fire immediately shot towards the ground below.

“Hong!” The flame flew down and a one foot deep sandbox appeared. Simultaneously, the partially destroyed skeleton of a ghost flew out.

Liu Ming lowered his head and looked at the skeleton for a while before finally recognizing its origin.

“It is unexpectedly the low leveled ghost, Corpse Crab. A mature Corpse Crab’s strength can be compared to that of a warrior level ghost and still, it was slaughtered. Could it be that there are even stronger ghosts here?”

Liu Ming muttered to himself while his face exuded a pleasantly surprised yet apprehensive expression.

He was pleased by the fact that there were low level ghosts here. But he was also alarmed by the possibility of a ghost with astonishing strength being in the vicinity. If he was not careful, he could possibly end up perishing like the Corpse Crab in front of him.

Liu Ming urged his cloud to circle the area for a while before continuing on his previous course. Except this time, he was even more cautious.

Half a day later, Liu Ming had flown over 10 kilometers, but inexplicably, besides the remains of the Corpse Crab, he had not found any other ghosts.

Faced with this situation, a shadow was cast across Liu Ming’s heart.

The only explanation was that there is a powerful ghost here. Otherwise, a low level ghost would mostly likely already have appeared in this large area.

Suddenly, the needle on his compass violently shook and wildly swiveled before pointing in a certain direction and started flashing incessantly.

Liu Ming's expression changed and his grey cloud stopped moving.

Liu Ming abruptly hit his chest with a hand and three black beams formed a black light shield in front of his body.

At the same time, the sand underneath him made a "whoosh" sound and a black streak shot out from the sand. Its speed was extremely fast, even though Liu Ming could vaguely make out its figure, he was surprisingly unable to evade it.

"Peng!"

The black streak smashed into the light shield, nearly smashing it into pieces!

The front end of this black streak was a sharp, jet black hook, only a few inches long. It also carried a distinct, abominable odor.

Liu Ming was unable to stand firm under the tremendous force and was knocked off his cloud. He was unable to maintain the Soaring Sky Technique and fell down into the sand.

Luckily, Liu Ming cultivated the Dark Bone Method and had previously used Marrow Washing Spirit Liquid, so the sturdiness of his body was not something an ordinary Spirit Apostles could compare with. A Barbarian Ghost Sect Disciple on the same level as him would mostly likely have been heavily injured just by that one blow.

"Pu!"

The sand underneath him suddenly rose up and flew at Liu Ming like it had a spirit of its own.

Although Liu Ming was still in the air and stunned by the large force, when he saw what was happening, his sleeve shook and a black rope shot out like lightning.

A smothered sound rang through the air.

Drawing help from the quick black rope to ricochet back, his body

shook as he, once again, was flung into the air.

At the same time, the nearby bundle of sand instantly ruptured, from within it a green, misty figure flew out. It skimmed by Liu Ming's body and proceeded to fall back into the sand on the other side of him.

If not for Liu Ming's quick thinking to launch himself, he would have been pounced on by the green ghost.

Liu Ming took advantage of the situation and quickly formed a one handed sign. A grey cloud condensed into a spiral under him as he once again performed the Soaring Sky technique. He flew up into the sky, and once he was at about three hundred feet above ground, he heaved a sigh of relief and then stared down below him.

Although the ghost within the green gas was extremely terrifying, it seemed as if it was unable to fly. This eased Liu Ming's fear slightly and he now had a slimmer of hope.

Otherwise, if the Ghost could fly, with this ghost's strength that it displayed at the beginning, Liu Ming would have immediately fled and not bothered to stay in this area.

Liu Ming finally made out the figure of the Ghost below him. Astonishingly, it was a three to four foot long flat monster. Its body was covered in light grey bones and its front end was made up of two shiny black gigantic pincers while its back end was a tall black hooked tail. On each side of its triangular white bone head was a flickering green flame that gave one an exceptionally ice cold feeling.

However, this ghost had a fist sized black hole on its side, with traces of black gas twiddling around the wound. The ghost seemed to have been injured.

"No way! This... this looks like a Warrior level White Bone Scorpion! That can't be right! It doesn't look quite the same as a White Bone Scorpion!" Liu Ming involuntarily cried out before attentively examining the ghost. He was unsure what to make of the ghost and exposed a brooding expression.

Liu Ming quickly retrieved a thick book of records from his bosom and quickly flipped through it. After flipping three pages, he came to a stop.

This page of the ancient text impressively depicted a vivid and lifelike picture of a scorpion-like ghost. The ghost in the drawing was also made up of bones, but its color was a ghastly white. In addition, its front pincers and tail were of the same white color. Furthermore, its head was square shaped and the tail was slightly shorter. On the side of the image was the annotation “Warrior Level White Bone Scorpion Ghost”. Underneath it was myriad of small text, describing the White Bone Scorpion’s habits and attack methods.

“Could it be that this is a mutated White Bone Scorpion? Or is it a young child scorpion?” Following the description and the picture, the Ghost in front of him could only be one of these two options.

According to the ancient text, if the Ghost was in a normal condition, the scorpion would be unable to fly for long distances, but it could still soar in the air for a short period of time. It seemed that this scorpion had suffered a serious injury, thus it had currently lost its ability to soar. If that was the case, then this was a golden opportunity bestowed by heaven.

Despite the scorpion being heavily injured, its attack power was still frightening. How much more terrifying would it be if it was at its peak state? Perhaps it ranked amongst the top Warrior level ghosts. If Liu Ming was able to tame it as his Spirit Ghost, then it would surpass those low soldier level ghosts by an unimaginable amount.

Although Liu Ming was quite steady and thought things thoroughly before acting, once he imagined the possibilities that would come after subduing this Ghost, he couldn’t help but palpitate with eagerness.

At this time, the White Bone Scorpion enshrouded by green gas underneath Liu Ming suddenly moved. It unexpectedly dug into the sand below it.

Though Liu Ming was startled , he recited an incantation without hesitation. One of his hands was then covered by a green light as a wind



blade subsequently shot downwards.

“Pu!”

The White Bone Scorpion instantly dodged the wind blade but was surprised and didn't proceed to dig into the nearby sand. Its body moved and leapt backwards.

Liu Ming's eyes lit up and he immediately urged his grey cloud to give chase.

The White Bone Scorpion quickly fled, once it was further away, its tail once again waved as it dug into the ground. Its speed was incomparably fast and in an instant, half of its body was already halfway into the ground.

However at this time, a scarlet ball of flame dropped down from the sky.

“Hong!”

Once the flame scattered, a large hole appeared underneath. The White Bone Scorpion was caught in the collateral area but after rolling over once, it acted as if nothing was wrong and continued to frantically flee.

In the same manner, Liu Ming rode his cloud and tenaciously followed this Ghost for a period of time. Whenever the opposition wanted to crawl underground, Liu Ming would promptly generate a wind blade or ball of flame to scare it.

Although this White Bone Scorpion was not weak, it apparently did not have very high intellect, and it was continually chased by Liu Ming for 100 miles in this manner. After suffering a series of assaults, its body finally bore a few scars, and the green gas surrounding it had slightly decreased.

From the sky, when Liu Ming saw this, he was naturally ecstatic. Unfortunately, he had expended a lot of Fa Li. Unless the ghost planned on going underground, he would not dare to use techniques to attack the ghost.

At this moment, Liu Ming felt slight remorse over the low level of his

## Soul Shackling Chain.

If he had used a better quality Spirit to forge the chain, his Soul Shackling Chain attack would have a greater range. He would therefore not have to fear the scorpion's tail hook attack and could merely fly at a marginally lower altitude and assault it from there.

Moreover, he was unsure whether this White Bone Scorpion's aura was extremely terrifying or whether the desert didn't have too many ghosts. Throughout the game of cat and mouse with him and the White Bone Scorpion, no other ghost was seen.

.....

Half a day later, after the White Bone Scorpion was hit by a ball of flame, the green gas on its body finally dissipated. However, the White Bone Scorpion's legs did not stop moving and it continued to quickly crawl.

When Liu Ming saw this from the air, he couldn't help but reveal a bitter grin.

In his current state, the Fa Li in his body was running low. Since he was expending his Fa Li by maintaining the Soaring Sky technique, he was unwilling to attack the White Bone Scorpion more than necessary.

"Don't tell me that I have to give up here!"

Liu Ming's face became clouded for a while before he abruptly ground his teeth and lowered the grey cloud. He was now giving chase at an altitude of about a hundred feet instead of three hundred feet.

However, the next time the White Bone Scorpion attempted to crawl underground, Liu Ming's figure suddenly dashed downwards. At the same time, a black rope shot out from his sleeve.

"Peng!"

The White Bone Scorpion rolled over once to dodge and without raising its head, continued on its path. It unexpectedly did not have the intention of using its tail to retaliate.

Liu Ming's hands, which were originally in front of his chest, immediately froze. Soon after, he came to a sudden realization.

Evidently, after being chased for such a long time, the White Bone Scorpion's actions had already become subconscious and it had forgotten to counterattack.

When Liu Ming realized this, he was naturally overjoyed.

In the proceeding period of time, Liu Ming did not use any techniques to attack and instead used his Soul Shackling Chain to occasionally flog the ghost. This way, it was not able to crawl into the black sand while his Fa Li was consumed at a much lower rate.

Of course, Liu Ming kept a hand on the Three Star Shield at all times. If any circumstances were to arise, he would immediately the practitioner weapon as defense.

Finally, after another dozen kilometers, the White Bone Scorpion's movements became sluggish. Sometimes, it even was unable to dodge the Soul Shackling Chain lashing down and was hit squarely by it.

After another strike, the scorpion finally could no longer find the strength to run and laid on black sand, obviously weakened.

# Chapter 61: The Strange Change

## Reappearing

When Liu Ming noticed the situation, both of his eyes narrowed and he did not immediately descend from the air. Instead, he encircled the scorpion below him for a while before his sleeve shook and a black rope fiercely shot out. Simultaneously, he made a single handed sign.

After the black rope flashed a black light, it suddenly acted as if it had a spirit of its own and twisted around the White Bone Scorpion seven to eight times. Then it resolutely tightened.

Subsequently, Liu Ming wrist flipped and four light yellow Glyphs appeared. He faintly injected his Fa Li into them and shook his wrist once again.

“Pu!”

Amongst the four glyphs, only one turned into a colored inscription that violently shot downward. In a flash, the inscription distinctly appeared on the White Bone Scorpion’s head as if it had been engraved there.

The White Bone Scorpion lightly shook before it finally stopped moving.

“That swindling liar!” When Liu Ming saw the result, his mouth twitched and he silently cursed.

At the time, the disciple who was selling the Glyphs had confidently guaranteed that they were all effective. What a bunch of hogwash!

Fortunately Liu Ming had bought extras, otherwise he would now have been in deep trouble.

Finally finishing, Liu Ming seemed to relax and urged his grey cloud down to the ground. He landed a few meters away from the White Bone Scorpion and proceeded to walk over.

Suddenly, the silver compass in his hands produced a buzzing sound.

Liu Ming instantaneously froze but in the next moment he reached into his sleeve and pulled something out. In his hands appeared a small, half-

foot long, cyan crossbow. On top of it were three scarlet arrows that had been prepared in advance. With a howl of shattering space, the arrows flew like lightning towards the White Bone Scorpion.

“Hong, hong!”

Among the three arrows that hit the White Bone Scorpion, one of them bounced off while the other two transformed into a rolling flame as they exploded.

This flame was not like Liu Ming’s typical Fireball Technique. Rather, it was misty white in color.

A sound of anguish rang through the air!

The seemingly paralyzed White Bone Scorpion went all out to defend against the fire. Its black tail faintly twitched before transforming into a black blur as it lashed out at Liu Ming.

However, at the moment, Liu Ming had already activated the Three Star Shield practitioner weapon. The black blur instantly struck the light shield but could only make Liu Ming move back two steps without any substantial damages.

When Liu Ming realized this, he wasn’t alarmed, he was delighted instead.

Liu Ming used the remaining bit of his Fa Li to sustain the light shield in front of him as he put away the Miasma Compass. He then rapidly retrieved another three scarlet arrows, loaded them into the small crossbow and expeditiously took his shot.

This time, only one arrow exploded.

Liu Ming silently cursed under his breath again; his hands did not stop moving as he continued to relentlessly fire at the White Bone Scorpion.

When the 15 Shooting Sun Arrows were finally depleted, the silver inscription on the White Bone Scorpion’s head wildly flashed before finally rendering the scorpion truly immobile. Even the two flames in its eye sockets became acutely dimmer.

Nonetheless, the Soul Shackling Chain, which had bound the scorpion, now astonishingly contained a few cracks and tears. It seemed to have taken serious damage.

Liu Ming's face slightly changed, he couldn't believe that even though the White Bone Scorpion was in such a bad shape, it still contained such terrifying strength.

However, this was also good. With the White Bone Scorpion using up the last of its strength, the chances of him taming it would increase by up to twenty percent.

With this thought in mind, Liu Ming withdrew his light shield and used a hand to grab in the direction of the White Bone Scorpion.

The Soul Shackling Chain launched into the air and the ghost fell into Liu Ming's hands.

After reciting a method, Liu Ming once again performed the Soaring Sky Technique while carrying the ghost.

This time, he only flew a few miles before descending into a semi-hidden place between two hills.

With his current Fa Li, he would be unable to fly for a long time, and if he were to come across another ghost with his dried up Fa Li, there would be no contest at all.

The first thing Liu Ming did was to hastily extract his black gourd and form faint yellow circles around both him and the White Bone Scorpion. He then immediately started to meditate.

The amount of Fa Li he used this time was much greater than the time he ran into the Ghost Bee swarm. Therefore, as soon as he started meditating, the surrounding Yuan Qi and threads of Miasma instantly rushed into his body.

A short moment later, Liu Ming was into a deep meditation.

Slowly, time passed by.

After an unknown period of time, Liu Ming opened his eyes; his Fa Li

was already completely replenished.

Liu Ming stood up and shook his feet before turning his attention to the White Bone Scorpion.

The ghost was still bound tightly and seemingly had not struggled while Liu Ming was in his meditation.

Of course, it could be that the White Bone Scorpion really did not have any energy left in its body. The green flames in its eyes were only faintly discernible and even more dim than before.

Liu Ming did not procrastinate and took out a white porcelain bottle that contained a pungent black blood. Using this blood, Liu Ming drew a large circle around him and made a hand sign towards the scorpion.

The black rope faintly flashed before remodeling itself into a more slender version. The black rope twisted around the White Bone Scorpion 10 times, bundling together the scorpion's black tail and body.

Liu Ming finally felt relieved and walked in front of the White Bone Scorpion where he sat down.

Soon, the sound of an incantation started to blossom!

The black smoke in Liu Ming's body surged around and grey inscriptions started appeared on his skin; they then proceeded to rapidly spin.

Liu Ming then lifted his arms and placed both hands onto the White Bone Scorpion's head.

Suddenly, the grey inscriptions rushed forwards, as if it had encountered a culinary delicacy. They successively flashed before disappearing into the scorpion's head.

The White Bone Scorpion's body lightly shook before it finally started struggling. In its current state, the power it used to resist Liu Ming actions was so small that it could be negligible.

However, even if this was the case, a moment later, an ugly expression appeared on Liu Ming's face.

This White Bone Scorpion was truly worthy of being a warrior level ghost. Despite its current feeble state, it still had the mental ability to resist the might of the Liu Ming's Spirit Communication Technique. It did not acknowledge Liu Ming in any way and instead, its attempts of resistance became stronger and stronger.

Liu Ming was silently surprised as he continued to force the Spirit Communication Technique onto the scorpion.

Since this White Bone Scorpion Ghost's mental power was so insanely tenacious, Liu Ming was not too worried that its head would explode like the first few low leveled ghosts from before. This meant that he could also display more power here.

The time it took to drink a cup of tea slowly passed by. (15 minutes)

The grey inscriptions appearing on Liu Ming's body seemed to be endless while the White Bone Scorpion's mental strength resistance was equally resolute. Neither had any indication of waning.

The ghost and the man were actually stuck in a deadlock.

At this time, Liu Ming was not anxious. Relying on the abundant Fa Li in his body, he could maintain the Spirit Communication Technique for half a day without problem. Thus he could slowly whittle down the ghost's willpower.

As Liu Ming planned this in his head, his body suddenly stiffened and his face emitted an extreme expression of fear!

The Fa Li in his body had erupted and his Spirit Sea frantically rotated; all of a sudden, a rice sized crystal bubble appeared in his Spirit Sea.

When this bubble manifested, it faintly flickered while madly engulfing Liu Ming's Fa Li like a black hole.

In a flash, the Fa Li in Liu Ming's body started dropping significantly.

This extremely familiar change was one that naturally made Liu Ming terror stricken. He tried to quickly remove his arm from the White Bone Scorpion's head to deal with the situation.



However, after pulling twice, it was as if there was an unknown suction force present from the scorpion's head which wouldn't let him even move his fingers from their position on the White Bone Scorpion's head.

This made him even more horrified.

Nonetheless, he was extremely collected, and after repeatedly failing to break away from the White Bone Scorpion, he neglected his hands and instead focused on his body. He subsequently started to quell the eruption of Fa Li in his body and forcefully suppressed the strange bubble's devouring.

An hour passed in a flash!

Only a thin layer of the black gas surrounding Liu Ming's body remained. There was about only ten percent of Fa Li left in his body, and the bubble's engulfment in his Spirit Sea showed no signs of slowing down. In fact, its rate was much faster than last time.

At this time, Liu Ming couldn't help but become extremely panicked.

The amount Fa Li of Liu Ming that was devoured this time was much greater than last time by a large margin.

Unfortunately, despite his previous experience with the bubble, Liu Ming was still unable to prevent his Fa Li from depleting. He could only watch on helplessly as the last of his Fa Li was consumed.

At that moment, Liu Ming's body abruptly shook and he felt his strength rapidly diminish as something seemingly split from him and was converted into a flow of heat that was devoured by the bubble

TL: His life, uhh yeah. Life.

At the same time, his 10 fingers vibrated as an identical heat flow came from the White Bone Scorpion.

The addition of the Scorpion's heat caused the flow of heat from Liu Ming's body to slow down by a substantial margin.

Suddenly, the originally immobile White Bone Scorpion released a deathly cry as the dim green flames in its eye sockets suddenly flared.

Meanwhile, a deep green fog spurted from its back before it condensed and transformed into a vague dark green ghost head.

When the ghost head appeared, it silently opened its mouth and the nearby Miasma immediately rushed forth and poured into the White Bone Scorpion's body.

To the side, when Liu Ming saw this, he jumped in fright. In the next moment however, he felt a different cold energy coming from the White Bone Scorpion's body and like the heat flows, this new cold energy also entered the bubble.

With the appearance of a third energy, the stripped heat from Liu Ming and the White Bone Scorpion significantly slowed again; it slowed by so much to the point where if one did not carefully pay attention, one would not be able to sense it at all.

However, Liu Ming was still quite anxious and fervently hoped that the situation would end immediately.

Contrarily, the bubble showed no signs of calming.

Moreover, as the White Bone Scorpion absorbed more Miasma, the amount of Miasma coming from the surroundings identically grew. It grew to the point where a large dark ball of fog made of Miasma shrouded Liu Ming and scorpion.

Liu Ming could even feel the piercing cold from the black Miasma fog, but was ultimately powerless.

Time passed in this situation and after a bit less than an hour, the bubble in Liu Ming's body finally stopped its consumption of Miasma.

# Chapter 62: The Strange Glyph Symbol

At the same time, Liu Ming felt the peculiar suction force in his hands disappear. He immediately removed his hands from the White Bone Scorpion's head with glee.

Suddenly, the bubble in his Spirit Sea flashed and shattered like glass.

Liu Ming felt exhausted as he heard a droning sound in his ear, and his head dropped. After blinking twice, he noticed that he was now in a misty space.

"This is..."

Liu Ming's eyes swept the surroundings and a conflicted expression arose on his face.

This was the mysterious space that had previously kept him stranded for half a year.

But this time the space was bigger than last time; the area was over two hundred square feet.

When Liu Ming finally looked around himself, he couldn't help but jump in fright.

The White Bone Scorpion was here in the misty space with him and was still struggling against the Soul Shackling Chains. It seemed to have recovered some of its strength and was once again resisting Liu Ming.

How did this happen? I know that it is because of the bubble that I entered this space, but how did the White Bone Scorpion enter here along with me? Could it be due to the Spirit Communication Technique that I cast earlier?" Liu Ming quickly hypothesized.

Regardless of the peculiar situation, Liu Ming naturally could not let the White Bone Scorpion break free of the black chain. He immediately closed in and held a hand against the White Bone Scorpion's head. The Tiger's Bite Bracelet on his arm produced a droning noise and a yellow tiger head appeared out of thin air. Soon after, the tiger head roared and a sound wave transmitted onto the scorpion's head.

Even though this White Bone Scorpion was exceptionally strong, after being attacked at such a close range, it instantly let out a plaintive wail. Despite its ceaseless struggling, it was unable to free itself from the black rope binding it and the silver glyph symbol restriction on its head.

Faced with this scene, Liu Ming was not polite and did not stop using his Tiger's Bite Bracelet. With the decrease in Liu Ming's Fa Li, soundwave after soundwave were produced and blasted into the scorpion's head.

After the time it takes to have a cup of tea (15 minutes), the White Bone Scorpion had become weak and sluggish once again.

Liu Ming's heart finally eased, and after pondering for little, he bluntly sat down where he was and began the Spirit Communication Technique.

Although Liu Ming did not know if it was possible to tame the White Bone Scorpion in the mysterious space, it was definitely worth a try.

The black gas on Liu Ming's body surged and the dense grey glyph symbols once again rushed into the ghost's head.

Despite the White Bone Scorpion being sluggish and weak, its mental resistance was extremely durable and still, it did not have the slightest intent of yielding.

However, Liu Ming knew that he would be trapped in here for a long time and was naturally not worried about time issues. Moreover, it was extremely safe in this mysterious safe and Liu Ming could safely perform his techniques to his heart's content.

However, as time slowly passed by, the expression on his face started to congeal.

Half a day later, Liu Ming lightly sighed before ceasing his incantation. Instead, he closed his eyes and began to recuperate his Fa Li.

One day later, when Liu Ming opened his eyes, the White Bone Scorpion seemed to have recovered some of its strength and was acting restless once again.

Without a trace of politeness, Liu Ming shook his wrist bracelet and

placed his hand on top of the White Bone Scorpion's head. After a painful flurry of attacks, Liu Ming once again performed his Communication Spirit Technique.

In the following few days, Liu Ming wore down the White Bone Scorpion's physical strength in the morning before performing his Spirit Communication Technique until he was exhausted. Then, he would sit down and recover his Fa Li before starting the cycle over again on the next day.

Three days later, the Ghost's mental defense finally gave an indication of weakening.

This made the originally hopeless Liu Ming immediately gain a boost of confidence.

In the ensuing two days, Liu Ming furiously attacked the White Scorpion's mental barrier and finally, the scorpion transmitted a faint thought about its will to submit.

Liu Ming was overjoyed and instantly used his Spirit Communication Technique on the White Bone Scorpion's mind. Once he was sure he could actually connect with the ghost's spirit, he finally stopped the secret technique.

Subsequently, Liu Ming put a finger on the White Bone Scorpion's body, making the black chain loosen and fly back. Concurrently, the silver inscription on its head also disappeared in a flash.

The White Bone Scorpion had experienced continuous torture in the past few days, so even without the bindings, it still was on the edge of dying.

Liu Ming was not too surprised by this and faintly smiled. He knew that, given a few days, the ghost would naturally recover. Thus, Liu Ming started considering what to do with the remainder of his time in this mysterious space.

A few days ago, he covertly tried to cultivate his Dark Bone Method, but ultimately, he was unable to increase the amount of Fa Li in the slightest.

Faced with this situation, he abandoned the idea and decided to practice the secret techniques and the Spirit Cultivation Technique instead.

Regarding the Soul Shackling Chain Technique, although more practice equated with higher proficiency, due to the low spirit quality, each Soul Shackling Chain was remarkably different.

Thus, Liu Ming did not waste any time with it.

As for cultivating the Spirit Communication technique to a high level, that would make one able to increase its deterrence and communication abilities. Reaching the complete mastery of the Spirit Communication technique would allow the user a chance at taming even a general level ghost.

The current Liu Ming however, after weighing his options, did not decide to practice the Spirit Communication Technique. Instead, he chose to spend his time on easy techniques.

With his current cultivation, he could naturally learn higher level techniques use as the Icicle Technique, but his reason for not doing so was in the fact that he had already reached a high level of mastery with his Wind Blade Technique and in other techniques. Therefore, he was not willing to give up on them.

The second reason resided in the matter that, even though high level techniques were astonishing in their power, their casting time was extremely long and increasing one's proficiency was extremely difficult. The current Liu Ming wouldn't be using such techniques very often, while easy techniques were more pragmatic.

Of course, given adequate time, he would choose one or two high level techniques and cultivate them to a high level. After all, during battles, the might of high level techniques completely surpassed one's imagination.

Once he decided on this, Liu Ming immediately started to train in the Wind Blade Technique day after day.

This Wind Blade Technique had already been trained to a high level, but it appeared that there was still some room to grow. This made Liu

Ming more and more curious: if he increased its proficiency by another level, how powerful would the wind blade become?

Not long after, the White Bone Scorpion recovered enough strength to move around and in the ensuing period of time, aside from the large hole on its body, most of its wounds disappeared.

While Liu Ming practiced his Wind Blade Technique, the ghost reticently sat on the side, displaying an extremely mild appearance.

When Liu Ming took breaks from practicing his Wind Blade Technique, he would often use his Spirit Communication Technique to connect and talk with the White Bone Scorpion. Moreover, he would practice correspondingly with the ghost with combinations of attack. The result was exceptionally remarkable and the scorpion gradually gained more intelligence and paired even better with Liu Ming.

With the help of his talent of doing two things at once, half a year flew by in the blink of an eye.

....

After such a long time, Liu Ming was still unable to leave the space.

This made him somewhat surprised, but not panicked.

The Wind Blade Technique had already been cultivated to the level where, within a few breaths, Liu Ming could emit a dozen of them without having to stop and rechant the technique. However, Liu Ming still felt like he was lacking something and continued to train and incessantly drill his Wind Blade Technique.

Today, Liu Ming was standing on one side of the space and was discharging his Wind Blade Technique at the grey fog wall at the other side of the space.

As Liu Ming performed the one handed signs and proceeded to recite the incantation, his mind suddenly jolted and a mysterious light cyan glyph symbol suddenly engraved itself into his mind. Subsequently, the sound of space breaking transmitted as two wind blades appeared in his hands and fiercely shot out.

These were not two wind blades that had been prepared beforehand and released at the same time. After once again performing the hand signs, the wind blades instantly appeared in his hands and Liu Ming didn't even recite the incantation!

"This is..."

Liu Ming blankly stared before finally emitting an ecstatic expression while his lips slightly twitched. He formed the hand signs again and the cyan glyph once again appeared in his mind. Two wind blades then shot from his hands immediately.

"Sure enough, practicing it to the next level allows one to emit the technique instantly!"

Liu Ming heartily laughed as one wind blade after another was emitted in a straight line. They all smashed into the opposing wall of fog and produced banging sounds.

Next, his lips continued to twitch but he stopped his Wind Blade Technique. Instead, he joined both his hands and slowly spread them apart.

"Zi La!"

An impressive, half a meter long, enormous wind blade coagulated.

Liu Ming's wrists shook and the enormous wind blade transformed into a ray of cyan light as it travelled. Its speed was a whole level faster than a regular wind blade's. Right after it was released, it was already chopping into the opposing wall of fog. Furthermore, after a loud sound that signalled the wind blade coming into contact with the fog wall, the surrounding fog slightly dispersed.

"As expected, the reason why I was unable to accomplish this enlarged Wind Blade was because my Wind Blade Technique was not proficient enough. Except, what is this cyan glyph? Once I return, I should ask around." Liu Ming murmured with a joyous expression.

In the consecutive days, he continued to practice his Wind Blade Technique. Only this time, it bore no results.



Faced with this situation, Liu Ming decisively changed his focus to practice the Fireball Technique.

After four-five months passed, Liu Ming had also trained his Fireball Technique to Complete Spell Mastery.

His current Fireball Technique traveled faster than before, took less time to cast and the size of the fireball was one fold larger than what it was at when Liu Ming first started practicing the technique.

Some of these improvements were due to his pure Fa Li, but most of the terrifying power improvements were produced as a result of the Complete Mastery of the Fireball Technique.

Just as Liu Ming was extremely happy and planned to continue to practice this technique, a droning noise filled his ears. After a flash of white light, he had returned to the black sanded desert.

At this moment, he was astonishingly still sitting in the circle he had made and the space around him still carried traces of cold Miasma in the form of dark smoke. Even his hands were still on the adjacent White Bone Scorpion's head.

The ghost's body was still bound tightly by the Soul Shackling Chain.

Liu Ming had clearly returned to Ghost Hell Region, but this time, the period of time he was stuck inside of the mysterious space was twice as long compared to last time.

However, Liu Ming did not have time to mull over this and quickly muttered under his breath as if he was facing a great enemy. He then hastily told the White Bone Scorpion to quickly stand.

# Chapter 63: Trouble and Harvest

Although the White Bone Scorpion no longer had any wounds, Liu Ming easily communicated with its consciousness and even found the presence of his own spirit imprint inside.

He finally heaved a sigh of relief.

Sure enough, his previous thoughts were correct, since the White Bone Scorpion Ghost's spirit also entered the mysterious space, the Spirit Communication Technique was still effective after being in the space and then returning.

Liu Ming immediately moved a hand and removed the black rope from the White Bone Scorpion. Simultaneously, the silver inscription on its forehead disappeared as he stood up while faintly laughing.

However at the same time, Liu Ming suddenly felt his originally exhausted Spirit Sea shake. A spiral of extremely pure energy violently rushed forth and caused the Fa Li in his body to expand at an incredible rate.

Liu Ming was initially shocked, but quickly became exalted. He formed a sign with his hands and began cultivating with a calm breathing.

After a bit of time, half of the Fa Li he had before he entering the mysterious space was recovered. Suddenly, the energy in his Spirit Sea changed and became extremely cold and resembled an extremely condensed version of the Miasma around him.

Liu Ming perceived the cold energy in his body start to expand; he felt as if his entire body had fallen into an ice house and was incomparably rigid.

Liu Ming alarmingly tried to stop his cultivation method, but despite his efforts, his fingers would not budge at all. The cold Miasma energy in his body continued to rush forth like a flood and poured into his Spirit Sea.

Liu Ming face was incomparably white and after barely managing to gaze down, he astonishingly discovered that his formerly lustrous and

plump hands were quickly becoming withered. In addition, other parts of his body were also starting to shrivel and began to vaguely illuminate a greenish color.

“Transformation into a Ghost!”

Liu Ming was startled and a term from the ancient text appeared in his mind. At the same time, he suddenly understood where the cold Miasma energy came from.

Most likely, it came from the White Bone Scorpion’s Miasma which was engulfed by the bubble after the bubble exhausted Liu Ming’s Fa Li. After recently being purified together with the rest of his Fa Li, it was now transferred back to Liu Ming.

Although Liu Ming could use this iasma to enhance and increase his Fa Li, the cold Miasma energy would make his body transform into a Miasma attributed Ghost and from then on, he would be a ghost instead of a human.

Liu Ming thought of these things in the blink of an eye and grew gloomy.

The peculiar cold energy in Liu Ming’s body kept growing, and his Fa Li seemed to have frozen over; he was unable to move any of the Fa Li.

In a state of panic, Liu Ming unexpectedly hardened his heart and ignored the dangers of having his Fa Li backlash. He then violently shook his Spirit Sea with the help of the power of his conscious.

The originally solid Spirit Sea slightly shook and a trace of Fa Li finally flew out.

Liu Ming borrowed this trace of Fa Li to start the Dark Bone Method, with the intention of forcefully controlling all of the cold energy even at the price of inflicting heavy injuries on every body Meridians.

However, once the Dark Bone Technique was performed, something incredible happened.

A portion of the cold energy suddenly split in two. One became pure Fa

Li, while the rest entered Liu Ming's bones half way through the Dark Bone Method cultivation and disappeared without a trace.

Liu Ming was shocked but facing this situation, he could only try to prevent himself from becoming a ghost. He was naturally unable to worry about other things and continued to paramountly expedite his Dark Bone Method.

A peculiar scene emerged.

Liu Ming's Spirit Sea kept pumping out the unusually cold Miasma energy while the Dark Bone Method was continually used. This caused the cold energy to either turn into Fa Li, or disappear into his bones.

The two factors of the Miasma coming back from the bubble and becoming assimilated into Liu Ming had finally reached an temporary equilibrium.

Because of this, Liu Ming finally stopped his transformation into a ghost.

After the time it takes to have a cup of tea (15 minutes), Liu Ming's Spirit Sea slightly shook and the flow of cold Miasma energy suddenly stopped.

When Liu Ming discovered this, he was extremely happy and wildly expedited the Dark Bone Method without pause.

An unknown period of time passed by and the last trace of cold Miasma in Liu Ming's body was finally melted away by the Dark Bone Method. His body also returned to normal

Liu Ming stopped the technique and examined his newly reformed plump and lustrous hands before letting out a long sigh. He was still quite afraid in his heart.

If he was only a little bit slower in his reaction, then he might have very well ended up becoming a ghost that wandered this Ghost Hell Reigon until he was either killed or tamed.

However, the Dark Bone Method's ability to dissolve the cold Miasma's

corrosive properties made him extremely surprised.

Liu Ming thought: “If it really was like this, then wouldn’t he be able to stay in the Ghost Hell Region and cultivate for a long period of time without being affected? That couldn’t be right, otherwise why could Liu Ming not cultivate when he first arrived here and performed the Dark Bone Method? This showed how the pure Miasma in his body was quite different from regular Miasma.”

After all, the Miasma was first from the White Bone Scorpion and had undergone the mysterious bubble’s ingestion before being spat back out in a purer form. Thus the attribute had been drastically changed.

Liu Ming shook his head as he thought of this.

Moreover, he was nearly turned into a ghost just now and it was extremely terrifying. So even if Liu Ming was able to cultivate faster in this area, he absolutely did not want to experience it again.

Once Liu Ming thought of the White Bone Scorpion, he couldn’t help but turn his head and slightly pause.

All he could see was the White Bone Scorpion enshrouded in a large ball of green gas.

This ball of green gas was extremely thick, even Liu Ming was unable to see what the White Bone Scorpion was doing inside of it.

With this odd situation, Liu Ming frowned before thinking back to the Miasma energy that was just returned to him a few minutes ago.

Since the White Bone Scorpion entered the mysterious space with him, it could have also encountered the same energy feedback! If that truly was the case, then this situation would be a blessing rather than a curse.

With that thought in mind, Liu Ming’s heart slightly loosened and he sat down waiting on the side.

The time Liu Ming had to wait the time it took to have a meal (30 minutes).

When a peculiar cry resounded, the green gas dispersed and the White

Bone Scorpion's body reappeared.

After carefully examining the new scorpion, Liu Ming couldn't help but be astounded.

The current White Bone Scorpion's eyes contained a flickering green flame, its jet black hooked tail was shining a dark light, and its exterior scars were completely gone. Its body was even about half a meter longer than before and only the large hole would on its side still existed. Simultaneously, the bones on its body were now slightly grey and white, no longer the original eerie white color.

Liu Ming was very surprised by this, and after communicating with its conscious, he became even happier.

Although the White Bone Scorpion had not completely recovered its strength, it had recuperated about seventy to eighty percent of it. Once it completely finished healing, it would once again be able to actually fly.

When Liu Ming heard what items he needed to have to help the White Bone Scorpion recuperate, he couldn't help but grin.

Due to suffering too serious injuries, the scorpion unexpectedly needed to eat other ghost bones in order to slowly recover.

With that was the case, Liu Ming would be unable to return now. He had to first collect a few ghost bones before he could return to the sect at ease.

After weighing his options, Liu Ming made his decision.

Despite having wasted a lot of time, Liu Ming still had half a month left. Looking for and finding a few low leveled ghosts would not be too hard in this time period.

Planning his route, Liu Ming ordered the White Bone Scorpion to stand guard in the vicinity for a while. At the same time, he used this time to inspect his body's condition.

The bubble in his Spirit Sea had again disappeared without a trace and his Fa Li was even purer than last time. In addition, the amount of Fa Li

left in Liu Ming did not drop too much, most likely due to the cold Miasma energy transforming into Fa Li.

When Liu Ming's mind swept through every bone, his face couldn't help but change.

He noticed that every bone in his body had become even whiter than before, and further emitted a glittering light. It was clearly a lot sturdier than before.

"This is..."

Liu Ming used his mind to touch a bone and immediately felt a trace of coldness. However, once he performed his Black Bone Method, everything went back to normal, without a trace of defectiveness.

Liu Ming continued to inspect other areas and when he found nothing wrong, he was completely relieved.

He retracted his consciousness and started to ponder about the mysterious bubble.

This bubble was incredibly mysterious and clearly resided in his body. There was also a possibility of it appearing again, and each time it appeared it seemed to consume more Fa Li than last time.

This time, if it was not for him being in the Ghost Hell Region, and if he did not have the White Bone Scorpion use some sort of natural talent to absorb Miasma and supplement it for him, he would have likely died.

If this happened again in the future while he was in the middle of a fight, wouldn't it be the same as death?

Of course, this bubble could make his Fa Li even purer, as well as help him enter the mysterious space. This above all, enticed him.

Thinking about this, Liu Ming got a headache.

After experiencing two ruptures, the gap between the bubble appearing seemed to become longer and longer. Perhaps it needed to meet certain conditions but at least for the near future, Liu Ming did not have to worry about this bubble appearing again.

Liu Ming mulled over it for a while, but was unable to find a solution to the problem. He could only put it at the back of his mind and wait until he returned to the Sect before looking at it again.

What was important right now was to find other ghosts.

Thus, Liu Ming calmed himself before standing up and making a hand sign.

A grey cloud congealed under his feet and lifted him several meters from the ground.

Liu Ming then beckoned to the White Bone Scorpion.

“Pu!”

The White Bone Scorpion leapt up from the ground and landed easily on the grey cloud.

Liu Ming once again used the technique and the grey cloud instantly cleaved space as it zipped away.

.....

Two days later, at the boundary of the black desert, a ghost that looked like something in between a sheep and a cow was covered in a weak green flame was in the process of running for its life. The green flame around its body was extremely dazzling. However, not far behind was a hill of sand that was mercilessly chasing after it.

In the blink of an eye, the two of them had run like this for a few kilometers.

“Sou!”

The pursuing sand hill suddenly emitted a ray of black light which quickly pierced the running ghost’s body. The black ray then pulled backwards with the immobile ghost hooked to it. Astonishingly, it was a fine dark scorpion tail.

TL: Reksai!

A blood-curdling screech rang through the air.



The leading ghost instantly fell and was flipped with its feet to the sky while the sand hill behind it simultaneously burst apart. A white shadow flew out from within it and pounced onto the leading ghost's body.

Two large pincers appeared, and after furiously hacking, it cut the ghost into various chunks.

# Chapter 64: Bone Corpse

Soon after, a white silhouette leapt away from the dead ghost's body.

It was the White Bone Scorpion

'Pu!'

A red fireball fell from the sky, covering the corpse of the dead ghost with large flames in the blink of an eye.

Liu Ming was currently on a grey cloud, three hundred feet above ground. He carried a small bag, made of animal skin, while watching the events happening below him with no emotion.

When he shot out the fireball he purposely held back half of the fireball's power, so that after the flames were extinguished, there would still be some glittering bones left on the sandy ground.

The White Bone Scorpion moved again and rapidly flew towards the bones. It grabbed one of the bones and started chewing on it heavily.

Liu Ming started to descend slowly, reaching the ground he opened the bag in his hand and threw the other bones into it.

In the bag, it looked like there were only about a dozen of ghost bones

Liu Ming gave these ghosts bones a few looks and lightly sighed.

Once he walked out of the White Bone Scorpion's hunting area, the desert had quite a number of low-class ghosts. This was the third ghost that he and the scorpion killed, but he had only found a small number of ghosts bones. This was because he found out that not all ghost bones were helpful to the White Bone Scorpion's injury; the bones must be extremely strong and contain a certain amount of ghost essence.

And inside the body of a low-class ghost, there are only three or four of these bones.

Faced with this situation, Liu Ming could only silently complain.

According to his current speed of finding ghost bones, the remaining time he had here was not going to be enough. This made him start

fretting.

Liu Ming waited for the White Bone Scorpion to finish swallowing the bone before bundling up his bag with ghost bones and hopped onto his cloud again before he continued to search for other ghosts.

However, at this time, he suddenly heard a sky splitting noise coming from the distant horizon. One grey cloud and one black cloud were unexpectedly flying towards him from the horizon.

Liu Ming was startled and hastily stared at the two approaching clouds with rapt attention.

Standing on the leading grey cloud was a slender figure. Behind, the black cloud was emitting a bloody scent and occasional low roars.

It was clear that the leading grey cloud's speed was not as fast as the trailing black cloud. Nonetheless, whenever the black cloud seemed like it was going to catch up to its target, the slender figure on the grey cloud would emit a piercing red light behind her. This forced the black cloud to dodge as if it was extremely afraid of the red light.

The two figures, one chasing and one fleeing, arrived in the sky above the black desert in the blink of an eye.

"Hmm, it unexpectedly is her!"

Liu Ming squinted his eyes and finally clearly saw the slender figure's pretty face. Astonishingly, it was Jia Lan; Liu Ming couldn't help but stare blankly.

However, since this girl was being chased in such a strenuous manner, it was clear that the ghost behind her was at least of the warrior level. In other words, it was something only a Late Spirit Apostle would be able to contend against.

Liu Ming hesitated, he did not know if he should interfere with the situation.

At this time, the battle in the sky underwent a drastic change.

The black cloud dodged Jia Lan's red light again before suddenly

emitting a bone lance, about ten feet long. In a flash, it swiftly caught up to the grey cloud.

Jia Lan seemed to have predicted this and, after performing a single handed technique, the grey cloud's direction abruptly changed and flew to the side. Because of this, she managed to dodge the bone lance behind her.

However, at this time, the trailing black cloud suddenly transmitted a low ghostly roar. The bone lance suddenly became blurry and unexpectedly split in two; the other bone lance that was produced looked like the shadow of the first lance.

This copy turned around and with inconceivable speed, it penetrated Jia Lan's shoulder.

A cold snort sounded and a bloody hole appeared on Jia Lan shoulder. She seemed to have also lost control of her Fa Li as the grey cloud beneath her feet suddenly disappeared and she immediately fell from the sky.

When Liu Ming saw this, he didn't hesitate and flicked his wrist forward. A black rope shot out and caught the young girl, who was only seventy to eighty feet from the ground. His sleeve shook and he forcibly pulled her until she was in front of him.

"It's you!"

The pretty girl's complexion was abnormally white, but once she clearly saw Liu Ming in front of her, she couldn't help but involuntarily cry out.

"It really is me. Senior Jia Lan, are you okay?" Liu Ming bitterly laughed.

"I'm fine; I only lost control of my Fa Li back then. Now, there is nothing wrong." The surprised expression on Jia Lan pretty face quickly disappeared. Immediately, she retrieved a light green glyph and threw it on the bloody hole on her shoulder.

A "Pu" sound rang out and subsequently, a warm green light appeared. The incessant blood flow from the bloody hole immediately stopped and the wound's periphery started to congeal and heal.

At this moment, a loud angry roar permeated the sky. The black cloud changed its direction and abruptly shot towards Liu Ming.

“Junior Bai, help me stall for a bit. The warrior level Bone Corpse’s bone lance contains poison. I must completely remove the residue from my body before moving.” Jia Lan’s gaze flashed as a slightly anxious expression arose on her face.

“Bone Corpses, intelligent ghosts who originate from the corpses of cultivators. Okay, I understand.” Liu Ming was startled at first, but immediately raised his eyebrows and nodded his head.

He also had a warrior level White Bone Scorpion by his side. Thus, he was not very afraid of facing another warrior level ghost.

At this time, the White Bone Scorpion had already noiselessly dug into the black sand and even Jia Lan had not realized that there had been another ghost within the vicinity.

However, this scorpion was unable to fly too high so it naturally had to wait until the ghost on top of the black cloud descended before it could fight.

Therefore, facing the rapidly approaching black cloud, Liu Ming slapped his chest and produced a black light shield which now stood resolutely in front of his body. It seemed that he didn’t have the slightest intention of attacking.

Naturally, the ghost on top of the black cloud was not courteous and borrowed the incredible flying speed to launch the two black bone lances.

“Sou, sou!”

However, it’s target this time had astonishingly switched to Liu Ming who was protecting the young girl.

Faced with this situation, Liu Ming squinted his eyes and recited an incantation. He subsequently performed a single hand technique and a fireball shot towards the bone lance.

“Pu!”

The fireball instantly passed through the bone lance. Unexpectedly, it was only an insubstantial shadow!

In the next moment, Liu Ming felt a fluctuation in front of him as the other black bone lance appeared without warning and resolutely flew downwards.

Liu Ming's face changed and without thinking, he thrust the light shield forward so that it covered his entire body.

“Hong!”

The bone lance broke into countless fragments that scattered in all directions. However, a myriad of cracks appeared on the gigantic light shield while a large force simultaneously rushed at Liu Ming.

Liu Ming gave a cold snort. His body couldn't help but retreat half a step, but he immediately regained his footing and stood resolute.

This scene seemed to surprise the ghost on the black cloud. It emitted a cold snort and unexpectedly stopped moving forward. After circling once, it descended onto a sand dune that was about three hundred feet away from Liu Ming.

When the black cloud dispersed, it revealed the complexion of the ghost within it.

Astonishingly, it was a twenty foot giant skeleton. Its body was composed by black bones spike of various lengths. Additionally, it was carrying ten foot long bone lances in both of its hands. Its eyes contained a pulsating blood red flame that gave one a strange feeling as if the ghost was thinking something as it looked at them.

This was the first time Liu Ming had seen this sort of ghost that were formed from humans: a Bone Corpse and could not help but examine it.

In the next second, the Bone Corpse suddenly took a large step forward and launched itself at Liu Ming. With every step, a half foot deep footprint would be left in the black sand. One could easily see that its body was extremely heavy.

When Liu Ming saw this, his gaze shook and turned to look at Jia Lan.

He saw that the bloody hole on the pretty girl's shoulder was already one third smaller. However, it seemed that he still had to stall for a little longer..

With this thought in mind, Liu Ming immediately uttered an incantation and raised his two arms. Two fireballs, one in front of the other, shot at the Bone Corpse.

“Hong, hong!”

The Bone Corpse's torso faintly swayed and easily dodged the two fireballs, which exploded in the sand behind it.

At this moment, the ghost abruptly raised its head and emitted a weeping bellow. Storing power in its two legs, it then exploded into an inconceivable speed as it rushed towards Liu Ming.

Its speed was extremely quick and after a few seconds it had already traveled two hundred feet.

Due to the ghost's running speed, Liu Ming jumped in fear. Without thinking, he uttered an incantation, his sleeve shook and the Soul Shackling Chain transformed as it flew at the opposing party like a viper. He raised his other arm and three wind blades consecutively flew at the ghost.

It seemed that the two of arms of liu Ming had simultaneously moved, but the three wind blades arrived first. After three green flashes of light shone, they appeared in front of the Bone Corpse.

The ghost clearly had not expected the wind blades to have such speed. The blood flames in its eyes jumped as it hastily put the two black bone lances in front of its body in an attempt to protect itself.

“Peng, peng!” The first two wind blades ricochet off the bone lance, but the third wind blade managed to successfully chop onto the Bone Corpse.

A cold snort sounded.

Instantly, two of the Bone Corpse's rib bones were cut in half, but the

wind blade had been exhausted and disappeared.

The Bone Corpse's run came to a sudden stop. It seemed shocked as it lowered its head and looked at its body.

The Soul Shackling Chain then flew forwards and coiled around its body.

Two sudden explosion sounds rang in the air.

The two black bone lances in the Bone Corpse's hands flew up like lightning and unexpectedly deflected the Soul Shackling Chain into the sand.

Subsequently, the ghost raised its head and looked at Liu Ming before releasing the bone lances. Its four limbs then proceeded to shrink and its body curled into a ball. It astoundingly transformed itself into an actual bone ball whose exterior was covered in sharp bone spikes. Afterwards, it started to wildly roll down at Liu Ming.



# Chapter 65: Cultivating Soul Pouch

When Liu Ming saw the protruding bones spikes on the bone ball transform into a blurry black awn, his heart shivered in fear. He performed a single hand technique and specks of green light appeared on his fingers. His other hand and wrist shook and the Tiger's Bite Bracelet started trembling as a yellow tiger's head subsequently manifested.

However, before he could release his attack, from behind, a whooshing sound occurred. A feet long scarlet streak of light rapidly flew forward and smashed into the bone ball.

“Hong!”

The scarlet streak exploded and morphed into a scarlet flame that engulfed the bone ball.

The bone ball's rolling attack came to a sudden stop and it proceeded to emit a low roar of anguish. When the surrounding flame faded, it had returned to its vaguely human form.

The Bone Corpse's body was now riddled with scars and it had clearly suffered large injuries from the previous attack.

Currently, this ghost's green blooded flame eyes pulsated and it fiercely glared at Liu Ming. Yet, it seemed to contain a trace of fear and despite being at such a close range, did not immediately pounce on him.

Liu Ming's gaze faintly flashed and he quickly turned his head.

He saw Ji Lan pointing a light green longbow at the Bone Corpse while hanging on the bow was a scarlet arrow. Ji Lan held a cold and prepared expression while the arrow was notched; the blood wound on her shoulder had already completely healed and only a faint red line was left.

“Don't be distracted Junior Bai. This Bone Corpse's intelligence is quite high and unlike most warrior level ghosts, is extremely cunning. However, if the two of us combined forces, we should be able to fend it off of a while.” When the charming young girl saw Liu Ming distractedly looking

at her, her eyebrows creased as she warned him.

“Contend with it for a while?! Does Senior not plan on taming such a powerful ghost?” After hearing her reminder, Liu Ming returned his attention to the Bone Corpse, but was somewhat baffled.

“Although this naturally intelligent ghost that was transformed from a human is extremely ferocious, it is substantially different from other innate Miasma ghosts. Relying on the Spirit Communication Technique to intimidate and subdue it is impossible unless one’s strength largely surpasses it. Otherwise, it may temporarily be tamed, but it can someday retaliate and devour you. Many masters in our sect have perished this way. Thus, I definitely do not plan on subduing this ghost.” Jia Lan lightly replied after listening to Liu Ming’s question.

“I understand now. Then our only option is to thoroughly slaughter it.” When Liu Ming heard Jia Lan’s comment, he sighed in pity before talking.

“Slaughter it?” Even with Jia Lan’s naturally calm demeanor, after listening to this, she couldn’t help but be startled.

The opposing Bone Corpse seemed to understand Liu Ming’s words and after listening to the conversation, the blood flame in its eyes suddenly flourished in anger. Its two hands moved and subsequently pulled to black protruding bones from its body. An instant later, the bones had turned into two bone lances and the ghost took a large stride forward before rushing at Liu Ming and Jia Lan.

The delicate young girl’s pupils contracted, her hand loosened and the scarlet tip on the longbow fiercely shot out.

“Hong!”

Amidst the surging flame, the large body of the Bone Corpse which had already charged quite close was repelled a few feet.

However, this ghost had been thoroughly provoked and was emitting a vicious expression. Despite the added wounds on its body, it didn’t even pause before it threw the two bone lances in its hands and charged forward again.

“Sou, sou”! Liu Ming performed two one hand techniques and two wind blades instantly shot out. The wind blades skimmed the edges of the bone lances and whizzed by them. However, that was enough to deflect the lances away from Liu Ming.

Behind him, Jia Lan’s face darkened and her two hands moved. The longbow impressively shot another scarlet streak.

Another loud sound rang, but this time, the Bone Corpse slightly shook. It unexpectedly withstood the might of the flame and continued to charge forward.

Liu Ming’s vision congealed and he saw that a large unknown bone plate had appeared before the Bone Ghost’s body. The ghost was holding the plate in front of its body like a shield as it charged forward. Within a few steps, it had already arrived in front of Liu Ming; with it came a fishy smell.

“Junior, quickly retreat!” Jia Lan saw this scene and her face darkened. She yelled in a low voice as her sleeves shook and the longbow in her hands disappeared. A light silver glyph replaced it and started to vitalize.

However, what instantly made her startled was that Liu Ming had seemed to not hear her. He continued to stand in his original position without the intention of dodging. Instead, he raised his arm and the Tiger’s Bite Bracelet produced an image of a tiger head roaring. A vast white sound wave then blitzed at the Bone Corpse’s head.

The Bone Corpse merely tilted its head and dodged the Tiger’s Bite Bracelet’s attack. The blood flame in its eyes jumped and its two large hands attempted to grab Liu Ming.

With the ghost’s malevolent protruding bones all over its body, even if a Spirit Master were hugged, he or she would perish.

The delicate young girl’s face underwent a genuinely drastic change. Despite her thoughts of saving him, there was not enough time.

“Pu, pu!”

Two large claws suddenly flew out from the sand under the Bone Corpse

and in a flash, they clamped down on the Bone Corpses two bony white ankles. Although they did not separate the Bone Corpse's feet from its body, the Bone Corpse's charge came to a screeching stop and it nearly tumbled and fell.

This ghost was greatly alarmed and immediately grabbed a black protruding bone from his chest. It then immediately lunged at one of the large black claws.

However, a "Pu" sound suddenly rang through the air.

A black streak shot up from the sand and in a flash, it pierced the Bone Corpse's bony arm like lightning. It made the ghost shake and the bone lance fell powerlessly to the ground. Simultaneously, a black ink-like solution rapidly spread throughout its bony body.

Astoundingly, the black streak was a fierce-looking black hooked tail.

The Bone Corpse immediately felt a powerless feeling spread from his arms. Flustered, its remaining arm furiously clawed at that hooked tail.

However, the hooked tail was abnormally tenacious and despite the Bone Corpse's sharp claws, only an insipid white scar remained.

At the same time, Liu Ming muttered to himself, put his two hands together and then slowly drew them apart; a half foot enormous wind blade instantly manifested.

"Go."

Liu Ming let out a low shout and both his wrists shook. The enormous wind blade transformed into a green light as it shot right through the Bone Corpse.

"Peng!"

The originally struggling Bone Corpse suddenly froze. Ensuing, its upper body lightly swayed and then separated from the waist and fell to the ground.

Liu Ming let out a light breath of air and his face exposed a smile.

However, concurrently, a "hong" sound echoed through the air.

The upper half of the Bones Corpse had exploded and a couple dozen black protruding bones immediately morphed into a dense black net of spikes that rapidly shot at Liu Ming and Jia Lan.

At such a close distance, even if Liu Ming wanted to, he was unable to put up any defenses. His mood darkened and he could only rapidly move his arms in front of his body.

However, at this time, a smothered sound emanated and broad layer of white light abruptly appeared in front of his body.

When the black bones smashed into this light shield, a muffled sound like rain falling on bamboo was transmitted through the air. Afterwards, these vicious spikes helplessly fell onto the ground.

Liu Ming was slightly startled before turning around.

He saw that Jia Lan's hands were holding a silver glyph that was exuding a white halo of light while she was softly mumbling a phrase.

When Jia Lan saw Liu Ming looking at her, her incantation stopped and she said while faintly smiling:

"These Bone Corpses are extremely fierce and once they perish, their body will self detonate and attempt to take the opponent down with it. It seems that Junior Bai is not too familiar with this."

"Thank you Senior Apprentice for your help. I truly did not know about this." Liu Ming breathed in a deep breath before bitterly laughing.

"I heard this from my master, otherwise I would not know about this. However, Junior's strength completely surpassed my expectations. With your own strength, you were unexpectedly to be able to almost execute a warrior level ghost. One more thing, was this White Bone Scorpion tamed by Junior Apprentice?" Jia Lan stored her glyph and spoke. Her eyes then fell to the White Bone Scorpion who was gnawing on the Bone Corpse's remains near Liu Ming.

"My strength is nothing. If not for Senior's help just now, I'm afraid that really would have been taken down with that ghost. This White Bone Scorpion really was tamed by me during a stroke of luck. However, how

did Senior Female provoke this Bone Corpse? Were you not travelling with Martial Aunt Bing?” Liu Ming asked back.

“When teacher entered this area, she got caught up in an external affair and had to leave me for a bit. As for this Bone Corpse, I unintentionally bumped into it and it ended up incessantly chasing me. Another thing, I also gathered one of our sect’s disciple’s name plates near the Bone Corpse. This Bone Corpse could very well be one of our sect’s seniors who perished in this area.” Jia Lan spoke before lifting her hand and tossing a jade plate at Liu Ming.

After catching it, Liu Ming carefully looked at it. It really was a special Barbarian Ghost Sect’s nameplate. He couldn’t help but let out a light sigh and threw it back at the pretty young girl. He then said:

“The Ghost Hell Region’s human shaped ghosts are extremely few so this must be the case. If we were to perish here, we would presumably also end up like this. This area is exceptionally dangerous so I will be preparing to return to the base. What does Senior plan on doing?” Liu Ming calmly asked while looked at the remains of the fallen Bone Corpse.

“I still have some other business so I will stay here for another two days. Thus I will not return with Junior. One last thing; I was saved this time by Junior Bai so I have a present for you. Treat it as a gift for saving my life.” The pretty girl slowly said. Her eyes then flashed and she suddenly grabbed a black leather bag from her waist. She proceeded to throw it at Liu Ming.

“This...this is a Cultivating Soul Bag!” Liu Ming was stumped after he caught the bag. He promptly felt the cold feeling on his fingers and involuntarily cried out.

“That’s right. With this item, Junior Bai should be able to keep the White Bone Scorpion alongside him for a long period of time. Moreover, you do not have to worry about a lack of Miasma and have the scorpion’s strength slowly deteriorate.” The pretty young girl faintly smiled as she talked.

“This Cultivation Soul Pouch’s value is similar to that of Totems; each

one of them costs over 10,000 spirit stones and is quite expensive. Junior cannot afford the cost.” After hearing her talk, a peal of glee lit up Liu Ming’s face but he couldn’t help but bitterly laughing as he said this.

“If the item were even more expensive, how could its value compare to my life? Moreover, I still have another one of these items. From what I have seen, Junior is not an effeminate person, so why are you talking like this?” Jia Lan said indifferently. Afterwards, she fished out another leather bag which was even more refined than the one that Liu Ming had in his hands.

# Chapter 66: The Ghost King's Mystery

“Since this is the case, then I will not be courteous.” After hearing her talk like that, Liu Ming hesitated before genuinely speaking impolitely.

When Jia Lan heard this, her face exposed the trace of a smile. She spoke a few more sentences to Liu Ming before saying goodbye.

A moment later, Jia Lan rode her cloud and flew towards the distant horizon.

Liu Ming watched her until her silhouette completely disappeared before he lowered his head and looked at the Cultivating Soul Pouch in his hands. A trace of seriousness appeared on his face.

Unexpectedly, this girl was able to present him with such a precious gift. Even if it was to repay the favor of saving her, it was extremely magnanimous and incredible.

After all, even if Cultivating Soul Pouches could not compare to genuine totems, only capable Spirit Masters had such pouches within the Barbarian Ghost Sect. Normally, it was extremely rare for a Spirit Apostle to have one.

Moreover, since Jia Lan was able to nonchalantly take out two of them, it seems like her status is not as simple as it seems. Even if having a Aphrodite's body was extremely rare, Barbarian Ghost Sect conferring one Cultivating Soul Pouch to her was already exceptional; two of them would be impossible.

However, in this way, she not only repaid his favor but also made him owe her a large favor. Liu Ming was unsure if this was intentional or an accident.

Although Liu Ming was suspicious, he once again examined the item in his hands before exposing a trace of a smile.

This Cultivating Soul Pouch was a treasure close to the level of a totem. Naturally, it had unfathomable effects.

One of them was that it could ignore a ghost's size and weight and



shrink the ghost so that it could be stored within the bag and be carried lightly on one's body.

Another effect was that, as long as one could activate the bag's unique engraved inscription, the pouch would be able to absorb hefty amounts of Miasma and stockpile it. This way, the ghost inside would not lack Miasma, and its strength would not decrease due to lack of Miasma inside the bag.

Comparing the two effects, the latter was naturally more rare.

After all, the first effect is also available in a Ghost Barbarian Sect's practitioner weapon called the "Ghost Bag". It too can absorb ghosts and allow them to be carried around freely.

Most of the disciples who tamed ghosts would purchase this practitioner weapon to store and carry their ghosts.

Nonetheless, the Ghost Bag is unable to absorb Miasma and many of them had a maximum usage time. Furthermore, the bags price would greatly increase depending on the size of the ghost the bags are able to store.

After Liu Ming caught his ghost and returned, he had planned to spend his Spirit Stones to buy such a ghost bag. Now, he did not have to do this.

Whilst thinking like this, he used his hand to feel the Cultivating Soul Pouch. Suddenly, he let go of it and performed a technique, directing the technique at the pouch.

A white glyph symbol flew out and in a flash, entered the bag without a trace.

In the next moment, a silver spirit inscription appeared on the outside of the leather bag. Furthermore, it weirdly formed a mini spell formation. Meanwhile, an attraction force violently flew out from the bag.

The nearby Miasma vibrated and all of it violently rushed into the leather bag.

Simultaneously, a loud droning sound engulfed the surrounding area.

Threads of black smoke appeared and progressively amassed. It was as if all the Miasma within the circumference of several miles was now rushing towards this area.

Liu Ming slightly smiled and retreated a few steps. He used the Cultivating Soul Pouch to absorb the surrounding area's Miasma.

At this time, the White Bone Scorpion finished devouring the Bone Corpse's hand bone and brought the rest of the carcass, with its claws, to Liu Ming like a dog. The bones piled up into a large stack.

Liu Ming subsequently formed a fireball and the torrential flames engulfed the pile of bones. A moment later, most of the bones were turned to ashes, only leaving slightly over twenty sparkling bones behind.

When Liu Ming saw this, he was overjoyed. With this many Ghost Bones, this Bone Corpse was worthy of being called a warrior level ghost. This also meant that all the bones needed for the White Bone Scorpion's rehabilitation were finally collected.

Liu Ming collected the bones and sat down cross legged on the ground, recuperating his Fa Li with his eyes closed.

Half a day later, when a "boom" came from within the leather bag, the external silver spell marking disappeared in a flash. The contiguous black Miasma subsequently dispersed.

Liu Ming observed this and then immediately grabbed the bag, floating in the air, with his hand.

Using his hand to estimate, it didn't seem like the weight of the leather bag changed but its pigment seemed to have become quite a bit darker.

Liu Ming didn't hesitate and first used his mind to communicate with the White Bone Scorpion. Next, he held the leather bag in his hand and thrust it at the White Bone Scorpion.

"Pu!"

A black cloud rolled out from the bag and instantly enshrouded the White Bone Scorpion.

Thereupon, the White Bone Scorpion body span around like a maelstrom and quickly became tiny before finally being sucked into the leather bag by the black cloud.

Liu Ming once again communicated with the ghost and found that nothing was erroneous. With this, he felt reassured and put the leather bag on his waist; generated a one hand sign, rose into the air and flew towards Barbarian Ghost Sect's base.

At the same time, Jia Lan was in the process of riding her cloud when the sound of someone beckoning her filled her ear. At once, she happily changed directions and flew towards a certain forest before landing.

After a bit of work, this girl appeared in a cave in a enormous tree. She then walked up to a pale faced beautiful woman. Astonishingly, it was Martial Aunt Bing.

When the beautiful woman saw Jia Lan, she let out a large sigh and ashamedly said:

"Lan Er, you're fine; thank goodness. I was caught up with that Ghost for a long time and really didn't have any other option. Luckily, you are fine and was not caught by that Bone Corpse."

"Teacher, Lan Er really was caught by that Bone Corpse. If not for someone else rescuing me, I am afraid that I genuinely would not have returned." The pretty young girl said as she bitterly laughed.

What? Something like that happened? Who was it that rescued you? I must express my formal thanks to this person." When the beautiful woman heard Jia Lan's words, she jumped in fright.

"Teacher does not have to worry. I has already given heavy thanks to this person. Oh, that's right; did master succeed in obtaining that item from the ghost's body?" Jia Lan was extremely ambiguous as she spoke and quickly changed the topic.

"I didn't. That ghost is already on par with me with its general level strength. It also has a few warrior level ghosts assistants. Although you used your Aphrodite's Body to break its most proficient illusion

techniques, it still managed to get away. However, it has sustained heavy injuries so the next time we come, that will be its time of death.” After listening to Jia Lan, the beautiful woman’s tone of voice abruptly turned cold.

“Teacher, since this ghost’s intelligence is so high, next time, won’t it just flee its nest?” The pretty young girl asked as her eyebrows creased.

“Don’t worry; this ghost must rely on absorbing the nourishment of Fiend Miasma to slowly increase its strength. However, areas with Fiend Miasma are incredibly hard to find. Unless it is absolutely essential, there is no way that it will leave. Heie, who would have known that our Ancestor, Liu Yin Master’s Barbarian Ghost King, which he used to decimate other sects, would decay to such a state. If not for me searching through ancient records for dozens of years and you finally putting the last piece of the puzzle together, I am afraid that I would be exactly like others, ignorant of the Ancestor’s words for the rest of my life.” The beautiful woman said as she laughed.

TL: Liu Yin = Founder of the Barbarian Ghost Sect

“Founder’s intellect really did surpass most people. I only made a lucky guess.” Jia Lan listened to her teacher and laughed as she replied.

.....

Seven days later, Liu Ming was carrying an animal skin bundle as he appeared in the Barbarian Ghost Sect base’s plaza. He proceeded to stride towards the stone room which housed the teleportation formation.

What made him be somewhat taken aback was that when he entered the stone room, there was astonishingly a boy and a girl waiting. It was unexpectedly Lei Zhen and that young girl companion who travelled with him.

On Lei Zhen’s shoulder was a new monkey-like ghost with wings on its back. It was the sculpture which Liu Ming had previously seen and was the Soldier level Night-crawler ghost. However, this ghost’s size was a lot smaller only a foot tall. Additionally, its tail was not black, but had a fiery red color, giving one an extremely odd feeling.

It seemed that Lei Zhen also did not return empty handed. Contrarily, the young girl's side was completely bereft, so it was unknown if she really returned empty handed without a Spirit Ghost or if she had already put it in a Ghost Bag.

Thinking about this, he couldn't help but look at the grey leather bag on the girl's waist.

At this time, the girl clearly recognized Liu Ming and smiled at him.

When the adjacent Lei Zhen saw Liu Ming, his face initially showed slight surprised. However, after glancing at the animal skin bundle in Liu Ming's hands, he curled his lips and did not have the slightest intent of greeting him.

Likewise, Liu Ming naturally didn't have the intent of starting a conversation. Yet he was slightly suspicious as to why those two still hadn't teleported back and were instead waiting here.

Just then, the sound of footsteps came from outside the stone door. Elder Gui nonchalantly walked in, glanced at three people and immediately quacked:

"Good; there are finally three people. Thus, we are able to barely make a teleportation without wasting too many Spatial Spirit Stones.

After he finished speaking, Elder Gui immediately walked to the edge of the teleportation formation and autonomously began to install the black crystals.

Having heard Elder Gui, Liu Ming finally came to a sudden realization about why Lei Zhen was still here.

A moment later, Elder Gui installed the final Spatial Spirit Stones and indicated that they could enter the formation.

When Liu Ming and the two others saw this, they naturally walked into the formation.

Elder Gui performed a single hand technique and thrust his hand towards the space above the teleportation formation. The inscription of

the technique then launched into the formation.

In the next second, the formation produced a droning sound as Liu Ming and the two others disappeared without a trace.

Elder Gui then nonchalantly walked towards the stone door.

A moment later, from outside the door came the sound of subitaneous footsteps. Concurrently, an animated male voice arrived:

“Elder Gui, immediately activate the teleportation formation and send me back to the sect!”

“Wait a bit; there aren’t enough people!” Elder Gui’s lackadaisical voice responded.

.....

After a slight dizziness, the white light around him calmed and Liu Ming’s group had appeared in the metallic room that they were in before going to the Ghost Hell Region.

As soon as the formation stopped buzzing, a light flashed in a wall opposite to the formation and an impatient voice came out:

“Leave quickly, other people have to go to the Ghost Hell Reigon.”

Lei Zhen and the young girl quickly walked out as soon as they heard this voice.

Liu Ming furrowed his brow and after a slight hesitation, followed behind the other two.

.....

An hour later, Liu Ming finally returned to his dwelling. However, as soon as he entered the courtyard, he saw a plain letter stuck in between his room’s doors.

# Chapter 67: Exposed

When Liu Ming saw this, he was slightly startled. One must know that, if the sect had to inform someone of something, they would usually send out a disciple to personally convey the message. Yet, a letter had unexpectedly appeared here; this was too strange.

“Don’t tell me that...”

An idea suddenly flashed through Liu Ming’s mind. His eyebrows creased as he reached out and grabbed the letter in front of him. After sweeping over it with his conscious, he found no abnormal fluctuations and pulled out the piece of paper from within. After looking over it twice, his face slightly changed.

“Unexpectedly, it’s those two who are looking for me. Didn’t they say that they would flee after returning? Don’t tell me that a problem has occurred in the Bai Clan!” Liu Ming’s mind ran through the possibilities. Rubbing his two hands, a ball of flame suddenly appeared and immediately turned the letter into ash.

After that, he summoned his cloud and made a beeline out of the Barbarian Ghost Sect’s main gate.

After a small period of time, Liu Ming descended to the edge of the mountain range and near a small building. He then entered one of the watchtowers. There, he saw his two former acquaintances, who had been waiting here for over ten days.

There was one tall and one short male, both wearing yellow clothing; precisely, they were the Bai Clan’s Gu San and Guan Lao Da.

When the two of them saw Liu Ming, they were both startled and hastily stood up. Guan Lao Da hesitated somewhat as he asked:

“You are, young master?”

“It’s only been a year since we’ve seen each other and the two of you don’t even recognize me.” Liu Ming faintly smiled as he walked over and proceeded to sit down on another chair.

“So it really is young master. This is truly good news. The current young master looks very different from before. It seems that the Clan Leader will be shocked when he sees you.” When Guan Lao Da made clear of the situation, the astonishment on his face finally disappeared. He immediately stepped forward and respectfully spoke.

The adjacent Gu San also stepped forward and paid his respects, but the expression on his face was complicated.

When the two of them delivered Liu Ming to the Barbarian Ghost Sect, they had no idea that the youngster in front of them would be able to pass the Opening Spirit Ceremony. Unexpectedly, Liu Ming had become a disciple here.

Seeing each other today, the status between the three of them was now substantially different.

“My appearance has been altered due to cultivation. Nevertheless, why did you come here? Could it be that some problem has arisen in the Bai Clan?” Liu Ming explained his predicament before continuing to calmly speak.

“I see! When Clan Leader learned that young master had become a Spirit Apostle in the Barbarian Ghost Sect, the entire Bai Clan celebrated for three days and three nights; even eldest daughter returned because of this special occasion. Furthermore, the two of us have come here under the orders of the Clan Leader to present you with a secret letter personally written by him.” Guan Lao Da said. He then retrieved a black lacquered letter which was sealed tight and passed it over to Liu Ming with both of his hands.

“Eldest daughter? Oh, you must be talking about my elder sister Bai Yan Er! How about this: why don’t you come with me and we can find another place to discuss things.” After Liu Ming heard what was said, his gaze swept the surrounding area. He did not immediately open the letter; instead, he told them to find a different place.

Guan Lao Da and Gu San naturally didn’t dissent to this idea.

Liu Ming brought the two of them out of the watchtower and after



performing a single handed technique, a grey cloud condensed next to him. He called for the two of them to stand on it and then started flying the cloud. They then travelled towards a distant and remote mountain top.

In the time it takes to have a cup of tea, Liu Ming brought the now pale guests to a bald and bare mountain top.

When the two of them descended to the ground, their legs nearly gave way and toppled over.

The two of them subsequently looked at Liu Ming with a face full of fear and respect.

“Okay, this place is barren so there shouldn’t be anyone who can eavesdrop. Now you can say what happened. If I remembered correctly, didn’t you say that once you returned to the Bai Clan, you would immediately leave for a foreign place? Why are still delivering a letter for the Bai Clan’s Clan Leader?” Liu Ming patted the letter in his hands and spoke with an extremely calm expression.

“Brother Liu, save us! The affair the two of us did has been discovered by eldest daughter. Moreover, eldest daughter has already planted a restriction on our bodies. Right now, our lives are hanging on a thread.

“That’s right, aside from this letter, eldest daughter also wanted us to bring another item to Brother Liu. She said that you would understand once you saw it.”

What made Liu Ming extremely surprised was that, in the next second, the two of them immediately knelt with a “pu tong” sound while they started talking with a runny nose and tears in their eyes.

“What!? That girl called Bai Yan Er already knows that I have replaced Bai Cong Tian? How does she know? The two of you need to carefully explain it to me!” Even though Liu Ming was calm, once he heard the two of them speak, his face slightly changed.

“Yes! Once the two of us returned to the Bai Clan, we wholeheartedly wanted to remove the poison in our body so we could freely break away

from the Bai Clan. When the news of Brother Liu becoming a Spirit Apostle arrived, Clan Leader had a lot more trust in the two of us. Finally, a couple of months ago, we had the opportunity to steal the medicine needed to cure us. However, when we were conspiring to leave the family, we were overheard by young lady Yan Er who had just returned. The eldest daughter is also a Spirit Apostle; we do not know what technique she performed on the two of us, but after a moment of vertigo, we unconsciously told her the whole story. Yet, after young lady Yan Er finished listening, she didn't punish us. Instead, she placed a restriction technique on the two of us and let us voluntarily leave without harm. After several days, when Clan Leader instructed us to send a letter to Brother Liu, the young lady also wanted us to send this item to you." Guan Lao Da quickly gave his account and then took out a bamboo slip from his bosom and gave it to Liu Ming.

Liu Ming raised his eyebrows and told the two of them to stand up first. He then accepted the bamboo slip and carefully looked over it. He found that the inscription on the bamboo was made up of long and slender Spirit Markings. It had quite a sophisticated appearance.

The current him naturally was not the same as when he first entered the sect and didn't understand anything about cultivation tools. After mumbling to himself irresolutely, he suddenly performed a single handed technique and hit an inscription on the bamboo slip.

A white light flashed.

The bamboo slip slightly trembled and then voluntarily flew out of his hand. It hovered in the air for a bit before a garish sunrise of colors suddenly appeared and congealed into a foot tall, youthful image of a girl.

However, the girl's projection was extremely blurry and one could only vaguely make out her seemingly beautiful face. After it appeared, it started talking.

"I would presume this is Fellow Liu. Younger sister, Yan Er was the nominal sister of that good for nothing Bai Cong Tian. When I learned about Brother Liu's situation, I should have personally gone and paid a

visit. My Fa Li is too low to store a lot on this Glyph so I will keep things short. Since Bai Cong Tian was able to die in a lowly thief's hands, it was probably due to his poor luck and ability so we cannot blame others for this loss. However, you were able to become a Barbarian Ghost Sect Spirit Apostle, but what you did use was a large amount of my Bai Clan's resources. Thus, shouldn't you compensate my Bai Clan? Otherwise, all I have to do is inform your sect that Fellow Liu cheated his spot into the sect and you shouldn't be able to get away. Nonetheless, doing this brings no benefits to our Bai Clan so I have a small proposal..."

Bai Yan Er's projection slowly continued talked while Liu Ming listened on expressionlessly. It was impossible to say what he was thinking.

"... since both parties will receive benefits from this, I believe that Brother Liu will not refuse. The letter my father gave you contains even more concrete conditions. All Fellow has to do is agree and you will not have to worry about anything else and can continue to be Bai Cong Tian. Another thing, although what Guan Lao Da and Gu San did is pardonable, the Bai Family cannot leave them alone. Thus, we will formally present them to Fellow as servants. As for the restriction on their bodies, all I did was use a few illusion techniques. I didn't actually do anything to them. Of course, if Brother Liu believes that they are too troublesome, you can just give them a send off. I will not have any complaints. Alright, what I had to say has already been said. If Brother Liu does not reply, I will take it that Fellow agrees with this. Haha. Although the Bai Clan lost a direct disciples, if it is able to gain a true Spirit Apostle then we could be considered to have profited from a disaster."

The girl's projection let out a soft smile before subsequently disappearing.

The bamboo slip suspended in the air suddenly turned in a ball of flame and spontaneously combusted; immediately turning into ashes.

When Liu Ming saw this, he rubbed his chin; his facial expression showing that he was in deep thought.

"Brother Liu... No... Lord Liu, the two of us wish for you to become our

master. From now on, we will be loyal and devoted ourselves to the Lord without any intention of duplicity.”

“If master has any tasks that need to be completed, Gu San will use all his effort to accomplish it.”

When Guan Lao Da heard Bai Yan Er say that there really were no restrictions on his body, he was initially overjoyed, but once he heard that Liu Ming could “give them a send off”, he was suddenly struck with terror. Guan Lao Da and Gu San looked at each other and once again knelt on the ground; quickly vowing to the heavens.

TL: Send off = Kill them

It was clear that these two were extremely afraid of Liu Ming following the words he heard from Bai Yan Er. Their lives were now in his hands.

“The two of you can stand. Why would I groundlessly take your lives? No matter the reason, if I did not meet the two of you back then I would have no method of becoming a Spirit Apostle. However, in order to maintain secrecy, I cannot let you go right now.” Liu Ming said while looking at them with a creased eyebrow.

“As long as Lord is content, you can use whatever method you deem fit on us. The two of us will not complain.” Guan Lao Da heard Liu Ming and involuntarily spoke hastily.

When the adjacent Gu San heard this, he also repeatedly nodded his head.

“Since this is the case, I will employ a few, small methods.” After listening to them, Liu Ming nodded his head and flipped his finger. Suddenly, a fine silver needle appeared and after a brief moment, it turned into a silver streak as it pricked into the bodies of Guan Lao Da and Gu San.

Guan Lao Da and Gu San naturally did not dare dodge the needle. They simultaneously felt their bodies become completely numb and were unsure of how many times the needle pricked them.

Liu Ming retracted his arm and the silver needle disappeared. He then

emitted a faint smile and said:

“Okay, this Silver Needle Puncture technique of mine can hide within your body for several years. Within this period of time, you will go to a few places and help me complete a few matters. As long as you do things well, I will help you undo the technique later. Moreover, I will also help you bring your family members here from the Bai Clan. After that, wherever the two of you want to go, I will not stop you.”

# Chapter 68: Life Expectancy

“What Lord would like us to do!” After hearing Liu Ming, Guan Lao Da was initially overjoyed, but slightly apprehensive as he inquired.

“Do not worry, I will not make you do anything that you are incapable of completing. You will only have to go to a few places in the mortal world and establish a few small minor powers. Additionally, you will have to collect some information and news for me. That is about it. These things shouldn’t be too difficult for two middle stage Practitioners.” Liu Ming said while giving off a smile that wasn’t really a smile.

“Lord, please be at ease. Perhaps we would not be able to help with other tasks, but something as small as this should not be a problem.” Guan Lao Da relaxed in his heart, immediately patting his chest as he responded.

“Good. The two of you will stay on the outside of the secy for a night. Once I have thought of your tasks, I will come back. When the time comes, the two of you will follow my directions and complete them.” Liu Ming indifferently commanded.

This time, Guan Lao Da and Gu San agreed together.

Thus, in the ensuing period of time, Liu Ming performed a single handed technique and once again condensed his grey cloud. He then brought the two of them back to the watchtower and then rode on towards Nine Infant Mountain.

Not long after, he returned to his residence, opened the door and casually found a chair to sit in. He then grabbed the Bai Clan Leader’s letter and took out the enclosed paper.

“He will let me continue to hold onto Bai Cong Tian’s name, but within the next ten years, I must strive to help the Bai Clan expand its influence. The Bai Clan will also supply me with resources to help me cultivate. It seems like the conditions are not too bad; it is also quite similar to what Bai Yun Er said. However, the last thing mentioned was for me to marry into the Mu Clan. They unexpectedly want me to marry Mu Mingzhu; are

they joking? That girl is currently very passionate with Gao Chong. How would she ever approve of a three spiritual pulse disciple? It's better if I let the Mu Clan convince the girl first!" After reading through the Bai Clan Clan Leader's letter, Liu Ming suddenly laughed. He talked to himself while rubbing his two fingers and turned the letter into a pile of ash.

He naturally did not plan on writing a letter back to the Bai Clan.

Early in the morning on the second day, Liu Ming left his dwelling and went to look for Guan Da Lao and Gu San.

He brought the two of them to a desolate place again and explained his tasks for them for an hour. After that he personally brought the two of them out of Barbarian Ghost Sect's mountain range with his Soaring Sky Technique. He subsequently went back to the sect alone.

Liu Ming did not directly return to his residence. Instead he went to the Main Peak's Returning Spring Hall.

This time, once he entered the wooden door, there was only one person on the first floor. However, this was naturally not Jia Lan but was another average looking girl.

This girl asked him a few questions before gesturing with her hands, letting him enter the second level.

Liu Ming was not polite and with just a few steps, he was already on the second floor. He then walked towards a side room that was emitting a medicinal smell, which he did not enter last time.

As Liu Ming moved to the side rooms pearl white curtain door, he couldn't help but stop in his tracks. From inside, a gentle voice sounded.

"You've already come here, why are you hesitating!? Youngster, come on in."

"Thank you Senior; I am sorry." Liu Ming heard these words and respectfully replied before opening the pearl curtain and entering.

However, once he entered and glanced around, he jumped in surprise.

Seated on a chair, adjacent to a medicinal furnace, shockingly, it was the green cloaked woman who he had previously seen on the third floor.

“Why is Senior here; shouldn’t you be...?” Liu Ming thought of last time when he had been turned away by the opposition party and couldn’t help but hesitate.

“Haha, it seems you have seen my older sister. Do not worry, we are not the same person, we are only twins. Thus we look the same.” When the cloaked woman saw Liu Ming dither, she giggled and good naturedly explain the situation.

“I understand now; I recognized the wrong person.” Liu Ming heard her explanation and realized that this cloaked woman was completely different from the one on the third floor. He immediately relaxed.

:However, youngster, based on your appearance, it doesn’t seem like you have sustained an injury or illness.” The cloaked woman said as she looked over him.

“I have just returned from the Ghost Hell Region and came across a small mishap. I recently felt that something is wrong with my body but after examining myself, I found nothing wrong. Thus, I would like to request for Senior to help me inspect my body and find any abnormal areas.” Liu Ming respectfully replied.

“Huh, your body is unwell? This scope is too broad. Nevertheless, if you really want to undergo a thorough examination I can use a examination formation, but the price is not small.” The cloaked woman didn’t feel anything out of the ordinary as she calmly spoke.

“How many Spirit Stones?” Liu Ming asked without the slightest hesitation.

“A hundred.”

Although the cloaked woman’s voice was gentle, the amount she spoke of made Liu Ming’s heart jump.

“May I ask Martial Aunt what the effect of this examination formation is?” The exorbitant price made Liu Ming somewhat hesitant.



“Do not worry, as long as there truly is something wrong with your body, this formation will definitely be able to discover it. Otherwise, how could I possibly take so many of Junior’s Spirit Stones. Honestly, these 100 Spirit Stones are used to operate the formation.” The cloaked woman nonchalantly replied.

“Then I will use it once.” Liu Ming weighed his options before biting his teeth and replying.

“Good. Come over here.” The cloaked woman was somewhat surprised by his response and after deeply looking at Liu Ming, she stood up and walked to a corner of the room.

At this time, Liu Ming discovered that the floor over there astonishingly contained a foot long light yellow formation inscription.

The cloaked woman grabbed a few snow white crystals and put them into a notch at the edge of the formation. She then indicated for Liu Ming to enter.

Liu Ming seemingly casually took off the Cultivating Soul Pouch on his waist and left it at the edge of the formation. He then entered the formation and sat down cross-legged.

The cloaked woman flipped her hand and an light yellow colored method tray appeared. She then thrust it at the formation.

A droning reverberated was sent around the entire formation as a misty golden light rose into the air, encompassing Liu Ming within it.

The cloaked woman started to mumble to herself; one of her fingers continuously pushed something on the formation tray. From within the tray, there were occasional bouts of light or inscriptions rushing out. It made one’s vision become extremely blurred.

“Your body is extremely healthy, your blood essence is sufficient and bone structure is exceptionally dense. It seems to be another level above that of normal people. Huh? Your Fa Li is extremely pure. You have already purified your Fa Li?!” The cloaked woman operated the method tray for a moment while muttering to herself, exposing a surprised

expression.

“My Fa Li truly has been purified.” Since it had been discovered by the Martial Aunt, Liu Ming didn’t bother trying to hide it.

“Unfathomable! Youngster, it seems that you are someone with incredible will power. According to my knowledge, when younger people purify their Fa Li, it requires a lot of time and effort. It further requires one’s faith in advancing to the next levels quickly to be ample, not caring about wasting time. Either that, or they are trying to take short cuts, and willingness to risk their lives.” The cloaked woman said a somewhat inquisitive expression.

“I do not actually know what sort of person I am. Nonetheless, has Martial Aunt finished the examination yet?” Liu Ming ambiguously replied before asking a question pertaining to himself.

“Not yet, just wait a bit longer. Mhm, there is nothing wrong with your Spirit Sea and your mental state is very steady, so there shouldn’t be anything wrong...” The cloaked woman controlled the formation tray while proceeding to talk.

However, once Liu Ming heard the woman say “there is nothing wrong with your Spirit Sea”, his eyes couldn’t help but emit a slightly disappointed expression.

“Huh, there seems to be something wrong with your life expectancy, it appears to have shortened!” Suddenly, the cloaked woman’s voice changed and a slightly astonished tone surfaced in her voice.

“My life expectancy has been shortened? If this is truly the case, could Martial Aunt look more carefully?!” When Liu Ming heard the woman, he naturally jumped in fright.

“Okay, I will look once again... mmm, I am correct. Your life expectancy really is showing signs of having been recently shortened by external factors. However, you do not need to be too worried because your life expectancy has not been shortened by that much. It seems like it has only been shortened by a few years. All you need to do is take some Spirit medicines and we can probably find a method to recover your lost years.

Apparently, when you were in Ghost Hell Region, you came across a demonic ghost that specializes in absorbing a human's life force. Next time you go into that area, as long as you prepare a few restraining techniques, there should be no problem. Okay, there's nothing else wrong with you." The cloaked woman gazed at the formation tray again before laughing slightly.

"My life expectancy has shortened. It seems that this I unwell feeling stemmed from this. Thank you for your directions; the next time I go to Ghost Hell Region, I will definitely take more care." Liu Ming let out a light sigh and bitterly smiled as he replied.

However, Liu Ming suddenly thought of when the bubble devoured his Fa Li, he had sensed something, as if a certain thing was being peeled away from his body. He couldn't help but feel his heart sink.

When the bubble ran out of Fa Li to absorb, it unexpectedly used his life force as a replacement. This was the same as taking one's life!

Nonetheless, in front of the cloaked woman, even if he was deeply troubled, he couldn't expose this. He stood up at once, leaving the formation and grabbing his Cultivating Soul Pouch. He once again gave his thanks and left.

After Liu Ming's silhouette disappeared, just as he entered the flight of stairs, the cloaked woman retracted her golden formation tray. She wore a trace of suspicion as she said to herself: "Don't tell me that a Absorbing Soul Beast has appeared in Ghost Hell Region again. If this really is the case, we must make sure that the disciples are more careful when travelling there."

Subsequently, the woman shook her head before she sat in her original chair. It seemed as if no one had ever visited.

.....

After the time it took to eat a meal, Liu Ming returned to his dwelling.

He immediately entered his cultivation room and sat down cross legged on his praying mat. He then closed his eyes and started to seriously

consider a solution to the mysterious bubble.

Otherwise, according to the current situation, the bubble would start absorbing his life force once the Fa Li in his body ran out. If so, he would not be able to survive very long.

He had arduously walked the path of cultivation and naturally did not want to end his journey so quickly.

Liu Ming sat like this for an entire day and night.

On the morning of the third day, he finally opened his eyes. His expression had loosened a bit and it seemed as if he had come up with a plan.

# Chapter 69: Misty Ship

After pondering for such a long while, Liu Ming finally thought of a method to deal with the mysterious bubble.

The first method was to imitate his most recent lucky encounter. This required him to borrow the White Bone Scorpion's Miasma in order to overcome the suction from the bubble.

However, this method was extremely dangerous. If he was even the slightest bit careless, he could end up becoming a ghost.

Moreover, even if he was willing to take this risk, there were too many unknown factors about how the bubble operated.

For example, if he was able to predict when the bubble would break out, he had to have a close, large source of Miasma. Otherwise, if he were to solely rely on the small amount of Miasma within his Cultivating Soul Pouch, it would be far from enough.

Besides, how could he ensure that the White Bone Scorpion would emit its strange ghost face, allowing him to smoothly absorb Miasma?

All of these reasons made Liu Ming ponder for a while. He finally decided on using this as a last resort.

After considering his options again, he still felt that the most dependable method was to raise his own cultivation level.

Ultimately, every time he advanced a stage in cultivation, his Fa Li magnitude would increase in multitudes.

If he was able to advance and become a late Spirit Apostle before the next bubble burst, the Fa Li in his body should be able to satisfy the engulfment.

Furthermore, if that bubble had enough Fa Li to devour, it would not take from his life force. This would allow him to re-enter the mysterious space where he could cultivate his various secret techniques for a great period of time.

However, advancing into a late stage Spirit Apostle was not an easy task.

Even though Liu Ming had managed to profit from a disaster and his Fa Li became much more pure as a result, he would still need nearly two years before he could advance another stage.

The amount of time between the bubble's first two appearances was only half a year. Given this length of time, he would most likely not be able to accomplish his task.

If that was the case, he could only choose to increase his Fa Li by using medicine pills.

Although using external forces to obtain Fa Li would affect his future advancements, the bubble's intrinsic effect would purify his Fa Li. Thus, this didn't make him too worried.

Therefore, the only problem now was where he could find these medicinal pills to increase his Fa Li.

If he were to only use Contribution Points to trade for these pills, it would naturally not be enough. If he were to only trade contribution points for pills once, it would be fine. However, if he were to continuously make the trade, it would attract too much attention and bring him a lot of trouble.

In this way, the only options for him were to either go outside the sect to purchase pills, or learn the art of concocting pills himself.

Amongst these two methods, one could be used as a short term solution while the other was a long term solution.

Liu Ming thought of the former's need to spend a plethora of Spirit Stones and the latter's learning difficulty and he couldn't help but produce a frown.

Especially regarding the latter option, alchemists were extremely rare and even though he wanted to learn the art, he had no teacher to learn it from.

However, this issue directly pertained to his life, so even if it was extremely difficult to learn, he had to try his best.

With this thought in mind, Liu Ming naturally did not stay in his room to cultivate. Instead, he went to Nine Infant Mountain's peak.

Currently, the quickest way to earn Spirit Stones would be through sect missions.

Before starting missions, he planned on learning a few new techniques and then refining another, better quality, Soul Shackling Chain.

After all, in order to obtain more Spirit Stones, one must take on the sect's more dangerous missions. Thus Liu Ming had to make some preparations in advance.

An hour later Liu Ming departed the peak of the mountain, he now had three more technique books in his possession. These were, "Spider Web Technique", "Icicle Technique" and "Silt Technique".

However, he didn't immediately head back to his residence. Instead, he directly went to the sect's main peak.

TL: He was at faction's main peak

In a short while, he appeared in a large, black hall. He was standing in the center of the hall, in front of a grey formation and had just received his name plate back from a short and tall man.

"Remember clearly; you only spent 20 contribution points so you can only stay in the Soul Swamp for eight hours. If you do not come out within the allotted time, the price will be multiplied the longer you stay." The skinny, tall man coldly said. He then thrust a ghost head medallion directly toward the formation.

Instantly, the entire formation produced a droning sound, and billowing wisps of black gas rose up.

Liu Ming didn't respond; he merely strode into the formation.

Inscriptions appeared around the formation, and his silhouette disappeared into the smoke.

A second later, Liu Ming opened his eyes and found that he had astonishingly appeared in a large cave.

This cave was a hundred acres large, and in the center was a black pool that was wider than 10 feet. Traces of black smoke unceasingly rose from within it.

Liu Ming let out a light breath. Suddenly, he smelled a familiar aroma.

He didn't hesitate and started walking straight towards the Soul Pool. His eyes fell on the pitch black ink-like pool water and after a glance, he retrieved a fist sized dark green stone. He then wrapped it in a sparkling rope and threw the stone into the pool. Finally, he sat on the edge quietly with a silver ring in his hand.

.....

A few hours later, Liu Ming wore a face of satisfaction as he reappeared in the grey formation. Immediately, he walked out of the large hall and directly returned to his residence.

Seven days later, he left his residence again. He had not only begun to learn the new techniques, but he had also refined another Soul Shackling Chain that was much darker and more lustrous than the previous one.

Liu Ming rode his cloud towards Duty Hall. After waiting in front of the announcement board for a moment, he went to the stone table and took three sect missions with decent Spirit Stone rewards. He subsequently left alone.

Half a month later, Liu Ming's face was riddle with exhaustion as he entered the Duty Hall once again. Astonishingly, all three missions had been completed, and he received 10 Contribution Points and a couple hundred spirit stones as his reward.

This instantly caused a small uproar around the nearby disciples.

However, Liu Ming did not bother staying and went directly back to his residence where he slept for two days and two nights. He then appeared in the Duty Hall full of vigor. Once again, he received a few missions with large amounts of Spirit Stones as a reward and flew out of the sect.



Liu Ming would pass his days like this. In the blink of an eye, five months had gone by.

In this period of time, Liu Ming had practically completely given up on cultivating. Instead he displayed a shocking efficiency in sweeping across the crystal monument's various missions of different difficulties. Thus his contribution points and Spirit Stones rose at an unsurmounted rate. Within these months of time, he had accumulated nearly 600-700 contribution points and over 3000 Spirit Stones.

Although he had encountered danger many times, he always managed to retreat with strokes of luck somehow on his side.

It was the White Bone Scorpion and his complete mastery of the Wind Blade Technique that were his largest supporters in these difficult situations.

During this time, Liu Ming did not work with anyone and would complete all the missions on his own. Therefore, other than Jia Lan, who knew Liu Ming possessed a warrior level ghost, everyone else were extremely surprised by his rate of mission completion. They were also unable to tell his true strength.

Of course, there were many people who looked at him in a jesting manner and gave him a nickname: "Mission Madman"

In their eyes, if a new disciple did not cultivate with discipline and instead used most of his time to complete missions, this was an extremely idiotic method of ignoring the fundamentals and chasing the superfluous.

Liu Ming paid no heed to this. Aside from using the majority of his contribution points to purchase Fa Li increasing pills and compensate for his lack of recent cultivation, he had not used any of his Spirit Stones.

However, today, Liu Ming did not continue to complete missions. Instead, he left his dwelling and flew out of the main sect gate.

A short while later, he quietly descended on a small mountain top. There, a group of over ten male and female disciples were waiting.

Amongst the group, the majority of them were new apprentices who

were not even 20 years old. Some of them wore excited expressions and were looking everywhere; however, one boy and one girl made Liu Ming's gaze stiffen.

These two people were Lei Zhen and the other small girl from Heaven's Secret faction.

They were whispering each other and clearly did not pay heed to Liu Ming's arrival.

Liu Ming would further not take the initiative and greet them. Instead, he silently stood to the side and waited like the others.

A moment later, a distinct bird cry suddenly sounded from far away in the sky. Subsequently, a humongous eagle flew towards them and within a short period of time it arrived above the mountain.

The humongous black eagle's wings retracted and it created a gust of wind as it landed on the mountain top. A blue robed and a green robed girl jumped off of its back.

"Huh, why is Martial Uncle Zhang not here... Isn't that the fifth ranked person on the Lunar Monument, senior Qian?!" After seeing the faces of the two girls, everyone was shocked and showed surprise on their faces. In addition, a couple of the older disciples started looking at each others after they realized the identity of the blue robed girl.

When Liu Ming heard the words "Lunar Monument", he also looked at the two girls in surprise.

He saw that the slightly older blue robed girl had a very slender body. Her face was melon shaped and held a rather pretty complexion; on her back was a white longsword. Adjacent to her was the green robed girl who looked about 16 or 17 years old. She had a doll face and pigtailed hair, making her appear extremely cute. She was carrying a rectangular package in her hands that looked very heavy.

"Master Zhang has some important business at the moment and cannot personally bring you disciplines. The sect has thus tasked us with the mission of bringing you all to Wei Zhou Market. Everybody has already

paid their contribution points at the Duty hall in order to participate in this trip. If one of you were to change your decision now, you can still receive half your contribution points back. If there is no one, then we can leave now.” The blue robed girl’s eyes swept through the various people on the mountain top as she spoke indifferently. Although her voice was soft, everyone heard her clearly.

Apparently, this was the so called “Senior Qian”.

Everyone looked at each other, but there were naturally no one who were willing to stand out.

“Since there are no problems, we can leave right now. Cui Er, release the Misty Boat!”

“Yes, Senior.”

The green garmented girl heard her senior and immediately replied in a crisp voice. She instantly dropped the package on the ground and took out a light yellow scroll from her sleeve. After opening it, she laid it flat on the ground.

Liu Ming watched with rapt attention. He saw that a vague large yellow boat had astonishingly been painted on the scroll. Steaming fog arose from all four sides, obscuring people’s vision.

# Chapter 70: Cui Er

The young girl called Cui Er mumbled to herself and suddenly smacked the scroll.

“Pu!” A great billow of yellow gas, mixed with multicolored inscriptions, rushed out of the scroll. It rose to a height of over 120 feet before it started whirling and solidifying; finally condensing into a large translucent yellow ship.

This ship seemed to be humongous, but it was extremely hazy, as if it had no entity or substance.

“Okay, all the disciples may board now.” Senior Female Apprentice Qian did not care about the startled expressions of the various disciples and flew up to the Misty Ship with the green robed young girl.

The others looked at each other before they started boarding the ship in a flurry.

“Huh, it’s you again?”

Lei Zhen and the small girl flew onto the Misty Ship and walked around for a bit before finally noticed the not too distant Liu Ming; they were slightly surprised.

“I really did not expect to bump into Brother Lei here.” Since the other person talked to him, Liu Ming responded by nodding his head.

“If I remembered correctly, Junior Bai is a disciple of Nine Infant Mountain’s Master Gui. If you do not cultivate diligently in your sect and instead run all over the place, you may end up interfering with your cultivation!” Lei Zhen’s gaze flashed as he said this. He obviously knew of Liu Ming’s nickname and thought he understood the situation.

“Eh, Brother Lei has heard of this disciple’s nickname. I am going to the Weizhou Market to finish some pressing business. Even if I end up squandering some time, I cannot do anything about it.” Liu Ming was startled for a bit at first before he started laughing.

“I have heard that a “Mission Madman” recently appeared in the Duty

Hall. Within the past few months, he has completed around forty to fifty missions; apparently, he is also a newer disciple and his surname is Bai, is it you, Brother Bai!" When the girl besides Lei Zhen heard Liu Ming talk, she suddenly spoke while laughing.

"Hai! If there isn't another newer disciple with the surname Bai, then it is most likely me. Recently, I have been under frugal conditions and could only complete missions to earn some Spirit Stones." Seeing the opposition's lack of malice, Liu Ming could only lightly cough and reply.

"It really is Brother Bai! Zeze, I too have heard some of the Senior Apprentices talk about you. The missions that Brother Bai completes are dangerous, even to some of the older disciples. You unexpectedly managed to complete them so quickly; could it be that there is a secret knack to completing missions? Oh, that's right! I am called Ouyang Fei and am a disciple under the Heaven's Secret Faction." The girl spoke with a lot of emotion. She also smiled sweetly as she introduced herself.

"Junior Ouyang is joking. How could the sect's missions have a secret knack to them? One only has to spend a bit of time and be equipped with enormous luck, then he or she will be able to complete this amount of missions." When Liu Ming could offer a vague reply to the girl's questions.

"Hmph, did you really think that I, Lei Zhen, would believe you? If we have the chance, let us compare skills. I believe that Junior Bai's strength should give me some unexpected surprises." Lei Zhen's eyes stared at Liu Ming like lightning before he gave a harumph.

"Brother Lei is joking; you have a Nine Lightning Spiritual Pulse body. How could I be a match for you?" Although Liu Ming was somewhat surprised, he naturally shook his head.

"If we haven't even compared skill before, how would you know that you aren't my match? I have heard that you fought with Nine Enlightenment Mountain and even managed to defeat some of their genius disciples. There's no way such information could be fake." When Lei Zhen heard Liu Ming, a peculiar expression manifested on his face as he questioned

Liu Ming.

“How does Brother Lei know about this?” Liu Ming was extremely startled by Lei Zhen’s dialogue.

“It seems that Brother Bai still doesn’t know that the news of your victory over Nine Enlightenment Mountain’s geniuses was spread around by a few Nine Infant Mountain disciples. This issue made your faction’s people gain quite a bit of face. Additionally, your recent sweeping through of the Duty Hall’s missions has pushed your fame even higher; your name in the sect really isn’t small.” Ouyang Fei giggled as she spoke.

When Liu Ming heard this, he could only bitterly laugh.

“Since Junior Bai does not wish to compare skill right now, we can just wait until the Large Competition in half a year. When that time comes, you cannot evade such a large event!” Lei Zhen indifferently said as he stared at Liu Ming.

“I naturally cannot skip the Sect’s Large Competition. However, this does not necessarily mean that I will come across Brother Lei in the competition.” Liu Ming could only forcibly laugh as he spoke.

“That is of no matter to me. All I have to do is watch you fight and I will naturally know your strength. I hope that you don’t disappoint me.” Lei Zhen’s said in a lofty voice before he left without saying anything else.

Ouyang Fei smiled apologetically at Liu Ming as she followed Lei Zhen.

Seeing this, Liu Ming could only shake his head.

Nevertheless, in his heart, his impression of Lei Zhen had improved a bit.

Although Lei Zhen seemed to be extremely arrogant and belligerent, his inherent nature seemed to actually be quite simple.

Since this was the case, the Heaven’s Secret Faction probably ordered Ouyang Fei to accompany him in case of any mishaps.

Liu Ming pondered for a while as the Misty Ship became shrouded in a faint layer of light. It cloaked everyone within and, after a vibration, flew

off into the distance.

Liu Ming found an empty corner on the ship and stood there without moving. He then looked out of the external cloak of light to determine the Mist Ship's speed.

Although the Misty Ship flew several times faster than his Soaring Sky Technique, it was still far from the speed of the Flying Jade Spirit Boat.

It seemed like this wasn't a flying totem but was instead a manifestation of some sort of technique coupled with a special practitioner weapon.

Liu Ming researched the secret of the Misty Ship while rubbing a small pouch in his sleeve.

The pouch contained 30 abnormally clear crystals; these were the middle level Spirit Stones that Liu Ming had obtained from the the Sect and were the fruits of his completed missions.

Otherwise, he would have had to carry a large bag with over 3000 low level Spirit Stones in it.

The reason why Liu Ming was willing to spend over 100 contribution points to go to Weizhou Market was so he could exchange his Spirit Stones for pills that could increase his Fa Li.

After all, the interval between the mysterious bubble's flare up was only half a year.

Thus, he had to take advantage of the time in between the flare ups and increase his cultivation before the bubble appeared again.

According to what he understood from others, if he was to not consider the quality of the medicinal pills, he should be able to buy a plethora with how many Spirit Stones he had.

However, the quality of medicinal pills was extremely important for a cultivator.

Using high quality medicinal pills would not only increase one's Fa Li, the interior medicinal quality was purer and the impurities fewer so it

would lessen the buildup of the user's resistance to the medicinal powers.

After all, once a cultivator's body developed too high of a resistance against the medicine's powers, using similar pills would no longer have much of an effect.

The higher the level of medicinal pills, the more quality was emphasized.

Ultimately, if one's cultivation level was low, only a few Fa Li increasing pills would let his or her cultivation increase. On the other hand, once one became a Spirit Master or reached an even higher level, one would have to take tens or hundreds of medicinal pills to advance just a small step.

When one reached this stage, consuming higher quality medicine would help one be able to consume more medicine which meant that one's Fa Li could increase much more.

Identically, there were some medicinal pills with special effects that would be more effective if the pill was of a higher quality.

Therefore, the price of higher quality medicinal pills could be almost 10 times the price compared to pills of regular quality; this happened quite often in the cultivation world.

Nonetheless, this sort of situation was too far away from Liu Ming current self.

Presently, he was only a middle level Spirit Apostle so he did not have to pay much heed to this issue.

Liu Ming gazed outside of the Misty Ship and sighed as he thought about this.

His heart stirred and he suddenly turned around.

He saw that, several meters adjacent to him, the young girl named Cui Er had unknowingly appeared. Her eyes unwaveringly stared at him. No, it would be more accurate to say that she was staring at the black leather bag on his waist.



“Does Senior have anything to tell me?” Liu Ming was scared by the opposing party’s gaze and forced a smile as he asked a question.

“This aura is not wrong; it really is a Cultivating Soul Pouch. Junior, I want to consult something with you, how about you sell your Cultivating Soul Pouch to me?” The green robed girl heard Liu Ming’s question and her gaze reluctantly left the leather bag. She immediately asked a question as she rushed towards Liu Ming with a face full of smiles.

“Unfortunately I will have to disappoint Senior. I cannot sell this item.” Liu Ming shivered and immediately shook his head as he responded.

“Junior’s answer shouldn’t be so resolute, how about I use a top quality Practitioner weapon to trade... That won’t do... How about two!?” The green robed girl subsequently said.

When Liu Ming heard this, his expression couldn’t help but slightly freeze.

This Cultivating Soul Pouch was treasure that was nearly equivalent to a totem. The opposition unexpectedly wanted to trade two Practitioner Weapons for it, what kind of idea was this? Could it be that she was planning to forcibly steal it from him?!

However, looking at the green robed young girl’s cute and beaming expression, that was most likely not the case.

Liu Ming remained vigilant as he subsequently shook his head.

The green robed young girl quickly raised her offer to three practitioner weapons. She had an extremely persevering spirit.

“Cui Er, what are you doing? Quickly come here.”

Just at this time, a cold voice resounded from another direction.

Liu Ming raised his head and saw that Senior Qian had walked over. She spoke expressionlessly to the green robed young girl.

“Huh, why is Senior not controlling the ship? We had better not fly in the wrong direction.” When the green robed young girl saw that Senior Qian walked over, she immediately walked over to her as if her butt had

been set on fire. Simultaneously, she apologetically smiled as she talked.

“Hmph, I let Liu Zhu temporarily help me control the flying ship. On the other hand, you are continuing to assault people. Once you see something you like, you endlessly pester people until you get your way. This Junior, please do not mind her. Cui Er, this girl does not have any malicious intentions. It is only that her natural disposition is quite naughty.” Senior Female Apprentice Qian harrumphed and scolded the young girl before turning and speaking unhurriedly to Liu Ming.

“It’s okay, Senior Cui Er did not do anything excessive.” Since Liu Ming was facing one of Barbarian Ghost Sect’s top five core disciples, he did not dare disregard anyone as he spoke.

“One more thing. What is Junior’s name? And what faction are you under?” Senior Female Apprentice Qian nodded her head, but as her gaze swept across the leather bag on his waist, she asked another question.

“My surname is Bai and I am the disciple of Nine Infant Mountain’s Master Gui!” Liu Ming did not know the opposition’s intention, but did not plan on hiding anything.

“Eh? You are under Master Gui. It seems that your Cultivating Soul Pouch was not conferred to you by the Sect. I am going to suggest something to Junior, If you do not want this item to be easily recognized, you should probably rub it with red paint. By doing so, only a trifling amount of people will be able to recognize it. After all, there are lots of gossipers in Weizhou Market so it would be better to be careful.” Senior Qian insipidly said.

“Thank you for Senior’s advice. I know what to do now.” Liu Ming was slightly startled, but immediately expressed his thanks.

Senior Qian nodded her head before bringing the reluctant to leave, green robed girl with her as they left.

“Junior Bai, think about it some more. We can still negotiate the price!”

Cui Er’s voice suddenly resounded in Liu Ming’s ears; this made him completely speechless.

# Chapter 71: Selling Bones

In the subsequent few days, Liu Ming stayed out of sight on the Mist Ship. There was no one else who came to find him.

However, after carefully examining the situation, he found that after the passage of time, the Misty Ship's mist seem to become fainter. Of course, this change was extremely gradual and took a long time.

Five days later, the Misty Ship finally arrived at its destination: An easily accessible enormous ravine that was in Weizhou.

This ravine had a circumference of 10 miles and from the sky, it seemed like the interior contained plenty of orderly buildings in rows. Simultaneously, black dots acting as silhouettes of people unceasingly milled into and out of the buildings.

“Pu!”

The large ship descended a couple miles away from the ravine and disappeared after unloading everyone.

At this time, Senior Qian leisurely gathered everyone before saying:

“Listen carefully. Weizhou Market is one of the three largest markets set up by a coalition of sects in this country. Thus, no matter what Sect a disciple is from, he or she does not have any authority here. No one can violate the rules here. One of the most important rules is that no one is allowed to fight or fly within 10 miles of the surrounding area; this includes using flying tools. Violators of these rules will be apprehended and punished severely. Another thing, every sect will send one Spirit Master to take turns keeping watch. Therefore, don't have any ideas of escaping through luck. The Spirit Master from our Sect is Master Liu from the Mysterious Glyphs division. If you have a chance, perhaps you may come across him. This is the first time for many of you here at such a large market for most of you so your scope of knowledge should expand. However, if you truly plan on buying or selling items, you must be extra cautious. There are many deceitful people here and some of them are rogue cultivators. Additionally, there are others who come from

neighboring countries' sects. Most of these people are Spirit Apostles, but Spirit Masters will occasionally appear. If your mental ability is not enough and you are swindled, the sect will not be able to do anything. Okay, I have said what I needed to say. In three days, I will be here to take you back to the Sect. Right now, all you disciples can do what you want."

Once Senior Qian finished speaking, she nimbly brought the green robed Cui Er out of the ravine's exit.

The others looked at each other before subsequently following. There were also people who stayed and talked in groups of two or three.

Lei Zhen and the young girl talked for a short while before identically leaving the ravine.

From the beginning, Liu Ming had planned on moving by himself. He naturally did not stay and after a short while, casually started his journey.

In the time it takes to eat, Liu Ming arrived at the ravine's exit. Sounds of bustling activity transmitted from far away.

His gaze faintly wavered and his legs did not stop as he quickly walked into a orderly stone street.

The street's two sides were constructed of limestone. The tallest pavilions were over a hundred feet and the shortest single buildings were only a few tens of feet high. It seemed like all of the buildings were shops opened by cultivators.

There were cultivators wearing various things with various different cultivations and strolled through the street or wandered into the buildings on both sides.

Moreover, Liu Ming had seen a couple disciples of his Sect who were originally in front of him but had suddenly disappeared in a second. It seemed like they had ran off to some other place.

Faced with this, Liu Ming was even less anxious as he leisurely walked along the street. His eyes would often stop on the shops in both sides as he examined them.

A while later, he understood quite a bit more.

Although there were many shops, they were split into many categories.

There were some shops that specialized in purchasing and selling certain materials. Other stores that specifically sold medicine or glyphs. Some even sold or took custom made orders for practitioner weapons. However, the larger shops conducted all sorts of business, so much so that some even had signs advertising totems for sale. These made Liu Ming abruptly stop in front of them before bitterly laughing and leaving.

Liu Ming didn't even need to ask to realize that either the quality of the totem had problems or that the totems had an exorbitant price that Liu Ming wouldn't even be able to think about.

Liu Ming would examine the shops and walk in from time to time and ask for the item prices.

When he finished looking at this street, he turned and walked down the neighboring road.

Four hours later, Liu Ming walked to the end of a street and astonishingly saw a plaza that was the size of a few acres. Astonishingly, there were many people running street stalls here and the appearance of this area was quite like Barbarian Ghost Sect's Grey Market.

Astounded, Liu Ming proceeded to stroll near the vendors. Surprisingly, he found a few useful items for sale, but after asking for the price, he could only shake his head and walk away.

However, when he walked to a middle aged man whose face looked sickly, he was attracted by a animal scroll with ancient text on it. He couldn't help but look over it and ask: "How much are you offering this "Comprehensive Guide of the Foundation for Refining Pills" for?"

"Aside from explaining the basics of refining pills, this book also includes a few basic pill formulas. It has a fixed price of 50 Spirit Stones." The middle aged man lifted his head and looked at Liu Ming before lazily replying.

"50 Spirit Stones!"

When Liu Ming heard the price, he shook his head and put the book back down. However, after his eyes swept through another pile in the vendor's booth, he couldn't help but ask another question: "What about these items?"

"One complete set of low grade set of refining pill equipment; 300 Spirit Stones."

The middle aged man indifferently responded after looking at the slightly worn out small cauldron, medicine basin and medicine pestle that made up the set.

"If you give this book to me for free, I will buy these items." When Liu Ming heard the middle aged man's reply, he spoke without the slightest hesitation.

He had seen the identical set of Refining Pill Equipment at a previous store, but the price was 500 Spirit Stones. Moreover, these items had a faint medicinal scent to them so they were most likely genuine refining tools.

"Present it as a gift to you!... Okay, you are my first customer today so I will do you a favor." The middle aged man was somewhat flabbergasted by Liu Ming's request. He lifted his hands and looked at Liu Ming again before suddenly smiling and replying.

Liu Ming was overjoyed and immediately withdrew three clear Spirit Stones. He proceeded to hand them over.

The middle aged man immediately received and after recognizing the quality of the Spirit Stones, nodded his head.

Liu Ming put away the book and the set of refining tools. Satisfied with his find, he then left the plaza.

The entire market was extremely big and was nearly equivalent to a mid-tier city.

Liu Ming spent a day before looking through over half of the shops.

Then, as the sky turned dark, he went to a tavern that provided resting

areas to sleep for the night. On the second day, he continued to wander down the remaining streets.

Although many shops had Fa Li pills for sale, Liu Ming only had a limited amount of Spirit Stones and planned on selling some other items. He naturally wanted to find the best quality to price ratio and a trustworthy shop before making his move.

It was noon before he finished looking through the last shop. He had already made up his mind.

An hour later, he entered a two storied pavilion that had the banner “Hundred Treasures” hanging in front of it.

This store could be considered mid-tier in the ravine. The interior contained countless rows of wooden shelves containing myriads of items while there were two shop assistants presenting the various items in the shop to guests. Furthermore, there was also an older shopkeeper who sat behind a sales counter.

Despite the small size, the pavilion’s business seemed to be exceptionally good and there were cultivators constantly entering.

Liu Ming entered the shop and a while later, he managed to walk up to the sales counter when there was no one there. He placed a boxed item on the desk and said to the old man: “Shopkeeper, please give me a Spirit Stone appraisal for the item inside and then we will discuss other things.”

When the old man heard this, he was not startled at all, and instead wore a smile as he nodded his head and said:

“Okay; I request for Fellow to wait a bit. This old man will look at it first.” As he spoke, the old man opened the jade box and with rapt attention, stared inside. However, his face immediately changed.

“What a strong aura, this is...” The old man was shocked. His hand moved and picked out a soybean sized white item from within the box. It was the bone fragment from the enormous green haired rat.

“May I ask Fellow, what kind of demon did this item come from?” The old man was worthy of being this store’s shopkeeper. In one glance he

had recognized the item's true identity and asked his question.

"It was left behind by a enormous Rat Demon." Liu Ming didn't have intentions of hiding anything and calmly replied.

"Left behind by a Rat Demon; this is truly abnormal. Normally, Rat type Demons rarely advance into high levels. Please wait a moment Fellow, I am going to gauge this item's true strength." When the old man heard this, his face exposed a trace of doubt as he spoke.

Liu Ming naturally wouldn't oppose this; he was equally curious as to what cultivation level the enormous green haired rat possessed.

Thus, the old man bent over and grabbed a palm sized silver formation dish from under the table. He proceeded to place the bone fragment in his hands on the dish and performed a single handed technique.

In the next second, the entire formation dish emitted a droning sound and a multitude of glyph symbols appeared on top; the glyphs unceasingly changed shapes.

"Peak late stage of the Liquid Level!" In the next moment, the old man involuntarily cried out and seemed to not believe the scene in front of him. He rapidly performed the technique again, but the formation dish's glyph was still the same as before.

"Please wait a moment fellow. The value of this item is too large, so this old man cannot be the person who makes the decision. I must request for the owner to personally come. Could Fellow put away the item carefully and wait in the VIP lounge." The old man let out a long breath of air before rapidly speaking to Liu Ming.

"Okay, I will be happy to wait." When Liu Ming heard the words "peak late stage of the Liquid Level", he also couldn't help but jump in fright.

One must know that his original assessment for this rat was that it was at most an early stage Liquid Level Demon. This new actual prediction meant that the large green furred rat unexpectedly was a demon that was not far away from entering the Crystal Level and was about to become a High Leveled Demon like the Dragon from the Suppressing Dragon



Island.

This meant that the Rat Demon was a whole two levels higher than what Liu Ming had expected and also, the value of the bone fragments would undergo an exceptional increase.

Not wonder he had such an effect from using the large rat's meats even without them having been refined into a pill. Just that by itself pushed his Fa Li instantly to the Middle Spirit Apostle stage.

The woman called Ye Tianmei was easily able to kill this beast; she must have been the same as Ghost Barbarian Sect's various Crystal Level masters.

When Liu Ming thought of the Ye Tainmei's pretty face, an extremely strange feeling couldn't help but well up in his heart.

# Chapter 72: The Woman and Boy

Was it that Ye Tianmei only looked young while in reality, she was already a near 100 year old hag!

Liu Ming shook his head in his heart and tossed the idea into the back of his mind. As he was lead into a refined small room on the second floor by the old man, a pretty girl immediately offered him an aromatic tea.

The old man then left the room to find the owner.

After the time it takes to have a cup of tea, the sound of footsteps transmitted from outside the room. A middle aged woman wearing a long purple dress was brought into the room by the old man.

The woman's facial appearance seemed ordinary but if one looked some more, he or she would realize that the woman had an inordinately graceful aura.

The old man introduced one another:

"Fellow, this is our store's owner, Lady Yu. This Fellow, on the other hand, is the owner of the demon bone that I spoke of earlier.

"Lady Fu."

Liu Ming stood up and humbly bowed.

"There is no need to be so polite, Fellow. I am merely a Spirit Apostle. I don't know if this Fellow can retrieve the Spirit Bone and let me look at it." Lady Fu returned the greeting and wore a slight smile as she spoke.

"Of course there is no problem."

When Liu Ming heard the woman's request, he retrieved a wooden box from his sleeve and placed it on the table.

Lady Yu stepped forward and opened the box. She used her long and slender fingers to pick out and examine a white bone fragment.

The woman held a cautious appearance and her expression was that of extreme concentration. It seemed like the bone fragment in her hand wasn't something insignificant that countless people would dump in their

trash and instead was a rare treasure.

A while later, after looking over it, the woman lifted her hand and took out a wooden hairpin from her hair bun. She used the pointed end to gently dab the bone fragment in her hand.

An inconceivable thing occurred.

The originally light yellow wooden hairpin, unexpectedly turned colors in an instant. It transformed into a dark blue color.

“This truly is the bones of a Demon at peak of the Liquid level. Although there isn’t much in here, it is enough to forge into a small sized totem.” The woman showed a smile as she said.

“A totem!” When Liu Ming heard this, his heart moved.

“That’s right, a part of the reason as to why totems are so rare is because that they are not easy to forge and the success rate is quite low even with the right material. However, even more so, it is due to a lack of materials that can be used create the totem that contribute to its rarity. Fellow, these sorts of peak late stage liquid level Demon Bones coincidentally are one of the most appropriate principal materials for forging a totem. Of course, during the course of forging one, other items must be added and their costs are not cheap either.” The woman explained; she was slightly reluctant as she put the bone fragment in her hand back into the box.

“I see now.” Liu Ming came to a revelation after hearing the explanation. A favorable impression of the Lady Fu was left in his heart.

Just the fact that the opposing party, in this case, had not hidden the Demon bone’s usage and had calmly told him of the item’s rarity made the “Hundred Treasures” shop worthy of its reputation.

“Elder Wang told me that the reason why Fellow produced this item was not to sell it, but instead conduct business with us. Is this correct?” Lady Fu replied.

“I really did plan on doing this. Nevertheless, right now, I would like to ask Lady a question. If I wanted to sell the Demon bones in this box, how

many Spirit Stones would you buy it for?” Liu Ming’s gaze flashed as he slowly answered.

“The price of a normal totem is approximately 100,000 Spirit Stones. However, if the forging failed, the spirituality of the materials used would be rendered useless. I also have to factor in the cost of inviting a high level blacksmith to forge the totem. Furthermore, I must make a small amount of profit. Therefore, I would normally give such bones a price of 5000 Spirit Stones. Nevertheless, since Fellow’s Demon Bones were from a peak Liquid Level Demon, it has a chance of being refined into a high quality weapon. Thus, I am willing to pay another 2000 Spirit Stones, totaling to 7000 Spirit Stones for the Demon Bones. What does Fellow think of this price?” Lady Fu pondered a while before earnestly speaking.

“7000 Spirit Stones is indeed a fairly reasonable price.” Liu Ming nodded his head, but the palm in his sleeve couldn’t help but stroke another finger sized wooden box. His face emitted a contemplating expression.

When Lady Yu saw this, although she was slightly puzzled in her heart, the smile stayed on her face and she did not urge him.

“I planned on using most of the items in this box to exchange for some Fa Li increasing medicinal pills. The names and prices are all on here. As for the remaining Spirit Stones, I plan on purchasing a few Glyphs and materials for concocting pills.” Liu Ming considered his options for a while before finally keeping the small wooden box in his sleeve. From his body, he grabbed a sheet of paper and handed it over.

He had previously written down the items on the sheet.

“The pills you request are all low quality and the amount is of no problem. As for the concocting pill materials and the glyphs, I will have someone bring over the catalog and the price for Fellow to choose in a bit.” Lady Yu glanced over the items written down on the paper and responded.

Subsequently, the woman gave an order and the old man walked out of the room with the piece of paper.

A moment later, the pretty maid who had served him tea while walked

in with a thick catalog.

“Please take a look, Fellow. Most of the items we sell are within the book. Perhaps there are some things that might entice Fellow. One more thing: I still don’t know Fellow’s name. Is it possible to tell me?” Lady Yu passed the catalog over to Liu Ming and amiably asked a question.

“My surname is Liu, but I cannot tell you my full name.” As Liu Ming accepted the catalog, he indifferently spoke.

“So it is Fellow Liu.” Lady Yu giggled. It seemed she did not care that Liu Ming did not give his full name.

Liu Ming had already started flipping through and reading the book. He further had memorized all the items in his heart.

A while later, Elder Wang walked in again, this time with an extra dozen porcelain bottles that were varying in sizes. He then placed them on the desk in front of Liu Ming.

When Liu Ming saw the bottles, his eyes flashed and he put down the catalog; he then started to examine the porcelain bottles.

A moment later, he satisfyingly nodded his head and said to the old man:

“Aside from these medicinal pills, I also need five pounds of Deer Fragrance, three pounds of Scarlet Scaled Petals, half a pounds of Bezoar Powder, three large bottles of Ganlin liquid, a bottle of Scarlet Powder..., As for the glyphs, I need two Glyphs of Speed, two Spirit Covering glyphs, three Returning Spring glyphs..., and that’s about it. As for the remaining 100 Spirit stones, you can directly give them to me.” Liu Ming swiftly recited the names of the concocting pill materials and the glyphs.

When Elder Wang finished listening, he looked at the store owner, Lady Yu.

Lady Yu, in turn, smiled and nodded her head.

Elder Wang acknowledged this and left the room.

“Fellow Liu, since you are purchasing so many items, it probably won’t

be easy to bring them with you. You should buy a Storage Glyph!” Lady Yu thought for a while before suddenly speaking to Liu Ming.

“Aren’t Storage Glyphs only usable once one becomes a Spirit Master? Moreover, with such a trifling amount of items, using this glyph would be a waste.” When Liu Ming heard the suggestion, he was startled as he replied.

“Normal Storage glyphs obviously will not do. However, in the past few days, I aquired a couple Storage glyphs which had failed halfway through their manufacturing processes. Although they can only be used once, their storage space is limited and they cannot lighten the load of items that are in it, since Fellow is a middle stage Spirit Apostle, you can probably use it.” Lady Yu giggled as she spoke.

After Liu Ming heard this, his expression slightly changed.

.....

An hour later, Liu Ming exited the Hundred Treasures, but his hands were as empty as when he came in.

Subsequent to exiting, he did not directly return to the tavern. Instead, he immediately went to the most well known blacksmith shop in the city. He stayed there for four hours before he left with a smile on his face.

At this time, the majority of his remaining Spirit Stones, and the other slender and small wooden box in his sleeve had astonishingly disappeared without a trace.

Soon after, Liu Ming immediately returned to the previous night’s tavern. He didn’t leave again that night.

On the morning of the third day, his figure once again appeared outside the ravine. He then rushed towards the meeting point several miles away.

Over there, a group of Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples were waiting.

Many people were excitedly discussing what they saw and what they bought in the city. However, there was no sign of Lei Zhen or Ouyang Ji.

After a period of waiting, some people appeared in the distance.

Liu Ming indifferently looked at them and found that it wasn't his Senior Qian and the others. Instead, it was a young woman with an extremely ample and alluring body. Adjacent to her, there was a skinny boy who looked no more than seven or eight.

The girl was wearing a pink garment and with every action she made, an extremely disturbing feeling of attracting one's spirit was raised. This made many Barbarian Ghost Sect male disciples' eyes glaze over.

When the woman saw this many people in front of her, she was slightly startled and immediately carried the boy in another direction.

However, after travelling about a hundred and twenty feet, the male child suddenly started to cry for no apparent reason...

The young woman instantly bent over and comforted him. Yet, the boy didn't pay any attention to this. The girl seemed exceptionally anxious and she fiercely smacked the boy twice.

The boy's crying grew even louder.

Just at this time, Senior Qian and Cui Er slowly walked over from the direction of the ravine.

"Junior Lei and Ouyang came across Master Zhang and received his blessings. Therefore, they will be staying here for a while longer and will not be returning with us." Senior Qian looked at the nearby young woman and boy. Her eyes displayed a flash of abnormality and she indifferently spoke.

When the other disciples heard this, they couldn't help but look at each other.

At this time, Senior Qian had already instructed the green robed girl to take out the scroll and perform the technique.

After a moment of effort, the large light yellow boat condensed in the air. Simultaneously, the Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples successively flew onboard.

A rumbling sound rang out and a light halo appeared before the Misty

Ship took off as it carried everyone towards Barbarian Ghost Sect.

At this time, the originally crying child suddenly came to a stop. He further lifted his head and coldly watched the Misty Ship's rear end as it flew off into the distance.

“It truly is a group comprised of only Spirit Apostles. They don't even have a Spirit Master. It seems that we will be able to do some business.” When the pink robed young woman saw the boy suddenly stop crying, she did not find it the least bit strange. Contrarily, she giggled and charmingly spoke.



# Chapter 73: Appearance of the Dragon

“Our mission has already ended. We have already determined that there are no Liquid Level cultivators amongst the Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples. The rest is for Xing Lao San and the rest of them to do. However, it seems that their flying tool is quite intricate. Perhaps it holds the ability to conceal its tracks. Will the Xing Lao San lose track of it?” The boy finally opened his mouth. His voice was abnormally old, almost like an old man’s.

“Don’t worry. Earlier, in the city, I planted the Thousand Mile Fragrance on a Barbarian Ghost Sect Disciple. Even if they are thousands of miles away, Xing Lao San should still be able to accurately locate them.” The pink robed young woman wore a sinister expression on her face as she spoke.

“Very good. In that case, since the group with Xin Lao San are all late Spirit Apostles, capturing these Barbarian Ghost Sect Disciples should be no problem. Okay, we should leave. After this is finished, the Kingdom of Xuan will not be able to sit still. We have to switch locations.” The boy satisfiedly nodded his head.

“Haha, it seems you want to leave. You need my permission first!”

Suddenly, a cold voice transmitted through the air.

This startled the young woman and the boy. Both of them looked towards the voice.

What they saw was a dignified elder who wore an embroidered gown with a jade belt on his waist. Both of his hands were behind his back and he was staring coldly at the two of them.

“Not good, it’s Old Freak Mu; scram!” When the pink robed young woman saw the man’s face clearly, her face immediately changed and she involuntarily cried out.

The adjacent boy didn’t say anything and raised his hand. A cluster of white mist rushed forth and enshrouded the surrounding dozens of feet

around him. Subsequently, he turned his body around and drilled into the ground.

“Peng!” A smothered sound rang forth. Both of the boy’s legs were only five inches into the ground when the surrounding earth suddenly became as hard as metal. This caused him to instantly be incapable of moving.

A bloody light flashed!

The boy’s head then immediately tumbled off and rolled off to the side. In a flash, another tall and skinny man, wearing a blood red robe, appeared. His hand was grasping a slender, blood red blade, which was now dripping with fresh blood.

When the second man appeared, the savage, long blade in his hand shook and promptly chopped the boy’s headless body into over 10 pieces. The spirit hidden inside the body let out a miserable shriek as it was subsequently transformed into green smoke under the onslaught of the red light.

“Boy of Eternal Youth! What a load of hogwash. A mere late stage Spirit Apostle and he still dares to call himself as such.” The male in the blood red robe coldly said.

“You are Hall of Blood’s Xue Ya!”

TL: Xue translates to blood

As the pink robed young woman looked at the blood red robed man, her face turned even more pale. However, after quietly retreating two steps, a green light flashed on her body and she unexpectedly turned into a green light that cleaved through the sky as it fled.

When the blood red robed man saw this, he gave a sneer but did not give chase.

The elder with an embroidered robe in midair didn’t say anything and merely shook his sleeve. A scarlet red, feathered fan appeared in his hand, he then lightly waved it.

“Pu!”

The young woman, who had already fled more than a hundred feet, instantly felt the surrounding space heat up. Her entire body was then morphed into a ball of flame that tumultuously burned.

A second later, the incomparably beautiful female cultivator disappeared without a trace in the air.

“Hmph, Old Freak Mu, I didn’t realize that you had cultivated your Miasmic Fire Technique to an even purer level. You were able to, unexpectedly, instantly plant a Miasmic Fire Seed in a late stage Spirit Apostle.” The blood red robed man snorted as he spoke after witnessing the spectacle.

“How can this insignificant skill of mine compare to Fellow’s Blood Knife?” The elder in the embroidered robe said. His eyes then looked over at the pile of flesh and blood next to the blood red robed man; an expression full of wary grew on his face.

The pile of flesh and blood was the remnants of the boy’s corpse.

“Nonetheless, this is somewhat weird. The rumor is that the chief of the Wasp Bandits, Boy of Eternal Youth, is a Spirit master. How come this person was only a late stage Spirit Apostle? If he was only a Spirit Apostle, why would they make both of us stay here?” The elder in the embroidered robe muttered to himself and had a slightly suspicious tone in his voice as spoke.

“Since it’s a rumor, it means that the information isn’t necessarily true. It was most likely an unfounded rumor started by the mortal world to exaggerate those who cultivate the demonic arts. Although this group of Wasp Bandit demonic cultivators has a large reputation, I have never actually heard of them fighting anyone. Those that were killed by their hands were all Spirit Apostle cultivators. They have never provoked a Spirit Master before. Most of their reputation comes from their malicious and treacherous methods, that’s all. This time, we received information beforehand and managed to set a trap for them; we further had the intent to catch all of them in one fell swoop. As we just now easily eliminated their leader, I believe that this is quite a normal affair.” The blood red

robed man nonchalantly said.

“Maybe so. Since we have eliminated two of their leaders, I believe that Fellow Zhang has already started moving over there.” The man in the embroidered robe pondered for a while before he nodded in agreement as he spoke.

“Hehe, the bait this time is Fellow Zhang’s disciples. Naturally, he has to personally resolve the issue to feel relieved. However, according to what I said, if these disciples are unable to resist these Spirit Apostle bandits, then even if they perish, it will not be too much of a pity.” The blood red robed man sneered as he spoke.

“It seems that Fellow Xue Ya believes that the Barbarian Ghost Sect is exactly like your Blood River Hall. Your sect’s disciples all cultivate the Path of Blood and Battle, so their genuine fighting experience is extremely rich and able to further hold their own against almost anything. Moreover, recently, the amount of new Barbarian Ghost Sect Disciples that are able to open their Spirit Pulse has been growing smaller and smaller. How could they be willing to forgo these disciples? Furthermore, within these disciples, there is a core disciple who ranks within the top ten in the sect.” The embroidered robed elder faintly smiled as he spoke.

“Core disciple... you are talking about the Qian girl, right? Her aptitude really is not that bad. Since she is part of the bait, then there is no wonder why Fellow Zhang is so meticulous. One more thing; did Fellow hear that a few months ago, Elder Chan of Barbarian Ghost Sect and Elder Yu of Nine Enlightenment Mountain simultaneous went somewhere and both returned injured?” The blood red robed male suddenly inquired.

“Fellow Xue is talking about that Scarlet Dragon right?” The embroidered robed elder was silent for a while before he suddenly replied with a laugh.

“It seems that your Wind-Fire Sect has also learned of this information. After thinking about it, I don’t remember the last time a Crystal Level Monster appeared in the Kingdom of Xuan. It seems that your sect’s Elder Chi Yang will definitely set out.” When the blood red robed man heard

this, he sighed.

“That is only natural. The entire body of a regular Crystal Level Demon is full of treasures. This is even more so for a Dragon type monster. Although the Barbarian Ghost Sect and the Nine Enlightenment Mountain were the first to discover it, they were unable to capture it at the time. Thus, they were incapable of covering up the information. I am afraid that it won’t only be my sect, neither your Hall nor the Heavenly Moon Sect will be able to sit still on this.” The embroidered robed elder did not conceal his intention as he spoke.

“If this really was the case, even if the Scarlet Dragon is formidable, it will be incapable of displaying its might. Although previously this Dragon was able to repel the two elders, there is no way it could have escaped completely unscathed.” The blood red robed man spoke what was on his mind.

“Fellow Xue Ya’s way of thinking is incorrect. According to the newest information I just received, although the Scarlet Dragon sustained injuries, it has long since left the Suppressing Dragon Island for a nearby district. We do not know where it hid itself to recuperate. Even if Crystal Stage elders possess boundless Fa Li, it will not be easy to find this Dragon. Moreover, with this sort of terrifying Demon hidden within our Kingdom’s borders, both you and I have to be more careful when travelling along. Otherwise, if we were to come across this monster, haha... I believe that in a few days, Fellow will receive a warning message from your Hall.” After speaking, the embroidered robed elder started laughing.

“There is no way the situation is that horrible. That Scarlet Dragon may very well have already fled the Kingdom of Xuan!” After hearing this, the blood red robed man’s face slightly changed.

“I hope that this is the case. However, according to the information I received, the injuries sustained by the Dragon were extremely severe. There is a very high chance that it will not be able to flee the Kingdom’s borders for a short while. Furthermore, you and I, who are both Liquid Level cultivators, are the optimal “potions” for healing the monster.” The

embroidered robed man shook his head before suddenly lowering his voice.

“Fellow is implicating that...” When the blood red robed male heard this, he couldn’t help but shiver.

“You and I are able to use Spirit Apostles as bait, so why cannot those powerful Crystal Level cultivators use us to draw out the Scarlet Dragon. Do not forget that a lot of Liquid Level Spirit Masters in the Kingdom of Xuan are currently defending the three largest Markets for the Sects.”

“Haha, Brother Mu is overthinking this!” The blood red robed male’s face proceeded to change quite a few times before he finally started to boisterously laugh.

“Mhm, it really could be that this old man is thinking too much. However, in the near future, if we were to have no choice but to travel outside the city, should we try our hardest to travel together?” When the embroidered elder heard this, he faintly smiled as he spoke.

“Sure, I have come across some problems while cultivating, I was in fact waiting to seek out Brother Mu for advice.” This time, the blood red robed male only pondered for a short while before he replied.

Subsequently, the two of them tacitly changed the topic and started to discuss other matters.

While this was happening, thousands of miles away from the market, high in the sky, the Misty Ship had already stopped flying.

Just a few thousand feet behind the ship was, astonishingly, another grey wooden ship that was approximately a hundred feet in length. Standing on top of it were over a dozen cultivators, each wearing different clothings. All of their appearances were that of devils and monsters, but at the moments, none of them dared to move.

The reason why they were acting in this manner was because of the over ten wolf-like puppets floated around the wooden boat. In addition, below these puppets were a couple of corpses that had been torn to shreds.

On top of the wooden boat was a middle age woman and a man dressed like a monk. They were talking with each other and did not pay much attention to the scene below them.

At the same time, Liu Ming and the others on the Misty Ship were grouped together. They followed Senior Qian in respectfully paying their respects to a smiling middle aged Spirit Master.

“Stand up. This time, I used you juniors to make the Wasp Bandits appear. Even though I never informed you of this before hand, I still put you in some danger. How about this: I’ll tell the Duty Hall to confer a hundred Contribution Points to all of you.” The middle aged Spirit Master good-naturedly said.

“Thank you very much Master Zhang!”

After hearing Master Zhang’s words, everyone was overjoyed and expressed their thanks in unison.

The middle aged Fellow spoke a few more sentences of encouragement before planning on leaving.

At this time, Liu Ming suddenly heard a long bird cry that abnormally pierced into his ears.

It seemed that the cry had originated from a distance away, but in the blink of an eye, the origin of the sound had grown closer by a large margin..

The middle aged Spirit Master’s, along with the conversing female and monk on top of the wooden ship’s, faces underwent a great change.

When Liu Ming heard this familiar bird cry, he was stumped for where he had heard that before. However, after he quickly searched through his memories for the instances of this bird cry, his face immediately paled a bit.

# Chapter 74: Dragon's Might

“Disciple Qian and Yu Er, immediately take the others away. The farther you go the better; you must not turn around.” The middle aged Spirit Master suddenly yelled at Senior Qian before a red cloud appeared outside his body. He then proceeded to rush into the sky and stood next to the girl and the monk.

When Senior Qian saw this, she knew that a powerful foe had arrived. It unexpectedly made the expressions of Master Zhang and the other Spirit Masters' change. Immediately, she ordered Yu Er to do something.

The two girls started performing techniques.

In an instant, the originally idle Misty Ship jolted and immediately transformed into a hazy light ball as it shot into motion.

Just at this moment, the distant bird cry suddenly grew exponentially louder.

Senior Qian and Cui Er, who were manning the ship, heard a droning sound in their ears. The Fa Li in their body quickly congealed and became extremely slow moving. The Misty Ship, which had just started moving, swayed once before it came to a complete stop.

As for the middle and early stage Spirit Apostle disciples, many of them couldn't help but successively fall face down to the ground.

The only other disciples who remained standing were Liu Ming and a late stage Spirit Apostle. Their faces were pale and they slowly sat down onto the deck of the ship while trying their utmost to move the Fa Li in their body. All the while, they attempted to resist the sharp bird cry.

When the middle aged Spirit Master saw the scene before him, his facial expression turned ugly, his figure however remained where it was and did not move.

In the distant horizon, a large gale had erupted. A large, black cloud appeared in the air and quickly surged towards them.

Moreover, the sharp bird cry coming from within the black cloud even



started to made the ears of the three Spirit Masters feel as if they were being pricked by needles. It forced them to emit a portion of their Fa Li in order to protect their ears.

“Pu Tong!”

Senior Qian and Yu Er, who were still standing, finally felt their legs go weak and consequently fell to the ground. They could only use all of their might in order to circulate their Fa Li in an attempt to resist the effect.

As for the other Barbarian Ghost Sect Disciples, lower level disciples had already cried out and passed out. Simultaneously, black blood started to slowly flow out from their seven orifices.

The two other late stage Spirit Apostles managed to resist for a while before their necks gave way and collapsed with their faces pointed towards the sky.

The group of demonic Wasp Bandit cultivators on the wooden ship had all naturally fallen to the ground as well.

Although Liu Ming's complexion was exceptionally pale, and his eyes were tightly shut, he was still able to continuously create signs with his hands while he sat motionlessly on the floor.

The reason why he was able to accomplish this, fundamentally came from his conscious that was many times greater than the normal disciple as well as the pure Fa Li in his body, which was also much stronger than regular disciples' Fa Li.

At the same time, Liu Ming was using his talent of doing two things at once. He let his mental strength turn into two portions that alternated turns to resist the sharp bird cry. Once one half became unable to resist and he was about to black out, he would immediately substitute it for his other half.

However, even if it was like this, Liu Ming still felt as if his head was splitting in two while his vision started to darken.

Just as he was struggling bitterly, the sharp bird cries, which seemed to be able to split rocks apart, finally came to a sudden stop.

Liu Ming's expression loosened, he hastily opened his eyes and stared towards the sky. What he saw couldn't help but make his heart freeze.

Liu Ming saw that the distant black cloud had already disappeared. Instead, someone new was standing about a thousand feet away from the middle aged Spirit Master and the other Spirit Masters. This person had the legs of a human, but the upper body was that of a Dragon demon that was over a dozen feet tall.

The monster was wearing loose animal skin trousers on his lower half, while his torso was bare with a cluster of scarlet red scales. Simultaneously, above the Dragon's bulky neck was a bulky head that had a single enormous green eye. The eye was currently staring at the three Spirit Masters with a cold gaze.

In addition, this half man, half dragon monster was astonishingly covered in scars all over its body. The scars ranged from shallow knife wounds to more severe deep axe wounds. Some of them were so deep that one was faintly able to make out the dense white bones underneath. However, not a single drop of blood flowed from the wounds.

"It really is the Scarlet Dragon that escaped the clutches of Master Yan and Elder Ling Yu! Fellows, shall we fight or flee?" The middle aged Spirit Master's gaze was rigidly fixed on the opposing Demon, but his lips were slightly moving as he communicated with the others.

"Flee? Can we really flee faster than a Crystal Stage Dragon?! If we do flee, we will definitely be caught by this Dragon and easily killed by it!" The monk replied coldly.

"Correct, if we could really run away, I would have already fled; there would be no reason for me to stay. Nonetheless, returning to the main topic at hand, if this Scarlet Dragon was in its peak condition, we would undeniably perish if we were to fight it. However, looking at its desolate condition, it would probably be a stretch for it to maintain even twenty to thirty percent of its Fa Li. If the three of us join forces, we may even be able to contend with it. Furthermore, if we are able to kill it in a stroke of luck, there is the possibility of us advancing to the Crystal Level." The

middle aged woman said as she stared at the opposing Scarlet Dragon while an ardent of thirst flickering amidst her otherwise fearful gaze.

When the middle aged Spirit Master and the monk heard this, their heartbeats couldn't help but speed up.

"Okay, since Fellow Yu plans on fighting, I will accompany you this time. Fellow Zhang, what about you?!" The monk replied.

"Since the two of you have already decided, how can I slip away? Nevertheless, I have to send the two girls, Disciple Qian and Cui Er, away before I can give my all in the fight." The middle aged Spirit Master pondered for a while, but ultimately bitterly laughed as he replied.

"Hmph, even at this time you are still distracted over two mere Spirit Apostle disciples. Whatever, I will help you this time." The monk said as one of his fingers started to move.

Underneath, two of the wolf puppets which were originally surrounding the Wasp Bandits, immediately moved and shot up towards the Misty Ship.

"Sou!"

The opposing half dragon monster suddenly moved and instantly disappeared.

This caused the three Spirit Masters to simultaneously, in alarm, adopt a defensive position.

"Hong!"

One of the wolf puppets which was heading towards the Misty Ship had its head pierced by a sharp red claw. It proceeded to instantaneously explode.

The half dragon monster, which had just appeared nearby, opened its mouth and spit out a scarlet red light pillar.

"Pu!" A muffled sound rang out as the other wolf puppet was ruptured by this red light.

This scene caused the three Spirit Masters to suck in a breath of cold

air.

“We cannot deal with your sect’s disciples; let’s attack!” The woman clenched her teeth and proceeded to yell out. Subsequently, one of her hands moved and produced a short cyan sword from her sleeve. She waved it in the air, before immediately reciting an incantation.

After the monk finished mourning the loss of his two puppets, he spoke no further and moved his two hands towards his chest. He then threw something out and instantly, one red sphere and one blue sphere flew into the air. A “Ga La” sound of transformation rang out as the two spheres transformed into an enormous blue tiger puppet and a enormous scarlet python puppet.

When the two puppets appeared, the monk’s sleeve shook once more and two fist sized, red and blue, crystals shot out and accurately entered the two puppets’ mouths.

The originally lifeless puppets flashed with various lights. A blue light flashed in the Tiger puppet’s eye while it produced a thunderous roar. The serpent puppet had the sound of gears turning as it started to shake its tail up and down.

The middle aged Spirit Master’s face was gloomy as he smacked a leather bag on his waist. Subsequently, a stack multi colored Glyphs flew out and morphed into a wall of Glyphs that stood in front of his body.

When the half dragon monster saw this, a flicker of savagery arose in its eyes. It abruptly took a step forward and its body suddenly transforming into a chain of mirages that flew forward. Equipped with inconceivable speed, it appeared 100 feet away from the three Spirit Masters.

“Kill!”

The female Spirit Master’s heart skipped a beat as she saw this. Yet, she did not hesitate in yelling and violently swinging her short cyan sword in the air.

The sword vibrated before it turned into a cold light that hacked at the

monster.

“Peng”

The half Dragon monster only moved one talon, but as the two objects clashed, the sound of metal striking metal resounded. It managed to swipe the cold light aside and at the same time, it opened its mouth again, sending out another red pillar of light towards the woman.

“Zi La!”

The middle aged Spirit Master simultaneously pointed at three glyphs in front of him.

Three layers of hazy white light veils suddenly appeared in front the woman. They were just enough to withstand the blast of red light and after serving their purpose, they proceeded to disappear into misty light.

The outcome made the woman alarmed and she couldn't help but retreating two steps.

“Boom, boom!”

The enormous blue tiger and the enormous scarlet serpent pounced forwards, but the half Dragon monster leapt sideways and its body suddenly disappeared.

“Fellow Yu, be careful!”

A glyph in front of the middle aged Spirit Master spontaneously combusted as he abruptly turned his head towards the woman while yelling to her.

A cold feeling passed over the woman when she heard this. She performed a one handed technique and the short cyan sword started to spin. It transformed into a sword screen that protected her inside it.

A red talon suddenly appeared and instantly penetrated the sword screen. It proceeded to reach into the woman's chest before flashing out of the screen as if it had never even been within the screen.

The woman felt the front of her body freeze over as a bloody hole appeared in her chest.

At this time, a hundred feet behind her, a faint red light appeared in the air. The half Dragon monster emerged grasping an item that was dripping in blood. A fierce look arose in its eyes and after shaking its wrists it proceeded to devour the item.

“Ah, you are eating...”

The woman finally realized what was happening as a face full of fear crept up on her face. She gave a desperate cry before the strength in her body disappeared and she fell from the sky.

“This won’t do; quickly use your hidden method or else we won’t be able to keep our lives!” When the monk saw the woman perish, his heart trembled as he hastily yelled at the middle aged Spirit Master.

“Okay.”

The middle aged Spirit Master’s heart had also missed a beat. Hearing the monk speak, he responded without the slightest hesitation.

Immediately, his figure started to swirl around as the Glyphs in front of him began to explode.

The next second, a plethora of inscriptions appeared on the half Dragon monster’s body. They morphed into myriads of five colored glyph chains that trapped the Dragon.

At the same time, the adjacent monk also performed a technique. The enormous blue tiger, the enormous scarlet python puppet as well as the remaining wolf puppets, all simultaneously rushed forwards. However, before they reached the monster, they self destructed causing light beams to fly throughout the air.

Instantly, a large multicolored ball of light emerged with a rumbling sound; the half Dragon monster was momentarily submerged within it.

A sharp mournful bird cry transmitted out from the ball of light at the same time as an extremely terrifying aura also suddenly emerged from within. This aura was so terrifying that wherever it passed through, a droning sound occurred in the surrounding space.

“This isn’t good. This monster is unharmed. We should quickly leave; every man for himself.” When the monk saw the scene unfold, he instantly yelled in fear.

Thereupon, he raised a hand and another cyan ball of light surged forth. In a flash, it had morphed into a cyan wooden bird and the monk proceeded to jump on it.

“Sou!”

The monk rode the wooden bird as he fled through the air.

When the middle aged Spirit Master saw this, an exceptionally ugly expression appeared on his face. However, after clenching his teeth, he also took out an earthen yellow glyph from his chest. He then patted the Glyph onto himself and after a few seconds, suddenly appeared on the Misty Ship.

His two hands made quick motions as he grabbed Disciple Qian and Cui Er. He then proceeded to take a large stride forward and promptly appeared over a hundred feet away from the Misty Ship. After taking another few steps in the air, he had already become a small black dot in the distant horizon.

Liu Ming, who was still on the Misty Ship, couldn’t help but display a stupefied expression after witnessing this.

# Chapter 75: Fighting for the Treasure

Although most people on the Misty Ship were sprawled on the deck and could possibly be dead, there was no way that the middle aged Spirit Master could possibly mistake Liu Ming for deceased.

However, this Master Zhang completely ignored him and, in a gust of wind, only grabbed Senior Qian and Cui Er as he fled.

This made Liu Ming's heart freeze over; it seemed that he could only rely on himself.

Thinking thus far, Liu Ming's originally upright, immobile body suddenly fell onto the deck with a "gu dong" sound.

At the same time, his aura and the blood flow of his body all became indiscernible in mere seconds.

This was the effect of his mortal secret technique that had saved him back at the river before he became a Spirit Apostle.

A large "hong" sound rang through the air.

The terrifying energy within the enormous ball of light, which hovered in the air, began to swell and then exploded. Immediately, a heat wave spread out in all four directions.

The surrounding area was engulfed by the heat wave and anything touched by it would start to crumble. Even the Wasp Bandit's wooden ship and the Misty Ship, two flying type practitioner weapons, were unable to resist the force behind the heat waves. Like toys, they tumbled seven or eight times before they disintegrating.

Liu Ming only felt his body suddenly fall through air as he and the rest of the Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples fell from the sky.

In this state of panic, he did not dare use Fa Li to fly and instead, just as he was about to hit the ground, a thick black rope shot out from his sleeve towards the ground, "Pu!"

Liu Ming was instantly catapulted a few feet to the side. Not only was



the impact of the fall greatly reduced, he also managed to avoid an extremely solid looking cyan rock below him.

However, falling in this manner from such a high altitude couldn't help but make his mouth curl as his entire body ached with pain.

It was a good thing that his current skeleton was much sturdier than before and because of that Liu Ming was able to avoid any bone fractures.

With Liu Ming in this sort of situation, it was quite obvious what sort of state the rest of the Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples would be in.

The nearest few Barbarian Ghost Sect Disciples were sprawled on the ground as fresh blood flowed out from all over their body. It was clear that they were no longer breathing.

At this time, where the light ball exploded, the half Dragon monster reappeared. However, aside from a few scorched black marks on its body, there astonishingly were no further injuries. Instead, a glint of tyranny appeared in its single eye as one of its claws abruptly swiped the air below.

“Sou!”

The corpse of the woman who had previously wielded the flying sword immediately flew into the air and landed in the monster's claw.

The half Dragon monster opened its mouth and, in one bite, bit off most of the woman's head. After chewing for a while, a sharp bird cry rang out as it opened its mouth and spat out a scarlet ball of flame, sending it downwards. It then proceeded to transform into a black wind as it brought the woman's corpse, still riddled with flesh blood, to a distant place.

Looking at its direction of travel, it astonishingly was the same direction in which the monk fled.

A large “hong” sound rang through the air.

The seemingly ordinary fireball from the monster's mouth fell to the ground. After hitting the ground, it unexpectedly morphed into a pillar of

fire that rose high into the air.

A mass surge of fire waves instantly littered the vicinity and turned the surrounding area into a billowing sea of flames.

Anything touched by the flame, no matter if it was a tree or a rock, was all immediately annihilated into ashes.

A few miserable shrieks sounded!

Apparently, a few Wasp Bandit demonic cultivators, who were still alive, struggled under the flames. Ultimately, they too were transformed into ashes like the rest.

This monster was truly worthy of being at the Crystal Level. With a mere casual attack, it unexpectedly displayed such terrifying power.

Liu Ming realized that things were askew as soon as he saw the fireball fall. He no longer cared if the Scarlet Dragon would reappear and hastily retrieved a few Glyphs from his body and in one breath, casted numerous layers of light to cover his body. After smacking his Cultivating Soul Bag, he also summoned his White Bone Scorpion.

Liu Ming interlinked his thoughts with the White Bone Scorpion as the scorpion appeared inside the layers of light created by the Glyph. Instantly, it opened its mouth and spit out a torrent of unusually cold Miasma. This Miasma managed to resist the nearby scarlet flames as the White Bone Scorpion carried Liu Ming as they fled in one direction..

“Peng!”

When he and the White Bone Scorpion managed to escape the sea of flames, the layers of light around Liu Ming also disintegrated from the pressure.

Liu Ming let out a lengthy breath before he turned his head to look back at the sea of flames. An expression of fear couldn't help but surface on his face.

Just a few second ago, if he was even a little bit slower in his reactions, then perhaps he too would have been buried in that place.

Nonetheless, the defensive Glyphs that he just bought at the market had all been exhausted. He couldn't help but feel regret in his heart at this loss.

Of course, thinking about it realistically, he would most likely not have been able to preserve his own life if not for these Glyphs.

Thinking like this, Liu Ming lowered his head and looked at the White Bone Scorpion.

After the brief period of time where the scorpion spat out Miasma non-stop, its spirit had turned gloomy.

As an assurance, Liu Ming did not immediately recall the White Bone Scorpion. Instead his eyes scanned the tumultuous sea of flames and an expression of pity appeared on his face.

With such a powerful flame, the glyphs, Spirit Stones and other items on other people's bodies would naturally be unretrievable. Otherwise, he could potentially have salvaged the remains and gained a decent fortune.

As for the Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples that perished, to someone like Liu Ming who had seen countless lives perish on Savage Island, aside from the slight rue in his heart, there wasn't the slightest amount of sorrow.

After pondering a bit, Liu Ming let the White Bone Scorpion drill into the ground first as he hastily ran towards the location where the woman fell.

Although the woman's corpse had already been devoured by the Dragon, the short cyan sword, which had also fallen, was still in the vicinity.

Since this weapon was used by the Spirit Master woman to fight a strong enemy, it definitely was a totem tier item. Moreover, it's rank was most likely not that low.

To the current him, this sort of treasure was something that he naturally could not forsake. Even if the Scarlet Dragon was to reappear, he still had to search for it.

It was a good thing that he clearly remembered where the woman fell. In an instant, he had arrived near the location and, in one glance, saw half of the short cyan sword protruding out of a rock.

He was overjoyed and was about to run over.

However, at that time, a shadow flashed behind a tree and a man walked out. Once this man saw that someone else had appeared, the expression on his face congealed.

It was obvious that Liu Ming was startled; his expression also quickly focused, trying to size up the person.

The man was wearing a grey robe, seemed to be about 30 years old and had a face of extreme valiance. In his hand was a short black hammer and he too was scrupulously examining Liu Ming.

“Wasp Bandit.”

When Liu Ming clearly saw the opposing party’s face, he instantly knew that the imminent battle was unavoidable.

Although Liu Ming did not know how the other person had fled from the sea of fire, it was clear that he had come for the short sword totem.

“Brat, earlier you managed to preserve your life; you luck can’t be considered bad. However, you have now come across me, so you seem to be out of luck.” The grey robed male suddenly sneered as he began to brandish the short hammer in his hand. He proceeded to rush at Liu Ming and swung his hammer out. Subsequently, he performed a single hand technique and, after waving his arms, two wind blades, one behind the other, rapidly shot out.

A smothered sound rang in the air.

A misty white ball flew towards Liu Ming like a shooting star.

“Peng!”

Liu Ming’s arms moved and a black rope flew out and inserted itself in the ball of air. His body then flashed as the two wind blades barely missed his body as they flew past and instead, severed two small trees in

half.

When the grey robed male saw this, his pupils slightly dilated as he brandished his short hammer practitioner weapon again. Instantly, a black cover of light fell from above and blocked the area in front of him.

Subsequently, the male threw his short hammer on the ground and with lightning speed, his hands formed a sign and he started an incantation.

The the next second, a myriad of yellow inscriptions flew out of his body while the surrounding air simultaneously started producing a droning sound. Strands of yellow light appeared in the air and quickly condensed over his head.

“Surging Yuan Li, a high level technique!” When Liu Ming saw the scene unfold, his two hands promptly formed a sign and after raising them, large swooshing sounds rang out.

In an instant, seven or eight wind blades were projected. The cyan light behind Liu Ming was still flickering as even more wind blades followed.

Although a high level technique contained astonishing power, the higher the technique level, the longer the wind up time was. There was no way that Liu Ming would give the opponent a chance to complete the discharge time.

Despite the light cover from the practitioner weapon used by the grey robed male being quite thick, with such a large number of wind blades hacking at it, in a short moment, it was no longer able to resist and disintegrated.

The grey robed male became greatly shocked and hastily ceased his incantation and rolled to the side. However, due to the backlash of Fa Li, he couldn't help but spit out blood.

Yet, without even waiting for him to stand up, additional wind blades flew out from Liu Ming's hands. This rendered the Wasp Bandit incapable of even performing any defensive techniques as he was forced to rely on his legs to repeatedly dodge.

From the very start, he was waiting for Liu Ming to take a break from

performing his techniques so he could catch a breath of air. However, as the interval between subsequent wind blades grew progressively shorter and shorter, as well as the fact that the opponent didn't even seem to recite an incantation, the man finally couldn't help but let out an involuntary cry of fear: "Perfection in the Wind Blade Technique; able to instantly cast the spell. You unexpectedly managed to condense a technique seal!"

After speaking, the grey robed male didn't hesitate to turn his body and frantically started to flee backwards. He, surprisingly, didn't even bother to collect his short hammer practitioner weapon.

Liu Ming let out a sneer when he saw this. He lifted both his hands and a cleaving air sound rang out. Immediately, three more wind blades simultaneously shot out.

The speed of these wind blades were astonishingly almost twice as fast as the ones before. In a flash, they had already reached the back of the grey robed male.

Even though the grey robed male was incomparably nimble, he was only able to dodge two of the wind blades with great difficulty. As for the third wind blade, he let out a miserable shriek as it sliced apart part of his body and then fell to the ground.

"Pu!"

A black streak flew out from the nearby earth and instantly pierced the grey robed male's head. Finally, the yelling came to a sudden stop as he took his last breath.

This streak belonged to the White Bone Scorpion which had finally moved into position and attacked from underground.

Only now did Liu Ming feel reassured as he walked next to where the cyan sword hilt laid. He then proceeded to pull it out of the rock.

He noticed that the short sword was no longer than half a foot, but contained a misty cyan light on its exterior. A faint trace of cold energy slowly emanated from it and when Liu Ming picked it up, it was still

squirming. It seemed to be struggling to free itself from Liu Ming.

“This really is worthy of being a totem! It’s master has already perished but it unexpectedly still harbors such a spiritual nature. There’s no way its quality can be low.” Liu Ming was overjoyed and hastily felt out a jade box on his body. He placed the short sword within it and tucked it away in his sleeve.

At this moment, the White Bone Scorpion used its claws to pick up a few things from the grey robed man’s corpse and proceeded to bring them over to Liu Ming.

# Chapter 76: Totem

The remains consisted mostly of two leather bags. Inside were healing pills and some junk. However, there was a scarlet jade box in the scorpion's claws which attracted Liu Ming's attention.

He inquisitively grabbed the jade box and opened the lid. The interior contained a vast expanse of white frigid energy that rushed out and made Liu Ming couldn't help but tremble.

Within the jade box unexpectedly laid a deep blue pearl. It seemed to be incomparably cold and had an unknown origin.

Liu Ming suddenly understood how the grey robed male had escaped the sea of fire.

This item most likely was an unusual treasure of the water element.

With this thought in mind, Liu Ming quickly put away the jade box and the other items. After scouring the vicinity once more, he raised his hand and successively emitted a fireball. The vestiges of the recent battle were then destroyed and not a trace remained. Instead, the result was similar to what the sea of fire had inflicted. Liu Ming proceeded to retract the White Bone Scorpion as he activated his Soaring Sky Technique and flew towards Barbarian Ghost Sect.

.....

A few days later, when Liu Ming returned to Barbarian Ghost Sect; everything in the sect was still the same as before. Apparently no information pertinent to the event had been sent back or spread within the sect.

Seeing this, Liu ming first went to the Duty Hall and recorded his return to the sect. Then, he immediately returned to his dwelling on Nine Infant Mountain. From there, he started to use his medicinal pills; everyday he would incessantly refine the medicinal powers and increase his Fa Li.

In the blink of an eye, seven to eight days had passed.

However, on this day, an outer disciple of Nine Infant Mountain



appeared outside of the small courtyard and proceeded to yell that Gui Ruquan was calling for him.

After hearing his words, Liu Ming's heart moved as he ceased his cultivation and walked out of the room.

In the time it took to have a meal, he appeared in the large hall on the peak of the mountain.

Inside the hall, aside from Gui Ruquan, he also saw the middle aged Spirit Master, Master Zhang.

"It really is this person!" When the middle aged Spirit Master made clear of Liu Ming's face, he started to laugh.

Hearing this, Gui Ruquan's expression didn't change as he asked Liu Ming:

"In the previous few days, you went to Wei Zhou Market. On your way back did you encounter that demonic Dragon?"

"Yes, this disciple really did make a trip to Wei Zhou Market." Liu Ming differentially replied.

"You should know that aside from the two disciples whom Master Zhang saved, all the others perished. When Master Zhang left, what happened after? Furthermore, how did you escape with your life?" A flint of surprise appeared on Gui Ruquan's face as he asked his question.

When the middle aged Spirit Master heard his words, a trace of embarrassment arose on his face.

Although not saving Liu Ming at the time was pardonable, right now he was in front of Liu Ming's master in name so he naturally was somewhat uncomfortable.

"Master Gui, aside from Senior Qian and Cui Er, I'm afraid that I was the only one who could stay awake and clear headed. Thus, after the evil Dragon used a remarkable ability and disappeared, this disciple could only use a few self-preservation techniques....."

Liu Ming didn't have the intention of hiding anything and immediately

gave his recount of what happened.

However, regarding the White Bone Scorpion, the death of the Wasp Bandit that had also escaped and the short sword Totem, he naturally didn't mention them. He only talked about the defensive glyphs which he bought in the city and used to fortuitously escape from the sea of fire.

"As it turns out, this was the case. I previously said that when I returned to the location, I wasn't even able to locate any of the disciples' bodies. They unexpectedly were burned by the demonic Dragon. Nevertheless, Disciple Bai's luck really isn't that bad considering he coincidentally bought a defensive glyphs in the city. Otherwise, I'm afraid he wouldn't have made it back alive. If I hadn't investigated the names of which disciples had returned recently, I most likely wouldn't have realized that another disciple had survived." The middle aged Spirit Master exclaimed.

"Junior Zhang doesn't need to blame himself. Who would've thought that the trap meant to lure out those despicable Wasp Bandits actually ended up attracting the demonic Dragon. Moreover, of the three Spirit Masters, only Junior Zhang managed to survive. This can really be counted as a large fortune within a misfortune." Gui Ruquan turned his head and spoke with consolation.

"I also only managed to escape that demonic Dragon because of Wind Fire Gate's Elder Chi Yang's sudden appearance. Otherwise, I would not have survived either. This demonic Dragon's formidability far surpasses the rumors. Despite the severe wounds on its body, it's not something us Spirit Masters can provoke. Unfortunately, I heard that Elder Chi Yang chased it for two days, but was still unable to catch this Dragon." The middle aged Spirit Master bitterly laughed.

"This already is not that bad of an outcome. If we wait for a small period of time, Master Yan will exit secluded training and when that time comes, our sect will still have hope to gaining something. Gui Ruquan let out a light laugh as he spoke.

"I hope this will be the case. That's right, Disciple Bai, you can return, but you cannot spread any information about the demonic Dragon and

the market to anyone. If you violate this, you will face sect punishment.” The middle aged Spirit Master nodded his head and put on a solemn expression as he spoke to Liu Ming.

“Yes, I understand.” Liu Ming’s heart shivered and immediately responded as he left the hall.

“This disciple isn’t bad. He unexpectedly was able to remain awake under the Dragon’s shrieks. This is not something a normal disciple can accomplish.” Once Liu Ming actually left the large hall, the middle aged Spirit Master gave his praise.

“Mhm, no matter whether it is his temperament or intelligence, this child is exceptional. The only pity is that he is but a mere Three Spiritual Pulse disciple, otherwise, I would have already taken him as my personal disciple.” Gui Ruquan nodded his head as his face let out a slight smile.

“So it turns out that he only had Three Spiritual Pulses. This really too much of a pity. However, if he is able to become a late stage Spirit Apostle, there is a large chance of him becoming a core disciple.” When the middle aged Spirit Master heard his words, he also emitted a sign of regret.

“Oh that’s right! I still haven’t congratulated Senior. I heard that Senior Zhu and Senior Zhong went to the Sea Race’s Market and managed to exchange for a Deep Sea Cold Light Steel. Tsk tsk, this item is one of the materials needed to forge a true flying sword. I’m afraid that in a short while, the Heaven Moon Sect will dispatch someone to find Senior.” The middle aged Spirit Master thought of something else and clicked his tongue and gave his praise.

“Haha, this is Junior Zhu’s good luck. However, although this item can be used in forging a flying sword, it can only be forged into a low grade flying sword. Moreover, it has great use to us so we aren’t planning on selling it to Heavenly Moon Sect.” Gui Ruquan twirled his beard in his hand before speaking excitedly.

“Ah, so that is case. Then this really is a pity. Heavenly Moon Sect will never hesitate to pay whatever price to acquire materials for a flying

sword.” The middle aged Spirit Master was slightly startled and seemed to not have believed what he just heard.

“Hehe, you will understand the difference of our choice in the future.” Gui Ruquan gave a laugh and seemingly did not want to discuss this further.

Subsequently, the two men talked for another while before the middle aged Spirit Master took his leave and left.

Liu Ming, who had returned to his dwelling, entered his cultivation room. His face carried an expression of concentration as he pondered for a good while. He then retrieved a pill from his belongings and ate it; he then started to refine it.

To the current him, becoming a late stage Spirit Apostle was the most important thing.

Liu Ming began cultivating the third stage of his Dark Bone Method while simultaneously clearly feeling the progressive Fa Li increases in his body.

Half a month later, Liu Ming was in the middle of cultivation. Suddenly, he felt his body shake and his Spirit Sea involuntarily began to whirl around. Coincidentally, two forces of energy, one hot and one cold rushed forward and quickly spread to every part of his body before suddenly rushing towards the cover of his head.

“Hong!”

Liu Ming felt a stuffy sound go off in his head as the cold and hot forces precipitously confluenced in his mind and merged into one. Simultaneously, his body felt as if it was floating in the air; there wasn't a spot on his body that didn't feel extremely comfortable.

“I did it, the Dark Bone Technique has reached the late stage of a Spirit Apostle. There unexpectedly wasn't even a bottleneck.”

Liu Ming instantly stood up and felt the sudden increase in his Fa Li by several times. He couldn't help but be exceptionally overjoyed.

Since this was now the case, he no longer had to fear if the bubble broke out again.

A while later, Liu Ming finally calmed down and decided against going out for the next short period of time until he was able to fully control the surplus of Fa Li.

In this way, unless he was fighting with someone and released his Fa Li, a normal person would not be able to tell his cultivation level.

After all, becoming a Late Spirit Apostle in such a short period of time for a Three Spiritual Pulse discipline was simply too astonishing.

In the following two months, Liu Ming pretty much used up the rest of his pills. In his body, there even built up an immunity to a few types of medicinal pills. Even if he were to continue eating these pills, they would not be able to increase his Fa Li by much. Thus he started to quietly cultivating without pills every day and progressively consolidated his Late Spirit Apostle Fa Li.

What made Liu Ming slightly puzzled was that it had only been half a year, but there was still no sign of the bubble in his body.

Due to the bewilderment, he didn't want to complete any sect missions in this condition.

However, on this day, he still made a trip to Nine Infant Mountain's Spell Pavilion. From within, he chose a few books that described Totems in detail and proceeded to bring them back to his dwelling.

A few days later, he finally managed to understand the technique and immediately pulled out the short cyan sword. He opened his mouth and spit out some refined Fa Li before he lifted one hand and successively performed hand signs on the sword.

"Pu, pu!"

After the Totem absorbed most of the refined Fa Li and a densely packed group of cyan inscriptions began to appear on the sword's exterior. Each inscription was only the size of a grain of rice, but after they whirled around, they suddenly formed numerous cyan patterns that

covered the sword in layers of silk-like material. With one quick glance, there seemed to be about ten or so layers.

Liu Ming's eyes intensified and began to meticulously identify the quantity of the patterns. A while later, his eyebrows finally moved as he spoke to himself.

"Sixteen layers of restrictions: A mid tier Totem! It can even be considered to be at the apex of mid grade Totems!" Liu Ming spoke according to what he had read in the books. The quality and power of a Totem fundamentally depended on the layers of restriction it contained.

From what he had read before, the power and tier of a Totem was determined through the number of layers or restrictions on the Totem.

Normally, one to nine layers of restrictions would be considered a low quality Totem, 10 to 18 layers of restrictions would be a mid quality Totem, 19 to 27 layers of restrictions would be a high quality Totem and 27 to 36 layers of restriction would be a perfect quality Totem.

As for Totems with restriction layers more than 36, according to legends, these were Talismen that contained the ability to topple mountains and overturn seas. The few books he had mentioned them a few times, but didn't speak more on them.

Of course, this method of determining a Totem's quality and power was not absolute. After all, within Totems, there were counters to each other. Furthermore, Totems also had to look at whether its attribute was compatible with its user's cultivation method. A Totem in the hands of person whom it was not compatible with would exhibit a substantially less amount of power.

# Chapter 77: Concocting Pills

To the current Liu Ming, due to the limits of his cultivation prowess, Liu Ming was unable to exhibit the true power of this short sword. Of its 16 layers of restrictions, he would at most be able to use three to four layers.

However, even if this was the case, once Liu Ming was able to refine this sword, he would be able to expand or shrink the sword to his liking. In addition, when activated, the power of the restrictions was not something practitioner weapons could compare with.

TL: Think of restrictions as “spells” that are on the sword

Liu Ming finished thinking and immediately threw the sword in front of him. It unexpectedly floated in the air while Liu Ming’s hands constantly moved making hand signs. Simultaneously, he started to recite an incantation; puffs of refined Fa Li were unceasingly blown onto the short sword. After quickly absorbing the refined Fa Li, the sword started emitting an increasingly cold dense glint.

However, the difficulty of refining the short sword far surpassed Liu Ming’s previous expectation.

Furthermore, he didn’t know if this was because his cultivation was too low in comparison to the middle grade totem, or if refining a totem simply wasn’t an easy task.

Just refining the first restriction layer on the flying sword took seven days. The second layer took half a month and the third restriction layer took two additional months before he could finally use it with great difficulty.

As for the fourth restriction layer, after refining for a few days, there wasn’t even the slightest reaction, so Liu Ming knew that the current him would be unable to refine it. He would most likely have to wait until his cultivation reached the peak of a late stage Spirit Apostle before there was a bit of hope.

Moreover, within the past three months, the mysterious bubble hadn’t

shown any indications of breaking out.

This caused Liu Ming to be slightly scared. After removing the thought from his heart, he began to research the book of “Comprehensive Guide of the Foundation for Refining Pills” which he had bought in the Wei Zhou Market.

After becoming a late stage Spirit Apostle, the price of pills that would increase his Fa Li had abruptly become much more expensive than before. Furthermore, the options he had severely lessened because relying on low quality medicinal pills was far from enough to help his Fa Li reach the peak of its realm.

Therefore the quality of medicinal pills was a necessity to the current him.

Once he became a Spirit Master, the requirements for the quality of Fa Li increasing medicinal pills would be even more harsh. Perhaps in the future, he would not be able to rely on Spirit Stones to purchase satisfactory medicinal pills.

Since this was the case, Liu Ming naturally realized that the sooner he could concoct pills the better.

Although this “Comprehensive Guide of the Foundation for Refining Pills” seemed basic, it introduced the fundamental knowledge for concocting pills and a few common methods to concoct pills.

According to what was written, it would be best if the alchemist was a cultivator proficient in fire or wood type Cultivation methods. Of course, if one possessed Spirit Flame of the legends, that would naturally be the best.

For newbies, learning the technique of concocting pills was quite easy. After all, the fundamental principle was separating and recombining medicinal ingredients. Afterwards, one only needed to place the mix over a high temperature to condense the ingredients into pills. As long as one wasn't a complete fool, he or she would easily learn it.

The only problem was that learning how to do these things was not



tantamount to actually refining a medicinal pill.

TL: Basically, anyone can help with refining medicine but there are many more steps than just heating up medicine

Ultimately, the requirements to concoct a pill successfully laid in the alchemist's ability to blend materials, control high temperatures, timing of when to remove the pill from the furnace and other control aspects.

Even if only one of these areas was slightly imperfect, it could lead to a failure.

At the same time, most of these things were not teachable through words. One could only rely on continuous practice to truly master such delicate things.

Thus, even if it were a high level Alchemist, facing even the simplest pills to concoct, they would never say that they could be able to refine the pill out a hundred percent of the time.

As for those who just started concocting pills, even if it were the simplest of pills, the rate of production would be so low that one's hair would stand up in anger.

Over a hundred attempts at concocting a pill without success were normal to a new alchemist.

As for concocting mid-high level medicinal pills, since the remedy would be even more complicated and the materials were harder and more expensive to find, how could there be chances for trial and error? One could only rely on his or her previous concocting experiences, thereby making the requirements for being an alchemist even harder.

Unfortunately, a genuine alchemist always needed continuous practice and a huge volume of resources before reaching this stage.

This naturally led to a lack of alchemists in the cultivating world. So much so that really only huge sects with large influence and power were able to cultivate a genuine mid-high level Alchemist.

Barbarian Ghost Sect's number one alchemist who was resided in

Poisonous Spirit Faction could only barely qualify as a mid level alchemist. However, like this, his position in the sect was completely different than other Spirit Masters. Nobody dared to provoke him.

After Liu Ming finished looking through the entire “Comprehensive Guide of the Foundation for Refining Pills”, a eager feeling arose in his heart. He slightly hesitated before locating the remedy for a Fasting Pill, an extremely common pill. After meticulously looking over the formula, he retrieved his concocting pills tool and a few materials. He then started his attempts to concoct the pill using trial and error.

Five days later, a “peng” sound rang out from the cultivation room. In front of Liu Ming, a black smoke arose from a white cauldron heated by a torrential flame. Faintly, there was a burning smell within the black smoke.

Seeing this, Liu Ming’s face darkened. He dispelled his hand technique and the flames surrounding the cauldron disappeared in the air.

The amount of times he had failed was somewhere in the dozens. Yet, he wasn’t even able to concoct even one Fasting Pill.

Although the book had stated that this was a common occurrence for neophytes just starting to concoct pills, Liu Ming was greatly impacted by this situation.

At the beginning he was exhilarated and full of zest, but now he had become abnormally dejected.

More importantly, the materials for refining pills which he had bought beforehand had almost been half consumed.

This made his heart hurt as he stopped concocting. He intended to find some time in the future to find a few books on concocting pills, or directly finding an alchemist to teach him before attempting to concoct pills again.

Thus, in the following period of time, with no more medicinal pills to use, Liu Ming could only use his talent of doing two things at once to slowly cultivate his Dark Bone Method.

Time passed a little at a time and in the blink of an eye, another three months had gone by.

In this period of time, nothing abnormal had occurred, causing Liu Ming's state of mind to be somewhat disturbed. He was debating whether the mysterious bubble had disappeared from his body.

However, on this day, as he was in the midst of training, he suddenly felt his Spirit Sea shake. A devouring force immediately rushed out.

It had been a year since the mysterious bubble last showed, but it finally appeared.

Liu Ming was startled and without the slightest hesitation, called out his White Bone Scorpion first. After using his Spirit Communication Technique and establishing a connection, he started to urge his Dark Bone method to control the Fa Li in his body as if his life depended on it.

As expected, the devouring this time was even more fierce than last time. If not for Liu Ming becoming a late stage Spirit Apostle and his Fa Li increasing by three to four times, he most likely would not have lasted an hour before being sucked dry.

However, even in this situation, close to eighty percent of Liu Ming's Fa Li was sucked away by the bubble before it was satisfied and stopped devouring.

In this period of time, Liu Ming didn't feel his life force being stripped away and he let out a large sigh of relief.

Nonetheless, when the bubble popped, Liu Ming's vision went black and he appeared in the grey misty space.

It was the identical space, but it was clearly much larger than last time. The circumference was nearly three hundred feet wide.

Emerging with Liu Ming naturally was the White Bone Scorpion ghost that was linked with Liu Ming.

This ghost was evidently slightly startled by its appearance in a different area, but immediately discovered that it had an impression of

this area and immediately started crawling everywhere in excitement.

Liu Ming didn't bother caring for his White Bone Scorpion as he let out a light breath of air and relaxed his expression.

It seemed that although the mysterious bubble's devouring was getting progressively violent, the intervals in between its appearance correspondingly grew longer. This was a good piece of news to him.

If it followed a progressively longer interval of double the interval before, there would be two years before the bubble broke out again.

Of course, this was only Liu Ming hypothesis; whether it followed this length of time was still up for debate.

He would have to wait for the bubble to at least appear a few more times before he could firmly understand its pattern.

Liu Ming silently pondered a while before bringing his hands together into a hand sign; he prepared to begin training his Fireball Technique already at the large success stage.

.....

Half a year later, in between Liu Ming's two hands, a three feet in diameter enormous fireball slowly revolved without stop. His arm shook and the fireball made a whistling sound as it flew towards the opposite side.

A "hong" sound rang out before a mushroom like black and red cloud soared into the sky as the fireball collided with the opposing mist wall. It unexpectedly caused the entire space to slightly vibrate.

An expression of satisfaction arose on Liu Ming's face as a scarlet red symbol in his mind disappeared slowly.

Of course, the previous enormous fireball naturally wasn't a normal Fireball Technique. Instead, the terrifying power was the result of a combination of several fireballs.

Although it was still a low level technique, once the Fireball technique was cultivated to its peak, the largest area of amplification was still its

destructive power. In terms of might, it was still far superior to the Wind Blade Technique.

TL: Wind Blade Technique amplifies speed of attacks (wind blades move super fast and are super quick casting)

Liu Ming fell onto his butt and began to recover his previously exhausted mental power.

However, once his eyes glanced around, he found that the White Bone Scorpion was nearby ceaselessly piercing its tail at the adjacent misty wall in a violent manner.

The tail which was originally as fast as lightning had unexpectedly transformed into black streaks of void like shadows under the White Bone Scorpion's use. Simultaneously, an unceasing sharp shrill cry arose from the faintly discernable black stinger at the front of the tail.

Liu Ming let out a light smile.

Since he had deliberately brought the White Bone Scorpion into this space with him, aside from wanting a living thing to accompany him during this extremely long period of time, he also planned on it practicing.

Since he could increase technique proficiency in this space, the White Bone Scorpion could naturally do equivalent things.

Looking back on it, it seemed that his thought process had been correct. The White Bone Scorpion continuously drilled its hook tail movements and that assassination movement was astonishingly twenty to thirty times faster than half a year ago.

One musn't underestimate this twenty to thirty percent.

The hooked tail's assassination movement originally was the White Bone Scorpion's most powerful attack. Since it's speed had once again increased, its destructive capabilities nearly doubled.

In this way, he naturally could reassuredly let the White Bone Scorpion practice on its own.

After resting awhile, Liu Ming started to consider what technique he should practice next. The Water Arrow Technique was not able to match the speed or power of either the Fireball Technique and the Wind Blade technique, Thus, he naturally didn't plan on wasting time on that technique.

In this situation, he started to consider learning learning a few other higher level techniques from scratch.

# Chapter 78: Engagement

Icicle Technique, Silt Technique, Spider Silk Technique!

These three techniques were from his last trip to Nine Infant Mountain's Spirit Spell Pavilion. They were also the three most common high level techniques learned by Barbarian Ghost Sect Disciples.

To Liu Ming, he thought that the reason why so many people all chose these three techniques was because these three techniques had extremely obvious advantages over other techniques. Their casting times were shorter than other high level techniques and their practical use was stronger. Moreover, they all had the special effect of trapping or restricting the enemy, so when facing a strong enemy they would still be able to use the techniques to help out.

However, although the number of Barbarian Ghost Sect Disciples that cultivated these three techniques were numerous, those who were able to reach the Initial Spell Mastering were limited to a few. As for the Complete Spell Mastering and the Perfection of the techniques, there was no point in even talking about this.

Since cultivating these high level techniques was much harder than easy techniques like the Wind Blade or Fireball, the time consumed was almost three to four times greater.

Therefore, although the number of disciples who learned these techniques was plentiful, almost no one would spend time to cultivate them.

The reason Liu Ming bothered to practice such high level techniques stemmed from the passage of time within the space. In essence, he would not waste any time in reality trying to marginally increase the damage of the technique.

However, even if this was the case, thinking about the difficulty of these three techniques, he could only pick one to be his secret weapon and focus on that single technique.

Amongst them, the Icicle Technique possessed certain destructive attributes. Furthermore, it's cold air could freeze the enemy. However, it was a pity that its manner of attack was overly simple and made it extremely easy for the opponent to dodge.

The Silt Technique could abruptly create an extensive area of quicksand under the opponent's feet and could trap or slow the opponent, but once the opponent left the area, the technique would be useless.

The Spider Silk Technique attack method was diverse. Moreover, when one was facing a few special opponents, it could be the determining factor of the fight. Unfortunately, this technique was most afraid of flames as even a small Fireball Technique could easily destroy the technique.

Liu Ming pondered for half a day before practicing to cultivate Icicle Technique.

Although this technique only contained one method of attack and had trouble hitting the opponent, Liu Ming just had to use his brain more when facing an opponent. The power of this technique when cultivated to a high level was still something that he had great anticipation for.

Liu Ming rested for another half a day. After his mental strength recovered a bit, he immediately stood up and started to cultivate Icicle Technique.

.....

A year and a half later, Liu Ming was practicing his breathing in the space when a droning sound suddenly started ringing in his ears. After opening his eyes, he realized that he had abruptly returned to his cultivation room in reality.

"An entire two years! As expected, the more Fa Li this thing devours, the longer I can stay in that area."

This time, his face didn't reveal an expression of surprise, instead he was extremely calm as he muttered to himself.

Practically at the same time, Liu Ming's body trembled and a rush of pure Fa Li immediately surged into his Spirit Sea.



However, he had already prepared for this and instantly closed his eyes as he began harmonizing his breathing.

An unknown length of time later, when Liu Ming's facial expression changed, his Spirit Sea finally stopped operating. Close to half the originally devoured Fa Li had astonishingly returned, but his cultivation level hadn't dropped back to a Middle stage Spirit Apostle.

Liu Ming was slightly astounded by this, but after pondering a while, faintly understood what had happened.

Clearly, his current Fa Li amount was slightly less than most late stage disciples but was much more than mid stage Spirit Apostles. Therefore, he was able to ensure his cultivation level did not drop down in level.

However, if this was the case, why was it that the first time he had returned, his cultivation level had dropped from a middle to a beginner Spirit Apostle?

Could it be because the amount of Fa Li required to increase a stage from the beginning to middle stage of a Spirit Apostle was significantly less than advancing into later realms?

After thinking awhile, Liu Ming still didn't quite understand but regardless, not dropping a cultivation level was a good thing, so he couldn't be bothered to further contemplate the issue.

After all, the appearance of the mysterious bubble was an extremely perplexing affair. There were some areas in which he was not able to figure out, but this was normal.

Nonetheless, after he once again checked the situation of his body's Fa Li, he couldn't help but become overjoyed.

The current purity of his body's Fa Li was even more pure than last time by a good margin.

Clearly, although the amount of Fa Li the bubble devoured was progressively growing, the degree in which it would purify Fa Li was simultaneously increasing.

In this way, his current circumstance was extremely unique.

With regard to the amount of Fa Li, Liu Ming was evidently inferior to other late stage Spirit Apostles but when it came to Fa Li purity, others with equal cultivation wouldn't be able to compare with him no matter how hard they tried.

With this in mind, if he were to engage in an intense battle with an enemy of the same cultivation level, he definitely would have the advantage in the short term but if the battle hadn't been decided in a certain amount of time, he would have no more Fa Li left while his opponent would. However, if he were to adopt guerilla warfare tactics and fight a battle that lasted an entire day or even a few days, the ultimate winner would most likely be him.

This was because the purity of Fa Li not only indicated a large amplification in technique power, but also meant that one's Fa Li recovery speed was far superior to most others in the same cultivation level.

Liu Ming carefully thought of this for a while before huskily laughing.

This special circumstance was more of a benefit than a harm to him.

He proceeded to turn his head and look at the White Bone Scorpion lying on the side; his eyebrows creased.

He didn't know whether it was because the surrounding air didn't contain Miasma for it to absorb, or if he hadn't established communication right when he returned, but there was no indication of its Fa Li being devoured or purified.

It seemed that only its consciousness accompanied him in the mysterious space and had ordinarily returned to its body.

Liu Ming's mind moved and he began to communicate with the White Bone Scorpion.

In the next instant, the White Bone Scorpion's hooked tail faintly moved. A "chichi" sound rang out and over ten black streaks coincidentally flashed by in the air. A few tens of feet ahead, over ten finger sized holes

suddenly appeared.

It hooked tail movement was so fast that even Liu Ming was unable to completely see it clearly.

Seeing this, Liu Ming naturally was overjoyed.

Although nothing abnormal had happened to this ghost's Fa Li, the effects of training in the mysterious space had completely returned with it.

Since this was the case, he could completely leave the issue in relief.

In the ensuing few days, Liu Ming continued to harmonize his breathing and cultivate. He prepared to once again stabilize his Fa Li before thinking over other things.

However, on the morning of the fourth day, an unexpected visitor showed up at his dwelling.

"Bai Cong Tian, come out right now!" A crisp voice full of animation suddenly transmitted into the room from outside. It caused Liu Ming, who was in the middle of cultivating, to stare blankly. He then stopped training his method, stood up and walked outside.

He saw that in his small courtyard, a jade like embroidered robed young girl was standing there.

"Junior Mu!"

Liu Ming's gaze flashed as he spoke. Although he hadn't seen the girl in front for nearly two years, Liu Ming was able to recognize the opposing party in one glance.

Compared to two years ago, this Mu Ming Zhu astonishingly no longer had any traces of a silly little girl. Instead, she had changed into a coquettish young woman who could make a male's heart start beating quickly.

"You are Bai Cong Tian?!"

Mu Ming Zhu saw that the youth in front of her was as large as most adults and was slightly startled.

It was evident that Liu Ming's figure after undergoing Marrow Washing had greatly surprised this girl.

"That's right, I am Bai Cong Tian. If I remember correctly, Junior Ming Zhu should be an outer disciple of Blood Control Faction. Why have you suddenly appeared in our Nine Infant Mountain?" Liu Ming's tone of voice didn't change as he asked a question.

"Hmph, you still have the balls to ask me. I want to ask you whether it was you who told your father to propose a marriage with my Mu Family? Unexpectedly, both families have agreed on marrying me to you." After Mu Ming Zhu heard Liu Ming speak, a shocked expression instantly manifested on her face before she angrily replied.

"Propose marriage? Honestly, I heard about it in a letter my family gave me but the specific situation was not clearly expressed." Liu Ming didn't even blink as he replied.

"You don't know? Who are you trying to deceive? My father who loves me so dearly, already knows... how could he agree to this. It must have been some slanderous words from an outsider; if it wasn't you, then who was it?! Quickly annul this marriage or I definitely will not let you off!" Hearing his response, Mu Ming Zhu displayed further anger.

"Hehe, ever since I entered the sect, I have been cultivating within the sect, so I naturally haven't even returned to the Bai Clan. How could I have spoken anything slanderous to your father? I definitely wouldn't have any intentions for marriage. As for annulling the marriage, as long as you can do it, I won't have any objections." Liu Ming laughed.

"If I were able to annul the marriage, why would I bother finding you!? My father is extremely stubborn and it is not easy for me to oppose his will. So much so that despite begging the person who loves me the most, Aunt Teng, multiple times, it had no effect. Right now, only the Bai Clan can take initiative annul the marriage in order for my father to once again reconsider the marriage." Mu Ming Zhu listened to Liu Ming's words and was stupefied at first. However, an expression of expectation arose on her face as she spoke.

“Having the Bai Clan take initiative to annul the marriage is impossible.” Liu Ming replied without hesitation.

“Why, since you simply don’t have any intention of marrying me, shouldn’t cancelling this marriage be the proper and right thing to do!” After Mu Ming Zhu heard him speak, she replied with anger.

“Whether I marry you is not important to me, but whether the Bai Clan wants a daughter in law from the Mu Clan is an extremely important matter. You are also a smart person so there is no way you don’t understand my reasoning. Although I am a Spirit Apostle, offending both Clan masters is idiotic so I’m not going to do such a thing. If you have the skills to, you can annul the marriage yourself. If you are unable to do so, then you can only marry into the Bai Clan. Okay, I have already explained my reasoning so you can leave now. I still have to return and cultivate.” Liu Ming bluntly said. He proceeded to turn around, and simply ignored the embroidered robed young girl as he walked into his dwelling.

Seeing this situation, Mu Ming Zhu was beyond angry. She continued to yell at Liu Ming, but it naturally had no effect.

Liu Ming merely made a few motions and entered the room before closing the door firmly.

“Bai, don’t you dare regret this!” The embroidered robed young girl was so angry she started laughing. After stomping her foot, she left the area.

Simultaneously, Liu Ming who had returned to his cultivation room, was using a finger to massage one of his temples; he let out a sigh.

It seemed that something extremely troublesome was about to occur.

Although the letter from the Bai Clan’s master had mentioned the idea of marrying into the Mu Clan, he absolutely did not expect them to unexpectedly not even solicit her opinion. Instead they forcibly drew up a marriage with the Mu Clan while they left him in the dark.

# Chapter 79: Trouble

“It seems that this Bai Clan master is also certain about the fact that I do not want to have a falling out with the Bai Clan over such a trivial matter. However, an engagement proposal is nothing. Currently, I am already a late stage Spirit Apostle and once I become a core disciple, even if the Bai Clan exposes my identity to the sect, I will not suffer from too harsh of a punishment. If I am able to become a Spirit Master, Barbarian Ghost Sect will most likely turn a blind eye to this matter.” Liu Ming muttered to himself as this plan formulated in his heart.

A month passed by; Liu Ming had just about finished consolidating his Fa Lii when the Small Competition bell abruptly rang once again on Nine Infant Mountain.

Hearing it, Liu Ming didn’t hesitate and immediately rushed towards the plaza on the mountain top.

The small competition this time, aside from Gui Ru Quan, Zhu Chi and Martial Aunt Zhong astonishingly didn’t even appear.

Moreover, the entire process of the small competition seemed much more rushed than before. It seemed that Gui Ru Quan, who was in charge, was preoccupied with something else.

This competition showed that not many older disciples had increased their cultivation much. Instead, within the new disciples, Wan Xiao Qian had surprisingly become a middle stage Spirit Apostle while Xue Shan was still stuck at the Beginning Spirit Apostles Level. Since his cultivation hadn’t increased, he left with a face full of dejection.

As for Xiao Feng, the disciple with a Nine Spiritual Pulse, although he was still a Middle Spirit Apostle, his aura was much more powerful than before. It seemed that he wasn’t far from breaking through to a late stage Spirit Apostle.

Liu Ming, on the other hand, forcibly suppressed his aura to that of a Middle Spirit Apostle. Furthermore, he hastily went through the three tests, only displaying a slight improvement from last time.

The current reward for the Small Competition wasn't too appealing to him so he naturally didn't want to attract attention.

Otherwise, if a Three Spiritual Pulse disciple unexpectedly had quicker cultivation speed than a Nine Pulsed disciple, it would obviously bring a lot of trouble.

Fortunately, Gui Ru Quan wasn't too interested in his new disciples' accomplishments at this small competition, otherwise, despite Liu Ming's attempts to suppress his aura, he wasn't sure if his true cultivation would stay hidden.

After the last competition ended, he only earned a bottle of Fa Li Recovery Pills and descended the mountain with the others.

However, once he returned to his dwelling, another uninvited guest was already waiting for him.

"Senior Mu!" Liu Ming was slightly astounded as he called out to the young lady in front of him.

"Is Junior Bai not going to invite me to sit?" The girl smiled sweetly.

"I am lacking in manners; Senior, please enter!" Liu Ming recovered his composure and invited the young lady into his courtyard. They proceeded to a hall in the side wings.

"Junior is surprisingly extremely simple and crude!" Mu Xian Yun quickly glanced around as a face of astonishment appeared on her face.

This hall, which was specifically used to receive visitors, had nothing aside from a wooden table and a few chairs.

"My heart has been solely on cultivating and is not interested in any external objects. I have made a fool of myself. That's right, why has Senior Sister Mu come to find me?" Liu Ming offered the young lady a seat as he lightly smiled and asked a question.

"Junior Bai, has that girl, Ming Zhu, come and found you in the past few days?" Mu Xian Yun also skipped formalities and immediately responded with a question.

“Lady Ming Zhu really did come and find me once.” Liu Ming wasn’t surprised by the question and calmly replied.

“It seems that Junior already knows about that elder brother of mine wanting to betroth Ming Zhu to you.” Hearing his words, Mu Xian Yun’s expression relaxed.

“I originally did not know, but since Lady Ming Zhu came to find me in such a manner, how could I not know? Which side proposed the marriage? If there was no one coordinating this, I don’t believe that both clans would want Lady Ming Zhu and I together.” Liu Ming bitterly laughed.

“Hmm, could it be that Junior want’s to find the matchmaker and thank him or her?” Mu Xian Yun lightly laughed.

“Don’t tell me that this matchmaker is Senior?” Liu Ming saw that the young lady’s smile was hiding a trace of astuteness. He cycled his thoughts and instantly came to a sudden realization.

“Junior truly is an intelligent person. That’s correct, having Ming Zhu marry you really stemmed from me bringing this up to my elder brother. However, when my Mu Clan proposed this, the Bai Clan unexpectedly immediately agreed to it. In an extremely fast speed, they exchanged betrothal gifts and arranged the marriage. The date has been set, three years later, you two will be married! I let Junior take the magnificent beauty of my niece as his wife; I don’t know how you plan on thanking me as a matchmaker.” Mu Xian Yun was startled at first, but started giggling.

“Thanking you? Did Senior Mu think that this younger disciple didn’t have much trouble on hand so you purposely found some things to give me a headache? I’m not going to talk about the other things, but do you really think that Lady Ming Zhu and I fit together? From back then to now, I have only seen your niece twice, yet you threw the two of us together. Don’t even mention me feeling annoyed by this, your niece probably wants me to die.” Liu Ming rubbed his chin and shook his head as he spoke.

“I have always admired Junior Bai’s matureness at such a young age, but



why are you spouting such naive things? Although the Mu Clan is incomparable to the Lei Clan, it ultimately is a Cultivation Clan with a bit of reputation in the Kingdom of Xuan. How can the marriage between boys and girls be decided by the own individual? As for Ming Zhu, despite her current hatred towards you, once she marries you, her mood will slowly shift. This, I can guarantee. Moreover, this marriage is extremely important to both our Mu and Bai Clans. Even if Junior Brother already is a Spirit Apostle, I'm afraid that you cannot reject the marriage arrangements of you esteemed father. Furthermore, besides Ming Zhu not being a Spirit Apostle, she has a natural talent in other areas and coupled with Junior, you two can be said to be a couple well matched." Mu Xian Yun calmly and unhurriedly said.

"Since Senior believes that it will only bring good, why have you still come to find me!?" After listening to her speak, Liu Ming was quite gloomy and rolled his eyes as he spoke.

"One of the reasons for coming here is to illustrate the proposed marriage in order to prevent any misunderstandings. The second reason is for Junior to be careful of a person." Mu Xian Yun's smile disappeared.

"Be careful of someone!? Who?" Liu Ming responded with a question.

"It obviously is Gao Chong."

"Gao Chong, that disciple with an Earth Spiritual Pulse who was taken as a disciple by the Sect Leader!" Even though Liu Ming displayed a calm expression, hearing her words, Liu Ming's heart still skipped a beat.

"That's correct. During the past few years, he and Ming Zhu were very close; if he were to find out about the marriage, I'm afraid that he wouldn't let the matter rest." Mu Xian Yun calmly said.

"What does 'they are very close' mean?!" Liu Ming stared at the young lady with a frosty gaze.

"I'll phrase it like this: Ming Zhu has set her heart upon this boy. Moreover, Gao Chong is extremely cares about my niece. Thus, I wish for you to be more careful. However, you can relax because I can guarantee that nothing too excessive has happened between Ming Zhu and this

boy.” Mu Xian Yun hastily replied.

“Is Senior Mu joking?! Your niece already has someone she likes, moreover it is a Earth Spiritual Pulsed disciple who has a promising future. Yet, why does the Mu Clan still want her to marry me?” Liu Ming’s furrowed his brows but his face was still expressionless.

“I definitely will not let Ming Zhu and Gao Chong end up together. As for the reasons, I do not wish to speak of them further. However, you only have to know that my elder brother and the entire Mu Clan thinks the same way. Furthermore, if Ming Zhu really ends up with Gao Chong, not only will she not be able to become his cultivation partner, she will further end up in an extremely plaintive state.” Mu Xian Yun’s expression turned solemn.

“Therefore, the Mu Clan has chosen me to be the scapegoat. The opposing party is a Earth Spiritual Pulse disciple, does Senior think that I can provoke him?” Liu Ming seemed not to have been affected by the other person’s reassurance and talked with a gloomy expression.

“Truthfully, this really will make things difficult for Junior Bai. However, this marriage was gladly accepted by your esteemed father. Furthermore, betrothal gifts have already been exchanged. Thus, even if you wish to renege, it is already too late. Junior doesn’t have to be too worried about Gao Cong. That boy is under exceptionally strict conditions by the Sect Leader, and the chances of him coming to find you is not high. Nonetheless, there are a few older disciples who adhere to his side and I’m afraid that once they know about this, they will come to you with trouble. Therefore, regarding this possible circumstance, Junior should try as much as possible not to leave the Sect. As long as you endure till the Life and Death Challenge, no harm will befall you after that.” Mu Xian Yun was slightly apologetic as she spoke.

“Endure after the Life and Death Challenge, and nothing will befall me? What does this mean?” Liu Ming felt his heart beat.

“According to my information, Gao Chong just recently became a Late Spirit Apostle. Equipped with his Earth Spiritual Pulse, if he wants to

become one of the ten large core disciples, it shouldn't be too much of a problem. If he is to participate in the Life and Death Challenge and survives, when he returns, he will receive enough benefits and resources to directly enter the peak stage of a Spirit Apostle and prepare to become a Spirit Master. Even if he wants to find trouble, the Sect Leader definitely will not agree to such a thing. Moreover, becoming a Spirit Master is extremely difficult and one may not even finish becoming one within a few years. When the time comes, you and Ming Zhu will have already become husband and wife; what can he do to Junior then?" Mu Xian Yun laughed.

"What if he actually ends up becoming a Spirit Master?" Liu Ming glared at the young woman and asked a question.

"Junior probably doesn't know that Sect Leader's Faction's cultivation method is extremely particular. Once one becomes a Spirit Master, he or she will not easily fall in love. Moreover, when this time comes, Sect Leader will not keep him on a leash, so I don't how many young girl cultivators will throw themselves into his arms. Why would he still want Ming Zhu? If you truly are worried, after you marry Ming Zhu, you can apply to become deacon outside the sect. This way, in the long run, there naturally will not be a problem." Mu Xian Yun seemed to have already have planned everything as she narrated systematically.

After hearing her speak, Liu Ming remained silent. A while later, he suddenly said something that caused Mu Xian Yun to be dumbstruck.

"Senior Mu, I do not wish to speak further of the matter regarding Lady Ming Zhu. Right now, I want to ask about the Large Competition and the Life and Death Challenge. Senior has spent so long in the sect that you must know about matters pertaining to these events.

.....

After the time it takes to have a meal, the young woman wore a smile as she left. Within the room, only Liu Ming remained. He was seated upon a wooden chair pondering silently.

He truthfully wasn't fretting over the Gao Chong and Mu Ming Zhu

situation. Instead, he was contemplating the large competition and the Life and Death Challenge.

# Chapter 80: Shi Jian, Lu Yun

Since Liu Ming was already a Late Spirit Apostle with a totem and the bone scorpion, as long as a Spirit Master did not personally come and look for trouble, there was naturally no big fears.

As for his marriage with Mu Ming Zhu, Liu Ming decided to take it step by step. As for really marrying the girl, he could not care less.

Afterall, three years of time may be very short to others, but for him, it was enough to change many things.

However for him, after hearing Mu Ming Zhu talk about the great rewards and received by the previous Core Disciples from the Large Competition and the Life and Death Trials, he could not help but feel extremely tempted.

TL: Sorry, it should be trials instead of challenges.

Ignoring the other benefits, just by becoming one of the top ten, a Core Disciple, a minimum of one or two thousand Spirit Stones could be received depending on ranking with an upper limit of four to five thousand. Just this was enough to make Liu Ming feel extremely tempted.

Even more needless to say, if disciples survived the Life and Death Trials and came back alive, the Barbarian Ghost Sect would also give every disciple a set of Pure Fiendish Qi, which was a crucial component in ascending to Spirit Master. Also, many of the forbidden grounds in the sect would also be open for the disciples that had returned. Many of these grounds had energies that were a dozen or more times denser than the outside world and would be open for a number of days depending on the contributions a disciple was able to get during the trials.

However, these were only the rewards from the Barbarian Ghost Sect itself. If a disciple could receive a high ranking in the Life and Death Trials overall, there was also a great reward from all of the sects which would be naturally be several times greater than the reward of the Barbarian Ghost Sect alone.

To Liu Ming, who urgently needed large amounts of resources, he naturally could not allow such astonishing rewards to easily slip by.

But after calculating the time, there was only half a year before the Large Competition, and the Life and Death Trials would only be held a year after the Large Competition.

Although Liu Ming's confidence in his strength was not weak, he was not entirely sure whether he could really become one of the top ten disciple, a core disciple, when the time came.

Afterall, all Spirit Apostles in the sect below the age of 30 could participate in the Large Competition. This included young disciples who had astonishing strength and talent, as well as the older disciples who were stuck in the realm of Spirit Apostle, unable to advance, and had already cultivated their Fa Li to an extremely high level.

As for his current situation, it was rather impossible to greatly increase his Fa Li again in a short amount of time. What he lacked was the experience and strategies gained from battling people. Although he had fought with numerous people on Savage Island in the past, those battles were battles between mortal people and the experience that could transfer over to battles between cultivators was very little. In addition, he had not fought other Spirit Apostles too many times.

Although there were specially provided arenas in the sect for disciples to use to battle, who would reveal his real techniques and spells there? Also, if someone really fought seriously in the arenas and seriously injured another disciple, he would be severely punished. Therefore, the arena was really not very useful to the stronger Spirit Apostles.

Therefore, Liu Ming only thought about it once, before giving up on the decision to go to the arenas to gain combat experience.

After thinking quickly a few more times, he suddenly remembered something. With a smirk, he said to himself:

“Oh that's right, although that place is a little dangerous, it is a good place to gain combat experience. Also, if I did go there, even if there were people seeking trouble, it would not be easy for them. However, before

this, I will need to go to the Scripture Pavilion to go and find a suitable defensive secret technique.

Although the Spirit Spell Pavilion of Nine Infants Mountain had a few defensive techniques available to all disciples, these techniques either had a certain condition in order to practice it or was not very effective, so Liu Ming did not pay attention to any one of them.

As for the amount of Contribution Points Liu Ming possessed, he had already spent a large half on the Fa Li increasing pills that while ago, so he probably could only exchange for only one defensive technique with his remaining amount of a few hundred Contribution Points.

However, when he thought of the Martial Uncle Yuan who forcefully gave him the Dark Bone Method, he felt slightly uneasy. The reason why he did not return to the Scripture Pavilion a second time before was because he had a feeling that Martial Uncle Yuan might do something with him again.

However, as this technique was something that would affect the Large Competition and the Life and Death Trials, he could only force himself to go there again. At the same time, he could also ask about and possibly receive an answer for the mysteries of the Dark Bone Method he did not yet understand.

Liu Ming thought carefully again and after feeling that it was not inappropriate in any way, he immediately left his dwelling. After leaving Nine Infants Mountain, he used the Soaring Sky Technique and flew towards the main peak.

However, a little while after he left Nine Infants Mountain, two grey clouds rose up from the foot of the mountain and quickly caught up with Liu Ming in a short amount of time.

“Is it Junior Bai that is in front? Could you stop for a while, we would like to chat a bit with you.”

Liu Ming had already realized that there were people behind him long ago. He originally did not want to pay attention to them, but after hearing the two people speaking to him, he hesitated a little before stopping his

grey cloud and turning around to look at them.

Two clouds came rushing up to Liu Ming's grey cloud with a thirty year old male and female standing on them.

The male was of a dark tan with thick, large arms. In addition, he wore a tightly bound piece of clothing with a purple spear on his back. The female had high cheek bones, an average appearance with a white leather whip on her waist.

"You two are..."

Liu Ming immediately recognized that the two were not disciples of Nine Infants Mountain. He spoke with a squint.

"So it really is Junior Bai! Great, I am Shi Jian, and this is my partner Lu Yun, we are the disciples of the Blood Control Faction." After looking at Liu Ming with a few glances, the dark-faced man spoke with a smile.

"So it is Senior Shi and Senior Lu, is there anything you two need with me?" After hearing that the two were from the Blood Control faction, Liu Ming immediately understood a few things but asked without revealing any strange expressions.

"Junior, this is not a place to speak, is it possible for us to go down?" The dark-faced man and his wife made eye contact, and spoke.

"No problem."

Liu Ming agreed without even thinking and immediately descended downwards. This slightly startled the couple, who also quickly followed behind.

A while later, the three of them arrived in a small forest below.

"What do the two of you require? You can state them now." Liu Ming asked plainly.

"Junior Bai, we have heard of your nickname of 'Mission Madman'. If it was not absolutely necessary, we would not come and look for you." The dark-faced man talked slowly while the smile on his face had already disappeared.



“Oh, looking at Senior’s attitude, you are looking for trouble. You were either sent by Gao Chong, or sent by Mu Ming Zhu.” Liu Ming’s brow moved but he still talked with a calm tone.

“Junior is indeed a smart man, it seems that we do not need to speak a lot. This matter is something that doesn’t require Junior Gao’s attention. We just want to ask, are you willing to cancel your engagement with Mu Ming Zhu? If you agree, we will immediately turn around and leave.” Lu Yun opened her mouth with no expression, and spoke with a slightly hoarse voice.

“If I do not agree, are you two going to fight me here? As soon as there is the slightest Fa Li fluctuation, the Enforcement Deacons will immediately come.” Liu Ming replied with a light smile.

“The sect strictly forbids fights between disciples; how could we do such stupid things? However, if Junior Liu ever leaves for sect chores or leaves the sect in the future, perhaps some problems that may appear.” Shi Jian grinned and spoke, revealing a set of snow-white teeth, but in his words, threats could be seen.

“Problems? Recently, I have coincidentally decided not to leave the sect for a while, if Senior Shi is really patient, you can go and wait around the surrounding areas of the sect for me.” Liu Ming replied with a yawn.

This reply made the couple’s expression slight change.

“Junior Bai, even though that Mu Ming Zhu is as pretty as a flower, are you really willing to offend Junior Gao for a girl that is not even a Spirit Apostle? Do not forget, with the qualifications of Junior Gao, advancing to the stage of Spirit Master is a matter that is almost certainly going to happen.” Lu Yun spoke with a gloomy expression.

“Then let us wait for Gao Chong to really advance to Spirit Master before the two of you come and find me. As for now, do not speculate. I am very busy and really don’t have time to waste speaking with the two of you.” Liu Ming replied with a laugh.

Afterwards, he did not pay any more attention to the two. With a one-handed sign, he began to soar in the sky, and flew towards the main peak

of the the Barbarian Ghost Sect.

“What do we do, who thought this brat would be so difficult at such a young age?” After seeing this reply, the lady turned towards the dark faced man and asked. Her eyebrows were pinched, and she seemed extremely angry.

“This Junior Bai is not old, but to able to create a reputation in such a short time, he naturally has areas that are outstanding. To scare him away with just a few threats is impossible. However, that is not important. According to what I have heard, it has been a very long time since he last accepted a Sect Chore, I do not believe he can really stay inside the sect and not go out. When I return, I will discuss with Senior Wu, and split the people into groups, which will alternate to keep watch outside the sect. I don’t believe we won’t get a chance to teach him a lesson. For such a young disciple, what he has said is very pretty but when he actually feels our power, he will understand what the words: ‘The weak get eaten by the strong and what is not worth offending others over’.” The dark-faced man replied with a cold laugh.

“Okay, then that is what we will do. By the way, Mu Xian Yun seems to get involved with this how about we we teach her a lesson!” Lu Yun nodded with satisfaction, and then spoke as if she had just thought of something.

“Mu Xian Yun is Mu Ming Zhu’s aunt, it is best to not mess with her right now. You have not seen the people who were originally against her, such as Ou Yang Xin. In the past year, they have not been looking for trouble with her. That could be mainly due to her relationship with Junior Gao and them unwilling to make trouble in fear of disturbing the hornet’s nest.” Shi Jian spoke while shaking his head.

“That is true! However, looking at Mu Ming Zhu, she is a person of pity. Even we can see why reason why the Sect Leader is letting her interact with Junior Gao, but she is still in the dark, believing that she is able to fly together with Junior Gao in the future. Perhaps once Junior becomes a Spirit master, she will just become a Human Cauldron!” Lu Yun spoke with a sigh.

“What are you saying, we can talk about this matter between us but once it spreads to the ears of the Sect Leader, we are both dead!” After hearing this, the expression of the dark faced man immediately changed dramatically, at the same time, looking around in a flurry.

# Chapter 81: Ten Thousand Bone Cave

“Be relieved, how on earth will there be people here. I was just simply saying things anyways.” Lu Yun knew that she had said something forbidden and after her face paled, she quickly justified herself.

“Yun Er, you must understand, the reason why we took the initiative to come and help Junior Gao is because when he becomes a Spirit Master, he can help us. The other matters are not things we should care about. Afterall, this matter to do with the Human Cauldron, I don’t believe Mu Xian Yun has not warned her niece about it, but Mu Ming Zhu does not believe it herself, so you can’t blame anyone else. Her life will just be that hard. Anyways, don’t mention this matter again in the future. Let’s first head back and discuss the stance Junior Bai had just now with Senior Wu.” The dark faced man spoke slowly.

Lu Yun just nodded a few times.

Then, the two persons rose up into the air and rushed towards mountain peak of the Blood Control faction.

At the same time, Liu Ming had once again came to the gate of the Scriptures Pavilion. After he stood outside with a complicated expression for a while, he walked in with big steps.

Once he entered the main entrance, he found that the first room he saw was still the small room from before. However, propped on a chair was an old man with a velvet coat. The old man was looking down at the thick book in his hands; only when he heard someone enter did he raise his head and ask,

“Are you trying to exchange for a Cultivation Method or Secret Techniques and Spells?”

This old man’s with the velvet robe, had a very domineering face which gave people a very serious and dignified feeling.

“Hm, wasn’t it Martial Uncle Ruan who guarded the Scripture Pavilion? Martial Uncle is...” After seeing this, Liu Ming was slightly startled. He

quickly followed up with a bow and asked.

“I am Liao Feng from the Poisonous Spirit Faction. You should call me Martial Uncle Liao. Fatty Ruan relieved his position as the guardian of the Scripture Pavilion, and has already returned to focus on his own cultivation. Anyways, what is the reason as to why you came here.” The velvet robed elder spoke with a good nature.

“So it is Martial Uncle Liao. I would like to go into the Scripture Pavilion to choose a defensive technique!” Liu Ming spoke while bowing.

After hearing “Martial Uncle Ruan” was no longer present, Liu Ming relaxed a little but at the same time, he also had a small shred of disappointment.

“Nine Infants Mountain, so you belong to the faction under Martial Brother Gui. You seem very young, so do not bite off more than you can chew. Most defensive techniques require you to have cultivated to a specific level before you can use them. I’ll see what level you have cultivated to.” As soon as the velvet robed elder stopped speaking, his arm disappeared in a flash and he gave Liu Ming’s shoulder a light pat. Instantly, a hot flow entered his shoulder.

Liu Ming was surprised, as the Fa Li inside his body, under this hot, sharp stimulation, immediately rushed towards his shoulder at full power.

“Oh, Late Spirit Apostle?” Liao Feng slowly withdrew his hand, with a slightly surprised expression on his face.

“Martial Uncle Liao, this is...” Liu Ming had a slightly mixed expression.

“Do not worry, I was only measuring your level of cultivation. Since it is Late Spirit Apostle, you naturally have the right to learn defensive techniques. You are called Bai Cong Tian, looks like Senior Gui has received a good disciple under him. Come with me.” Liao Feng smiled and said a word of praise. He then shook his sleeve, and a white cloud of mist rolled out from his sleeve.

Instantly, the two people disappeared with a flash of white light.

In the next moment, the velvet robed elder and Liu Ming were inside a large hall with walls of light.

“Go, that side is the area where all the Cultivation Methods and techniques are. Just put your hand on the stone table, you will know the details of the technique, as well as the Contribution Point cost. If you want it, put your nameplate on the seal, and you will be able to withdraw it.” Liao Feng pointed in a particular direction a few times with one hand, and a wall of light turned into small balls of light, before completely disappearing.

Liu Ming gave a reply before walking across. He put his hand on the closest rock table, which had an azure bamboo cylinder inside a golden case made out of light.

“Hong!”

A gush of energy rushed out of the stone table, and circled around Liu Ming’s brain before immediately transforming into rows and rows of white text.

“Gold Sharpening Technique”, a metal type support technique, which strengthens metal type attacks. It also transforms one’s body into an object of incomparable toughness, allowing it to become strong enough to break gold and jade.

400 Contribution Points.

Liu Ming shook his head and left the stone table, rushing to the next table.

“Water Mist Technique”, a water type concealing technique. It can release mist over a large area, hiding one’s body within the mist.

300 Contribution Points.

“Fire Snake Technique”, a fire type controllable attacking technique. It has a medium attacking range with great destruction power.

1000 Contribution Points.

“Lightning Net Technique”, a lightning type attacking technique. It has

an extremely large attacking range as well as a high destruction power. Can only be practiced by someone with a Lightning Spiritual Pulse.

1400 Contribution Points.

.....

Liu Ming viewed each stone table, one by one. He seemed calm, but inside, he could not stop sighing.

The amount of Contribution Points needed to exchange for a technique was beyond his expectations. With his remaining 300 or so Contribution Points, perhaps Liu Ming could only exchange for a technique of the lowest level available here.

Not long after, Liu Ming went through almost half of the stone tables with techniques. However, his eyebrows were tightly knit, as he had still not found a satisfying technique.

Suddenly, when Liu Ming placed his hand on a dark green stone table, his expression changed slightly. Then, he could no longer move away from the spot.

“Blood Vine Technique”, a wood type defensive technique. Nurturing the seed of a vine type plant within the body and feeding it with essence blood. Once meeting an opponent, it is possible to immediately activate the seed to cover one’s entire body with vines. Defensive capabilities depend on the type of vine as well as the length of time being nurtured. However, it must be remembered that this technique consumes a large amount of essence blood and when activated, it will cause immense pain. Also, if the seed is nurtured within the body for too long, the body may slowly become wooden at which point, there is an extreme level of danger.

300 Contribution Points.

Liu Ming looked through the newly formed white text in his mind several times before withdrawing the nameplate stored on him. Without hesitation, he threw it towards the case made out of light above the stone table.

Although this technique seemed extremely flawed, it was probably the only defensive techniques that could be traded for with Liu Ming's small amount of Contribution Points. Therefore, he had no room to choose.

With a "pu" sound, after the nameplate gave out a flash and 300 Contribution Points within it immediately disappeared. At the same time, the case made out of light also broke.

A thin, green coloured book landed in Liu Ming's hand.

After Liu Ming received the book and turned around without hesitation.

"Blood Vine Technique? Are you really going to practice that? This technique was not created by our founder but rather obtained when one of our predecessors killed a Demonic Practitioner, and found this on his body. This technique was once practiced by many people, but due to the fact that it causes a lot of pain when activated, as well as the fact there is a chance of turning into a tree and how easily it is able to be defeated by fire type techniques, they all slowly gave up on the technique. If it weren't for the special way to practice the technique and the fact that there are not a lot of wood type techniques in the sect, it would already have been moved out of the Scripture Pavilion. Therefore, it only needs this little amount of Contribution Points to exchange. For you, who is young, to have cultivated to this level, you obviously have good talent. There is no need to choose this type of technique." After seeing the green book in Liu Ming's hand, Liao Feng was somewhat startled and spoke.

"Many thanks to the pointers from Martial Uncle, but I do not have a lot of contribution points, and can only choose this technique." Liu Ming replied with respect.

"Since you have chosen and I have also warned you, then swear in the name of the Heavens." Liao Feng sighed and spoke.

TL: The swear is so that Liu Ming doesn't share the technique with other people

After the time it takes to drink a cup of tea, Liu Ming and the velvet robed elder entered the white light, and once again appeared in the small room from the start.



Liu Ming bowed at the elder, before turning around and leaving the Scripture Pavilion.

Liao Feng waited for Liu Ming to leave through the door, before focusing his thoughts and speaking to himself:

“Such a young child, he should be a disciple from the last Opening Spirit Ceremony. However, if I remember correctly, the Nine Spiritual Pulse disciple that Nine Infants Faction received was not called Bai Cong Tian. Perhaps he is a Six Spiritual Pulse disciple but that is a little weird. To be able to cultivate to Late Spirit Apostle so quickly, even a normal Nine Spiritual Pulse Disciple could not do that easily.

The velvet robed elder had an expression full of doubt but after shaking his head, he returned to the seat and continued reading the book in his hand.

At the same time, after Liu Ming checked the remaining Contribution Points which were almost gone, he sighed and put it away. He then directly went to the Duty Hall.

A while later, Liu Ming stood in front of the crystal plate which had the missions listed and stared at the mission highest on the crystal plate. This mission was written with light gold text and Liu Ming had a face of contemplation as he stared without focus.

Only after a good while did Liu Ming turn around and approach the stone desk where mission could be accepted. Afterwards, he passed his nameplate across.

“I want to participate in the mission that occurs once every three months, the Suppression of the Ten Thousand Bone Cave!”

“The Ten Thousand Bone Cave is extremely dangerous, you will be responsible for your own life. Junior Bai, are you sure you want to participate in that mission?” The middle-aged deacon at the stone desk seemed to know Liu Ming, the Mission Madman. After hearing what Liu Ming said, his original smiling expression immediately froze.

“No worries, I am sure I want to accept this mission.” Liu Ming replied

without thinking any further.

“Since it is like this, I will put Junior’s name under the mission. Three days later, there will be a Martial Uncle leading a squad, Martial Brother must join on time, otherwise there will be a great penalty in Contribution points.” The middle-aged deacon spoke while nodding his head. He accepted the name plate, and with a short golden stick, he tapped it a few times before returning it to Liu Ming.

Liu Ming said a word of thanks to the middle aged deacon, before leaving the two story hall.

“Senior Huang, what did mission did Junior Bai just accept? You seem a little hesitant.” A 30 or so year old, average looking male quickly rushed towards the stone desk and casually asked.

“Nothing, Junior Bai only is going to participate in the Suppression of the Ten Thousand Bone Cave mission, which leaves in three days.” The middle-aged deacon obviously recognized the person asking him questions and replied carelessly.

“What, Ten Thousand Bone Cave?” After hearing this, the questioning male gasped in surprise.

“Yeah, that’s why I said a few words of persuasion just then. Too bad Junior Bai insisted on going, so I could only help him register. If I remember correctly, the amount of sect disciples that have fallen in Ten Thousand Bone Cave in the past year or so has already reached ten; as for those who returned with heavy injury, who knows how many there are. This Junior Bai is young, and yet his amount of courage is different from normal.” The middle aged deacon spoke with a click of his tongue.

As for the male who was asking questions before, he was stumped for words.

.....

“What, accepted the mission of the Suppression of Ten Thousand Bone Cave? This brat is really brave enough to do such things!” In a building at the foot of the Blood Control Mountain, several old disciples of the Blood

Control Faction were gathered together, and in the gathering, a dark faced man just finished speaking.

# Chapter 82: Sima Tian

He was the Shi Jian who had sought out Liu Ming earlier. His cultivation companion called Lu Yun was also here. For the other two people, one was a man dressed into a tight fitting clothes and the other was a youth wearing seven or eight blood colored rings around his arms.

“This trip to Ten Thousand Bone Cave will definitely be lead by a Martial Uncle; even though we know that this brat is within the group, we absolutely cannot do anything. This brat really is cruel to himself; in order to avoid us, he unexpectedly goes to Ten Thousand Bone Cave. He really isn’t afraid of not returning. Senior Wu, you are experienced and knowledgeable, do you have a plan?” The eyebrows of the youth with the arm rings raised as he turned his head and directed a question towards the man in tight clothes.

“Since he’s going to Ten Thousand Bone Cave, at the very least, he will not be returning to the sect for three or four months. Thus, if we still want to cause trouble, we can only send a group of people to participate in the Suppression of Ten Thousand Bone Cave Mission in order to have a chance.” The stalwart man slowly said.

“Don’t joke around Senior Wu, despite the fact that we can earn contribution points every time we kill a Bone Ghost in Ten Thousand Bone Cave, it is too hazardous. Aside from those madmen who seek a cultivation path of slaughter and indulge in this pleasure, all of the others participating in this mission were forced by their Martial Uncles and teachers to attend this mission.” When the youth heard the man’s words, his face changed as he replied.

“If this really is the case, then we can only leave the matter for the time being. I also do not wish to go to Ten Thousand Bone Cave. It’s a good thing that Junior Gao is still training, so he doesn’t know about the brat and Mu Ming Zhu’s marriage. When the brat returns, it won’t be too late to help Junior Gao get rid of this inconvenience.” The Senior Wu spread out his hands as he spoke.

These words, when heard by the youth with arm rings, caused him to remain silent and furrow his eyebrows.

“In order for us to teach this brat a lesson, going to Ten Thousand Bone Cave really isn’t a good idea. However, if we were to get those already participating in this suppression mission to do the deed for us, then it won’t be too much of a problem.” Shi Jian opened his mouth and spoke.

“Senior Shi’s idea is to...” When the youth heard this, his expression changed.

“I am acquainted to Disciple Sima of Baleful Yin Faction and it seems that he is one of those participating in the Ten Thousand Bone Cave Suppression Mission this time. If he is willing to, dealing with a mere new disciple should naturally be an extremely easy task. However, Junior Brother Sima is a Core Disciple who is among the top twenty on the Lunar Monument. If we want him to undertake this task, the price will not be small.” Shi Jian slowly said.

“Don’t worry, he doesn’t actually have to kill that brat. He only has to teach him a few lessons and get him to agree to annul the marriage. Whatever amount of Spirit Stones Senior Sima wants as his price, I can provide for it all. How about that? Does Senior Wu have any opinions?” When the youth with arm rings heard Shi Jian’s words, he lightly laughed.

“Since Junior Xin is willing to do so, I naturally don’t have any issues.” Senior Wu’s gaze flashed a couple times before he nodded his head.

“Okay, Senior Shi, in the next few days you should find time to contact Senior Sima.” The youth did not hesitate to reply.

Shi Jian naturally agreed.

Thus, the few discussed the particular details for a while before they all left for their respective dwellings.

.....

Three days later, nearby an enormous decorated building outside the Barbarian Ghost Sect, a few Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples started to

appear one after another.

Most of them were about 30 or 40 years old and there were no twenty year old disciples.

The expressions of these disciples were gloomy as all of them seemed to have something heavy on their minds.

However, a few people were still talking and laughing and displaying completely different expressions from others.

After a while, over thirty male and female disciples had gathered under the decorated building when a graceful figure, seemingly slow, but actually quick, walked towards them from the distance.

It unexpectedly was a pretty female with a face like a blossoming flower. She looked about 27 or 28 years old, was wearing a purple robe and had a cold expression.

“Ah, it surprisingly is Dancing Ghost Faction’s Martial Aunt Lin!”

“Greetings, Martial Aunt Lin”

“My respects, Martial Aunt Lin”

When these Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples clearly saw the purple robed female’s facial features, most of them sucked in a cold breath of air and proceeded to successively pay their respects with a tinge of fear.

This woman astonishingly was Dancing Ghost Faction’s current leader. Apparently, she was also one of Barbarian Ghost Sect’s few Middle Spirit Masters.

“Mmm, stand up. The time has just about come; has everyone arrived?” The woman surnamed Lin spread her hands and let all the disciples stand up. Her gaze swept from left to right and her eyebrows creased as she asked her question.

“Martial Aunt Lin, we are still missing two people.” A thirty something year old seemingly responsible disciple hastily walked forward and replied.

“Then we will wait. If they have yet to arrive in fifteen minutes, we will

just remove their names from the list!” Spirit Master Lin said without the slightest hesitation.

This male disciple naturally responded in a respectful manner.

Thus, everyone continued to wait in this area.

However, because of Spirit Master Lin, nobody dared to say anything nor did they casually move about. Everyone rigidly stood still with their hands behind their back.

Ultimately, after a short while, two grey clouds appeared from the direction of the sect. They proceeded to fly towards the decorated building.

When everyone else saw this, they couldn’t help but stare.

The two grey clouds seemingly simultaneously descended under the decorated building before dispersing. From each cloud walked out a figure.

One person was a 26 or 27 year old gloomy male. He was wearing a black robe and a white human skull was embroidered on each sleeve.

The other person seemed to be a 16 or 17 year old youth who was wearing a green inner disciple apparel. His figure was quite large.

“My respects, Martial Aunt Lin.”

When the gloomy male made out Spirit Master Lin’s facial features, he seemed to be startled and hastily went forward and payed his respects.

As for the 16 or 17 year old youth, he proceeded to silently greet her.

“Martial Nephew Sima, why is it you? The Large Competition is about to start, yet you aren’t properly cultivating in the sect. What are you going to Ten Thousand Bone Cave for?” Spirit Master Lin seemed to recognize the male with a gloomy expression. Her gaze flashed as she asked a question.

“Martial Aunt Lin, you should also know that although my cultivation path isn’t completely on the Path of Slaughter, if I wish to increase my strength, fighting is the quickest way to do so.” The gloomy male calmly

replied.

“I heard last time that you charged into Ten Thousand Cave’s fourth level by yourself. This time, are you still thinking of entering this level? If this is the case, you may not have the same luck as last time and manage to escape unscathed. Don’t tell me that Senior Chu didn’t tell you about this sort of stuff?” The woman named Lin insipidly asked.

“The reason for me coming here this time is because it is a must for entering the top ten Core Disciples. I request for Martial Aunt to not hinder me.” The gloomy male held his head high and replied without thought.

“Fine, since neither you or Senior Chu is willing to listen, why should I meddle in someone else’s affair? As for you..., you seem a bit familiar. What faction are you from and what is your name?” The woman surnamed Lin’s eyebrows slightly creased before looking at the other youth and produced a slight expression of suspicion.

“Bai Cong Tian from the Nine Infant Faction pays his respects to Martial Aunt Lin!” The youth bowed his body as he spoke; it was Liu Ming.

“Bai Cong Tian, Nine Infant? So you are that youngster!” The woman surnamed Lin had a flash of understanding when she heard this. During the last Spirit Opening Ceremony, she had nearly accepted this three Spiritual Pulse disciple into her faction.

“Martial Aunt Lin unexpectedly recognizes this new disciple!” Liu Ming was slightly stunned.

“Of course I recognize you. However, being a mere new disciple and entering the Ten Thousand Bone Cave, you must have a lot of courage. Nonetheless, since it is your own choice, I will identically not obstruct you. Okay, everyone has arrived, let us depart.” Spirit Master Lin faintly smiled as she spoke. Her hand flipped over and suddenly, a pure white jade gourd appeared.

Immediately, she threw the gourd into the air, performed a single handed technique and muttered an incantation.



In an instant, the gourd rode the wind and surged into the sky. It proceeded to spin and a dense white mist spat out of the opening. In a short while, it had turned into a 300 to 400 meter white mist python.

This python made a live animal like movement and instantly, an astonishing aura spread out. The Barbarian Ghost Sect Disciples standing in the vicinity only saw a vast expanse of whiteness appear in front of their eyes and they couldn't help but continuously step backwards.

Most of them couldn't refrain from emitting an expression of shock.

Spirit Master Lin's figure moved and emerged on top of the misty python's head. She proceeded to instruct:

"What are you waiting for? Get on."

The Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples came to sudden realizations and successively rose into the air and boarded the misty python.

In the next instant, a gale engulfed the mist python's body and it carried the 30 something people into the air. It proceeded to fly in a certain direction.

"You are Bai Cong Tian?"

When Liu Ming arrived on the mist python, he had casually found a seat when a figure suddenly appeared in front of him. This person was the gloomy male who had arrived with him and unexpectedly appeared in of Liu Ming.

"That's right, it is me. What business do you have?" Liu Ming raised his head and met the opposing party's gaze. Faintly, he felt a trace of ineffable animosity radiating from the opposition and immediately spoke in a non-courteous manner.

"My name is Sima Tian, remember it well." The gloomy male identically sized up Liu Ming before replying without any expression.

"What does that mean?" Liu Ming's eyes narrowed as he shot a question back.

"When we arrive at Ten Thousand Bone Cave, we may often see each

other.” Sima Tian coldly said before aloofly walking away and finding a separate spot to sit down.

When Liu Ming heard this arbitrary sort of talk, his eyebrows creased. However, his expression remained normal and he closed his eyes as he began resting. It seemed as if he had never even heard the gloomy male talk.

.....

Half a month later, on top of a few dozen hills encircling a basin.

A white mist python’s shrill cry that could be heard for miles sounded. In an instant, the python arrived in the middle of the basin above a stone stronghold before slowly descending from the air.

Under Spirit Master Lin’s commands, Liu Ming and a bunch of Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples successively disembarked the mist python and inquisitively examined the surrounding area.

They found that the stone stronghold was abnormally simple and was comprised of an encompassing tall cyan stone wall and a few buildings within. Moreover, most of the buildings were exceptionally basic stone huts.

Furthermore, with one glance they were able to tell that there were very few people in the stronghold. Only in a distance were a few taller buildings and there seemed to be people talking there.

“Listen carefully, although the Barbarian Ghost Sect is the master of this Ten Thousand Bone Cave, there are occasionally other disciples from other sects who come here to train. Thus, if you meet another sect’s disciple, do not feel baffled. One other thing, those who have never come to Ten Thousand Bone Cave before should read the rules written over there; do not violate them. Now, you are on your own.” Spirit Master Lin’s outstretched finger pointed to a stone monument in the center of the stronghold that was full of silver colored words. After speaking a few sentences, she proceeded to independently walk towards a building that was slightly taller than the others.

# Chapter 83: Miasma Beads and Spirit Bones

After hearing what the Spirit Master said, a large half of the disciples immediately spread out, some following Spirit Master Lin to the large structures, others directly flying and leaving the stone stronghold and towards an unknown place.

Only seven or eight people, including Liu Ming, were newcomers. After looking at each other, they walked towards the stone plate in the middle of the stronghold.

After the time it take to drink a cup of tea, Liu Ming had read all the words on the stone plate, and walked a little around the stone stronghold.

He discovered that apart from a small scale Transportation Formation that could be used in special situations, there was also a store that sold miscellaneous goods and a weapons store. The store that sold goods specialized in supplying Pills of Fastening, Spirit Liquids and some simple supplies. The weapons store could fix some broken Practitioner Weapons and also sold some simple Practitioner Weapons.

As for the other small stone huts, they were freely provided for the disciples who joined the suppression mission to rest in.

Before coming here, Liu Ming had already prepared all the supplies, and therefore only spent several dozens of Spirit Stones to purchase a map of the Ten Thousand Bone Cave from the miscellaneous goods store, before flying out of the stone stronghold like the other people.

In the air, he rolled open the map, after a close look, he squinted his eyes, and had a far look around the basin.

He only saw that the sides of the basin had hills and some uneven, black stone pillars. Further in the basin, there was an azure coloured stone platforms, with some ancient looking inscriptions carved into them.

Liu Ming looked at those stone pillars and the stone pillar, and then look at his map, before his expression changed. He formed a hand sign

with one hand, and the grey cloud which he was riding immediately started ascending.

Three thousand feet, four thousand feet, six thousand feet, ten thousand feet.....

After ascending to ten thousand or more feet, Liu Ming focused his attention and looked downwards carefully, resulting in a gasp.

He only saw that the whole basin was in fact a huge formation of tens of thousands of acres, and the ordinary looking stone stronghold was in fact in the center of the formation.

Seeing this, the Ten Thousand Bone Cave was just as scary as it was rumored to be, otherwise there would not be several sects working together to place such a scary sealing formation.

According to the information he had researched, the Ten Thousand Bone Cave was formed five or six thousand years ago, after an outburst of Miasma.

It was said that there were countless bones and skeletons of humans and beasts buried there ten of thousands of year ago, and after being corrupted by the miasma, they all became alive one after another into skeleton type ghosts. However, as these skeletons had been inactive for a long time, so their innate intelligence was not high. Therefore, they could all be called Bone Ghosts.

As the length of time spent in the miasma varied from one bone ghost to another, it also caused variation in their strength. There were Soldier Level Bone Ghosts that could fight with Practitioners, as well as General Level Bone Ghosts that could fight with Spirit Masters.

Also, some people said that on the lowest level of the Ten Thousand Bone Cave, there was a Bone Ghost King, which has the power of a true Ghost King, and could fight with Crystal Level Elders.

Of course, not many people believed this rumor. Afterall, if there really was such a Bone Ghost King, then the Crystal Level Elders of the sects would have already set out and hunted it. There was no way they would

let such a thing stay at the lowest level of the Ten Thousand Bone Cave.

Also, due to some unknown reason, these Bone Ghosts could not be overwhelmed or tamed by the Spirit Communication Technique. Only after being killed would they sometimes randomly drop Spirit Bones or a type of crystal bead condensed from miasma, which was somewhat valuable.

However, to prevent a great amount of ghosts working together to break the seal placed by the sects, the sects could only send groups of disciples in to kill large amounts of Bone Ghosts.

However, as the miasma in this cave was almost unlimited, combined with an unknown amount of skeletons and bones, even though countless Bone Ghosts would be killed each year, many more new Bone Ghosts would also be born.

Therefore, the sects had to send disciples to regularly guard this area to the point where they were willing to offer large amounts of rewards to attract disciples to go there of their own accord.

However, several hundred years ago, the Barbarian Ghost Sect made a deal with the other sects, where the Barbarian Ghost Sect would be the sole guardian of this cave. Of course, if the other sects sent a few disciples to this cave, they would not be impeded or stopped.

Although the Ten Thousand Bone Cave had existed for such a long time and never caused any large problems, the danger level inside it was legitimate.

It is said that the whole Ten Thousand Bone Cave has nine levels, but as of now, people had only gone to the first five levels.

The first three levels of the Ten Thousand Bone Cave normally had Soldier Level Bone Ghosts, and the fourth and fifth levels had Warrior Level Bone Ghosts, with General Level Bone Ghosts appearing once in a while. It was said that the world below the the first five levels was the world of General Level Bone Ghosts and that even Spirit Masters would not dare enter.

As for disciples that were Spirit Apostles, they normally only did extermination in the first three levels. The ones courageous enough to enter the fourth and fifth level were either extremely talented and brave, or had a Spirit Master leading their squad.

After looking around high up in the sky for a while and quickly going through the information in his brain, Liu Ming urged his grey cloud to descend and arrived on a hill next to the basin after a short while.

In the rock face that was a hundred or so feet away, there was a cave several tens of feet high, with its entrance covered by a barrier made out of white light.

This was one of the entrances into the Ten Thousand Bone Cave. Several similar entrances were littered all over the basin, which was said to amount to almost one hundred entrances.

As for the white light at the entrance, it was a powerful seal that specially restrained ghosts but had no effect on the disciples from each sect that wanted to enter.

Liu Ming did not hesitate and walked towards the cave. After a white flash, his body was enveloped within, nowhere to be seen.

After entering the light barrier, there was a tunnel over a hundred feet in length. The rock walls on both sides were quite smooth but not completely flat, clearly showing that it was not created by people.

In addition, the stone walls gave off a faint white light, making the tunnel abnormally bright.

What made Liu Ming feel curious was, when he closely examined a rock face and lifted his hand, he was able to pull off a piece of faintly glowing crystal.

The rock looked like Spirit Stones, but it was abnormally cloudy and there were no traces of Yuan Qi that could be felt.

Liu Ming shook his head and casually threw away the rock in his hand, before patting the leather pouch by his waist. A black light appeared, and the White Bone Scorpion appeared nearby bundled inside a cloud of green

gas.

“Go.”

Liu Ming pointed ahead and gave a deep shout.

Instantly, the White Bone Scorpion leapt up and disappeared the dark shadows that was up ahead.

Then, Liu Ming felt the bronze bracelet on his wrist, and slowly walked forwards too.

After walking a short distance, a one hundred or so feet long and wide cavern appeared, with three different tunnels, all seemingly to reach further into the ground.

Liu Ming chose one without hesitation, and entered it in a flash.

Two hours later, Liu Ming did not know how many caverns he had passed, and how many tunnels he had entered, but he vaguely feel that he was very deep underground.

Even the light-emitting crystals on the sides of the tunnels began to lessen, and the surrounding environment became slightly hazy, leaving people with a strange feeling of their heart beating faster for no reason.

Liu Ming turned around a corner, and when he passed by an intersection, something from jumped out of the nearby mud and rushed towards him.

“Peng”.

Liu Ming swayed his body, and dodged the opponent. He then moved his arm, suddenly using a fist covered with yellow light to hit the black shadow.

The black shadow immediately flew backwards, painfully hitting the side of the tunnel which produced the sound of something breaking apart.

Only then did Liu Ming focus his attention and had a look at his attacker. It was a beast type Bone Ghost and was less than half a foot long. Half its body had already crumbled from Liu Ming’s attack, but the remaining half, under the urging of the flashing black bead that was

embedded on its head, actually stood up with difficulty.

“Sou.”

A black long string shot past Liu Ming, immediately piercing the small skull. After a blur and a pull, the rest of the Bone Ghost also crumbled away.

Only then did Liu Ming grab at the thin air.

The small skull of the bone ghost immediately flew towards Liu Ming, who caught it.

Using some power in his five fingers, the skull of the bone ghost instantly turned into dust under the huge power. The black bead that was originally embedded in the skull came rolling out, landing in Liu Ming's hands.

Within his hand, Liu Ming carefully examined the bead that was no larger a bean. When he decided that it could be exchanged for one or two Contribution Points, the White Bone Scorpion which was underground nearby suddenly came borrowing out. It then stared at the Miasma bead in Liu Ming's hand and gave out a low humming sound.

“You want this?”

When Liu Ming saw this situation, he was slightly surprised and after a little bit of thought, he casually tossed the bead to the ghost.

The White Bone Scorpion jumped up, and swallowed the black coloured bead midair, before lazily lying still on the ground.

After staring at his scorpion for a while, Liu Ming did not discover any abnormal symptoms and could only shake his head and continue onwards.

.....

Three days later.

With the explosion of a fire ball and a loud “hong” sound, the fragments of the skull of a human shaped bone ghost flew in all directions. At the same time, a black bead the size of a broad bean came rolling out with



the pure white, headless body of the bone ghost swaying a few times, before collapsing onto the floor, forming a pile of spare bones.

With a “sou” sound, a green shadow flashed past and the black bead that was on the floor disappeared.

Liu Ming looked at the White Bone Scorpion raise its head and emit out a “ge beng” sound, causing Liu Ming to helplessly roll his eyes.

TL: Scorpion raised head to chew/eat the bead

This was the Miasma Bead of a legitimate Soldier Level bone ghost, which could be exchanged for three or four Contribution Points. For it to be eaten by the White Bone Scorpion, it gave Liu Ming a wave of pain in his heart.

This was also the first Soldier Level human-shaped Bone Ghost Liu Ming had met in these few days. It was not one of those bone rabbits or bone rats, or any of those weak, small-sized Bone Ghosts he had met before.

However, ever since Liu Ming discovered that after the bone scorpion had swallowed seven or eight of these miasma beads, the green gas that enveloped it was slightly thicker than before, he was no longer opposed to the actions of the White Bone Scorpion, who was stealing the miasma beads.

As the White Bone Scorpion finished consuming the black bead, it instead turned around, and suddenly used its huge claws to dig out a small, abnormally sparkling and translucent bone, which was several inches long.

Liu Ming’s expression changed, and immediately grabbed the small bone that was in front of him. After a close examination, he smiled and said to himself:

“So this is a Spirit Bone, too bad it seems to only be ten years old. However, I can exchange it for a hundred or so Spirit Stones.

# Chapter 84: Bone Ghost

Liu Ming smiled a little, and put the Spirit Bone away before continuing to travel along the tunnel.

Seven days later, in an abnormally large underground cavern in the Ten Thousand Bone Cave.

Liu Ming became a shadow flashing everywhere, avoiding the chase of several Bone Ghosts formed from pythons, while silently chanting words. He raised both hands, and seven or eight azure coloured wind blades shot out consecutively, chopping the python Bone Ghosts into countless pieces in a flash.

Where the bodies of the Bone Ghosts were broken, a greyish white gas would float out, pulling the separated body parts together. After rolling on the ground, the ghost would be fully recovered, exactly like before.

However, during this time used, several black lines would shoot forwards, piercing through the head of two python Bone Ghosts. After a small tremble of the black line, the skulls of the Bone Ghosts would immediately break apart into dust.

At the same time, Liu Ming's body became a blur, and approached the last python Bone Ghost's body at an impossible angle. He moved his hand to hold the python at the point of seven inches on its body and a yellow tiger head flashed from his wrist. A sound wave came blasting through, also breaking apart the skull.

TL: Seven Inches = where to grab snakes

Three dark beads immediately came rolling out!

.....

Half a month later, in a tunnel on the second level of the Ten Thousand Bone Cave, Liu Ming faced a large, gorilla-like Bone Ghost with a serious expression.

This Bone Ghost was different from the Bone Ghosts from before. Not only did it have strong, thick joints, its two eyes of green flames were also

jumping about. It seemed as if it had a shred of intelligence.

Not far away, the White Bone Scorpion covered in green gas scuttled forwards, with its black stinger upright. It was as if it was preparing to fight a strong foe soon.

This Bone Ghost was surprisingly a Warrior-level Bone Ghost!

Since it was like this, Liu Ming could not afford to not face it seriously.

The gorilla-like Bone Ghost gave a deep roar, and suddenly pound the ground furiously with its two long arms. A cloud of yellowish gas immediately came rolling out from its feet.

In that instant, the ground began to shake, which caused Liu Ming, who was not ready, to helplessly stagger.

The Gorilla Bone Ghost seized to moment to suddenly leap forward, rushing at Liu Ming as if it was a huge boulder.

Even though the Gorilla had not hit the target yet, a huge gust of wind began to blow. There was a frightening power in its attack!

However, Liu Ming, in this scenario, did not dodge. He shook his sleeve, and an azure light flashed out.

“Pu.”

The body of the gorilla Bone Ghost broke into two halves from around the middle, flashing past Liu Ming, and heavily landing on the floor, unable to move.

The White Bone Scorpion gave out a “wu wu” cry, before immediately rushing up with its huge claw, snipping at the two halves of the gorilla Bone Ghost crazily for a while. In no time, the Bone Ghost was broken into a pile of bones.

“Sou.”

A thumb-sized black bead, covered in a cloud of dark gas, came rolling out of the pile of bones but after the flash of a black line, a black shiny stinger hit the dark gas in a lightning fast strike.

The bead immediately came flying out of the black gas.

The White Bone Scorpion leapt up and snapped at the bead in a blur before suddenly sucking up the dispersing black gas into its body. It also gave out a weird cry of delight.

The black gas seemingly had great benefits to the scorpion.

“Since you have already received benefits, leave that Warrior Level Miasma Bead for me. After all, when I return, I can’t not exchange for any contribution point, right?” Liu Ming put the azure coloured sword that was pulled out from his sleeve just then, and spoke while smiling.

Liu Ming, at this moment, had a slightly paler complexion, obviously due to the fact that the chop from before consumed a lot of Fa Li. However, he seemed extremely satisfied.

When he used the short sword totem just before, although he only used the first restriction, the power was beyond his expectations with the Warrior Level Bone Ghost unable to withstand one chop.

The White Bone Scorpion turned its head and look at its huge claws, seeming as if it was unwilling to part with the bead. But after a while, it still scuttled to Liu Ming, placing the dark bead under where Liu Ming was standing.

Liu Ming nodded, and bent over to pat the back of the of the White Bone Scorpion, before picking the black bead up with one hand and used his eyes to closely study it.

Not only was the Miasma Bead larger than any previous ones seen, it also blacker and shinier, giving people a strange feeling of as if their consciousness was going to be sucked into it.

Liu Ming was slightly surprised but he still put the bead away, and continued on forwards with the White Bone Scorpion.

A month later, at the cave entrance which Liu Ming originally went into, two grey clouds suddenly landed at the same time, and two people appeared.

One of the individuals shrewd looks and two fidgeting eyes. The other person wore black robes and had a gloomy expression. This was the Sima Tian from the Baleful Yin Faction.

“That brat really entered from here? You can be sure?” Sima Tian studied the entrance, and spoke plainly.

“Senior Sima, be assured, for the things that you have told me to do, how can I afford to be careless? Although I followed from far away and did not get close, this area has only a few entrances. I then checked every entrance and only this entrance had the traces of someone just entering. There is definitely no error.” The shrewd male replied with a small laugh.

“Ok, here is the reward as said. If I don’t find the person I am looking for, you will pay back twice the amount.” Sima Tian raised his hand and threw across an Middle Spirit Stone, and spoke coldly.

“Senior Sima, don’t joke around, if you can’t find him, it isn’t necessarily..... wait.....” The shrewd male caught the spirit stone but after hearing what Sima Tian said, he immediately became somewhat panicked.

However, Sima Tian, at this time, had already entered the cave with a flash.

“That guy is still the same as before, believing that he is infallible. Whatever, with his pursuing abilities, he should find the person he is looking for easily. These one hundred spirit stones can be considered as free.” The shrewd male shook his head, before beaming with happiness again. He turned around, and flew away.

.....

Liu Ming naturally did not know that there were actually people pursuing him. He currently was standing at the entrance to another tunnel which had grey gas rolling out of it and his two eyes were squinted together, studying something.

Close by the entrance, on a flat wall, these were a few large, blood red words; “Level Three Entrance”.

“Any further will be the third level of the Ten Thousand Bone Cave. I heard that the amount of Warrior Level Bone Ghosts in there cannot be compared to the previous two levels. However, this also means that entering this level will provide rewards that cannot be compared to the previous levels.” Liu Ming muttered a sentence and walked into the tunnel in front with the White Bone Scorpion beside him.

.....

Two months later, in a huge cavern with all types of sharp stalagmites, Liu Ming and the White Bone Scorpion were currently in an intense fight with a huge human shaped skeleton that was a dozen or more feet tall.

This skeleton was very different to the human shaped Bone Ghosts Liu Ming had seen before. It actually wore some iron armor that was covered in rust and had a badly damaged axe in one hand while grey gas rolled out of its body all the same time. Its speed in battle was fast like lightning, but after using the axe in its hand, it would move abnormally slow.

However, what was even weirder was that when Liu Ming or the White Bone Scorpion saw the axe swinging, they would instead avoid it by a large distance as if they were fighting a very strong enemy. They seemed to be unwilling to get any closer and attack the slow moving Bone Ghost.

One time, the White Bone Scorpion dodged a little slow and the axe was clearly a dozen or so feet away, but there was instead a loud smashing sound. The scorpion was hit back by several tens of feet, as if it was hit by some heavy blow, with a small crack appearing on its back at the same time.

However, at this time, Liu Ming gave a deep growl, bringing his two hand together before separating again. Unexpectedly, a large sized wind blade around five feet wide appeared and with a shake of his arm, it became an streak of azure light and shot forward.

“Pu.”

This time, it was the armored skeleton that flew backwards and hit the thick stalagmite behind it. As for the metal armor and a large half of its body, it was actually cut open, with the large wind blade embedded in it

like a large board being stuck to the wound.

The skeleton gave a low growl and swung the axe in his hand, immediately breaking the large wind black with one blow. Grey gas came flowing out of the injured area and healed the wound at a fast, observable speed.

However, just at that time, there was instead a “chi chi” sound from nearby and a dozen or so black lines came flashing by, immediately piercing various places on the skeleton. Immediately after, a vibration went in the air and a black stinger fell from the sky. After a blur, it was firmly pierced into the top of the skull of the skeleton. A black liquid then immediately came pouring out.

At the top of the cavern, green air came rolling out, and the White Bone Scorpion came crawling out of the rocks.

The green flames in the two eyes of the huge skeleton flashed and it moved its arm, grabbing the tail of the scorpion, which was above its head. With an ordinary tug, as if it was pulling a carrot from the ground, it pulled the tail out of the hole that the tail had made. Right after, it started to make a powerful shake, to smash and stun the scorpion onto the ground.

However, just at this time, a thick, black chain shot forward from far away and with a flash, it bound the skeleton together tightly.

At the same time, Liu Ming, who was far away, began chanting and brought his two hands together in front of his chest. A scarlet red fireball appeared mid-air, and grew larger under the sound of the chanting, turning into a ball of multiple inches in the blink of an eye, with the smell of something burning wafting in the air.

When the human shaped skeleton, which was far away, saw this and it somehow knew something was not right. With a powerful hiss, it suddenly made a struggle with strength, and the black chain on its body began to break open inch by inch with cracking sounds as it lost the power to keep binding the Bone Ghost.

At this time, Liu Ming's chant suddenly stopped, and the huge fire ball

shot forward with a rumbling sound and after a blur, it became a ball of red light, completely engulfing the human shaped skeleton within.

A sky-shaking bang!

A black and red fire mushroom cloud rushed towards the sky!

The whole cavern shook a few times and a hot wave of air rolled outwards, breaking all the nearby, different sized stalagmites and knocking an innumerable amount of broken rock in all directions, hitting the rock walls.

Under spirit communication with Liu Ming, the White Bone Scorpion had already burrowed underground in a flash beforehand.

When Liu Ming saw this, his expression did not change at all, and instead stared at the black fire cloud without even blinking.

The fire cloud rolled a few times, before slowly disappearing with the human shaped skeleton that was originally standing there completely gone, only leaving behind a small piece of metal armor and that piece of broken axe blade.

Liu Ming gave a long sigh, and did not immediately walk across, instead, he turned around, and spoke plainly to the cavern entrance that was behind him:

“Senior Sima has already watched for so long, shouldn’t you also come out so I can see you?”



# Chapter 85: Condensing the Aura into Cultivation Qi

“When did you discover me?” A figure walked out from the entrance of a cave. The black silhouette appeared in a flash; it was the black robed gloomy male that Liu Ming had met before.

Only this time, after looking at the area where the enormous fireball had previously exploded and then looking back at Liu Ming, his face was full of fear.

“Although Senior Sima was well hidden, unfortunately there was a period of time when you didn’t control your aura properly and let it slightly discombobulate. Otherwise, how would I have discovered you.” Liu Ming turned around and looked at the black robed male while insipidly speaking.

Simultaneously, the White Bone Scorpion drilled out of the ground once again. Its green flame eyes pulsed as it stared at the unexpected guest.

“So that’s how. Nonetheless, no matter who it is, I’m afraid that anyone who sees Junior Bai’s strength will be startled. I’m not even going to mention this Warrior Level ghost; your current strength is already of a late stage Spirit Apostle, moreover, I’m afraid that your Wind Blade and Fireball techniques have already condensed a technique seal.” Sima Tian slowly said.

“Technique Seal?”

This was the second time Liu Ming had heard of this.

Back then, he had learned of this name from the Wasp Bandit and had proceeded to search for it in a few books. However, he wasn’t able to find any related accounts.

“Yes, when various techniques are cultivated to perfection, a technique seal will be condensed in one’s mind and become a godly power. When its full power is released, the formidability will be a world of difference from its previous power. Hehe, the person who provided me with information

unexpectedly said you were a three Spiritual Pulse disciple who only had a mere Middle Spirit Apostle cultivation. Their dog eyes really are blind! According to my knowledge, if one wanted to condense a technique seal for the Wind Blade and Fireball techniques, he or she would have to renounce cultivating other techniques and spend at least three to four years cultivating either technique. Yet, Junior Bai surprisingly is able to wield both at perfection. It seems that Junior's gift for cultivating techniques surpasses a normal person's imagination." Sima Tian coldly said.

"Hmmm, there is someone who wanted you to come here to cause me trouble?" Liu Ming raised his eyebrows, but there was no sign of surprise on his face.

"That's right. Originally, I thought it would be an easy affair, but after seeing Junior Bai's true strength, the measly amount of Spirit Stones offered is but a joke considering I have to face such a strong enemy. In other words, I don't have complete confidence in defeating you, so I won't be performing any actions that may invite a rebuff. However, if you and I are to meet again in the Large Competition, I will definitely use my entire strength and will not go easy." After speaking, Sima Tian's figure headed towards the cave's exit and surprisingly retreated.

Witnessing this scene, Liu Ming rubbed his chin, but didn't chase.

Although the opposing party had the same Late Spirit Apostle cultivation as the Wasp Bandit which he had killed earlier, his body contained an extremely dangerous aura that made Liu Ming pay extra attention to.

Whatever... since the opposing party knew to retreat, he could be considered a smart person!

Although Liu Ming was interested in testing the true strength of core disciples, suffering injuries in this area would render him unable to continue fighting here. Furthermore, if he were to bump into others who harbored malicious intentions, it would be a large problem.

After thinking like this, Liu Ming also extinguished any ideas of fighting

with the opposing party.

At this time, the nearby White Bone Scorpion began to wildly crawl around. It had somehow used his claws to excitedly bring the Miasma bead and a half foot bone that was covered in faint grey gas, to Liu Ming's side.

"Hmmm, this Spirit Bone is...." Liu Ming's gaze swept over the Spirit Bone picked up by the White Bone Scorpion. Instantly, his expression turned to shock as he picked it up with a hand and began to meticulously examine it.

"Sure enough, it is a Hundred year Spirit Bone; furthermore, its quality seems to be quite high! Very good, the Miasma bead will be a reward for you." After examining it, Liu Ming was overjoyed and proceeded to place the Spirit Bone into a wood box before carefully putting it away.

Adjacently, when the White Bone Scorpion, eagerly waiting, heard Liu Ming's words, it bluntly swallowed the Miasma bead and then let out a pleased whimpering sound.

Just now, the human formed skeleton bone ghost was extremely strong and was the strongest Warrior level Bone Ghost Liu Ming had encountered in this area thus far. Its Miasma bead would definitely provide a large amount of nourishment for the White Bone Scorpion. If Liu Ming were to bring the bead outside and exchange it for contribution points, earning a few hundred contribution points was not impossible.

Liu Ming shook his head and picked up the remaining iron piece and the half axe blade. After examining them, he threw both into an animal skin bundle.

These two items were able to withstand the enormous fireball so they clearly were not common items. They probably could be sold for a few Spirit Stones.

Just as Liu Ming grabbed his bundle and was about to continue forward, he suddenly thought of something and turned around before nearing the same cave that Sima Tian came in.

“Pu.”

A light yellow glyph stuck onto a nearby stone wall and in a flash, sunk into the stone and disappeared without a trace.

Seeing this, Liu Ming felt reassured and actually left.

Although the price of this Response Glyph was immense, as long as someone else entered through this entrance, the other matching glyph in Liu Ming's hand would immediately warn him.

In this way, he no longer had to worry about Sima Tian coming back or continuing to follow him.

Like this, the time continued to pass.

Liu Ming continued to stay in Ten Thousand Bone Cave for three months. He underwent a remarkable growth in respects to the coordination of his techniques and actual combat experience. Furthermore, he became much more accomplished at utilizing the short sword totem.

In this period of time, the number of Warrior level Bone Ghosts he had killed were in the hundreds. As for Soldier level Bone Ghosts, the sheer amount couldn't be counted. He had further come across a few extremely strong ghosts that were even more powerful than the human like ghost he had faced earlier.

Among these powerful ghosts was a humanoid Bone Ghost with two heads that had already advanced to a stage only one step below a general level ghost. Liu Ming took the White Bone Scorpion as he fled across the third layer of the Ten Thousand Bone Cave, before having no option but to use a number of attack type Glyphs and the third restriction of the short sword totem to ultimately kill the bone ghost.

However, this battle caused his vitality to suffer and it was only after resting for five to six days that he was able to continue training.

Nonetheless, this battle caused him to feel a similar feeling to when he was on Savage Island and fighting strong enemies. Subsequently, when he faced other Bone Ghosts, he began to integrate his battle methods on

Savage Island into his current battle style.

Not long after, his entire strength and fighting style began to completely change.

On a certain day three months later, Liu Ming was wearing tattered clothing while gripping an enormous animal skin bundle as he walked out of the cave entrance.

The aura on his body was shocking and his gaze contained traces of coldness. Behind him was the White Bone Scorpion whose body was covered by the rolling green air; its body unexpectedly was twice as large as before.

Liu Ming lifted his head and looked at the blazing sun he had not seen in many days. After closing his eyes and feeling the traces of warmth on his body, he once again opened his eyes.

This time, the coldness in his gaze was completely gone and the aura surrounding his body had disappeared.

Subsequently, the grey cloud beneath him rose into the air and soared to the stone fortress in the middle of the basin.

A few days later, a group of dragon headed grey wooden boats rose into the air. At the bow, a grey haired old man was expediting the ships and bringing the group of Barbarian Ghost Sect Disciples back to the main gate of Barbarian Ghost Sect.

At the stern of the boat, Liu Ming was standing in a bolt upright position and looking at the fleeting white clouds pass by outside of the barrier of light. His expression was abnormally calm.

In another location on the wooden ship, Sima Tian was watching Liu Ming's figure from a distance with a face full of thought.

Simultaneously, in front of the door to a private room in Barbarian Ghost Sect's Blood Control Division, the Sect Leader was standing with both his hands behind his back. His bright gaze was fixated on the blood red entrance and his expression was somewhat apprehensive with a tinge of expectation.

Behind him were another two 20 year olds. Their facial features were extremely similar and these youths had their hands locked together behind their back. Their gazes at the entrance of the private cell revealed extreme complication with a bit of jealousy and envy.

“Hong!” The entrance suddenly broke apart from the inside. Subsequently, a blood mist coiled out from within the room. After congealing, it abruptly transformed into a youth with a face covered in red light.

From a familiar person’s point of view, it astonishingly was the loose cultivator, Gao Chong who had entered the Barbarian Ghost Sect with Liu Ming and Mu Ming Zhu.

However, the simple and honest appearance of his had already completely vanished, and currently, in its place, was an arrogant and radiant expression that covered his face.

“This disciple greets Master!”

When Gao Chong saw the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader, he immediately paid his respects.

“Chong Er, did you cultivation succeed?” The Barbarian Ghost Sect elder was somewhat nervous as he hastily asked a question.

“Master, I have followed what you have taught me and has already succeeded in turning a trace of Blood Aura into the Bloody Cultivation Qi.” Gao Chong respectfully said. One of his fingers pointed towards empty space in front of him and immediately, a sliver of Blood Qi coagulated from his fingertip. It resembled a red rope as it instantly coiled a few times around his fingers with an incomparably nimble appearance.

Seeing this, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader was overjoyed, but his tone of voice was prudent as he said:

“I still have to check if you have actually succeeded in Condensing the Aura into Cultivation Qi.” When his voice faded, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader lifted his palm and swatted at the air in front of Gao Chong

lightly.

Before his palm had managed to hit anything, a bloody mist rolled out from his five fingers while a faint scent of blood leaked out from within the bloody mist.

Gao Chong's pupils contracted and his finger that had the Blood Qi on it abruptly drew a circle with a diameter of a foot midair.

"Pu!"

The sliver of Blood Qi instantly shot forward and immediately filled the circle, turning it into a faint blood colored shield.

In the next moment, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader's palm smacked into the blood colored shield.

"Hong!" A heaven shaking sound rang out.

The blood colored shield crumbled under the rolling Blood Qi and Gao Chong instantly retreated a few steps. Simultaneously, a burst of violent red light flashed on his face before he managed to stabilize his body.

"Good, it really is Bloody Cultivation Qi! Chong Er, you've done very well! You have grasped the Cultivation Qi that only Spirit Masters are able have. Despite only having this small sliver, it should be enough to stand invincible among Spirit Apostles. In our sect, aside from Baleful Yin Faction's Yang Qian, there is no need to worry about anyone else." The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader gleefully laughed.

# Chapter 86: The Heros

“Yang Qian.”

When Gao Chong heard this name, his expression changed slightly.

“However, Chong Er, even though you have strength, you still lack a lot of real battle experience. Therefore starting tomorrow, these two Seniors will help you with practice during the day and night. This way, when the day of the Large Competition arrives, you should gain a lot of battle experience.” The Barbarian Sect Leader used his hand to point to the two cool-looking youths behind him, and spoke while smiling.

“Then in the future, Gao Chong will request for the help of the two Seniors.” Gao Chong cupped his fist with a had at the two youths and spoke with a polite manner.

“You flatter me, as long as I can help Juniors Gao, we brothers are honored.” After seeing this, the two youths did not dare reply slowly, so they replied hurriedly and politely.

“Anyways, Chong er, the time you spent training was very long, you must be tired. You should first return and rest for today!” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader spoke a few words with deep concern, before leaving with the two youths.

After Gao Chong respectfully saw off the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader, he sat down and crossed his legs where he was standing before, and closed his eyes, beginning to harmonise his Qi.

After an unknown length of time, he again opened his eyes, and there was another youth next to him, who had several hoops around both of his arms.

“So it is Senior Xin, to be so hasty, what matter of importance has occurred outside recently?” After seen the face of the youth clearly, Gao Chong’s eyes flashed and asked.

“Junior Gao, a matter indeed has occurred recently. I do not know whether I should tell you or not.” The youth with hoops on his arms



hesitated a little before speaking like this.

“Is it related to Mu Ming Zhu?” Gao Chong’s eyes flashed again and asked plainly.

“How does Junior know?” The youth with hoops on his arms could not help but be amazed.

“Hehe, I was originally a Loose Practitioner with no family or clan burdening me. The only matters that are related to me and can cause you people to be so hesitant and unsure how to handle are naturally matters involving Mu Ming Zhu. Say, what is the matter?” Gao Chong spoke with a small laugh.

“Several months ago, news was heard from outside that the Mu family has betrothed Junior Mu Zhu to another person, and they are already engaged.” The youth with hoops on his arms paused for a while, before slowly speaking word by word.

“For the Mu Clan to betroth Ming Zhu to another person without saying anything to me, they have guts. Do they really believe that just because their Clans has several Spirit Apostle, they can ignore me? Who is the person Ming Zhu is betrothed to? I also want to see what person is brave enough to steal a woman I fancy.” After hearing this, Gao Chong’s expression became a little sinister, and spoke eerily.

“It is a disciple called Bai Cong Tian from the Bai Clan. I heard that he was in the same group of new disciples that entered with Junior Bai. He is currently under the Nine Infants Faction.” The youth with the hoops on his arms replied hurriedly.

“Bai Cong Tian, new disciple! I think, yes, it is very coincidental. There was indeed a person, he was at the same place as Ming Zhu and me when we were picked up and sent to the sect by the envoy. However, if I remember correctly, he was only a mere Three Spiritual Pulse disciple. Since this matter has already happened for the lengthy time of half a year, don’t tell me that Senior Wu and you people were unable to even get a mere Three Spiritual Pulse new disciple to obediently reject the engagement.” After hearing the name, Gao Chong gave a little thought

and suddenly said.

“Junior, that Bai Chong Tian is not like a normal disciple. He seems to have already become Middle Spirit Apostle a year ago, and once won against a well-known, genius disciple from Nine Enlightenment Mountain in a battle. Also, he once completed several dozens of Sect Chores in one breath in the time of a few months, without failing a single one. Also, under the sect rules, we could not really use any harsh methods against him inside the sect, so only not long ago did we find Sima Tian of the Baleful Yin Faction to handle him.” The youth with hoops on his arms explained.

“Sima Tian, I have heard of this person. He seems to be one of the top twenty Core Disciples on the Lunar Monument. To handle a mere new disciple at the level of Middle Spirit disciple is an extremely easy thing for him to do. Has he already handled it?” After hearing this, Gao Chong’s expression changed a little.

“No, we only received the news several days ago, that Sima Tian actually sent back the advancement of Spirit Stones that we had paid and said that if they really wanted him to do the job, they would need to increase the payment by ten times. He also did not guarantee that he would succeed.” The youth with hoops on his arms gave a bitter laugh, and replied with a freakish expression.

“Did Sima Tian really say this?” After hearing that, Gao Chong’s expression slightly changed.

“The person who brought the news is a good friend of mine, so there naturally isn’t any false news.” The youth with hoops on his arms replied with certainty.

“Interesting, it seems that this Junior Bai is really something, actually causing a core disciple like Sima Tian to be extremely scared of fighting him, otherwise he would not say things like this. Okay, you people do not need to look any further into matters regarding Bai Cong Tian for now. When it is time for the Large Competition, it is very easy to tell whether he is a cat or a tiger. When it is that time, I will cause him to reject Ming

Zhu's engagement in front of everyone." Gao Chong suddenly gave a cold laugh, and said.

"Since this person is not weak, if he does not make Junior an enemy, he will not let go so easily." The youth with hoops on his arms became slightly hesitant.

"If he really decides to make me his enemy, then there is no need for him to be alive any longer. If I remember correctly, you must sign a document which ignores any injuries or deaths in the Large Competition. If someone accidentally loses control and kills their opponent, there should be no problems during the Large Competition. Although there might be some punishments on the surface, but as a disciple of the Sect leader and an Earth Spiritual Pulse disciple, it can't be that severe." After hearing this, Gao Chong replied with no expression.

After hearing this, the youth with hoops on his arms gave a little gasp, but could only constantly with sentences of agreement. However, looking at Gao Chong's expression, there was a hint of abnormality.

Compared to the Gao Chong that first joined the sect, whether personality or behaviour, there was a difference like the earth to the sky. Ever since he came out of the cruel training that he was sent to do by the Sect Leader after over a year's worth of time, although he was a Late Spirit Apostle, his personality had become completely different, as if he was a different person. Only during the times when he was with Mu Ming Zhu would he maintain his original words and actions.

Although the youth with hoops on his arms knew this was probably related to the method Gao Chong inherited from the Sect Leader, but the difference in personality for before and after was so huge, that sometimes he would have a feeling of horror.

In the next while, the two continued to converse a little, before the youth with hoops on his arms was dismissed by Gao Chong.

Gao Chong himself walked to a nearby, small tree, and thought deeply and silently, and did not hurry in leaving.

After an unknown amount of time, an elegant silhouette suddenly

appeared on a small path that was not far away and waved at Gao Chong from far away:

“Fantastic, Senior Gao, you have really come out of training.

With this, the owner of the elegant silhouette ran quickly, and arrived in front of Gao Chong after a short while, revealing a face that was tender and beautiful like a flower while beaming with happiness.

“Ming Zhu, why have you come? Didn’t I say that when I come out of training, I will find you myself?” When Gao Chong saw the young lady, he felt warm inside his chest and instinctively blurted out.

“Xixi, I only learnt the news from Senior Wu that you would come out of training today, but did not dare come too early, otherwise I might meet the Sect Leader again, who might punish me. Come, after such a long time, you must accompany me properly.” Mu Ming Zhu spoke with her pink lips, and grabbed onto Gao Chong’s hand, pulling him in a direction, ignoring the consequences.

After a forced smile, Gao Chong did not struggle and followed the young lady. Under the young lady’s chirping words, they slowly walked away.

.....

On the Baleful Yin mountain, in a ravine that was covered with black clouds all year round, a long roar which was like a dragon’s cry was let out and afterwards, the black clouds opened up. From within, a huge skeleton of a hundred or more feet walked out. It had a cow head and a human body, four arms and three legs and seemed extremely fierce.

Above the white cow skull, a grey robed person with his robes floating about stood there and played around with a big, fist-sized bone ball in his hand. He had a grey, ghost face mask on with his two dark green eyes constantly moving.

“Greetings to Senior Yang“

”Congratulations for Senior’s completely mastering the godly technique”

Surprisingly, one hundred or more Baleful Yin disciples had already gathered around the entrance to the ravine and after seeing the grey robed male appear, they all bowed in exaltation to show respect.

“Juniors, please rise. The first place in the Big Competition this time will definitely be our Baleful Yin Faction’s.” As soon as he stopped speaking, the giant skeleton under him suddenly stopped the ground with one foot, causing the entire ravine to shake and the nearby ground to give out a cracking sound, which formed a long narrow crack from the middle. The black clouds around the skeleton gave out a whooshing sound, and a dark wind rushed towards the sky, causing the sky and the ground to both change colors.

After seeing this, the other Baleful Yin disciples were astonished and naturally became even wilder with joy. They all bowed again, and could not stop praising.

“Nine Spiritual Lightning Pulse, Earth Spiritual Pulse, I will have a good look at them.” The grey robed man looked at the sky, and mumbled to himself.

.....

Outside the Barbarian Ghost Sect, inside a mysterious waterfall that stretched to the sky, a half naked, bald man with a bronze tan sat calmly. Despite the powerful force contained in the water, he did not move at all.

After an unknown amount of time, he suddenly gave out a loud roar and formed a layer of black gas that protected him, before suddenly punching towards the sky.

“Hong!”

A streak of black gas left his hand, and immediately transformed into a black chain, rushing into the sky, suddenly coiling many times and pulling tight, causing the waterfall to split into multiple water flows. Afterwards the black chain returned, wrapping around the man’s body, making it look like a black robe from a long distance away.

“Haha, I have finally discovered the secret of the Dark Bone Method.

Combined with this Soul Shackling Chain refined from a Miasma King, the ranking of the top Core Disciple is not necessarily something I can not fight over for.” The bald male raised both his hands and had a look, before suddenly laughing madly and said.

The laughter was like thunder, causing the whole waterfall to slightly shake.

.....

Ten days later, a dragon headed wooden boat flew towards the entrance of the Barbarian Ghost Sect from far away, and arrived after a short while. It then slowly landed before the entrance.

People in the boat then took to the skies one by one, flying towards the interior of the Barbarian Ghost Sect. Liu Ming, unsurprisingly, was one of them.

“Is is Liu Ming, Fellow Liu?”

Close to the main gate to the sect, a cloud of white gas suddenly rolled out, and a person stopped Liu Ming and spoke with a large smile on his face.

# Chapter 87: Jade Shadow Needle

“You are.....”

Liu Ming looked at the young man, who seemed to be twenty five or six. He had thick brows, big eyes and was tall and sturdy. He also seemed slightly familiar.

“I am Jin Huan. You originally met me at the Wei Zhou market with my master. I am now under master’s directions to come deliver the item you have asked to be made.” Jin Huan spoke and pulled out a medium sized jade box from his sleeve. He then passed it over with a serious expression.

“I remember now, Fellow Jin indeed was one of the people that was with the Senior Fang.” Liu Ming suddenly remembered and relaxed. He received the jade box and opened it to have a look inside. His face immediately lit up.

“Not bad, Senior Fang is really worthy of the name of the best Blacksmith Master of the Wei Zhou market, able to create this item in such a short time.” Liu Ming put the jade box away and spoke with satisfaction.

“Although Fellow Bai originally gave a lot of base materials, since this item is too small, Master failed seven or eight times in a row before finally being able to create one. According to the agreement, the rest of the materials all belong to Master and the Heavenly Contract that had been originally set has been fulfilled.” The young man said seriously.

“That is natural, creating items like this is not easy and to be able to create it this quickly, it is all the hard work of the Master.” Liu Ming cupped his fist and spoke with a smile.

“Alright, since I have already finished what I have to do, I will not stay for any longer.” Jin Huan nodded and immediately activated the white cloud that was beneath him and flew away.

After controlling the shred of excitement within him, Liu Ming shot in the direction of the Nine Infant Mountain.

After the time it takes to eat a meal, Liu Ming returned to his resting quarters and sat down cross-legged in the training room. He then took out the jade box from before and opened the lid.

Inside the box was a thin green needle that gave off flashes of cold light. It was abnormally thin, like the hair of a cow.

“With that many hard rat hairs, only this one needle shaped totem was created. Although I do not know how many were left as compensation for creating the totem, the cost paid to refine this time was not small.” Liu Ming mumbled a few sentences and took the green, thin needle out of the box and placed it in front of him.

Back then, when Liu Ming had went to the largest blacksmith shop in the Wei Zhou market, he immediately found the best blacksmith in the shop and gave him all of the twenty or so green hairs from giant rat to him for him to use as the main material to make Liu Ming a needle shaped totem.

As long as a totem was created, the remaining materials would all go to the blacksmith as the cost for his service and the other materials.

When the blacksmith saw that many rat hairs of a Demon at the Peak Liquid level, he immediately accepted the task and put forward a Heavenly Contract.

With the Heavenly Contract in place along with the fact that Liu Ming was a disciple of the Barbarian Ghost Sect, he was not scared of any scams.

After this long period of time, the master actually did produce this totem and got a disciple to deliver it.

Liu Ming formed a hand seal with one hand and spat a ball of Essence Qi of his at the green, thin needle.

TL: Essence Qi is somewhat like your life force (can increase your power and do other things) except you can use it freely to a certain extent. It's like a rubber band, use it sparingly and you'll be fine but stretch it too much and it'll break and hurt you.



The thin needle immediately absorbed the Essence Qi and began to flash non-stop.

Liu Ming's ten fingers also started flicking, forming various hand signs consecutively.

“Pu!”

An innumerable number of green inscriptions appeared on the needle and after spinning, it formed three layers of thin inscriptions that hummed non-stop.

“So it is only a three restriction layer, low quality totem. However, for now, it is enough to be used. I will call it the “Jade Shadow Needle. Hopefully you can really be invisible as you weave through the battlefield.” Liu Ming was not surprised at the low quality and changed his hand signal to start refining the totem.

Several days later, Liu Ming finally completed the refining for the first restriction for the Jade Shadow Needle. He would hold it between his fingers and with a light flick, it would immediately disappear with an small, almost invisible breeze,

The opposing wall would slightly flicker with light, before adding an extra black dot to the wall. In almost no time, the black dot transformed into a dark, fist sized hole, with a light putrid smell spreading from it at the same time.

Not only was the Jade Shadow Needle invisible when used, it actually was also extremely poisonous.

.....

On Nine Infants Mountain, in a huge hall that was in the center of the mountain, Gui Ru Quan, Zhu Chi and the Martial Aunt Zhong stood nearby. In front of them was a huge cauldron that was several tens of feet tall. They all formed a hand sign with one hand and chanted solemnly.

On the floor close to the huge cauldron, there was a formation formed from silver inscriptions, which was a hundred or so feet wide. It gave off a humming sound and strands of five coloured clouds rapidly appeared,

disappearing into the cauldron.

This cauldron was copper green in colour, with three legs and two handles. It was covered densely with cloud shaped inscriptions that layered on top of one another. It constantly rumbled from inside and constantly wobbled a little, as if something inside was trying to break out.

After an unknown amount of time, the strands of clouds formed from the silver formation became thicker, as if it was going to envelope the whole cauldron. However, the rumbling inside slowly lessened, before finally stopping completely.

“About time! Shi Chuan, be careful!” This time, Gui Ru Quan suddenly yelled out.

“Yes teacher, disciple is already prepared.” A youth who was already waiting in the large hall took a step forward and said.

He had a light silver chain wrapped a dozen times around his whole body. In addition, his expression was incredibly solemn.

“Ok, Junior Zhu, Junior Zhong, open the cauldron together!” After seeing this, Gui Ru Quan gave Zhu Chi and the Spirit Master Zhong a low shout.

As the chanting stopped, they all pointed their finger at the air above the huge cauldron.

With a “peng” sound, the lip of the cauldron was trembled a little, before flying up into the air.

In the next moment, there was a “sou” sound and a black shadow shot out of the cauldron.

However, Gui Ru Quan and the other two pointed their fingers again and the black shadow immediately stopped mid air. It was actually a male head with loose, long hair, black lips and red eyes.

It had nothing below the neck and had two fierce-looking teeth showing in his mouth, with extremely messy hair and a green horn that was several inches long above his forehead. It also had two thumb-sized, bright red “seal” words imprinted on both cheeks. After it was stopped

mid-air by the techniques of the three Spirit Masters, it immediately gave out a weird cry and suddenly shook its head, making its headful of hair suddenly stand up.

Just at this moment, Shi Chuan instead gave a low howl and whipped the chains that was on his body out with a clinking noise. One end immediately became a loop, falling towards the head.

“Pu!”

A surprising scene appeared!

The loop flashed with silver light and engulfed the head. However, instead of the expected hold on the head, the silver chain slowly became shapeless and merged within the head.

However, the fierce head immediately gave out a blood-curdling screech, with black air rolling out of its body, as if it is in great pain.

After seeing this, Gui Ru Quan retrieved their Fa Li in exultation.

The male head, which was originally stuck mid air, felt that the air surrounding it relaxed and immediately regained its freedom.

After a weird cry, all of the long hair on his head suddenly trembled, immediately growing into countless black ropes and shooting at the faraway youth.

After seeing this, Shi Chuan instead yanked the chain that was on his body and at the same time, opened his mouth and spat out a cloud of Essence blood.

TL: Almost same thing as Essence Qi except stronger

Suddenly, the silver chain tightened with a blur.

The head immediately gave out a bone chilling shrill again. Countless black veins on its face popped out and its long hair fell down powerlessly.

Just at this moment, the cloud of Essence Blood from Shi Chuan appeared in front of the head after a few flashes and after a “pu” sound, it became a blood-colored inscription that was stuck on the forehead of the head. As if an engraved mark, it became engraved on the head.

The ferocious expression of the head immediately disappeared in the moment when the blood coloured inscription appeared. The head floated in mid air quietly and motionlessly.

Shi Chuan started chanting heavily and yanked the chain on his body.

After a clinking sound, the chain became straight with tension and the male head slowly flew forwards, before completely stopping at a place a dozen or so feet away from the youth.

After seeing this, Shi Chuan formed a hand seal with one hand, as the chains on his body immediately shot forwards like a dozen pythons, all consecutively disappearing into the head with a flash.

Only at this time did the youth finally give a long sigh and spat out clouds and clouds of Essence Blood consecutively while forming various hand signs and constantly pointing at the head with his finger.

The male head slowly closed its two eyelids and its expression also became peaceful.

Shi Chuan gave a deep grunt and after hitting forwards a hand sign with his raised hand, the head immediately became smaller together with the chain in a spinning motion. Finally, it transformed into a cloud of grey gas and entered the leather pouch covered in red and green inscriptions that was on Shi Chuan's waist.

"Haha, good. Shi Chuan, you have finally subdued this head. That is a real demon that our faction has safekept for many years. Although the process was only possible because of this Demon Subduing Chain created from Deep Sea Coldlight Iron, it is actually more than enough to let you handle the sect's Large Competition. The burden of whether our faction can regain our past will depend on you." Gui Ru Quan walked over and spoke with a smile.

"Many thanks to Master and the two Martial Uncles for providing me with the totem, disciple will not let us lose face this time in the Large Competition. I definitely will become one of the top five on the Lunar Monument." Shi Chuan was also extremely moved and immediately knelt on the floor and spoke an oath.

“Since the three of us have bestowed this Demon Subduing Chain to you, we naturally think you as the most suitable person. Originally, Xiao Feng was also a good choice but it is too bad that he just became a Late Spirit Apostle and has little experience with battles involving other people. Even if he did subdue this flying head, it would be impossible for him to get a good ranking in the Large Competition.” Zhu Chi also walked over and said slowly.

“I definitely will live up to the great expectations of the three masters!” Shi Chuan spoke again with sincerity.

“Alright, you get up. You have only just obtained the Demon Subduing Chain and the flying head. You need a lot of time to practice and become familiar with them. Until the Large Competition starts, you should stay at this place. Your two Martial Uncles will personally give pointers to you.” Gui Ru Quan revealed a satisfied expression and spoke.

Shi Chuan naturally nodded his head and said yes.

.....

Inside a certain hidden hut in the Dancing Ghost Faction of the Barbarian Ghost sect, Du Hai hugged Mu Yun Xian in his arms. They both had an abnormally intimate expression.

“Are you really going to fight for a placement as a core disciple this time?” After an unknown length of time, Mu Yun Xian looked up and asked with a worried expression.

“Yes, when we went to the Ghost Hell Region, we took huge risks to collect that item and spent such a large cost to create that Spirit Pill. Wasn’t it all for today? Relax, the amount of disciples that are Late Spirit Disciples under the age of thirty isn’t high in our sect. It doesn’t even seem to have one hundred people. In addition, with the help of this pill, I believe I can obtain a good placement in the core disciples. If it is like this, your master has no reason to reject the idea of us being together.” Du Hai replied with a firm expression.

## Chapter 88: Lunar Monument

“Although these medicinal pills have quite a large effect on Fa Li amplification, the after-effects are just as severe. Moreover, if you wish for your strength to be close to the top of the Core Disciples, you can’t just use one or two pills. I really am worried, what if you...” When Mu Yun Xian heard this, she was even more worried about him.

“Don’t worry, if it really doesn’t work then I won’t force myself. Furthermore, this time, if I don’t strive my hardest, when Ouyang Xin, that thief, becomes a Late Spirit Apostle, our problem will only grow larger. It’s much more beneficial to us if we fight now and finalize our official relation. If we can win, then we won’t have to worry about any consequences.” Du Hai shook his head as he spoke.

Listening to her lover talk like this Mu Yun Xian could only close her mouth and the two of them silently cuddled.

.....

“What, Master is giving the Bewitching Bell to me?” A delicate young girl was somewhat startled as she stared at the white haired woman.

“That’s right. The Large Competition is about to commence and since Master has forced you to completely focus on uncovering the Ghost King’s Riddle, I have almost completely neglected your cultivation. This totem was your master’s famous totem back in the days. If you have it on your body, I believe that you won’t be any worse than my rankings in those years. We must let others know that aside from our Baleful Yin’s Yang Qian, we have other disciples who are not weaker than him.” The White haired lady lightly laughed and put the small bell in her hands into the young girl’s.

“Many thanks for Master’s conferment. I will definitely live up to Master’s expectations.” Jia Lan knelt on the ground and respectfully accepted the small black bell.

.....

In the large hall on Dancing Ghost Faction's mountain peak, Senior Qian and Zhang Cui Er were facing each other in a seated position. Their hands were intertwined with each others and traces of grey gas continued to spiral around their two bodies.

Beside them was a purple robed female with a clear and cold expression who was watching them rapt attention. This person was the Master Lin from before.

.....

Over 100 kilometers away from Barbarian Ghost Sect in a ravine full of vipers, a shadow completely surrounded by undulating green gas was walking towards the ravine entrance in the middle of a group of vipers. Wherever he walked, all the vipers in that area would fall back in retreat. There were a few that retreated slightly slower and in the instant they made contact with the green gas, their bodies would freeze up and fall dead.

This green gas was astonishingly even more poisonous than the viper's poison.

.....

In Ghost Hell Region, deep within a black dense forest covered in a thick layer of Miasma, a male's body, from his neck down, was sunken into the earth.

His face was covered in dirt and his facial features were not discernable; it was also unknown as to how long he had been here.

After a short while, the two eyes on the head suddenly opened, displaying a bewitching set of eyes that emitted a silver light.

"It really is too bad, my Iron Corpse Body is just a tiny bit away from Complete Mastery. However, it should be enough. Yang Qian, just you wait! Watch closely as I take your first position on the Lunar Monument." The head muttered to himself.

When the voice faded, the surrounding earth instantly exploded and a black shadow flew out. It proceeded to stride towards the Barbarian

Ghost Sect's stronghold. Each time he took a step, the nearby earth would faintly tremble as if his body weight was incomparably heavy.

.....

Two months passed in the blink of an eye.

On this day, Liu Ming was in his room with both his hands forming a certain hand sign as he silently cultivated. Suddenly, a ringing bell sound resonated from Barbarian Ghost Sect's main peak.

The sound was distant and quiet, but once it entered Liu Ming's ear, it couldn't help but make his blood boil and invigorate his fighting spirit.

Liu Ming's eyes opened and silently counted the bell sounds. After 36 rings, he stood up and walked out of the room.

Simultaneously, the bell sounds came to a sudden stop.

At this time, countless grey clouds rose up into the air around the entire Barbarian Ghost Sect. Everyone was heading towards the main peak, and in the blink of an eye, over 1000 people had amassed on this peak.

Amidst the group were those under 30 years old who were here to participate in the Large Competition. Nevertheless, there were also myriads of older disciples above 30 who were here to watch the fighting.

Although these older disciples were unable to participate in the Large Competition, and further did not have the qualifications to leave their name on the Lunar Monument, they naturally would not be willing to miss an event that happened only once every few years.

As for the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader, Gui Ru Quan and another 20 something Spirit Masters, they had already placed themselves in front of everyone else as they quietly waited for something.

After an unknown period of time, in the empty space in front of Barbarian Ghost Sects main peak, an incorporeal fluctuation suddenly appeared. Subsequently, a heavenly sound rang out and the scenery in front split open like a drawing being ripped apart. What came to view was an entirely different misty land.



“Please, Senior Yin Jiu!”

When the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader saw the situation occur, he immediately paid his respects to the nearby surging fog.

The other Spirit Masters behind him did the same thing.

“Hmm, the Large Competition held every four years has arrived again but why do I feel as if I’ve only slept for a short while? Could it be that you fellows are deliberately tricking me?” A rumbling sound like thunder rang out from within the fog.

“Please quell your anger Senior Yin Jiu. If it really wasn’t time for the Large Competition, why would I dare do such a thing? I request for Senior to perform the great method and once again open the Lunar Fantasy Lands!” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader hastily replied; his expression unexpectedly was extremely respectful.

“What a hassle! I understand that you wouldn’t dare trick me, so wait a second!” The rumbling voice was somewhat impatient.

Subsequently, the surrounding earth abruptly shook and all the mist dispersed in every direction. A thousand feet tall earthen yellow stone mountain that encompassed about a thousand acres suddenly came to view.

This mountain was somewhat strange, as there wasn’t even a blade of grass growing on the mountain. The mountain peak was abnormally flat and wide; moreover, there were a few dozen of natural stone platforms, each a few tens of feet high, sparsely covering the entire area.

In the middle of the stone platforms was a towering three hundred feet tall black and white stone monument.

From a distance, Liu Ming watched with rapt attention before seeing that the monument was covered in densely packed silver words. It seemed like a countless number of names had been written on it.

“The Lunar Fantasy Land has already been opened. All disciples may now enter.” Seeing the scene unfold in front of him, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader immediately passed on a message in a loud voice. He then led

a group of Spirit Masters from all factions as they flew towards the yellow stone mountain.

When the thousands of disciples behind them saw this, they naturally followed them into the land.

As soon as all the disciples had entered the mountain, the hazy white mist once again appeared and the entire stone mountain was once again surrounded by an impenetrable layer of mist.

At this time, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader was already standing on a stone platform observing his surroundings. His sleeve shook and a few centimeter large flat jade brick flew out.

After he muttered an incantation, the jade brick instantly flew towards the sky and quickly grew. In the blink of an eye it had transformed into a floating jade platform at least a few hundred feet long.

The group of Spirit Master successively flew onto the jade platform and overlooked the thousands of disciples below.

“All disciples, listen carefully, the Large Competition held once every four years is about to commence. This time, the competition rules are the same as before wherein normal disciples can challenge the Core Disciples on the Lunar Monument. When the top 100 disciples have been decided there will be a round robin where the 99th ranked can challenge anyone, the 98th ranked can challenge anyone that has a ranking above 98 and so on. From there, this will decide the top ten, top three and ultimately the number one Core Disciple. As for the concrete challenging rules, everyone can go to the underside of the Lunar Monument to carefully have a look. During the Large Competition, you are responsible for your own life and all those that wish to participate in the Large Competition must first sign a Life and Death Writ. However, those who purposefully seriously injure the opponent or wantonly murder a fellow sect member will also face severe punishment. The lightest punishment will be 100 whippings and the heaviest will be the abrogation of your Fa Li and then thrown out of the sect. Right now, all disciples should first clearly look at the concrete challenging rules. When one stick of incense

has finished burning, the Large Competition will formally commence.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect elder insipidly spoke from atop the stone platform. Although his voice wasn’t very loud, it was abnormally clear in everyone’s ears.

After he performed a single handed technique, a joss stick and candle with the thickness of a thumb flew out. It shook once before quietly suspending itself in mid air.

He then pointed in the direction of the candle.

Instantly, a flame appeared on the tip of the candle and a sandalwood smell drifted out.

At this time, a Spirit Master already standing under the Lunar Monument lightly hit the monument in a certain area.

A droning sound rang out and a layer of black light on the monument began to swirl. The words on the exterior began to transform into enormous light words that floated in the air. Even disciples standing at the very edge of the mountain were suddenly able to clearly see the words written on the monument.

The new disciples who were competing for their first time at the Large Competition all tiptoed and raised their heads intently staring at the large bright words.

Liu Ming stood in an inconspicuous corner while identically staring at the words written upon the monument.

At the very top of all the silver engravings, astonishingly were the two words, “Yang Qian”.

Seeing this, Liu Ming’s eyes slightly narrowed.

Regarding Yang Qian, the winner of the last Large Competition that every internal disciple called Senior, Liu Ming had naturally heard of him many times.

Apparently this person’s body possessed a Nine Spiritual Pulse and a Phanero-Miasma Spirit Body. Furthermore, he was proficient in the

Baleful Yin and Refining Corpse Faction's secret techniques. Moreover, he had previously participated in the Life and Death Trials, and managed to return unharmed along with incredible accomplishments. Within the sect, many people believed that his chances of becoming a Spirit Master was extremely certain.

However, even after receiving enough resources, in the past few years, he chose not to break in the Spirit Master realm. Instead, he spent those years in cultivation, training some sort of unknown secret technique, since he wanted to make his foundations even more firm before breaking into the Spirit Master Realm.

In this way, this Yang Qian was clearly all the more mysterious to new disciples as there were a plethora of other faction's disciples, outside of Baleful Yin faction, that were extremely respectful towards him.

Liu Ming quickly went through the data regarding Yang Qian down in his heart and proceeded to shift his gaze downwards.

The names, "Feng Chan" "Min Shou" "Qian Hui Niang", successively appeared.

The first four names on the Lunar Monument all managed to return alive from the Life and Death Trials. Among the remaining six names from from the last Large Competition, two were now above 30 years of age and had their names automatically taken off the Lunar Monument, one had broken through the Spirit Apostle Realm and become a Spirit Master, and the remaining three ultimately perished in the Life and Death Trials.

As for those that replaced them on the top ten, it was naturally according to the Lunar Monument ranking order.

Liu Ming only knew a bit about the other top ten disciples, so once he finished looking through each person, his eyes shifted towards the explanation of the challenging rules.

# Chapter 89: The Beginning of the Large Competition

After he examined it fully and furthermore, remembered all of it in his heart, he moved his sight to the gathering place of the other disciples, which was on top of the rock mountain.

The older disciples who were above thirty years old were all standing away from the Lunar Monument and gathered in groups of two or three. They pointed towards people in the crowd while continuously discussing with each other in whispers.

Most of the disciples who were attending the competition were having a straight face, but there were still some disciples who had the enthusiasm and the excitement of a teenager, carrying a expression which says, "I want to try!"

After Liu Ming scanned through the crowd once, he realized that there were faces that were no stranger to him. For example, Du Hai, Mu Yun Xian, Jia Lan, Lei Zhen and Shi Chuan who were all standing shoulder to shoulder.

Suddenly, Liu Ming felt that there were people around who were also looking at him. He turned his head and looked.

Among the disciples, Sima Tian was looking coldly at Liu Ming. Only when Liu Ming locked gazes with Sima Tian did he moved his sight away without even seeming flustered.

When Liu Ming saw this, he thought of something.

"Senior Bai, so you are here. Perhaps this time you are planning to try and up?" A woman's greeting voice followed by the sound of footsteps came from behind Liu Ming.

Shocked, Liu Ming turned his head, seeing a man and a woman walking together towards Liu Ming. They were Xue Shan and Wan Xiao Qing.

The Xue Shan now had grown in stature since last time. Wan Xiao Qing

was also carrying a girl's embarrassing expression on her face.

Seeing the two people so close in relationship, it was obvious that their relationship now was different from when they first entered the sect.

"So it was Junior Xue and Wan! If I have the chance, I was thinking of trying it out." Replied Liu Ming with a smile.

"Senior Bai already became a Middle Spirit Apostle over a year ago. Your Fa Li must be even stronger now. There is still hope for you to leave your own name on the monument by the end. Afterall, the amount of Late Spirit Apostles in our sect has not reached one hundred people." Wan Xiao Qing spoke while smiling.

Wan Xiao Qing had also become a Middle Spirit Apostle at the last Small Competition, but the time between the Small Competition and now was too short. It was obvious that she could not participate in the battle for placements as a Core Disciple.

"Humph, only a new disciple, and you want to fight for a placement of a Core Disciple? You better spend another three or four years cultivating in the sect before speaking." A young man with a long, light gold ruler on his waist walked over, and spoke coldly to the three.

"Hm, so it is Senior Xi. Senior has already gained a placement as a Core Disciple from last time, this time senior will definitely once again leave his name on the Lunar Monument." After hearing what was said, Xue Shan originally became slightly angry, but after properly seeing the face of the young man with arched eyebrows, he could not help but force a smile while talking.

This Senior Xi was one of the elder disciple of the Nine Infants Mountain that appeared in the previous two Small Competitions. He showed great strength, and among the elder disciples, he was only below Shi Chuan, the eldest disciple of Nine Infants, in terms of strength. Towards Xue Shan and other new disciples, he always had an arrogant attitude, as if looking at them from above.

Liu Ming knit his brows and just as he wanted to say something, a cold voice could be heard from the other direction.

“Hmph, who said we, the new disciples, are completely unable to gain a place on the Lunar Monument.”

Xue Shan and Wan Xiao Qing looked across in surprise. It was Xiao Feng, who had been nearby at an unknown time. He had a cold expression, looking at the “Senior Xi”

“Xiao Feng, if it weren’t for Master Gui’s extra attention to you to the point of generously giving of his training area to you as well as personally give pointers, how can you have become a Late Spirit Apostle so fast?” After seeing Xiao Feng, Senior Xi did not hide the resentment in his hard by the smallest part and spoke viciously.

To him, Xiao Feng, who was a Nine Spiritual Pulse disciple, immediately claimed a large portion of the resources in the Faction after entering the Faction. Therefore, Xiao Feng was naturally more hated than Liu Ming, Xue Shan and the other people.

“Hmph, no matter what method is used, do you think just any person is able to reach Late Spirit Apostle in three or four years after entering the sect?! I wonder how many years Senior Xi used before in order to reach this level?” Xiao Feng gave a cold laugh and spoke. It seemed as if he did not want to give any face to the opposition.

“You.....”

After hearing this, Senior Xi became extremely angry, but did not know how he should reply to the question asked in such a short time.

“Juniors, why argue at this time!” After a light sigh, another person from nearby entered the group.

Liu Ming looked carefully, and was slightly surprised. It was actually Shi Chuan, the eldest senior of Nine Infants Faction.

What he was surprised about, naturally was not due to the fact that Shi Chuan was there, but rather, under perception of his extremely powerful mental strength, he could feel that Shi Chuan’s aura was completely different from before, as if there was an extra, indescribable, cold feeling.

Liu Ming’s eyes flashed, and his gaze landed on around Shi Chuan’s

waist. Surprisingly, there was a leather pouch with green and red inscriptions and it felt like the source of the cold feeling.

“Senior Shi.”

Whether it was Xue Shan, Wan Xiao Qing, Senior Xi or Xiao Feng, after seeing Shi Chuan appear, they all immediately cried out, afraid to neglect in greeting him.

Liu Ming naturally also gave a small greeting with the others.

“Juniors, this Large Competition is extremely important to our Nine Infants Faction. All people that are able to place on the Lunar Monument, whether old or new disciples, will all be heavily rewarded by Master Gui and the others. If we can let the Nine Infants Faction escape from being ranked at the bottom, our faction will have a large increase in resources for the next three years, which is good news for all juniors. Therefore, Master Gui has already instructed that the disciples of our faction must not challenge core disciples of our faction to guarantee a rise in placements.” Shi Chuan said slowly.

“Since Master Gui has instructions, I will naturally follow them!” Xiao Feng’s expression froze and he replied.

The other people could only agree while nodding their heads.

At the same time, on a rock stage far away from where Liu Ming and the others were, a person was currently looking at this matter from far away. He then said to the people beside him plainly:

“The Bai Cong Tian now is indeed not the same person as what I remember. No wonder he could create a bit of reputation, making Sima Tian to be unwilling to fight him due to the risks involved.”

The person speaking wore white robes and had a jade belt. Behind him was a long, light gold sword strapped to his back. This was Gao Chong, the Earth Rank Spiritual Pulse genius from the Blood Control Faction.

As for the beautiful looking young female next to him, it was Mu Ming Zhu.



According to the rules, outer sect disciples had no opportunity to enter or view the Large Competition, which was an extremely large event in the Barbarian Ghost Sect. However, with an unknown method, Gao Chong actually able to safely bring her inside.

Behind the two people, the youth with hoops on his arms, Senior Wu and Shi Jian couple also stood there.

“How do you plan on doing it? If he does not enter the Large Competition, then there is absolutely no way to meet him.” Mu Ming Zhu stared at Liu Ming viciously and spoke slightly worriedly.

“To not enter the Large Competition? This is impossible. If he really does have the strength to cause Sima Tian, who is a core disciple ranked in the top twenty to not want to fight him, how can not fight for the placement and resources that he ought to have. As long as he does fight, and leaves a place on the Lunar Monument, I naturally will fight against him.” It seemed Gao Chong already had thought about it, and spoke without hesitation.

Only after hearing this did Mu Ming Zhu relax. She revealed a smile on her face.

“However, the real enemy this time, is not Bai Cong Tian, but that person!” Gao Chong looked away, towards another stone stage. On there, a grey robed male that wore a silver mask was surrounded by various disciple of the Baleful Yin Faction. Gao Chong’s expression became extremely serious as he saw this scene.

“That girl actually ignored what I said and is even mingling with Gao Chong at a place like this. It is as if she has no worries at all.” When Mu Xian Yun saw Mu Ming Zhu standing side by side with Gao Chong, her expression became extremely ugly.

“You clearly have told her the matter about being a human cauldron but Mu Ming Zhu does not believe you, and it seems that there was even a contradictory effect. This matter is becoming abnormally hard to deal with.” Du Hai knit his brows tightly and spoke.

“That girl cannot be counted as stupid but how can she be deceived by

that brat to such a level. Elder Brother always dearly loved Ming Zhu and clearly told me to look after her when she joined the sect. If something happens, how can I justify myself when I return.” Mu Yun Xian said with some frustration at how Mu Ming Zhu would never listen to her.

“For the current situation, it seems the place Junior Bai is in is not good. You seriously cannot think that with Gao Chong bringing Ming Zhu here, he will still turn a blind eye to Junior Bai, who is engaged to her?” Du Hai sighed, and started smiling coldly.

“Are you saying that Gao Chong will personally fight Junior Bai?” Mu Yun Xian was startled.

“Why personally fight, perhaps it is enough for him to just order other people to fight.” Du Hai looked deeply at the young male with hoops on his arms who was behind Gao Chong and spoke fearfully.

“Then if it is so, we can only have Junior Bai to withdraw from the Large Competition this time to protect himself.” Mu Yun Xian replied after thinking.

“The Large Competition is only held once every three years, does you think that it is possible for Junior Bai to quit now? Right now, we can only hope that Junior Bai is unable to leave his name on the Lunar Monument. This way, Gao Chong’s group will have no chance to fight him.” Du Hai shook his head, and replied in such a way.

“We can only hope so. To speak of it, we bear most of the responsibilities for putting Junior Bai in such a situation.” Mu Yun Xian revealed a remote expression.

“This cannot be blamed on you! Afterall, you only wanted to save Ming Zhu from the dangers.” Du Hai naturally responded warmly and attempted to comfort Mu Yun Xian.

However, just at this time, the incense stick on the jade platform that was mid air finally finished burning. The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader immediately took a step forward, and announced loudly.

“The time has come, the Large Competition will now start.”

At the same time, another spirit master immediately instructed loudly:

“Disciples with placements on the Lunar Monument, according to the order of rankings, form groups of ten on the steps of the ten elevated stages. The ordinary disciples will challenge these core disciples to a battle, where the winner stays and the loser leaves the stage. A normal disciple has three chances to challenge and once he uses up all of them, he will lose the right to challenge. As for the same core disciple, each person can only challenge them once and is not allowed to continuously challenge the same core disciple. There is a Spirit Master deacon conducting the battle on each stage. All disciples must not ignore their decision of loss or victory.”

After hearing this, the disciples on the stone mountain were naturally in an uproar.

As for the ten Spirit Masters, they all directly leapt down from the air, all landing in the center of the ten largest stone stages.

Afterwards, small flags flew out from their body, and transformed into banners that were inserted into the ground, forming neat rows of banners.

These banners were black and red in color, and all of them had silver markings inscribed on their surfaces. They each had a different symbol, symbolizing the numbers from one hundred to one.

# Chapter 90: Duan Can Zu

As for the remaining Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples, with a “hong” sound, they split into 10 groups and filled the few stone platforms.

Of course, the stone platforms that were lower ranked were surrounded by larger crowds.

This was a sure trend in the Large Competitions, when the challenges began, core disciples whose names were lower ranked were naturally challenged the most.

“Sou, sou!”

From underneath a stone platform which served as the arena, a number of grey clouds rose into the air. Each core Barbarian Ghost Sect Disciple stood under his or her own banner each with a different expression. However, their aura was extraordinary and no one dared to belittle him or her.

Almost right away, from underneath the arena, people began to consecutively jump up and proceed to challenge someone. There was one arena where four or five people basically jumped up instantly and at the same time.

The Spirit Masters who were in charge of the arenas let each person sign the life and death writ with his or her opponent before animating the defensive formation that was already in place around the stone platforms.

Layers of glossy white light appeared and enshrouded the stone platforms.

Each pair of competitors immediately began to fight as they started performing techniques or summoning ghosts. In a short while, it caused the audience outside of the layer of light to cry out in alarm at the dangerous fights.

Liu Ming did not stay near these low ranking arenas and instead directly walked to the arena for the top ten Core Disciples.

This arena was deathly quiet but the vicinity identically was packed

with numerous people. Furthermore, myriads of people would look at the top ten Core Disciples on the stage while whispering to others in a hushed voice.

To Liu Ming, during this competition, he naturally had to at least take a spot within the top ten. By doing so, he could take part in the Life and Death Trials and seek even more resources and benefits. This would significantly help me cultivate to the peak of the Late Spirit Apostle and become a Perfect Spirit Apostle.

Because of this, in Liu Ming's eyes, his opponents were the top ten Core Disciples as well as the other challengers who wanted to enter the same ranking.

Liu Ming's gaze only briefly glanced at the arena's surrounding before instantly discovering Gao Chong, Lei Zhen, Jia Lan and a few other familiar faces. In addition, he saw a few disciples who seemed out of the ordinary.

When these people saw that Liu Ming had appeared in this area, there were some that remained expressionless while others held a faint shocked expression.

As for the top ten disciples in the arena, Liu Ming instantly looked at Yang Qian, who was wearing a silver mask.

This legendary Senior in Barbarian Ghost Sect was currently sitting under his banner with his eyes closed. He seemed to be indifferent about everything that was happening outside.

Under the second banner was a shriveled and thin male with a head full of messy hair. A silver glint continued to flash in his eyes. As for the next person, it was a green robed youth with a pale faced expression without a slightest hint of blood. His eyes were slender, giving people an extremely dangerous feeling.

Under the fourth banner was a yellow robed girl with a pretty complexion. It was Qian Hui Niang, or Senior Qian, whom Liu Ming had met before.

The fifth person was...

Liu Ming continued to examine these disciples as his mind incessantly processed the information rapidly.

In comparison with the arenas that already had people fighting on them, the first arena was dead silent since there wasn't anybody who issued a challenge.

However, the Spirit Master who was in charge of this arena, an embroidered robed bearded large man, didn't find this the least bit strange.

After a short while, his sleeve suddenly shook and a small and exquisite hourglass silently rolled out. He proceeded to insipidly say:

"In fifteen minutes, if there is no one who comes on stage to issue a challenge, it will indicate that every disciple in this competition has renounced his or her right to challenge the core disciples in this arena. The time starts now!"

Inside the hourglass, the sand began to flow from the top to the bottom.

This scene caused the people below the arena to become restless.

Ultimately, after a brief moment, there were a person flew onto the stage.

"Disciple Du Yu wishes to challenge the tenth ranked disciple, Senior Ye!" The person who jumped onto the stage was a handsome youngster who was clutching a pink peach blossom fan in his hand. His expression was calm as he spoke to the embroidered robed large man.

"Hehe, you wish to challenge me. That's good, my bone's were starting to itch from restlessness." Underneath the tenth banner, a robust youth wearing a gold ring around his head stood up and after listening, replied with a sneer.

"Okay, sign your names on the Life and Death Writ!" The embroidered robed large man's hand reached out and retracted the hourglass. His other hand created a multicolored light and from within, a blood red

tablet flew out and steadily floated in the air.

When the two youths saw this, they immediately walked over and each squeezed out a drop of Essence Blood onto the tablet. Then, they retreated a few steps and looked at each other from a distance.

A clear bird cry arose from the tablet and a blood colored inscription rushed out before quickly returning into the tablet.

Seeing this, the embroidered robed Spirit Master lifted his hand and retracted the tablet. He then lightly spoke a sentence:

“The competition will now begin!”

When the voice faded, he abruptly stamped his foot and a white inscripted formation appeared in a flash. When the hazy layer of white light appeared and enshrouded the stone platform, his figure retreated and rushed to step outside of the white layer of light. Once outside, he rode on his cloud and flew to a point above the light shroud where he stopped.

“Pu!”

The youth clutching the fan moved his wrist and the Peach Blossom Fan instantly transformed into a pink cyclone. Simultaneously, his other sleeve shook and a fragrant aroma permeated the entire interior of the light shroud.

“Bewitching Scent! It seems you are Poisonous Spirit Faction’s disciple! Haha, coming across me can be considered your bad luck!” When the golden ringed youth saw this, he let out a wild laugh. After reciting an incantation, a light black spirit inscription appeared on his body and he suddenly grew bigger. Soon he had morphed into a twenty feet tall giant. He proceeded to punch the air three times, producing a “hu” sound and an incorporeal fluctuation each time from the enormous strength.

When the pink tornado attempted to face the oppressive force of the enormous strength, it immediately congealed before returning backwards with a smothered sound.

The youth holding the fan was unable to condense a defense and all he

could feel was his breath tightening up as an enormous strength slammed into his body. He resolutely smacked into the the light shroud wall. His expression was dispirited as he spit out a few gobs of pure blood.

The golden ringed youth who had morphed into a giant and promptly walked over in an aggressive manner.

“That’s impossible, how did you not suffer from the Soul Fragrance’s effect? You...you are a Body Cultivator... I concede.” When the youth holding the fan made clear of the situation, he was instantly frightened stiff and at once, he conceded.

“Hmph, truly a piece of trash. Possessing only this mere amount of strength and you unexpectedly still dared challenge me!” The giant’s footsteps stopped and he snorted before stopping the Secret Technique. His body returned to its normal state as he turned around and walked back to his banner.

The inscribed formation on the stone platform flashed and the light shroud disappeared without a trace. The youth holding the fan hastily jumped off the stage in embarrassment and in the blink of an eye, he had left the surrounding area.

The embroidered robed Spirit Master descended from the sky and calmly announced the golden ring youth’s victory. Next, he once again set up the hourglass and silently waited.

Perhaps it was because of the golden ringed youth’s excessively effortless victory, but it wasn’t until the sand in the hourglass had almost flowed to the halfway mark when someone finally gave a light cough and climbed onto the stone platform.

It astonishingly was a sickly looking 27 to 28 year old youth. He was draped in a light green robe and once he appeared, he immediately bowed and spoke to the embroidered robed Spirit Master:

“Martial Uncle, this junior, Duan Can Zu, would like to challenge the sixth ranked Senior Fei!”



The words that came out of his mouth caused everyone else's hearts to jump to their throats. Numerous people looked at the person with a shocked and abnormal expression.

The Lunar Monument's sixth and tenth place had a shocking difference in their power.

"Duan Can Zu, has anyone heard of him before?"

"No, this is the first time I've heard this name."

"It seems that he is a Refining Corpse Faction's disciple, but he hasn't been that reputable."

.....

Below the stone platform, the audience was in the middle of heated discussion.

Sitting upright under the sixth banner was a female wearing a fiery red robe. Hearing her name, her eyebrows rose and she promptly stood up with a pair of short tridents on her back.

After a moment's work, the two signed the Life and Death Writ and the light shroud once again appeared in a flash.

"You unexpectedly dared challenge me; your courage truly is not small. This Flying Fire Coral Trident is a pair and although it is not a Totem, it is a pair of top quality Practitioner Weapons. You had better be careful, your life is on the line." The red robed young girl coldly spoke. When her voice faded, her shoulder suddenly shook and the scarlet trident suddenly transformed into a red light as it flew up like a red lightning.

A frosty glaze flinted over Duan Can Zu's eyes as he unexpectedly lifted his hand to resist the red ray of light.

"Peng." A sound of something smacking a dead tree rang out and the red light once again became a fiery trident as it flew back.

As for the white cloth that was wrapped around the fist, it suddenly disintegrated into tiny pieces, revealing a tightly intertwined layer of yellow bandages that stretched from his palm to his armpit and even

further beyond.

Under the second banner, the skinny male with long hair displayed a shocked expression when he saw the bandages on Duan Can Zu's arm. He used an inaudible voice and spoke to himself:

“Heavenly Imperial Corpse Clothing, this Junior Martial Brother unexpectedly is actually cultivating such a hegemonic Secret Technique. It also seems that his mastery is extremely profound.”

The opposing red robed girl displayed a shocked expression when her flying trident was unexpectedly repelled by his fist. However, in the next moment, she pointed her a finger while reciting an incantation.

The scarlet trident instantly began rotating in a circle while the exterior red light flashed. “Pu”... it transformed scarlet red raging flame that frantically rushed at Duan Can Zu.

Seeing this, Duan Can Zu's wrist shook and seven to eight long yellow ribbons shot out. Simultaneously, they began to wildly dance about and transformed into a yellow ribbon casing that protected him within.

The scarlet ball of flame struck the casing and after a loud rumbling sound, it split into countless raging flames that shot in all four directions.

The flying trident returned once again after emitting such a powerful force.

As for the yellow ribbon casing, it was unaffected and it seemed to be unafraid of the raging flames.

When the red robed girl saw this, her face turned ugly and she began murmuring under her breath once again. Her shoulder shook and the other flaming trident flew up and transformed into a streak of raging flames as it flew with a rumbling sound.

In an instant, the two streaks of scarlet flames surrounded Duan Can Zu and continuously struck him. Scarlet light would suddenly brighten up before suddenly darkening as a burning smell condensed and dispersed. The power of the attacked seemed incredibly strong!

Nonetheless, the long yellow ribbon seemed impermeable to water and fire and as it continued to hastily dance about, it unexpectedly managed to fully block the two streaks of raging flames on its exterior. It didn't even let a fraction of the flame enter the interior.

Faced with this situation, the red robed girl's face was somewhat ashen but she suddenly performed a single hand technique while muttering an incantation. She slowly raised one of her fingers slowly pointed at the opposing party. Her finger tip abruptly turned a bloody scarlet red color.

# Chapter 91: Heavenly Imperial Corpse Clothing

“Pu!”

The red robed girl’s finger slightly froze as a sliver of blood shot out. After an indistinct transformation, it unexpectedly morphed into a scarlet red fire Python. It was forty to fifty meters tall and as it opened its big mouth, it furiously rushed towards the yellow ribbon cast and furiously bit down.

In that instant, a sparkling red fash rushed forward in front of Duan Can Zu’s body; the Fire Python resolutely smashed open the yellow ribbon defense and proceeded to ram into his chest.

A large sound reverberated!

The Fire Python instantly exploded and transformed into a fire pillar that engulfed Duan Can Zu as it rushed towards the heavens.

Simultaneously, the two revolving flying tridents nearby also savagely attacked Duan Can Zu who was still mid-air. It caused him to thoroughly be enveloped within the scarlet flame.

At this time, the high temperature from within the light shroud was slightly felt by the the disciples in the audience who were closer to the arena. However they all couldn’t help but open their eyes wide despite the heat; they didn’t dare blink.

Once the fire pillar disappeared without a trace, Duan Can Zu let out a smothered sound as he fell onto the stone platform.

Every person starred onwards and couldn’t help but let out a cold breath.

The present Duan Can Zu was covered from head to toe in scorched black ashes. It seemed that his body had transformed into coke.

TL: Processed coal used to blast furnace

“Hmph, you forced me to use my Fire Python secret technique, so you

can be considered quite good. However, if you wish to supersede my position, you are still a bit lacking.” The opposing red robed girl finally put down her arm and slowly spoke.

Presently, her two cheeks contained a slightly unnatural shade of scarlet, that unintentionally added a bit of garish to her appearance.

It was clear that the previous attack had consumed a lot of her energy.

“Is that so? Contrarily, after experiencing Senior’s attack just now, I instead gained quite a bit more confidence.” Just as the red robed girl was still somewhat flabbergasted as to why the embroidered robed Spirit Master outside of the light shroud had yet to announce the result, the distant charred body unexpectedly produced soft words.

Subsequently, under the audience’s inconceivable gaze, the charred black figure which should have been in a coma due to heavy injuries, extended his arm and began to move around. A layer of black dead skin began to peel off, revealing a new layer of light yellow bandages. The bandages were densely packed and had wrapped Duan Can Zu’s body so that his body was opaque. The only skin that was visible was the portion above the neck.

This scene rendered everyone dumbstruck.

“It is the work of the Heavenly Imperial Corpse Clothing, also known as the most difficult secret technique to cultivate. He has further cultivated it to the Initial Spell Mastering. Haha, it seems that Junior Fei is actually going to lose this time.” The green robed male, Feng Chan, sitting in an upright position under the second banner immediately let out unrestrained laughter after he saw the scene unfold.

As for the “Junior Fei whom he mentioned, she couldn’t help but somewhat overwhelmed with shock. However, after grinding her teeth, she coldly spoke a sentence stating that she didn’t believe that nothing actually happened to him. Then, she once more lifted her arm and she once again pointed at her opponent with a red finger.

However, this time, the originally slow moving Duan Can Zu suddenly lifted his arms and lightly swiped his five fingers at the red light.

An air shattering noise abruptly arose!

The hundreds of bandages instantly shot out in a dense cluster from his arm. After a brief wild dance, they transformed into a large yellow layered net that rushed towards the red robed girl.

When the girl saw the situation unfold in front of her, her face went pale and the point of her finger instantly shook. A trace of blood appeared and once again morphed into a fire python that roared as it rushed forward. However, after tearing through multiple layers of the net, it let out a wail before dispersing into the air.

As for the two flying tridents that turned into raging flames, they were wrapped by the large net and in an instant, had their flames eliminated. They were like fish trapped in a net, unable to move.

For the remaining time, the girl still refused to admit defeat as she ran about on the stone platform and further performed a few fireball attacks. Nonetheless, it was to no avail against the incessant bandages.

After a short while, the girl was surrounded by the yellow bandages that layered the entire stage and finally was unable to flee. She was thoroughly bound and firmly fell on the ground, no longer with the ability to move.

“I admit defeat, quickly release me.”

The red robed girl laid on the ground as her entire face blushed red. She could only helplessly admit defeat.

Hearing this, the embroidered robed Spirit Master naturally flew over and removed the light shroud while announcing Duan Can Zu's victory.

Duan Can Zu let out a faint smile before retracting the bandages and bowing towards the embroidered robed Spirit Master. He then arrogantly strode towards the sixth banner.

As for the red robed girl, she stood up and ferociously stared at Duan Can Zu before jumping off the stage.

Although she had lost her sixth place spot, she had also earned the

right to challenge other people.

Nonetheless, her current mood was unstable and the amount of Fa Li she had expended was large. As long as she wasn't stupid, she definitely would not immediately issue a challenge.

At this time, the disciples spectating the first arena's battle just now was in an uproar.

From one side, there were numerous people who were shocked by Duan Can Zu's strength, while another side was that the battle had given a number of disciples the courage to challenge other disciples.

Before the embroidered robed Spirit Master brought out the hourglass again, there was a disciple who jumped into the arena and proceeded to challenge the ninth place Core Disciple.

After a short while, another battle commenced.

Simultaneously, floating nearby the jade stage, the Barbarian Ghost Sect leader, Gui Ru Quan and a handful of remaining Spirit Masters were discussing the previous battle.

"Senior Huang, your Corpse Refinement Faction unexpectedly has someone who managed to successfully train in the Heavenly Imperial Corpse Clothing Secret Technique. Don't tell me that you personally taught him?"

"If that was the case, then I would not be surprised as well. In the past few years, this Duan Can Zu has displayed average abilities. I didn't know that he unexpectedly secretly cultivated this secret technique. Zeze, it seems that he managed to slip through my gaze."

Senior Huang was wearing a black robe and his face had a plethora of wrinkles. He seemed to be exceptionally old; his face was full of shock as he replied.

"So this was the case. This child had always hidden his Cultivation Method and since he suddenly revealed it, it's most likely that he wanted to surprise everyone. Congratulations Senior, aside from Feng Chan, it seems that your division will have another person within the ten Core

Disciples.” Another tall and sturdy middle aged man laughed as he spoke. This was Heaven’s Secret Faction’s Spirit Master Lei who was also Lei Zhen’s uncle.

“Yes, Can Zu daring to cultivate the Heavenly Imperial Corpse Clothing technique really gave me a nice surprise. However, whether he is able to remain within the top ten is still up for debate. At the very least, Lei Zhen and Jia Lan can easily beat him off.” Senior Huang let out a light laugh as he modestly spoke.

“Senior Huang must be joking. Although Jia Lan and Lei Zhen have fairly good natural endowments, they have just entered the sect, so whether they enter the top ten is still debatable. How could they be Duan Can Zu’s opponent? I have further heard that Senior Gui’s division’s Shi Chuan has constantly been in training in the past year. Moreover, Junior Zhu Chi and Zhong have just obtained a Deep Sea Cold Light Steel. I do not know whether Shi Chuan’s training has any connections to this?” A thirty something year old scholarly male also laughed as he proceeded to change the subject to the nearby Gui Ru Quan.

He was Baleful Yin Faction’s master, Chu Qi, and further was Gui Ru Quan’s largest Spirit Master enemy.

“Regarding the Deep Sea Cold Light Steel affair, I have also heard others mention this. I haven’t had a chance to congratulate Junior Gui yet. I’ve also heard that Heavenly Moon Sect has sent people to purchase this item but their offers were rejected. Could it be that Junior has other plans?” When the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader heard the previous words, his interest also seemed to be piqued as he smilingly asked a question,

After listening, Gui Ru Quan’s eyebrows creased before returning back to normal as he replied.

“The plan that I had was to use the materials to forge into a Totem for use. Shi Chuan undergoing training with us for the past year was to familiarize himself with the Totem.

Gui Ru Quan’s recountance was only half true, thus Chu Qi naturally only believed half of it. However, once the Barbarian Ghost Sect leader



expressed his congratulations, he returned the topic to the current battle in the first arena.

Currently, although the disciple who issued the challenge had continuously performed a few quite powerful high level techniques, every time he was about to complete the incantation and hand technique, the opponent would forcibly stop the rest of the incantation with a simple Wind Blade. After a few repeated times in this manner, without the opponent even having to attack, the challenger's Fa Li self-devoured and he ended up falling on the ground.

"Truly an imbecile, do you not realize that performing high level techniques require the perfect timing. This sort of proficiency degree and you still want to perform high level techniques in front of me? What a reckless idea." The ninth ranked Core Disciple had acrimonious facial features and was a youth wearing a blue robe. Seeing the situation in front of him, he immediately let out a wild laugh as he spoke.

Many audience members underneath the arena also laughed when they saw the scene unfold.

Although the challenger's cultivation wasn't ordinary, he was completely unaware of this and clearly viewed his own strength too highly. Furthermore, his battle experience was extremely lacking.

The embroidered robed Spirit Master announced that the challenger in the arena had been defeated as the challenger instantly jumped off the stone platform flushed with embarrassment. He rapidly disappeared within the crowd of people.

"Honestly, his ability to simultaneously cultivate such a number of high level techniques already isn't an easy feat. If he had not come to the first arena, perhaps he would have a chance of entering the Core Disciple rankings. He merely happened to challenge the wrong opponent. I believe that Junior Bai won't make the same mistake." Liu Ming was in the process of watching another disciple jump onto the stage and challenge the 10th place gold ringed youth, when a cold voice sounded from behind him.

“What, is Junior Gao talking about me?” Liu Ming was not the slightest bit surprised as he answered without even turning his head.

“Huh, Junior Bai truly is a smart person. However, addressing me like that is violating the sect rules. Could it be that Junior doesn’t know that even if two people entered the sect at the same time, lower status disciples must address higher ranked disciples as Senior?”

The person speaking behind him was Gao Chong. Astonishingly, beside him stood Mu Ming Zhu, the youth with arm rings, Shi Jian, his wife, and the others.

Amongst them, Mu Ming Zhu was looking at Liu Ming with a complicated expression. The youth with arm rings had a face full of a sneer, and Shi Jian and his wife were expressionless.

# Chapter 92: The Power of Lightning

“Does Junior Gao believe his status is greater than mine?” Liu Ming finally turned around and spoke with a smile, yet not a smile.

“Have I said it wrong, I am the direct disciple of the Sect Leader and you are just an ordinary, side faction disciple. No matter how you look at it, my status in the sect is greater than Junior Bai’s, right?” Gao Chong replied while remaining calm and collected.

“Is that so, I am do not knowledgeable in this. However, according to other people, during the sect’s Large Competition, all competing disciples are on equal footing and are not split by status. It can’t be possible that Junior Gao Chong doesn’t even know this.” Liu Ming sighed again and replied as if he was somewhat unhappy with Gao Chong for failing to reach his expectations.

“Hmph, who would have thought that Junior Bai is so clever tongued! Anyway, I don’t have the time to argue with you over these small matters. I came to find you personally to give you one last chance. If you write a document saying you deny the engagement right now, I can ignore everything that has happened in the past and you can continue to be free and live leisurely inside the sect. If you do not do that, as soon as you go on the stage in this Large Competition, don’t think you will be able to walk off the stage by yourself.” Gao Chong’s expression became a little darker.

“A document to deny the engagement, of course I can write that. As long as Junior Ming Zhu is able to let the Mu Clan Leader to take the initiative and mention it, I have no objections.” Liu Ming gave a small laugh and replied.

“For my father to take the initiative and cancel the engagement, that is impossible!” The expression on Mu Ming Zhu’s face changed and she spoke while gnashing her teeth.

“Then I can do nothing. Although I am not very interested in marrying you but as a member of the Bai Clan, it is not good to ignore the

instructions of the Clan Leader.” Liu Ming shrugged his shoulders and replied while shaking his head.

“You.....” Mu Ming Zhu, under her rage, still wanted to say something, but Gao Chong, who was to her side, stuck a hand in and interrupted what she was going to say. He only stared at Liu Ming coldly and said:

“It seems to be more stupid than I thought, since you have already made the decision, I do not need to say anything more. I will give you a word of advice, don’t think that you being able to scare away Sima Tian makes you enough to oppose me. Ming Zhu, let’s go! When I return, I will be slightly troubled but I will naturally make him personally say “cancel the wedding” those words.”

As soon as he finished speaking, Gao Chong immediately pulls Mu Ming Zhu and turned around and left with the other people.

Liu Ming instead just stood there silently, staring at the back of the people and did not say anything in the end. He instead had an extra cold glint in his eyes.

To him, who had experienced an innumerable amount of life-or-death close combat scenarios, although Gao Chong’s appearance was completely different from several years ago, but as long as he wasn’t a real spirit master, how could Gao Chong kill him?

Thinking back to those years on Savage Island, he killed an innumerable amount of prisoners that were way more vicious than the ones met in the outside world. In fact, those people were true masters of either killing or relished in it. With the fact that he achieved miraculous victories in those impossible life-or-death battles, he already had confidence that was so great that it was beyond the expectations of normal people.

If Gao Chong really was one of his opponents in the Large Competition, he would naturally give the opposing a big surprise. Also, since his opposition had already put killing intent in his words, Liu Ming did not need to be merciful.

If the battle was abnormally intense and he accidentally slipped, heavily injuring or even killing Gao Chong, it was not something that could not

be forgiven.

Liu Ming thought plainly at heart, before turning around again to look at the intense battle on the stage.

“Sect Leader, it seems Gao Chong and one of the disciples under me have some arguments, should we, their Martial Uncles go down to dissolve this grudge?”

On the jade platform that was in the air, after seeing Gao Chong’s group interact with Liu Ming, Gui Ru Quan hesitated a little, before speaking to the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader.

“Oh, that disciple does not seem to be Xiao Feng. Since it is so, these disciples are still hot-blooded youths, having some arguments between them is a normal thing. Let themselves solve the problem. We, who are the seniors, should not stick our noses in!” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader looked at Liu Ming from far away and said plainly.

It was obvious that he saw the exchange between Liu Ming and Gao Chong.

“Since Sect Leader has said it like this, then let it be. However, Cong Tian that child can be considered to have some potential. He was partially responsible for Junior Zhu Chi’s entry into the Sea Race’s Market to obtain that piece of Deep Sea Coldlight Iron.” After knitting his brows, Gui Ru Quan replied.

This caused the Barbarian Sect Leader to be somewhat surprised and after thinking for a little, he replied as if he had remembered something:

“Cong Tian? Oh, so he is actually this disciple, I wonder why Cong Er has an argument with him. Hmm, if I remember, although he was a Three Spiritual Pulse disciple, but his mental strength was uncannily strong.. He can be counted as someone useful. How about this, in a while, I will tell Junior Wang that if they do meet in the Large Competition, to pay some extra attention to prevent the likelihood of people getting injured.”

“Many thanks to Sect Leader, that is enough.” Gui Ru Quan relaxed

slightly and spoke a word of thanks.

Towards Liu Ming, this master of the Nine Infants Faction always had a few feelings of regret.

Afterall, from Liu Ming's previous performances, it was more than enough to accepting him as a Direct Disciple. Even if it was another Faction, perhaps Liu Ming would have already become a Direct Disciple of a Spirit Master.

However, it was unfortunately that the Nine Infants Faction lacked a lot in resources! To a Three Spiritual Pulse disciple, who almost had no chance in becoming a Spirit Master, they truly did not have any spare resources for him. Therefore it was naturally impossible to take him in as a Direct Disciple.

"Ke, that conversation just before was enough. I can finally give that youth something back!" Gui Ru Quan sighed and spoke to himself secretly.

News regarding the marriage between the Bai Clan and the Mu Clan had already come to Gui Ru Quan's ears since it also involved Gao Chong, the Earth Spiritual Pulse disciple.

The status and fame of Gao Chong and Liu Ming within the Barbarian Ghost Sect was naturally impossible to compare.

In addition, since this also involved the matter of the human cauldron that Gao Chong needed in the future when he would break through to become a Spirit Master, Gui Ru Quan naturally had even less to say.

Just like this, time passed bit by bit and a large portion of the day had already passed in the blink of an eye. The other competitions on the other stages were still extremely intense as the disciples on the stages replaced the fallen ones with almost no break time.

The ten Core Disciplines on each stage had also been changed quite frequently by the challengers. After such a long time, almost half of all the Core Disciple placements had been renewed or been moved around in some way.

Of course, this was partially due to the fact that everybody had three challenge and that if Core Disciple lost, they were allowed to challenge other people.

However, on the first stage, after eight and nine challengers were defeated consecutively, there was a sudden clap of thunder. After the flash of a single silvery-white lightning bolt, a handsome young man in blue robes appeared on the stone stage.

It was Lei Chen.

After seeing this, Liu Ming squinted his eyes and subconsciously swept his gaze across where Lei Chen had just jumped up.

A girl by the name of Ou Yang Fei was standing there. She stood there, staring at Lei Chen, who was on the stage with a slightly nervous expression.

But at this moment, the blue-robed young man was covered with lightning sparks that were of finger thickness on his body. It constantly crackled on his body and the light caused by the electricity flashed dazzlingly.

This was the renowned "Lightning Clothes Technique".

Although the name of this technique was impressive, it was a pity that only a Spirit Apostle with a Lightning Spiritual Pulse could practice it. However, the power of the technique was extremely astonishing.

"I want to challenge Senior Ye, who is ranked tenth!" Lei Chen looked at the young man with golden hoops who stood under the tenth banner and said slowly.

After hearing this, the expression of the young man with golden hoops suddenly became extremely ugly.

Although he was one of the few Body Cultivators in the sect, he was most afraid of lightning type attacking techniques that carried the most destructive powers.

Afterall, his opponent was also a person with a Nine Spiritual Pulse.

This was a high tiered talent only second to the Earth Spiritual Pulse.

However, when facing the challenge of Lei Chen, a new disciple, he could not show any hesitation.

Afterall, excluding the top five Core Disciples, all the other five core disciples on the stage had been challenged at least once.

“Okay, then let me try out the legendary Lightning Nine Spiritual Pulse and see how powerful it actually is!” The young man with golden hoops gave a deep, loud shout and walked out of the bottom of the banner.

As the two people signed the Life or Death Writs under the witness of the Spirit Master in embroidered robes, a protective light screen appeared after a flash.

“Listen up, to defeat you, I only need three attacks!” The lightning sparks on Lei Chen’s body became increasingly dazzling. He slowly stared at the opposing young man who had gold hoops and spoke arrogantly.

“Three attacks? Good, very good. I do not know how many years since I have seen someone say such cocky words. I want to see how you defeat me in three moves.” Although the young man with golden hoops was very afraid of Lei Chen, after hearing these words, he suddenly became extremely angry.

“Senior Lei, your nephew really has an arrogant tonle of voice! To defeat such a strong Spiritual Apostle Body Cultivator, perhaps in all the disciples, ony Yang Qian could achieve this.”

On the jade platform, after seeing this, the Lin Spirit Master from the Dancing Ghost Faction could not help but speak with a sound of slight anger.

“If it were other opponents, then perhaps what Chen Er has said is exaggerated. However, if it were a Body Cultivator, there is actually a chance that he can do it.” Martial Uncle Lei rubbed his chin and replied with a slightly weird expression.

“Senior Lei actually has such confidence! Then I will observe closely.” Spirit Master Lin was somewhat surprised.



Once the other Spirit Masters heard these words, including the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader, they all naturally became extremely interested and focused their attention down below.

At this time, on the first stage, the young man with hoops gave out an angry howl and his body increased by a large size, becoming a giant that was twenty feet tall. He stepped with both feet and with a fierce wind, rushed at Lei Chen.

However, Lei Chen stood where he was originally and did not move a bit, only chanting non stop with his mouth. At the same time, the ten fingers on his hands constantly moved like a wheel. When the lightning sparks on his body gave off a thunder clap, his body also began to twist.

However, the body of the young man with hoops had already arrived nearby in no time!

Seeing this, Lei Chen immediately stopped his hand signs and suddenly pointed at the shadow of the giant in the fierce wind with one hand.

There was a crackling sound in the air!

A thick, large lightning bolt appeared in the sky and after a flash, it hit the body of the giant, who was below accurately with no error and transformed into countless electric sparks, dancing about.

A muffled sound sounded!

A layer of green inscriptions appeared on the body of the giant as he forcibly endured force of the body-numbing lightning attack. He immediately rushed out of the electric spark cage, but his speed had decreased by a large half.

“The second attack!”

After seeing this, Lei Chen shouted aloud without hesitation and pointed with the other hand.

In the air, a second lightning bolt immediately struck down.

# Chapter 93: Perfect Quality Ghost King

The giant immediately let out a stifled sound. The green layered inscription that appeared on his body disappeared under the impact of the lightning. Simultaneously, his forward motion froze as his upper body transformed from a healthy skin color into a burnt black black color. Faintly, a the smell of burnt meat arose.

A loud yell came from the giant!

The hair on the giant stood up while his body expanded once more. Unexpectedly, he managed to break free of the lightning shroud and begin rushing forward again.

However, although the new giant carried a shocking aura, the giant's movements were several times slower than before. Nonetheless, after throwing itself forward, it was only about ten feet away from Lei Zhen.

Lei Zhen could even clearly see the giant's vein protruding on the giant's forehead due to his state of anger.

A flash of astoundment appeared on Lei Zhen's face but in the next moment, he spat out three words, "The third attack."

"Hong!"

An arc of electricity condensed on Lei Zhen's body before the thick bolt of electricity suddenly shot forward. In a flash, it struck the forward moving giant's face.

The giant only felt the area in front of his eyes go hot as he was resolutely knocked back onto the stage under an inexplicable pain. He didn't stand up again.

Lei Zhen truly defeated giant in only three attacks.

"Three Thunder Bolts, this child unexpectedly has comprehended the laws of lightning to this sort of an extent! If it were another Lightning Spiritual Pulse disciple, there is no way he or she would be able to perform three lightning attacks in such a short period of time." On the jade platform, there were people crying out in surprise.

“Haha, it’s nothing. Only, that child really has a bit of natural talent in the laws of lightning. Thus, he is able to accomplish such a feat.” Despite the Heaven’s Secret Faction’s Lei Spirit Master’s modest words, a trace of complacentness was in his speech which everyone was naturally able to make it out.

Although the Barbarian Ghost Sect’s Leader didn’t say anything, his face also contained a shocked expression.

Gui Ru Quan, the Lin Spirit Master and the other had also lost their composure.

At this moment on the stone platform below them ,the Spirit Master had announced the winner of the match. Lei Zhen then strutted towards the tenth banner and sat underneath it.

Underneath the stone platform was unexpectedly dead silence.

There surprisingly was someone who was able to defeat the tenth ranked disciple in three attacks. This situation was simply too shocking.

A few disciples looked up at Lei Zhen’s gaze and most of their gazes were filled with fear. There were even a few older disciples whose hearts were beating up and down with questions of whether they should approach this Nine Lightning Spiritual Pulsed Disciple and work under him.

Ouyang Fei was naturally excited. When she looked at Lei Zhen, she did not cover up the admiration and gentle feelings in her heart.

“The power of lightning unexpectedly is this terrifying!” The youth with arm rings sucked in a cold breath of air and muttered a few words.

“Senior Xin should relax! Although the power of lightning isn’t just for show, if he were to face me, he would not have a chance of winning. I naturally have methods to counter him.” Gao Chong seemed to hear the fear in the youth’s voice and indifferently replied.

“Junior Gao is over sensitive. I was just marvelling at the power of the lightning.” When the youth with arm rings heard Gao Chong’s words, his expression relaxed.

On top of the stone platform, Yang Qian also looked at Lei Zhen but he didn't have the slightest reaction.

The other people on the stage also successively estimated Lei Zhen's strength with calm expressions.

Among them, Liu Ming looked at the distant Lei Zhen under the banner. His gaze darted around but no one knew what he was thinking of.

After Lei Ming achieved victory, a few disciples with genuine strength proceeded to make their move.

Aside from Lei Zhen, who just earned victory, the ninth place, eighth place and seventh place rankings were quickly replaced by new challengers.

However, in a short while, these new Core Disciples were defeated by other challengers and were instantly superseded.

On the other hand, the two spots of tenth and sixth place held by Lei Zhen and Duan Can Zu respectively, weren't challenged for the period of time.

As for the disciples ranked in the top five, there wasn't anyone who dared to provoke them.

In this period of time, Liu Ming found the time to take a look at a few other stone platforms. He found that the 89th Core Disciple spot was now astonishingly being held by the familiar face, Du Hai.

As for Zhang Cui Er, the genius disciple from Dancing Ghost Faction who had left a deep impression on Liu Ming, she had appeared in the 22nd Core Disciple spot.

Sima Tian, the Baleful Yin disciple who had wanted to cause trouble for Liu Ming earlier, was standing under the 13th banner. His body was surrounded by a thick layer of Miasma and no one dared to lightly challenge him.

Senior Xi, Zhu Lian Xing and the other Nine Infant Faction Late Stage Spirit Apostles who had the strongest strength, successively issued

challenges and stood near the later rankings of the stone platforms.

As for Xiao Feng, although he had just recently advanced a stage within the Spirit Apostle realm, he still held the 93rd Core Disciple position. This caused the spectating Xue Shan and Wan Xiao Qing below him to be filled with envy.

Amongst the two of them, one was a Mid Stage Spirit Apostle while the other was a Beginning Spirit Apostle. They naturally did not have any intentions of entering the arena to take part in the competition. Instead, they cheered Xiao Feng on from below the arena.

Nine Infant Mountain's Eldest Senior, Shi Chuan had only walked back and forth between the first and second stone platforms a few times. Apart from watching the challengers fight, he had yet to make a move.

Liu Ming had walked amongst the other disciples a few times before suddenly realizing that he seemed to not have seen Jia Lan for a while.

However, how could this girl not participate in such an important competition.

He was somewhat unbelieving as he continued to specifically search for her. Astonishingly the result was still the same.

Liu Ming pondered a while before suddenly thinking of the Opening Spirit Ceremony when that girl had two entirely different appearances. He had a sudden flash of understanding and discarded the idea of trying to find her.

Just like this, time continued to past and the first day finally came to an end.

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader lifted his head and looked at the color of the sky. He felt that the time had just about arrived and finally, in a loud voice, he declared that the first day of the competition had come to an end.

Thus, all the competitions on the stone platforms came to an end. They would resume on the second day.

Subsequently, the mist surrounding the stone mountain dispersed and an entrance once again reappeared. All the disciples instantly successively left, returning to their own respective dwellings to hone their strengths.

On the morning of the second day, when all the disciples were brought by the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader and the other Spirit Masters to the stone mountain, without another word, the Large Competition immediately commenced.

Perhaps it was due to the large number of disciples who had issued challenges yesterday but the originally numerous amount of people who had planned on hiding their strength, finally entered the arena and made their moves.

As for the Core Disciples who had lost their rankings yesterday, they identically began to participate in the challenging.

In this manner, the entire Large Competition's atmosphere, from the very start, became exceptionally lively.

Liu Ming stood to the side underneath the first elevated platform. He was somewhat astounded as he looked at the exceptionally beautiful fairy-like girl who stood on the stone platform.

From the very start, this girl had silently stood in her original position without moving. Only, a faint purple light incessantly radiated from her pupils as she stared at the nearby opponent, who was the new seventh place Core Disciple from yesterday.

This youth had revealed astonishing strength yesterday, otherwise, there was no way he could defeat the original Core Disciple. However, this time, one of his hands was gripping a long sword that glittered like frost and snow. His two eyes looked straight at the young girl's facial features but his eyes were full of emptiness. Only his body slightly shivered without stop.

After the time that it takes to have a cup of tea, the youth suddenly spit out white foam and collapsed onto the ground.

“Jia Lan is victorious.”

When the light shroud faded, without hesitation, the embroidered robed Spirit Master immediately announced the victor.

This exceptionally beautifully younger girl astonishingly was the Jia Lan who Liu Ming was unable to find the day before.

However, when the Large Competition had commenced this morning, this girl had appeared on the first elevated platform without the slightest bit of warning and had further used an extremely odd method to seize the seventh ranked Core Disciple's spot.

It wasn't only Liu Ming who let out a cold breath of air after watching the competition. Other people were also dumbstruck.

Even the first ranked Yang Qian, who had an expressionless face from the start to the finish, looked at the exceptionally beautiful young girl and couldn't help but be somewhat moved.

“Junior Chu, Jia Lan's Aphrodite Body had finally begun to display its prowess. With her current cultivation, I'm afraid that apart from the higher ranked disciples who can resist her attraction, the other others will all fall under her influence. What she just displayed is the legendary Nightmare Eye technique! Junior Bing really hasn't done a bad job of educating her. It seems that giving this child to the Baleful Yin Faction really wasn't a wrong decision.”

On the jade platform, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader saw the outcome of the battle before letting out a large amount of praise.

“Haha, Jia Lan currently is one of our division's best disciples, second only to Yang Qian. Furthermore, Junior Bing is extremely fond of her, so she naturally spent all her effort to teach Jia Lan.” Hearing this, Chu Qi wore a smiling face as he replied.

“Hmph, if this girl had been given to our Dancing Ghost Faction, perhaps I could have made her even more astonishing.” The Spirit Master Lin was somewhat unhappy as she spoke.

“Haha, the situation has already passed some time ago. Junior Lin

shouldn't speak such words of anger. Your faction's Disciple Qian also has exceptionally good aptitude. It seems that her aura is substantially different than before. Could it be that she cultivated an astonishing secret technique just for this Large Competition?" Seeing the situation, Barbarian Ghost Sect's leader hastily changed the subject.

"Sect Leader truly has an all-seeing eye. It has already been a number of years since the last Large Competition, so it naturally is enough time for Hui Niang (Disciple Quan) to cultivate a new Secret Technique to the Initial Mastering stage." The Spirit Master Lin let out a giggle, but didn't reveal the Secret Technique that her direct disciple had cultivated.

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader shook his head and was about to say something when suddenly, a Refining Corpse Faction Spirit Master cried out in alarm:

"Look at that disciple's Soul Shackling Chain. Even if one were to use a high quality ghost as sacrifice, he or she would still have no way of making it that thick! Could it be that he used a Perfect quality Ghost King as sacrifice to refine it?!"

"Perfect quality Ghost King."

When they heard these words, most of the Spirit Masters were shocked and hastily stared at the position which the Spirit Master had been looking at.

On the second elevated stage, a stalwart bronze skinned, bald man had lifted his hands. He released a thick black rope which wrapped around his opponent. His face wore a cold grin as the rope slowly tightened.

After a short while, his opponent's face was entirely red and he could only hastily admit defeat.

Thus, the Spirit Master in charge announced the winner and the bald man retracted his black rope and walked to the 19th banner before ostentatiously taking a seat.

"Looking at the Soul Shackling Chain's power, it truly was refined from a Perfect quality Ghost King. It truly is a pity that this Perfect quality



Ghost Ging was used on such a low ranking Secret Technique.”

On the jade platform, Spirit Master Lei muttered to himself as a lamenting expression covered his face.

The Barbarian Ghost Sect leader and the other Spirit Masters retracted their gazes and looked at each other before identically wearing expressions of pity.

# Chapter 94: Cultivation Qi versus Glyph Swords

To these Spirit Masters, even the Perfect quality Ghost King was a treasure that was extremely sought for and low in numbers. If they were to use it correctly, there was a chance that they could gain another totem or perhaps even refine it into a few extremely useful Miasma attributed medicinal pills.

However, it was already too late to say anything!

Since the Ghost King had already been refined into a Soul Shackling Chain, even if they had unimaginable strength, they would not be able to restore it to its original state.

“Whatever, considering this child used a Perfect quality Ghost King to create a Soul Shackling Chain, he may have a chance of entering the top ten.” Senior Huang let out a sigh and felt quite helpless.

Seeing this, the others couldn't help but laugh and look at each other.

Regarding Perfect quality Ghost Kings, as the Refining Corpse Faction's master, he was naturally in need for this item the most.

Other people could only use the Perfect quality Ghost Kings to create a totem or medicinal pills, but if he were to obtain it, he could use it to practice numerous types of secret techniques that were previously uncultivable. This would allow his strength to increase by a large margin.

However, it was already too late to be talking about this.

As the time continued, an morning slowly passed by.

The number of challengers on the first arena slowly became more sparse, so much so that the hourglass would go through half its time before someone would jump onto the stage.

It was clear that at this time, after experiencing such a number of fierce battles, those still with courage to challenge the Lunar Monument's top ten were sparse.

This was so much the case that even Shi Chuan, Nine Infant Mountain's eldest senior, ultimately didn't choose to challenge the first arena. Instead, he had challenged a second arena disciple sometime in the afternoon and ended up occupying the 15th spot.

However, even at this time, Gao Chong had yet to go up on stage. Instead, he would occasionally glare at Liu Ming with self-evident intention.

Faced with this, Liu Ming smiled and seemed not to mind.

Finally, when a disciple failed his challenge in the arena, the embroidered robed Spirit Master once again brought the hourglass out. The minute sand slowly trickled away and passed two-thirds of the way, yet no one had issued a challenge.

At this moment, the adjacent disciples couldn't help but become nervous.

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader and the other Spirit Masters on the jade platform all changed their expressions as they watched.

The tiny sand specks continued to flow and the remaining sand on the top of the hour glass quickly became  $\frac{1}{4}$ ,  $\frac{1}{5}$ ,  $\frac{1}{8}$ ...

Gao Chong who was originally coldly watching Liu Ming, finally twitched his face.

After a short moment, he watched the sand and once looked back at the placid Liu Ming. A flint of hesitation flashed across his eyes.

"Junior Gao, you cannot delay any longer. This brat clearly knows your plan but once the time ends, they will no longer allow for any more challenges. This brat is most likely planning on forcing you to renounce challenging the top ten." The neighbouring youth with arm rings lifted his head before impatiently speaking.

"I don't believe that he would do something like this. Worse comes to worse, I won't participate in challenging the top ten and waste the rest of my time with him." Gao Chong gloomily said.

“But Junior Gao, not only can he miss entering the top ten, he can also wait until the very last arena is about to close before entering the stage. Junior Gao, on the other hand, cannot delay like this. If you don’t challenge the top ten, not only will your reputation suffer a large blow but master’s face will also be lost.” When the youth with arm rings saw that the hourglass only had 1/10th of the sand left, he anxiously spoke.

Hearing this, Gao Chong starting to become slightly impatient.

“Senior Gao, it’s unworthy for you to act like this because of a trifling thief. Worse comes to worse, let the other seniors deal with him. I don’t believe that he actually has the strength to enter the top ten.” Having listened to the conversation, Mu Ming Zhu couldn’t help but open her mouth.

“That’s right, this truly won’t do. Let me personally challenge him. Even if my strength isn’t enough to enter the top ten, I can still barely enter the top 20.” The youth with arm rings nodded his head.

“That works; I must do as you say. I really cannot let master down. If this brat’s strength isn’t any good, then Senior Xin should be enough to take care of him. If he really is able to enter the top 10 round robin, I will no longer be afraid of not having the chance to fight him.” Gao Chong eyed the upper half of the hourglass where only a tiny layer of sand remained. He finally ground his teeth and spoke.

Subsequently, his feet flashed and he turned into a shadow before appearing on the stage.

High atop the jade platform, the Barbarian Ghost Sect’s Leader emitted a faint smile when he saw this.

Practically at the same time, Liu Ming also let out a soft smile.

“I would like to challenge the fifth place Senior Tie.” Gao Chong’s gaze swept over the banners in front of him before he coldly spoke.

“You wish to challenge me? Very good. I would also like to see exactly how terrifying the legendary Earth Spiritual Pulse disciple is.” The core disciple standing under the fifth banner was a youth wearing a wooden

crown. After hearing Gao Chong, he immediately soundlessly stood up.

As the fifth ranked student on the Lunar Monument, like the four people ranked ahead of him, from the very start, no one had dared to challenge him.

“Junior Zhang, if I remembered correctly, Tie Jian seems to be your Mysterious Glyphs Faction’s most outstanding disciple. However, he isn’t too interested in drawing Glyphs so he has been cultivating an method of integrated Glyphs and Secret Sword Techniques.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect leader suddenly opened his mouth and asked a question.

“Sect Leader, Tie Jian has been mainly cultivating the Glyph Sword Technique that our Faction’s ancestor left behind. You also know that during the last Large Competition, due to him only recently picking up the Glyph Sword Technique, he was only one ranking away from not entering the top ten. Presently, with such a large passage of time, I believe that the Sword Technique he has cultivated is even more out of the ordinary.” Mysterious Glyphs Faction’s Master Zhang, who Liu Ming had met before, forced a smile as he replied.

TL: Other 6 people died + are no longer under 30

“Yes, this child was unexpectedly able to comprehend the Glyph Sword technique. One can clearly see that his talent truly surpasses the ordinary. Unfortunately, this sect doesn’t focus on cultivating the sword like the Heavenly Moon Sect, and thus we are unable to give him too many pointers.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader spoke in a pitiful manner.

“Then he can only rely on his own good luck in the future.” Master Zhang seemed to be quite helpless.

At this time, the two people on the elevated stage had already signed the Life or Death Writ and the surrounding light shroud had arisen. A great battle was on the verge of breaking out.

The youth wearing the wooden crown touched his sleeve. Instantly, a few inches long light yellow wooden sword flew into the sky. He proceeded to perform a hand technique and a faint silver glyph flew up.

In a flash, it disappeared without a trace into the wooden sword.

Suddenly, the sword produced a shrill sound and countless glyphs appeared on its surface.

The youth subsequently performed a single hand technique and pointed towards Gao Chong. The wooden sword abruptly went blurry before disappearing in the air.

Gao Chong could only feel the air in front of him vibrate as a wooden sword emerged in front of him like a demon.

He was startled and involuntarily shook his sleeve; a blood red light rolled into view.

However, at this moment, the youth with the wooden crown had already muttered an incantation from a distance.

A “zi la” sound rang out and the wooden sword disappeared from the area where the coiling blood light was.

Subsequently, a dozen of wood swords appeared on all four sides of Gao Chong. After a flashing silver light, they produced a “chi chi” sound as if space was ripping apart and condensed into enormous cold sword rays that rushed towards the center.

It seemed that in the next second, Gao Chong was about to be chopped into minced meat!

Just the look of the attack was enough to terrify people.

When the group of Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples watching from under the stage saw this, they couldn't help but involuntarily cry out.

Mu Ming Zhu's face went incomparably white in a heartbeat.

“Break for me!”

From within the sword ray, a clear voice rang out. A smothered sound resounded before a blood red colored ring unexpectedly rapidly expanded from the center as it violently surged outwards.

When they made contact with the blood colored ring, the sword rays

that looked devastatingly sharp unexpectedly successively disintegrated as they were repelled back by the blood qi.

“Peng!”

Gao Chong strode out from the Blood Qi. His arm went blurry as he grabbed a few inch long light silver sword from within the shattered sword rays.

When the youth with the wooden crown saw this, the calm expression completely disappeared from his face. Instead, in a state of panic, he began to repeatedly perform hand techniques.

The silver colored small sword suddenly began struggling for its life like a small snake. It seemed like it was going to break free of Gao Chong grasp in the next second.

Seeing this, Gao Chong emitted an expression of disdain as he brought his two hands together and abruptly rubbed them.

Within the Blood Qi's oscillation, the light silver colored sword immediately retracted its radiance and once again transformed into a light yellow colored wooden sword.

Simultaneously, the youth wearing the wooden crown had his face go pale. He suddenly spat out a large mouthful of Essence Blood and seemed extremely exhausted.

Gao Chong sneered and tossed the wooden sword to the side before walking towards the opponent.

“I concede.”

This time, the youth wearing the wooden crown didn't wait for Gao Chong to actually walk over as he hastily admit defeat with a bitter smile.

The course of their fight seemed to happen in mere instant.

Everyone nearby the stage naturally was wearing a gaping and shocked expression.

When Liu Ming finished watching, his pupils couldn't help but

contract.

“Senior Sect Leader! Although it’s very faint, only Spirit Masters should be able to control Cultivation Qi! How did Gao Chong achieve this?” When Spirit Master Zhang saw that his disciple was easily defeated, the expression earlier on his face froze and after a long time, he finally came to himself to hastily ask a question.

“That’s correct, the blood was Sect Leader’s most proficient technique, the Blood Cultivation Qi. Gao Chong has yet to become a Spirit Master and the Zhen Yuan in his body is still in a gaseous state, yet how is he able to condense the Cultivation Qi!?” Refining Corpse Faction’s Master Huang took in a deep breath before also asking a question.

TL: Zhen Yuan = Yuan Qi

Gui Ru Quan and the other Spirit Masters identically displayed shocked expressions on their faces.

“There is no need for fellow Juniors to be too shocked! The reason that Gao Chong is able to achieve such a thing is due to last time when Master Yan personally visited this child, he was so please bestowed Gao Chong a drop of Demonic Dragon Spiritual Blood.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader calmly replied.

When Spirit Master Lei heard the words “Demonic Dragon Spiritual Blood”, he couldn’t help but jump in fright.

“That’s correct, although Master Yan was unable to kill the Scarlet Dragon, he didn’t return empty handed. Instead, he obtained a few drops of Demonic Dragon Spiritual Blood.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader unhurriedly said.



# Chapter 95: Hidden Strength

When they heard this, everyone else including Gui Ru Quan couldn't help but look at each other.

"Since it's like that, the trace of the Bloody Cultivation Qi on Martial Nephew's body was refined by the Crystal Level Demonic Spirit Blood and through through Nephew Gao's own efforts. Considering that the blood is exceptionally precious to even us, one can only imagine the effects it will bring to a Spirit Apostle. Therefore, it truly isn't too bizarre of a situation. It seems that Master Yan looks favorably upon Martial Nephew Gao, otherwise, he wouldn't have bestowed with him such a precious gift." Spirit Master Huang muttered to himself as his words unexpectedly involuntarily contained a trace of envy.

"Since Martial Nephew Gao was able to refine a trace of Bloody Cultivation Qi, even if he isn't as powerful as Yang Qian, he won't be too far. His strength should be enough to rank within the top three." Chu Qi's gaze swivelled around as he spoke.

"Haha, although Chong Er has Cultivation Qi, he has barely scratched the surface, so how can he compare to Nephew Yang and the others? As long as he can maintain his current ranking, I will be satisfied." The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader stroked his beard with a smiling expression as he spoke.

When everyone heard his words, no one actually believed they were true.

Just at this time, without even waiting for the embroidered robed Spirit Master to take out the hourglass, another person slowly walked onto the stage and calmly said.

"Nine Infant Mountain's Bai Cong Tian challenges the ninth place Senior Sun."

It astonishingly was Liu Ming who walked onto the first elevated platform.

Gao Chong was now standing under the fifth banner and when he saw this scene, his face immediately went gloomy.

When Lei Zhen and Jia Lan saw Liu Ming, their expressions slightly changed.

As for Qian Hui Niang, when she saw the somewhat familiar face ascend the platform, she was a bit surprised.

“What, it’s this child! Junior Gui, if I remembered correctly, although this Martial Nephew Bai has defeated a genius disciple from Nine Enlightenment Mountain, he should only be a Three Spiritual Pulse disciple. What cultivation level is he at right now?” From atop the jade platform, when the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader saw this, he was also slightly startled. He turned his head towards the scholar and asked a question.

“I’m also not too clear on this matter! Recently, Junior Zhu and I have spent all our time on the Deep Sea Coldlight Iron, and haven’t paid attention to the other disciples’ cultivations. However, during the last Small Competition, he seemed to still be a Middle Spirit Apostle.” Gui Ru Quan was naturally even more surprised and hesitated a bit before replying.

Although he felt that Liu Ming would participate in the Large Competition, by no means did he believe that he would actually challenge the top ten Core Disciples.

“Mhm, this child has watched the preceding numerous battles and still dares to enter the arena. Thus, he probably isn’t arrogant, but should have something else that he is relying on. We should tentatively watch.” Spirit Master Lin looked at the Liu Ming who was on top of the stage and laughed as she spoke.

Mysterious Glyphs Division’s Master Zhang glanced at Liu Ming and also displayed an expression of thought.

Originally, everyone else paid no attention to Liu Ming but after hearing the various people speak, they became somewhat interested.

The current ninth ranked disciple was not the original ninth Core Disciple on the Lunar Monument, but was a youth surnamed Sun who was wearing a red and blue banner on his back.

His figure was short and his facial features were unremarkable. However, during the previous battle, he had only used the red banner to produce a raging inferno; that coupled with a Fireball Technique that seemed to be nearing the Complete Spell Mastering Stage, he had easily defeated his opponents. Therefore, no one dared to underestimate him.

At this time, the youth surnamed Sun had already heard Liu Ming's challenge and sneered as he stood up. He proceeded to walk to the center of the stage.

The embroidered robed Spirit Master didn't hesitate and produced a tablet for the two of them to drip their blood on. After it was completed, he unleashed the ground's inscriptions and the protection light shroud appeared.

"Let the challenge begin."

The embroidered robed Spirit Master had already flown outside the light shroud and lazily spoke. It was clear that he wasn't too optimistic about this battle.

After all, Liu Ming was too young and a new disciple. Moreover, his name had no reputation and naturally was not worth any expectation.

The youth with the surname of Sun stood on the stone platform clearly had identical thoughts. His mouth curled into a pejorative expression and he thought so lightly of Liu Ming so much so that he didn't even take out the banners on his back. Instead, he only muttered an incantation; instantly, a sound reverberated through the air and four scarlet red fireballs shot out. Subsequently, he abruptly stomped one foot on the ground.

"Hong!" A red light erupted from under his foot. It morphed into a firewall that rushed at Liu Ming.

When Liu Ming saw this, his expression didn't change and his sleeve

shook. A black rope violently surged outward and after a few “pai” sounds, the four fireballs disappeared in a flash.

As for the few tens of feet firewall, Liu Ming’s other arm shook. Immediately, the copper bracelet flashed and a blurry tiger head appeared. It opened its mouth and a vast expansive white soundwave shot out.

With Liu Ming’s current cultivation, the power when using this Practitioner Weapon was worlds apart from before.

The soundwave appeared and wildly surged forward like a tsunami.

“Pu” The firewall and the soundwave made contact before the firewall split and passed along the two sides of Liu Ming before ultimately striking the light shroud behind him where it was extinguished.

“No wonder you dare to challenge me. It seems that you have a bit of strength. I, your senior, will be more serious now!”

When the originally slightly indifferent Disciple Sun saw his opponent cleanly and efficiently break his attack, his face finally changed. Immediately, a concentrated expression appeared and he slowly grabbed the red banner on his back.

“Senior should use the other matching Practitioner Weapon. Otherwise, you may not get a chance to use it.” When Liu Ming saw the opponent’s scarlet red banner, he insipidly spoke.

“Your manner of speaking actually is quite arrogant. Why don’t you wait and test the true strength of this Raging Flames Banner before speaking with insolence.” The youth named Sun sneered after hearing Liu Ming talk like that. Subsequently, his hands grabbed the banner and he quickly began swaying while simultaneously reciting an incantation.

In an instant, traces of flames appeared on the scarlet red banner. In a moment’s work, these flames intertwined with each other and faintly began to morph into a long scarlet cloud of flame that was a few feet in diameter.

After witnessing this scene, Liu Ming’s eyes squinted and he suddenly

performed a technique with both his hands. Simultaneously, he began reciting an incantation and specks of cyan light appeared in front of his body.

“Go!”

When the youth surnamed Sun saw this scene, he was slightly startled, but immediately let out a loud roar and ferociously waved his arms forward.

The scarlet cloud of flame instantly shot out with a whistling sound and oppressively surged towards Liu Ming.

Meanwhile, Liu Ming's put his two hands together before abruptly pulling them apart. Instantly, an enormous Wind Blade tens of feet long appeared in the air. His wrists shook and the enormous wind blade promptly transformed into a ray of cyan light as it violently shot out.

The seemingly astonishing cloud of flame was forcibly hacked apart through its center after making contact with the cyan ray.

The youth surnamed Sun heard an exploding sound in his ear as the enormous wind blade suddenly appeared right in front of him. Its speed was exceptionally quick and it completely surpassed his expectations. It seemed that in the next second he was also about to be chopped in half.

“No!”

The youth was frightened stiff as he cried out in alarm. He could only barely manage to abruptly swing the banner in his hand in front of his body.

A crisp noise reverberated.

The scarlet red banner was chopped in half by the enormous Wind Blade like withered grass. In a flash, it was about to cleave the youth open as well.

However, at this time, the embroidered robed Spirit Master officiating the Large Competition had already prepared a blue Glyph and in great alarm, he hastily tore it.

“Peng!”

A light blue shield appeared in the air in front of the youth’s body with impeccable timing. The enormous wind blade resolutely crashed into it before immediately disintegrating into small chunks flying in every direction.

Even though a small portion of the windblade was disintegrated, the remaining smaller Wind Blade kept on traveling and still penetrated the youth’s chest in a torrential manner.

The youth let out a miserable cry and he instantly fell to the ground while clutching his chest. Fresh blood quickly poured through the gaps of his fingers.

At this moment, Liu Ming was expressionless and his two hands were forming another technique. Another wind blade promptly condensed together and was about to rush at the opponent.

“Stop, you have already won. It is needless for you to attack.”

In the air, a figure let out a low yell. Liu Ming only felt a droning sound in his two ears as the originally condensed Wind Blade suddenly disappeared in a flash.

In a state of shock, he naturally stopped his technique.

Simultaneously, the light shroud undulated and the embroidered robed Spirit Master promptly appeared on the arena. He turned his head and once again examined Liu Ming before clicking his tongue and saying.

“You are at a young age, yet you are unexpectedly able to condense the Wind Blade Technique Seal. This truly isn’t bad! However, your attacks were a bit too ruthless. If I hadn’t made a move in time, I’m afraid that this brat would have been chopped into two pieces by you.”

“I didn’t have a choice! Once I perform this technique, I would have no control over it.” Liu Ming bowed to the embroidered robed large man and calmly spoke.

“Hehe, there’s no need to be afraid; I never said that you did something

wrong. When the Life and Death Trials arrive, this sort of method is the correct choice. In the middle of a life or death struggle with death only an inch away, how can one be merciful?" The embroidered robed man laughed as he spoke and unexpectedly viewed Liu Ming in a new positive light.

Liu Ming was slightly startled, but proceeded to smile and didn't speak.

The embroidered robed man subsequently appeared by Disciple Sun's side. He examined his body where fresh blood violently flowed without end and creased his eyebrows. His sleeve then shook and a cyan Glyph flew out before morphing into a cyan light that shot into the youth's body.

Disciple Sun's body shook a few times as a faint cyan light expeditiously healed the wound in his chest like a sieve. Surprisingly, in an instant, the blood stopped flowing.

"Many thanks for Martial Uncle's assistance."

The youth surnamed Sun finally spoke something as he stood up. However, due to too much blood loss, his face naturally was extremely pale.

"Go down, you've lost too much blood. In the next few days, you cannot fight anyone else." The embroidered robed large man held an expressionless face as he spoke.

"Yes."

Sun's face became abnormally ugly as he replied. He vehemently glared at Liu Ming, but could only descend the stone platform in a disheartened manner.

Liu Ming walked to the ninth banner and calmly sat down.

High up in the air on the jade platform, the group of Spirit Masters who just witnessed the scene were in an uproar.

"Perfection of the Wind Blade Technique!"

"Condensed a Technique Seal!"

“This truly is an inconceivable affair. Among the Spirit Apostles under thirty years of age, the only ones capable of doing this most likely are Yang Qian and Qian Hui Niang. I didn’t expect a Three Spiritual Pulse disciple would be capable of such a feat.”

“There’s no way that Martial Nephew Bai has only a Three Spiritual Pulses. Judging the aura he released just now, he clearly already possesses a Late Spirit Apostle’s cultivation.”

“Junior Gui, you truly are secretive. You unexpectedly managed to hide the fact that Nine Infant Mountain still had this sort of a genius disciple!”

Numerous Spirit Masters from various factions who were originally unfamiliar with Liu Ming, were discussing him in an amazed manner.

Master Zhang, Spirit Master Lin and the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader were somewhat familiar with Liu Ming and identically surprised. They each couldn’t help but show a unique expression.

As for Gui Ru Quan, he stood to the side in a genuine state of shock.



# Chapter 96: Heavenly Intelligence Spirit Body

“Junior Gui, the reason why Yang Qian was able to condense a Fireball Technique Seal was because he spent two years cultivating it. As for the Qian girl’s Water Arrow Technique Seal, during the last Life and Death Trials she killed one of the Water Tribe’s abnormal monsters and inadvertently managed to absorb it. However, because of this, she almost went insane and died. If it weren’t for Master Yan personally helping her suppress the seal, I’m afraid that she would not have lived to today. As for Martial Nephew Bai, he is only a Three Spiritual Pulse disciple, so how would he be able to do this? If you were to argue that he underwent harsh training, it’s still inconceivable.” Senior Huang was slightly suspicious as he spoke.

“I myself am not too clear about this matter. You should know that Junior Zhu and Zhong didn’t accept him as their personal disciple because of his talent. I would expect that he had his own other lucky encounter.” Gui Ru Quan hesitated before bitterly laughing as he replied.

“Learning the reason won’t be easy. Why don’t we invite Junior Bai up here to explain it to us. This way, we’ll all be clear.” Baleful Yin Faction’s Chu Qi pondered a while before suddenly laughing.

“This won’t quite do. According to the commandments laid down by the ancestors, whatever opportunities our sect’s disciples stumble upon, it is their own affair; it is not something us elders can inquire about” Gui Ru Quans expression changed.

“Senior Gui is thinking too much! This isn’t inquiring about something to the end. If Martial Nephew Bai had only undergone an incredible increase in cultivation or had acquired a totem or Practitioner Weapon, we naturally wouldn’t get involved. However, the condensation of this Technique Seal is truly a bit too odd. If we don’t clear up the situation, and there is something wrong, I’m afraid that it would be detrimental for the entire sect. Furthermore, just a little while ago, didn’t Sect Leader

clearly explain Gao Chong's solidification of his Cultivation Qi?" Chu Qi indifferently said.

Gui Ru Quans face suddenly became unsightly.

When the other Spirit Masters heard this, they quietly discussed among themselves. In the end, there were those that endorsed this idea, but there were also others who disapproved.

Faced with this situation, the Barbarian Ghost Sect's Leader knit his eyebrows. A while later, he finally opened his mouth and said:

"Martial Nephew Bai has already reached the realm of a Late Spirit Apostle and naturally could not have spent the entirety of these past few years on Secret Techniques. Thus, simple inquiries is something we must do. Of course, Junior Gui doesn't have to be worried. This isn't an interrogation, instead it's only us elders asking a few simple questions. Even if Martial Nephew Bai is unwilling to answer, he will not suffer any punishments."

After hearing the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader say this, the other Spirit Masters looked at each other and most of them nodded approvingly.

When Gui Ru Quan saw this scene, he could only heed his words and agree. He certainly harbored an identical curiosity as to how Liu Ming was able to cultivate a Technique Seal.

Thus, when the next challenger appeared on the first elevated platform, Gui Ru Quan's voice transmitted into Liu Ming's ear.

Liu Ming's thoughts quickly spun about and he calmly stood up on the stone platform. Then, he proceeded to summon his cloud and fly toward the jade platform.

When the other disciples saw this, they were naturally shocked. The embroidered robed Spirit Master seemed to have received other instructions and turned a blind eye to this.

"Disciple Bai Cong Tian greets Master Gui, Sect Leader and the other Masters and Seniors."

As soon as Liu Ming descended onto the jade platform, he immediately respectfully bowed.

“Cong Tian, stand up. You did pretty well this time and unexpectedly managed to enter the top ten. If you are able to maintain this ranking, Master Zhu and I will heavily reward you afterwards. Right now, there are a few things that your Martial Uncle, the Sect Leader and other Martial Uncles wish to ask you about. Try your best to answer their questions. If it is inconvenient for you to answer, we will not force you.” Gui Ru Quan wore a smiling expression as he helped Liu Ming up.

“Yes, I will definitely answer with all I know.” After Liu Ming stood up, he calmly spoke.

“Martial Nephew Bai truly looks like a genius; there is no need to be nervous. The reason we called you is to ask you about two things.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader examined Liu Ming a few times while exposing a smiling face.

“I do not know what Sect Leader and the other master would like to ask?” Liu Ming indifferently replied.

“Martial Nephew Bai, you are currently a Late Spirit Apostle right?” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader nodded his head and proceeded to ask.

“Yes, I just advanced into the late stage not too long ago.” Liu Ming unperturbed replied.

“With your Three Spiritual Pulse body, it must have been extremely rough trying to cultivate to this realm. Since this is the case, you must have assiduously cultivated your Fa Li and spent a lot of time on it.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader inquired.

“Yes, I spent most of the recent few years cultivating my principle Cultivation Method.” Liu Ming responded in an affirmative manner.

“When you usually cultivate the Wind Blade Technique, how much time did you spend on it?”

“I don’t spend too much time; I only spent four hours every day cultivating this technique.”

“From Martial Nephew’s previous battle, you have most likely cultivated the Wind Blade Technique to Perfection and condensed a Technique Seal.”

“I truly did condense a Wind Blade Technique Seal!”

“Since the time you needed to learn the technique wasn’t long, how did you accomplish this?” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader squinted his eyes.

The other Spirit Masters couldn’t help but listen with rapt attention.

“I don’t really understand Sect Leader’s question. Would you mind stating it more explicitly?” Liu Ming seemed to be a bit confused.

“Martial Nephew Bai, don’t tell me that you only spent four hours every day cultivating the Wind Blade Technique and managed to condense the Technique Seal!” When the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader heard Liu Ming’s question, his eyebrows creased.

“I truly condensed the Technique Seal in this manner.” Liu Ming blinked his eyes and his face contained an expression of complete innocence.

Once they heard this, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader and the other Spirit Masters to his side couldn’t refrain from freezing in shock.

“Spending only four hours every day and cultivating a Technique Seal within a few years; if this truly is the case, there may actually be a logical reason.” Senior Lei rubbed his chin as an odd glint of light appeared in his eyes while he talked.

“How is it possible!” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader was shocked and abruptly turned his head as he asked a question.

The others were also astounded as they looked over.

“Could it be that everyone has forgotten of the few Spirit Bodies told in legends that are inscrutable? There seems to be a Spirit Body that can accomplish this feat.” The large Spirit Master Lei laughed.

“Could you possibly be talking of the extremely mysterious Heavenly Intelligence Spirit Body?” Spirit Master Huang cried out in alarm.

“That’s correct. Apparently, this Heavenly Intelligence Spirit Body

possesses unfathomable intelligence. No matter whether the owner of this Spirit Body is comprehending a Cultivation Method or cultivating a Secret Technique, he or she is several if not tens of times faster than normal people. However, it's a pity that since this Spirit Body only amplifies intelligence, there's no way to check if a person actually possesses it. On the other hand, we know that this Spirit Body actually exists. Previously, Heavenly Moon Sect and Wind Fire Sect harbored two freaks who possessed Spirit Bodies of this kind. Although their Fa Li was mediocre, their cultivation of Spells and Secret Technique was something that a normal person could only dream of. Moreover, according to their Secret Technique training speeds, the Spirit Body can be divided into levels of low intelligence, adequate intelligence and genius intelligence." Spirit Master Lei recalled a memory as he spoke in a serious manner.

"After listening to Senior Lei, I remember hearing of such a rare Spirit Body. Zeze, could it be that Martial Nephew Bai possesses this mysterious Spirit Body? It's no wonder that we were unable to discover it during the Opening Spirit Ceremony." Instantly, there were Spirit Masters who suddenly began clicking their tongues in wonder.

"However, aside from this disciple's small accomplishment in practicing Secret Techniques, my comprehension of Cultivation Methods is not very quick." After hearing their discussion, Liu Ming seemed to be slightly hesitant as he spoke.

"The Heavenly Intelligence Body originally was an extremely mysterious Spirit Body. Thus, it is normal if it is slightly different from the legends. Perhaps your's isn't a Heavenly Intelligence Spirit Body but is an unknown kind of similar Spiritual Body. After all, although we know that a plethora of Spirit Bodies exist in the cultivation world, we don't concretely know the amount. If we were to strictly adhere to what we know, that would just be silly." Spirit Master Huang pondered a while, but ultimately began smiling and the expression on his face was one of revelation.

"After listening to Senior Huang, it seems that this child does possess a Spirit Body similar to the Heavenly Intelligence Spirit Body. If this truly is the case, everything would make sense. Very good, Marital Nephew Bai

can go down and continue participating in the remaining Large Competition.” When the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader finished listening, he exposed an expression that revealed his thoughts before finally laughing and speaking to Liu Ming.

After Liu Ming finished listening, he looked at Gui Re Quan. When he saw that Spirit Master Gui’s smiling expression indicated that he could leave, he finally bowed toward everyone on the jade platform before once again hopping on his cloud and flying down.

A moment later he had returned to the stone platform and proceeded to sit under his banner.

Liu Ming’s facial expression seemed normal, but he let out a large sigh of relief inside.

Regarding the mysterious bubble in his body and the mysterious room, these were the largest secrets in his life. He naturally would not let anyone else know about them.

However, in order to conceal his extremely quick Secret Technique and Cultivation speed, he had begun trying to find an excuse to explain his situation since a long time ago.

An unknown Spirit Body was an excuse that he had come up with a long time ago.

For this reason, he ceaselessly scoured myriads of books and records relating to Spirit Bodies. He knew that there were a few Spirit Bodies that were undetectable, which was why he was able to maintain a calm expression without fear of getting called out.

It seemed that currently, even though there was no way that the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader would completely believe him, he had managed to smoothly pass the inquiry this time around. Thus, others would not easily suspect him.

Since this was the case, he could fully perform his techniques in the Large Competition without worry.

Liu Ming was slowly pondering this when the competition on the stone

platform ended. Subsequently, a challenger jumped onto the stage and astonishingly expressed his desire to challenge Liu Ming.

Liu Ming let out a faint smile and immediately stood up and walked to the center of the elevated platform.

In the time it took to have a cup of tea, cyan flashes of light continuously formed in Liu Ming's hands as a quick successive number of wind blades rapidly shot at the opponent. It seemed as if he didn't need Fa Li to cast these Wind Blades.

On the other side, a youth wearing a yellow robe clutched a black iron shield in front of him. He defended himself against the Wind Blade attacks with all his might as his shield danced around him.

Liu Ming's wind blades were not only faster than normal wind blades, but their power was also much more potent than normal wind blades.

With each Wind Blade that hacked the iron shield, the yellow-robed youth's figure trembled. Even though his other hand possessed a yellow bronze whip Practitioner Weapon, he was unable to find a chance to use it.

Finally, the iron shield endured one last cyan-colored wind blade before exploding with a "dang" sound.

The yellow-robed youth turned pale with fright. It seemed as if he was too surprised to even say the words "I concede".

A few "pu" sounds resonated as quite a few Wind Blades brushed the sides of his body. The youth's body froze and his face was pale as he didn't dare move an inch.

# Chapter 97: Scarlet Flame Bead and Blood Marrow Pill

If the young man hadn't paused fast enough, he would have perhaps lost an arm or a leg from the Wind Blades.

After forfeiting, the young man did not wait for the large man in embroidered robes to announce the results. Instead, he immediately jumped off the stage gloomily.

The crowd below was in an uproar from seeing this and they could not help but start discussing what happened.

"This Junior Bai is so strong, he actually only used the Wind Blade Technique to easily defeat two opponents. Who knows if he has other techniques up his sleeves!"

"How can he release the Wind Blade Technique this quickly? It gives me a feeling that he had no need to chant at all. The power also cannot be compared to a normal Wind Blade."

"Idiot, you still can't tell. Junior Bai's Wind Blade Technique has already been cultivated to the legendary Perfection and might have even condensed a Technique Seal in his mind!"

"Technique Seal, what is that?"

"This... to not even know what a Technique Seal, how can we continue this conversation. When you go back, go ask your elders, then you will know."

.....

With the first stage in such an uproar, it naturally attracted the attention of disciples on other stages nearby. Some Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples who weren't paying attention walked over curiously and started to ask what was going on.

"Hm, that... Isn't that Senior Bai! I... I'm not mistaken, right? Senior Bai is actually standing on the first stage! Doesn't the banner next to him



represent the ninth Core Disciple?!" Xue Shan was with the group of disciples that had walked over out of curiosity to see what was so lively, and after sweeping his gaze casually across the stone stage, he immediately became astonished to the point where he began to blabber.

Wan Xiao Qing and a few other Nine Infants Faction disciples, after clearing seeing Liu Ming's face on the stage, all became dumbstruck.

Also astonished were the other Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples that recognized Liu Ming.

The one most surprised from them was Mu Yun Xian, that beautiful young woman whom had some understanding of Liu Ming.

She was originally at the stage where Du Hai was. Seeing that Du Hai, had just defeated a challenger, she relaxed a little and looked toward the other stages, resulting in her immediately seeing Liu Ming on the first stage.

After seeing this, Mu Yun Xian's facial features became colorful and overwhelming happiness rushed to her.

For Liu Ming to really possess the power to gain a high placement on the Lunar Monument, even the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader would have to think twice about whether it was time for Gao Chong to change his Human Cauldron.

If Liu Ming could get into the top ten Core Disciples and come back alive from the Life and Death Trials, Mu Ming Zhu would definitely be safe. The higher ups in the sect would definitely not allow a person intimate with a disciple that had the potential for great contributions to be hurt by the people of the same sect.

Just when Mu Yun Xian was exalted, there were finally no more challengers for the first stage.

The Spirit Master in embroidered robes allowed the sand in the hourglass to fall until the last granule of sand, before immediately announcing that challenges for the first stage had ended.

The disciples under the ten banners on the stage temporarily received

their placements. Before the second round of challenges began, nobody could challenge them.

After hearing the Spirit Master in embroidered robes make such an announcement, many of the disciples below looked at Liu Ming and the other people with envy and reverence.

If this Large Competitions was like any of the past Large Competitions, for the ten disciples on the stone stage, perhaps at least half of them would remain in the top ten placements after the Large Competition finished.

Even if some of the disciples dropped out of the top ten ranking in the second round of challenges, they would still be ranked very high on the Lunar Monument.

After the Embroidered Robes Spirit Master finished his announcement, Liu Ming and the other people also all left the stage one by one.

“Junior Bai, you gave face to our Nine Infants Faction.”

“Senior Bai, congratulations, you are the first disciple from our Faction to enter the top ten Core Disciples rankings in the past few years.”

“Haha, with this, how can the other Factions continue to look down upon the Nine Infants Faction!”

.....

As soon as Liu Ming stepped off the stage, Xue Shan, Wan Xiao Qing and other Nine Infants disciples immediately surrounded him and all spoke raptly.

Liu Ming naturally handled it with modesty but at this time, a cold voice was heard.

“Junior Bai, you really are a secretive person. However, don’t think that just condensing a Wind Blade Technique Seal is enough for you to remain in the top ten Core Disciples. According to what I know, among the disciples that are lower ranked, they still have many other hidden cards and are waiting for the second round of challenges to fight seriously. If I

were to celebrate, I should only do so after the whole Large Competition has ended.”

It was actually Gao Chong, who was with the Shi Jian couple and other people. He walked across and from far away, he spoke coldly to Liu Ming. Mu Ming Zhu, who stood next to him, had a shred of shock in her expression.

It seems that the matter of Liu Ming getting a place in the top ten caused her to be extremely shocked.

“Junior Gao, you will know whether or not I stay in the top ten tomorrow when the second round ends.” Liu Ming turning his head around and looked at Gao Chong. He spoke plainly.

“Good, then I will wait and see.” Gao Chong expression was extremely gloomy. He firmly looked at Liu Ming before turning around and leaving with the other people.

Xue Shan and the other Nine Infants disciples, who were standing to the side, naturally heard the conversation full of conflict between Liu Ming and Gao Chong. They could not help but look at each other in dismay.

As the competition at the first stage ended, several other stages also slowly ended in the same way. One by one, the challenges came to an end.

When the sun was about to set, finally, nobody was going onto the last stage either.

At this time, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader flew out from the jade platform. He announced that the first round of challenges of the Large Competition really had ended and the Ranking Challenges between Core Disciples over ranking would begin tomorrow.

Most of the disciples dispersed immediately after hearing this.

This so-called Ranking Challenge was when the one hundred Core Disciples, who were split into the ten stages, would challenge another disciple that was ten ranks in front, with the possibility of moving up in the rankings. If they won they could continue to challenge higher ranking disciples, but if they lost, they would remain with their original rank.

With this, the last ten ranks and the first ten ranks only needed to challenge or accept challenges respectively.

Of course, like Gao Chong said, several disciple did not use their true abilities in the previous round of the Large Competition. It was during the second round where the true placements between the many disciples could really be decided.

Liu Ming naturally was afraid to be neglectful, so he left the stone mountain and returned to his dwelling. Once there, he decided to properly hone his strength for the final push tomorrow.

However, not long after, there was an outer sect disciple who came to the dwelling to let Liu Ming know that Gui Ru Quan wanted to see him.

Liu Ming was not surprised at all by this. After controlling his emotions, he responded before walking out of the courtyard. He then took to the sky, flying directly to the mountain's peak.

After a while, he arrived at the hall responsible for official business on the mountain peak.

There, other than Gui Ru Quan, Zhu Chi and the Martial Aunt Zhong, Shi Chuan also stood to the side with his arms crossed.

Liu Ming hastily went up and paid his respects.

“Chong Tian, no need to be polite, you can get up. This time you did very well. To actually be able to enter into the current top ten Core Disciple rankings gave us three a pleasant surprise.” Seeing Liu Ming enter, Gui Ru Quan immediately smiled and said.

Zhu Chi and the Martial Aunt Zhong also looked at Liu Ming with a smile.

“I do not dare take credit, I only got to this step due to luck.” Liu Ming replied respectfully.

“Haha, others can be lucky. How can your Perfection of the Wind Blade Technique and your Late Spirit Apostle level of cultivation be luck? If your two Martial Uncles and I knew of your talent in Cultivation and

Secret Techniques, we would have already rewarded resources to you as well as give you some advice and help. Perhaps your strength would be at an even higher level.” Gui Ru Quan spoke with pity.

“I only learned that condensing a Technique Seal was a very difficult thing to do not too long ago, otherwise I definitely would have reported to Master Gui about my achievements.” Liu Ming naturally had an extremely honest expression.

“You don’t need to worry about anything. We don’t care whether you have the legendary Heavenly Spirit Body of Intelligence or used other means to be able to reach your current level and be able to condense a Technique Seal, we just want to ask you a question. How confident are you in continuing to hold a position in the top ten tomorrow?” Gui Ru Quan waved his hands and asked with a solemn expression.

“I cannot be too certain. However, if I don’t receive a challenge from an extremely powerful disciple, I am seventy to eighty-percent assured.” Liu Ming’s eyes flashed and responded as such.

“Seventy to eighty-percent! Hehe, looks like other than the Wind Blade Technique Seal, you still have other methods.” After hearing this, Zhu Chi spoke while laughing.

Gui Ru Quan also revealed an extremely satisfied expression.

“Very good, now I will ask you another question. Are you willing for me to become your teacher and you become a Direct Disciple of mine?” Martial Aunt Zhong, who was silent before, opened her mouth and asked something that surprised Liu Ming.

Although he had already somewhat anticipated that coming here would likely give him some benefits, but Martial Aunt Zhong wanting to take him in as a Direct Disciple was a big, unexpected surprise.

For him to be able to become the Direct Disciple of a Spirit Master, was naturally a matter that he had wished for but knew that it would most likely not happen.

“Of course I am willing. Cong Tian pays his respects to teacher!”

Liu Ming turned a little and started kowtowing to the Martial Aunt and spoke respectfully.

“Very good, you can get up. Although you are only a Three Spiritual Pulse disciple, but to be able to become a Late Spirit Apostle, as well as being able to condense a Technique Seal – who knows – you might have a shred of a chance to become a Spirit Master. You should greet your Martial Uncle Gui and Martial Uncle Zhu again.” When Martial Aunt Zhong saw this situation, revealed a slight smile and said.

“I pay my respects to Martial Uncle Gui, Martial Uncle Zhu!” Liu Ming immediately gave Gui Ru Quan and Zhu Chi a respectful kowtow.

“Martial Nephew Bai, from now on you are a Direct Disciple of our Nine Infants Faction. Quickly get up.” Gui Ru Quan smiled.

Zhu Chi also waved his hand, allowing Liu Ming to get up.

“Since Cong Tian has already paid his respects to the two of you again while his address to you has also changed, the respects should not be made in vain.” Martial Aunt Zhong suddenly gave a light laugh at the other two as she spoke.

“Hehe, Martial Sister, do not worry. Since Cong Tian has already been accepted under you, the greeting gifts naturally will not be little. Here I have three Scarlet Flame Beads to give to Martial Nephew Bai. When you meet a strong opponent, you can activate all of them and throw them it might be able to save your life.” Zhu Chi gave a small laugh, before pulling out a small, skillfully made metal box from his sleeve and tossed it at Liu Ming.

“I am not as generous as Junior. I only have a bottle of Blood Marrow Pill, which can help you strengthen your Essence Blood.” Gui Ru Quan smiled, before also taking out a small, pure white, jade bottle and gave it to Liu Ming.

TL: Remember Essence Blood + Qi

Liu Ming naturally accepted these gifts consecutively with great joy. He carefully put the two items away and was not in a hurry to open them.

# Chapter 98: Glyph Armor

“Since my two Seniors have already given you their rewards, I, as your teacher, will definitely not leave you disappointed. This is a Practitioner Weapon I used in the past. I will give it to you now; use it as a way to save your life in the future.” After watching them give their gifts, Martial Aunt Zhong revealed a satisfied expression. After taking a moment to think, she then produced a light yellow object from her sleeve and passed it to Liu Ming with a smile.

“Many thanks to teacher. Hm, this is...” Liu Ming accepted the item, and after examining it closely, he could not help but be somewhat amazed.

This so-called Practitioner Weapon, was actually a simple piece of inner armor made from strands of yellow bamboo with some type of unknown silver wire running through the whole body.

Every strand of the bamboo had a five-colored spirit inscription engraved on it. The color was very faint and blurred. If one did not examine it carefully, it would be impossible to discover.

“Junior, why did you take out that piece of Glyph Armor? That item saved your life countless times back in the day.” After seeing the inner armor clearly, Zhu Chi could not help but slightly change his expression.

Gui Ru Quan was also a little surprised.

“This item can only withstand attacks from Spirit Apostles, so it is no longer useful to me. To me now, you can say it has value but I am unable to use it. After all, this item has already been heavily damaged by people before; though it has been repaired, it can only withstand two or three attacks at most before completely breaking. Also, I don’t wear it normally, so it is better to give it to Cong Tian for protection.” Martial Aunt Zhong spoke with a carefree tone.

After hearing these words, Zhu Chi and Gui Ru Quan thought they were quite logical, so they did not continue to say anything.

Only now did Liu Ming understand the use of this armor clothes, and

naturally gave great thanks before putting it away.

“Martial Nephew Bai, about the three Scarlet Flame Beads I gave you, each bead is equal to the full power attack from a low level totem, so you are not allowed to use them during the sect’s Large Competition. However, if you are able to enter the Life and Death Trials, since there will naturally be no control...” Gui Ru Quan thought of something, and gave him some words of instruction.

Liu Ming naturally understood and agreed with the nod of his head.

Martial Aunt Zhong and the other two then gave Liu Ming a few words of encouragement. Afterward, they let him return to rest properly for the battles of tomorrow.

Liu Ming bowed to the three before leaving the hall. He flew toward the bottom of the mountain on a cloud.

“Who would have thought, Cong Tian, that kid was actually able to enter into the top ten. Looks like this time our faction really has a good chance of changing our fortunes.” Gui Ru Quan waited for Liu Ming to leave the hall before softly sighing and revealing his thoughts.

“Yes, Martial Nephew Bai’s performance really did exceed our expectations. Before, we neglected him a little too much, but now that Junior Zhong has accepted him as a Direct Disciple and we have heavily rewarded him, any silent resentments he held should have been dissolved. This way, as long as he remains in the top ten in tomorrow’s battles, and if Martial Nephew Shi can also succeed in the challenges, our faction definitely can achieve a good result. We no longer will be at the bottom in the Large Competitions.” Zhu Chi spoke with a smile.

After hearing such words, Martial Aunt Zhong also smiled lightly but did not respond.

“Chuan Er, how have your preparations gone? Have you thought of who you want to challenge? Do you have confidence in getting into the top ten tomorrow?” Gui Ru Quan instead turned his head toward Shi Chuan, who was standing politely to the side and asked.



“Master, do not worry. Tomorrow, I am ready to challenge the eighth rank. I definitely will not have problems with my Flying Head and Demon-Subduing Chain.” Shi Chuan replied without hesitating.

“Very good, since you have such confidence, we three can relax. However, we don’t know if disciples with hidden strengths will appear. You definitely cannot be too careless.” Gui Ru Quan nodded and then instructed prudently.

Shi Chuan naturally agreed with his head nodding.

“Senior is a little too alert. Martial Nephew Shi’s original strength wasn’t weak. Yesterday, he didn’t even use his totem or the flying head, and he easily entered the top twenty. Tomorrow, getting into the top ten naturally is an easy matter.” Zhu Chi spoke with a light smile.

“I naturally understand this logic but it is just best to be prepared for the unexpected. Chuan Er, you should also return and rest properly.” Gui Ru Quan forced a smile, before instructing Shi Chuan.

Shi Chuan spoke a word of agreement before also leaving the hall.

“Now it is just us. What do you two think the competition will be like tomorrow? Don’t only speak of optimistic results, tell me what you really think. Although you two did not show up to the competition over the past two days, under the power of the formations, you should’ve seen enough.” Gui Ru Quan waited for Shi Chuan to leave, before becoming slightly gloomy.

“If we speak realistically, we cannot talk about it so easily. According to the strength of the disciples of the previous Large Competitions, Martial Nephew Bai and Martial Nephew Shi Chuan should have a very good chance of getting into the top ten. However, this time is somewhat different than the previous times. Not only did these talented disciples that would rarely be seen in the past appear: the Earth Spiritual Pulse, the Aphrodite Body and the Lightning Spiritual Pulse, but the strength of Yang Qian, Feng Chan and the other old disciples should have also had a surprising increase.” Hearing and answering his question caused Zhu Chi’s expression to also become serious.

“Not only is that true, according to my observations, there are also many strong disciples that haven’t entered the top ten. They are probably hiding their strength, ready to surprise the world tomorrow. Martial Nephew Shi Chuan can be said to be alright, he has the totem and the Flying Head to protect him, so getting into the top ten should not be too big of a problem. However, for Cong Tian, if he really only has the Wind Blade Technique at Perfection, perhaps tomorrow he will be unable to maintain his ranking.” Martial Aunt Zhong spoke while shaking her head.

“Yes, I see the same thing when I look at the situation. However, out of the current disciples in our faction, other than the two of them, nobody else has the strength to enter the top ten Core Disciples. Although Xiao Feng also gained a placement on the Lunar Monument, he will still need a few more years of practice before being able to gain a better rank.” Gui Ru Quan gave a light sigh again.

“Senior, you are unsettled. What we can do has already been done, as for the results, let them take their course. These other matters cannot be changed with our anxiety.” Zhu Chi gave a light sigh as he replied.

Hearing this, Martial Aunt Zhong revealed an expression of agreement.

“What Junior Zhu Chi has said is right, we will know everything tomorrow. However, for Cong Tian to reach the Late Spirit Apostle stage as a Three Spiritual Pulse disciple, is really a rarely seen matter. A Three Spiritual Pulse disciple reaching Late Spirit Apostle is clearly possible, but a Three Spiritual Pulse disciple being able to reach the realm of a Spirit Master, the last time that happened was around five to six hundred years ago.” Gui Ru Quan smiled before returning the matter back to Liu Ming.

“A Three Spiritual Pulse disciple becoming a Spirit Master is indeed something that is close to impossible. It is such a pity with Martial Nephew Bai’s talent in techniques.” Zhu Chi also became a little disappointed.

“This is not necessarily true. Since it has happened before, nobody can say that our disciple has no chance at becoming a Spirit Master.

Certainly it will be more difficult compared to other people. However, if he is able to compete in the Life and Death Trials and come back alive, the resources rewarded by the sect are astonishing. He has a chance to try.” Martial Aunt Zhong had a slightly different opinion.

“By using large amounts of resources to break through to Spirit Master, perhaps Martial Nephew Bai has a shred of a chance. However, he must first maintain his ranking tomorrow for this to be possible.” Gui Ru Quan’s eyes flashed a little as he spoke.

“In the end, everything really does depend on the results of the competition tomorrow!” Zhu Chi mumbled.

After saying these words, the three of them all had a solemn expression and there was no sound in the entire hall for a while.

At the same moment, Liu Ming, who had returned to his training quarters, was admiring the yellow inner armor he had just received.

The bamboo strands that made up the Practitioner Armor gave off a slight cold feeling, and as Liu Ming stroked the surface with his hand, he realized the surface was not very hard. It instead gave people an abnormal feeling of something supple yet strong.

After Liu Ming channeled some Fa Li into it, the inscriptions on the surface of the bamboo strands suddenly emitted faint light, illuminating the armor with fantastic beauty.

After seeing this, Liu Ming could not help but become increasingly happy.

Practitioner Weapons were not rare in large sects and markets, but a Glyph Armor Practitioner Weapon on the other hand was very rarely seen. At least when he visited the Wei Zhou market, he only saw a few and all of them had a price close to the steep price of totems.

Because this piece of Practitioner Armor had already been damaged in the past, it could only withstand another two or three Spirit Apostle level attacks before completely breaking. However, to Liu Ming, this was infact an invaluable treasure that could save his life in desperate moments.

Liu Ming looked over the piece of armor again. After confirming that there were no problems, he immediately put it on. It fit snugly to his inner clothes, allowing him to wear a green long robe overtop.

This way, it was impossible to tell that there were any abnormalities from the outside.

Afterward, he pulled out the metal box that held the Scarlet Flame Beads and the jade bottle of Blood Marrow Pills. He then opened them individually to have a look.

The Scarlet Flame Beads, surprisingly, were three dark, round beads the size of broad beans. They did not seem remarkable at all.

The Blood Marrow Pills were ten or so bean-sized, blood-colored pills. When placed under his nose, there was a hint of a fresh and sweet smell.

Although these Blood Marrow Pills were not enough to strengthen all the Blood Essence in Liu Ming's body, they could at least cleanse the Essence Blood of some impurities which would let his life force be a bit more vigorous.

Since Liu Ming still needed to compete tomorrow, now was naturally not the time to take these Blood Marrow Pills and cultivate his Essence Blood.

Therefore, Liu Ming put the Scarlet Flame Beads and Blood Marrow Pills away again, before beginning to breath and regulate his Fa Li with ease.

To him, tomorrow was a day where he could not accept defeat.

Liu Ming thought plainly like this. His heart slowly stabilized, forgetting about the outside world.

On the morning of the third day, several thousand Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples once again rushed up the stone mountain.

This time, all the disciples crowded around the stone platform with the greatest surface area on the mountain peak. The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader with the other Spirit Masters were all on the jade platform. They floated above the stone stage at an altitude of a little over one thousand feet.

“You all should already know the exact rules of the second round of challenges, so I won’t say any more. Sect Leader announces right now that the second round of challenges in the Large Competition has officially started.” After flying from the jade platform, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader announced the opening plainly, before flying back.

At this time, a fat elder flew down from the jade platform, and firmly landed on the stone stage. After scanning around, he said while smiling.

“Who am I? I believe the number of Martial Nephews who don’t know me is very low. The second round of the competition will be hosted by me!”

That fat elder, surprisingly, was the “Martial Uncle Yuan” who was responsible for the Scripture Pavilion before!

# Chapter 99: New Challenger

He was actually the Spirit Master responsible for hosting the second round of the Large Competition!

Liu Ming was in great shock after seeing the fat elder's face from before but after a few fast heartbeats, his expression was back to normal again.

The fat elder shook his sleeve and small flags immediately shot out. They shook in the wind before transforming into banners that were inserted onto the the two sides of the stage. There were at least twenty banners that formed neat rows, side by side.

Looking at the symbol on one of the banners, one side had ten banners with the symbols of ranks from one hundred to ninety-one and the other side had the symbols of ranks from ninety to eighty-one.

At this time, the fat elder spoke plainly.

“All the Core Disciples that conform to the banner rankings can now enter the stage.

As soon as he stopped speaking, whooshing sounds were produced from the stone stage below. Twenty Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples, who were already prepared, immediately flew to their respective banners one by one. No one was missing.

Liu Ming's eyes flashed, he could see Xiao Feng and Du Hai, two familiar people. The two were respectively ranked in the ninety-third and eighty-ninth positions.

“Very good, the order will be according to the rank placements. The lower ten people can freely challenge the opposing ten people once and the winner will go to the higher rank while the loser will now have the lower rank. After I ask three times and nobody continues make challenges, that will be the end of the challenges between these two groups. In each round of challenges, everyone will only have the right to challenge once. The round begins now.” After shaking his head, the fat elder said without hesitating.

After the core disciples on both sides looked at each other for a bit, a robust male walked out from below the banner and challenged one of the opposing disciples.

The fat elder formed a one-handed sign and the inscriptions on the rock stage immediately flashed before a wall of light enveloped the whole stone stage.

Since the two disciples in the center of the stage had already signed the Life and Death Writs yesterday, they did not need to do it again. One immediately pulled out a long knife and the other one put on black boxing gloves as they both started forming hands sign and casting spells from far away.

The battle between the two could not be said to be fascinating. They both constantly activated the Practitioner Weapons' attacks to attack the opponent, while using different, simple techniques to aid the attacks.

The two were both abnormally cautious and protective people. They did not even think about approaching their opponent.

However, like this, it temporarily became a battle of Fa Li consumption.

The attacks from their Practitioner Weapons were easy to release but their power was obviously not enough, causing them to be unable to break through their opponent's defenses. The strength of their Secret Technique attacks was enough to do damage but the release speed made the techniques usable with most of techniques being interrupted or easily dodged.

Therefore, the battle between the two was just a process of constantly activating their Practitioner Weapons, simple techniques and constant running and dodging. It was enough to cause the crowd to feel drowsy.

However, after the time it takes to eat a meal, the challenger finally caught the opponent at a moment where he was unable to dodge and a fire ball hit the opponent, knocking him out. Then the fat elder announced the result, before the challenger went and stood under his opponent's banner with great exultation.

The fat elder descended from the sky. After checking on the injured and giving him a quick treatment, he quickly ordered for the loser to be carried off the stage. He then announced for the challenges to continue.

Perhaps due to the influence of the first person, almost at the same time, two people immediately scrambled to give a challenge. One of the two was surprisingly Xiao Feng.

The two looked at each other in the eyes and Xiao Feng, who was half a beat slow, backed off somewhat unwillingly.

Therefore, after the new challenger chose his opponent, another round of battle started.

However, Liu Ming only watched a little before silently sighing.

The battle between the two on the stage was almost the same as the one before. They also used simple techniques and would activate their Practitioner Weapons to fight. There wasn't any great reason to watch.

Liu Ming immediately stopped wasting his time watching and instead walked out of the crowd. He sat down cross-legged in a corner on the rock mountain with nobody around, silently maintaining his eyes closed.

Although he could not see what was happening on the stone stage, he could still hear the cheering sounds from that side. However, he remained expressionless.

On the side of the rock stage, as time passed, challenges ended one by one. Xiao Feng finally challenged an opponent in the end. He defeated his opponent with luck and took the eighty-fifth rank.

Du Hai, on the other hand, successfully defeated a challenger and protected his rank.

Therefore after two more competitions, under the circumstance that there was nobody who still wanted to compete, the one hundredth to ninety-first ranked disciples left the stage. They were replaced by the ten core disciples ranked from eighty to seventy-one, once again starting another round of challenges.



However, this time, Du Hai and the other nine people were the challengers.

In this manner, the whole competition maintained this configuration of the lower ten placements challenging the higher ten placements. However, after the past two days of intense battles, a large portion of the disciples, who knew the extent of their abilities, did not use their right to challenge and only went up to show their faces before leaving the stage in satisfaction.

In this way, other than the other rounds of battles between the disciples becoming slightly more exciting, the entire competition passed quickly, round by round. After half a day, Shi Chuan, Sima Tian and the other people ranked in the top twenty went up on the stone stage.

At this time, Liu Ming, who was originally resting, opened both eyes. He rose up and walked toward the stone stage.

It was indeed as he had expected, the battles between the top thirty and top twenty Core Disciples became abnormally intense. Almost every disciple ranked above thirty put forth a challenge. The disciples ranked above twenty, including Shi Chuan, all displayed terrifying strength that made those previous disciples under rank thirty seem completely inferior.

In the battles between these disciples, there was someone who used the Falling Rock Technique that was close to Complete Spell Mastering, causing pieces of head-sized rocks to fall like rain from the sky. There was someone who summoned two Soldier Level Ghosts at the same time and under coordination, they caused the opponent to fall back step by step before pushing him off the stage. Another person displayed the extraordinarily strong Body Cultivation Technique, utterly destroying his opponent's defensive Practitioner Weapon with one punch.

Among the battles, after facing a challenge from a strong opponent, Shi Chuan also could not help but use his silver chain for the first time. He solidly bound his opponent with countless chains in an illusionary manner, before finally achieving victory over his opponent.

Sima Tian also produced an ink-black, strange chilling short ruler for

the first time and with a swing, clouds of strange chilling black air crazily floated out. The black air transformed the challenger into a black ice sculpture in a short while, surprising many people.

However, other than those two, the bald, large man called Gu Jue also caused Liu Ming some surprise.

Other than the abnormally thick spirit chain, this person's aura gave him a faint, indescribably familiar feeling.

However, the bald large man only used the black chain in his hand to easily defeat his challenger, obviously hiding his strong and secretive strength.

What made him care even more was when Martial Uncle Ruan saw the bald big man get on the stage, his expression became a little abnormal. While the big man competed, his eyes never left the big man, as if he was interested in the large man's every action.

Liu Ming, with a shred of doubt, also mutter to himself a little in his heart.

Even though these battles were intense and a portion of the people were defeated and replaced, Shi Chuan, the bald big man and quite a few more people all protected their rank.

As the last battle between two disciples finished, the fat elder did not call Liu Ming and the other people to get on the stage. Instead, he announced that there would first be a two hour rest period before beginning the final fight with the top ten Core Disciples.

Taking advantage of this time, Shi Chuan, Sima Tian and the other people all took pills where they were as they sat down. They firmly grasped the time to meditate and regulate their bodies.

The other Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples started to excitedly talk and discuss the next round that was going to start soon. They began speculating about who people wouldn't be challenged and which people would lose their ranks.

Liu Ming faintly heard many conversations regarding him and most of

them thought he would do badly. He could not help but grin bitterly in his heart.

As the two hour time period ended, the Fa Li lost by Shi Chuan and the other people was just about fully recovered.

After the fat elder inserted the banners of the top ten Core Disciples into the side of the stage, he announced for Lei Zhen and the other nine people to go up on stage.

Liu Ming and the other people, after hearing such, naturally went up on stage without hesitation.

The fat elder's originally smiling expression immediately became slightly dumbfounded as he saw Liu Ming walk to the ninth banner but after a small flash in his eyes, he immediately returned to how he was before.

Gao Chong flew onto the stone stage from another direction and just happened to meet Liu Ming face to face. He looked at Liu Ming coldly for a moment before walking to his own banner without saying a single word.

Lei Zhen, who flew in from the side sniggered a little when he saw Liu Ming. He revealed an expression that showed he wanted to try fighting Liu Ming.

"The battle for the ten Core Disciples now begins. The victorious ten will be the real top ten Core Disciples and will be able to enter the top ten Core Disciples ranking battle later on. Now, you can start freely challenging." The fat elder said two sentences with lightning speed, before flying back to the side of the stone stage.

Although the people on the stage constantly looked at each other with keen eyes, the ten, including Shi Chuan, standing opposite Liu Ming, did not immediately have someone stand out for some time. However, among them, there were at least five or six gazes constantly sweeping across Liu Ming's body.

Liu Ming's facial expression did not change but he sighed inside.

It was obvious that the opposing side had almost half of the people

choosing him as their challenge target.

This was a very ordinary thing, from the surface, compared to the others, he seemed the weakest. The reason why they did not immediately challenge him was mostly due to the fact that they were worried about if he still had other hidden techniques or cards up his sleeve.

However, just when Liu Ming was thinking about why they didn't challenge him, someone on the opposing side who was close to Shi Chuan, finally and abruptly stepped forward. After a short hesitation, he spoke up loudly.

"Disciple Hu Fei would like to challenge the ninth ranked Junior Bai. I hope Martial Uncle Ruan will allow my challenge!"

This person was tall and skinny like a bamboo pole but the embroidered robes he was wearing constantly revealed a faint azure light that would flash from time to time. At the same time, he carried a narrow, long, weird knife with the shape of a crescent moon. It stood out and gave people a cold feeling of him being a poisonous snake.

Hearing this, Liu Ming's eyes immediately squinted and examined his opponent a few times.

After hearing this, the fat elder looked at Liu Ming plainly before nodding his head to give approval.

Seeing this, Liu Ming walked forward from underneath the banner with no expression.

Only at this time did the fat elder form a one-handed sign, making the light screen on the stage appear once again. The light screen surrounded the two fighter. He then announced that the challenge had started with a loud voice.

# Chapter 100: Intense Battles (Part One)

Liu Ming stood in the same place without moving but in his mind, he thought about his opponent's past battle. Specifically, a scene where Liu Ming's opponent approached the other combatant in the previous round with ghost like movements and instantly placed the weird blade against the neck of the other combatant.

Without a doubt, his opponent seemed to know some type of extremely powerful support technique. In Liu Ming's fight, he definitely couldn't let his opponent get near.

Although Liu Ming did not move, he started chanting quickly and cast the Lighten Technique on himself.

After hearing the fat elder announce that the battle had started, the tall, skinny young man by the name of Gao Fei gave Liu Ming a snicker and formed a hand sign with one hand. Azure light immediately began to coalesce on his embroidered robe, slowly enveloping his whole body. From far away, he seemed like a man made out of azure light.

After seeing this strange situation, Liu Ming's heart shivered and he suddenly raised both of his hands without hesitation.

A sky-shattering sound immediately could be heard as six or seven wind blades formed from azure light shot forward. After a few flashes, they were nearing Gao Fei who was still surrounded by light.

However, Gao Fei gave a weird snicker and blurred a little. The wind blades seemed to pass through his body as if the body was incorporeal.

Seeing this, the spectators below all could not help but be surprised, and some people even cried out in shock.

Liu Ming instead wrinkled his brows and did not reveal an expression of great surprise.

The unbelievable scene performed by his opponent may have been able to trick most of the onlookers, but it was unable to trick Liu Ming's eyes.

The Wind Blade seemed to pass through Gao Fei's body, but he actually just dodged at an extremely fast speed. Since his movements were so fast, it caused such an illusion as if the Wind Blades passed through him.

Since his opponent's movements were quick enough to dodge the Wind Blade attack, Liu Ming knew that he would get a slight headache when trying to close out the match.

Just at this moment, there was a sliding sound.

The man surrounded by light opposite Liu Ming, drew his weird blade from his back as his body shook a little. Then, he rushed forward as an azure shadow.

Seeing this, Liu Ming rubbed his two hands together without even thinking. He raised them again and ten or so wind blades immediately shot out. In the next moment, Liu Ming moved his ten fingers a little and more wind blades appeared mid-air. With a flick, they again transformed into azure lights as they shot forward.

Liu Ming actually released more than twenty wind blades all at once in such a short period of time.

With only an abnormal sway, the faraway shadow, formed from his opponent covered in light, actually dodged all of the wind blades. After another blur, the shadow arrived only several tens of feet away from Liu Ming. Its movement was so fast that it was like a ghost.

Liu Ming was secretly surprised inside but without thinking much, he suddenly shook his sleeve and a black chain shot out like a poisonous snake. It viciously shot directly at Liu Ming's opponent covered in azure light.

However, the person encompassed by light gave a cold laugh before shaking the weird blade in his hand. It immediately transformed into a dozen or so cold light rays which shot out, breaking the black chain in half. After that, he raised his other hand and a ray of jade light shot toward Liu Ming.

Liu Ming gave a hmph sound before suddenly sticking out an arm. The

bronze bracelet on his wrist shook a little and a yellow light shield immediately appeared in front of him.

The jade light hit the shield and a pitter-pattering sound rang out, similar to rain falling on a fence. Both the light and the shield shattered at the same time.

Just at this moment, the body of the Gao Fei twisted and he arrived so close to Liu Ming that even his malevolent expression could be seen clearly by Liu Ming.

Liu Ming's expression became serious. After moving his two legs slightly, the lower half of his body immediately slid back like flowing water. He then suddenly slapped against front of his chest.

“Pu!”

In front of him, three points of black light appeared, and in seconds, a black light shield appeared from these black points of light.

However, Gao Fei who was still shrouded in light ignored this and continued to rush forward. He let no gap appear between Liu Ming and himself. At the same time, he started a chant and the strange blade in his hand was suddenly enveloped by azure light. After brandishing it toward Liu Ming, he disappeared into thin air with a blur.

In the next moment, the space in front of Liu Ming began to hum loudly and a large amount of the azure blade shadows appeared, hitting the black light shield in a dense cluster.

Just after a moment and after a crisp sound, the Three Star Shield shattered into small pieces. The sword shadows, which had no obstruction now, immediately shot forward.

Liu Ming gave another cold hmph as he moved his arm. The bronze bracelet on his wrist trembled a little and a yellow tiger head immediately appeared. At the same time, a white sound wave was spat forward.

The sword shadows, after being hit, could not help but take a moment to steady themselves.

During this period of delay, Liu Ming, who was still sliding back brought his two hands together and quickly separated them again. A huge wind blade that was several feet wide flickered as it appeared and with another tremble of Liu Ming's arm, it flashed forward with an explosive sound.

After seeing the huge wind blade appear, the opposing Gao Fei shivered a little in his heart. Without hesitation, the man encompassed by light suddenly shot backward. At the same time, he swung the weird blade in his hand again and another group of azure blade shadows appeared.

Just at this moment, with a "pu" sound, the giant wind blade appeared in a flash, cutting through the large amount of blade shadows. After another flash, it cut toward the body of Gao Fei.

Gao Fei did not expect the giant wind blade to be this powerful. It shot forward with such speed and surprise that he was too late to dodge it. Gao Fei could only quickly bring the weird blade to his body and at the same time, break a yellow Glyph in his sleeves with his other hand.

"Pu."

Gao Fei only felt a sharp gale flash near him as his hand felt hot and the weird blade flew out of his hand.

Subsequently, the huge Wind Blade viciously hit the sand-yellow rock shield that suddenly appeared in front of Gao Fei. After a cracking sound, both the shield and the Wind Blade suddenly broke apart.

Seeing this, Gao Fei could not help but gasp as he felt shivers run down his back.

If he had deployed the life-saving Glyph, that he spent a paid a large price for, a little slower, he would have really been cut in two.

The power of the huge Wind Blade was actually more than what rumors had said.

At this moment, Liu Ming, who was not far away, swayed and actually appeared close to the weird blade that flew out of his opponent's hand. He firmly planted a foot on top of the Practitioner Weapon.



Seeing this, Gao Fei's expression became gloomy. Just as he turned and wanted to do something, the flashing azure light on his body coalesced before completely dissolving away.

The real body of the tall and skinny young man appeared again as the embroidered robes he was wearing immediately became dull and tainted. He could not help but reveal a dumbstruck expression.

Liu Ming did not show any hesitation because of this, forming another hand seal with both hands. Without saying anything further, many wind blades again formed in front of him. There were a frightening number of them, around twenty. A cold light flashed in his eyes and he was about to shoot them at his opponent.

"There is no need to continue. I admit defeat!"

Seeing this situation, the tall, skinny young man finally responded with a quiver as he immediately took the initiative to shout his surrender loudly.

This caused Liu Ming and the other extremely startled viewers below to stare blankly.

However, after thinking a little, this seemed to also be a very normal situation.

The reason why Gao Fei was able to fight like a demon at the start was mainly due to the embroidered robes on him and the weird blade that increased his power. However, now one of the objects had exhausted its power and the other was directly in Liu Ming's hand, so there naturally was no hope in winning anymore.

"This round, Bai Cong Tian has achieved victory. Furthermore, he is not allowed to be challenged again in the next round." The fat elder dropped down from the sky and plainly gave an order. However, when his gaze reached Liu Ming, there was a sliver of astoundment that could not be concealed.

Liu Ming gave a small laugh and said, "You let me win," before shaking his sleeve. The azure Wind Blades in front of him all disappeared in a

flash. At the same time, he moved his foot off the weird blade and returned to his own banner where he sat down.

However, the nearby disciples, including Gao Chong and Lei Zhen, all looked at Liu Ming with expressions that could not help but reveal a little fear.

Although they knew that the Wind Blade Technique at Perfection was no laughing matter, but for Liu Ming to use it at such a perfect level and able to release it with a flick, that greatly exceeded their expectations.

Of course, they did not know that Liu Ming also spent some time everyday to practice how to use his attacks practically and painstakingly trained the techniques for various situations in the mysterious space. Liu Ming would also visualize different enemy combat situations, allowing him to be able to reach such a level of fluidity when casting the spell.

The many disciples below were even more abnormally excited and all continuously discussed Liu Ming's Perfection of his Wind Blade Technique. The discussions even lead to the topic of how powerful the various other techniques were after forming a Technique Seal.

"Yang Qian, last Large Competition, you reached Perfection with the Fireball Technique, forming a Technique Seal of that technique. However, the release speed of your Fireball Technique is far from this brat's speed." Yang Qian originally was sitting cross-legged under the banner quietly but a person's voice suddenly could be heard in his ear.

Yang Qian's masked face moved slightly as he turned around and sought out the skinny and shriveled young man sitting under the second banner. He replied plainly:

"The Fireball Technique and the Wind Blade Technique are different techniques. After forming a Technique Seal, the attributes increased naturally are not the same. Therefore, if the casting speed of the Fireball Technique is not as fast as the Wind Blade Technique at Perfection, there is nothing to be surprised about. Although the Secret Technique you practice is well known for its defense, whether it will be able to block the huge wind blade cast by Junior Bai is another matter."

“Hmph, you do not need to worry. Even if the power of Junior Bai’s Wind Blade is increased by several folds, it is still unable to break through my defenses.” Feng Chan gave a cold laugh and replied. He coldly looked at Liu Ming, who was to the other side of their line.

Liu Ming naturally did not know about this conversation as he sat where he was with his eyes closed, circulating and controlling his energy.

On the stone platform, Gao Fei had already picked up his weird blade and returned to his own banner with no expression visible on his face.

Almost at the same time, Sima Tian’s expression changed a little before he suddenly stood up. He walked up the stage and spoke while sweeping his gaze.

“If Junior Lei does not mind, I wonder if we can exchange some pointers.”

Sima Tian’s challenge target was actually Lei Zhen, the Nine Spiritual Lightning Pulse disciple.

Hearing this, Lei Zhen gave a small laugh and walked out from under his banner without saying anything.

Seeing this, the fat elder nodded his head and immediately announced, “The battle starts now,” before returning to the outside of the light cover in a flash.

At the same time, Lei Zhen formed hand seals with both hands as, after a rumble from his body, silver colored sparks curled outward. It was almost as if there was a silver snake wrapped around his body, constantly flashing and sparking outwards.

Seeing this, Sima Tian’s expression became serious. After shaking his sleeve, a short, sparkling, black ruler immediately appeared in his hand. He slowly walked step by step towards Lei Zhen with a steady footing.

# Chapter 101: Intense Battles (Part Two)

Lei Zhen chanted, raised his hand and pointed in front of him with a finger.

“Hong!”

A bolt of thick lightning immediately descended from the sky, shooting toward Sima Tian’s head.

Sima Tian waved the short ruler in his hand toward the sky without saying anything.

With a “pu” sound, a black cloud flew upward.

The lightning bolt hit the cloud and disappeared with a muffled sound.

“Totem!”

Lei Zhen had already been somewhat expecting it, but after seeing this situation, he could not help but cry out as his pupils shrank.

“Correct. I bought this Ice Mystery Cloud ruler from the market after spending all my savings. It just happens to counteract your lightning techniques.” Sima Tian spoke gloomily. After flipping a hand, suddenly a palm-sized, yellow leather bag came into view. He tossed it into the air and after a flash of light appeared from within, a huge human-shaped ghost covered in black gas appeared in front of him.

It was ferocious looking and wore a piece of thick, metal armor on its upper body. Its ten fingernails were extremely black and abnormally sharp. Its body was covered in black, thick, hard hair. It was actually a metal-armored zombie.

Both of its eyes constantly flashed green light and along with its astonishing aura, it was surprisingly a Warrior Level Ghost with a hint of intelligence.

Seeing this, Lei Zhen’s expression changed as he patted the black leather bag on his waist without hesitation.

A flash of black light came from within and a winged, monkey-shaped

ghost emerged from the light. This was the most commonly seen Soldier Level Night Crawler.

The only thing was, the tail of this ghost was red in color and after looking at the opposing Metal Armored Zombie, it did not reveal any surprised expressions. Instead, it arched its back and bared its fangs at the Metal Armored Zombie.

Lei Zhen formed a hand sign with one hand and spat a cloud of essence blood at that Night Crawler.

“Pu!”

The Essence Blood exploded into blood mist in the wind which then transformed into blood strands that quickly entered the Night Crawler’s body.

In the next moment, this ghost raised its head and gave off a mournful cry. Its crimson tail suddenly slapped against the stone platform beneath it and its body suddenly exploded in size in a flash, reaching a height of several tens of feet. At the same time, the tip of its tail swayed in the breeze before releasing a “pu” sound and transforming its whole body into a crimson flame.

“Mutated Night Crawler!”

Seeing this, Sima Tian also revealed a surprised expression, but after a cold grunt, he slashed the short ruler in his hand at the empty air in front of him. At the same time, he controlled the Metal Armored Zombie with hand signs from his other hand.

The densely packed inscriptions on the short ruler began glowing and a large cloud of black gas rolled out from within. It rushed directly at the overbearing Lei Zhen on the other side. Before it had even reached its target, a mysterious, bone-chilling coldness reached out of it.

The Metal Armored Zombie also gave out a low growl before rushing at his opponent.

Lei Zhen did not pay attention to this Metal Armored Zombie. Instead, he revealed a slightly serious expression at the rolling black cloud. He

quickly formed hand signs with his two hands, again raising them.

Thunder clap sounds erupted out of nowhere!

Bolts of lightning shot out from his interweaved hands, transforming into a huge lightning net that rushing forward to meet the dark cloud.

Once the two met, there was a huge exploding sound. The black air and lightning became concentrated before emitting continuous exploding sounds while flashing as they became interwoven mid-air.

Sima Tian revealed a focused expression as he again activated the short ruler in his hand, sending out another black cloud.

The opposing Lei Zhen gave a cold grunt before chanting without revealing any weaknesses. His ten fingers constantly flicked forward and every time they did, a bolt of lightning would shoot forward with a loud sound.

At this moment, one side of the platform was covered with rolling black clouds. It was as if it were the Ghost Hell region. While the other side was instead a sea of silver, interweaving light that flashed crazily.

The power of the two sides was astonishing while they actually reached a temporary stalemate.

As for the Metal Armored Zombie, as soon as it had managed to move a couple hundred feet, it was met by the mutated Night Crawler with astonishing speed.

Therefore, the two engaged in close combat fighting as their black Miasma and the crimson flames combined together. Low howls and cries could occasionally be heard from their exchange.

The Fa Li inside Sima Tian was consumed at astonishing speeds, causing him to feel anxious especially when his attacks did not have much of an effect.

It must be known that although totems were extremely powerful, but to a Spirit Apostle, the consumption of Fa Li was a little too much. If he were to continue like this, he definitely would be the one to use up all of

his Fa Li.

It seemed that if he did not use a risky attack, he could not win the match.

Sima Tian quickly thought of a few ideas before immediately opening his mouth to begin chanting. He shook his wrist and the short ruler in his hand flew into the sky. Suddenly, the ruler lit up, while in the sky, and three layers of black inscriptions could vaguely be seen on the ruler.

He actually activated the third restricted layer of his low level totem, which was the greatest power that he could activate it to.

Under the connection between his consciousness and the totem, Sima Tian could feel the Fa Li inside him bubble up crazily like a flood.

As for the short, black ruler, it spun a few times before slowly chopping at Lei Zhen from far away.

There was a muffled “hong” sound!

The empty air above Lei Zhen transformed into ripples and a black shadow of a huge ruler—around ten feet long—appeared, crushing down toward Lei Zhen.

Lei Zhen felt the air surrounding him became tight and a scary, suffocating aura immediately locked onto him. He could not help but display a serious expression.

“Ok, I want to see how powerful this Mystery Cloud Ruler actually is!”

As soon as he finished speaking, Lei Zhen shook his sleeve and a small, silvery hammer appeared in his hand. It was half a foot long and covered in weird, lightning like inscriptions. Even with a slight movement, small bolts of electricity would constantly crackle around it. It was also a totem and it seemed like its quality was above the Black Cloud Ruler which was a low level totem.

A shred of ferociousness could be seen in Lei Chen’s eyes. The sparks on his body suddenly all bubbled into the small hammer in his hand as he firmly threw the hammer into the air.

A huge, sky-shattering sound could be heard.

A blurry, silver-colored lightning Serpent Dragon appeared and threw itself forward. Through the air it went with its mouth open and claws ready, breaking apart the huge black ruler mirage.

The short black ruler gave off a hum, before dropping out of the sky with a dull light.

Since Sima Tian's consciousness was connected with the totem, a mouthful of fresh blood immediately flew out of his mouth while his face became pale as the black ruler was damaged heavily. At the same time, he only had a wee bit of Fa Li remaining in his body and he could not help but have his heart drop.

As for Lei Zhen, the one who just created the lightning attack, it was obvious that he still had plenty of Fa Li within him. After activating the totem that was mid-air again, the transformed lightning dragon immediately gave out a roar before rushing toward Sima Tian.

Sima Tian's expression changed several times, before sighing deeply. He cupped his fist at Lei Zhen and said.

"Junior Lei has no need to continue, I concede this round."

As soon as he finished speaking, he summoned back the Metal Armored Zombie that was covered in injuries. He then grabbed at the air, causing the short ruler that was on the floor to fly into his hand. He then turned around and left with a defeated expression.

This time, he could not become one of the top ten core disciples and in the next Large Competition, he will have exceeded the age limit. There were naturally no more chances for him to stand among the top Spirit Apostles.

Seeing this, Lei Zhen relaxed inside, and recalled his mutated Night Crawler, covered in injuries, back with a mental thought. He then grabbed at the sky.

The silver lightning dragon dispersed with a flash, transforming back to the small hammer before falling.



“The Lightning Duke Hammer! For Junior Lei to actually give your nephew an Middle Level Totem, this is unexpected. However, this is an Middle level Totem, perhaps he can only use ten to twenty-percent of the power within the Totem.”

On the jade platform, after seeing Lei Zhen collect the small hammer, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader spoke to Spirit Master Lei with some surprise.

“I recently obtained another totem and the power is actually above this Lightning Duke Hammer, so I naturally gave it to Zhen Er. As for the power, to be able to use ten to twenty-percent would be enough for battles between Spirit Apostles.” Spirit Master Lei replied with a slight smile.

“However, it is somewhat pitiful for Sima Tian. He had a Warrior Level ghost as well as the low level totem, the Black Cloud Ruler. If he had not used that attention attracting move at the end, perhaps he still had a shred of a chance of coming back from defeat and winning. As for his strength, it should actually be enough to enter the top ten Core Disciples.” Chu Qi’s eyes lit up a little as he spoke with some pity.

“Junior Chu, what are you trying to say? Could it be possible that you feel that my nephew being defeated by your Faction should be what happened?” Hearing this, Spirit Master Lei could not help but start rolling his eyes.

“Haha, Junior Lei is mistaken, how can I have such a thought? I only feel that if it was under the comparison of strength with the previous top ten Core Disciples, this child originally did have the power to become one.” Chu Qi did not become angry or mad at all and instead replied with a laugh.

Spirit Master Lei snorted a few times, but did not continue the conversation.

Seeing this, the other Spirit Master smirked a little. They knew that there were some disagreements between the two of them, so they naturally did not join in on the conversation.

Gui Ru Quan also did not join the conversation. Instead he focused all

his attention on the stage below.

Although the victory of Liu Ming from before gave him a small surprise, he was worried more about Shi Chuan's challenge; a disciple whom he had put a great amount of resources into.

At this time, the fat elder on the stone stage had announced the results.

The surrounding disciples that had watched the battle, could be considered to have widened their scopes, since the intense battle included a fight between totems and Warrior Level ghosts. They discussed it excitedly without stop.

When Liu Ming saw the two Warrior Level ghosts and Sima Tian and Lei Zhen using Totems, he was rather moved. However, after thinking about his two totems and the White Bone Scorpion, he naturally recovered his calm and collected appearance.

Although he did not battle against the two, the strength of his short sword spirit totem should not be below that of the small, silver hammer. Also, the White Bone Scorpion, after the training in the mysterious bubble was not even on the same level compared to the two Ghosts that had just entered the Warrior Level.

At this time, a handsome looking young man challenged the seventh ranking Jia Lan with a somewhat passionate expression.

Hearing this, Jia Lan did not have any expression. Only when the elder in embroidered robes announced that the battle had started did she start to slowly walked to the center of the stage. However, there were hints of pale purple light moving about inside her beautiful eyes.

Seeing this, the handsome young man quivered a little. He quickly pulled out a previously prepared golden Glyph, sticking it onto his body without saying anything further.

In seconds, a layer of golden light appeared around him.

"Haha, Junior Jia Lan, I know the power of your innate eye abilities are very powerful but this Illusion Dispelling Glyph specializes in defending against attacks from mental power. Your current Aphrodite Body has no

debilitating effects on me.” The handsome young man laughed wildly and spoke. He pulled out a single-sided, green blade, and started walking toward the young woman.

“Really? Now I want to test whether this Illusion Dispelling Glyph is really useful or not.” The extremely good looking young female stood where she was without moving. Only the purple light in her beautiful eyes began glowing brighter.

# Chapter 102: Intense Battles (Part Three)

In the time it takes to have a meal, the extremely beautiful young girl had yet to move from her original spot.

The handsome youth, on the other hand, had already fallen seventy to eighty feet away from the blossoming young lady. Although the gold shroud of light on his body still persisted, foam was already seeping from his mouth and he was in a deep coma.

When the fat old man flew down and declared the winner, the extremely beautiful young lady immediately and soundlessly turned around before walking away. She silently returned to her original banner.

Regardless of whether it was on the stage or off the stage, there was absolute silence.

From the very beginning, this challenger had displayed absolute confidence but after walking only a couple of steps, he suffered from the effects of Jia Lan's eye technique and his movements grew slower.

Despite being covered in the Illusion Dispelling Light Shroud and forcibly moving forward, every step required strenuous effort; so much so that at the very end, the veins in his forehead were bulging and his face was blood red.

Moreover, when he had made it to his current position, he had suddenly began babbling nonsense and waved his hands wildly in the air before finally collapsing to the ground in exhaustion.

Such a weird situation caused the plethora of Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples to suck in a cold breath of air. To them, Jia Lan clearly became much more mysterious and unfathomable.

The fat old man gave light medical treatment to the youth before letting others carry him off the stage. He proceeded to announce the continuation of the challenging battles.

Subsequently, someone proceeded to challenge Duan Can Zu, however, the challenger was no match for the transmogrified yellow ribbon that

were so numerous that they could covered the sky. The challenger was ultimately firmly bound by the ribbon and could only helplessly admit defeat.

At this time, Shi Chuan finally walked up and challenged the eighth placed gray-robed youth with an ugly complexion.

During the previous battles, this youth had summoned a “Hundred Boned” level sacrificially refined White Demon Skeleton. Furthermore, he was proficient in a bone explosion Secret Technique that allowed him to turn sacrificially refined ghost bones into Miasmic Thunder that attacked the enemy. The power of this technique truly was not weak and quite unpredictable.

Otherwise, other challengers would have already challenged this person. Instead, they challenged Liu Ming and the other new disciples.

With this situation, aside from a select few people, most people didn’t believe that Shi Chuan could win his challenge.

Nonetheless, when the two of them began fighting, everyone was taken aback.

Aside from the silver-chained Totem that protected his entire body at the start of the fight, he immediately summoned a monster only heard in legends—a Flying Head.

The monster’s outer appearance was similar to a male’s head. When it appeared, it immediately emitted an overflowing demonic aura. After its head covered in hair moved, it ripped the White Demon Skeleton into splinters. Subsequently, its body flew into the air and swallowed the opposing the Miasmic Thunder that the bones of the White Demon Skeleton exploded into.

Next, the monster appeared on top of the gray-robed youth in a flash. A layer of black flame condensed in its large mouth and the gray-robed youth was forced to concede.

The fight between these two was extremely simple and had only taken a few seconds to finish.

Such a fast battle along with it surpassing everyone's expectations naturally caused the spectators to open their eyes wide and rendering them unable to speak.

The myriad of Spirit Masters on the jade platform went into an uproar when the Flying Head monster appear.

"Zeze, Senior Gui, your courage truly is magnanimous. You unexpectedly dared to confer your faction's Demonic Flying Head to a disciple."

"Considering how tyrannic this demon is, aside from a few select people in my faction with enough fighting ability, I'm afraid that few people would be able to contend against it."

.....

The Spirit Masters from various factions began to express their opinions.

"Junior Gui, you surprisingly gave the monster to Shi Chuan; isn't this a bit rash? The power of the Flying Head is second only to the Nine Infants. Even if you were to use the monster, you would have to be careful of its backlash; I don't have to point out what could happen to a mere Spirit Apostle disciple." The Barbarian Ghost Sect leader let out a long sigh and was extremely serious as he asked Gui Ru Quan a question.

"Sect Leader, don't worry. This monster's soul has already been locked up by the Suppressing Devil Chain. Unless it can autonomously free itself from this Totem, it has no choice but to bear Chuan Er's use. If this were not the case, how could the three of us have given the monster to him so easily." A smile appeared on Gui Ru Quan's face as he replied.

Shi Chuan's easy victory caused the worry in his heart to finally dissipate.

"Although the Suppressing Devil Chain is powerful, your disciple's Fa Li cultivation is still a little too low. There will be some risks when he uses this Flying Head. If possible, it's best to not use this Flying Head in fights until it's absolutely necessary." The Sect Leader shook his head as he

remarked.

“Senior, you need not worry. After we go back, I will warn him a bit more.” When Gui Ru Quan heard this, he was slightly displeased; however, the smile on his face remained as he replied.

At this time, Chu Qi’s eyebrows creased and he opened his mouth,

“Sect Leader doesn’t need to be too worried. Although this Flying Head is incomparably powerful, a large amount of Essence Blood is required when using it each time. With the amount of Essence Blood a Spirit Apostle has, he can use it once or twice at most!”

“Hmph, I didn’t realize that Junior Chu knew so much about my Faction’s Enslaving Devil Technique.” Gui Ru Quan’s face slightly changed.

“Hehe, Senior Gui is giving me too much credit. I have only looked at a few books that pertain to the subject.” Chu Qi laughed as he replied.

Gui Ru Quan gave a dissatisfied hmph and didn’t speak any further.

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader relaxed his expression after he heard this information.

When the others finished listening, their nervousness also slightly dissipated.

If that was the case, during tomorrow’s top ten Core Disciple Ranking Competition, Shi Chuan could only use the Flying Head once more. Thus, they did not need to worry too much about him using the Flying Head to take the peak of Core Disciples.

.....

The subsequent challenge matches continued to proceed.

However, none of the challengers had made their move yet. Most of them didn’t have enough confidence in themselves. Even when a few of them summoned the courage and entered the stage, most of them returned in staggering defeat.

There was even one person who challenged Liu Ming again but after

being successively attacked by a flurry wind blades, he was easily defeated.

In the blink of an eye, the only remaining person among the challengers was a large bald man called Gu Jue.

Once he fought his challenging match, the second round of the Large Competition would be considered finished.

Therefore, regardless if they were on the stage or off the stage, everyone's gaze fell on Gu Jue.

The big bald man stood up and walked to the center of the elevated stage. His gaze swept around everyone in front of him. Afterwards, he used his hand to rub his glossy bald head and he let out a laugh as he said,

"I am an untalented fellow and I don't have much of a chance of defeating the others. Thus I would like Junior Bai to give me a few pointers."

His challenge was astonishingly directed at Liu Ming.

Although Liu Ming had already been challenged twice, two matches had passed between his last fight. This was coupled with the fact that he had not spent too much Fa Li during his matches this competition, therefore he naturally could not refuse.

Liu Ming was surprised at first, but after seeing the opposing party's unbridled gaze, he let out a light smile and stood up.

"Since Senior Gu has requested a match, I can only accept the challenge."

The second he finished projecting his voice, Liu Ming walked to the center of the elevated stage.

Up in the air, when the fat elder saw the match arrangement between Gu Jue and Liu Ming, the corners of his mouth curled and a strange expression flashed in his eyes. However, he didn't hesitate to announce the start of the competition between the two.



On the jade platform, when Gui Ru Quan saw the scenario unfold, his face couldn't help but turn slightly ugly.

Although Gu Jue hadn't fought very much during the previous days of the competition, he had easily obtained victory every time he fought. It was clear that he had yet to use his full strength.

How could this not make Gui Ru Quan worried for Liu Ming?

If Liu Ming were to be kicked out of the top ten Core Disciple ranking, the entire Nine Infants Factions would be incomparably sullen.

When Chu Qi saw the discord on Gui Ru Quan's face, he let out a giddy expression to the side.

Underneath them, on the elevated stage, Gu Jue suddenly shook his sleeve a thick Soul Shackling Chain flew out. After revolving once, it transformed into a black gown-like object that encased his body. After the chain had surrounded him, Gu Jue twisted neck and his two hands abruptly clenched into fists.

In an instant, a "ga beng" sound of explosions rang out from within his body and his body instantly grew more than half a head taller.

Subsequently, the big man let out a sinister laugh and formed a technique seal with his hand. From within his body, wisps of black gas rose into the air. After curling together, they transformed into a Black Spirit Inscription that imprinted itself onto his clothes.

In the next second, a black light appeared on the Gu Jue's clothes. It unexpectedly morphed into barbed black bone armor. The armor seemed to sprout and protect every inch of his body, firmly hiding all of Gu Jue's newly enlarged body.

Then, Gu Yue opened his mouth again and a ball of blood-colored light was spat out. He used one hand to grab it and subsequently rubbed it on his face.

A shocking scene appeared.

After massive bald man put the blood-colored light on his face, a ghost

mask that seemed to be made of fresh blood covered his face.

After a “teng” sound, the two eyes on the mask unexpectedly became two balls of faint green ghost flames. The originally human-like man instantly began emitting threatening Miasma. He seemed to transform into a genuine ghost.

“Capitulation Ghost Technique!”

Underneath the stage, when the knowledgeable disciples had understood the changes that had occurred, they couldn’t help but involuntarily speak those words.

When Liu Ming heard these voices, his expression changed. He vaguely remembered hearing about this name somewhere else. It seemed to be a high level Secret Technique that combined the power of a ghost’s soul with oneself. However, cultivating it was incomparably complex and the cultivators that managed to successfully perfect it were exceptionally few.

Liu Ming thoughts churned and the expression on his face instantly turned abnormally serious. He began to take his opponent seriously as a genuine challenger unlike the previous two challengers.

Liu Ming suddenly smacked the leather bag on his waist and black gas immediately rolled into the air. A few feet long, enormous White Bone Scorpion suddenly appeared in the area adjacent to Liu Ming. Subsequently, his wrist shook and he violently poured the Fa Li in his body into his copper bracelet.

A droning sound reverberated and a yellow substance appeared on his arm in the form of a shield.

When he finished his actions, the opposing Gu Jue had raised his head and let out a ferocious roar that resembled something inhuman. In the ensuing moment, he abruptly raised one leg and stomped on the ground. His body shot into the air like a stone bullet, rushing toward Liu Ming.

A cold glint flashed in Liu Ming’s eyes. After thinking something in his head, the adjacent White Bone Scorpion flickered and appeared in front of him, acting as a shield. Liu Ming’s two hands then formed technique

seals, causing countless wind blades to emerge. After lightly shaking his hands, they transformed into rays of cyan light that violently shot forward.

“Peng, peng!”

The flying skin headed large man unexpectedly did not dodge these Wind Blades. Thus, they slashed into every part of his body.

However, the bone armor on his opponent’s body seemed incomparably hard and every Wind Blade was successively repelled. The only thing that was left on the bone armor from the attack were small white scars.

The large bald man’s body only slowed slightly before still rushing at Liu Ming.

When Liu Ming saw this, his face became gloomy. He completely disregarded his opponent, who was just about to arrive in front of him, as he put his two hands together once more. An enormous wind blade that was several feet in length began to condense.

Simultaneously, the White Bone Scorpion residing in front of him transformed into a green silhouette. With a “sou” sound, it rushed forward to meet Gu Jue.

# Chapter 103: Intense Battles (Part Four)

The big bald man gave a loud grunt and punched the air. A stream of black gas as thick as a bowl immediately and ferociously shot out from his fist.

The White Bone Scorpion gave a weird cry and used its two huge claws to block the attack in front of it.

When the black air hit the huge claws, there was an immediate bang and the ghost was knocked back like a bag.

The black gas actually had such great power that it easily sent the White Bone Scorpion flying.

The White Bone Scorpion. In the distance, rolled a few times before suddenly disappearing with a twist of green air.

In this moment of delay, Liu Ming managed to finish casting his technique. His two hands trembled and the huge wind blade between them shot forward with an explosive sound.

A large banging sound reverberated.

The huge wind blade flashed before immediately cutting apart the black gas. However, its speed decreased a little due to the resistance of the gas.

At this moment, the big man slightly squatted where he was standing and punched ferociously at the wind blade.

With a “pu” sound, black light flashed from his fist and it was suddenly covered by a layer of a bone boxing glove. At the same time, streams of black gas began flowing out from his arm. The streams then began to wrap around the bone fist. Which caused to actually transform into a huge black air fist, a foot long. He used his fist to hit the opposing giant wind blade in a flash.

There was a huge “hong” sound.

The huge fist and wind blade connected and a wave of air rushed out in all directions. At the same time, Gu Jue was knocked back slightly.

The huge wind blade gave off a few flashes of azure light before immediately breaking apart.

After a period of shuddering, the huge black fist also broke apart, revealing the black bone glove hidden underneath.

The bone glove was covered in a faint gash, but after the surrounding black gas flowed into it, the gash quickly closed up and the glove returned to how it was before.

Afterward, the big man laughed maliciously and with his other hand, he suddenly grabbed the air in the direction of Liu Ming.

With a “pu” sound, the black air in front of him flowed and condensed, forming an extremely blurry, black, giant claw. It was at least a half a foot in length. It trembled, before grabbing at Liu Ming after a sky shattering sound.

Liu Ming’s expression changed and his hand sign suddenly changed. Five or six scarlet fireballs immediately shot forward and disappeared after a flash. They had all transformed into a rolling flame which hit the huge claw.

A huge sound that could move the heavens could be heard!

The giant black claw, under the extremely hot temperature, was like ice or snow as it melted extremely fast. After a moment, it finally transformed into bits of black air that exploded apart.

This scene made the big bald man, who was originally extremely confident, slightly startled. After a low howl, he firmly stomped the stage beneath him.

“Hong!”

A formless wave spread out, originating from where he stomped. The nearby areas of the stone stage transformed into countless cracks.

However, at almost the same time, two swishing sounds could be heard and two huge claws flew out from the broken rocks, clamping at the two calves of the big man.

It was actually the White Bone Scorpion. It had used its burrowing technique at an unknown time to burrow under the big man to suddenly launch an attack.

Seeing its lightning fast movements, the formless wave from the big man's one-legged stomp did not have a major influence on it, or you could say, no damage was done at all.

Although the big man had known about the presence of the White Bone Scorpion beforehand, he obviously underestimated its strength.

However, with this, the big bald man was already unstable in his movement and it was much too late to dodge. He could only give out a weird cry, immediately causing the black gas surrounding him to flow and condense around his calves. The black gas caused the black bone armor, that originally covered his calves, to thicken by a few times.

Two bangs could be heard!

The two giant claws firmly clamped onto the two calves of the big man, causing a few deep cracks to appear immediately on the surface of the bone armor. A crunching sound could be heard. It was as if the armor was going to completely break apart in the next moment.

However, the big man immediately gave out a cold snort and with one hand he whipped out a black chain. It firmly bound the two huge claws and with his other hand, he grabbed the black chain and suddenly gave it a firm tug. An unimaginably strong power was put into this tug.

Although the White Bone Scorpion was powerful, it did not specialize in strength. The moment it was pulled by the huge force, it was pulled out of the stone stage by that tug, flying straight at the big man.

As for the bald big man, who was already prepared, he moved his hand and a fist, covered in black gas, flew at the White Bone Scorpion.

Before the fist had hit the ghost, the black gas on its surface suddenly condensed and a sharp bone spike, about half a foot in length, appeared. It was ready to puncture the skull of the White White Bone Scorpion with one hit.

However, at this moment, the White Bone Scorpion gave off a sharp cry of “gu” and the tail of the scorpion moved while it was being pulled. After a few loud swishing sounds, a dozen or more black lines shot forward with a flash.

The big man only felt his arm go slightly cold and a dozen or more black holes beneath in his armor. Poisoned blood flowed out of them with no signs of stopping.

The bone fist that was used to attack became numb and brushed past the White Bone Scorpion powerlessly. It became stiff after a short while and there was no longer any sense of feeling in it.

The tail of the White Bone Scorpion became a blur again and shot out a dozen or so black lines once again.

Under surprise and anger, the big man gave out a deep growl. His other hand suddenly blurred and grabbed the black chain with his five fingers, swinging it at the floor at lightning speed.

A huge, earth-shaking bang sound could be heard and the whole stone stage rocked a little.

A large half of the body of the White Bone Scorpion was stuck deeply in a loose rock ditch. Although the scorpion still seemed whole, it was unable to immediately climb out due to the powerlessness felt in its body.

With this golden opportunity, the big bald man naturally would not let the White Bone Scorpion off so easily. With his other arm, he pulled the black chain, causing the tightly bound White Bone Scorpion on the other end to fly out of the ditch and be smashed down again.

However, just at this moment, there were a few “pu” sounds and azure lights flashed a few times. They cut at the black chain, causing the middle of the chain to be severed in half.

The White Bone Scorpion, who was still tightly bound on the smaller part of the chain, immediately squeezed free as all that the chain was binding was a gust of black gas.

The White Bone Scorpion seemed to have also recovered its movement

abilities in that moment and rolled into the loose rubble silently; where it immediately transformed into green gas, hiding within the stone stage again.

The big bald man did not seem to want to chase down the ghost and instead looked at Liu Ming with a gloomy expression.

Liu Ming on the other side, who had formed hand signs with both hands, had seven or eight trembling wind blades float in front of him.

It was obvious that the black chain from before was cut when Liu Ming took the opportunity to use his Wind Blade Technique to free the White Bone Scorpion.

Although the big man seemed to have been through a lot while he was facing the White Bone Scorpion, their fight only lasted for a few breaths.

The green flames on Gu Yu's mask jumped a little and he looked at his injured arm, feeling a little gloomy.

He saw that the dozen or so holes had stopped bleeding but his whole arm was at least twice as thick as before and a numb feeling had already spread through it as well. He could not move his fingers at all.

Although he immediately used Fa Li to stop the poison from spreading to other parts of his body, undoubtedly his arm had been rendered completely useless.

Not only did the stinger of that White Bone Scorpion pierce through the defence of his arm clad with bone armor, it also had extremely strong poison. The strength of the scorpion could not be compared with other Warrior Level ghosts.

The big bald man thought through these things and could not help even become even more serious.

The attention of the spectators below was completely captured by the intense, lightning-fast battle between the big man and Liu Ming. They all watched in silence, with their eyes wide open, afraid to be distracted by even a little.



The group of spirit masters on the jade platform were also very surprised at the weirdness of the Secret Technique of Gu Yu, and also by the strength of the White Bone Scorpion summoned by Liu Ming.

Within them, the most surprised naturally was still Gui Ru Quan.

He had never thought that, other than a technique at Complete Spell Mastery, Liu Ming would actually have such a strong Warrior Level ghost.

On the stone stage underneath, Liu Ming instead suddenly smiled, and opened his mouth.

“Senior Gu, the strength of my White Bone Scorpion’s poison is so strong that even if you use Fa Li to temporarily seal it off, you will not last that long. With the situation of the poison being in your body, how can you continue to battle against me. Why not forfeit and let me dispel the poison? Otherwise, if it stays in your body a little longer and an accident occurs, it will not be good.”

“Hmph, forfeit! You think of me too easily. What can this little poison do? From now on, the real battle between us will start.”

Hearing what Liu Ming said, the big bald man instead gave out a crazy laugh and suddenly moved his hand. He actually grabbed the shoulder of the arm that was poisoned. Using power in his five fingers, there was actually a cracking sound as he forcibly severed his whole arm.

Black, poisonous blood immediately flowed out from the injury at his root of his severed arm.

However, the big man instead immediately began chanting, and countless black inscriptions appeared on his severed arm. Under a breeze, the severed arm trembled before transforming into black smoke, fusing back into his body.

In the next moment, another cloud of black gas appeared on the shoulder of the big man, where he was injured. After rolling and condensing, it first transformed into pieces of sparkling black bones. Then densely packed black and red blood vessels appeared on the surface, transforming into layers of flesh and blood, layering at lightning speed.

After the period of a few breaths, a complete, uninjured arm appeared again under the gaze of everybody.

Not only did this scene cause the normal disciples to all be dumbstruck, the group of Spirit Masters on the jade platform were also gobsmacked.

Yang Qian, who originally sat under his banner with his eyes half closed, abruptly widened them at the big bald man. A deathly silver light constantly flashed within in his eyes.

As for Feng Chan, Qian Huiniang and the other disciples, after seeing this unbelievable sight, they all showed their individual horrified expressions.

“What a limb-regrowing ability. It looks like the ghost spirit that he used in his Capitulation Ghost Technique is a ghost with an innate techniques that specializes in regeneration. This type of ghost is rarely seen. He is lucky to have been able to find it, as well as refine it successfully.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader instead rubbed his palms as he smiled.

“Indeed, it can only be explained like this. Although the Capitulation Ghost Technique can retain the innate techniques of the ghost, the probability of that happening is very low. This Gu Jue child is lucky. However, with this, the disciple under Senior Gui will be in great trouble. Even with the help from that White Bone Scorpion, it is perhaps very hard to achieve victory.” Chu Qi blinked a few times before smiling slightly and speaking.

“If it hasn’t reached the end, who wins and who loses is not a matter easily determined.” Gui Ru Quan recovered from being shocked and became gloomy after hearing what was said. However, he replied with no expression.

At the same time, on the stage below, Liu Ming became a little green after watching the broken arm of the big bald man regrow. However, after a deep breath, he suddenly shook his sleeve and a short, azure sword immediately appeared.

# Chapter 104: Intense Battles (Part Five)

“Totem!”

The big bald man, who was about to laugh aloud and rush at Liu Ming in an earth-shattering manner, immediately gasped. He revealed an expression full of surprise.

Just at this moment, the ground near Liu Ming flashed with a green shadow and the White Bone Scorpion jumped out without a sound. It blocked the path in front of Liu Ming.

The spectating disciples broke into an uproar again.

When Gao Chong saw Liu Ming release the White Bone Scorpion, he scowled a little. After seeing the short, azure sword Totem in his hand, he could not help but become dark-faced.

“Hmph, you think you can stop me with a Totem. Whatever, I will let you understand my true strength!” The big, bald man gave a cold snort as he suddenly grabbed the many leather bags on his waist. He threw them into the air and threw out a few punches with “hu hu” sounds.

After a few sounds of explosions, the leather bags were immediately destroyed by the countless fist shadows. From inside, countless, rolling whitish objects, the size of a thumb, scattered out.

Following this, the big man formed two hand seals and began chanting. The black gas on his body suddenly floated into the air, absorbing all the objects that had scattered out.

At the same time, the bone armor on the big man disappeared, transforming into rolling black gas. The air crazily spun around him, completely enveloping him after a short while.

Waves of ghost cries could be heard from the black gas. At the start, there were only one or two, but soon there were a dozen or so, tens or so and even up to hundreds of cries, as if countless ghosts were hidden inside.

As the black gas rotated, the area it covered became larger and larger,

spreading over hundreds of feet in the blink of an eye.

Seeing this situation, Liu Ming was secretly startled and he immediately shook his sleeve at his opponent. A dozen or so wind blades appeared in front of him and they all immediately shot forward with sky-shattering booms.

After a muffled sound, the wind blades all entered the black gas with a flash. They did not produce any more sounds as if they were mud sliding into water.

The ghost cries in the black gas instead received some type of provocation and became louder and more shrill in the blink of an eye.

Liu Ming's expression became serious. The short azure blade in his hand gave off a hum, and a layer of faint azure inscriptions flashed. His wrist moved and it cut toward the opponent.

With a clear sound, an azure sword image several feet in length flew out from the short sword.

With a "pu" sound, the azure sword image cut into the black gas, releasing a flash of penetrating cold light. It actually cut through the black gas like tofu, directly rushing to the center of the black gas.

Just at this moment, several sharp ghost cries could be heard and three white skulls that were the size of a fist rushed out of the black gas. They hit the azure sword image all at the same time.

"Hong, hong, hong!"

The three skulls transformed into three balls of black light and burst open.

The azure sword image flashed crazily for a few moments before dispersing with the black light.

Seeing this situation, Liu Ming's expression changed slightly. Just as he was thinking of what he should do, the opposing black gas suddenly began rotating, transforming into a humungous black wall. It looked to be rushing at and attempting to squash Liu Ming.

Inside the rolling black gas, skulls giving off weird cries sometimes could be seen and seemed to surmount to hundreds of skulls.

Liu Ming, who had already witnessed the power of the three self-destructing skulls from before, naturally felt uneasy after seeing this. Without hesitating further, he formed a single-handed seal and a lot of red light immediately began gathering in front of him. A fireball appeared in front of him and after Liu Ming pointed at it with one finger, it began to grow crazily. It instantly transformed into a huge fireball that was at least five feet in width. At the same time, its color had also become an extremely dark red.

“Perfection of the Fireball Technique!”

From the black gas, the big, bald man cried in fright and started trying to recall the huge black wall that was only seventy or eighty feet away from Liu Ming.

However, at such a short range, Liu Ming would not give him this chance at all. He suddenly pushed forward with one hand and the huge fireball hit the black wall with a woosh. Its red light glowed and immediately exploded.

A huge sky-shattering, earth-trembling sound!

The scarlet flames rolled forward before transforming into a black and red cloud of flames, engulfing everything nearby.

Under the wave of heat, the white skulls, one by one, all exploded in a crazy flash.

A large half of the wall formed by black gas had already been destroyed.

Just at this moment, the shadow of a human figure flew out from the black wall, shooting backward in a flash.

A cold light flashed in Liu Ming’s eyes and two layers of inscriptions suddenly flashed on the short sword in his hand. Another azure light sword image shot out.

This time, the azure light sword image was abnormally fast. With a

blur, it cut through the waist of the shadow, cutting the shadow in two.

This made the disciples below cry out in surprise again.

However, after Liu Ming focused his attention, his expression was still serious as ever.

The human shadow that was cut apart was actually only a human-shaped skeleton.

At this moment, the black fire cloud had already died down, and the remaining black gas rolled to one side and gathered together before revealing the shadow of the big, bald man again.

However, the black robe he wore was already in pieces and even a part of the blood-colored mask on his face had fallen off, revealing a small part of a scary, jade green, shrivelled up face.

This face of his would make people shiver, unable to do anything else.

It seemed that the giant fireball from before had caused some heavy injuries to him.

“You actually also trained the Fireball Technique to Perfection! How is this possible!” The big, bald man stared at Liu Ming’s face and mumbled.

“Perhaps there are even more matters that Senior Gu has not thought of!” Liu Ming responded plainly and at the same time, he secretly checked how much Fa Li was left in his body before throwing the short sword in his hand high up in the sky. He then formed a hand sign with one hand.

Three layers of inscriptions flashed on the short azure sword and it began to spin, transforming into an azure-colored full moon. The moon grew larger and larger, showering out deep, cold light.

At the same time as this, the White Bone Scorpion transformed into a green shadow with a woosh and rushed at the big, bald man.

Before the scorpion was close to its the opponent, the stinger on its tail became a blur and shot out an attack of a dozen or so black lines.

The big, bald man did not dodge. Instead after a cold grunt, he quickly stomped the ground with one foot and the hundred or so pieces of loose

bones in front of his body rushed into the sky and suddenly merged together. They transformed into a thick bone shield that blocked anything in front of him.

After a wave of random “pu, pu” sounds, an extra dozen or so small black holes appeared on the bone shield. It forcibly blocked the lightning fast attack from the stinger.

The White Bone Scorpion gave a weird “gu, gu” cry, before twisting its body, jumping over the bone shield to attack the big man again.

However, just at this moment, a slightly abnormal expression appeared on the big man’s face. He raised his hand and pointed at the bone shield.

The bone shield suddenly broke apart without the slightest sign and countless loose bones flew at the White Bone Scorpion. They merged around the White Bone Scorpion, immediately transforming into a huge bone cage of several feet in length and width. The cage forcibly trapped the ghost inside before falling heavily onto the floor.

The White Bone Scorpion struggled furiously inside the bone cage with great surprise and constantly used its huge claws to crazily hit it, but was unable to free itself at all for a period of time.

When Liu Ming, who was currently activating the short sword Totem in mid-air, saw this situation, he was startled.

At this moment, the big bald man coldly spoke a sentence to Liu Ming.

“Junior Bai has used quite a few techniques that require a large amount of Fa Li as well as activating the Totem. Perhaps you only have enough Fa Li for one more attack!”

“Why try to slyly understand my situation, I indeed do not have much Fa Li left. However, out of the few Secret Techniques Senior used earlier, there isn’t a single one that does not also consume a large amount of Fa Li.” Liu Ming replied without batting an eye.

“Since it is so, why don’t we determine the outcome with the next attack?” The big, bald man, with a serious expression, took a deep breath and spoke slowly.

“Very well, I coincidentally also have this idea.” Liu Ming’s eyes flashed and spoke a word of agreement.

Hearing this, the big, bald man gave out a crazy laugh and he shook his long sleeves at the ground. The nearby strands of black gas flew into his robes, allowing him to recover. At the same time, the blood red mask on his face also quickly repaired and returned to how it was before, blocking the part of the exposed sinister face.

In the two eyes of the mask that had fully recovered, the green flames glowed and began burning brightly.

Afterward, the big man raised his arm and maneuvered it toward the empty space above the ground. The loose bones that were scattered across the stone stage trembled before consecutively rising up into the air, gathering in the empty space in front of him.

A series of crackling sounds rang out from him!

A fierce looking bone sword, wrapped in strands of black gas, a dozen feet or so long, appeared out of nowhere.

The large, bald man then opened his mouth and spat out a mouthful of Essence Blood. The blood became a fog of blood and fused into the bone sword.

In the next moment, the huge bone sword that was originally pale white immediately glowed blood red and lines of blood-colored inscriptions appeared on the body of the sword. The sword also began to twist and shake as if it were alive, emitting dense, cold air.

“The Baleful Blood Ghost Bone Sword! This child actually cultivated the legendary Great Bone Controlling Technique successfully, otherwise there is no way he can form this sword.”

On the jade stage, a Spirit Master, who watched unspeaking until now, finally could not control it and opened his mouth.

The other Spirit Masters, including the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader, after seeing the giant fireball Liu Ming release, had already looked at each other in disbelief. After seeing this giant bone sword appear, their



expression became even more unstable.

Gui Ruquan was completely stunned.

After seeing the weird form of the huge bone sword, Liu Ming was also very startled.

However, after reaching this point, he naturally did not have the idea of giving up at all and only fiercely activated the Fa Li in his body, pouring it all into the floating short sword.

The full moon that the Totem had transformed into mid-air was already the size of the wheel of a car and due to its high spinning speed, it began emitting weird sounds. Also, as the Fa Li was constantly poured into it, it constantly grew larger.

The big, bald man, who was originally ready, saw this scene and his heart immediately trembled. He immediately stretched out both of his arms without any hesitation, made the bone sword, which was in front of him, perpendicular to his body.

The black robes on Gu Jue transformed into a cloud of black gas with a poof and rushed forward. After wrapping around the bone sword several times, it all became black flames.

The aura of the huge, fierce looking sword increased again.

The large, bald man gave out a loud grunt and using power in both his arms, he suddenly waved the giant bone sword at the opponent, fiercely chopping at him.

A boom sound roared across the stage!

A blood-colored dragon over a hundred feet in length came flying out of the bone sword. With its mouth open and claws ready, it gave out a weird cry and rushed at Liu Ming. The empty areas it passed became blurred and twisted.

However, at the same time the big man chopped with the sword, countless cracks appeared on the ferocious looking bone sword and the mask he wore, with a crisp cracking sound, broke apart.

“Chop!”

Liu Ming gave a deep grunt and the azure, full moon in mid-air trembled, before also shooting forward with a sharp, earsplitting sound.

# Chapter 105: Intense Battles (Part Six)

A tremendous sound resonated through the air as the full moon and the Blood Dragon smashed against each other.

The cyan light flashed as the full moon severed the legendary dragon from its skull down to the center of its body. It seemed to be an unstoppable force.

However, in the next second, the entire Blood Dragon exploded and morphed into a rolling blood sea that wrapped around the cyan moon.

The full moon swivelled around and the cold cyan light that it emitted ripped the surrounding blood mist to nothing, but more of the blood mist quickly emitted a fishy smell as it continued to rumble forward.

The blood mist and the cyan light violently clashed, causing the full moon to rapidly shrink in size. In the blink of an eye, it was only the size of a wash bowl.

When the skin-headed, large man saw this scene, a feeling of satisfaction rose in his heart.

However at this time, Liu Ming let out a “hmp” and suddenly put his two hands together in a technique seal. He then thrust his hands toward the cyan full moon.

The full moon let out the sound of an explosion and suddenly disintegrated like a shattered mirror. From within, nearly one hundred minute Sword Qi's rushed out.

TL: Think of them as tiny swords but formed from energy

Under the dense cluster of Sword Qis that violently launched forward, the blood sea was penetrated so that myriads of holes appeared in it. Among these Swords Qi's, one of them rushed toward Gu Jue.

Even before these Sword Qi's made contact, the large man felt an extremely cold and sharp sensation that caused him to shiver.

In great alarm, Gu Jue attempted to perform a technique to block the

Sword Qi. However, he nearly blacked out and fell on the ground as his body had no more Fa Li left to spare. His face couldn't help but pale over and not a trace of blood color remained.

A few "peng" sounds rang out.

A black wind roared through and unexpectedly forcibly blew the Sword Qi away.

Subsequently, above Gu jue, the fat old man's figure appeared and he calmly declared,

"Bai Cong Tian wins this fight."

After he finished speaking, he appeared next to Gu Jue in a flash and swiftly smacked his body a few times.

The large man's originally incomparably pale face instantly became much more rosy.

At this time, on the stone platform, the blood mist that was violently struggling against the cyan sword ray finally dissipated. As for the cyan sword ray, only ten of them remained and they also dissipated with a shrill cry. The only thing that remained was a short sword which descended from the air.

Liu Ming expressionlessly performed a single-handed technique and the Totem transformed into cyan light that flew back to him. In a flash, it disappeared into his sleeve without a trace.

"How did you do that? I've personally checked before that the entire power of the Baleful Blood Ghost Sword is not something that a normal Totem with two or three restriction layers activated can resist." Although the big, bald man could barely stand, he still had a questioning gaze as he asked Liu Ming a question.

"I'm not too sure myself! Perhaps it was because Senior's Fa Li was not enough, unable to bring out the full power during the last attack." Liu Ming avoided directly answering the question.

Nonetheless, he was extremely clear in his heart that if they were to

truly compare the amount of Fa Li in their bodies, he was far from his opponent's level. If it were not for the opponent having expended an enormous amount of Fa Li during the early attacks, the person who would have ran out of Fa Li would definitely have been him.

However, his Fa Li was much more pure than a normal disciple's; therefore, even if his input Fa Li wasn't to the max, the techniques that seemed to not have declined in power while others were unable to discern his trick.

He then used his Fa Li without reserve for his final attack when he used the Totem to create the cyan moon.

Like what Gu Jue said, if it were another person who made that last attack, the person who would have lost would not have been the bald, large man.

A normal Late Spirit Apostle activating the third restriction layer on the short sword and ultimately releasing six or seven Sword Qi's would already be considered pretty good. However, how could this compare to Liu Ming who was able to release nearly a hundred Sword Qi's.

This accentuated the fact that the purity of his body's Fa Li was already capable of amplifying the Totem's power by nearly half.

"Hmph, as for how much power the last strike held, I am very sure!" Gu Jue was about to say something but was not able to think of a follow up question.

At this time, the fat old man had a gloomy expression as he said.

"Okay, since the competition has already ended, the two of you can go down. Don't tell me that this old man has to personally escort you?"

When Gu Jue and Liu Ming heard this, they shivered and hastily bowed. After uttering the phrase "I wouldn't dare," the two of them left the center of the elevated platform and returned to their respective banners.

However, as Liu Ming reached the halfway point to the banner, an insipid voice suddenly resounded in his ear.

“At midnight tonight, wait for me in the forest three kilometers away.”

Astonishingly, this voice belonged to the fat old man, “Martial Uncle Ruan.” This caused Liu Ming’s heart to shiver but not the slightest hint that something unusual had happened leaked into his expression. He continued walking and sat to the side of the stage.

At this moment, on the jade platform high in the air, there was only deafening silence.

“How do my fellow Juniors view the outcome of that battle?”

A long time later, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader slowly opened his mouth and asked the other Spirit Masters a question.

“It truly is a pity. Both Martial Nephew Bai and Martial Nephew Gu’s have strengths that completely surpassed my expectations. I’m afraid that the two of them can contest a spot in the top five... no, they have the strength to enter the top three!” Spirit Master Lin let out a sigh as she spoke.

She was currently in an extremely depressed mood.

Earlier, if she had known that Liu Ming harbored a hidden Spirit Body like the Heavenly Spirit Body of Intelligence, she would have risked offending Gui Ru Quan in order to recruit him to her own faction.

If she had done that, then among the ten great disciples, wouldn’t her faction hold two of the spots?

Of course, it was already too late. There was no way that Gui Ru Quan would give Liu Ming to her Dancing Ghost Faction.

“This truly is the case, especially for Martial Nephew Gu! Zeze, he unexpectedly successfully cultivated the Great Bone Controlling Technique! Junior Zhang, he seems to be a disciple of your Mysterious Glyphs Faction! Could it be that you didn’t know about this disciple’s talent?” Chu Qi wore a strange expression as he asked the middle-aged man a question.

“Gu Jue only had a Three Spiritual Pulse body and didn’t enter my

faction's as a personal disciple. Thus, I truly didn't realize that he secretly cultivated the Great Bone Controlling Technique successfully. Had I known earlier, how could I not have put more emphasis on helping him cultivate. Even if he is unable to become a Spirit Master, he definitely deserves my sect's unstinting resources because he was able to cultivate this Great Technique. It is still not too late and as long as this child can cultivate this Great Technique to a certain realm, some of the sect's sealed items will finally find a suitable master." Master Zhang let out a bitter laugh first, but it immediately turned it into excitement as he replied.

"I agree, ever since our sect's Master Six Yin founded the sect, those that were able to successfully cultivate the Great Bone Controlling Technique were limited to only three or four. As for those items, only people who cultivate this Great Technique can use them. Junior Zhang, even if Gu Jue has no method of entering the ten Core Disciples, when he returns, you must raise him well. Perhaps in the future, he will become an important fighting force for our sect." The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader had a dignified tone as he spoke.

"Senior, don't worry. When this Large Competition ends, I will personally take him as my personal disciple and definitely help him cultivate the Great Bone Controlling Technique even further." Spirit Master Zhang instantly replied.

"Very good! Junior Gui, Martial Nephew Bai was also extremely shocking during this battle. Not only did he condense a Wind Blade Technique Seal, but he also managed to cultivate the Fireball Technique to Perfection. It seems that it really is the Heavenly Spirit Body of Intelligence. Moreover, its level shouldn't be any lower than an adequate intelligence Spirit Body. However, why was the final full moon attacked created by his short sword so familiar. Was this a Totem you bestowed upon him?" The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader turned his head and inquisitively asked Gui Ru Quan a question.

"I also did not know that Cong Tian managed to condense the Fireball Technique Seal. As for that Totem, it wasn't me who gave it to him. If I

guess correctly, it should be Heavenly Moon Sect's Fellow Yu's Cyan Moon Sword Totem. When Fellow Yu perished under the Spirit Scarlet Serpent Dragon's mouth, this child must have been nearby." Gui Ru Quan forcibly quelled the excitement garnered from Liu Ming's victory and hastily replied. Simultaneously, he also silently cursed Liu Ming for unexpectedly hiding so many things from him.

"I understand, it seems that his luck is not small. I even know a bit about this Cyan Moon Sword's history. Originally, it was not Heavenly Moon Sect's. Thus, since it has been retrieved by my sect's disciple, it naturally is a totem of our sect. If Heavenly Moon Sect were to dispatch people to inquire about this matter, you can tell them that." The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader came to a sudden realization and immediately replied with a laugh.

"Then Junior thanks Sect Leader in place of that child." When Gui Ru Quan heard the leader's words, he was instantly delighted.

It was reasonable to say that this Totem which was picked up by Liu Ming belonged to no master. Whoever managed to pick it up would not easily give it to another person. However, if Heavenly Moon Sect were to find that Liu Ming now possessed the item, a messy situation would naturally arise.

Afterall, this was a well-known Totem; Heavenly Moon Sect was also one of the kingdom's stronger sects and naturally would not easily let the matter go.

However, since the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader had just spoken on about the matter, he was naturally using his status as Sect Leader to take all problems brought about by the Cyan Moon Sword. Therefore, Liu Ming no longer had to fear the consequences of using the Totem.

It was clear that Liu Ming's performance caused the Sect Leader to start paying much more attention to him.

"During this Large Competition, I didn't expect this many disciples with hidden talents would appear. I was originally a bit worried about our sect's next generation being inferior to the other sects. However, I can



now be much more relieved.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader laughed as he spoke to the others.

“It is Martial Ancestor’s blessing that caused this many outstanding disciples in our sect.”

“Perhaps in the not too distant future, our sect will flourish once more.”

The other Spirit Masters were somewhat excited as they spoke with each other.

The amount of disciples who displayed outstanding characteristics during this Large Competition truly did surpass their expectations. It was not something other Large Competitions could even come close to.

“However, we cannot become too excited too early. I’ve heard that a few incredible genius disciples have appeared in Heavenly Moon Sect and the few other sects. I’ve also recently heard that Heavenly Moon Sect discovered a disciple with a Sword Communication Spirit Body. Sword cultivators are existences incredibly hard to deal with. If they are able to possess a matching Sword Body, they will be terrifying beyond imagination. I’m afraid that this Heavenly Moon Sect disciple’s future accomplishments will not be inferior to the legendary Heavenly Spiritual disciples. Among the Wind Fire Sect’s new disciples, I’ve heard that a genius disciple possessing a Fire and Water Nine Spiritual Pulse has appeared. As for Blood River Hall and Nine Orifice Mountain, although no news about them has been released, I believe that they do not lack talented disciples. Thus, in preparation for the Life and Death Trials this time, the top ten disciples of this Large Competition must be continuously pushed for the following year. We cannot let our sect’s ranking in the Life and Death Trials continue to fall.” The smile on the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader’s face disappeared.

TL: Earth Spiritual Pulse = 12, Heavently = 15 pulses

# Chapter 106: News

When the other Spirit Masters heard this, they all became serious and replied, "Yes!"

"Okay, since it's already quite late, I will announce that the top ten Core Disciples battle will take place tomorrow." The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader nodded his head. He was about to fly from the jade platform and announce the rules of the top ten competition that was to take place tomorrow.

However, at this time, from a certain direction, the shrill sound of air being split apart sounded as the thick mist around the mountain spread apart to reveal a five-colored strange bird that was dozens of feet in length. Its head seemed like that of a vulture yet its tail feathers were incredibly long and it had a pair of blood red, abnormally large claws.

As soon as the bird appeared, it made a beeline for the mountain and made the disciples who discovered it fall into slight disarray.

"There is no need to panic. This is a Spirit Bird of your Martial Ancestor Yan." Seeing this odd bird, the Sect Leader was also quite surprised but he immediately shouted angrily at the disciplines who were making a fuss.

His voice boomed across the mountain and the disciples under him calmed down. They then used gazes mixed with fear and respect as they looked at the five-colored strange bird.

Everyone knew that there was an extremely powerful Martial Ancestor in the sect.

However, the Martial Ancestor rarely showed his face in public and even the Spirit Masters in the sect had only seen him a couple of times. Thus, his royal identity in the sect was shrouded with mystery.

In moments, the strange bird arrived above the jade platform. After circling around in the air once, one of its originally tightly closed claws loosened. From within the claw, a green jade slit fell out. Afterward, without pausing, it flew back in the direction it came from.

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader showed some surprise in his face and he beckoned with his hand. Instantly, the jade slit shot into his hand and the Sect Leader immediately put the slit to his forehead.

Moments later, the green jade slit started to flash lights and the surprised look on the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader flew off, replacing it was an extremely shocked expression.

When the others saw this, they could not help but look at each other in anticipation and surprise.

“Sect Leader, what has happened?” When Chu Qi saw that the Sect Leader had finally moved the jade slit away from his forehead, he couldn’t help but ask.

“Martial Uncle Yan has given his orders. There will be no ranking competition tomorrow. The top ten Core Disciple will immediately go to the Suppressing Dragon Island.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader’s face turned dark for a moment before saying words that shocked everyone.

“What? Why would Martial Uncle Yan make such order and have Qian Er and them go to the Suppressing Dragon Island?” Chu Qi asked in extreme surprise.

“Martial Uncle had just received a letter from Master Ming Yu of the Nine Enchantment Mountain. The letter stated that while the two Crystal Level Elders of Heavenly Moon Sect and Hall of Blood were chasing the Demon Dragon, the volcano for the Suppressing Dragon Island erupted and they found the entrance to an unnamed secret realm. The entrance has already decomposed and now only Spirit Apostles can enter. In addition, the Crystal Level Ancestors are doing their best to stop the entrance from completely decomposing and can not hold out for much longer. Thus, Martial Uncle Yan discussed the situation with others and decided to make the Life and Death Trials much earlier. The top ten disciples of each sect will go into the secret realm and depending on how many treasures they get, their ranking will be determined from that. Thus, we don’t have any time to waste and must bring the ten disciples to the Suppressing Dragon Island.” As the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader

spoke more, he became more and more excited until a frenzied heat was in his eyes.

“What? They have found the entrance to an unknown secret realm!”

“How big is the realm?”

“Has anyone entered?”

“Are there any restrictions placed?”

.....

Chu Qi, Gui Ru Quan, and the Spirit Master Lei all exclaimed in surprise after hearing the news. However, with their excitement was a hint of fear.

It was no wonder they were like this!

This so called “secret realm” actually was an undiscovered secret space. Portions of it were made from natural elements while the other portions were forcibly created by a person.

Inside the realms created by nature, there might be a few Spirit Ingredients and Spirit Stone type natural treasures. The danger would be comparatively less by a bit for these realms. The other realms that were made made mostly consisted of a few treasures left by formidable ancestors. However, it was also extremely dangerous because it was unknown how many fearsome traps, that could obliterate someone into nothingness, were in place in those realms.

No matter what kind of secret realm it was, if someone were to reap a majority of the rewards in the realm and return, it would bring the entire sect and even a couple more sects, endless profits. Once in the past, there was a small sect that managed to obtain an exceptionally powerful nameless Cultivation Method through luck. From there, its strength underwent rapid growth and, after a few hundred years, it proclaimed itself the hegemony of a few neighboring kingdoms.

Of course, luck and danger existed side by side and in the past. Another time there was a large sect that tried to monopolize a secret realm. They

sent their entire sect's force into the secret realm, but their entire army ultimately perished and they ceased to exist in the cultivation world.

Currently, the amount of secret realms that have been discovered were extremely few; there were even a few entrances to secret realms that appeared for a short while before disappearing without a trace. Some entrances to secret realms were stringent in regards to their method of opening them and the length of time they could be open for. Furthermore, some of the traps in the secret realm were exceptionally mysterious and were not something regular sects could break apart, forcing people to feel hopeless.

However, even if this were the case, every time a new secret realm was discovered, it would bring about a battle-storm of blood.

Myriads of sects would expend a lot of resources for this new secret realm.

This time, the entrance to the new secret realm was collapsing which meant there was no way any sect would be able to monopolize the realm. If it were the other way around, the Heavenly Moon Sect and Blood River Hall wouldn't have informed Barbarian Ghost Sect and the other sects; instead, they would have quietly explored the realm on their own.

"Fellow Juniors, I'm not too sure of what they're asking for. Master Yan only briefly outlined the situation. Currently, for contingency sake, he has already gone to Suppressing Dragon Island ahead of time. Therefore, tomorrow morning, I will personally bring this Large Competition's top ten disciples there. Senior Huang, Junior Zhang, the two of you should be quite knowledgeable about Formation Traps so you will accompany me tomorrow. The rest of you Martial Brothers should stay and defend the sect and quietly wait for news. I am merely following Master Yan's instructions so each of you should perform your own task properly. In the short amount of time that follows, you absolutely must not leak this affair to others." The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader let out a bitter laugh in reply before hastily giving instructions.

"Yes, Sect Leader. The two of us will immediately go back and prepare.

We will definitely not miss such an important even.” After hearing the instructions, Spirit Master Huang and the middle-aged Spirit Master Zhang, were naturally excited as they replied.

Chu Qi, Spirit Master Lin, and the others were somewhat unwilling to let such an opportunity go, but after hearing the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader bring up Master Yan’s magnanimous name, they could only helplessly listen to the instructions.

At this time, the Barbarian Ghost Sect “eader flew off the jade stage and announced in a loud voice at the disciples, “The ten great disciples of this Large Competition have already been determined, respectively they are Yang Qian, Feng Chan... Bai Chongtian, and Lei Zhen. However, due to a certain reason, the challenging battles among the ten great disciples will temporarily be postponed. Moreover, starting tomorrow, the sect will transiently close its doors for a month. During this period of time, unless one has received a sect order, he or she is not allowed to leave the sect. Violators will immediately be expelled from the sect. Okay, aside from Yang Qian and the other top ten disciples, the others can return to their dwellings first.”

After listening to the announcement, the thousands of Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples below were all gobsmacked and baffled. Nonetheless, after the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader’s strict gaze swept over them, they didn’t dare express even the slightest dissent.

After the ensuing departure of everyone from the stone mountain, soon the peak of the mountain only contained Liu Ming and the ten disciples. Most of them had faces full of confusion as they looked at each other.

“You all don’t need to be so shocked. There is naturally a reason why I asked you to stay behind. The situation is like this: Your Master Yan...” The Barbarian Ghost Sect leader slowly described the general outline of the secret realm and the shifting of the Life and Death Trials to an earlier date to them.

Liu Ming and the others were naturally dumbstruck when they heard this.

“Since the situation happened so suddenly, there fundamentally isn’t enough time to let you continue the challenging battles. You must make your way to the secret realm entrance as fast as possible. In the secret realm, you and the other sects’ disciples will proceed with the Life and Death Trials that should technically happen in a year. The achievement of the trials this time will also determine your ranking on the Lunar Monument. When we arrive there, Master Yan will explain the concrete rules. What you must do now is go back and properly preserve your energy. Tomorrow morning, we will leave together. As long as the sect reaps hefty rewards during this Life and Death Trial in the secret realm, you will definitely be heavily rewarded. Another thing is this information is currently a secret so you may not divulge it to anyone else.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader was extremely serious as he spoke.

After Liu Ming and the others finished listening, they all had flashes of understanding. Although, they were each thinking different things, they naturally bowed and expressed their approval.

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader nodded his head before immediately turning around and flying back to the jade platform where he continued to discuss the secret realm situation with the other Spirit Masters.

The top ten disciples proceeded to successively depart the stone mountain.

Half a minute later, Liu Ming had returned to his dwelling and he began pondering the situation regarding the secret realm.

The appearance of such an event truly surpassed his expectations.

He had originally thought that he could slowly spend the next year cultivating before participating in the exceptionally dangerous Life and Death Trials. It had never occurred to him that the trials would unexpectedly be shifted earlier; moreover, it would take place in a secret realm that could hold unknown disasters as well as fortunes.

Within the secret realm, Cultivation Methods were most likely secondary. Even more important was a person’s ability to sense and deal with dangerous situations. If this genuinely was the case, then the years

on Savage Island, where he experienced life and death fights, would put him in a slightly stronger position in this aspect.

As Liu Ming thought of the few cultivators in records who obtained heavenly treasures in the secret realm and proceeded to have their cultivation improve by leaps and bounds, his heart couldn't help but palpitate.

Although the various treasures obtained in the secret realm would be handed over to the sect as per convention, as long as one kept a small portion, he or she would most likely be able to exchange it for materials to become a Spirit Master.

As for the potential life-threatening dangers in the secret realm, he himself had experienced an unknown number of situations where his life hung by a thread. Thus, he didn't care too much about this matter.

“Seeking riches in the midst of danger” and “The more one is afraid of death, the faster he or she will die”; these were things that he was more clear about than anyone since his childhood.

Large risks were something he was indifferent about. He only had to look at the benefits he could potentially garner and determine if it was worth risking his life.

Liu Ming silently pondered awhile and ultimately didn't find any reason to evade the Life and Death Trials this time. Instantly, his expression relaxed and he closed his eyes. He began to wordlessly recover the Fa Li lost during the Large Competition.



# Chapter 107: Night Meeting

After midnight came about, Liu Ming opened his eyes and silently left his dwelling. He proceeded to fly away from the Nine Infant Mountain.

In the time it takes to have a cup of tea, he descended in a forest that was three kilometers away from the Barbarian Ghost Sect's main peak.

In an open field not too far away from him, a fat old man, "Martial Uncle Ruan", was standing there with his hands behind his back.

"This disciple greets Master!" Liu Ming bowed and displayed an extremely deferential expression.

"You arrived quite fast but we still have to wait a short while!" Martial Uncle Ruan said indifferently.

"What? Did Martial Uncle invite someone else?" Liu Ming was slightly startled.

"Yes. He is someone who also cultivates the Dark Bone Method, just like you. Of course, he started cultivating a few years before you so his insights to the Dark Bone Method are something that you can't compare with." The fat old man let out a sudden laugh while he replied.

When Liu Ming heard this, he was startled, but not a trace of his shock appeared on his face as he nodded his head.

After waiting a short while, a sonic boom resounded in the nearby sky. Another gray cloud descended, and from atop, someone jumped off.

"It's you."

When this person saw Liu Ming's features, his face instantly changed. Unexpectedly, it was the large, bald man who had nearly lost his life during the fight with Liu Ming earlier in the day.

"So it was Senior Gu; this truly is a coincidence." Liu Ming was also very astonished, but a trace of understanding soon surfaced.

It was no wonder why he had vaguely felt an indescribable familiar feeling during the day. The reason was because Gu Jue's Cultivation

Method was the same as his.

“The person who you said also cultivated the Dark Bone Method turned out to be Junior Bai huh...” Gu Jue’s face turned somewhat unsightly as he turned his head to Martial Uncle Yuan to speak.

“Although you started cultivating the Dark Bone Method a few years before him, after experiencing the competition earlier today, you should understand that your strength is inferior to this Junior Bai.” The fat old man let out a laugh.

“Hmph, that’s because I didn’t have a Totem. If I possessed a Totem, why would I have bothered using the Baleful Blood Ghost Bone Sword which consumes a large amount of Fa Li? Furthermore, I wouldn’t have been so easily defeated.” Gu Jue rubbed his bald head and seemed somewhat frustrated as he spoke.

From listening to the tone of his voice, it seemed that he wasn’t very respectful to this fat old man.

When Liu Ming saw this, a trace of a smile appeared on his face while he came to a slight understanding.

“Junior Bai’s Totem was not bestowed by the sect; it was retrieved by his own means. Okay, enough nonsense. You should know the reason I called you here for.” A sudden darkness emerged on the fat old man’s face as he spoke.

“You want to ask me about my Great Controlling Bone Technique, right? The effect of controlling ghost bones was something that I inadvertently discovered after experimenting. Otherwise, during the Large Competition, I wouldn’t harbor any thoughts of entering the top ten disciples. However, I didn’t expect to be obstructed by Junior Bai who also cultivated the Dark Bone Method. Nonetheless, this isn’t too bad either. Others have mistaken my cultivation technique to be the so-called “Great Controlling Bone Technique”, therefore in the future, I can enjoy the feeling of being heavily valued.” Gu Jue said in an unperturbed manner.

“Hmph, did you really believe that you were the first one to discover that the Dark Bone Method could control ghost bones? As long as one

cultivates the Dark Bone Method to the fourth level of maturity, anybody who cultivates this method would discover this effect.” Martial Uncle Ruan let out a harrumph in reply.

“What? I wasn’t the first to discover this? Why haven’t I seen anyone display this ability in the past?” After Gu Jue heard this, he was overcome with shock.

Liu Ming became even more dumbstruck.

The opponent’s ability to control ghost bones unexpectedly was the ability obtained by cultivating the Dark Bone Method to the fourth level. If this was the case, once he started cultivating the method at the fourth level, he would also possess this ability.

“When you returned, didn’t you feel an incomparably aching feeling in all of your bones? It wasn’t until now that they returned to normal right?” Martial Uncle Ruan didn’t directly reply instead his face got more gloomy as he asked a question.

“That really did happen! So what? As long as I rest a few days, nothing should be wrong.” Gu Jue vaguely felt that something was amiss, but he braced himself as he gathered his courage to ask a question.

“If that genuinely was the case, then I would have no need to be worried. This matter was something that I forgot to inform you about in the previous few days when I was in secluded cultivation. Among the previous disciples who cultivated the Dark Bone Method, the reason why some people didn’t use this ability was because they hadn’t properly consolidated the fourth stage of the method. If used before the fourth stage, the ability will cause both their corporeal body and their life to take severe damage. After all, the ability will only come into fruition after one cultivates his corporeal body to a certain stage. Your reckless use of this ability today, further equipped with the condensing of the Baleful Blood Ghost Bone Sword, will most likely shorten your lifespan by ten years. If something seriously wrong were to happen to you, how could I explain myself to your mother?” The fat old man’s face changed and he suddenly began chiding him in a low voice.

TL: Corporeal body = muscles etc.

“It’s only a reduction of my lifespan by ten years. It’s not a big deal. As for my mother, there’s no way for her to know about this matter. After all, if I didn’t cultivate the Dark Bone Method imparted by uncle at that time, there’s no way that I could have lived to today.” The large, bald man went silent for a while and looked at Liu Ming once before forcibly laughing in reply.

“As long as you understand, then it’s fine. That day, I was forced into a helpless situation where I could only impart the Dark Bone Method to save your life. It wasn’t for you to use in an intense fight to obtain victory. On another note, this Dark Bone Method has many flaws and if you cannot solve them, you will not be able to enter the Spirit Master realm. Why don’t you go back first. I still have some things to discuss with Martial Nephew Bai, alone.” The fat old man’s expression finally softened as he gave an instruction.

This time, the big, bald man was much more obedient. After nodding his head, he summoned his cloud and flew away.

Liu Ming was somewhat baffled as he stood in his original position.

“You should now understand my relationship with Gu Jue; there’s no need for me to further explain, right?” The fat old man’s gaze ultimately rested on Liu Ming as he calmly asked a question.

“Disciple naturally understands Senior Gu and Martial Uncle’s relationship. However, regarding the Dark Bone Method’s defect, what’s the matter with this? Martial Uncle wouldn’t deliberately mention it in front of me, right?” Liu Ming let out a bitter laugh before asking a question.

“Hehe, I knew that Martial Nephew was a smart person. Truthfully, the reason why I called the two of you here together was to conveniently get you two to know each other. After all, the amount of people in the sect who cultivate this method is limited to only you two. Moreover, I should naturally inform you of a few matters regarding this method and explain a few things, since you have cultivated the Dark Bone Method to near the

fourth level. Otherwise, if you were to rashly break into the Spirit Master realm, that could very well be the day of your death.” The fat old man let out a laugh as he spoke.

“I would like to hear Martial Uncle’s guidance!” Liu Ming’s heart jumped.

Ever since he realized that the first few levels of the Dark Bone Method didn’t contain any bottlenecks, he vaguely felt that something was amiss.

If this Cultivation Method was this great, the sect would have definitely spread the method around for everyone. Why would Martial Uncle Ruan pass it on to him in such secrecy?

“Let me tell you about the Dark Bone Method’s origin first. This method was fortuitously retrieved by our sect’s Six Yin Master; that old geezer expended a large amount of effort but ultimately only managed to interpret the first three levels of this method. A small portion of the fourth level was interpreted by one of our sect’s other ancestors; the other large portion was interpreted by me after tens of years of meticulous exertion. Twenty years ago, in order to test this method I began to impart it to numerous Three Spiritual Pulse disciples to secretly cultivate. These disciples were like you – most of them reached the peak stage of the Late Spirit Apostle realm. However, when they attempted to advance into the Spirit Master realm, their bodies exploded and they all died without exception.” When the fat old man reached this point, he suddenly stopped.

“Their bodies exploded and they died!” When Liu Ming heard this, his face underwent a drastic change.

“You don’t need to be worried. Since I have these failed experiments, I naturally managed to pinpoint the reason why they failed. A few years ago, I discovered that a tenacious mental strength was the prerequisite to cultivating this method; otherwise, I would not have imparted this method to you.” The fat old man indifferently responded.

“If this is the case, then there has never been anyone who cultivated the Dark Bone Method and advanced into the Spirit Master realm. Even if my

mental strength is slightly stronger, I'm afraid that Martial Uncle Yuan has no way of guaranteeing my advancement into the Spirit Master realm." Liu Ming's mouth contained a bitter feeling as he said this.

"You don't have to worry. The fourth layer of the Dark Bone Method I imparted to you has been altered many times to perfection. Although I am unable to guarantee that everything will happen perfectly. However, even if you fail to advance into the Spirit Master realm with your tenacious mental strength, the backlash should only damage a bit of your Fa Li and Yuan Qi; it shouldn't be enough to take your life. After all, the reason why the bodies of previous disciples would explode largely lay in the fact that their mental strength was insufficient to control sharp rises in Fa Li when advancing a stage. Moreover, if I am guessing correctly, the purity of your body's Fa Li is something far from what a normal disciple can compare to. If this truly is the case, then controlling your body's Fa Li will be even easier. Thus, there shouldn't be that big of a problem." The fat old man let out a slight laugh.

"How does Martial Uncle know about the purity of my Fa Li?" A trace of surprise flashed across Liu Ming's face.

"The Cyan Moon Sword Totem in your hands was something that I came across years ago during a Treasure Inspection Convention. I am very aware of the power it can exhibit when the third restriction layer is expedited. Aside from your body's Fa Li being more pure than a normal disciple's, I couldn't find any explanation for the last strike you used to defeat Gu Jue." The fat old man nonchalantly said.

"I see! I only have one last question now. Why did Martial Uncle choose tonight to explain everything? If you were to let Martial Nephew just cultivate it in a carefree manner, wouldn't that be much easier and simpler? Martial Uncle better not cite a worried conscience as your excuse." After Liu Ming nodded his head, he blinked his eyes and asked a question.

"Finding my conscience? Why would it be because of such a senseless reason? Martial Nephew Bai, do you feel that if I had not imparted the Dark Bone Method to you, you could have cultivated to the peak stage of

the Late Spirit Apostle realm without any bottlenecks as a Three Spiritual Pulse disciple? You must know that the majority of regular Three Spiritual Pulse disciples hit a wall when they are a Middle Spirit Apostle, and sometimes even when they are a Beginning Spirit Apostle! Those that genuinely managed to cultivate to the Late Spirit Apostle stage are extremely sparse. Moreover, according to the original text of the Dark Bone Method's record, as long as one's Cultivation Method is suitable and one possesses ample preparation, the chances of breaking into the Spirit Master realm are something other methods are far from achieving. The true reason as to why I chose tonight to inform you, was because I wanted to give you the next stages of the Dark Bone Method along with my notes that I have made over the years about the Green Death Language. Afterward, I will be going into true secluded cultivation and not coming out until I either become a Middle Spirit Master or die." The fat elder sighed and told Liu Ming everything.

# Chapter 108: Departure

“Martial Uncle Ruan, even if you want to undergo secluded cultivation to break through your bottleneck, you do not need to give such things to me.” After hearing what he had said, Liu Ming was very surprised and could not help but speak with suspicion.

“The secluded cultivation this time is different from times before. When I was young, my meridians were once injured by a great opponent, so originally, my level of cultivation would have been stuck at the level of a Beginning Spirit Master. However, I discovered a method that allowed me to break through the bottleneck of the beginning level when I started to understand the Dark Bone Method. This method is very dangerous and if I forcefully attempt to break through, perhaps there is only a one in three chance that I can come back alive. As for the remaining two-thirds, I will be like the other Spirit Apostles practicing the Dark Bone Method that tried to break through the Spirit Master bottleneck, exploding and then dying. The Dark Bone Method and the Green Death language is the product of several tens of years worth of hard work on my part, I don't want it to be lost without a sound. After all, I never accepted any personal disciples. Originally, Jue Er was not a bad candidate but it was a pity that his mental power was only average and he will be unable to break through from a Spirit Apostle to a Spirit Master. Therefore, only you are left as the best candidate to inherit this. If I can break through to Middle Spirit Master, then everything will be fine. If I do not survive, all you need to do is to make sure these things are not lost and left without an inheritor.” The fat elder explained matters as such and revealed a sincere feeling to his words for the first time.

“Martial Uncle, worry not. I will definitely use all my power to achieve this.” Liu Ming quickly thought a few times, and after determining that there were no other problems, he easily agreed.

“Very well, this jade chit is handmade by me. All the information is recorded in it. You can first place it on your forehead and scan through it with your consciousness to check if there are still any problems.”



After saying this, the fat elder produced a milky white jade chit from his sleeve. He rubbed it with his fingers a few times as if he was unwilling to part with it, before handing it over.

Liu Ming bent over and accepted the jade chit, before placing it on his forehead.

A wave of consciousness swept through the chit and suddenly, Liu Ming's head felt heavy. Immediately, a purple ball and a white ball appeared in his mind.

As soon as Liu Ming's consciousness touched the purple ball, a countless number of green ancient words came flying out and lined up together to form quite a few pages of text.

This was the Dark Bone Method in its original ancient Green Death Language form. However, when Liu Ming glanced over it, he suddenly paused.

Then, when his consciousness touched the white ball, the text that consisted of only the Green Death Language became mixed with ordinary words.

This was Martial Uncle Ruan's interpretation that was obtained after many years of research.

Liu Ming only skimmed through both versions before removing his consciousness from the jade slit.

"Martial Uncle Yuan, why does this Dark Bone Method only have five pieces? If I remember correctly, shouldn't the entire method contain nine levels?" Liu Ming asked in a surprised manner.

"Our sect founder only found the first five layers of the cultivation method. The remaining four levels are located in an unknown location. However, the first four levels are actually enough. It took me ten years of hard work to interpret the fourth level. If Martial Nephew Bai is able to interpret the fifth layer's meaning then you can be considered a genius in understanding the Green Death Language. When you actually become a Spirit Master and have no need to continue cultivating the Dark Bone

Method, then you can exchange it for another high-ranking suitable method. The first four levels of the Dark Bone Method will have provided you a fairly sturdy foundation. If you do feel like going down this path then the Refining Corpse and Baleful Yin faction's respective high level method will not be bad choices." The fat old man calmly replied.

"I see now. Back then, when Martial Uncle told me I had no need to change to another method, it seems that you were trying to deceive me." After Liu Ming heard the fat old man's words, he couldn't help but grin.

"Haha, this... at the time, if I had not said that, then I'm afraid that I would have had to waste a lot more words convincing you to choose this Cultivate Method." The old man let out a laugh but the expression on his face didn't change in the slightest.

Liu Ming listened but could only remain silent.

"That's right, if I don't succeed in becoming a Middle Spirit Master and you manage to become a Spirit Master, then if you have the ability to, help me take care of Gu Jue. He can be considered one of my few relatives in this world." The fat old man's face became solemn.

"If I truly possesses the ability, then it is only natural." Liu Ming was slightly startled as he replied.

"Very good, you still have some time now, so if you had any complications when you were cultivating the Dark Bone Method, then you can ask me right now. I will do my best to answer your questions." A trace of a smile appeared on the old man's face after he heard Liu Ming's reply.

"Thank you very much master. I actually have a few places in the Dark Bone Method where I have yet to comprehend. One of them is..." Liu Ming was overjoyed and immediately started asking away.

An hour later, Liu Ming finally departed the forest on his cloud with a satisfied expression. He flew toward the Nine Infants Mountain.

The fat old man remained in the forest and he slightly squinted his eyes as he stared at the gray cloud slowly flying away.

After an unknown length of time passed, he insipidly said, "Sect Leader,

since you have been here for such a long time, why are you still hiding?”

After his voice faded, his gaze shifted and turned towards a large neighboring tree.

“Junior Ruan is worthy of being Master Yan’s personal disciple. As I expected, this sort of a concealment method cannot escape your attention.” An indifferent voice came from the large tree. A figure flashed and from the tree, a yellow-robed old man walked out. A trace of a smile hung on his face; it actually was the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader.

“Sect Leader saw me give the item to Martial Nephew Bai but didn’t stop me. It seems that you agree with my decision.” The fat old man let out a chuckle.

“Since Martial Nephew Bai is the only disciple cultivating the Dark Bone Method who has a chance of becoming a Spirit Master, coupled with the fact that he only received a duplicate because the original text of the Dark Bone Method is still in the Scripture Pavilion, I naturally had no reason to stop this. Truthfully, when I saw that Martial Nephew Bai had become a Late Spirit Apostle in such a short amount of time with merely a Three Spiritual Pulse, I had already guessed that he was cultivating the Dark Bone Method. The fact that Martial Nephew Gu is, unexpectedly, your sister’s son and that cultivating the Dark Bone Method to the late stage gives one the ability similar to the Great Controlling Bone Technique, surprised me. I’ve never heard of these things before.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader let out a sigh as he spoke.

“You had better not use Gu Jue. Just now, you also heard that his current cultivation isn’t enough to use the controlling bone ability; using it will cause him to lose a large chunk of his lifeforce.” The fat old man immediately spoke in a vigilant manner.

“Haha, Junior doesn’t need to worry. Now that I know about Gu Jue’s actual circumstance, giving those few sect items to him to control will leave me uneasy. However, if Martial Nephew Bai is able to become a Spirit Master, letting him use those items shouldn’t be too big of an issue.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader replied in a composed manner.

“Mhm, if Martial Nephew Bai is able to become a Spirit Master, then the problem of his physical body crumbling will not happen. Giving him the items to use is rather fitting.” This time, the fat old man expressed his concurrence and nodded his head.

“Very good! Although finding a Three Spiritual Pulse disciple with a strong mental strength isn’t easy, if we actually put our hearts to it, we should be able to find a few. As long as Martial Nephew Bai is able to use the Dark Bone Method to smoothly become a Spirit Master, then I will report this to Master Yan and have him particularly look for these sorts of disciples to cultivate this method. If this is the case, Martial Brother can be considered to have done great merit for our sect.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader rubbed his hands and laughed as he proceeded to talk.

“Do you truly believe that any random Three Spiritual Pulse disciple with a slightly stronger mental strength will be able to use the Dark Bone Method to become a Spirit Master?” When the fat old man heard the Sect Leader’s words, an odd expression appeared on his face.

“What, don’t tell me that the words Junior spouted earlier were lies?” When the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader heard this, he was slightly startled.

“They can’t be considered lies. I only downplayed the danger of when one breaks into the Spirit Master Realm. With his current situation, if he fails to break into the Spirit Master Realm, then I’m afraid there is a good chance of his body exploding, causing him to ultimately perish. Moreover, the mental strength he possesses is far stronger than you actually think it is. When I initially examined him, I found that Martial Nephew Bai’s mental strength was double a normal disciple’s. Furthermore, after these recent years of cultivation, the gap has only grown wider.”

“What—? Double the strength?!” This time, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader couldn’t help but cry out involuntarily.

“Hehe, Senior Leader should understand why I said this right? If it weren’t for this, then I’m afraid I wouldn’t be able to guarantee even the slightest chance of him surviving when he breaks into the Spirit Master

realm. Of course, if his mental strength were even stronger and his Fa Li was even more pure, then the probability of him becoming a Spirit Master would rise more.” The fat old man said with a laugh.

“I understand. It seems that Junior really didn’t find any random person to cultivate this Dark Bone Method. We can only temporarily quarantine this and wait until we find another suitable person before talking about it again.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader went silent for a while before nodding his head in disappointment.

“If it weren’t for this, then I would have already reported it to Teacher. I would have no need to cover it up until now.” The fat old man carried an indifferent attitude.

To the side, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader could only bitterly smile.

“That’s right, Junior Ruan, are you really going to enter secluded cultivation to break through into the Middle Liquid Level realm?” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader was somewhat worried as he asked a question.

TL: Liquid = Spirit Master

“I have already discussed this matter with Master. Although I still have twenty to thirty years left in my lifespan, I can only maintain the peak condition of my body in these next few years. Once this period of time passes, even if I take a risk to break into the next cultivation realm, it will be useless. As long as I succeed, I will have another hundred years to live. I have a thirty-percent chance of succeeding so it should be worth it to take the risk.” The fat old man’s expression turned serious as he replied.

“Since Junior truly has a firm resolution, then I will not speak any further. I can only hope for Junior Ruan’s success during the next few years of secluded cultivation, allowing your cultivation to undergo a large improvement.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader seemed to see the fat old man’s determination and instantly stopped trying to dissuade him any further.

In the proceeding time, the affair between the two men ended with the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader talking about leading the group into the

secret realm before each of them hastily bid the other goodbye and left the forest.

On the morning of the second day, the black gas in the air above the main gate surged around. Inside the black gas, one could vaguely make out the body of an enormous bone boat that was about two hundred feet long.

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader, Spirit Master Huang, Spirit Master Zhang, Liu Ming, and the other top ten Core Disciples surprisingly stood in the boat.

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader gave a command and the bone boat immediately shuddered. It proceeded to fly toward the distant horizon at breakneck speed while surrounded by the surging black gas.

# Chapter 109: Martial Ancestor Yan

During the journey, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader, along with the other Spirit Masters, ceaselessly discussed information pertaining to the secret realm.

To the side, Liu Ming and the other ten Core Disciples harmonized their breathing and cultivated in their respective spots on the bone boat. They didn't have any intentions of talking with each other.

Thinking about it, this was a completely normal occurrence!

Those who were able to kill their way into the top ten disciples would naturally have arrogant attitudes and would find it beneath their dignity to collude with others.

However, Liu Ming only had to turn his head slightly to see, the somewhat far away, Gao Chong coldly staring at him from time to time.

Faced with this situation, Liu Ming didn't have a trace of surprise on his face. Nonetheless, a vestige of killing intent couldn't help but surface in his heart.

If there was a chance within the secret realm that allowed him to get rid of this inconvenience, then he definitely wouldn't be courteous.

This bone boat was clearly a flying type Totem and it was definitely not a low quality one. It seemed to be even faster than the Flying Jade Spirit Boat that Liu Ming previously rode on.

While flying, the surging black gas continuously expedited the boat, causing it to travel over hundreds of feet in a flash.

Seven days later, the bone boat brought the group above the lake that Liu Ming visited before. However, after flying for a little bit longer, the original spot harbored by the Suppressing Dragon Island was now completely empty. The island had vanished without a trace. Instead, in its place was an ash gray volcano that protruded from the bottom of the lake.

This volcano peak was only about three hundred feet tall, towering over

the lake. Moreover, an ashen red smog continuously rose into the air from the volcanic crater.

On the surface of the lake, neighboring the volcanic crater, a plethora of various-sized floating reefs – that were composed of previously spouted volcanic ash – seemed to make up a bunch of small islands. The smallest reef was only a few tens of feet in size, while the largest was thousands of feet wide.

Among them, the largest floating reefs contained a few simple stone temples constructed on top of them. Furthermore, there were a few people moving about on the reefs.

With a rumbling sound, the bone boat found a floating reef to descend onto.

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader brought Liu Ming and the others off the bone boat.

“Fellow Barbarian Ghost Sect members, you guys are late. Heavenly Moon Sect, Blood River Hall and my Nine Enlightenment Mountain disciples have already arrived. Only Firestorm Way’s people have yet to arrive.” From a large adjacent floating reef, a cyan gas flew over. In a flash, it arrived in the air above Liu Ming and the others. From within, a cyan-robed male, with a face like crown jade, spoke to the group below him with a slight smile on his face.

“So it’s Nine Enlightenment Mountain’s Fellow Zhao Hei Hu. We aren’t as close to this place as your Nine Enlightenment Mountain is; we must naturally expend more time to get here. As for Heavenly Moon Sect and Blood River Hall, since this secret realm was first discovered by them, it is only natural for them to be here earlier than us.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader examined the green-robed male in midair before nodding his head and speaking.

“That is true. Actually, my sect’s disciples only arrived here a day before yours. As such, my sect leader would like to invite you various Fellows over, to collaboratively discuss the affair regarding the secret realm.” Zhao Hei Hu said with some hidden meanings.



“I understand! Let me make arrangements for my sect’s disciples first and in a little while, I will bring my two Juniors over to pay a visit to your sect leader.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader naturally understood the opposing party’s intent and instantly replied in affirmation without batting an eyelid.

Hearing this, Zhao Hei Hu was overjoyed and spoke a few more words of decor before transforming into a cyan gas that flew back to its original floating reef.

At this time, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader made Liu Ming and the others begin constructing a stone temple. He then made Spirit Master Zhang and Huang lay down a few simple restrictions in the floating reef’s vicinity.

After the time it takes to have a meal, everything was complete. The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader gave another instruction to the disciples and then proceeded to bring the two other Spirit Masters to the Nine Enlightenment Mountain’s floating reef.

Most of the disciples entered the newly constructed building and sat down. The remaining few of them walked around the entire floating reef, while occasionally examining the surroundings.

Liu Ming also found a corner in the stone temple to sit down in a cross-legged manner.

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader and the other two were gone for nearly half the day. When they returned from the Nine Enlightenment Mountain’s area, there was a gray-robed old man with a triangle hair bun accompanying them.

This old man’s facial features seemed ordinary but his two hands were abnormally thick. A light green pouch hung on his waist and his aura was extremely ordinary. When he entered the stone temple with the Barbarian Ghost Sect

Leader, he immediately and impolitely sat down on a stone chair in the center of the temple.

After the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader issued an order, all the disciples instantly gathered in the stone temple.

“Your fortunes are quite great; since today, you are unexpectedly able to see Master Yan’s true face. Quickly come over and pay your respects! Master has just recently returned from the secret realm’s entrance and has a few things to help guide you.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader hastily spoke to everyone.

Once everyone heard this – although Yang Qian and the others had already made this guess in their hearts – they still couldn’t help but be shocked and proceeded to successively formally pay their respects to the gray-robed old man.

“Stand up. You are my Barbarian Ghost Sect’s most outstanding disciples. Originally, you should have had another year of cultivating before participating in the Life and Death Trials. However, I didn’t expect the secret realm to appear, so I didn’t have an alternative. Nonetheless, according to Marital Nephew’s words, the strength of this group of disciples far surpasses previous Large Competition’s top ten disciples. If this is the case, then I can be much more relaxed.” The gray-robed man examined Liu Ming and the other disciples before exposing a satisfied expression while nodding his head.

“Master, these ten are definitely our sect’s most outstanding group of disciples in sixty years. By lucky coincidence, we were able to come across the secret realm, so perhaps this is an opportunity for our sect to rise.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader stood beside the old man and replied with a laugh.

“I hope this is the case. Along with the other old geezers, I have already used a Secret Technique to have an approximate probe of the secret realm. We have tentatively determined it to be an extremely rare Natural Secret Realm. The interior shouldn’t have any traps, so the probability of danger is sharply lower than usual; otherwise, I wouldn’t have endorsed using this secret realm as the area for the Life and Death Trial. Of course, all Secret Realms have certain risks with them. All you have to do is search for as many precious resources as you can. Moreover, there are no

limits to methods and manners of accomplishing this task! Since the rewards involved are so prodigious this time, Heavenly Moon Sect and Blood River Hall have already secretly entered an alliance. In order to oppose this, our sect and Nine Enlightenment Mountain have just discussed entering an alliance. However, an alliance is only an alliance and no more. If you genuinely do encounter something good, then you should operate as you would, no matter what sect the opposing disciple is from. If such a case truly arises, I will take responsibility.” Martial Ancestor Yan said in an extremely imposing manner

“Natural Secret Realm!”

“This truly is too good!”

“An alliance with Nine Enlightenment Mountain?”

.....

Amazement, shock, and excitement appeared on each of the disciples’ faces; most displayed an expression of unexpectedness.

Martial Ancestor Yan seemed to turn a blind eye to this and proceeded to say, “However, you must not lower your guard. In the Natural Secret Realms, there is still a possibility of encountering dangers that far surpass your imagination. For example, there could be monsters that exist in the secret realm or the interior’s environment could be so vile that normal people would have no way of surviving.”

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader also gave a few reminders.

After the group of disciples heard this, a cold shiver once again arose in their hearts.

“All of this is secondary. The most pressing issue is still the Spirit Scarlet Dragon that fled into the secret realm!” Martial Ancestor Yan once again said something that caused everyone to jump in fright.

“What? That demonic dragon also fled into this secret realm? Master, are you joking? If each sect’s disciples enters the secret realm, wouldn’t that be the equivalent of sending a lamb into a tiger’s den?” This time, Martial Uncle Zhang’s face underwent a drastic change as he hastily

asked a question.

“Hmph, do you think that I am treating this situation like a joke?! You don’t need to worry, that Scarlet Dragon has already been heavily wounded, so much so that even though it fled into the secret realm, it’s already dying. It shouldn’t have any strength left to retaliate. It’s a pity that when the Demonic Dragon escaped into the secret realm, it used the last of its strength to destroy the entrance so that those with the strength of a Spirit Master and above are unable to enter. Otherwise, there would be no need for us to dispatch these youngsters. Us few old geezers would then be able to sweep away all the resources in one go, while also eliminating that Demonic Dragon. Truthfully, this Scarlet Dragon should be the most precious treasure in the secret realm.” Martial Ancestor Yan let out a harrumph as he spoke.

“Martial Nephew made a mistake in thinking like this, please forgive me Martial Uncle.” Master Zhang remembered that Martial Uncle Yan paid a lot of attention to his face and instantly, his heart skipped a beat as he hastily smiled obsequiously.

“However, it’s also lucky this way. Otherwise, at the time, I’m afraid that the two seniors from the Heavenly Moon Sect and Blood River Hall would have hogged the secret realm for themselves and would not have informed our sect. Martial Uncle, we can thus look at it as a good thing.” Spirit Master Huang had a face full of smiles as he spoke.

“This also makes sense but nevertheless, it seems to me that even though the Suppressing Dragon Island’s treasures left by the Suppressing Dragon Master were first discovered by our sect and the Nine Enlightenment Mountain, was truly a useless discovery. We clearly discovered this area first, but let people from Heavenly Moon Sect and Blood River Hall find the entrance to the secret realm first.”

“Junior Zhu didn’t expect that the earthly fire would still harbor the entrance to the secret realm. Moreover, when that Suppressing Dragon came into being, they spent everything trying to hide. How would they have had time to thoroughly search the vicinity?” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader explained.

“No matter what you say, Zhu Chi and Spirit Master Zhong still let the other sects take advantage of this. When this matter finishes, I will be sure to scold them.” Martial Ancestor Yan’s eyes were slightly popping out as he forcefully spoke.

These overbearing words shocked Liu Ming and the rest of the disciples. However, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader exchanged bitter smiles with his two Spirit Master Juniors.

Thankfully, they knew that their Martial Uncle was always like this, tough words but a soft heart. Otherwise, they would really have to worry for Zhu Chi and Spirit Master Zhong.

“That’s right, Martial Uncle Yuan, how is the entrance now? How long can it last?” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader asked with some worry.

“The entrance’s situation isn’t too good. That Demonic Dragon clearly knew where the entrance’s weak spot lay and most likely had entered it more than once. Therefore, that attack caused the entrance to be in an eternally crumbling state. The only reason why it hasn’t collapsed yet is because of us old geezers using special treasures to maintain the entrance. However, we can only hold it for at most a month and if we factor in the damage from the disciples from the various sects entering, there might only be half a month.” Martial Ancestor Yan’s expression finally turned serious as he replied.

# Chapter 110: Evil Guest

“To explore a previously unknown secret realm, perhaps half a month is not enough time. After all, we still don’t know how big the area of the secret realm actually is and whether or not there are other exits in it.” After hearing what was said, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader became a little worried.

“Having too little time is a matter that we can do nothing about. We, the old geezers, can only ensure that the entrance is stable during this period of time. Listen well, the moment you go in, you must carefully keep track of the time and as soon as the time has come, no matter what has been discovered, you must all immediately come out through the entrance. If you come late, then you will be trapped inside forever.” Martial Ancestor Yan ordered the disciples.

The group, including Liu Ming, naturally all nodded their heads. They gave sounds of “yes” in agreement.

“Also, the rankings for this Life and Death Trial will be determined by the amount of resources you bring out from inside. When the time has come, no matter how many resources you find in the secret realm, I will decide that you can keep ten percent of the resources. That will be your reward for the life-threatening situations you go through.” Martial Ancestor Yan shrugged and spoke again.

This time, all the disciples became even more exalted.

“Also, Martial Nephew Sect Leader, do you have the items I told you to bring from the storage rooms?” The gray-robed elder thought of something and asked out loud.

“Since Martial Ancestor has specially ordered, how can I forget? All the items have been brought!” Hearing what was said, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader replied without hesitating.

“That’s good. Hand them out right now, and let them become familiar with them before we continue speaking.” Martial Ancestor Yan spoke while nodding his head.

“Yes.”

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader gave a sound of agreement, and produced a faint folded up yellow, silk handkerchief and many thumb-sized, round, white beads. With the shake of his hand, he threw them at Liu Ming and the nine other people.

Liu Ming subconsciously moved his arm, catching the silk handkerchief as well as the round bead with his hand. He started examining them with a few curious glances.

He only felt that the handkerchief was thin like the wings of a cicada. It was also covered in layers of faint yellow inscriptions. If someone looked at it for a little too long, it would give them an abnormal dizzy feeling.

The round bead instead seemed crystal clear, like the average crystal.

“These Sumeru Handkerchieves can be considered a low level Totem. They do not have any other abilities and only have one restriction level but they can shrink what they wrap up by hundreds of times, making the shrunk item convenient to carry. The only fault is that even though the item’s size becomes quite small, the weight does not change. As for those Sensory Beads, they have been refined by a special Secret Technique and can detect the positions of other beads within a radius of five kilometers. All of you carry one on you. It will definitely provide great help after entering the secret realm.” Martial Ancestry Yan explained the items with a couple sentences.

Hearing this, all of the disciples naturally thanked their Martial Ancestor again.

“Anyway, you young disciples leave first and go familiarize yourselves with these two items. Once the disciples of the Firestorm Way arrive tomorrow, you will immediately enter the secret realm.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader ordered with a smile.

“Of course.”

“Yes.”

.....

The group of disciples gave a sound of agreement before all leaving the stone hall; they began exploring the uses of the two new items that were in their hands.

After waiting for the group of disciples to leave the great hall, the smile on the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader's face slowly disappeared. He turned around to face the gray-robed elder. He took a deep breath and asked.

"Martial Uncle, what do think about these disciples? Can they be compared with the disciples of the other sects?"

"This cannot be determined so easily. After all, I only glanced at the disciples of the other sects from far away and did not personally measure their strength. However, if it is just based off my own feeling, our sect perhaps is not looking as optimistic." The expression of the gray-robed elder also became serious as he replied.

"Is it really so! The ten Core Disciples our sect has just brought over are much stronger than the ten Core Disciples of the previous Large Competition by a great margin." Martial Uncle Zhang could not help but open his mouth again to speak.

"These brats from our sect indeed aren't too bad. If I did not see wrong, the Fa Li in Yang Qian, that brat, seems to have been purified once. If he wanted to become a Spirit Master, perhaps he has at least thirty-percent chance. As for Feng Chan, looking from the black gas on his face and forehead, it seems his Metal Zombie Body has also been refined to a high level of control. The one full of lightning Fa Li is probably that Nine Lightning Spiritual Pulse brat. As for Gao Chong that child, his aura is quite close to a Spirit Master's. It seems he has successfully refined that drop of Demon Dragon Essence Blood I gave him. Of course, the others do not seem weak as well. If we compare them with the average results of the Life and Death Trials, they indeed can achieve a decent ranking. However, if I have not seen wrong, genius disciples with frightening talent have also appeared within the other sects and their strengths maybe even greater than Yang Qian and the others, especially the female disciples from the Heavenly Moon Sect. When I used my Crystal Level strength to observe her in secret, she actually immediately felt it and looked at me.



She can no longer be under the category as a genius disciple but rather an incarnation of a devil.” Martial Ancestor Yan spoke slowly with a gloomy light in his eyes.

“What, to be able to feel Martial Uncle’s presence, how is that possible!”

“If it really is so, it must be that female Heavenly Moon Sect disciple with the Sword Communication Spirit Body.”

Spirit Master Huang and the middle-aged Practitioner were stunned both stunned.

“Yes, I believe it is so too. Other than the Heavenly Moon Sect, the other sects also have many disciples with out of the ordinary auras. When Yang Qian and the others meet them, I cannot be certain that they will win.” Martial Ancestor Yan spoke coldly.

“If it really is like this, then won’t you say that our sect will come last in this Life and Death Trial again.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader’s expression became a little ugly.

“That cannot be determined so easily, after all, the competition this time is determined by the amount of resources collected. As long as the brats from our sect have a little better luck and are smart enough to avoid the strongest people of the other sects, who knows, they might bring us a pleasant surprise.” The expression of the gray-robed elder became tranquil again.

“We can only hope so.” The expression of the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader changed many times, before giving a long sigh as he replied.

.....

At the same time, Liu Ming was playing around with the faint yellow silk handkerchief in his hand with extreme excitement.

From time to time, he would cover a big, grayish-white rock the size of a watermelon beneath his feet with the silk handkerchief. After it had shrunk to the size of a bean, he would pick it up and change it back to its original size.

As for the white round bead in his other hand, it was currently flashing faint white light. If one looked into it and focused, one could discover that there were ten black dots the size of a grain of rice, currently spread across the whole round bead. Some did not move, while others constantly moved without stopping.

After an unknown amount of time, Liu Ming seemed to get bored. He put the two items away, before casually finding a corner with no people. He started breathing in and out, regulating his breathing silently.

As he breathed in and out, the needle of the thickness of a hair hidden in his sleeve also moved a little. It was as if it was secretly breathing.

On his two arms, there were two additional bumps the size of soybeans sticking out. Inside each bump was one black and one white object the size of a rice grain. Similarly, they also constantly changed in shape slightly as Liu Ming breathed in and out. They looked like they were alive, making it seem extremely weird.

At this moment in time, the color of the sky was already darkening. The sunlight from the faraway setting sun shone on Liu Ming and the other Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples. It was as if they were covered in a layer of fresh blood, giving people an indescribably serious feeling.

.....

In the morning of the second day, Liu Ming, who was currently sitting cross-legged as he regulated his aura, suddenly felt the floating reef beneath his body shake. Although it was extremely weak, it still shook him awake from his meditation. Liu Ming immediately gazed out faraway. He seemed to be astonished.

He started seeing the surface of the nearby lake suddenly shake and form ripples of water. As the shaking beneath him grew stronger and stronger until the whole surface of the lake began forming waves, as if it were blown by the wind.

Only at this moment did Liu Ming hear the faint rumbling sound from far away in the sky. At the start, it was extremely weak, but after a while, it became extremely loud.

At this moment, the shaking of the entire lake surface became even more powerful.

Such a disturbance naturally caused the other disciples, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader and the other two, who were in the stone hall sleeping to walk out in surprise.

Their expressions were of doubt as they all looked up in the sky with their head tilted in the same fashion as Liu Ming.

As for that Martial Ancestor Yan, he could not be seen and had left the floating reed at an unknown time.

The Heavenly Moon Sect and the other sects on the other floating reefs also had a similar reaction. Many disciple stood up and looked toward the sky.

After waiting a little longer, they found a black dot suddenly appear in the sky faraway, slowly growing larger. After a short while, it became a blackish mountain peak of two thousand feet tall, that quickly flew toward the floating reefs.

At this moment, the booming sound in the sky had become deafening and the whole lake shook even more, forming huge waves of tens of feet tall.

“The Flying Peak! Why did the Firestorm Way pilot this sect treasure here? It seems to be a little odd.” After seeing the appearance of the black mountain peak clearly, Spirit Master Huang immediately asked the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader as his expression changed dramatically.

“This indeed is a little odd! However, don’t worry first, let’s see how the people of the Firestorm Way explain this. I believe that no matter how stupid the Firestorm Way can be, it will not challenge the other three sects all at the same time.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader knit his brows as he replied.

As for the other floating reefs nearby, a few Spirit Masters also began mumbling to themselves. Their expressions obviously carried a hint of seriousness.

A while later, the black mountain peak finally flew into the air space close to a few floating reefs, carrying a crazy gust of wind with it. It stopped in the air a few thousand feet above the lake with a “ga beng” sound.

As a wave of loud laughter came from the top of the black mountain peak, forty or fifty people flew out of the mountain peak together. The leading man was a middle-aged, golden-robed Daoist Practitioner. With an even louder voice, he spoke in the sky:

“Fellows, please do not blame us. The reason as to why I, the sect leader of Firestorm Way, have come a little slow is entirely due to the fact that there is currently an important guest in our sect. After hearing that the entrance to a new secret realm was discovered here, he came specially with a precious treasure to lend us a helping hand.”

As soon as the gold-robed daoist finished speaking, he immediately moved to one side. A hawk-nosed man in serpent robes walked out from behind him. His face was serious and both of his eyes flashed.

As the male showed himself, his gaze swept down quickly, before speaking impolitely:

“Is it all just you youngsters that are here, where is Master Spirit Jade and the rest!”

# Chapter 111: Fusion Sect

When the serpent-robed male was asking, he released an extremely strong aura. Upon contact, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader along with peers were all shocked.

This person was surprisingly another Crystal Level cultivator.

“Hmph, Mu Rong Xuan, to not rest quietly at your own Fusion Sect and instead run to our Da Xuan Country, do you really think that there is no one that can stop you in our sects?” Suddenly, a cold voice came from the floating reef of the Sky Moon Sect and immediately afterward, a white light shot toward the sky. After an easy twist, the white light turned into a nun wearing a white buddhist outfit.

She had a white buddhist Mitre while carrying a long silver sword behind her back. Although she had a band of buddhist beads in her hands that were supposed to be calming, her face was full of anger.

“Fusion Sect.”

When the Spirit Masters below heard this name, their faces all changed.

“I was wondering who it was, Nun Leng Yue! Since there is someone that can control matters around here, then that is for the best. However, Fellow Leng Yue, do not misunderstand, the reasons for me coming here are not to find trouble. Instead, it is as Yue sect leader said, I’m here to help.” When the serpent-robed male saw the old nun, his face changed as his voice was now laced with a hint of fear.

“What a joke. Our sects have never needed anyone from the Fusion Sect when doing something. Fellow Mu Rong, go back to where you have come from.” Nun Leng Yue rejected without even the slightest hesitation or respect.

Hearing this, the serpent-robed man’s face darkened.

At this time, the sect leader of the Firestorm Way spoke up with a bitter smile on his face.

“Ancestor Leng Yue, the reason for why Ancestor Mu Rong is here is because of Martial Uncle Chi Yang’s invitation. However, Martial Uncle met something on the way here and will come shortly after to personally explain the situation.”

“Hmph, what is that old geezer trying to do now. The Fusion Sect has always dominated the Ji Yue Country and have never had any relations with us few sects. Why would they suddenly come to our Da Xuan Country and also pick such a “great” time to come!” Hearing this, Nun Leng Yue stared deeply at Firestorm Way’s Sect Leader as she spoke.

“Ancestor Mu Rong is a close friend of Martial Uncle Chi Yang from many years ago. When our sect received information of the secret realm, Ancestor Mu Rong was coincidentally a guest at our sect. In addition, he has a secret treasure that will be extremely helpful in maintaining the entrance of the secret realm. Thus, Martial Uncle made large strides to invite Ancestor Mu Rong.” The sect leader of the Firestorm Way seemed extremely wary of Nun Leng Yue and immediately explained.

“A treasure that can maintain the entrance to a secret realm!” Nun Leng Yue finally showed an expression other than anger.

“Our Fusion Sect has many treasures that are beyond your imaginations. Were it not for me being a guest at Firestorm Way and Fellow Chi Yang sincerely inviting me over, do you really think that I would come to such a place!” Mu Rong Xuan replied heavily without respect.

“If you really are here to help, then forget my earlier words. However, what are those disciples doing here?” Nun Leng Yue’s expression relaxed, however, she pointed to the dozens of disciples that came off the mountain as she questioned.

Among the disciples, only ten of them wore the green and red outfits of the Firestorm Way while the others all had the light silver outfits of the Fusion Sect.

“Oh, for me to use the treasure, there will be some consequences. You didn’t think that I would help for nothing, right? These disciples were

brought by me to communicate and learn with the Firestorm Way's disciples. They are all of the Spirit Apostle cultivation and since they are lucky enough to come across this chance, they can't let it go so easily." Mu Rong Xuan yawned as he said.

"What? You want your sect's disciples to enter the secret realm? Not a chance." Hearing this, Nun Leng Yue once again looked vehemently at Mu Rong Xuan.

"Hehe, Leng Yue, why are you saying things without any room for other things. Everything in this world can be discussed. In addition, all you can represent is one of the clans! Whether or not they are allowed must be discussed with the other Fellows before deciding."

At this time, an unfamiliar voice sounded in the air. Everyone momentarily paused before uniformly looking to the source of the voice.

In the area above the black mountain peak, a gust of wind breezed through and within it, a long-faced elder wearing a yellow robe came out. One of his hands waved a fiery red palm-leaf fan while standing atop a green wheel like object.

"Chi Yang, you have finally come. Is what they said really true?" Nun Leng Yue face was dark as ever as she grilled the long-faced elder.

"Of course it is true. Leng Yue, the reason as to why you're so opposed to this is because you don't know what Fellow Mu Rong brought. Otherwise, you wouldn't be against this." The long-faced elder laughed as the object under his feet spun and brought him lower.

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader and the other Spirit Masters dared not give their two cents, since their Crystal Level elders were not around. They could only watch as the three Crystal Level cultivators talked.

"Hmph, what kind of treasure can make an old fox like you make such a big sacrifice. Does it double the time the entrance is open for?" Even though Nun Leng Yue kept a harsh tone, she was secretly surprised within her heart.

"Hehe, that will be after Fellow Mu Rong has seen the circumstances of

the entrance before making the call. However, even if it is the worst case scenario, we should be able to triple or quadruple the time the entrance is open.” Master Chi Yang said with a smile that was not a smile.

“Triple or quadruple!” This time, Nun Leng Yue was truly shocked and she could not help but look at the serpent-robed man.

Mu Rong Xuan was standing in the air without saying anything, obviously agreeing with what Chu Yang had said.

“Yes. If it wasn’t for such an extreme effect, I would not dare invite Fellow Mu Rong over without discussing with the others. After all, I am very clear that doing things in this sort of manner is very taboo.” Chi Yang yawned as he eased up the tensions on both sides.

“If it can really triple to quadruple the time the entrance is open, then letting the Fusion Sect disciples go into the secret realm is something that can be discussed. However, their numbers must be strictly limited.” Nun Leng Yue’s face relaxed as she also took a figurative step back.

“Haha, if that’s the case, what are we waiting for! Let’s first bring Fellow Mu Rong to the entrance and discuss the situation with the other Fellows. After all, time is of the essence right now and for every hour that we wait, the less time we will have.” Master Chi Yang said with a smile.

Mu Rong Xuan also showed a smile.

In the following time, the three of them all flew to the volcano above the lake and, in moments, disappeared into the volcano’s mouth.

The entrance to the secret realm was actually within the volcano.

However, the Spirit Masters including the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader did not have the luxury to care about the position of the entrance. Instead, they focused most of their attention on the newly arrived Firestorm Way and Fusion Sect disciples.

With a secret method, the Firestorm Way Sect Leader shot out a few inscriptions onto the black mountain peak and the mountain rapidly became smaller with a loud bang. In seconds, it was only a small, miniature mountain that the sect leader placed into his sleeve.



Afterward, the sect leader brought the Firestorm Way and Fusion Sect's disciples to find a large floating reef to land on.

They obviously didn't have the intention of setting up any sort of building or restriction around as they all started meditating atop of the floating reef.

"This is troublesome, who would have thought that the Fusion Sect of the Qi Yue Country would try to butt in!" Spirit Master muttered absentmindedly.

"If it really is as they have just said, if they can increase the time in which the secret realm is open, we can get more resources from the secret realm. That doesn't seem to be a bad thing." Spirit Master Zhang furrowed his brows as he asked with some confusion.

"If Yang Qian and the others can stay in the secret realm for longer, their findings will definitely increase. However, they will be exposed to more encounters with other sect disciples. In addition, since the Fusion Sect is also joining, this year's Life and Death Trials will be much more dangerous. After all, the Fusion Sect dominates an entire country and all four of our sects need to join together to be on par with it. Thus, we can see how strong the disciples under that sect must be. In addition, you have seen how the Firestorm Way disciples and the Fusion Sect disciples are so close together. It's likely that they have already agreed to work together. Why else would Master Chi Yang be so enthusiastic in inviting them over?" When the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader heard their conversation and bitterly smiled as he replied.

When the other two heard this, they gave it a slight thought and agreed with his logic. With their agreement was two faces that had now turned ugly.

"Sect Leader, fear not. We only found this secret realm recently. No matter how big Fusion Sect, they could not have known beforehand and sent their strongest disciples. From what I see, these disciples are merely better than normal disciples and were just sent to the Firestorm Way to learn with their disciples. If that is the case, then our sects have a good

chance of winning.” After thinking for another few moments, Spirit Master Huang suddenly spoke with a smile.

“Yes, we can only hope so.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader nodded but was still quite worried.

According to what their Ancestor Yan said, the Barbarian Ghost disciples didn’t have much of an advantage compared to the other few sects, and now that the Fusion Sect was among them, the chaos in the secret realm could be imagined.

On the other hand, Liu Ming had already sat back when the newly arrived disciples were getting settled on their floating reef.

It would not matter to him whether the Fusion Sect joined or not. In the end, he would have to fight other sects’ disciples in order to get more resources.

All he needed to do was to act quickly and efficiently.

As Liu Ming was thinking, footsteps could suddenly be heard behind him. There was someone that was actually approaching him.

When he turned his head to look, he could not help but be stunned for a second.

“Senior Jia Lan, do you have anything you want to talk about?” Liu Ming’s eyes flashed as he asked.

The person who came up was surprisingly Jia Lan.

She retained her delicate and pretty look, but was not distinguishable by any large margin from all the disciples of the Barbarian Ghost Sect.

# Chapter 112: The Secret Realm

“Junior Bai, I know how powerful your mental strength is compared to a normal person. Have you felt anything abnormal from the disciples of the Fusion Sect?” Jia Lan had her brows knit and asked a vague question.

“Senior, have you found something? I have not felt anything weird here.” Hearing her question, Liu Ming was slightly flabbergasted.

“I might have sensed wrong but when you enter the secret realm, if you meet any disciples from the Fusion Sect, you must be careful. It seems that there are some people that are unaffected by the power of my Aphrodite Body. Instead, they seem to be able to somewhat restrain me. It should be due to the fact that there is the existence of a person with strong mental strength.” Jia Lan’s expression changed multiple times before speaking bluntly.

“The Fusion Sect has such a disciple.” Hearing what was said, Liu Ming could not help but gaze at the floating reef to that side. Unfortunately, it was far away and he could only vaguely see the blurry shadow of people without being able to clearly see anything.

At this moment, Jia Lan did not continue to speak. With a nod, she left just like how she arrived, without a sound.

“Junior Bai, what did you speak about with Junior Jia Lan just now?” When Liu Ming was thinking about what Jia Lan had said about the Fusion Sect, a person suddenly walked up to him, and asked him coldly.

“Senior Min! Senior Jia and I only had idle gossip!” Liu Ming looked at the person who walked over with his eyebrows knit before replying plainly.

The person asked the question was actually Min Shou, the disciple ranked third on the Lunar Monument. His face was pale and he had two small yet long eyes. He was a disciple from the Poisonous Spirit Faction. Although he had not fought in the Large Competition, it was said that his poison techniques have already been cultivated to a level of perfection – able to defeat his opponent with poison without anyone noticing.

“Since it is only idle gossip, it is best for Junior to be further away from Junior Jia Lan, to save you from doing things that might make Senior misunderstand.” Min Shou spoke with a serious expression.

After hearing such, Liu Ming stared blankly at first before carefully looking at the green-robed young man. He then gave out a snicker and did not say anything.

Seeing this scene, Min Shou became enraged and spoke again with a sliver of killing intent, “It seems Junior Bai still does not know, my Min family has already proposed the idea of marriage to Jia Lan’s clan. I believe Junior Jia Lan will be mine not long after. Junior better stay discreet! Otherwise, you will end up like the rock beside you!”

As soon as Min Shou finished saying his threat-like warning, he suddenly pointed a finger at the gray rock beside Liu Ming. Then he immediately turned around and left.

Liu Ming shot a glance at the rock and saw it become extremely black before exploding apart with a bang.

Liu Ming used his hand to stroke his chin and an excited light vaguely flashed in his eyes. However, he placed this matter at the back of his mind, no longer paying any attention to it.

Time slowly passed and after around half a day, two people finally flew from the faraway volcano. They shot toward the floating reefs on this side of the lake.

A while later, and after a flash, two people immediately appeared mid air. It was the Nun Leng Yue and Chi Yang.

“The entrance to the secret realm has already stabilized. All the people should first go down below and prepare to enter the secret realm.” Nun Leng Yue spoke coldly.

“Fusion Sect disciples listen up, after the discussion between us, ten people from the group are allowed to enter the secret realm. As for the remaining people, they are to quietly wait outside for news.” Chi Yang spoke to the group of disciples from the Fusion Sect with a plain smile.

“Yes, we will closely follow the elder’s orders!” In the group of Fusion Sect disciples, a lanky young man immediately bowed and stood up when he spoke.

“Since there are no problems, we can start moving now.” Nun Leng Yue gave out another order before turning around again with Chi Yang to fly back to the mouth of the volcano.

Under the guide of the Spirit Masters of the different sects, the disciples also flew in the direction of the volcano in groups.

After a short amount of time, Liu Ming and the other people arrived directly above the mouth of the volcano. Looking down, they could see the black and red lava as well as the hot, black air that was rising up.

“Be careful! With your current cultivation level, you are unable to withstand such temperatures. I will personally guard you to allow you to go down.”

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader spoke seriously before shaking his sleeve. A layer of red light shielding was immediately released. After flashing a little, it spread in all four directions and immediately encased Yang Qian, Feng Chan, and the other three inside. It then transformed into a ball of red light, shooting downward. After a flash, it disappeared into the lava without a trace to be seen.

Seeing this sight, Liu Ming was slightly startled at heart.

However, just at this moment, the Martial Uncle Zhang who was beside also used the same technique, encasing Lei Zhen, Shi Chuan, and Liu Ming in the same red light before they shot down.

Liu Ming only felt the red light in front of him waver in brightness before he also went inside the scarlet red lava. However, with the protection of the red light shield, he did not feel any heat and flew deeper quickly due to a certain power.

After flying for about the amount of time it takes to drink half a cup of tea, the red light all around Liu Ming weakened and the surrounding view changed again into blackish dirt.

This time, however, they only flew downward for a while before entering a humongous, bright cavern.

Looking around, the entire cavern was hundreds of acres large and the surrounding black stone walls were abnormally smooth. It was as if someone had used a sharp axe to forcefully chop out these walls.

In the center of the cavern, there was a five colored formation that was at least a few acres in size with countless black Spatial Crystals embedded within. With a glance, one could see a frightening number of several hundred and every crystal was the size of a chicken egg.

Around the formation were also six stone platforms of several tens of feet tall and a person stood on each one of them. They were Martial Ancestor Yan, Nun Leng Yue, and the other powerful cultivators at the Crystal Level.

All five of the people each had a flat, disc-like Emblem floating in front of them. From within the Emblem, white light spewed out. The white light then gathered into the huge gray ball of light in the air above the formation.

The ball of light had a diameter of about seventy to eighty feet and spun without stopping in mid air or making a single sound or disturbance.

In the center of the formation was a huge golden cauldron which constantly spat out lines of golden inscription. These inscriptions were also all sucked into the gray ball of light.

Just when Liu Ming was looking around, the disciples of each sect all appeared in the cavern, and under the instructions of their sect, they all gathered into one group together.

After sweeping his gaze, he suddenly saw that there was a disciple on the side of the Nine Enlightenment Mountain looking at him very fiercely.

“It’s him.”

After seeing the appearance of the Nine Enlightenment Mountain disciple clearly, Liu Ming could not help but laugh involuntarily.

This person was Jin Yu, the genius disciple that he had competed with before on Suppressing Dragon Island. He was now taller than two years ago and his shoulders were also thicker, but other than that, there was not much of a change overall.

As for Liu Ming, due to the fact that he used the Marrow Washing Spirit Liquid, his change in appearance could not be counted as small. Thus, it was quite impressive for Jin Yu to recognize him with a single glance.

Thinking up to here, Liu Ming smiled at the opposition before retracting his gaze. Then, due to the words that Jia Lan had spoke to him earlier, he looked toward the Fusion Sect again.

Liu Ming only saw that out of the ten disciples the Fusion Sect had sent, three were female and seven were male. The three females were somewhat good looking and the seven young men could be said to have out of the ordinary auras. However, after looking at them hastily, he did not see any abnormalities.

It seemed that if Jia Lan had not felt wrong, then Jia Lan was very used to lying.

Liu Ming did not dare to look more, so he retracted his gaze and gave the other few sects a rough sweep.

The disciples from the Heavenly Moon Sect wore white all over and all carried swords on their back. The Hall of Blood disciples mainly wore blood red clothes in contrast and had an undiscrivable reek of blood. Although the Nine Enlightenment Mountain disciples had messy apparel, most of them had bulging full leather bags on their waists.

At this moment, a male with skin that was almost transparent finally began to speak.

“Very well, since the people have all gather, after the length of time it takes to burn one incense stick, we will start entering the secret realm.

As soon as he finished speaking, he shook his sleeve and a woosh could be heard. A stick of already-lit incense shot out, slightly inserting itself into the ground nearby.

“However, before this, let’s first go over the rules of the Life and Death Trials. After all, the Fusion Sect is a guest and may not be too clear about the rules of the Life and Death Trials.” A tall and skinny male in long, blood red robes, after glancing at the stick of incense, spoke with a serious smile.

“Hmph, this trial is different from other trials, why would rules be needed. The only rule is that there is no need for rules! The disciples that enter the secret realm can use whatever methods and whatever ways to collect all sorts of resources without limitation. They themselves are responsible for the lives and deaths that occur in this period of time. Once all the disciples have emerged, we will follow what we have decided before. The rankings will be based off how much resources each sect receives!” Nun Leng Yue spoke without an expression.

“Hehe, it seems that Fellow Leng Yue has a great amount of confidence this time in the disciples you have brought. Sure, let’s do it like this.” The male who had almost transparent skin gave a weird smile when speaking.

“I do not have any opinions!”

“It cannot be better than this!”

.....

The other Crystal Level existences all either agreed verbally or nodded.

Mu Rong Xuan, the Crystal Level cultivator of the Fusion Sect instead squinted a little and controlled the round disc in front of him. From the start to the end, he did not speak at all.

“Very well, since everybody has no other opinions, let the younger generation begin preparing.” Master Ling Yu glanced at the small remainder of the burning incense and spoke calmly.

“According to the old rules, all the sects send one person in at a time.” Master Ling Yu spoke plainly.

The other people seemed to have no comment to this method.

Therefore, when the stick of incense finally finished burning, the first



disciples of each sect began walking into the formation in the center one by one. Under the suction power, they were forcefully pulled into the gray ball of light one after the other before disappearing completely with a whirling flash.

On the side of the Barbarian Ghost Sect, the first to enter was Yang Qian, the strongest Spirit Apostle from the previous Large Competition.

As for the other sects, the first wave of disciples to enter was obviously also the ones with extremely great strength. After all, if some accident really happened on the other end, they could at least handle it slightly by themselves.

Liu Ming was put into the seventh wave of disciples to be delivered. After a series of crazy spins, he appeared half-kneeling in a field of tall, random grass.

He forced himself to stand up and after looking around in all direction, he immediately saw the other disciples that first entered. They all stood together in groups nearby.

As for a few hundred feet in the sky, there was the same humongous gray ball of light, constantly spinning without stopping.

In the sky was a sun that was hung high up, higher than the light. Not far from where they were, to one side, was an extremely dense and lush forest. On the other side, there was a huge, endless, grassy plain.

They seemed to be right in the middle of an intersection of the two areas.

Liu Ming thought with lightning speed and waited for himself to recover slightly. He then walked toward where Yang Qian and the others were.

# Chapter 113: Golden Spirit Ear

After a short while, all the disciples had finally fallen out of the gray ball of light. They gathered together according to their respective sects.

At this time, from within the gray ball of light came Nun Leng Yue's ice-cold voice, "Listen well, due to Fellow Mu Rong's treasure, we can increase the time before the entrance collapses by quite some time. It should be enough to stay in the secret realm for one and a half months before having to return here. Remember that you only have half a month more. When the time comes and you arrive late, then you will forever be stuck here."

When Nun Leng Yue's voice faded, the gray ball of light was shrouded by a layer of silence and went back to spinning.

"Juniors, listen up, we should discuss how we shall operate. Originally, according to Martial Uncle's plan, if the secret realm is small, then it's best if we move together in order to avoid attacks from other sects. If this secret realm is large enough, then we will split up in order to utilize the fastest speed to retrieve enough resources." Yang Qian's gaze swept over Liu Ming and the others as he indifferently spoke.

"Hehe, this secret realm has such rich Yuan Qi that it's area is clearly not that small. Thus we should naturally do things on our own. At the very least, I will definitely not go with anyone else!" Feng Chan, the messy-haired Refining Corpse Faction disciple, laughed as he spoke.

"I concur with this way of thinking. I don't want to be slowed down by the weaklings who managed to enter our group through luck. This sort of Natural Secret Realm is something that may only be encountered once in a few thousand years. There's absolutely no way that I will waste such a heavenly bestowed opportunity." Min Shou also sneered as he spoke.

As for the weaklings he was referring to, no one knew who he was talking about.

Although they didn't say anything, the expression on Qian Hui Niang, Jia Lan, Gao Chong, and the others faces revealed similar thoughts.

“Very good, since all of you Juniors have this thought, we shall split up and move. Your life and death is in your own hands. However, in this period of time, if you encounter another one of us in trouble, you must still immediately provide assistance.” Yang Qian declined to express his opinion as he nodded his head.

At this time, the other sects’ disciples seemed to have also finished deliberating. Instantly, under an unknown person’s lead, everyone split apart and rushed to the nearby areas. Some people sprinted into the jungle while others called on their clouds to ride into the depths of the grassland to begin searching.

However, everyone who performed the Soaring Sky Technique did not dare fly any higher than a hundred feet off the ground.

It seemed that no one was very stupid, since they all realized that flying too high in this sort of a dangerous area was almost the same to suicide.

Seeing the situation unfold in front of him, Feng Chan let out a wild laugh and rushed toward the jungle as black gas began floating around his body.

Min Shou and Gao Chong didn’t say anything else and followed.

Yang Qian, Qian Hui Niang, and the others called on their respective gray clouds and flew toward the depths of the grassland.

In the blink of an eye, the only people who remained in the original location were Liu Ming, Shi Chuan, and Jia Lan.

“Junior should be a bit more careful; I am going to leave first.”

Shi Chuan gave a warning to Liu Ming before flying into the air. Based on the direction he was headed, it astonishingly was the path that Yang Qian, the strongest discipline of the Barbarian Ghost Sect, had flown in.

Jia Lan looked at Liu Ming and smiled before turning around and floating toward the jungle.

Liu Ming raised his head and looked at the sky. He looked behind him at the few remaining disciples before calling on his gray cloud. He then flew

toward the jungle.

However a moment later, when he arrived at the jungle's edge, he suddenly changed directions and rapidly flew along the border of the jungle.

Of the remaining people, each person chose a path to take and left.

Just like this, Liu Ming rode his gray cloud while using a Method Compass to draw out a map of his path. Simultaneously, he carefully examined the surrounding environment.

The jungle clearly covered quite a large area, calling it a forest was probably more accurate.

He flew for an hour without stopping but had yet to see the end of the forest. Unexpectedly, the journey was abnormally peaceful and aside from a few unknown small insects, he didn't see any other animals appear.

Liu Ming began questioning if he should continue heading forward.

According to the plan in his heart, he was already quite far away from the others who entered the jungle. As long as he was careful, in the short ensuing amount of time, he shouldn't bump into any other disciples.

Just as Liu Ming was pondering, a wave of explosions was heard. At first, it was only a soft sound but it quickly became a loud rumble.

Startled, Liu Ming turned his head toward the grassland. On the distant, green horizon, a red wind wall, so long that its ends were not in sight, had appeared at an unknown time. Moreover, it rapidly emitted loud noises as it came closer to the jungle.

Liu Ming's face darkened and without any hesitation, he turned and flew into the jungle.

Although he didn't know what the red wind wall was, he knew that it wasn't anything good. He further didn't know if other disciples with horrible luck had fallen prey to it.

If this were the case, then he could only wish them good fortune in getting out.

The forest was littered with two hundred to three hundred feet tall ancient trees.

When Liu Ming entered the forest, he instantly mitigated the Soaring Sky Technique. He turned his hand around and performed the Lighten Technique on himself before floating between the trees.

In a short while, he managed to come a few kilometers deep in the forest before finally slowing down his pace and observing his surroundings.

It was unclear how long this forest had remained untouched by people. In between the trees were countless unnamed coiled black and green vines. On the ground, dead tree leaves over a few feet long lay sprawled out. The lower half had completely transformed into ooze while the upper half was still the dead leaf's original form.

The overhead of this entire forest was covered by a canopy that consisted of layers upon layers of fertile branches and leaves. Only a small amount of sunshine broke through, which caused the lower levels to be abnormally gloomy.

Liu Ming's eyes flashed before he tore off a nearby dried up vine. Using twenty percent of his strength, he was unexpectedly unable to tear it off. This couldn't help but cause him to express surprise.

He meticulously examined the vines again. He then wrapped his five fingers around them and used half of his strength.

"Peng!"

This time, the vine responded by disintegrating in his hand.

Liu Ming shook his head and immediately began to ignore these items as he continued to float along.

After moving for the time it takes to have a meal, Liu Ming's expression suddenly changed. His figure slowed as he unexpectedly floated down onto a thick layer of dead leaves. After a quick movement, he appeared in front of a withered tree with only half its tree trunk remaining.

The upper half of this tree had been completely obliterated for an unknown reason and the lower half of the tree was comprised of abnormally shriveled bark of yellow color. Not even a trace of life was present.

Liu Ming had no interest in this tree and his gaze was completely focused on a small black and red fungus that had its back to the sun. It seemed to be similar to a regular fungus, except its edge contained shiny golden-lined circles that emitted a captivating fragrance.

Liu Ming brought his hand up to his bosom and fished out a light silver thick book. On its surface was written six large words, “All Inclusive Guide to Spirit Objects”; he proceeded to flip through it.

This book was specially distributed by the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader to the top ten disciples. This was done before they left the sect, to avoid missing out on any precious resources.

After all, they were disciples who didn’t specialize in picking medicine plants. Although they knew a bit about spirit objects and materials, they were mainly only normal goods. As for the legendary Heaven and Earth Spirit Objects, they naturally had not had a previous encounter with them.

Equipped with this book, they only had to take a quick glance beforehand to gain a slight impression of the objects, so when they came across familiar items, they could accurately recognize the item with the help of the pictures.

This “All Inclusive Guide to Spirit Objects” not only contained spirit medicines and plants, but also had many legendary rare resources and a few difficult to categorize Heaven and Earth Spirit Objects.

When his finger paused, the pages immediately stopped turning.

“It really is a Golden Spirit Ear. This item is a supplementary material to concocting a few high level Spirit Pills; in the external world, it’s very rare. This small piece should fetch a price of nearly a thousand Spirit Stones.” Liu Ming looked at the picture on the guide before looking at the Spirit Object on the tree trunk. He couldn’t help but mutter to himself in

an excited voice.

Subsequently, he retrieved a small wooden case from his body and used his other hand to flip it open. In it astonishingly appeared a short cyan sword.

His wrist shook slightly and a ray of cyan light flashed; the Golden Spirit Ear and the small chunk of rotten wood proceeded to fall off. They fell into the wooden case that had been prepared earlier.

Liu Ming covered the wooden case with the Sumeru handkerchief and it quickly shrunk into a small soybean-sized object. He then put it in his bosom and proceeded to search the nearby area once more.

Ultimately, two hours later, he found another two Golden Spirit Ears on two adjacent withered trees. Among the two pieces, one of them was about the same size as the one he already collected while the other was about three to four times the size.

Thus, it could be said that in a short span of time, he had acquired five thousand to six thousand Spirit Stones.

This naturally caused Liu Ming to feel rather satisfied.

He knew that if he were to continue searching in a larger area he would definitely find others to harvest, but he suppressed this excitatory urge and left this area. He continued to move ahead.

Despite the Golden Spirit Ear having a large price tag with it, it wasn't worth it to spend most of his time searching for it.

After all, the time he had in the secret realm was limited and he still had to find the secret realm's true treasures.

Just like this, Liu Ming followed a particular direction in the forest and continued his journey. On the way, if he encountered spirit medicines and spirit plants, he would instantly look around for more before leaving once again when he lacked results.

Not much later, his Sumeru handkerchief had seven or eight more distinct spirit plants. Among them, a few did not have the same value as

the Golden Spirit Ear while others were even more precious than the Golden Spirit Ear; his harvest was quite good.

Suddenly, in the middle of moving, Liu Ming's figure suddenly froze and he stopped on top of a certain large tree. He stared at a nearby large tree's branch.

What greeted him on the end of that arm thick branch astonishingly was a gray velvety small animal corpse. A small portion of its body had already vanished without a trace but the remaining portion was still dripping fresh blood.

Simultaneously, the stench of blood covered the nearby area; this animal clearly had died not too long ago.

Although Liu Ming had already known that there would definitely be animals in this sort of a large Natural Secret Realm, this scene still couldn't help but cause his heart to jump.



# Chapter 114: Mysterious Water Sunflower and Blood Thorns

Liu Ming quickly looked around and when he didn't find anything abnormal, he moved toward the dead animal.

When Liu Ming moved close enough, he realized the furry animal was actually a very fat, huge, gray rabbit. It's size was almost twice the size of normal rabbits. Based on its two sharp fangs that poked out of its mouth, these huge rabbit were not just grass eaters.

Liu Ming looked at the corpse for two seconds before crouching down and placing his hand at the head of the huge rabbit. At the same time, a warm flow passed through his five fingers.

In the next moment, Liu Ming's face darkened.

The corpse of the huge rabbit had remaining Fa Li left in its body. Obviously, it wasn't a normal rabbit rather, it was a low level monster.

At this time, a "sou" sound was made as a long, black-red thing came shooting out from the main trunk of the tree. The speed of it was so incredible that in just one blink, it was at Liu Ming's neck, about to pierce through.

Liu Ming who was examining the corpse suddenly moved his arm and grabbed the black and red thing heavily. With a low growl, he pulled it toward himself.

"Peng."

A large piece of yellow-green "tree bark" on the main branch was forcefully pulled off. However, while flying toward Liu Ming, it transformed into a huge Gecko monster that tried to slash at Liu Ming.

The black-red thing was apparently the monster's tongue!

"Pu, pu!"

Two wind blades shot out from Liu Ming's hands and after green flashes, they cut the monster into three parts. The three parts of the

Gecko immediately became lifeless as it fell to the ground with fresh blood bursting forth.

Only then did Liu Ming let go of the tongue that he was still holding. Floating down from the branch, he landed near the new corpse and started examining the various aspects of the monster.

This monster was less than five feet long and its body was abnormally flat. It's green-yellow skin turned to a milky-white, glossy appearance. In addition, it's four claws were abnormally sharp and slightly curved.

"It's actually a color-changing gecko. No wonder I couldn't discover it despite being so close." After Liu Ming distinguished the monster's features, he smiled and talked to himself.

Although the level and power of the color-changing gecko was not high, its skin was extremely hard to come across in the outside world. In addition, it was the main ingredient in making quite a few Spirit Armors and Clothings.

Liu Ming's sleeves shook and a light green short sword appeared in his hands...

In the time it took to have a cup of tea, there were only three slabs of meat left on the ground.

Once Liu Ming put away the three pieces of the milky-white monster skin, he didn't loiter and kept moving forward.

.....

Two days later.

Liu Ming stood atop a large tree without moving. In the surrounding trees, there were quite a few leopard-formed monsters that were almost ten feet in length. By their position, they had surrounded Liu Ming.

All of these monsters had a scarlet pattern on their skin and green eyes. Under the roar of one of the leopards, all of the monsters opened their mouths and multiple fire balls shot out. Immediately afterward, they turned into afterimages as they pounced on Liu Ming.

“Pu, pu!”

Liu Ming's sleeve shook as a black chain shot out like lightning. With a simple sweep, the black chain put out the fire balls and Liu Ming's other hand flicked something out from within his sleeve. A green light shot out and after blinking around Liu Ming, it managed to pierce through the heads of the all of the monsters.

Without another sound, all the monsters fell lifelessly from midair.

Without even looking at the monsters again, Liu Ming continued on away from the corpses.

These monsters were Fire Leopards that were also common in the outside world. Thus, Liu Ming had no reason to stick around.

....

Five days later.

In a hidden part of the forest, Liu Ming was carrying a flowery tree that was half of his height as he transformed into streaks of green that flashed between the trees. He no longer had the calm manner that he did just days before.

Closely behind Liu Ming was a huge buzzing sound as a black cloud was persistently chasing Liu Ming.

Suddenly, one of Liu Ming's hands swept behind him and a scarlet fire ball came shooting out. Instantly, it burst apart in front of the black cloud.

As the heat from the fireball splashed into the black cloud, countless black dots came falling out of the black cloud. They were all black hornets that had a ferocious appearance. Each of them were about the size of a thumb and their entire bodies were covered with light silver patterns while they had a one inch long poisonous stinger.

Although the swarm of hornets was slightly delayed as the black hornets touched the ground, they immediately flapped their wings and flew back up. It seemed as if the powerful fireball had no effect on them.

The black cloud paused before it started chasing Liu Ming again.

After an hour, Liu Ming was covered in a dense shroud of black gas as he jumped into a pond that was only an acre large. Swiftly, he dived to a depth of twenty to thirty feet.

The hornet swarm buzzed angrily above the pond for quite a while before flying away helplessly.

Moments after the swarm left, Liu Ming let out a deep breath as he flew out of the pond. The black gas on him slowly faded away, revealing Liu Ming to be completely dry.

Liu Ming looked in the direction the hornet swarm left and his face showed an expression of fear.

These Silver Spider Hornets were worse than their legends. Not only did they fly extremely fast, they also had high resistances to many spells. If it weren't for Liu Ming finding a pond beforehand and taking the effort to clear out the strange fish within the pond, he might have had to have taken out his Totems to fight the swarm head on.

With the numbers of the swarm, even if Liu Ming were able to defeat all of them, most of his Fa Li would be gone.

And in this kind of place where danger lurked in every shadow, having no Fa Li was pretty much fatal.

As Liu Ming thought about the consequences, he looked down at his silver-colored flower tree and started smiling.

The flower tree had silver dots littered across it and at the top of it, there was a silver sunflower that was the size of a palm. At the center of the sunflower were dozens of light silver seeds. Each one of them were extraordinarily full and from within them, there was an extremely pure Yuan Li aura.

"Mysterious Water Sunflower. Such a true Spirit Object is worth a low level Totem in the outside world. Looks like the Spirit Objects in this secret realm are beyond my imagination." Liu Ming muttered to himself before he took out the Sumeru Handkerchief and shrunk the tree. With

excitement, he headed on his way again.

.....

In another area of the forest, a Hall of Blood disciple was slowly making his way into the center of an area of thorny shrubs.

In the middle of all the shrubs was Spirit Grass that was as red as blood!

The Hall of Blood disciple held a blood red blade as he hacked his way through the shrubs. For every inch that he came closer to the Spirit Grass, the excitement on his face grew by a bit.

He was only a few steps away from getting the Spirit Grass when a sudden change occurred!

The thorn branches of the shrubs that seemed like they were dead all flashed with a red hue. Then, it was as if they came to life as they started stabbing at the Hall of Blood disciple.

Since the Hall of Blood disciple was able to make it to the Life and Death Trials, he was naturally not someone ordinary. Although he was surprised at this situation, he immediately made a hand sign and a blood colored light cover shrouded him. At the same time, his blood red blade swept forward and transformed into many afterimages that ferociously cut at the surrounding thorn branches.

The moment these afterimages made contact with the thorn branches that were around the disciple, a muffled sound came out and the seemingly powerful slashes only cut apart three to four thorn branches.

With this, the Hall of Blood disciple felt a heat transmit to his hand and he almost dropped the blade in his hand.

The thorny branches then completely wrapped the Hall of Blood disciple. However, all of the thorns were blocked off by the blood red light shroud and none of the thorns reached the disciple.

Although the Hall of Blood disciple's heart was in his throat because of these changes of event, when he saw that the light cover held, he slightly

relaxed. He made a single-handed technique and sparks began to fly around him; it was as if he was about to cast a powerful fire attribute spell against the thorny branches around him.

However, as soon as these sparks appeared, the thorny branches around the disciple trembled. Sharp shrill sounds were made from the thorns and the branches pulled back before shooting forward. The power in these attacks were so strong that they were like arrows shot from a tough bow.

“Ah!”

Seeing this, the Hall of Blood disciple instinctively cried out. It was too late for him to add extra defenses.

The blood light cover that was around the disciple could only defend for a quick moment before it faded into mere light fragments.

With another blood curdling scream, the Hall of Blood disciple became full of holes by the branches.

At the same time, the thorny branches around the disciple tightened and forcibly tore apart the Spirit Apostle. Countless pieces of meat and blood came pouring out between the gaps of the branches.

The moment the remains of the Hall of Blood disciple hit the ground, countless white silky threads came pushing out of the ground. They all pushed themselves into the remains and started sucking the nutrients out.

In moments, nothing was left and the thorny branches that were tightly wrapped finally relaxed before everything returned to normal.

If it weren't for the blood red blade and a couple of tattered clothes, no one could see anything abnormal with the thorny bushes.

However, even the final remains such as the blade gradually sunk into the ground after the surrounding dirt started to slowly wiggle.

At this time, in a blank space near the tree a strange man's voice sounded.

“Tsk tsk, what a powerful Demon Tree. However, since you have already

shown your powers, it'll be easy for me to deal with you.”

The moment the voice fell, a shadow appeared behind the tree. Then, a Firestorm Way disciple that had a scarlet palm-leaf fan that looked exactly like Master Chi Yang's appeared.

# Chapter 115: Ravine

The youth had thick eyebrows and large eyes. As soon as he revealed himself, countless scarlet spirit inscriptions appeared on his skin. It seemed as if the temperature around him became higher.

The youth fished out a light blue Glyph from his sleeve, and with a twist of his wrist, the Glyph disappeared in a flash.

In the next moment, above the thorny bushes, a shapeless wave formed as a faint blue mysterious symbol appeared. With a “pu” sound, it split apart and formed a blue light cover over the blood-colored Spirit Grass.

The youth then unhurriedly took the palm-leaf fan on his waist out and started to chant.

A humming sound started to buzz around and the fan started to shine. At the same time, scarlet symbols started to float off of the fan and circle around the fan.

Moments later, the fan was emitting a high temperature and became incredibly hot.

However, the youth seemed to ignore the temperature of the fan and instead waved the fan at the thorny bushes.

A “puchi” sound was made.

A scarlet fire column shot out of the palm-leaf fan and turned the bushes into a raging inferno.

In seconds, the thorny branches reacted by wildly waving around, but under such a strong flame, they perished into black ashes just moments later.

In the inferno, the only thing that was fine was the Spirit Grass that was protected by the blue light cover.

When the fire finally died down, the youth stepped on the slightly scorched ground and nonchalantly walked toward the blue cover.

.....



At the same time, in another place in the forest, a pretty girl Heavenly Moon Sect disciple was using lightning quick attacks with a shiny sword against a seventy to eighty feet long black and red giant serpent.

The girl suddenly let out a shrill roar and the sword in her hand turned into a silvery round wheel. After she pounced on the giant serpent again, the huge head of the serpent separated from its body.

The Heavenly Moon Sect girl then made a twirl midair before landing steadily on a nearby tree branch. After she looked at the corpse of the huge serpent that was still beating the ground, she emotionlessly stuck her sword into her sheath before turning around and floating away.

.....

In the depth of the grassland, two Fusion Sect disciples, one male and one female, were holding hands while among a huge wolf pack.

Over a thousand wolves, each of them the size of a small cattle, bared their fangs viciously at each other. However, they seemed to not see the couple walking through their midst.

In moments, the couple from Fusion Sect passed through the wolf pack and slowly walked farther away. They went farther and farther before turning into two black dots and disappearing.

.....

In a cave that was filled with sparkling Spirit Stones, not too far from the grasslands, there were two broken tiger shaped puppets. Beside these two broken puppets were another few completely torn apart monsters that resembled mosquitos and a dried corpse that was almost half the size of a normal person.

The corpse wore an ordinary blue robe and on its head was a hole the size of a fist. However, no blood seemed to leak out from it.

.....

Seven days later, Liu Ming was standing by a giant tree on the verge of the forest. His expression was serious as he looked around.

The total area of the forest was far beyond Liu Ming's imagination and after a few days of trekking, he finally got out. However, when he saw the incredible sight before him, he got another shock.

A few miles away there was a ravine that acted as a border between an area filled with warmth and sun, where Liu Ming was currently at, while the other area was a snowy, ice-cold world.

Even with Liu Ming's normal calmness, he was still surprised at the phenomenon.

When he focused closely, he found that, although he couldn't see much due to the raging blizzard on the cold side, he could still barely make out an enormous mountain hidden behind the wind and snow.

With this, Liu Ming's heart began to beat uncontrollably.

No matter where, Yuan Qi was always the most abundant near mountains. In addition, most Spirit Objects were more likely to be living on a mountain rather than not.

With how big the mountain behind the blizzard was, it was most likely the center of the secret realm. As long as Liu Ming could explore the mountain, there was no need for him to go anywhere else.

After all, with how large this secret realm was and factoring in the time Liu Ming had to take traveling back to the entrance, even if Liu Ming wanted to travel to other regions, he would be hard pressed for time.

As Liu Ming thought of this, he looked around and didn't see anyone following him. Then, he made a hand sign and summoned a gray cloud to help carry him to the ravine.

Not too long later, Liu Ming neared the ravine. However, right when he was about to fly over it, a sudden feeling of danger that gave him goosebumps came to him without warning. After the expression of his face changed, he immediately stopped and gilded back.

Only when Liu Ming backed off about a few hundred feet did he feel barely safe enough and stop himself while having a white face.

Liu Ming had only ever experienced such a strong premonition when he was back on Savage Island and had not yet practiced mortal secret techniques. Back then, a prisoner who Liu Ming could not defeat was set on killing Liu Ming and this feeling was exactly like back then.

Were it not for Uncle Qian stepping in, Liu Ming might have been torn to shreds.

Liu Ming's expression changed a few times as he dropped down. Slowly, the sense of danger receded.

Liu Ming's eyes flashed as he walked forward and looked at the bottom of the ravine and the other side.

The ravine was about three to four hundred feet wide and seventy to eighty feet down was gray-white mist. It was impossible to see what was in the ravine.

This made Liu Ming's brows bunch together and after looking at the nearby ground, he picked up a dried stick.

After feeling the weight of the stick, Liu Ming took a deep breath and his arm suddenly thickened. With the extra strength, Liu Ming threw the thick stick across the ravine.

"Sou!"

The stick shot out like an arrow, but after flying about thirty to forty feet, it suddenly started falling straight down. The speed at which it fell was even faster than when Liu Ming threw it.

Liu Ming's face darkened. Without hesitation, he picked up a rock that was about the size of one's head. After his body twisted, his arms rotating once again, the rock flew out of his hands like it was shot from a catapult.

However, this time, the rock was able to go about seventy to eighty feet before it too fell straight down. It was as if there was an invisible force pulling it down.

"A natural Gravity Field!"

TL: Eyyy, Gravity!

Liu Ming took a deep breath and voiced his findings.

If his premonition had just come a second later, Liu Ming would probably have been like the stick and rock, sucked to the depths of the ravine by the Gravity Field.

Although Liu Ming did not know what was at the bottom of the ravine, he knew that it wasn't something pleasant.

Although these large-scale nature traps were extremely rare, once they were formed, the dangers that they posed were far beyond the scope of other traps.

For Liu Ming, a mere Spirit Apostle, to go against the force of gravity and fly across the ravine was something impossible for him.

However, just a Gravity Field was far from enough to discourage Liu Ming from trying to reach the mountain that he had seen.

On the other hand, Liu Ming was still at a loss on how to cross the ravine.

Only a rock bridge that extended to the other side would be helpful in this case.

When Liu Ming thought of the words, "rock bridge", he suddenly remembered something.

Quickly looking around to get his bearings, Liu Ming then flew up and traveled to a certain point before the ravine.

Four hours later, when Liu Ming saw countless natural rock columns in the middle of the ravine, he could not help but become pleased.

These rock pillars were both abnormally thick and very close together. The max distance between each one of the them was about twenty to thirty feet; at some points they were a mere three to four feet away from each other.

Liu Ming looked around before picking an optimal path. Without any hesitation, he shook out a black chain from his sleeve. After a flash, it was bound tightly to the top of a rock pillar about twenty feet away.

Liu Ming took a deep breath and stomped heavily on the ground. His body suddenly shot toward the rock pillar.

After about ten feet, Liu Ming shot into the air as a “pu” sound was made. Suddenly, Liu Ming his body become heavy and he started falling down.

However, Liu Ming immediately pulled on the black chain and his body still shot forward. In addition, a green flash soared past and a green sword was stuck into the side of the rock pillar. With that, Liu Ming could stick to the rock pillar with something other than the black chain.

At this time, Liu Ming felt that his body had suddenly become immensely heavy. Every moment of his was extremely slow, as if there were a thousand pounds of force pulling him down.

Even with Liu Ming’s body that was much stronger than the average disciple.

In the next moment, Liu Ming took a deep breath and veins started popping on Liu Ming’s forehead. At the same time, his four limbs became thicker as a strength welled out of his body.

Liu Ming pulled out the green sword and with a tug of the black chain, he actually started climbing upward, slowly, until he reached the top of the rock pillar.

After barely stilling his body at the top of the rock pillar, Liu Ming shook his sleeves and the black chain loosened off the pillar and was shot out and tied to another pillar.

Liu Ming made a low roar and jumped to the next pillar.

.....

On another part of the ravine, an incredibly thick and long rock pillar bridged the two sides of the ravine.

Gao Chong had both of his hands curled into fists as he heavily stepped on it. Every step would make the rock pillar under him tremble.

Although Gao Chong’s breathing slowly became more and more coarse,

he continued walking, step by step, to the other side.

.....

At the edge of the ravine, a female disciple of the Heavenly Moon Sect was standing on a gray cloud that was hovering quite close to the ground.

She looked at the ravine for a few times before her wrist shook and a huge gray rabbit was flung across the ravine.

The huge rabbit only flew tens of feet before it fell, with extreme fear, to the bottom of the ravine.

Seeing this, the young disciple's face momentarily went blank. It seemed as if she was calculating something.

In moments, the Heavenly Moon disciple had a flash in her eyes as she pulled out a pure white sword from behind her. Afterward, she placed the sword in front of her and a shocking Sword Qi was emitted from her.

# Chapter 116: Tie Yue

After the girl let out a small cry, the soaring Sword Qi twirled in the air before jumping into the sword in her hand. After a flash, none of the Sword Qi was left.

The Heavenly Moon Sect disciple slashed her snow white sword as she stepped off the ground. They became a cold light that was ten feet long as both the sword and disciple shot toward the other side of the ravine. Their speed was almost as fast as lightning.

If someone saw this scene, they would have definitely cried out in shock.

A Sword Cultivator could only grasp becoming one with the sword after the Sword Cultivator became a Spirit Master. Even though this was usually the case, quite a few of Sword Cultivators with lower talents still could not do such a thing after becoming a Spirit Master. For example, the Spirit Master Yu of the Heavenly Moon Sect that died to the Scarlet Dragon back then was a Spirit Master Sword Cultivator that had a Middle Tier Totem, yet she couldn't do such a thing.

In addition, this technique would place all of one's Fa Li into the sword and become one with the sword. It was used to defeat and kill strong enemies and it was wasted by using it to fly over the ravine.

Even though the ravine's gravity pull was quite strong, the cold sword light made "chi la" sounds and forcibly torn through the Gravity Field. Moments later, they got to the other side of the ravine and the Heavenly Moon Sect disciple returned to her regular figure once again instead of being a cold light.

The girl had a strong presence yet her pretty face was slightly white. Obviously, the flying maneuver that she just did cost quite a bit of Fa Li. However, when she looked back at the ravine, she smiled and put her sword back in its sheathe. She then started moving toward the area billowing with blizzards.

.....

At another place above the ravine, a blood-robed person was actually stepping on plain air. Every step that he took, a blood light would flash on his body while a blood lotus would form and support the blood-robed person.

Each of the blood lotus' formed and disappeared. Without any pause, the blood-robed person made it to the other side of the ravine. When he raised his head, it was shockingly a twenty year old face.

With heat in his eyes, he looked at the mountain behind the blizzard and plunged straight into the snow.

.....

“Sou!”

Liu Ming felt the gravity force on his body disappear. Immediately, with excitement, he pulled on his black chain and his body was like an arrow as he quickly bridged the last ten feet. He immediately appeared above a rock mound that his black chain had been tied around.

When he looked back, he felt that his entire body was very sore. He could not help but let a bitter smile out and put away his black chain. Taking a deep breath, he started advancing forward.

In the time it took to eat a meal, Liu Ming had reached the edge of the snowy lands. Gritting his teeth, he plunged into the blizzard.

However, after a few steps, a cold wind blew straight into Liu Ming's face. Instantly, he felt that he was about to freeze solid.

Immediately, Liu Ming's face changed. Without hesitation, he made a hand technique and black gas started rolling out of Liu Ming's body before completely covering it. In addition, Fa Li came surging out from Liu Ming's Spirit Sea and kept flowing within him to keep him warm.

Like this, Liu Ming walked forward slowly.

The blizzard here stronger than Liu Ming had imagined. In addition, within the blizzard there was the occasional fist-sized hail crystal that would make “peng, peng” sounds when they hit against Liu Ming.



If it weren't for Liu Ming using the Dark Bone Method to condense Fa Li outside of his body and protect himself, just these hail crystals would have cut open Liu Ming and forced him back.

However, even with the black gas protecting him, Liu Ming still felt as if his blood was about to freeze after a gust of wind blew past him.

However, all he could do right now was push his Fa Li as much as possible.

Of course, the result of this meant that Liu Ming's Fa Li was being spent much faster.

Thankfully, this blizzarding world was not too large. Even if Liu Ming could not fly through it, instead he had to walk through step by step, he only had to walk two to three miles before the blizzards suddenly stopped.

Liu Ming let out a long breath and shook off the black gas surrounding him. When he looked up at the huge mountain that was right before him, an expression of surprise showed on his face.

The mountain in front of him was indeed quite strange!

The lower half of the mountain looked completely normal besides being a little larger than normal. However, the upper half was split into five different smaller mountains that were of different sizes.

From far away, it looked as if it was a hand that extended to the sky.

Right when Liu Ming was absentmindedly looking at the mountain, a giant shadow came rushing out of the blizzard with a cold gust.

Liu Ming was startled by this change and immediately took two steps back.

The huge shadow was in fact a huge ape puppet that was over thirty feet high. Its entire body was a dull black, as if it was made entirely from iron essence.

"A Nine Enchantment Mountain disciple!"

Liu Ming slightly relaxed. No matter what was said, the Barbarian Ghost Sect and the Nine Enchantment Mountain had an alliance.

However, when his gaze swept around, he could not help but hesitate.

There was no one near the huge ape puppet!

“Hehe, so it’s a junior from the Barbarian Ghost Sect. To be able to get here without harm, junior’s strength isn’t bad.” Suddenly, a voice came from the ape puppet.

“You are....”

This voice naturally shocked Liu Ming and his gaze instantly focused on the giant ape.

“Oh, this is the first time junior has seen a large scale puppet. Let me come out and meet with Junior.”

With some apology in his tone, the stomach area of the giant ape suddenly flashed white and revealed a small door that was about half a person tall. From within, a blue-robed youth came crawling out. He had a round face with an ever-present smile, making people like him as soon as they saw him.

“My name is Tie Yue. Sorry about earlier.” The moment the youth came out, he revealed a bigger smile and greeted Liu Ming.

“So it’s brother Tie, I am Bai Chong Tian.” Liu Ming’s eyes flashed as he cupped a fist and replied.

“Bai Chong Tian... You are the Barbarian Ghost Sect disciple that defeated Junior Jin Yu! Haha, this is such a coincidence!” Tie Yue paused for a second before he started laughing freely.

“Does brother Tie know me?” Liu Ming showed some surprise.

“Hehe, Junior Jin Yu is quite arrogant and his ability to control puppets can be said to be only found in a thousand years. Ever since he was defeated by your hands, he started cultivating like crazy and has said that he will personally defeat you.” Tie Yue spoke with a hint of glee, and he appraised Liu Ming as if he was something exotic.

“I was merely lucky to win last time. If we were to fight again, I would have no chances of winning. However, brother Tie’s puppet is quite

interesting.”

Hearing this, Liu Ming furrowed his brow and changed the topic of the conversation.

“Indeed, these kinds of puppets that can carry someone are indeed quite rare even in the Nine Enchantment Mountain. These puppets have their strengths and weaknesses. Using one to travel through some dangerous region, like what we just passed through, is its advantage. However, in fights, it is merely a large target. After all, it is quite big.” Tie Yue explained and then sighed.

“I see! However, since brother Tie has reached this point, what will you do next?” Liu Ming nodded and his expression revealed nothing as he asked his next question.

“Does this even need to be said? Since I’m at this treasure mountain, I won’t be returning empty-handed. Junior Bai, do you want to come with me? With puppets scouting, it’ll be much safer than you traveling by yourself.” Tie Yue’s eyes blinked as he replied.

“Thank you for the offer but I expended quite a bit of Fa Li earlier and I’ll rest for a while before considering going into the mountain.” Hearing this, Liu Ming responded without hesitation.

“In that case, I won’t force Junior Bai. I’ll be leaving first.” The round-faced youth gave a big smile and cupped his hands.

After replying, he went back into the giant ape.

With a “hong long” sound, the giant ape stood up straight and took large strides as it moved toward the mountain.

Although the speed of the ape wasn’t very fast, each stride would bring it over twenty feet. In seconds, it disappeared into the forests not too far away.

Liu Ming looked in the direction that the giant ape went in and narrowed his eyes. Then, he shot toward a different direction that was slightly off from the path that the giant ape took.

Not too long later, Liu Ming stopped in a tree hole at the edge of the mountain. After patting the leather pouch at his waist, the White Bone Scorpion appeared in a huge cloud of green gas. It then rubbed Liu Ming with its front two claws before digging into the ground.

Seeing this, Liu Ming relaxed and sat down in the tree hole. He started to recover the Fa Li that he had lost earlier.

Liu Ming's stay in the tree hole took about half a day. When he opened his eyes again, not only was his Fa Li completely recovered, his spirit was also much better than before.

After all, the experiences for the past few days also took quite a toll on Liu Ming's spirit.

"Pu!"

Green gas puffed out of the ground in front of the tree hole before the White Bone Scorpion came digging out of the ground. It then croaked a "gua" sound twice at Liu Ming and seemed to be quite happy.

Liu Ming stilled for a second before seeing an emerald green Spirit Stone in each of the claws of the White Bone Scorpion.

"Wood Spirit Stone!"

Liu Ming took the two green stones, and after fiddling with them for a second, he exclaimed in surprise.

"Didn't I tell you to stay here? Where did you find these things?" In his shock, Liu Ming could not help but scold the White Bone Scorpion.

The result was the scorpion's green flame eyes flashing for a couple of times before it dug itself back into the ground. In a little while, it came out of the ground and there were another two emerald green stones in its two claws.

"There are a lot of Wood Attribute Spirit Stones below!" This time, Liu Ming was quite shocked and his heart started beating fast.

# Chapter 117: Levitation Grass and the Centipede

It must be known that the value of Wood Spirit Stones were among the top for the five elemental Spirit Stones.

After all, in both the farming of Spirit Plants and many healing practices, Wood Spirit Stones were used heavily. In addition, the production of Wood Spirit Stones was much lower compared to the other elemental Spirit Stones.

Thus, a single low level Wood Spirit Stone would be able to sell for up to twenty Spirit Stones. If it was a middle level Wood Spirit Stone, its worth would be about forty thousand Spirit Stones.

Because of this, Liu Ming twisted his wrist without hesitation and his sword appeared immediately. After Liu Ming placed his Fa Li within it, it started to emit a half-foot-long, cold, green light. He then hacked it violently at the ground.

Under the green light, the ground was cut away as if it were tofu.

Liu Ming's other hand grabbed at thin air and lifted up, throwing out dirt that was the size of a washbowl.

At the same time, the White Bone Scorpion started wildly waving its two huge claws and started helping Liu Ming dig.

Two hours later, there was a tunnel that was two hundred feet long and straight down. The dirt that was dug out even made a small mound next to the tunnel.

Suddenly, the White Bone Scorpion stopped digging and, with a twist of its body, became green gas and tunneled downward.

Liu Ming's eyes sparkled as his green sword slashed down again. Suddenly, his slash made a "ka cha" sound and what he hit wasn't soft dirt and instead a thick rock layer.

Without another word, Liu Ming struck out another few times before he

felt his body suddenly become weightless as he fell.

What he landed in was a natural rock cavern. Although it wasn't very large, at most hundreds of feet in both length and width, its gray-white walls were imbued with light green Spirit Stones and ores of other color.

In the wall, some of the stones were the size of a fist while others were only about the size of a bean. However, they all shrouded the cavern with an aura of vibrant life.

Liu Ming was incredibly happy and when he was about to walk near the cave walls to take a closer, a thick scent of vegetation entered his nose. After a quick scan, Liu Ming found emerald green grass in the corner of the cavern. Although it was only two inches long, it was almost transparent and covered by a white mist.

“Levitation Grass”

Liu Ming only needed to glance at the small grass before he exclaimed in surprise.

He quickly took out the “All Inclusive Guide to Spirit Objects”. After scanning through it, he found a page that had a picture that matched what he was seeing.

“Levitation Grass, a natural Spirit Object. It is very rare and only born in places of abundant wood attributed Qi. If consumed raw, it can make one's body as light as a feather and help one develop immunities to some poisons along with the ability to calm one's mind. It's the main Spirit Ingredient in many formulas. The distinguishing factors are as followed....”

Liu Ming quickly looked through the description in the book and matched it to the small grass in the corner. After confirming that they were exactly the same, he walked over without hesitation. Lowering his body, he touched the grass lightly with his finger.

A cool feeling came surging onto his finger!

Liu Ming then wafted the milky white gas next to the grass and sniffed it with his nose. Immediately, a thick fresh scent went into his nose as his

spirit immediately freshened.

“Good, it matches the description completely. It definitely is that Spirit Grass! Although such a good thing can be used in alchemy, it definitely cannot go into the outside world.”

Liu Ming muttered to himself before he dug out the small grass. He then cast a water ball to wash the grass. Afterward, he ate the grass whole.

Liu Ming had thought that the grass would be quite bitter. Yet the moment the grass touched his tongue, it actually transformed into a sweet liquid that flowed straight into his throat.

After sucking his mouth, Liu Ming realized that his entire mouth was quite sweet. After that, he stretched his legs and jumped a couple of times. However, he didn't feel anything out of the ordinary.

It seemed that the grass would slowly improve Liu Ming's physique instead of it being a one time thing.

Even if it was like this, Liu Ming was still very satisfied with his find.

The Levitation Grass was incredibly rare in the outside world. Even though Liu Ming did not know how many Spirit Stones the grass would sell for, but to be called “extremely rare” by the book, its worth could be imagined.

Liu Ming reminisced about the sweet taste and was about to check the ores and Spirit Stones on the cavern walls when the White Bone Scorpion next to him made strange screeches. Immediately, it raised its claws at a nearby wall and acted as if it was facing a strong foe.

Surprised, Liu Ming looked at the wall and found that there was a slit a few feet long in the wall, and from within, purple gas was billowing forth.

“This is...”

Liu Ming's mind thought of something, but before he could do anything else, he suddenly felt dizzy and a faint scent of blood came to his nose.

“Poison!”

Liu Ming let out a shocked cry and instantly stopped his breathing. His

body shot back as he quickly took out a green bottle and placed a crimson pill that was within the bottle into his mouth.

After he finished his actions, he finally felt the dizziness in his head lessen slightly.

Liu Ming didn't know that the purple gas actually was much more deadly than just dizziness and the pill that he had just taken wouldn't have much of an effect.

If it weren't for the fact that Liu Ming had eaten the Levitation Grass and used the Marrow Washing Liquid to strengthen his body, he might have really died already without a sound.

The White Bone Scorpion seemed to not really fear the purple poisonous gas. When Liu Ming backed away, it instead raised the stinger on its tail and the green flames in its eye sockets soared.

At this time, a hoarse sound was transmitted from the slit and a huge amount of purple gas came pouring out. Then, a four-foot-long to five-foot-long centipede with incredibly long antennae. Its entire body was green and it constantly emitted purple gas from its mouth. With just one glance, one could see that the centipede was incredibly poisonous.

"Chi chi", the scorpion's back stinger moved slightly and a dozen of black lines shot out!

The large centipede that had just climbed out immediately had a dozen black-red-colored holes cover its body as emerald green poisonous blood shot out of the holes.

When the centipede felt the attack, it immediately became enraged. After coiling together, it jumped into the air and pounced forward, toward the White Bone Scorpion. At the same time, the small feet under its body moved to reveal a small purple-red spike at the end of each leg.

The White Bone Scorpion shook and dodged the attacks of the centipede. At the same time, the black stinger of the White Bone Scorpion shook and pushed away the centipede that was still in the air. Afterward, in a "sou" sound, it turned into a ball of green gas that pounced onto the



centipede. It then waved its front claws and snapped at the centipede.

However, the centipede's shell seemed to be abnormally hard. Even the sharp White Bone Scorpion's claws could only make dents that were of varying depth without actually harming the centipede.

However, the White Bone Scorpion's back stinger was able wound the centipede's body quite a few times.

However, the centipede's life force was incredibly strong and despite the many wounds that it took, it still had the strength to wiggle around trying to free itself. In addition, its small spikes made many scars on the ground while the poisonous gas that it spit out was even more dense than before. In a few moments, it almost made a huge ball of purple gas that encompassed the surrounding area.

Even the gray rocks around the centipede started to crumble apart under the deadly poisonous gas.

Liu Ming originally thought about helping but after taking two steps forward, he started to smell a bloody scent while his head once again became dizzy. With shock, he immediately jumped back.

The White Bone Scorpion was completely in control. Liu Ming wasn't too insistent on going forward.

As for long ranged attacks, the giant centipede was in a deadlock with the scorpion and the purple gas was obstructing the vision of Liu Ming. Thus, in fear, Liu Ming didn't do much extra.

However, Liu Ming could only stand still for a few moments before his face darkened.

Under the thick purple gas, the White Bone Scorpion, which was at a great advantage, hacked a few more times before its movements started to become sluggish. At the same time, the green flame in its eye sockets diminished by a visible amount.

The green centipede took this chance to struggle free of the scorpion and fight the scorpion on even ground.

In addition, abnormal light purple spots started to surface on the White Bone Scorpion's originally deathly white body.

The purple gas was so strong that even the White Bone Scorpion couldn't resist after being exposed to it for a while.

Liu Ming's mind quickly spun as he decided used to use the Communication Spirit Technique to link to the White Bone Scorpion's conscious.

In the next moment, the White Bone Scorpion's stinger vaguely waved and forced the centipede to retreat one step. The scorpion's lower legs then moved and it immediately ran out of the poisonous cloud.

After taking such a large flurry of attacks, the centipede was naturally unwilling to let the scorpion go. After a hiss, it chased after the scorpion with green blood trailing out of it.

However, the moment the centipede left the purple gas cloud, Liu Ming raised his two hands and "sou, sou" sounds rang out. Seven or eight wind blades instantly shot forward.

In shock, the centipede tried to slink back into the poisonous cloud but it was too late.

After a green flash, all of the wind blades landed on the centipede without fail.

After a "ka cha" sound, each of the wind blades impaled themselves about halfway into the centipede's body before not being able to go any further.

The centipede rolled on the ground from the pain and into the purple gas.

A killing intent surfaced on Liu Ming's face and after the twist of his wrist, a light green sword appeared in his hands. After a low roar, he slashed toward the gas.

"Chi!"

A line of green Sword Qi flashed out and sliced through the poisonous

gas.

In the next moment, hissing sounds within the purple gas intensified as green blood started to pour out. Afterward, loud “peng, peng” sounds echoed in the cave. It was as if the centipede was still trying struggle for life.

Liu Ming’s brows jumped. Putting away the sword, he made hand signs with both of his hands and scarlet fireballs started showing up in his hands. After a flick of his wrist, five to six fireballs shot out.

“Hong, hong.” The fireballs exploded within the poisonous gas and turned everything into rolling flames.

# Chapter 118: Attack

Under the sea of fire, the poisonous cloud slowly disappeared. In moments, everything went back to silence.

Liu Ming slitted his eyes as his sleeve brushed at the sea of flames. Immediately, a large gust of wind passed by and extinguished all of the flames. All that was left under the sea of flames were two segments of ash-black centipede corpses.

This made Liu Ming somewhat surprised.

It was obvious that the centipede had some resistance to fire or else it would have definitely turned into dust while being exposed to the sea of flames. There was no other way anything could be left.

At the time, a “sou” sound was made and the originally lackluster White Bone Scorpion rushed past Liu Ming and made a beeline for a segment of the centipede corpse. After its two claws hacked at the corpse, it was able to scavenge two things out.

They were a purple-red meat ball and an emerald green crystal.

The meat ball was only the size of a fist and purple liquid would occasionally drip from it. The moment these drops of purple liquid hit the floor, they would make a black hole in the ground.

This ball of meat was in fact the giant centipede’s poison sac.

As for the other emerald crystal, it looked like a Wood Spirit Stone. However, upon closer inspection, it could be found that the color of the crystal was much thicker and more intense than an ordinary Wood Spirit Stone.

Before Liu Ming could study them more, the Bone Scorpion swallowed the poison sac. After a strange cry, the poisonous spots on the scorpion began to spread. Then, the body of the scorpion shuddered before it lay down on the ground and stopped moving.

When Liu Ming saw this, he immediately used his Communication Spirit Technique to connect with the White Bone Scorpion. However, the

ghost's conscious was quite dizzy and didn't have much of a reaction.

Liu Ming's brows furrowed and he didn't show an expression of surprise. The White Bone Scorpion controlled its own thoughts and it probably wouldn't harm itself by swallowing the poison sac.

However, Liu Ming was afraid of the scorpion being unconscious for a couple of days. If that was the case, it would be quite troublesome.

It should be known that the final tens of days were quite crucial. It was quite likely that the disciples of the other sects would be fighting with Liu Ming. Without the help of the White Bone Scorpion, his strength would diminish by almost half.

Liu Ming was thinking of this as the purple poisonous spots on the White Bone Scorpion slowly spread to the rest of its body. The front claw that held the emerald crystal loosened, allowing the crystal to fall out. At the same time, green gas bubbled out of its body, covering the White Bone Scorpion's entire body.

Liu Ming paused for a second before he walked up and picked up the green crystal. In addition, he brought it before his eyes.

At close proximity, he realized that there was a silky, milky-white thing within the crystal. It also faintly emitted a bloody scent.

Liu Ming thought about everything within the "All Inclusive Guide to Spirit Objects" and couldn't remember anything that looked the same as the crystal.

It seemed that the spoils of his fight would have to wait until Liu Ming left the secret realm – when there would be time to identify the object.

While the scorpion was unable to move, Liu Ming decided to take the chance to remove the Wood Spirit Stones and other ores in the cavern.

As Wood Spirit Stone after Wood Spirit Stone was dug out of the wall via the green sword, Liu Ming received fifty to sixty Spirit Stones.

Most of the Spirit Stones were the size of a finger while the largest stone was about the size of two fists. However, there were two Middle Tier

Wood Spirit Stones that were each the size of a chicken egg. Such large Middle Tier Spirit Stones were also quite rare in the outside world and they could be sold for quite a fortune.

However, the other ores around the Spirit Stones left Liu Ming disappointed. They were mostly worthless or of very little value.

Liu Ming picked the most value ores among them and was too lazy to pick the rest up.

After Liu Ming put away the Spirit Stones within the Sumeru Handkerchief, he looked at the White Bone Scorpion. However, the scorpion did not seem as if it was going to wake up anytime soon. Thus, Liu Ming shook his head and started looking around the cavern for things that he might have missed.

Moments later, Liu Ming's gaze rested on the slit that the giant centipede crawled out of and he had an idea. He walked over and patted the wall next to the slit and it actually made "tong, tong" sounds as if it led to an empty space.

Liu Ming's eyes brightened and after his sleeve shook, the green sword appeared.

A slash of light flew over the wall. With a single punch, a round hole that was a few feet in diameter appeared before Liu Ming.

However, the inside of the hole was quite dark and Liu Ming was quite hesitant to walk in so easily.

Liu Ming muttered to himself and flicked a finger. A scarlet flame jumped out and lazily floated in the dark hole before staying stationary in the air.

The red light in the hole completely dispersed the darkness from before.

Liu Ming saw everything clearly and he lowered his head to entered the hole he made.

There was a miniature cavern behind the hole that was thirty to forty feet in length. However, there were many bones in the cavern and there

was a thick dry grass layer on the floor. In the most moist area of the cavern, there were two bug eggs that were filled with purple markings. Both of the eggs were about the size of a fist and were beaming with vitality.

It was obvious that the two eggs were left by the centipede from earlier.

Seeing this, Liu Ming was overjoyed.

With how strong the centipede from earlier was, its eggs probably weren't a low level. Whether Liu Ming hatched them himself or sold them in the outside world, he would be very well off.

Liu Ming instantly took out a jade box and carefully placed the eggs into it. He then used the Sumeru Handkerchief to put it away. Afterward, he checked the bones scattered in the cavern.

Unfortunately, these bones were of low level monsters.

Without any other discoveries, Liu Ming left the small cavern.

In the remaining time, Liu Ming found a clean spot in the large cavern and sat down quietly.

He had a plan in mind and decided to wait for the White Bone Scorpion for another half day. If the scorpion wasn't awake by then, then he would put the scorpion in his Cultivating Soul Pouch. After all, him going on the road to search for treasures was more important.

Like this, time passed slowly.

After about two hours, the green gas on the surface of the bone scorpion started to turn. Its color underwent a rapid change, visible to the naked eye, until it turned into a purple gas that was the exact same as what the giant centipede had used earlier.

Seeing how the ground next to the purple gas slowly turned black, even if the potency of the new gas wasn't as powerful as the gas from the giant centipede, it wasn't that far behind.

With just swallowing the centipede's poison sac, the White Bone Scorpion actually inherited most of the poison attributes of the centipede.

With a “gua” sound, the purple gas disappeared and the White Bone Scorpion showed up again.

The scorpion now had deep purple spots on its shell while everything else was the same as before.

Liu Ming squinted with his eyes and tried to communicate with the scorpion.

In the next moment, the scorpion shook its head. Opening its mouth, it spit a ball of purple gas onto a nearby wall.

“Peng!”

The ball of gas spread out and covered the wall. Immediately, the wall that was covered began to crumble and melt.

Seeing this, Liu Ming was very satisfied. Without hesitation, he stood up and patted the Cultivating Soul Pouch on his waist. Immediately, a cloud of black gas came out and the White Bone Scorpion shrank into the pouch.

With a single-handed technique, Liu Ming summoned a gray cloud and started to fly up through the tunnel that he had dug.

As soon as Liu Ming appeared out of the tunnel, he saw a bloody light flash before him. In an instant, a blood red blade neared Liu Ming’s neck. His head was about to be cut off.

Although Liu Ming seemed as if he was very relaxed without any defenses, the habits that he had developed on Savage Island were still with him. The totem sword that he kept in his sleeve immediately went up instinctively and blocked the attack.

A large “hong” reverberated as Liu Ming felt his arms grow warm. Under a great force, his body was pushed backward. Slanted, he flew out of the tunnel and knocked the trees next to the tunnel down.

Before Liu Ming could stabilize his body while under extreme anger, he heard a familiar “chi chi” sound.

Immediately after, he saw green flashes before his eyes. Seven to eight



wind blades shot out with sharp sounds and were about to cut Liu Ming in pieces.

For other normal disciples, after receiving such a strong blow, the Fa Li within their body would be greatly disturbed and they wouldn't be able to craft any defenses against the wind blades.

Liu Ming's face changed and with a thought, green light began to burst from one of his arms. Countless green lines shot out from his body, making a light green mirage. At the same time, his body almost folded together in half as if there were no bones in his body.

Most of the wind blades were dodged by Liu Ming's incredible feat. However, three Wind Blades still hit him and made a string of muffled sounds before disappearing.

Liu Ming's body straightened and returned to normal before he landed tens of feet away.

All that was on his chest were a couple of long and swallow wounds with blood flowing out. However, because of how shallow his wounds were, the blood flowing out suddenly stopped after the Fa Li in Liu Ming passed through the wounds.

At the same time, the mirage flashed a couple of times before it became something solid. It was actually an armor that was weaved out of vines. Although it was extremely simple, it could still protect the vital spots on the top half of his body.

It was Liu Ming activating a Spirit Vine seed at a crucial moment, transforming the vine into armor.

If it weren't for the suddenness of the ambush and the vine armor not getting a chance to completely solidify, even the wounds wouldn't be left.

At this time, Liu Ming's face was still extremely ugly. A small half of that was because of the twitching pain caused by the activation of the Blood Vine Technique. The other half was because not too far from Liu Ming were two people, one male and the other female, that had joined to ambush him.

The man had a bloody robe while he held a blade in his hand. In addition, his face was full of killing intent. The female had the robes of the Firestorm Way and was abnormally well developed. She had peachy eyes with a misty green, short ruler.

Both of them showed surprised expressions on their faces. Obviously, the failure of their sudden ambush was beyond their expectations.

# Chapter 119: Flying Needle

“You guys are looking to die!”

Liu Ming stared at the two people ahead of him while feeling the threads of pain in his chest and spitting the words out one by one.

Under normal circumstances, he would have Martial Aunt's Glyph Armor to protect him. Even if the wind blades had broken through the vine armor mirage, they wouldn't have hurt him. However, when Liu Ming was faced with the attack, his Fa Li was still in shock. Therefore, it was impossible for him to expedite his Fa Li into his Glyph Armor.

A Glyph Armor without Fa Li was merely some fancy looking bamboo sticks without any defensive powers. The winds blades would be able to easily cut through the sticks and hit Liu Ming's body.

Now that his Fa Li was once again back to normal, all Liu Ming needed to do was push a tiny bit of Fa Li into the Glyph Armor to completely restore the wounds on the armor.

Hearing Liu Ming's cold words, the Firestorm Way and Hall of Blood disciple suddenly both smiled after looking at each other.

“Hehe, kid, you are quite young yet your tone is very arrogant. Did you really think that you luckily dodging that attack would mean that you can fight us two? Immediately leave all the treasures that you have. If me and Junior Wu decide to be nice, we might leave you with your life.” The blood-robed youth walked next to the Firestorm Way disciple and made a vicious smile.

“Looks like little brother has only started cultivating for three to four years. Even if you have incredible talent, how much fighting experience can you have? The reason why you were able to dodge our attacks was because of your slightly fast reaction. Do you really think that you're our opponent!? Why don't you obediently take out your treasures. No matter how precious your treasures are, can they possibly be more valuable than your life!” The Firestorm Way disciple giggled as she spoke.

“Do you really think I’m a three year old child!”

Hearing this, Liu Ming’s eyes narrowed. Suddenly, he threw out the short sword in his hand and placed his Fa Li into it. With a flick of his wrist, a misty green Sword Qi suddenly shot down below his feet.

“Pu!”

A fist-sized hole appeared in the ground. Instantly, a desperate hiss was made as a gush of blood shot out of the hole.

As the surrounding dirt burst apart, a black snake that was a few feet long flew out. There was a bloody wound on its body that almost cut it into two. With a flick of the tail, it fiercely rushed at Liu Ming.

However, Liu Ming seemed prepared for the appearance of the black snake. The green sword in his hand had already become blurry as he slashed at the air.

After a cold light, the black snake turned into three segments that fell heavily. The snake blood instantly dyed the surrounding ground.

“How dare you kill my Little Black!” The Firestorm Way girl was shocked at the scene for a moment before crying out in anger.

Although the black snake seemed ordinary, it was actually a Spirit Snake that had a sliver of serpent-dragon blood. It was unknown how much effort the girl had gone to to buy the snake from a market. If it had been carefully raised until it was over a hundred, it would have had a high chance of entering the Spirit Master realm.

Seeing her precious snake killed, the pain in her heart could obviously be inferred.

When the Hall of Blood youth saw this situation, his face also darkened.

Although the two of them seemed like they were trying to convince Liu Ming to surrender, they actually had let the black snake tunnel underground, preparing for another surprise attack. Thus, they had no intention of letting Liu Ming live.

However, with the strong mental strength of Liu Ming along with White

Bone Scorpion's ability to tunnel underground, he was quite sensitive to any movement originating within the earth. The moment the black snake was about a dozen feet from Liu Ming, he had realized it, and he took the first strike without any reluctance.

Then, when Liu Ming heard the Firestorm Way's female disciple crying out with anger, Liu Ming didn't even bother responded. He patted his Cultivating Soul Bag and immediately, a bright light came streaming out.

With "gua gua" sounds, the White Bone Scorpion appeared within a cloud of purple gas. After a shake of its tail, it then tunneled into the ground and disappeared.

"A ghost! Junior Wu, be careful. Let's first take out this kid. Without a master, the ghost won't pose any threats to us." Seeing the White Bone Scorpion, the Hall of Blood youth gave a low cry and made a single-handed technique. Immediately, bloody mist came rolling off of his blood red robe and made him almost illusory.

As for the Firestorm Way disciple, she snapped out of her loss when she heard her companion's words. Throwing a gaze filled with hate and anger at Liu Ming, she also began to mutter and started to wave her short green ruler.

Dots of green lights started to appear before a complete green light cover appeared in front of the girl. Then, she started to slowly float upward, finally stopping about seven to eight hundred feet above the ground. The height was probably to create a buffer against any attacks that the White Bone Scorpion could launch at her from underground.

Then, with a single-handed technique, wind blades started appearing and floating before her. There were a total of seven to eight in mere seconds.

"Complete Mastery of the Wind Blade Technique!"

Seeing this, Liu Ming's eyes narrowed. Without another word, he also made a one-handed technique and seven to eight Wind Blades appeared before him.

When the Firestorm Way disciple that was still in the air saw this, her face changed a little.

At this time, the Hall of Blood disciple that was hidden within the bloody mist made a large roar. His arm wielding the blood red blade moved and a tainted blood-colored light blade shot out with a sharp screech.

In coordination, the Firestorm Way girl pointed at Liu Ming with her ruler. Immediately, the wind blades floating in front of her shot at Liu Ming.

Liu Ming shook his sleeve and the wind blades in front of him instantly shot forward. With the green sword in his hand, he also made green sword qi shoot out.

First, the wind blades collided together. However, the wind blades by the Firestorm Way disciple only made a green flash before they were completely destroyed into dots of light by Liu Ming's wind blades.

Liu Ming's wind blades were still in pristine condition after the encounter. After a flash, they appeared before the Firestorm Way girl's face.

Shocked, the girl waved the short green ruler in her hand. Immediately, a green tornado rose up before her and sucked all of the wind blades into it.

A sky shaking sound roared across at this time!

The green sword qi and the blood red blade qi had crashed together.

The green and red lights intertwined as they both started tearing each other apart. In the end, they both exploded in a muffled explosion, unleashing waves of pressurized air that expanded in a circle around them and forcefully tearing a layer off of the surround ground.

Faced with such a sight, the Hall of Blood disciple was not surprised in the least. He immediately stepped heavily on the ground and with bloody mist surrounding him, he went forward into the pressurized air waves.

Liu Ming immediately made another seven to eight wind blades that shot at the Hall of Blood disciple when he saw that the disciple was trying to get close to him.

With “dang, dang” sounds, the Hall of Blood disciple waved his blood red blade and knocked away all of the wind blades. With another jump, he was merely tens of feet away from Liu Ming. Despite how close he was, the disciple stopped completely. However the blood red blade in his hand became blurry as he raised it above his head with both hands and started chanting some indecipherable words.

Immediately, the blood mist around the Hall of Blood discipline surged into the blood red blade.

The blood red blade that was originally less than three feet long became a huge, strange looking enormous blade that was almost ten feet long.

At the same time, the aura emitted by him became extremely dangerous.

The Firestorm Way disciple that had just used her tornado to sweep away the wind blades didn't force an attack on Liu Ming. Instead, she crushed a white glyph and pointed her green ruler at the Hall of Blood disciple.

With a white flash, a strand of white gas appeared and intertwined with the body of the Hall of Blood disciple.

Seeing this, Liu Ming's face darkened. Without giving it another thought, he shook his green sword and another line of green sword qi shot out.

In addition, the ground beneath the disciple parted and two giant black claws appeared and clamped down.

However, the Hall of Blood disciple gave an arrogant laugh and with another flash of light, he actually managed to make three separate faint illusions of himself.

Both the green sword qi and the two giant claws passed through one of the faint illusions, not connecting with anything.

At the same time, the giant blade from all three illusions came crashing down toward Liu Ming.

“Hong!”

Two of the illusions disappeared in a flash while a bloody light flew from the leftmost illusion. At first, it was only one streak of light but seconds later, the attack became so numerous that it was able to cover the sky.

With the sky almost painted blood red, it was an extremely terrifying sight.

For any normal person, when faced with such a sight, they would probably be in huge shock and try to retreat. However, a flash of determination appeared on Liu Ming’s face and he gave a long howl. Then, he put all of his Fa Li into his short sword and suddenly took a step forward.

Three green inscriptions appeared on the surface of the sword before seven to eight thick sword qis shot out.

While flying, the sword qis all became blurry for an instant before they combined together to become a green round moon shaped sword qi. With a spin, the moon crashed into the bloody attack.

“Hu la!”

The round moon and the bloody light intersected and smashed into each other. The impact immediately caused low and deep muffled bursts of sound to be emitted. Faintly, they actually each made a swirl and started to crazily suck in everything around them. Even the surrounding space was slightly contorted.

At this time, a ripple formed behind Liu Ming and a faint image ghostily appeared.

With a bloody flash, a blood red blade slowly bit toward Liu Ming’s neck.

“Pu!”



Liu Ming instantly sensed it and twisted his body. At the same time, his arm became blurry as one of his fingers flicked something.

A seemingly dark light flashed from the tip of his finger as if something had shot out.

With that, an extremely shrill scream sounded!

The faint image slowly solidified. It was the Hall of Blood disciple. However, he had currently thrown down his blood blade and used both hands to cover his face as he fell.

# Chapter 120: Cyan Ganoderma

His body twitched a few times on the ground before he went completely silent and still.

Liu Ming waved one hand at the corpse and the sound of air being split apart resonated; a slim dark green needle appeared out of thin air. After a vague movement, it disappeared without a trace into Liu Ming's sleeve.

It was the Jade Shadow Needle!

The Hall of Blood disciple's strength couldn't be considered weak; moreover, he also harbored various strong Hall of Blood Secret Techniques. Only, he was overly confident in his close combat ability and didn't realize that Liu Ming also possessed another Totem. On top of that, it was also one of the rarest totems: a needle type Totem. Only when Liu Ming managed to use the two Totems to catch his opponent off guard, was he able to take his life. The surprise attack allowed him to breach the defensive Fa Li and forcibly penetrate the disciple's head, taking his life.

Without anyone controlling it, the omnipresent blood light was engulfed by the round cyan moon and everything underneath once again reemerged.

When the Firewind Way's female disciple saw the young Hall of Blood disciple's corpse, she involuntarily cried out and displayed an expression of disbelief.

It was only natural this girl was like this!

Just now, the Hall of Blood youth had clearly performed a strong Secret Technique and had clearly gained the upper hand; however, in the blink of an eye, the technique had been broken and he had been transformed into a corpse. The changes to the situation occurred so quickly that no matter who the person was, he or she would have no way of accepting them.

Nevertheless, when Liu Ming turned his body back, he wore an

expressionless face as he looked at the enchanting female.

The enchanting girl's pretty face instantly paled. She seemed to shake herself back to reality as she suddenly turned and transformed into a cyan light that was rapidly retreating.

However, as she was retreating Liu Ming's two hands formed a technique. He brought his two hands together before pulling them apart causing a five-foot-long enormous wind blade to suddenly manifest in front of him.

His arm shook and the enormous wind blade transformed into a ray of cyan light, whisking through the air.

The Firestorm Way's female suddenly heard a shrill cry. She instantly swiped her short ruler in a frantic manner behind her.

A cyan ruler figure that was tens of feet long became obstructed behind her.

In the next second, a few snapping sounds echoed and the enormous wind blade severed both the ruler and the disciple's protective cyan light apart. It then passed through her waist.

The enchanting female let out a cry as her body transformed into two pieces that fell from the sky and heavily hit the ground.

However, even in this situation, the girl didn't immediately die; instead, with a malevolent expression, she retrieved a Glyph and instantly tried to crush it.

In the next second, however, a swooshing sound echoed from the ground and a black streak rapidly shot out. In a flash, it pierced the girl's skull.

The front end of the black streak astonishingly was an abnormally sharp blackish dark green scorpion hook.

This time, the girl only slightly moved her mouth a few times before the object in her hands fell out and her neck went slack; she didn't breath again.

At this time, the White Bone Scorpion crawled from the adjacent ground

and pulled its scorpion hook out of the corpse.

Subsequently, Liu Ming calmly walked over and eyed the object that fell from the hand of the girl. With one hand, he grabbed it and put it in his palm.

It was a light cyan-colored Glyph!

However, the exterior of the Glyph held traces of scarlet red Spirit Inscriptions. After using his mental energy to examine it, Liu Ming immediately discovered that an exceptionally berserk wind and fire Yuan Li was contained within it. It was clear that this was not a normal object.

Liu Ming obviously took this clearly high ranked attack Glyph.

To the side, the White Bone Scorpion moved its claws and brought two items from the surrounding ground to Liu Ming's side.

Liu Ming carefully examined and discovered that it was a cyan-colored jade ruler. Only, it had split into two pieces.

It seemed that this item was a peak tier Practitioner Weapon and not a Totem. Otherwise, even if its ruler silhouette was destroyed by the enormous wind blade, it would not be enough to break the original body.

Even though it was in this state, Liu Ming still took the two pieces and further rummaged through the Firestorm Way girl's corpse to find another dozen or so Glyphs, a few bottles of medicinal pills, two mid tier Practitioner Weapons and a pouch filled with miscellaneous items.

Within the pouch he also found a small and exquisite cloth bag; unexpectedly, it was another Sumeru Handkerchief.

Liu Ming's eyes lit up and he instantly weighed the bag in his hand. Subsequently, he muttered an incantation and his hand formed a few symbols. Next, he grabbed the bag and lightly shook it at the ground.

A multi-colored light rolled out.

A pile of items suddenly appeared on the ground; the items seemed to be ores and six or seven small boxes crafted from jade or wood.

Liu Ming examined these ores with a quick glance before opening all

the jade boxes. Subsequently, an excited expression appeared on his face.

As expected, the items held in the wooden boxes were considerably expensive Spirit Grasses and Spirit Plants. Although they were incomparable to his Levitation Grass, two of the plants were not cheaper than his Mysterious Water Sunflower.

Liu Ming put the items into his Sumeru Handkerchief in an unrestrained manner before walking over to the Hall of Blood youth's corpse.

At this time, the upper half of the enchanting female's body had melted, and in such a short period of time, turned into a puddle of black and purple blood.

When the other half of the corpse touched the liquid blood, it also began to quietly dissolve.

The White Bone Scorpion's tail poison was unexpectedly this formidable.

Moments later, Liu Ming astonishingly obtained items of much greater value from the Hall of Blood youth's corpse compared to the Firestorm Way's girl disciple.

Aside from the low grade Totem in the form of a long, blood-colored blade, he also found a Cyan Ganoderma he could swallow from the opponent's Sumeru Handkerchief. It seemed to be at least three hundred to four hundred years old.

Exalted, Liu Ming immediately picked out the Spirit Plant and proceeded to swallow it.

When the Spirit Plant entered his stomach, a rush of heat instantly spread to his various meridians.

Liu Ming used a fireball to transform the Hall of Blood corpse into ashes. He then made the White Bone Scorpion defend the outside of the cave while he himself once again entered the cave and began to meditate.

After one hour, he let out a long sigh and once again reopened his eyes.

Currently, the Fa Li in his body had increased by a large amount. It was the equivalent to a few months of normal bitter training.

Moreover, this was after he had suppressed over half of the medicinal effects and had only refined a small portion.

If he were to fully refine it, he would most likely gain the same amount of Fa Li as half a year of training.

Although there were a few other Spirit Plant that also increased Fa Li among those that he collected, it was a pity that they were too impure and had to first be refined into pills. Otherwise, if he were to swallow a few, he would be able to enter the peak stage of a Late Spirit Apostle and wouldn't have to buy additional Fa Li increasing medicinal pills after exiting the Secret Realm.

Liu Ming let out a sigh before standing up and summoning his gray cloud. He hopped on it and flew out of the cave.

In the time it takes to have a cup of tea, Liu Ming had already put the White Bone Scorpion away and slowly disappeared into the mountain forest.

.....

Half a day later, a male wearing Fusion Sect apparel appeared in the nearby area.

When he approached the mountain forest, his pupils contracted. After he examined the area, he discovered the traces of the earlier battle. He also found the cave dug by Liu Ming.

After hesitating, he flew a few times around the area and determined that no one else was in nearby before he jumped into the cave and hastily began to inspect it.

However, when the seemingly scholarly male flew out of the cave and fixedly stared at the pool of blood that was the Firestorm Way girl, he sniffed the area and let out a solemn expression as he muttered, "What a terrifying poisonous power! I don't know which sect this person hails from but, he or she managed to fight one versus two and further managed

to kill both sect's disciples. Whatever, since this person went up the mountain this way, I should swap locations. It would be better if I didn't encounter such a monster."

The scholarly male shook his head and swiftly left in a different direction.

.....

Simultaneously, at the edge of the lengthy ravine, Yang Qian and a tall black-faced youth stood side by side.

The black-faced youth's eyes were abnormally bright and his body was covered in a shiny silver armor. In his hand was a light gold-colored, short rod.

Not far across the ravine, was an astonishing area of surging lava. Clouds of blackish-red vapor spiraled into the air and dyed most of the sky in a blackish-red color. It was as if one could feel the direct surging heat.

Through the red light of black smoke, seven or eight kilometers away, a large mountain peak still managed to catch the attention of the two of them.

"It's somewhat strange. We clearly walked in a perfectly straight direction but the compass pin in our hands still indicates that we've walked in a large circle. Without knowing, we've arrived here. Looking at this area, it should be the center of the secret realm. Brother Yang, what do you make of this situation?" The black-faced youth lowered his head and looked at the cyan-colored disk object in his hands and clicked his tongue.

"The situation is as it is! Of course, since we're already here, we should just take it easy. A few abnormal and peculiar activities occur in a secret realm. Contrary to what you might expect, finding the center is actually a glorious thing for us. After all, the majority of the secret realm's treasures are in that large mountain." Yang Qian seemed to be very familiar with the black-faced youth and indifferently replied.

“Yes, this does make sense. Since this is the case, we should see who arrives there first out of the two of us.” The black-faced youth nodded his head before he suddenly let out a laugh. Subsequently, his shoulders trembled and the armor on his body made a “Gabeng” sound. It unexpectedly transformed into a pair of silver-colored wings that were few tens of feet long.

The black-faced youth resolutely flapped the wings and his entire body soared into the sky as he arrogantly flew in the direction in front of him.

Although his flying speed dropped by half when he flew over the ravine, not even a trace of strain appeared on his expression. In a short while, he had slowly flown to the other side and didn’t even bother stopping as he continued to fly forward.

Seeing this, astonishment flashed over Yang Qian’s eyes; however, he let out a cold snort and slapped the dark green pouch on his waist. Instantly, a black gas surged out and after condensing, morphed into a twenty-foot-tall enormous bone ghost that had the head of an ox and the body of a human.

TL: Minotaur

“Go.”

Yang Qian performed a single-handed technique and expressionlessly gave a low roar.

Suddenly, the ghost in front rolled and transformed into a ten-foot-tall enormous bone bird amidst surging black gas.

This bird’s two phosphorus like white bone wings moved and soared into the sky while wrapped in the black gas; however, it made a revolution in the air before swooping back down and using its claws to grab onto Yang Qian’s shoulders. After lifting him up, it flew toward the ravine ahead.



# Chapter 121: Brother and Sister

On top of the surging lava, Duan Can Zu stared at the similar featured boy and girl standing in front of him. His face was abnormally pale and the long robe draped around him was astonishingly ripped to tatters, exposing a bandage like yellow ribbon wrapped around his skinny body; moreover, there were over ten ribbons wildly dancing around in the vicinity as they transformed into a ribbon constructed world.

However, even under such strict defenses, Duan Can Zu still exposed a hopeless expression as he spoke to the other two, "Do the two of you really want to kill me? If I were to disregard my own life, I might be able to take you down with me."

"Brother, listen to his howling! A weakling is just a weakling; he unexpectedly wants to use him risking his own life to scare us. Originally, I planned on giving him a quick death but right now, I don't want him to die so easily." The girl who looked around seventeen to eighteen years old was very cute, but when she sweetly giggled to her brother, she surprisingly spoke something that made one's blood run cold.

This girl and the neighboring male both astonishingly wore Fusion Sect apparel.

"Hmph, there's no time right now to let you have fun. Since this person discovered our secret, we definitely cannot let him live. Quickly make your move because if someone else were to arrive, it would be troublesome." The adjacent handsome male let out a harrumph as he spoke.

"Really? Ever since we left the clan, we haven't had many opportunities to have fun; nevertheless, since it's brother's command, as a younger sister, I must obey it." The cute young girl's mouth formed a pouting expression. It seemed as if she wasn't very happy.

However, when the opposing Duan Can Zu heard this, his body shivered and he suddenly crushed a Glyph in his hands. A plethora of cyan light threads suddenly emerged on the exterior of his body as his body abruptly

moved back. He transformed into a flying cyan light as he fled.

“Ge ge, trying to escape in front of us brother and sister is wishful thinking.”

When the cute young girl saw the situation unfold, she wasn't the least bit worried and instead delicately giggled.

Subsequently, a light blue Spirit Inscription suddenly appeared on the girl's face; next, her body twisted and she transformed into a ball of blue light that made a sonic boom as it gave chase. Its speed was fast and in a few flashes, like the flash of lightning from the spark of flint, it had nearly reached Duan Can Zu.

When Duan Can Zu saw this, his face flushed blood red and he suddenly let out a loud yell. The ribbons on his body abruptly went taut and they unexpectedly turned a light gold color as they wildly danced about.

Wherever the ribbon went, a loud “chichi” sound echoed. It was as if there were over ten sharp blades violently swinging about without pause. This caused Duan Can Zu's body to be enclosed by golden blade silhouettes.

However, the cute young girl turned a blind eye to these sharp blades and let out a giggle. She then dived into the thick layer of blade silhouettes.

A cold light flashed and instantly, a “pu pu” sound was heard. At least ten blade silhouettes instantaneously slashed at the cute, young girl's body.

Nevertheless, a shocking scene appeared.

A layer of blue light continuously circulated on the cute, young girl's body as she nonchalantly bore all of the attacks; furthermore, not even a scar appeared on her body.

Duan Can Zu was alarmed and hastily pulled out a short green saber from his sleeve and hacked at his opponents. However, it was already too late.

In a vague movement, the young girl's body brought about a fragrant wind as she appeared in front of him.

Duan Can Zu only saw the world go black as he proceeded to let out an extremely mournful shriek.

Two blood and flesh ridden holes astonishingly appeared on his face. In an instant, his eyeballs which had originally resided in his eye sockets had been forcibly removed by the girl in an inconceivable manner.

Even though Duan Can Zu could be considered one of the Barbarian Ghost Sect's outstanding disciples, after his eyeballs were suddenly removed, he suddenly became absolutely terrified. He could only risk his life and wildly swing the short, dark green saber in his hands in all directions.

Successive Saber Qi's crisscrossed and caused white markings to appear in the nearby empty space.

However, the cute, young girl let out a laugh and errantly moved about, causing him to be unable to accurately pinpoint the opponent's location.

Duan Can Zu's heart instantly sank.

"Sister, you've taken too long. Whatever, I'll personally get rid of him then." At this time, the male's cold voice suddenly rang in his ears.

In the next instant, Duan Can Zu suddenly heard the sound of billows in the nearby empty space as an enormous force violently rushed in all directions.

The dancing ribbons next to Duan Can Zu, after trembling, were successively suppressed and were made to retreat by the force.

His body became heavier and he wasn't even able to lift a finger.

"You guys..."

He let out a terrified yell and was about to suck in a breath and yell something else out, but the second he opened his mouth, a berserk Yuan Li poured into his mouth; unexpectedly, it stuffed whatever he was about to say.

Not even a trace of blood was visible on Duan Can Zu's face.

If his two eyes were still there, he would be able to see that in the nearby empty space the cute, young girl was pouting behind the Fusion Sect male.

As for the Fusion Sect male, his hands were in a circular position and the long hair that covered his head fluttered in the wind. Simultaneously, his fair skin was covered in deep blue Spirit Inscriptions. One of his eyes had completely turned dark blue.

The empty space surrounding Duan Can Zu was filled with sounds of water crashing, wave after wave. In addition, a continuous stream of light blue Glyphs rushed out from the space.

These blue Glyphs surrounded Duan Can Zu and continued to flutter about. In the time it takes to have a cup of tea, they had completely wrapped his body so that not even rain or wind could penetrate.

When the male saw this, his pupils flashed and his hands in a ring shape suddenly recombined in the center. He spat out the word, "Die."

Instantly, all the Glyphs abruptly crowded into the center. Duan Can Zu, who was trapped inside, slightly expanded before exploding with a muffled sound.

Countless pieces of flesh splattered about and this Barbarian Ghost Sect disciple disappeared without a trace from this world.

"Big brother, your Waterfall Technique is truly becoming increasingly formidable. It seems that in not even ten years you can return to the \*\*\*." Upon witnessing this scene, the cute young girl started beaming with happiness.

TL: Censored by the author.

"Sister, didn't I say that we cannot rashly speak of affairs concerning our clan? Earlier, if it weren't for you talking irresponsibly, how would our secret have been discovered by that brat? If it were heard by someone else, it would cause a lot of trouble." The male stopped his Secret Technique and his eyebrows creased as he spoke. Simultaneously, the

blue Spirit Inscription on his face disappeared without a trace in a flash.

“This place isn’t the external world and is composed of Spirit Apostle ordinary humans. At the very worst, we can just kill everyone here.” The girl used her pink tongue to lick her lips. She seemed to not care at all.

“What nonsense are you spouting! Don’t even think about doing that; if only the two of us exit the secret realm, when the time comes, do you believe that those human geezers in the external world would let us go easily? Although we have used secret medicines in the clan from when we were little and under normal circumstances our history would not be discovered by others, if a Crystal Level human were to personally use a Secret Technique to examine us, we won’t be able to get away.” The male’s face changed and he reprimanded her in a low voice.

“If this is the case, then what other point is there? Only with great difficulty were we able to come across a Natural Secret Realm like this. Don’t tell me that we have to politely share the various resources and treasures with the other human disciples?” The cute, young girl tilted her head and was still unconvinced as she spoke.

“Did you forget the plan from earlier?! We’ll let it pass if the other resources in the secret realm go to the human cultivators but we must take the Spirit Scarlet Dragon’s corpse for ourselves. As long as we are able to obtain this dragon’s corpse, we will have done a great deed for our clan. When the time comes, perhaps we will no longer need to stay in Fusion Sect. With only this contribution, we can leave directly for \*\*\*.” The male finally let out a hint of a fervent expression on his face as he replied.

“It would naturally be the best outcome if we truly are able to find this scarlet dragon. However, we don’t know how big this secret realm is. In order not to attract attention, we further are unable to perform the clan’s Escape Technique to examine the entire realm. It will be hard to find this scarlet dragon, unless brother wants to...” The cute, young girl nodded her head first, but then began to blink her eyes as she exposed an expression of hesitation.

“That’s true. Nearly half the time has already passed so it seems that I must use that item.” When the male heard this, he let out a soft sigh.

“Big brother, you have to think clearly. That item is for you to use to arouse the strength of your bloodline when you attempt to enter the Liquid Level; furthermore, it was specially gifted by the clan’s elder. If we are to use it now, the clan definitely will not bestow it a second time.” When the cute, young girl heard the male’s words, for the first time, her expression turned serious.

“Don’t worry, I know what I’m doing. Although that bottle of pure Ocean Dragon blood is precious, how can it compare to an entire Crystal Level Scarlet Dragon? As long as we obtain the Scarlet Dragon’s corpse, we can rely on such a great merit to easily exchange it for another bottle of pure Ocean Dragon blood. Thinking about it the other way, if we aren’t able to use such an opportunity to obtain it, then it will cause me to regret it forever.” A trace of decisiveness appeared on the male’s face as he spoke.

TL: Both Dragons are actually Serpent Dragons and not “real” Dragons

“Since big brother has thought it through, as a sister, I won’t stop you. Are we going to perform the technique now?” The cute, young girl let out a sigh as she spoke.

“We should temporarily take things slowly. That Scarlet Dragon has sustained heavy injuries and is most likely in that enormous mountain, using the dense Yuan Qi in that place to preserve a bit of its life. When we enter the interior, I will perform the technique and sense the Scarlet Dragon’s location in order to not waste the bottle of pure blood.” The male said in an extremely confident manner.

When the girl heard this, she naturally did not express dissent.

Thus, the two people retrieved the Sumeru Handkerchief from within the scorched pile of flesh and proceeded to fly toward the enormous mountain peak, side by side.

.....

At the entrance to the secret realm, Master Leng Yue, Ling Yu and a few other Crystal Level experts remained in a cross-legged position atop the stone platform. They continued to expedite the disk in their hands in order to maintain the stable condition of the secret realm's entrance. In between them, identical Glyphs continuously rushed out of the enormous gold-colored cauldron without stopping for even a second.

“Fellow Murong, since you expended such a large price to obtain a chance for your sect to enter this secret realm, I believe that there must be extremely strong disciples among the people you brought.” Master Aunt Leng Yue suddenly opened her mouth and asked Murong Xuan a question.

# Chapter 122: Monstrous Bird and Enormous Ape

When Chi Yang, Ling Yu, and the others heard this, they couldn't help but be startled. Immediately, they respectively exposed strange expressions.

"Among our ten disciples entering the sect this time, Fellow Leng Yue should have already looked over them. I don't know which one of them caught Fellow's attention?" When Murong Xuan heard her words, he was also startled, but instantly laughed and replied with a question.

"I can't be sure about your other disciples, but those two disciples with similar appearances seem to have cultivated a special Mental Energy Secret Technique, right?" Master Leng Yue indifferently asked.

"That's correct. I also took note of those two. Although their cultivation is still shallow, the mental energy fluctuations they emitted are absolutely not something a normal disciple possesses." Martial Ancestor Yan said as his eyes flashed.

"Haha, as expected, the abnormal mental energy of the Lan brother and sister wasn't concealed from the various Fellows. That brother and sister pair truthfully aren't normal disciples; not only is their mental energy strong, but they also harbor a Mental Energy Superposition innate gift. Therefore, they also cultivate our Fusion Sect's most powerful Mental Energy Secret Technique." Murong Xuan let out a laugh and a bit of arrogance was exposed on his face.

"Mental Energy Superposition? That's the legendary gift that allows the fusion of multiple people's mental energies and allow one person to perform techniques much beyond their level!" Master Leng Yue's face slightly changed.

"Fellow Leng Yue really is experienced and knowledgeable; you unexpectedly know about the usage of this ability. However, this sort of ability can only be used by the two of them and cannot superposition with



other people's mental energy." Murong Xuan faintly laughed as he replied.

"This already is an extremely incredible gift. Those two disciples from your Fusion Sect had stronger than normal mental strengths; with the addition of being able to layer their mental strengths, once they cast their Mental Energy Secret Technique, a normal person of the equivalent level would be completely unable to resist it. No wonder Fellow Murong was willing to fork out such a price for this opportunity. I don't know how your sect found such disciples with terrifying aptitude." Master Ling Yu let out a sigh and seemed to be rather jealous.

"Brother Ling Yu said one thing wrong: the Lan brother and sister weren't found by my Fusion Sect, but instead are the direct descendants of an elder that was in our sect a few generations ago. They were holding a letter of identification and looked to join our sect. They haven't been in our sect for a year and when they came they already possessed the cultivation of a peak stage Late Spirit Apostle; moreover, they easily entered our sect's Top Ten Disciples." Murong Xuan shook his head as he replied.

"They independently sought out the Fusion Sect? Fusion Sect truly came across treasure!" Martial Ancestor Yan muttered and didn't bother concealing the look of envy on his face.

At this time, he couldn't help but think of Jia Lan, this female disciple of Barbarian Ghost Sect who possessed an Aphrodite Body.

If Jia Lan and her Aphrodite Body were to run into the two people from Fusion Sect, not only would it have no effect but most likely she would be restrained.

"Hehe, it is only due to our sect's prosperous luck that these sorts of disciples independently entered our sect." Murong Xuan proudly replied.

The other people looked at each other and most were somewhat worried for their sect's disciples.

Due to the Mental Energy Superposition Technique possessed by the Lan Clan's brother and sister, if they were to perform a formidable

Mental Energy Secret Technique, they would be able to harm their enemy in an incorporeal manner. Nobody dared to say that their sect's disciples could resist such an attack.

.....

Two days later at the foot of the enormous mountain peak, underneath an extremely hidden cliff, Jia Lan expressionlessly looked at the Heavenly Moon Sect male disciple a hundred meters away. A purple awn continuously swirled in her eyes.

That male disciple was clutching a long silver sword in one hand and motionlessly stood rooted to the spot while staring at Jia Lan; however, the expression on his face was an idiotic smile. After a while, he clenched his teeth. Sometimes, he would raise his sword, only to put it down again. It seemed as if two people were simultaneously in the same body.

After another while, a drop of fragrant sweat appeared on Jia Lan's forehead but after letting out a cold snort, the purple awn in her eyes grew even more vigorous. If one were to examine carefully, they would find that two grain-sized inscriptions were faintly discernable in the depths of her eyes.

The opposing Heavenly Moon Sect male disciple's body shivered and after the smile reappeared on his face, he finally did not return back to his other expression. Instead, he slowly raised the long sword in his hand and ultimately brought it to his neck.

Jia Lan still remained expressionless but suddenly let out a low cry.

"Puchi!"

The Heavenly Moon Sect male disciple's arm used strength and he unexpectedly used the long sword in his hands to chop his own head off.

The headless corpse instantly swayed before falling to the ground. As for the skull, it rolled a few times before stopping; a foolish smile was still plastered across its face.

Jia Lan let out a long exhale but an abnormal dark shade of red suddenly appeared on her two cheeks. She hastily retrieved a small bottle and put a

light blue-colored medicinal pill into her mouth.

Subsequently, the purple awn in this girl's eyes retracted and she once again turned into a normal pretty and delicate girl. Disregarding everything else, she sat down on the ground in a cross-legged position and began to meditate.

The time it takes to have a meal passed and Jia Lan's expression finally relaxed as she stood back up.

Her gaze swept across the headless corpse and she shook her head. Next, her gaze shifted and fell on a golden yellow small piece of grass on top of the cliff.

Earlier, the reason why this Heavenly Moon Sect disciple had immediately launched his attack without any discussion was because of this legendary Golden Spear Grass.

.....

Three days later, Liu Ming appeared on the hillside halfway up the enormous mountain. He raised his head and looked at the mountain topography which had suddenly turned precipitously perpendicular. He couldn't help but crease his eyebrows.

In these past few days he had incessantly been searching the lower half of the mountain for various Spirit Grasses and Spirit Medicines. Aside from a great harvest, he had also occasionally killed a few monsters and run into disciples from other sects.

However, since both parties were wary of each other, neither had any intentions of attacking and they ultimately acted as if they hadn't seen each other.

It was clear that these people understood very well that there most likely weren't any weaklings left on the mountain.

If they didn't have assurance, they naturally would not rashly issue a provocation.

There wasn't much time remaining and Liu Ming had just reluctantly

left a small ravine containing a rather large amount of Spirit Medicines before he continued to climb upward.

Since the upper half of the enormous mountain had five mountain tops, Liu Ming naturally chose the one closest to him.

However, when he walked there, he was unable to continue walking forward. He would either have to use his hands and feet or the Soaring Sky Technique to keep moving forward.

Liu Ming was in the midst of ponderance when a miserable shriek suddenly echoed from the mountain peak. After a whistling noise, a black object descended from the sky and seemed to be on course to smash into his body.

His heart froze over and without thinking, his body moved and he retreated a few tens of feet away.

Ultimately, a “hong” sound rang out and someone wearing Barbarian Ghost Sect apparel heavily smashed into the hillside of broken rock causing him or her to be badly mangled.

A look of astonishment spread over Liu Ming’s entire face and he hastily glanced at the sky. He didn’t discover anything abnormal and quietly walked forward ten steps. He meticulously examined the corpse that had its face turned at the ground a few times and used one foot to kick it over.

“Min Shou!”

Although the face had been smashed by the rocks on the ground so that blood flew everywhere, he had instantly recognized the corpse’s host and couldn’t help but be extremely shocked.

This Barbarian Ghost Sect Poisonous Spirit Faction disciple had recently spoken threatening words to him. Right now, he had unexpectedly met a violent death and appeared in front of him.

Could it be that someone had launched a sneak attack on him up there?

Liu Ming’s heart was somewhat overwhelmed with shock, but he

quickly cycled through his thoughts while simultaneously examining the corpse.

Although the corpse's exterior was badly mutilated, it clearly wasn't the reason for the host's death.

His eyes flashed and suddenly fell on the skull.

On the head of the corpse, a rather large blood hole was apparent. A plethora of fresh blood incessantly flowed out from within.

Liu Ming's eyebrows creased; he suddenly stooped down and picked something out from the corpse. He then put it into his palm and began examining it.

It astonishingly was a light black-colored feather. Its texture was incomparably sturdy and its fringes were eminently thin; it unexpectedly was as sharp as a knife's edge.

When Liu Ming finished identifying the black feather in his hands, his face couldn't help but change.

What lay in front of him was quite troublesome; the mountain peak unexpectedly harbored a monstrous bird.

Although he didn't know what this monstrous bird looked like, he seemed to be able to imagine its ferocious and powerful appearance as it clawed through Min Shou's head with merely one claw strike.

Otherwise, with Min Shou's poison techniques, he wouldn't have fallen in this state so easily.

Monster birds were already the hardest monsters to deal with. Even if they weren't a match for their opponent, they only had to start flapping their wings and the opponent could only helplessly watch.

If he were to run into a monstrous bird that knew long-ranged attacks, he could only wish for good luck.

Liu Ming shook his head and instantly extinguished the thought of continuing on. He searched through the items on Min Shou's body and instantly turned the corpse into ashes with a fireball.

He changed directions and walked toward an adjacent mountain peak.

.....

Four hours later, Liu Ming stood on a large tree and looked down from his vantage point at the nearby lively activity in the jungle. He couldn't help but expose a dumbstruck expression.

He saw a black-faced youth with silver wings on his back, wielding a thick, large golden stave, and fighting with an enormous ape that was dozens of feet tall, holding a large green tree.

Of the two, one had an incomparably agile figure that transformed into layers of successive stave silhouettes when he swung the golden stave in his hands while the other was wielding a large tree that was over a hundred feet long. It only used a few simple strikes back and forth but each attack was earth-shattering and eminently ferocious; unexpectedly, it caused the opponent to continuously retreat.

One man and one ape; everywhere they went, a plethora of trees were smashed or knocked apart. In an instant, an earthen pit within the jungle appeared with continuously changing dimensions. This caused onlookers to feel fear and trepidation in the face of danger.

It was clear that no matter who approached a tiny bit closer, one would most likely turn into a pile of meat paste and die by the enormous tree or golden stave.

Liu Ming's gaze faintly danced around and he found that there were many people hidden in various other spots in the jungle.

He didn't know if they were the black-faced youth's acquaintances that stayed in hiding, or whether, like himself, they had their own intentions.

Just at this moment, the black-faced youth seemed to burgeon and he suddenly let out a wild laugh. He abruptly slapped an item on his stomach with one hand. Immediately, a wave of "kacha" sounds erupted and a blood-colored armor promptly appeared on his body. Simultaneously, over ten blood-colored bamboo needles suddenly protruded from the inside of the armor, and all of them lodged into the

secret acupuncture points on the youth's chest.

# Chapter 123: Working Together

In the next moment, the body of the young, black-faced man suddenly expanded, and his blood vessels on the surface of his skin vibrated, exposing themselves like azure-colored worms. His body, under the muffled sound similar to a firecracker, also suddenly grew to be a head taller. Countless faint, blood red inscriptions rushed out, covering every inch of his body.

The black-faced youth gave a loud chuckle before the golden stave in his hand also grew by half its size with a swing. Using strength to grasp it tightly with both his hands, he actually began using it to clash with the huge, green-colored tree in the hand of the giant ape. He used force against force without dodging or avoiding the attacks.

In that moment, loud sounds could be heard from the dense forest one after another.

Liu Ming only heard a few of the sounds that were like thunder claps and started to feel pain in his ears.

His expression changed as he formed a single-handed seal with lightning speed. Only when the Fa Li in his body flowed toward his two ears did he feel slightly better. However, he could not help but still be extremely shocked at heart.

Ever since he cultivated the Dark Bone Method, he believed his strength could not be compared to an ordinary disciple. But compared to the black-faced young man and that gray monster ape, it paled in comparison. If he entered the battle against the two in such a manner, fighting force with force, he would be shaken to the point where he would retreat spitting blood after a few rounds.

However, under his surprise, Liu Ming realized the reason why the power of this black-faced young man had suddenly become this frightening was due to some type of Secret Technique that could activate his potential. Also, the strength of the effects seemed to outclass all the effects of the mortal Secret Techniques he knew himself. Liu Ming



wondered if there were any extreme after effects after using this technique.

At this moment, there seemed to be the movement of three or four shadows from a side in the dense forest far away. It was obvious that the people too close to the battle had moved and hid themselves again because of the shockwaves.

Even though he saw them move, since the distance was so great between Liu Ming and the shadows, he could only see a few rough silhouettes that constantly flashed. He was completely unable to see their appearances clearly.

Of course, if he was a little closer, he would definitely be able to see much more clearly. However, the consequences of doing this would most likely expose his own location.

Under these circumstances of undefined friend or foe, this type of method naturally posed great risk.

Liu Ming knit his brows, but in the next moment, he suddenly remembered something. With one hand, he produced a white crystal bead from inside his sleeve and hit it with several techniques.

In the next moment, the crystal bead released white light and, at the same time, a black dot the size of a rice grain could be seen from it.

There actually was a Barbarian Ghost Sect disciple there!

Liu Ming estimated the approximate position of the black dot on the crystal bead before looking at the dense forest. He revealed an expression with a sliver of surprise.

However, at this moment, the intense battle in the far away dense forest finally reached an end.

The black-faced young man, who had used the unique Secret Technique to make his strength increase by several times, gave an explosive yell before finally breaking the huge, azure tree with a swing of the golden stave in his hand. Seizing the opportunity, he used the stave to fiercely smash into one of the shoulders of the demon ape.

One of the limbs of the gray demon ape drooped after it gave out a mournful cry. The limb had obviously been crushed by the giant stave. Its eyes, which were originally filled full with bloodlust, also began to show slivers of fear. It did not wait for the black-faced young man to attack again and immediately turned around, fleeing at lightning speed with a few leaps.

The black-faced young man let out a cold snort before wanting to chase it with his giant stave. However, his two legs suddenly gave way and he almost fell to the ground.

It seemed like the ferocious battle from before had made him use a lot of stamina.

The blood armor and the blood red inscriptions on the black-faced young man disappeared quickly. The huge, golden stave in his hand trembled before shrinking as well.

At the same time, there was a sudden, muffled sound from the ground in the direction of the dense forest the monster ape had just escaped to. Countless pieces of dirt flew into the air and a huge bone ghost covered in black air with the head of a bull and the body of a man, rushed out from the ground. After a deep growl, it tackled the gray demon ape to the ground.

Instantly, the two similarly sized creatures began fighting and biting at each other.

The shadow of a person behind a large tree near the black-faced young man moved and a gray-robed youth with a silver mask walked out without sound. He asked plainly, "What, you can't walk anymore?"

"Hehe, no need to worry, I am just somewhat tired. I will be fine after a little rest. However, with you here, those who want to take advantage of me will not be able to do so." The black-faced young man spoke with a small laugh.

"I really don't understand how you think. It is obvious that the Nine Enlightenment Mountain specializes the most in mechanical puppets, yet you, one who is the great senior of the generation, instead focused on

close combat techniques for Body Cultivators. Perhaps if you meet one of those brutes from the Hall of Blood, they would have a headache dealing with because of your current level of brute force power.” This gray-robed youth was Yang Qian and spoke without happiness after hearing what was said.

“Last time, my Body Cultivation techniques were not cultivated to Complete Mastery. This time, if I can still meet that bastard again, perhaps I will really have to ask him what level his Blood Blade Secret Technique has reached.” The black-faced young man spoke with a sneer.

“Whatever, I am not interested in these competitive matters at all. We should quickly finish off the other monster apes on this mountain, so we can actually search for treasures which is the important matter.” Yang Qiang replied with a snort.

“If you really want to get rid of those monster apes on the mountain, it will be quite difficult with just the two of us. Just attracting one down takes three or four days, if we get rid of the remaining few in the same manner, the remaining time is definitely not enough. Do not forget that returning to the entrance takes up a portion of time.” The expression of the black-faced young man became a little serious.

“Since the two of us are not enough, then let’s go find another two. If I have observed correctly, one of the observers hiding from before should be a disciple of your Nine Enlightenment Mountain. As for the other person...” Yang Qian spoke and suddenly pulled out a white crystal bead with one hand and glanced over it plainly.

He saw there was also a small black dot on the surface within the flashing white light.

At this moment, in the battle between the two huge creatures far away, with the circumstances that the injured arm of the gray ape could not be used at all, it was obvious that it was at a disadvantage. It was already pinned to the ground by the huge bone ghost, with the two sharp bull horns firmly stuck halfway into its chest. Fresh red monster blood spurt continuously out.

Even though the gray ape cried out and used its remaining arm to attack the body of the bone ghost as if its life depended on it, it was unable to move its opponent at all. In the end, its strength became weaker and weaker.

After the bone ghost gave a low growl and suddenly pulled its head upward, the two bull horns cut open the chest of the demon ape as if they were giant blades, causing a few brightly colored internal organs to immediately roll out.

The giant ape gave another growl before finally dying with its neck in a crooked angle.

In the big tree, Liu Ming saw the result and shook his head before deciding to leave.

Since such strong people already had their eyes set on this mountain, he naturally wanted to choose another mountain.

However, at this moment, Yang Qian, who was in the dense forest, suddenly turned his head and looked at Liu Ming and raised his hand to wave.

Seeing this, Liu Ming could not help but be somewhat startled. Just as he was wondering if the other person was waving at himself, he could suddenly hear a plain, detached message from Yang Qian.

“It does not matter who junior is. There is no need to hide now, you can come out. Brother Yun and I have a few matters to discuss with you two?”

“You two?”

Liu Ming was a very quick-witted person. After hearing what was said, he immediately reacted and could not help but stare off into the distance with surprise.

He did not know what type of communication method the black-faced young man had used. He soon saw that on the other side of the dense forest, there was actually a person who walked out from the nearby trees. It was also a youth who wore the blue robes distributed by the Nine Enlightenment Mountain, and seemed to have an extremely gloomy

expression.

“It’s him.”

After Liu Ming saw the face of the youth clearly, he felt extremely surprised.

The newly appeared youth was actually the genius disciple of the Nine Enlightenment Sect whom he defeated once, “Jin Yu”.

“Hmph, what are you hesitating for? Do I need to personally invite you down!? Since I am asking you, there are naturally benefits for you.” Just when Liu Ming hesitated a little at heart, he heard the transmitted voice of Yang Qian once again. It seemed a little impatient.

Liu Ming squinted but after thinking for a moment more, he jumped out of the the large tree, walking toward the group in the open.

After a short period of time, he also appeared in the dense forest and stood in front of Yang Qian and the other two.

“It’s you, Bai Cong Tian!”

After seeing Liu Ming’s face properly, Jin Yu immediately clenched his two fists tight and exclaimed loudly.

“Even if Junior Jin is a former acquaintance of mine, there is no need to be so excited when we meet.” Liu Ming replied with an expression of smiling, yet not smiling.

“What are you talking about? Although I messed up last time and was defeated by you, that was only because I was careless, not because I lack strength. Since we have met now, let’s have a match between us.” Hearing what was said, Jin Yu became very angry, and spoke rudely.

“So it turns out you are that Bai Cong Tian often mentioned by Junior Jin, no wonder our young junior has such a big reaction. However, Junior Jin, this time Brother Yang and I have called you out not for you to fight, but rather to discuss some important matters.” After hearing what was said, the young black-faced man looked at Liu Ming’s face with an expression that revealed a sliver of surprise before immediately becoming

serious again as he spoke to Jin Yu.

“Yes, Senior Yun. Then let us wait for the matter to be completed before I settle my scores with this Bai brat.” Jin Yu seemed to revere the black-faced young man and seemed afraid of disobeying his orders, he immediately agreed against his will. Instead, he looked at Liu Ming with a few glances of ferociousness.

“As you wish!” Liu Ming restrained his smile and replied plainly.

Yang Qian instead had his arms folded and stood to one side. From start to end, he did not intend to join in on the conversation.

“I do not understand the important matter that the two seniors have called us over for?” Liu Ming turned his head as he asked Yang Qian.

“Do you want the resources and treasures of this mountain?” Yang Qian asked with a small sparkle in his eyes.

“What Senior Yang is saying...” Liu Ming’s expression changed as he trailed off.

“If you help us get rid of the few remaining monster apes on the mountain, the two of you can come with us to search for all types of treasures later on. This mountain is so tall, even if the four of us share it, we still should be able to return with plentiful rewards.” The black-faced young man gave a slight smile and followed up by revealing their idea.

# Chapter 124: Sword Communication Spirit Body and Xue Ci

“There are other monster apes on this mountain?” Jin Yu, who had just personally witnessed how scary the gray monster ape was, sucked in a deep breath after hearing what was said.

“Correct, excluding the one that was just killed, there are still seven others on the mountain. Also, the gray monster ape is only ranked middle in strength within apes. Out of the seven, there is another monster ape with golden fur, which has a strength that is perhaps only half a step away from a Spirit Master. If we came across it alone, we would not be able to overpower it by ourselves.” Yang Qian spoke seriously.

Hearing this, Liu Ming’s expression could not help but change a little.

“However, you do not need to worry too much. Although the strength of these monster apes is very powerful, most of them have low intelligence. We only need to use some simple tactics to be able to bait them over one by one. The only problem is, it wastes a little too much time this way. However, if the two of you join in and help, we can take some risks and bait one or two extra down every time.” The black-faced young man followed up and explained.

“With the strength of the two seniors, in addition to the two of us, it should not be a problem to fight against two or three monster apes every time. However, the most powerful ape, the golden furred monster ape is not included with this plan!” Liu Ming thought for a little before slowly speaking.

“That is natural. We will definitely first plan to get rid of the other six apes and then work together to fight the golden furred monster ape. Also, perhaps the two juniors still do not know, but if the gallbladder of these monster apes are consumed with medicine wine, they can help increase your strength by a few levels. Of course, these gallbladders must be consumed when fresh and you must not consume too many in one go. Also, the stronger your body is, the weaker the effects will be from

consuming them. If we do succeed, there is just enough to give every person two gallbladders.” The black-faced young man did not seem to care at start but then suddenly revealed a mysterious expression and spoke.

“Incredible!” Hearing what was said, Jin Yu spoke with a slightly surprised expression but he did not reveal an expression of great happiness.

This was a very ordinary matter, since he was not a Body Cultivator. If his strength was stronger or weaker by a little bit, it was no real difference.

After hearing what was said, Liu Ming became interested but he did not show his interest on his face. Instead, he knit his brows and continued to ask.

“Do you two seniors really need to ascend this mountain? Since the monster apes are hard to deal with, you could always go to a different mountain. Are there perhaps also other strong monstrous beasts on the other mountains?”

“Haha, what Junior Bai has said is indeed correct. A few days ago, we roughly searched through the five mountain peaks. Other than this mountain with a few monster apes, the other four were all claimed by even stronger monstrous beasts such as the Iron Feathered Hawk or the Silver Crowned Python. Although these monster apes are also strong, they can be considered easier opponents to handle. The time remaining we can spend in the secret realm is not much, so we naturally must choose easier prey. If the other people also want to ascend the other mountains, most of them must also work together like us.” The black-faced young man replied with a chuckle.

“So it is like this, I have no more opinions on the matter regarding us working together.” Liu Ming gave a soft sigh as he replied. He did not reveal an expression of extreme surprise.

Jin Yu naturally also did not voice any more opinions regarding this matter.



“Very well, since the two Junior have agreed, let us discuss the plans in detail again. The original method of baiting them is effective, but now that we want to bait an extra one or two apes, there naturally will be some changes in some areas.” The black-faced young man spoke with delight.

The group discussed in the dense forest for a whole half an hour, before finally deciding on the plan in detail.

At this moment, the bone ghost with the head of a bull and the body of a man dragged the carcass of the monster ape in front of the group of people. The black-faced young man immediately pulled out a sharp blade from his chest without holding back, and after going through a series of crazy cuts into the chest of the carcass, he finally found a light gray gallbladder the size of a date. It gave off a strong, fishy smell.

The black-faced young man did not care about the weird smell of the monster gallbladder at all. Instead, he ate it in one bite with a smile plastered across his face. He then quickly pulled out a wine flask from his robes and quickly drank two mouthfuls before squinting his eyes. He began savoring the taste as if he was slowly savoring some type of high class delicacy.

Seeing this scene, Liu Ming could not help but be speechless at heart.

It seemed that his great senior of the Nine Enlightenment Sect had an odd personality very different to other people's. There had to be a story for him to be on such good terms with Yang Qian.

As for the remaining carcass of the monster ape, the head was cut off by Yang Qian and the remaining parts were all burned to ash by a fireball.

“The matter should not be delayed! Brother Yun, bring the two to the ambush area we previously discussed and take the time to quickly recover some strength. I will first go up the mountain to check the movements and tracks of the remaining monster apes. Wait until dawn tomorrow, where we will properly begin our plans.” Yang Qian spoke in such a way.

After hearing this, the other three people did not have any other

disagreements.

Thereupon, Yang Qian put the huge bone ghost away and flew toward the nearby mountain top.

As for the black-faced young man, he shook his sleeve and a yellow ball rolled out. After a series of muffled sounds and transformations, it turned into a huge wolf puppet several tens of feet long.

The black-faced young man mounted it in a swaggering fashion and rushed off to some nearby hidden area.

Jin Yu and Liu Ming naturally followed along.

.....

At the foot of another mountain, a pair of disciples of the Fusion Sect, male and female, stood on a huge rock and gazed toward the peak of the mountain. However, they had a rather ugly expression.

“Brother, have you felt wrong? The aura of the Scarlet Dragon is actually transmitted from up there? There are obviously only a few Silver Crowned Pythons!” The cute girl spoke with her brows knit together.

“There is no error. I have used this bottle of pure Sea Dragon blood with the Secret Technique of our clan. I can feel the aura of all other dragon races for ten days, so there definitely is no error. Perhaps that demon dragon has some method of being able to infiltrate inside and not be discovered by the Silver Crowned Pythons.” The male looked away from the mountain and seemed to start thinking about something.

“If it really is like this, then it will be somewhat difficult. It is obvious that those Silver Crowned Pythons have already reached maturity. Even if we work together to fight them, it will take great effort.” The cute girl became slightly worried.

“Even if they are hard to handle, we still need to get rid of them. I have already used all of the pure Sea Dragon blood, so I definitely cannot return empty-handed. I just need to return to my true form and use a few clan Secret Techniques to handle those demon pythons at most!” The male instead spoke without hesitation.

“Since brother has already set his heart on it, younger sister will naturally do her best to coordinate. I will be nearby, placing a few simple restrictions. Therefore, when you do start fighting, there will be no need to worry about other people secretly watching.” The cute girl thought for a while before finally speaking seriously.

“Very well, younger sister has always been talented when placing formations since young. Even though you are limited by your cultivation level and time, causing you to be unable to place down overly complex restrictions, against these Spirit Apostles of the human race that have entered the secret realm, your restrictions will definitely be more than enough. Since it is like this, Brother will be able to put all of his effort into the fight.” After hearing such, the male naturally became very happy.

“Then let brother wait for another two days. That should be sufficient time for me to prepare everything.” The cute girl replied with a normal expression now.

This time, the male only thought for a little before making sounds of agreement.

On the hill where Du Shou had previously lost his life, a female from the Heavenly Moon Sect – carrying a long, snow white blade on her back – stood silently as if she was studying something on the extremely steep mountain peak.

After an unknown amount of time, the arm of the female suddenly moved and a jade like hand pressed on the shaft of the blade on her back. At the same time, she turned her head toward a nearby giant rock and commanded coldly, “Who is hiding here like a ghost, come out!”

“Hehe, you are worthy of being the person with the Sword Communication Spirit Body that only appears in the Heavenly Moon Sect once in a thousand years. My breathing was only slightly ragged and was discovered by Junior Sister.”

A snicker could be heard from behind the huge rock and a tall, skinny male in blood red robes walked out sniggering.

“Xue Ci, so it turns out to be you!” The female from the Heavenly Moon Sect saw the face of the blood red-robed male, and was somewhat surprised.

“Other than me, who else is brave enough to speak in such a manner to Junior Zhang. Knowing what junior sister is like, it seems that you are also interested in these Iron Feathered Hawks. These monster birds have great potential. Even if there are no other treasures, if we can obtain a few bird eggs, it is worth it for us to take such a risk.” Xue Ci spoke unhurriedly.

“We? When did I say that I was going to work with someone.” The female from the Heavenly Moon Sect thought about his words before replying with a sneer.

“Junior Zhang must be joking. Besides going against our sects’ agreement to work together, are you sure you want to face the Iron Feathered Hawk on the mountain by yourself?” After hearing was said, Xue Ci’s expression became somewhat ugly.

“Do I still need to discuss with you what I do! Leave now or receive three blows of my sword. If you are able to withstand the three blows and remain standing without injury, perhaps I will think about that matter.” The young lady from the Heavenly Moon Sect spoke without expression. Her wrist shook and the snow white longsword on her back was immediately drawn by a few inches, revealing its glittering blade. A cold aura immediately spread toward Xue Ci.

As soon as Xue Ci came into contact with this cold aura, he immediately began to shiver. With a deep shout in great anger, his aura increased and a blood aura rose into the sky. It spun round and round and condensed before shooting down to loop around the male several times. From far away, it seemed like a blood red python that was abnormally big.

Seeing this, the female of the Heavenly Moon Sect remained expressionless. However, with a light shake of her wrist, the longsword on her back was pulled out by another portion and the cold aura

immediately spread out in all directions as if it had a shape.

The areas where the glowing white cold aura passed gave off loud crackling noises and a thick layer of frost actually formed over them.

“Good, since junior sister really wants to measure my strength, I, who is the senior, must also witness the profoundness of the Sword Communication Spirit Body.” The blood-robed male squinted and stared at the young female from the Heavenly Moon Sect for quite a while like a poisonous viper. He then suddenly laughed evilly and spoke.

As for the young female, after hearing such words, she finally revealed a shred of surprise in her expression but did not hesitate to say, “The first blow!”

As soon as she finished speaking, the longsword on her back became a blur and flew in front of the male. After a sudden tremble, a large portion of eerie cold light radiated outward. With a sky-shattering sound, it suddenly transformed into a flurry of sword shadows, shooting toward her opponent.

# Chapter 125: Ambush

A little while later, Xue Ci was still standing straight-backed where he had been before, but his face was now somewhat pale. At the same time, the black hair on his head had actually turned blood red.

The ground nearby was covered in sword marks and a huge ditch of seventy to eighty feet long could be seen.

“You really have received three blows of the sword, it seems that you are a little stronger than what the rumors say. Since it is like this, I will agree to the matter regarding working together. However, if we receive more than two eggs for the Iron Feathered Hawk, I will take two thirds. You have no opinions regarding this, right!” With a hum, the young female from the Heavenly Moon Sect returned the snow white longsword in her hand back into its sheath and spoke plainly.

“Who would have thought that your sword technique has actually been cultivated to such a level. My strength is far below yours, so I will naturally agree to what you have said.” Xue Ci raised an arm and looked at his hand covered in blood before replying with a forced smile.

“Very good. Since we are working together, we have should have very good chances against handling those Iron Feathered Hawks.” The female from the Heavenly Moon Sect nodded before turning her head to look at the steep mountain peak not far away. A fiendish expression flashed across her face.

.....

On a spacious rock platform on the tallest mountain situated in the middle of the rest, Gao Chong, Feng Chan, and seven or eight disciples from various sects were gathered together. They were not fighting but rather discussing something with a low voice.

As they were discussing, there would be some people that could not help but turn around and look at the tall mountain peak not far from them from time to time, revealing expressions full of greed.

.....

At the foot of the giant mountain, inside a stone cave, Lei Zhen was covered in electric sparks. He held a small, silver mallet that was also covered in convulsing sparks. He was currently holding it in both hands and crazily swinging it at a huge, blackish stone embedded in the rock wall.

Every time he swung, a huge, thick lightning bolt would shoot out, firmly hitting the giant rock. The bolt would cause it to tremble slightly and reveal cracks across its surface. Cracks that were slowly becoming deeper and deeper.

After the time it take to eat a meal, Lei Zhen once again swung resolutely with a loud yell. The electric sparks on his body immediately disappeared. After collecting the silver mallet with lightning speed, he sat cross-legged and began meditating.

The current him had an abnormally weak aura, obviously due to overusing Fa Li by a great amount.

At this moment, an abnormal scene occurred on the black rock.

As soon as the attacks stopped, the cracks on the surface of the rock began to slowly close up again.

After a short while, the black rock became smooth like new. It only seemed to be a little smaller than before.

After a few hours, when Lei Zhen opened his eyes again, the aura of his body was fully recovered. He casually picked up a pebble beside him and threw it at the huge, black rock with the flick of a wrist.

“Hong!”

As soon as the pebble approached the area a few tens of feet away from the black rock, it suddenly trembled before being crushed into powder by some type of shapeless force. At the same time, all the powder slowly floated into the huge black rock, becoming a part of it.

“Not good enough, it still has not dropped to a level where I can

withstand it. I must continue, so I can retrieve the treasure inside.”

Lei Zhen mumbled and looked at the black rock with a frenzied expression.

This black rock was only discovered by him unintentionally after chasing a monster here two days ago.

Once the monster that was being chased approached the rock, it became a pile of bloody pulp and was absorbed into it. It was then that he immediately knew that he had discovered an impressive treasure.

As a result, he spent the remaining time using the lightning attacks he was well versed in to attack the black rock without stop, slowly weakening the mysterious power.

However, looking at the effects of the attacks from the last two days, if he really wanted to remove all of the mysterious power, perhaps it was an impossible matter without ten days or half a month worth of time. However, he actually did not need to completely remove all of the power. He only had to weaken it enough to be able to forcefully approach it. Then he could use a totem to break the rock, allowing him to retrieve the treasure.

Although he did not know the origins of the treasure with this mysterious manifestation, he believed that as long as he could retrieve this item, his gains from his journey in the secret realm would definitely not be inferior to other people's.

.....

Jia Lan currently stood beside a mysterious lake covered by trees with purple light flowing from her eyes. She was currently standing opposite of three small beasts that were covered in azure scales and had a single horn at the top of their heads.

These three small beasts stood softly on the surface of the water on four claws without trembling. Their six eyes gazed directly upon Jia Lan, but they did not seem to have any fear at all. It was as if they were monster beasts with naturally strong mental power.



Behind the small beasts, in the center of the lake, a faint blue lotus flower that was completely translucent floated on the surface of the water. It was surrounded in all four directions by a dense, water type Yuan Qi.

After an unknown amount of time, Jia Lan suddenly gave a muffled snort and could not help but take two steps back to protect herself.

The three small beasts on the other side also had a flash of blue appear in their eyes and retreated back with a tremble in the same manner.

Jia Lan looked deeply at the three small beasts for a little while before turning around and disappearing into the woods.

To be able to find this “Water Yuan Lotus,” that had many uses to her, could be said to be a pleasant surprise.

This item would be of great use to her in the future, but she had to first find a way to get rid of these unknown water type monsters that were hard to deal with.

However, there was still plenty of time left to stay in the secret realm. This place was secretive enough, so she did not need to immediately fight these three beasts as if her life depended on it. She could spend time thinking up a method and it would still not be too late.

.....

On the morning of the second day, Liu Ming opened his eyes to a hidden valley, his energy and Fa Li had recovered to peak condition.

Not far from where he was, Yang Qiang and the other two people were also meditating in the same fashion.

Liu Ming waking up seemed to alarm the others, and after a short while, the three of them also stopped meditating and opened their eyes.

“Brother Yun, how has your strength recovered? We might have to battle again today.” Yang Qian asked the black-faced, young man with a somewhat caring manner.

After he scouted out the activity of all the monster apes on the

mountain, he gathered with Liu Ming and the other two last night.

“Do not worry, I have already completely recovered and will definitely not neglect our important matter.” The black-faced young man stood up and stretched his arms and legs. He replied with abnormal confidence.

“Very well, since it is like this, let us act according to the the plan today. I will ascend the mountain again and use the monster ape head from yesterday to lure the monster apes from the mountain. I will do my best to control the number to around two or three. If there is only two, Brother Yun and I will fight one each. Junior Jin and Junior Bai will be at our sides supporting us. If there are three, we will rely on the two Juniors to each handle one for the time being. Brother Yun and I will work together to finish one off as quick as possible before immediately coming to help the two of you.” Yang Qian spoke seriously.

Liu Ming and the others naturally did not have any disagreements with what Yang Qian had said.

As a result, during the following period of time, Yang Qian carried the gray ape head, which was slightly shrivelled, on his back and left the valley again.

As for Liu Ming and the other two, they both found secret spots to hide, not far from the entrance of the valley.

Liu Ming hid in a big tree with dense branches and leaves, whereas Jin Yu instead hid behind a pile of loose rocks.

What made Liu Ming speechless was that the black-faced young man stood proudly to one side of the entrance and raised his hand to release a pangolin puppet.

Only with a twist of its body, the puppet wrapped up the black-faced young man inside, and with a series of physical transformations, it actually turned into a huge, yellow boulder.

The appearance of the boulder, created from the pangolin puppet, looked extremely realistic. Even if you stood close by, you could not tell whether it was real or fake.

Time slowly passed by and after an unknown amount of time, a series of howling sounds could be vaguely heard from the entrance of the valley. They were soon followed by tiny rumbles in the ground, as if there was something huge approaching at lightning speed.

Liu Ming took a deep breath. Without saying anything further, he used one hand to pat the leather pouch on his waist. A black light immediately radiated from it and the White Bone Scorpion covered in purple gas appeared under the tree.

Under his mental communication, the ghost immediately disappeared into the ground with a roll.

Jin Yu, who was behind the pile of loose rocks, also shook his sleeve and three different colored round balls rolled out. They rested silently beside his feet without moving.

As for the black-faced young man hidden inside the pangolin-transformed huge rock, there were no abnormal movements.

However, after a short while, the howling become louder!

Suddenly, from the entrance nearby, a sky-shattering sound could be heard and Yang Qian shot into the valley from outside like an arrow. With a few flashing actions, he flew several hundreds of feet before stopping and turning around to yell loudly with a serious expression.

“There are three monster apes, immediately follow the plan!”

As soon as he finished speaking, he formed a hand seal with one hand and black gas rolled out of the leather pouch on his waist. The huge bone ghost with a bull’s head and a human’s body immediately appeared and gave a low roar while staring without wavering at the entrance of the valley.

After three loud sounds of “bang bang bang”, three giant demon apes jumped into the valley from outside.

One was around thirty feet tall, and the fur on its body was pure black.

Two were around twenty feet tall and had grayish-white fur,

surprisingly similar to the gray ape from yesterday.

As soon as the three monster apes jumped into the valley, they immediately gave a growl and rushed at Yang Qian.

Yang Qian snorted, before forming a hand sign with one hand, causing black air to roll out from his body. The air then condensed, immediately transforming into a huge, black palm that firmly shot toward the opposing huge, black ape. At the same time, the bull headed bone ghost by his side also rushed forward with big steps.

At the same time, there was a series of popping sounds from where Jin Yu was hiding and three leopard shaped puppets, each around ten feet tall, flew out. Their body moved and they rushed toward the closest gray monster ape like lightning bolts.

In the blink of an eye, they started fighting and biting together.

On the other side, the other monster ape who was currently running suddenly rolled wildly toward one side. In the ground where it was originally standing were two huge claws snapping together at nothing.

However, before the huge ape stood up again, a screeching sound whistled through the empty air as seven to eight wind blades flew out of the big tree Liu Ming was in. With a few flashes, they neared the giant ape.

TL: Seven to eight can also be thought of as seven or eight, just a chinese way of expressing things

The gray monster ape gave an angry roar and suddenly used its large foot to firmly stomp on the ground. After a series of trembles nearby, an earth wall quickly appeared from the ground.

With a few sounds of “bam bam,” the wind blade attacks left a few shallow marks on the ground where they had hit.

The ape, consumed by its rage, had traveled several tens of feet in the blink of an eye, directly rushing at the tree Liu Ming was in.

With this, the three giant apes had all been rapidly separated.

# Chapter 126: Exterminating Apes (Part One)

At this moment, a wild laugh could be heard from the huge, yellow rock.

The giant rock rumbled and with a blur, it once again transformed into the pangolin puppet.

At the same time the black-faced, young man appeared, he produced a short, golden stave from his sleeve at lightning speed. He swung it in the wind and it transformed into a huge, golden stave over twenty feet in length. He roared loudly while walking toward the opposing huge, black ape and ignored the other two gray monster apes.

Yang Qian was already fighting hard against the black monster ape, working together with his bone-headed ghost.

This monster ape also produced a blackish, metal stave from somewhere and under some crazy waving, a wild wind swept up nearby. In addition, the afterimages of the black stave layered up like a small mountain, forcing Yang Qian and the bull headed ghost to fall back step by step. It was as if they couldn't forcefully receive the blow.

“Hong!”

A golden stave immediately hit the shadow of the black stave and the contact between the two released a shockwave, causing the huge black ape to tremble and fall back by half a step without choice.

As for the black-faced, young man who had approached from nearby, it was even more unbearable for him. From the clash of the two, he could not help but fall back, taking seven to eight steps and almost had the golden stave leave his hands.

“This monster has such strong power!” The black-faced, young man regained his balance before yelling out without thought.

“You don't say! Other than the golden-furred monster ape, this black

monster ape is the strongest. Even if we work together, we still need to be extra careful.” Yang Qian gave a snort and replied. With one hand, he slapped the empty air in front of him. The black air around his body rolled and condensed before forming a huge palm that pressed forward. It was perfectly timed and stopped the monster ape that had wanted to take advantage of the situation to rush the black-faced young man.

The black monster ape became extremely mad and suddenly waved its metal stave at the sky. With a sound similar to the sudden clap of thunder, it crushed the black palm to smithereens.

However, in this period of delay, the black-faced, young man, who had recovered, chanted a little and formed a hand sign. Countless blood vessels appeared on his body and the blood-colored armor appeared again. His chest was stabbed by several tens of sharp bamboo spikes, poking into various secret acupuncture points. His body immediately expanded in size and with an angry yell, he once again swung the golden stave in his hand. With the bull-headed ghost, they both rushed forward. Together, they stopped the monster ape who had originally planned to rush at Yang Qian.

The black monster ape was naturally so mad, to the point it actually stomped in fury. After a few crazy swings with the black metal stave in its hand, the crazy winds nearby strengthened by a few levels. Even under the situation of one fighting two, it was still able to force the two to constantly fall back.

However, at this moment, Yang Qian pulled out something from his sleeve. It was surprisingly a white, bone bow the size of a palm. He grabbed it and with a tremble in the wind, it immediately expanded to a length of around five feet in a flow of black light.

Yang Qian chanted and slowly drew the bone bow in his hand. The nearby black air immediately rushed crazily in front of his body before rolling and condensing into a blood red bowstring. Countless black inscriptions also appeared and transformed into a shiny black arrow. It was steadily aimed toward the black monster ape not far away.

“Woosh!”

Yang Qian stopped chanting and his two hands relaxed. The black arrow then disappeared from the bone bow in a blur.

The huge black ape gave out a painful howl and a bloody hole appeared in its chest out of nowhere. It was actually caused by the black arrow passing through it at an unbelievable speed.

A large amount of fresh blood spurted out of the chest of the giant ape. Even though he used a big hand to furiously cover it up, there was naturally no way the hand would block the blood from flowing out especially when pressed by the attack of the black-faced, young man and the black bone ghost. This caused the ape to finally reveal a terrified expression.

As for Yang Qian, who had fired the arrow, his aura had dropped by a level almost like he had used a lot of Fa Li. He put the bone bow away and continued to control the black air to form hands and join in on the attacks.

With such an attack, the monster ape slowly became unable to endure the attacks even though it back as if its life depended on it.

At the same time, the three leopard shaped puppets controlled by Jin Yu were sent flying by a white rock stave the gray monster ape had casually produced from the ground. They had no fighting power at all.

Luckily Jin Yu stood far away to use his technique, and his number of puppets was comparatively more, so they could all constantly rush at the monster ape, ignoring life or death. They were covered in injuries and damage but at least they could forcefully keep the monster ape busy.

At Liu Ming’s side, he currently moved extremely fast and did not really come into contact with the huge ape at all. Azure light radiated wildly from his hand and wind blades constantly shot out without stopping.

Even though the gray monster ape was not far away it was unable to use all its strength to chase him. This inability to use its full strength was caused by the attack of giant claws and stingers that appeared from the

ground from time to time. During this time it constantly let out deep roars. The stinger of the scorpion was so fast that it made even the gray ape take time to avoid it with caution.

From time to time, it would scrape up large amounts of dirt from the ground and quickly join the dirt together to form rocks of different size. Then, the rocks would be wildly thrown at Liu Ming without pause.

If Liu Ming could not dodge the rocks with his incredible dodging speed, then they would be cut into rubble by countless wind blades with his quick casting speed of the Wind Blade Technique.

The ape did not realize that Liu Ming's fleeing range was actually restricted to a small area from the start to the end, even though he was constantly running. The nearby ground now constantly emitted clouds of purple fog. At the start, they were very thin, but after a while, they had become a dense layer and slowly rose into the sky.

All of the air around them gave off a faint fishy smell.

Liu Ming himself had already secretly taken countless poison nullifying medicinal pills. With the movement of his body, he also avoided a few areas where the poison gas was thickest.

As for the gray, giant ape, it rushed straight through and breathed in large amounts of the fishy air without even realizing.

With this chasing and dodging, the monster ape gave out a low roar. When it once again grabbed at the ground nearby for a handful of dirt, its head suddenly felt huge pain and it almost fell to the ground.

At this moment, a few loud "chi chi" sounds could actually be heard from the nearby dirt and several tens of black lines shot out from the ground at the same time.

The giant, gray ape hurriedly dodged with great shock, but it felt its entire body become encased in a powerless feeling, causing its movement speed to decrease by at least half when compared to before.

A miserable shriek sounded!



Several dozen blood holes the size of a thumb were pierced in one of the thighs of the giant ape. After a little while, the sides of the blood holes became extremely black. The blackness spread outward at a speed that could be seen by the naked eye.

After the time of a few breaths, the whole thigh of the giant ape had become abnormally black and purple.

The giant, gray ape fell to the floor with a plop and at the same time, it gave out a screech of extreme fear. The black and purple thigh actually began to dissolve bit by bit, starting from where the injury occurred.

Liu Ming, who was far away, suddenly stopped moving and brought his two hands together before separating them. A giant, azure wind blade appeared out of nowhere and with the shake of his wrist, it shot forward with a flash.

There was an explosive sound and azure light that the giant wind blade transformed into appeared close to the front with a blur.

Although the giant ape realized there was something amiss, since it could hear the sharp howl of the wind blade, trapped in a situation where it could not move its body at all, it could only forcefully use its two arms to block the front of its body.

With a “pu” sound, a blood red light appeared. The two arms of the giant ape were cut off together with its head and sent rolling. Fresh blood immediately spurted out of its neck, reaching several inches high.

The headless corpse of the monster ape shook a few times before collapsing, never moving again.

The nearby soil opened up and the White Bone Scorpion actually immediately jumped out. With a few messy swings of its huge claws at the corpse of the gray ape, it found a purplish-red gallbladder and quickly scuttled to where Liu Ming was.

Liu Ming formed a single-handed sign with a calm expression and took the gallbladder into his hand. He then casually put it into a wooden box before turning around to look at the other two battles.

He only saw that on Yang Qian's side, the black monster ape was already covered in flesh blood from attacks on all sides. Its body teetered as if it could collapse at any time.

As for Jin Yu's side, two of the three leopard-shaped puppets already lay on the ground. They were unable to move and the remaining one was also in ruins, it could not last for long.

However, there was surprisingly an extra black tiger puppet and azure wolf puppet that were keeping the gray monster ape busy.

Jin Yu was far away, moving his ten fingers without stopping as he concentrated on manipulating the three puppets. He was not allowed to be distracted by the tiniest bit.

Seeing this, Liu Ming smiled and walked toward Jin Yu's side with a movement of his body. The White Bone Scorpion instead rolled around where it was, once again disappearing into the ground.

Jin Yu naturally saw the action of Liu Ming walking over and his expression became somewhat ugly. He immediately clenched his jaw and controlled the three puppets to pack even more powerful attacks.

The time it takes to drink a cup of tea passed by!

A series of clear sounds from the short, azure sword in Liu Ming's hand could be heard as several azure blades flew out. They cut the gray monster ape, already covered in cuts and bruises and pinned to the ground by the two puppets and the White Bone Scorpion, into multiple pieces.

"Very good, who would have thought that the performance of the two of you would have far exceeded my expectations. Especially Junior Bai, tsk tsk, your White Bone Scorpion is really abnormally intelligent, perhaps even normal Late Spirit Apostles are not its opponent." On the other side, the other battle had also just finished. The black-faced young man, who originally decided to come over to help, saw this scene and immediately congratulated the two of them with great happiness.

"Brother Yun has overpraised me, although my bone scorpion has some intelligence, how can it really compete with a Late Spirit Apostle. Also,

when I came over to help, the monster ape had already used up a large portion of its strength. With the teamwork of Junior Jin and I, it is natural that the ape was easy to handle.”

“Hehe, what I was referring to was not this monster ape, but the one you finished off yourself. Your ghost’s overbearing poison must have been mutated after birth; a normal White Bone Scorpion does not have such strong poison.” The black-faced young man shook his head and clarified what he was talking about.

However, this time, Liu Ming just smiled and did not reply.

“Anyway, now is not the time to relax. Hurry up and get rid of those corpses. Also quickly recover some Fa Li. Since these three monster apes will not return back up the mountain, I am afraid that the other few will not stick around peacefully on the mountain. It is better to quickly find a hiding spot.” Yang Qian also walked over and spoke in an urging manner.

Hearing this, the other people tensed up and Jin Yu immediately moved to recover the gallbladder from the corpse of the gray ape. The other people all released fireballs, burning the three corpses to ash.

Subsequently, the four people left the valley without the slightest hesitation.

The place immediately became silent.

Four hours later, the rumbling sound of footsteps could be heard again. With the flash of black shadows, one golden and one black monster ape appeared at the entrance.

The gold-furred monster ape was not taller than ten feet. It wore a simple piece of wooden armor and carried a jade purple wooden stave in its hand. Its two eyes constantly flashed with silver light almost like it had high intelligence!

# Chapter 127: Exterminating Apes (Part Two)

With a few leaps, the two monster apes arrived at the place where the other three monster apes had been killed. They looked around and the black monster ape in the group sniffed around before revealing a serious expression.

The golden-furred monster ape pulled out a huge, black stave from the nearby dirt. The stave was still covered with blood marks. It brought its nose forward and sniffed before immediately raising its head to give off an angry roar.

Subsequently, all the hairs on this ape stood on end and its body suddenly increased to over forty feet. It then suddenly jumped up and down a few times before jumping behind the pile of loose stones Jin Yu had previously hid himself. It suddenly used its two hands to slap down.

With a bang, all the rocks in the radius of several tens of feet transformed into broken pieces in the blink of an eye. All of the pieces quickly flew into the monster ape's two hands, transforming into a stone stave seventy to eighty feet in length. It seemed capable of holding up the sky.

The giant ape only used its two hands to abruptly slide up the two sides and the surface of the stone stave became much smoother. At the same time, the grayish-white color changed into a light silver with a metallic luster.

The golden-furred monster ape rotated the giant silver stave and ferociously swung it down.

There was an immediate loud sound capable of shaking mountains and the whole pile of loose rocks transformed into a huge ditch five feet deep.

Subsequently, the giant ape started randomly swinging the giant silver stave everywhere and crushed almost half of the valley in its rampage. Only after this did it become slightly less angry, and its body recovered to

its previous size in a flash. It casually threw the giant stave that was in its hand onto the ground before leaving with the black ape.

The giant silver stave left the hands of the monster ape and after the time of a few breaths, it lost all its luster on the ground, once again transforming into a grayish-white color.

After a soft breeze, the whole stave turned into dust with a plop and disappeared with the wind.

When the two monster apes walked to the entrance, the nose of the golden-furred monster ape, walking in front, suddenly twitched slightly. It suddenly squatted, and with power firmly used through its two legs, it rushed at a nearby boulder like a huge eagle.

“Not good, we have been discovered. Run quickly!”

From behind the boulder, a terrified voice could be heard and with two whooshes, two shadows of people shot off in different directions like arrows.

It was actually two young men in the apparel of the Firestorm Way!

It was obvious the two were attracted to the valley by the sounds from before, but after clearly witnessing the terrifying strength of the golden-furred monster ape, they cowardly hid themselves. However, they did not think that the nose of the golden-furred monster ape would be extremely sensitive and would pick up on their trail.

Under this situation, the two could only flee with great fear.

The golden-furred monster ape, while in the air, let out a low roar before throwing two punches firmly at the two people with a whooshing sound.

Immediately, the two Firestorm Way disciples felt a huge force rushing toward their backs. Of the two, one of them could only sway and dodge to one side while the other turned around and counterattacked with his sword after hardening his will.

“Hong, hong!”

Near the side of the first person, a huge ditch suddenly appeared in the ground. As the air waves scattered, the shockwaves almost caused him to totter and fall over.

The other person was even more unlucky. As soon as his released Sword Qi came in contact with the huge power, it was crushed to the point where it was forcefully reflected. If that person had not hurriedly crushed a Glyph in his hand and covered himself in a green light that flashed crazily to block the Sword Qi, perhaps he would really have been cut in two.

However, even with their maneuvers, the power of the huge force following the attack shook their bodies, causing them to spit a mouthful of fresh blood out as their body flew back like scarecrows.

At this moment, the golden-furred monster ape twisted its body and the direction it was moving in changed. Immediately, it brought a gust of coarse wind as it appeared by the male who had shot out the Sword Qi.

This disciple of the Firestorm Way had just stabilized himself from the strong force. Watching what was occurring in front of him, he naturally became pale in fear. He only had time to open his mouth to allow an azure light to shoot out. At the same time, the longsword in his hand suddenly shook, causing a layer of flames to immediately rush out wildly from its surface.

Seeing this, the golden-furred monster ape roared loudly without even thinking and a milk white sound wave shot out in all directions. The azure light and flames that were speeding toward the ape were immediately stopped and broken with this sound wave. In addition, the residual force from the sound wave shook the disciple's body until he began bleeding from all of his facial features at the same time.

The body of the giant ape moved again and appeared behind the male, as if it had instantly teleported. Its two arms became a blur before its hairy hands firmly landed on both of the shoulders of the disciple.

The disciple of the Firestorm Way gave out a loud howl of "ah." When he was about to react to the sudden change, it was already too late.

The golden-furred giant ape suddenly used power through its two arms to rip the male in its hands into two pieces. It then opened its big mouth and ate a large portion of the revealed heart that was still slightly beating.

Seeing this, the other disciple of the Firestorm Way, who was standing far away, became scared stiff. Almost without thinking, he crushed all the Glyphs on him with a single breath. Three layers of light barriers all of different color immediately appeared around him and at the same time, there were two different colored Glyphs of white and azure that began to flutter at his feet.

With a plop, he transformed into a beam of azure light and flew off into the sky. He actually did not seem to care about the hazards of flying too high at all.

However, when the golden-furred monster ape saw this, it did not immediately chase after the disciple and instead threw the corpse in its hand away. It then leaped in front of a green boulder the size of a water tank.

With a shake of its shoulders, its aura increased by several fold and it once again transformed into a giant ape that was forty feet tall. Its two arms moved again and it grabbed the huge green rock, lifting it up without expending great effort.

The giant ape gave a low roar, before a silver, metallic light appeared between its two large hands. The boulder, which seemed rather ordinary before, now had a silvery, metallic luster.

Subsequently, the two arms of the giant ape became even thicker and it forcefully threw the silver boulder at empty air far away, aiming at the male from the Firestorm Way who had already flown a good distance away.

This male was currently rushing away while circulating Fa Li, like his life depended on it. Suddenly, he heard a muffled “hu” sound, and when he was wondering what had happened, he was forcibly hit in the back by the huge, silver rock.

Under the crazy pressure of the huge rock, the layers and layers of protection barriers ripped apart like wallpaper and he gave off a miserable shriek before immediately dying. His deformed body, which had no human shape anymore, fell from the sky.

The golden-furred giant ape leaped a few times like a lightning bolt and caught the falling corpse with one hand at low altitude. Its arms moved and ripped it into several pieces, before finally throwing the destroyed corpse to one side. It then used its two hands to ferociously beat its chest and raise its head to give off a long, mournful howl!

The sound of the howl rumbled to areas to unbelievably far away, spreading over a distance beyond five kilometers.

After hearing this howl, all the disciples of the six sects still hanging around this area shivered at heart. Excluding those who had extreme confidence in their strength, they all agreed without

discussion to avoid this area and stay far away.

.....

However, in a natural cave three to four kilometers away, Liu Ming, Yang Qian and the others who were currently meditating all opened their eyes after hearing this howl.

“It seems like the monster apes on the mountain have already discovered the matter about their missing comrades. If it is like this, we need to be extra alert and cannot act in these two days. We must wait for two days, before continuing the luring plan.” Yang Qian spoke with his eyebrows knit.

“What Senior Yang has said is reasonable but we cannot also waste the time of the two days. How about we temporarily break up and act on our own before meeting up here again on the third day.” Liu Ming’s eyes flashed and he spoke.

“Break up! Yes, this is indeed a good idea. Every day in this secret realm is abnormally precious, it is natural that we must fully make use of what time we have.” Hearing what was said, the black-faced young man



completely agreed.

Jin Yu had no opinions regarding this matter at all.

“Since it is like so, this will be our decision. Once you have rested well we will meet up again. Otherwise, everyone will act individually for two days.” Yang Qian naturally did not have any excuses to disagree.

“Junior Bai, Junior Jin, here I have two bottles of medicine wine, it is best for you to consume the gallbladders of the monster apes soon. Otherwise, after a long time, the effects will decrease severely.” The black-faced young man suddenly smiled at the two and spoke. He then twisted his hand and two thin, long jade bottles of similar size appeared in his hand.

“Many thanks to Brother Yun, I will not be holding back.” Hearing what was said, Liu Ming did not play courtesies and received it.

Jin Yu obviously could not reject such an offer.

During the remaining time, they did not talk about anything else. They all concentrated on meditating and recovering their strength.

.....

After several hours, when Liu Ming once again opened his eyes, there was no one else except for him left in the cave.

He was not in the least bit surprised by this change. Instead, he took out the jade bottle he had previously received without hurry and opened the lid. He lightly sniffed at it and suddenly thought for a bit before producing a white pill from his body. He crushed it and poured it in.

He lightly shook the jade bottle and gazed into it before nodding his head with satisfaction. He then took out the wooden box that he had previously placed the monster gallbladder in.

After a short while, he resisted the heavy fishy smell with difficulty and shoved the purplish-red monster gallbladder into his mouth. He then used the half bottle of medicine wine to swallow it down.

In no time, Liu Ming felt a hot feeling rise up in his lower abdomen. He immediately closed his eyes without hesitation and began to slowly refine

it.

Only after two hours did he breath out slightly and stand up. After he lightly stretched his arms and legs, a series of faint cracks could be heard from his various joints.

Liu Ming's eyes flashed and with a bit of power through his legs, he jumped up ten feet. It was as if his body was as light as a feather. With the blur of a hand, he grabbed a piece of rock that stuck out in the ceiling of the cave. He slightly used power through his five fingers.

With a crack, the rock which seemed hard immediately turned into a bunch of broken rubble.

With a twist of his body, Liu Ming floated back to the ground almost as if his whole body was not heavy at all.

“Not bad, my strength has increased by a lot. However, it seems like the effects of that Levitation Grass I ate before are also starting to show extremely obviously. Now, when I fall from high up in the sky, even if I don't use the Soaring Sky Technique, there should be no big problems. As for the aspect of speed...”

Liu Ming lifted his two hands and closely examined them before mumbling a few sentences. When he said the final sentence out loud, his shoulder suddenly shook and he rushed away from where he was standing like a breeze. Afterward, the whole cave was covered in the sounds of air splitting apart and several blurry shadows appeared.

After a while, it was as if seven or eight Liu Ming's had appeared in the cave at the same time.

When all of the shadows rushed at the same area, Liu Ming's body once again appeared very clearly.

# Chapter 128: Exterminating Apes (Part Three)

“Not bad, my speed should be several times faster than when I first entered the Secret Realm.” Liu Ming mumbled to himself with words full of joy.

There was no surprise to that!

These were the results without the aid of any Secret Techniques. If he used other amplification techniques, his speed would be even faster, to a level that was hard to believe.

It was no wonder this Levitation Grass could be ranked among the top Spirit Objects, the effects were indeed frightening.

In addition, this grass seemed to also have the side effect of nullifying poison and calming the heart. The consequence of these changes could not be measured easily or quantifiably. Perhaps only when he encountered relevant problems would the two really display their impact!

Liu Ming thought a little again.

In the remaining time, he decided against remaining in the cave. Instead he slightly organized the items on him before leaving unhurriedly.

....

Close to a mountain that was perfectly straight, a ball of light orbited around the mountain peak and behind it followed two monstrous hawks, one big and one small. The four wings flapped in the wind without stopping, rapidly chasing.

The three had already orbited the mountain peak seven or eight times in the blink of an eye, and without realizing, they had left the mountain peak and descended to the foot of the mountain. The birds behind seemed to almost catch up to what they were chasing in front.

Suddenly, from the white light, a tender shout could be heard and a cold,

white light rolled out. The two monstrous hawks behind seemed to suffer from something and immediately flapped their two sets of wings wildly with sharp cries. Only like this were they able to forcefully evade the cold light.

At this moment, a ray of blood red light appeared from the nearby steep cliff, the cliff had seemed empty before, and with a flash, it transformed into a huge, blood red blade several tens of feet long. The blade chopped toward the slightly smaller monstrous bird.

The smaller monstrous bird hurriedly flapped its two wings with great surprise and there was an immediate “chi chi” sound. Immediately, large feathers from it shot out like torrential rain.

An immediate chain of explosions occurred when the blood red light came into contact with the feathers and hundreds to thousands of small holes were pierced through it. However, the remaining blood red light continued to fly at the smaller monstrous bird without stopping at all.

With a “hong”, the other monstrous bird that rushed over and flapped a wing to hit the remaining blood red light, dispersing it.

However, at this moment, a cold voice could suddenly be heard from within the ball of white light.

“Sword person as one!”

As soon as the voice stopped, a blurry shadow in the ball of white light seemed to move. Consequently, an otherworldly rainbow light flashed out, shooting toward the huge monstrous bird.

Before the rainbow light had even started to approach the huge monstrous bird, the bird had felt a life threatening danger and it beat its two wings crazily in a hurried fashion to immediately avoid the light. However, the blood red light that had originally been dispersed by the strike from earlier suddenly turned blurry and transformed into strings of blood red silk, quickly entangling the body of the bird. The strands tightened, causing the bird to be unable to move.

Because of the moment of delay, the cold rainbow light flashed through

the body of the giant monstrous bird, and with a turn, it quickly looped around the smaller monstrous bird in the same lightning fast fashion.

As the light of the sparkling sword dispersed, a young female wearing the robes of the Heavenly Moon Sect appeared.

Carrying a snow white longsword in her hand, she was extremely pale. It was obvious that the previous strike seemed to consume a large amount of Fa Li.

At this moment, fresh blood suddenly spurted out of the bodies of the two monstrous birds. They transformed into four halves and dropped from the sky.

“Junior Zhang, what powerful powers you have. The feathers on the Iron Feathered Hawks cannot be easily cut through even with my blood sword and yet Junior Sister cut through the two of them at the same time with one blow. But is Junior sister alright? Your expression does not look very good!” From the blood mist by the steep cliff, a man in blood red robes suddenly appeared and spoke to the female from the Heavenly Moon Sect with a light laugh.

“Why don’t you try and see whether I can still use the secret technique of Sword Person as One?” Hearing what was said, the female from the Heavenly Moon Sect replied with a cold laugh.

“Sigh... Junior Sister worries too much. I only casually asked a question. However, we spent a lot of effort and finally finished off half of the Iron Feathered Hawks. There are now only two more left on the mountain. After Junior Sister has rested, how about we bluntly kill our way to the mountain top in one breath, getting rid of them with one final flourish.” The light in Xue Ci’s eyes flashed slightly before hurriedly sighing and asking.

“The strength of the remaining two Iron Feathered Hawks cannot be compared with the two just now. If you can finish off one by yourself, I do not mind finishing off the other one.” The female from the Heavenly Moon Sect shot a glance at the blood red-robed young man before replying plainly.

“Junior Zhang must be joking, I wasn’t even able to handle the one before, so I naturally am not able to handle the two on the mountain.” Hearing what was said, Xue Ci forced a smile.

“Hmph, since it is like this, don’t mention anything like directly killing our way up. We naturally still need plans to handle the remaining two Iron Feathered Hawks. However, before this, it is important for me to first recover my Fa Li.” The female from the Heavenly Moon Sect replied with the sound of a hmph before voicing the rest of her reply. She then flew toward a small patch of forest far away by herself without a care.

Seeing the female flying away, his expression became gloomy, but after a few flashes in his eyes, he snorted in secret and walked with big steps in the opposite direction.

.....

On the tallest mountain peak in the middle, Feng Chan, Gao Chong, and another seven Spirit Apostles currently fought against a huge monster together.

This beast had the head of a lion, the body of a tiger, and was a whopping fifty feet in length. It was covered in light blue scales and had a pair of purple red-fleshed wings on its back. It spat countless fire balls the size of bowls out of its mouth that made the surroundings become a sea of flames, causing the people surrounding it to become battered and exhausted.

No matter what type of spell or weapon the Spirit Apostle surrounding it used as soon as the attack came within several feet from the body of the beast, it would be hit and dispersed by a spark of blue lightning that appeared nearby with a bang.

This monster was actually a Spirit Beast that had innate lightning and fire attributes.

If it weren’t for the large number of people surrounding it and the many Glyphs that were specially prepared beforehand to counter the power of lightning and fire, there would already have been deaths and injuries occurring.

However, even with such preparations, the protective barriers started to show signs of wearing off and disappearing. Finally a person who seemed to be in a bad position, gave a loud shout of “retreat” and all of the people immediately rushed down the mountain as quick as they could.

Seeing this situation, the lion-headed, tiger-bodied monster was first slightly startled. Following its first reaction seemed to be extreme anger. It suddenly opened its mouth wide and instead of spitting out fireballs, it shot out an extremely abnormal, thick blue lightning bolt. With a flash, it heavily struck the body of a Fusion Sect disciple, who had just begun to fly. The barrier around his body as well as his body immediately became a pile of black ash.

Subsequently, the flesh wings on the monster’s back suddenly flapped and it hurriedly chased a disciple from the Hall of Blood.

An hour later, there were only seven disciples that had gathered under a huge tree. A large portion of them had abnormally pale expressions.

“Who would have thought that the Lion Tiger Beast is actually more terrifying than what the legend says. Perhaps only Spirit Masters can handle it. Our actions from before were really too rash and risky.” A disciple of the Heavenly Moon sect looked left and right at the other people before slowly voicing his thoughts.

“Indeed, our attacks were unable to break through its protection spell, much less kill it. If we really cannot do it, then let it be.” Another female disciple from the Fusion Sect also spoke with a sigh.

Hearing what was said, the expressions of Feng Chan and Gao Chong both became ugly.

However, the two subconsciously looked at each other and Feng Chan spoke with a flash in his eyes, “Although this Lion Tiger Beast is extremely hard to deal with, it is only a beast. We wrongly guessed its strength at the start, which was why we used the method of surrounding it and trying to forcibly break its defenses. If we change the method of attack, we might be able to finish it off. However, by using such a process, no one can keep their hidden cards hidden any longer. I really don’t

believe that if everybody used their strongest techniques, we would still not be able to break through the protective spell of the beast. Let me say first, I have a Corpse Qi Lightning given to me by an elder. It is equal to the full power attack of an early Spirit Master which should be of use to us. If there is anyone who is unwilling to reveal their hidden cards, then feel free to leave now. After we kill the Lion Tiger Beast, those who did not contribute will naturally have no right to go up the mountain with us.”

“Since Senior Feng has spoken, I will also speak. I have a Baleful Blood Awl. It specializes in breaking various types of defensive techniques. It should be able to injure this beast.” Gao Chong immediately followed with a response.

Hearing the two speak such words, the other people could not help but look at each other in dismay. The expression of a large portion of them revealed they were unsettled, which meant that they obviously had not finished thinking about whether to reveal or not reveal their real strengths.

At this moment, a voice which gave a soft laugh could be heard from the large tree, “Oh. Since it is like this, how about the two of us also join in?”

As soon as he finished talking, two people, a male and female, jumped out of the tree, both seemed as light as a feather.

The stature of the male was tall and big with scarlet eyebrows and large eyes. He wore the robe from the Firestorm Way and had a scarlet red palm-leaf fan on his waist. He also had a wide smile.

The female had an oval face and was rather pretty. However, she wore the apparel of the Barbarian Ghost Sect and displayed a helpless expression.

“Fantastic, Junior Tian!”

“Junior Qian, is that you!”

TL: If you don't remember who this person is, she was the core disciple



on the ship with Liu Ming, which was attacked by the Scarlet Dragon

Most of the people were startled at first, but after getting a clear look at the appearances of the two, a female disciple of the Firestorm Way immediately became overjoyed and spoke in surprise along with Feng Chan.

When Gao Chong, who was to the side, saw the face of Qian Hui Niang, he could not help but be startled as well.

.....

Liu Ming naturally did not have a single clue about the matters happening in different places.

He also had no interest in joining in the plans for other matters. Instead he decided to take advantage of the two days to find some more Spirit Medicine on the bottom half of the huge mountain.

Of course, it naturally would be best if he could find some Spirit Medicine that could be consumed right away.

As for Spirit Medicines that could increase Fa Li, other than the Green Ganoderma that had been maturing for three to four hundred years, he also found two Spirit Grasses of similar type. However, they had not matured past a hundred or so years, so the effects after consuming them were not as obvious.

He hoped that the harvests from these two day would give him a pleasant surprise!

....

Two days passed in the blink of an eye!

On the morning of the third day, when Liu Ming once again returned to the cave from before, Yang Qian and the other two were already waiting inside.

“Junior Bai, you have come somewhat late. The three of us have been waiting for you for a very long time.” Seeing him, Yang Qian spoke plainly.

“Sorry, I was delayed on the road by a little.” Hearing what was said, Liu Ming instead replied with a smile.

# Chapter 129: Exterminating Apes (Part Four)

“Since Junior has his reason, being late can naturally be forgiven. Brother Yang, let’s make the most of the remaining time and act. The amount of time left that we can stay in the secret realm is not much.” The black-faced young man spoke with a smile.

“Okay! I went up the mountain yesterday to check their movements and discovered that those monster apes are indeed more alert than before. Perhaps we can no longer separate them easily with simple methods. After discussing our options with Brother Yun, I feel that our plan this time requires us to take some risks to achieve what we want.” Yang Qian’s expression became serious, as he spoke slowly.

“Taking risks to achieve what we want? Brother Yang is saying...” Jin Yu seemed to not understand the suggestion.

“It is very easy. Since there is no method to separate the golden-furred monster ape from all the other monster apes, we might as well lure them all down the mountain and exterminate all of them at once!” Yang Qian spoke with a deep voice.

“Brother Yang must be joking. That golden monster ape is too powerful. If all four of them come together, how will we kill them at the same time.” Hearing what was said, Jin Yu jumped in fright.

“Hehe, who said to kill them at the same time. What I said about exterminating them all is referring to a two stage process. We must trap the golden monster ape by itself somewhere, and only after we kill the other three monster apes like how we did the other day, will we work together to fight the final ape. Although the golden monster ape is strong, under the teamwork of the four of us, fighting it should not be too hard.” The black-faced young man followed up with a small laugh.

“This method is not bad. However, how will we trap the golden-furred monster ape by itself? All of these monster apes possess great strength,

perhaps a normal trap will not be enough.” Hearing the plan, Liu Ming knit his brows and asked a question.

“We of course cannot use normal methods. Here I have a set of Six Miasma Illusion Formation flags. As long as we place them down beforehand, they should be able to trap the golden monster ape for seven to eight minutes. According to the results from the battle two days ago, this amount of time is just enough for us to finish off the three apes. With this, do you two juniors have any other opinions?” Yang Qian replied without hesitating.

“So Brother Yan has formation flags with him. Impressive. Since it is like this, I am completely satisfied.” Hearing what was said, Jin Yu’s expression changed slightly.

Formation flags, formation discs, and other formation related tools and equipment could be easily used by ordinary practitioners that did not practice the ways of formations at all, thus their prices were unbelievably expensive. So, even the simplest set of formation equipment would definitely be more expensive than normal totems.

However, as most of the simple formations and restrictions could be easily broken by a normal Spirit Apostle, formation equipment were only suitable for a few special situations. Therefore, formation equipment was considered an expensive, luxurious item that was very limited in use. Even Spirit Masters would be hesitant when buying one.

Since Yang Qian was only a Late Spirit Apostle, to have a set of formation flags with him was a matter that surpassed many people’s expectations.

“Since we have this formation, I naturally also have no problems.” A surprised light flashed in Liu Ming’s eyes and he also nodded.

“Good, I will go right now to the nearby dense forest to place down the restriction. Later on, Brother Yun and I will go together to lure them down. You only need to lay ambush near the formation. If we succeed this time, all the resources on this mountain will be free for us to collect.” Yang Qian spoke with a flash of enthusiasm in his eyes.

Hearing this, the black-faced young man also gave a small laugh. Jin Yu became very excited while Liu Ming only smiled a little.

The discussion came to a close and the few people walked out of the cave at the same time. They flew toward a dense forest not far from the peak of the mountain.

.....

At the same time, in the shadow behind another mountain, there was a male and female floating in the air. Their upper bodies were human but their lower bodies were weird huge fishtails. They currently controlled waves of huge water and battled without stop with a huge, azure python with a silver flesh crown that was over a hundred feet long.

From the human portions, the male and female where the Lan brother and sister that Mu Rong Xuan had talked about.

At this moment, there were incredible amounts of blue waves spinning around them and from their exposed arms to their faces, there were numerous blue Spirit Inscriptions. At the same time, their eyes were a shade of dark blue.

The giant azure python's eyes were blood red as it was spitting green gas everywhere. The crown on top of its head had also turned a bright silver that seemed extremely threatening.

TL: Think of a crown as a horn but not of something hard and instead something soft and made of flesh

Sometimes countless water arrows would fly at the giant python like rain. Other times the giant python would open its mouth to unleash green wind bullets to shatter the surrounding waves.

All in all, the two sides had reached a stalemate and it was unknown just how long it would take before a victor could be decided.

In addition, in a hidden pond under the mountain, there was a broken blue formation along with two much smaller Silver Crown Python corpses.

.....

In the middle of another pond, Jia Lan bent down and used a Jade Handle to knock on a blue lotus flower.

TL: Handle – <http://baike.baidu.com/subview/315280/10130415.htm>

A blue light trembled on the Spirit Flower before the flower fell from its stem, landing into a jade box that Jia Lan had already been holding with her other hand.

Jia Lan covered up the jade box and carefully put it away. She looked at the three small monster corpses that were not moving in the water and sighed.

.....

Amidst a rocky region, Feng Chan, Gao Chong, and another seven Spirit Apostle had once again surrounded the Lion Tiger Beast and were attacking it furiously.

However this time, two of the nine people were replaced by a Firestorm Way disciple with a palm leaf fan and Qian Hui Niang. The beast was still as strong as before and had blue lightning bolts arc around it while it spat fireballs.

Unlike last time, the nine people fighting the beast were much more relaxed and unhurried. As soon as a fire sea appeared, the Firestorm Way disciple would just wave his palm leaf fan and all the fire would be extinguished.

As for the lightning that protected the beast, it was starting to become pierced by the various special techniques that everyone used. With that, the beast gained wounds of various sizes.

With each successful attack, the nine people became more and more overjoyed as their attacks became more frequent.

However, no one noticed that even though the Lion Tiger Beast was at a disadvantaged situation, its eyes were still cold without any trace of fear or impatience.

.....

On the other side of the Secret Realm, Lei Zhen gave a low roar and swung the silver hammer in his hand again. The silver lightning arcs that shot off it smashed into the black rock that had countless cracks in it. Immediately, the black rock shattered into pieces.

The black rock was about a third of its size compared to the start when it broke apart.

Lei Zhen had originally thought that it would take another four to five days before he weakened the mysterious power until he could withstand it. However, it seemed that the treasure was going to see the daylight now!

Liu Zhen was originally stunned when the black rock shattered, but immediately became very excited. He swung the silver hammer in his hand a couple more times to break off the residual ore beyond the black rock, revealing the treasure hidden behind the black rock's true appearance.

What he saw was a light brown ore that had countless silver-lined patterns on it. The lines seemed to layer atop the brown ore. It was as if the silver patterns were wrapping around the ore.

Lei Zhen suppressed the happiness in his heart and quickly put away his silver hammer. He then picked up a piece of rock on the ground and with a flick of his wrist, the rock went shooting at the ore.

“Peng!”

The rock met no resistance and successfully hit the gray ore. In addition, it bounced slightly back before falling to the ground; nothing abnormal occurred through the entire process.

Lei Zhen was pleasantly surprised and immediately walked forward a few steps, intending to pick up the rock.

However, the moment when Lei Zhen's finger touched the brown ore, a sudden “chi chi” sound rang and dozens of silver threads atop the ore suddenly shot out.

At such a close distance and no warning, Lei Zhen didn't have time to react before his entire body was pierced through by the silver threads.

With an angry shout, countless lightning arcs appeared on the body of Lei Zhen and his sleeve shook as his silver hammer returned to his hand. In the next moment, Lei Zhen was about to smash the hammer down.

At this time, the silver patterns on the gray ore suddenly flashed and also bulged out.

All of the silver threads that had already detached from the ore suddenly moved around and cut through Lei Zhen as if they were long, sharp blades. Immediately, they cut every part of Lei Zhen, even his spirit that was in the form of a small ball of black gas, into pieces.

With a "dang" sound, the silver hammer dropped to the floor where a large pool of blood was waiting.

Lei Zhen, a Barbarian Ghost Sect disciple with a Nine Lightning Spirit Pulse, and highly regarded by many Spirit Masters, actually fell in this unnamed cave.

However, in the next moment, an even more surprising scene occurred.

After flying around for a bit, the silver threads from the brown ore suddenly stuck themselves into the blood pool that they had made. They started to suck up the blood while making "zi zi" sounds.

These silver threads were unexpectedly hollow in the middle. They were straws that were incredibly small and thin.

With the blood sucked into the brown ore, the silver patterns on the ore began to shine brightly. At the same time, the entire ore began to slowly pulse as if it had a life of its own.

The blood nearby was quickly exhausted with the dozens of silver threads leaching from it. However, these silver threads seemed unsatisfied as they stuck themselves into the surrounding chunks of Lei Zhen.

Immediately, the final pieces of Lei Zhen became abnormally dry and



shrivelled. It was as if every single drop of liquid within them had been sucked clean by the silver threads.

With this, the silver patterns on the ore expanded a little and a “peng” sound rang out from within the threads.

At the start, there was only this one sound, but after a little while, a second sound rang out, a third sound followed...

In the time it takes to have a cup of tea, the brown ore had fallen into a rhythmic beating. At the same time, every time the brown ore made a sound, more silver threads would shoot out from it. With time, the entire cave was filled with these silver threads and with surprising speed, the threads began to grow and plunged regions beyond the cave.

Slowly, the originally brown ore began to have a blood-like, rosy color. It was as if it was recovering its original appearance!

The ore was, in fact, a giant heart that was slowly regaining its vitality!

At the same time this giant heart was regaining its vitality, the insides of the mountain started to slowly and strangely change to something that no one had ever seen before.

# Chapter 130: Exterminating Apes (Part Five)

Liu Ming was hidden in a large tree as he silently watched the mountain that was not too far away.

In a place less than a few hundred feet from him was the Six Miasma Illusion Formation that Yang Qian had placed down earlier.

The restriction formation did not have any effects that could damage the enemy and only restricted the enemy through illusory effects. All in all, it was still extremely simple and could be easily broken by those who had some knowledge in formations. However, this formation was more than enough to trap a monster ape for a period of time.

Liu Ming pondered a little before he retracted his gaze and looked at another small tree that stood nearby.

That tree seemed normal but in reality, it was one of Jin Yu's puppet beasts transformations. He was currently hiding inside of the transformed puppet beast.

It seemed that he had learned a tactic of Senior Yun's to be able to use this kind of hiding technique.

It seemed as though these puppet beasts were really quite useful. If he had the chance, he would consider buying a few puppets that had assistance abilities. They definitely might be of use in the future.

Liu Ming thought up to this point and could not help but think about his last visit to Wei Zhou Market, he actually saw a few puppets for sale. However, their prices were not cheap at all.

He did not realize that within his dantian, there was something the size of a soybean that continuously flickered. Surprisingly, it was that mysterious bubble that should have disappeared.

It was unknown when the mysterious bubble unsuspectingly appeared in Liu Ming's Dantain once again. Liu Ming had not noticed it in the

slightest.

Not long after, there was a prolonged roar that came from the peak of the mountain.

Even though it was relatively far away, Liu Ming could still hear it clearly. A chill ran through his heart. Once he returned to his active state of mind, he looked toward the peak of the mountain once again.

The roaring from the mountain continued, becoming louder and clearer. It was obvious that it was not the sound of a single monster ape. In addition, it seemed that all the apes were traveling at an extremely fast speed down from the mountain.

After a few breaths, a cloud of black air and ball of silver light descended from the sky from the direction of the mountain.

Impressively, there was a huge skeletal bird in the midst of the black air with sharp claws tightly grabbing both sides of Yang Qian's shoulders. In the silver light was the black-faced young man, who flew down with a pair of silver wings flapping rapidly on his back.

The duo only swayed a few times before they reached the foot of the mountain. They suddenly made an immediate change in direction and rushed straight at the dense forest.

Almost at the same time, countless boulders were suddenly hurled from the top of the mountain, viciously smashing the area the duo previously occupied. A few large ditches around several tens of feet long immediately appeared.

Subsequently, with an angry cry, four blurry shadows, one golden, one black and two gray, appeared from high above.

After a few bangs, the four monster apes firmly landed on the ground nearby. The golden monster ape let out a deep roar, and hurriedly chased after the Yang Qian duo with a speed that made it seem like it was flying.

The Yang Qian duo, who were in front, were not all that panicked. After all, the formation was not far away, and after gauging the distance between them and the monster apes behind them, there was obviously

more than enough time.

However when the duo arrived at a distance less than two hundred feet away from the dense forest, something unforeseen occurred.

After a deep growl, the golden monster ape suddenly rushed sideways and leaped onto the shoulders of the huge, black ape. It then immediately curled its body.

The black monster ape moved both its hands without saying anything and abruptly grabbed onto one of the calves of the golden monster ape that was still ten feet tall. It began spinning its body wildly in the same spot before suddenly releasing both hands.

The golden monster ape shot directly in front of the black-faced youngster like a boulder!

If the golden monster ape, with its ruthless power, hit the black-faced young man, if the black-faced young man did not immediately die, he would be badly hurt.

The black-faced young man was obviously paying attention to the situation behind him. After seeing the maneuver clearly, he was greatly alarmed and could only suddenly flap the silver wings on his back. With the sway of his body, he dodged to one side.

Bang!

The golden monster ape brushed past the black-faced young man and suddenly spread its four limbs, landing firmly at the edge of the dense forest. It then raised its head and looked at the Yang Qian duo. It actually revealed a ferocious expression at the two.

Such a scene occurring before their eyes chilled the hearts of the Yang Qian duo, causing them to stop in their tracks without realizing.

After all, the extensive abilities of the golden monster ape meant that facing it alone was impossible.

However, with this delay, the three monster apes behind them had leaped a few times and gradually neared where Yang Qian was.

“Not good. There has been a change of plans. We need to go help them!” Liu Ming, who was a person that had lived through countless life or death fights, knew at a glance that the Yang Qian duo were in a predicament. Without any further thoughts, he yelled at Jin Yu softly. With a twist of his body, he turned into a shadow, flying out of the dense forest.

Jin Yu, who was originally hiding in his puppet, saw this and also hurriedly put away his transforming puppet. With the shake of his sleeve, three round balls were thrown out, and with a blur, they transformed into three huge azure wolf puppets that followed close behind Liu Ming.

It was obvious that the huge, golden monster ape heard the sounds from behind. It immediately turned its head and looked at Liu Ming and the three puppet beasts with aggressive eyes. It immediately revealed its fangs and let out a deep, threatening growl.

“Brother Yun, Jin Yu, Liu Ming, deal with the three monster apes behind first. Let me lure this golden ape into the formation.” It was no wonder that Yang Qian was the top senior of the Barbarian Ghost Sect. He thought quickly and was able to come up with a counter strategy right away.

He immediately formed a hand seal with one hand and the huge bone bird above him immediately transformed again within the black air. With a blur, it turned into a huge bone ghost with the head of a bull and the body of a man. It then took the lead to rush at the opposing golden monster ape with huge steps. At the same time, a small, white bone bow appeared in his hand with the tremble of Yang Qian’s sleeve. After the black air around him rolled and condensed, it once again transformed into a huge black hand, striking the golden ape. After Liu Ming and the others heard what was said, they naturally all moved individually. Rushing to separate monster apes, they began to fight.

The opposing golden ape raised its head and gave off a loud roar, suddenly banging its two fists on its chest. Its hairs stood on end as it transformed into an enormous creature forty feet tall. It suddenly threw a punch at the huge black hand without making a noise. At the same time, it raised its big foot and stomped at the bull-headed bone ghost with

lightning speed.

Plop! Bang!

The giant black hand immediately dissolved after being hit, and the bull-headed bone ghost had to use both arms to receive the blow. In the end, it was still blown away by the huge foot, like it was unable to take a single hit at all.

Yang Qian was shocked and without hesitating, he suddenly waved the skeletal bow in the breeze and it became several tens of feet large. Pulling it back, countless black gases rapidly surged inward to form a black arrow.

Releasing his hand, the black arrow vanished into thin air with a blur.

Almost at the same time, the huge golden monster ape suddenly opened its mouth and a white sonic wave whirled out.

There was the sound of tearing!

The black arrow appeared in an area only a few inches away from the giant ape out of nowhere. It only advanced a few more inches in the sound wave before stopping midair without a sound.

“Hong!”

The huge ape waved its hand like lightning and caught the black arrow in the air with its hand. With some power, it was directly crushed and exploded.

Yang Qian, who was on the other side, could not help but have a hint of dismay flash across his eyes. His heart sank and he knew that he had underestimated this monster ape a little too much. The strength of the ape was not something one or two people could face against at all.

Fortunately, he did not need to recklessly face the monster ape head on. As long as he rushed into the dense forest behind the ape, he could lure it into the formation.

That was what Yang Qian thought at heart. He immediately began murmuring and the black air began whirling crazily around his body,

seeming as though it was moving with amazing momentum.

The huge, golden-furred ape strode directly in Yang Qian's direction like a meteorite.

However, huge whooshing sounds could be heard and five shadows, that seemed exactly the same, flew out of the black air, flying off in different directions.

Seeing this, the gold ape was slightly startled at first, but almost instantly began stamping in fury. It suddenly grabbed four handfuls of dirt from the ground and the piles of dirt immediately transformed into four green stones.

“Hu, hu!”

The huge ape hurled the four green-colored stones at lighting speed!

As a result, four of the shadows were smashed by the huge stones. They were immediately destroyed, fragmenting like popped bubbles.

There was only one shadow left, which flickered and immediately disappeared into the forest without a trace.

Seeing this, the large, golden monster ape howled in fury. Without hesitation, it jumped up and chased the shadow into the jungle.

After a short while, when the huge, golden monster ape followed Yang Qian into the middle of a bunch of large trees, the surroundings suddenly began to fluctuate. Countless clouds of black gas rolled in crazily from all directions, covering up all of its surroundings.

The huge, golden monster ape was shocked, but it still continued to charge forward. However, after a series of continuous leaps, it just reappeared again in the empty space in the center of the black air.

It was very obvious that the intelligence of this monster ape was not high enough to comprehend what was going on. After a few low growls, it once again dashed around the black air in a rampage several times. However, it still returned to its original position in confusion.

This made the ape fly into a huge rage!

Outside the formation, Yang Qian stood atop a large tree and looked down at the situation inside the restriction. He could not help but let out a soft smile. He immediately turned his body and was about to leave the dense forest to meet up with the black-faced youngster.

However, at this moment, there was a sudden, huge rumbling sound from behind, causing the nearby area and trees to suddenly shake.

Yang Qian was caught off guard and almost fell from the tree.

In a fit, he quickly looked in the direction of the formation. The results caused a big change in his expression.

He saw the golden monster ape pull out a huge, silver stave, sixty to seventy feet in length, out of nowhere and repeatedly swung it around crazily and angrily in the black air. It caused the nearby ground and the entire formation to become on the verge of collapsing.

The blind actions of this monster ape were originally only out of anger, but the random swinging turned into an action of forcefully breaking through the restriction with strength.

If it was a true, powerful illusion formation, this type of force would not be able to affect it at all.

However, this Six Yin Illusions Formation casted by the set of formation flags placed down by Yang Qian was too simple and crude. It could not withstand the crazy swinging of the monster ape.

In a state of shock, Yang Qian did not have time to think about anything as he abruptly retrieved a small black flag. Taking flight, he actually disappeared into the formation.

A short while later, six black beams of light suddenly emerged from the black air. The formation, which was originally about to collapse, hummed and became stable again.

Impressively, Yang Qian was currently using a supportive formation flag to use his own Fa Li to support the formation and he had done made such a decision without hesitation.



# Chapter 131: Exterminating Apes (Part Six)

However, the golden monster ape in the formation seemed to feel restriction power of the formation increase in strength, so it began crazily swinging the huge stave in its hands again. The shadow of the stave whirled around in all directions forming something like a small mountain. It shook up waves of black air, once again causing rumbles.

Yang Qian, who originally only wanted the formation to stabilize a little before leaving, could not help but grumble and stay near the formation, heavily pouring the Fa Li in his body into the formation flags.

Immediately inside the formation, the black air and shadows of the stave clashed forcefully, and from time to time, a black tornado that rushed into the sky would be whipped up, causing the entire restriction to constantly shake.

On the other side, with the sway of his body, Liu Ming flashed past the gray monster ape like a ghost while the ape had its two legs firmly clamped by the White Bone Scorpion. At the same time, many blades of azure Sword Qi shot forward with flashes, cutting the giant ape into several parts. The fresh blood from the ape dyed the ground red.

Subsequently, Liu Ming did not stop at all and raising one hand, he shot four or five wind blades into the battle on the other side.

On that side, the black-faced young man had once again used his Body Cultivation Secret Technique. He swung the golden stave at the black monster ape, fighting blow for blow in his battle.

However, compared to the gray monster apes, the strength of the black monster ape was obviously much greater. Although the black-faced young man had used several supporting secret techniques together, he was still not a match for the black ape, since he was the only opponent. Therefore he was forced to constantly retreat.

If it were not for the two mechanical short, silver cylinders that appeared from his shoulders out of nowhere and the balls of silver lightning flames that were spat out from the cylinders from time to time,

perhaps he really would not be able to keep the monster ape busy and would have already lost.

The black monster ape used the black metal stave in its hand to ferociously hit forward three times, causing the black-faced young man to be knocked back a few steps. Afterward, when he wanted to take a step forward and continue fighting, he heard a small whooshing sound and saw several wind blades shot over.

The monster ape let out a deep roar and suddenly placed the black metal stave horizontally in front of its body. With a slight movement, it knocked all of the wind blades away with a crisp sound.

However, in this period of delay, the silver wings on the back of the black-faced young man suddenly flapped and his body rushed into the sky. After a twirl, the two wings shook, and countless rays of silver light immediately shot out from within. The attack was actually composed of countless silver needles that were as thin as the hair of a cow.

Seeing this situation, the black ape below was not frightened at all. With a blur, the black metal stave in its hand turned. Immediately, a huge gust was created as the stave gained numerous afterimages that protected the ape within it.

The rays of silver light seemed to be densely packed, like torrential rain. However, they did not even make it to the afterimages of the stave and were instead all blown away by the gale created from the stave.

Subsequently, the short, silver cylinders on the shoulders of the black-faced young man let off a few bangs as a dozen or so clumps of silver lightning fire were ejected with exploding silver light. The silver wings on his back flapped crazily a few times again and he shot down like a crossbow bolt.

At the same time, he took advantage of the power of swooping down and swung the golden stave in his hand.

At the same time, Liu Ming arrived nearby with a few flashes and without saying anything, his short, azure sword trembled. After a few “sou” sounds, four or five azure Sword Qi blades rushed out close

together.

Although the two had not discussed this matter beforehand, their teamwork was actually flawless.

The giant, black ape naturally realized it was surrounded and that the attacks of the two people were all very aggressive. It seemed that neither attack could be ignored.

It immediately gave off an angry roar, before all of the hair on its body stood on end. The metal stave in its hand suddenly swayed and transformed into two huge shadows several tens of feet long with a blur. They each separately flew at Liu Ming and the sky.

Two loud, earth-moving bangs seemed to sound at the same time.

On Liu Ming's side, the Sword Qi and the air waves made from the stave mutually exploded after making contact.

In the sky, above the giant, black ape, the silver lightning fire and the golden stave ferociously hit the black shadow of the stave and a shocking air wave rolled out from the collision.

The monster ape gave off a cry before it was uncontrollably pushed down. Its two calves actually completely sank into the ground.

The black-faced young man midair instead seemed to be in an even worse situation. The rebound of the huge power caused his body to be immediately knocked back. He flipped several times in a row before he spat out a mouthful of fresh blood and could stabilize himself midair again.

Although Liu Ming on one side had caused the black ape to divert a small part of its attention, fighting blow for blow this time had caused the black-faced young man to suffer.

Of course, the ape was also not in such a good situation. Its two calves had sunk into the dirt and it actually suffered from a period of paralysis, unable to immediately get out of the ground.

At this moment, Liu Ming stomped on the ground with one leg without

saying a word, and became a shadow, rushing at the monster ape.

Seeing this situation, the huge, black ape let out a deep roar of threat. With the movement of its arms, the black metal stave swept across with a whoosh. Although it had not really hit yet, a wave of huge, invisible force was already rushing at Liu Ming.

Liu Ming had a flash of clever light in his eyes. With a twist of his body, he became as light as a feather under the powerful, invisible force, like a willow leaf dancing in the air, floating in from above the black metal stave.

At the same time, he murmured, and formed a hand sign with one hand before raising it again. Three scarlet fireballs shot out.

However, what nobody realized was the moment the fireballs were shot out, a ray of jade light also shot with a flash behind the fireballs from Liu Ming's fingers.

The giant, black ape naturally also did not realize the secret within. With the swing of its two large, furry hands, it crushed the fireballs.

However, in this momentary gap, the jade light immediately flashed forward and pierced right through one of the eyes of the black ape at an indescribable speed.

The monster ape gave voice to a miserable shriek. Influenced by the pain it felt, it threw the metal stave away and smashed the ground nearby ferociously with its two hands. It finally pulled its two calves out of the soil. Subsequently, it rushed at Liu Ming in a crazy manner, swaying from one side to another.

Seeing the ferocious look that the black ape displayed with only one eye open, the other eye was constantly spurting out fresh blood, it was obvious that it hated Liu Ming to the bone. It even ignored the black-faced young man who was still in the sky.

Seeing this situation, the black-faced young man naturally became surprised and excited. With an immediate deep shout, he stabilized the Fa Li that was knocked around his body before rushing down with the swing

of his staff.

However, at this moment, a sudden change occurred on the ground!

The black monster ape only took two steps toward its target before the soil under it opened up. Two giant, blackish claws emerged from within and clamped onto the furry calves of the ape with lightning speed.

The black ape gave off a loud howl and instinctively arched over subconsciously, using one big hand to scoop at below.

With a “chi chi” sound, a dozen or so black lines shot out from the dirt and passed through the giant hand with a flash.

The giant ape once again let out a miserable shriek, but its fury allowed it to clench its other hand and swing it ferociously at the ground, like a huge hammer.

A muffled “hong” sound rang across the ground.

A huge ditch, the diameter of several tens of feet, appeared underneath the monster ape.

The entire body of the White Bone scorpion was revealed at the bottom of the ditch and it seemed to be stunned.

A ferocious expression appeared on the face of the giant ape and its calves suddenly shook. A huge amount of power rushed into them. The two huge claws immediately opened from the force generated by its calves. The huge ape then used a big hand to scoop down with lightning speed. It forcefully grabbed the White Bone Scorpion, bringing it out of the ground. After using power through its five fingers, it immediately crushed the body of the scorpion to the point where it could not move even in the slightest.

If it were not for the unbelievably firm body of the White Bone Scorpion, perhaps it would have been crushed into smithereens.

However, the black ape was obviously not satisfied with this and opening his bloody mouth wide, he revealed a set of sharp fangs. It was about to throw the White Bone Scorpion into its mouth and crush it into

pieces, to avenge itself.

However, at this moment, the White Bone Scorpion instead gave off a cry of “gu gu” and a cloud of thick, purple fog was suddenly spat out of its mouth. At such a close distance, it was perfectly spraying into the face of the giant ape.

The giant ape let out a miserable cry and firmly threw the White Bone Scorpion at the ground. It used its two hands to cover its face, constantly giving voice to a mournful cry.

This all seemed extremely complicated and slow, however, it all occurred in the time of two breaths.

Liu Ming had not even landed on the ground yet. After seeing the situation, he immediately knit his brows and pointed a finger at the empty space in front of the monster ape.

“Pu!”

The ray of jade light that had previously disappeared once again shot out of nowhere from nearby, and with a flash, it actually entered through the ear of the black ape and emerged from the other ear with a spurt of blood. Subsequently, it shot back with a blur and disappeared into Liu Ming’s sleeves.

With a plop, the huge body of the black monster ape actually loosened and it fell to the ground without any life left in it.

At this moment, the arm of the monster ape had turned black and red. The dozen or so black holes in its palm also began to dissolve the palm as black blood flowed out.

“Junior Bai, what great strength. You actually finished off this monster ape by yourself!” Only now did the black-faced young man slowly drop down from high up and his gaze at Liu Ming had a shred of extreme amazement.

“Brother Yun has flattered me. If it weren’t for you attracting its attention, I would not have been able to succeed this easily. Senior Yun should go help out Senior Yang first. He has not returned, so it seems that

there are a few problems on that side. I will first finish off this gray ape with Jin Yu before immediately meeting up you the two of you.” Liu Ming smiled a little and looked in the direction of the formation in the dense forest. He then spoke smoothly.

“Very well, the gallbladder of the black ape belongs to you. I will first go and help Yang Qian then.” The black-faced young man pondered a little before agreeing with a sentence. His wings shook and he transformed into a ball of silver light that shot toward the center of the dense forest.

As for Liu Ming, he used his consciousness to communicate with the bone scorpion, telling it to retrieve the gallbladder of the black ape. He himself turned around and walked toward the last battle that was going on.

.....

On that side, the three azure wolf puppets were still in a tangle with the gray monster ape.

Jin Yu had also long since hidden himself in a large tree not far away as he put all his attention into casting puppet techniques.

It was obvious that he had learned from his mistake last time. He only controlled the azure wolf puppets to play around with the gray ape without facing it head on at all.

When Jin Yu noticed that Liu Ming was walking over, his serious expression on his face turned to relief.

.....

An hour later, there was a huge, sky-shattering sound from the dense forest and a huge ball of light, like the sun, appeared out of nowhere. The astonishing air waves that it created almost crushed all of the nearby trees flat.

In addition, when the white ball of light disappeared, a huge crater, around a fifteenth of an acre in size, appeared. The formation cast down nearby the epicenter of the explosion was also completely gone.

# Chapter 132: Rock Spirit

Near the edge of the large hole, four human figures slowly regained their balance after being unsteady.

“That ape is truly quite fearful. It was already almost dead from our combined efforts yet it actually knew to self destruct its conscious. If it weren’t for the power of the formation which blocked it slightly, perhaps some people really would have immediately died.” The robes of the black-faced young man were now in tatters from the explosion before, and after seeing the black, burned carcass in the huge crater, he could not help but mumble with some fear.

“Yes, I also didn’t think that this monster ape had the temperament to explode like this. Seeing that there was no chance to win, it actually did not plan to flee. Instead it decided to take us down with him!” A small part of the silver mask on Yang Qian’s face was blackened and he spoke with a deep breath.

“However, Senior Yang’s formation flags are completely destroyed. It really is a pity!” Liu Ming put on a new robe as he looked around to see the situation before he suddenly speaking with a laugh.

“No problem, it is only a set of formation flags after all. As long as we find enough treasures on the mountain, it is more than enough to make up for this loss.” Yang Qian instead replied without caring at all.

“It is a pity that the gallbladder of this monster ape is gone. Since this ape was so strong, the effects of its monster gallbladder must have exceeded the gallbladders of the other monster apes.” The black-faced young man also pulled off his tattered robes and spoke with an expression of pity.

“There is nothing that can be done about this. Who thought that something like self-destruction would occur.” Yang Qian spoke plainly.

“Seniors, can we discuss other matters later. Why don’t we head up the mountain quickly? Now that there are no more monster apes on the mountain, we can’t let other people steal our place.” Jin Yu could not bear



it any longer and suggested they move on.

“Hmph, we put forth so much energy just to get rid of these monster apes, who is brave enough to steal our spoils? If there really are people, don’t think that they will be able to leave this mountain alive.” Hearing what was said, an ominous glint flashed across the black-faced young man’s eyes as he replied.

“What Junior Jin said makes sense! Brother Yun, Junior Bai, it is better to move quickly. We also do not need to travel together anymore. Once on the mountain, any Spirit Items you find are yours. However, if you really meet any strangers, immediately shoot a fireball into the air to alert the other people, so we can work together to scare away other people.” Yang Qian spoke of the matters at hand.

Hearing this, Liu Ming and the others naturally had no objections.

As a result, they immediately took to the sky, directly flying to the mountain peak not far away.

....

“Pu!”

A giant, light blue blade, over a hundred feet in length, slashed past like lightning and chopped off the head of the Silver Crowned Python that was encased in a surface of blue frost.

Only now did the Lan brother and sister, who had their hands clasped with each other, relax and slowly release the hand seal formed with their hands.

“Hua la!”

The giant blue blade that was originally floating mid air immediately transformed into a wave of blue sea water, scattering apart. From within, a short, blue blade the size of a thumb entered the big sleeves of the male with a flash, not to be seen again.

“Haha, we have finally gotten rid of this Silver Crowned Python! The huge amount of energy and effort we used will not be in vain. With this

monster gone, we can go up the mountain to search for that Scarlet Dragon.” The male released the hand of the cute girl and looked at the headless corpse of the huge python before laughing crazily.

“Brother, it is better if you leave your true form and make the most of the time left to recover Fa Li. Otherwise, people will recognize us with just a glance right now. Perhaps anybody can guess that we are a part of the Sea Race.” The cute girl who had also transformed warned her brother with a harsh and unmistakable tone.

“What sister said is correct, I let the victory get to my head just then. However, there is not much time, so let’s not recover Fa Li. First we should go looking for that Scarlet Dragon. Otherwise, if an accident were to happen during that period of time, it would affect the important matter!” The male first nodded before speaking with some hesitation.

“Brother, you really are silly. Although that Scarlet Dragon was heavily injured by the powerful people of the human race and should not have the power to resist, it is still a crystal level existence. Even if it were to recover a little of its power, it could easily affect whether we die here or not. So to really be prepared in case something happens, ascending the mountain in optimal condition is a sensible act. After all, the time we will spend recovering Fa Li will not even be over half a day’s worth of time.” The cute girl replied while shaking her head.

“Okay, I will listen to you.” Although the male was still slightly reluctant at heart, he knew that while his sister was in true form, her intelligence could not be compared with normal people. Her decisions had never been wrong before , so after a period of hesitation, he agreed.

Subsequently, the two people each grabbed a white leather pouch from their waist and threw it into the air. They chanted some words and formed a hand sign, causing the blue, rolling seawater that was nearby to rumble. Afterward, the water transformed into two blue water pillars that flew into the leather pouches.

After the time it takes to drink a cup of tea, all of the seawater had been sucked into the leather pouches with not a single drop left out in the

open.

Only at this moment did the hand sign of the two change, and with a sudden blur of their bodies, they returned to their humanoid appearance like before.

In the next moment, the two people put their leather pouches away and they each immediately ate a pill. They sat down cross-legged and began to meditate and rest.

.....

“Hong!”

A grayish white rock spike, several tens of feet in length, rushed out of the ground without warning and actually pierced at the body of a Fusion Sect disciple that could not dodge in time. The layer of protective light barrier around the disciple immediately broke with a blur, as if it was not effective at all.

However, under this situation, the Fusion Sect disciple did not immediately die and instead constantly shrieked miserably for help.

At this moment, other than the Lion Tiger Beast, there was an additional stone person thirty feet tall and covered in green moss in the center of the rocky region.

The outer appearance of the stone person looked crude, but it was covered in a layer of an unknown, hard rock. Near its body, there were seven or eight additional green boulders that spun around without stopping, forcing the nearby disciples of the various sects to constantly retreat.

At the same time, the stone person seemed to move slowly, but every time a yellow light flashed across its eyes, a rock spike would emerge from the ground nearby. There were at least thirty to forty spikes that were packed nearby, greatly restricting the movements of the disciples of the various sects. Their dodging became more and more uneasy.

As for the other side, the Lion Tiger beast covered in scales and injuries constantly spat out fireballs and lightning bolts. Behind it, there was the

black, burned corpse of a disciple of the Firestorm Way on the ground.

What was even weirder was that whenever someone wanted to turn around and flee out of the region, they would hit an invisible air wall and be repelled back.

This situation around the rock region was entirely different than before.

The big and small rocks that were originally scattered around had begun coalescing together one by one at an unknown time during the battle and vaguely formed a simple, yet crude, natural stone formation.

Under the chase and attacks of the two monsters, Feng Chan, Gao Chong and the other complained at heart secretly.

Under their various attacks from before, the Lion Tiger Beast had become injured. Just when they thought that they could win with one more push, a Rock Spirit, which was also a being that was only heard about in legends, suddenly appeared from the ground.

The Rock Spirit could be considered a creature that was half monster and half spirit. It was just barely considered a monster beast. However, it had the natural ability to be able to use various earth element techniques from birth and its skin was extremely thick and tough. It could also easily use rocks to form an outer shell as well as repair the shell anytime. As a result, normal methods or tactics could not hurt it at all.

Feng Chan and the others had heard rumors about Rock Spirits, but they were only things recorded in books. They had already injured the Lion Tiger Beast, and thus, they naturally were not willing to give up slaying the monster halfway. As a result, they immediately stayed where they were, wanting to kill the Lion Tiger Beast.

However, what had never crossed their mind was the Rock Spirit's ability to control all of the nearby rocks. Originally they were unmoving, but after a short period of time, they actually formed a natural stone formation, forcefully trapping them here.

Although the rock formation had a few tricks, trapping them here was not something that would happen under normal situations.

If the formation was combined with the attacks of the two monsters that had great strength, the situation would naturally be completely different.

What was even worse was that the Lion Tiger Beast, who seemed to be at death's door earlier, suddenly increased in strength. Whether it was the fireballs spat out or the power of the lightning protecting its body, all attacks had literally become half a times stronger than before.

This monster had actually never used all of its power. Only after waiting for the Rock Spirit to appear, did it finally reveal its terrifying strength.

If it were not for Tian, the young man from the Firestorm Way in their group, who suddenly used an extremely powerful Secret Technique that combined water and fire to endure a large portion of the attacks from the Lion Tiger Beast, perhaps everyone really would have been wiped clean by these two monsters in just a short while.

However, even though it was like this, two people had fallen in the blink of an eye.

"Brother Tian, we cannot continue like this. We must break this rock formation!" Feng Chan dodged another rock spike that had emerged from below with a sudden movement. He shouted toward the other side with abnormal pessimism.

Not far away, the young man with the surname of Tian currently swung a palm leaf fan, that had expanded crazily to the size of several tens of feet, in his hand and released two inscriptions, one blue and one red, that he forcefully shot at the Lion Tiger Beast.

"I also understand this logic. As long as there are people that will cooperate, I will put all my power into a strike and break open this stone formation in the shortest time possible with force. However, I need people to keep the two monsters busy so I have time to cast the spell." Tian, the Firestorm Way disciple, replied plainly.

Even up to this point, this disciple from the Firestorm Way was still calm and unhurried.

“I have a Secret Technique which can temporarily keep the Rock Spirit busy for a while. However, during this period of time, we will be unable to attack the monster.” With a flash through his eyes, Feng Chan spoke quickly.

“As for the Lion Tiger Beast, let me handle it. If I use Fa Li unsparingly, I also have a method to keep it busy for a short while. This way, Brother Tian should have no problems.” Hearing what was said, Gao Chong also spoke while grinding his teeth.

At this point in time, they naturally could not afford to care about other matters. They could only work together to break through this formation.

“Okay, then I will leave this matter to the two of you. As for the other fellows, use your strongest attack in a while’s time and cooperate with me to strike at the same point in the formation.” The young man with the surname of Tian suddenly fell back, and commanded without hesitation.

# Chapter 133: Spirit Fruit

To the side, Gao Chong instantly moved forward without demur. Letting out a low roar, the blood Qi on the exterior of his body abruptly rushed forward. Subsequently, it rushed from the point of his finger toward the Lion Tiger Beast in an imposing manner.

A stream of sparkling and translucent blood was forced from his finger and after a “peng” noise, it immediately transformed into a fog of blood that exploded.

After being controlled by Gao Chong, the fog of blood immediately transformed into a blood red tentacle as thick as an arm. It then underwent a sudden coiling motion and wrapped around the Lion Tiger Beast, who didn’t have time to react

The Lion Tiger Beast was startled and the arc of lightning on the exterior of its body violently and unceasingly attacked the tentacle.

However, the fog of blood was clearly completely different from the techniques Gao Chong had performed earlier. Not only was it not immediately dispersed by the lightning, but it also managed to tighten its rigid grasp on the beast amid the lightning. This caused the Lion Tiger Beast to feel even more pain and the lightning arc on its body began to flourish even more.

“Symbol Qi!”

Someone felt the terrifying aura emitted by the blood red tentacle and couldn’t help but cry out involuntarily.

A shocked expression successively appeared on the others.

Adjacently, Feng Chan looked profoundly at Gao Chong before also rushing toward the Stone Spirit in a flash.

A yellow light flickered in the Stone Spirit’s eyes and a rock spike pierced from under Feng Chan’s foot.

However, Feng Chan’s body abruptly shriveled up and the exterior of his body momentarily turned a jet-black color; he unexpectedly continued to

rush forward without regard for the rock spike that had pierced the ground by his foot.

“Hong!”

The rock spike pierced Feng Chan’s waist but unexpectedly disintegrated after a boom.

Seemingly simultaneously, Feng Chan’s body flashed again and forcibly made its way right in front of the Stone Spirit. Black gas from his two hands rolled together and astonishingly formed a light silver-colored boxing glove that proceeded to attack the Stone Spirit.

At this time, a successive series of smothered echoes immediately resounded.

It was the seven to eight enormous green-colored stones that were rotating in the air that continuously smashed into Feng Chan’s body. It seemed as if they were striking steel essence as they exploded one after the other upon contact.

Although Feng Chan continuously retreated under the strikes, not even a trace of an injury appeared on his body; instead, he abruptly stamped his foot on the ground and arrived right in front of the Stone Spirit in a flash. He violently attacked with his two hands.

In an instant, a sonic boom resounded and countless figures of silver boxing gloves violently flashed. They immediately caused a plethora of disintegrated rock to break off and fall from the Stone Spirit’s body.

Although the Stone Spirit’s movement was slow, it would not let the opponent attack it at such a close range without retaliation.

Instantly, it emitted a low, peculiar roar from its mouth. Abruptly, it stomped its foot on the ground and promptly, on the nearby ground, myriads of large and small rocks began floating into the air. After another shudder, they flew at Feng Chan like torrential rain.

Feng Chan let out an angry roar and the silver boxing silhouettes suddenly changed directions. Like a blossoming flower, they wildly shot in all directions and a majority of the rocks were forcibly smashed; however,



a small portion still managed to smack into his body where they then exploded on contact.

Nevertheless, Feng Chan still didn't seem to sustain any injury.

"The two of us can't hold on for very much longer; Brother Tian, hurry up and make your move." Although Feng Chan looked like he was impervious to swords and spears, causing the Stone Spirit to have no method of injuring him for a while, he still gave voice to an urgent cry.

TL: Impervious to swords and spears – Invulnerable

It was clear that this astonishing method of defense couldn't be sustained for too long.

The Tian Firestorm Way disciple wiped the surprised look off his face and gave a sound of agreement. He then turned toward the stone formation behind him and threw the palm leaf fan in his hands into the air; then, he extended his ten fingers and performed hand signs.

These hand signs all shot into the palm leaf fan and disappeared without a trace. Immediately, a loud droning sound resonated and a plethora of blue and red inscriptions rushed out.

Qian Hui Niang and the other remaining disciples also successively performed their techniques in preparation to coordinate with Tian, the Firestorm Way disciple, to create an astonishing attack.

"Pu! Pu!"

When the red and blue inscriptions near the palm leaf fan grew massive and seemed to have condensed into such a dense amount of space without leaving any room, the aura on the Tian Firestorm Way disciple suddenly flourished. On his body, astonishingly, one blue and one red thick light halo simultaneously appeared and began revolving around him.

"Ice and Fire Twin Spirit Pulse!"

Seeing this situation, immediately, someone cried out in shock.

Just at this time, the youth's incantation came to a stop and the hand sign he was performing abruptly changed.

The palm leaf fan faintly shook and resolutely fanned the stone formation.

A smothered sound rang out!

One red and one blue light beam flew out and intersected with each other. After a flash, they successively knocked into the nearby incorporeal air wall whereby they transformed into an enormous ball of light that continuously rolled around. Simultaneously, loud rumbling sounds rang out and the neighboring empty space began to shake.

Seeing this, the other four naturally didn't hesitate to release their attacks.

Qing Hui Niang let out a yell and a sparkling ice spear that was almost 10 feet long instantly morphed into a glittering light as it shot forward.

As for the other three people, one summoned scarlet red fire python, one created enormous yellow rock shadow and the last one shot out a number of densely packed cyan awns rapidly. All of them struck a place near the red and blue ball of light.

The Tian Firestorm Way disciple lifted his arm and a ball of light suddenly condensed in the empty space above his hands.

After a deafening rumbling sound, the ball of light and the other attacks simultaneously exploded. The incorporeal air wall resisting them was immediately torn into smithereens.

A few piles of rocks nearby shook and myriads of stones exploded in the air, transforming into fine powder.

"We've succeeded, hurry and go!"

When everyone saw the scene unfold, an excited cry instantly rang out from within the stone formation.

Gao Chong and Feng Chan who were tying up the Stone Spirit and Lion Tiger Beast, respectively retreated without saying anything else.

The Stone Spirit's movements were slow and it was unable to catch up to Feng Chan.

To the side, the Lion Tiger Beast was tied up by the blood-colored fog for a while and could only watch Gao Chong run away.

After a short while, the Lion Tiger Beast let out an angry roar and freed itself from the fog of blood. However, by this time, the group of people had already disappeared without a trace.

The Stone Spirit expressionlessly chased them until the edge of the rock piles where it let out an angry noise and submerged itself into the ground, disappearing without a trace.

Seeing this, the Lion Tiger Beast could only give off a few low, angry roars before it turned around and returned to its mountain peak.

.....

Liu Ming was riding his grey cloud. He reached up and grabbed a rather large black red-colored Ganoderma on the cliff. Subsequently, he exposed an expression of content and put it away. The cloud under his feet moved and he flew to an even higher point on the cliff.

In that place, astonishingly, was a light yellow-colored Spirit Grass that was emitting a rich fragrance.

This mountain was worthy of harboring the most concentrated Spirit Qi in the secret realm. It would have been hard to find a variety of Spirit Medicines in other areas but not long after arriving at this mountain, he had continuously found them; moreover, among them, there were a few plants that would immediately increase one's Fa Li after being refined and used properly.

This naturally resonated deeply within Liu Ming's consciousness and he instantly followed a certain path on the mountain, slowly searching.

.....

He spent his time like this and after four hours, he flew vertically to an enormous mountain rock. There he raised his head and looked at an even higher area. His heart couldn't help be faintly moved.

A few dozens of meters up, on a large platform, was a small peach

forest. In it were a few half green but not red, hairy peaches. Most of them were shriveled and small, causing a lack of desire for people to eat them.

However, at the edge of the peach forest laid a few young ape corpses that had been chopped into several pieces.

Seeing this, Liu Ming's heart couldn't help but shake.

He unfortunately forgot that those few monster apes were rather smart and were further able to occupy this mountain for a long time. In their nest, there were probably a few valuable Spirit Objects.

Looking at the situation in front of him, the peaches had clearly already been taken by someone else.

However, even if this was the case, Liu Ming immediately flew up.

In seconds, Liu Ming descended to the stone platform in a stable manner. His gaze swept across the corpses of the young apes and fell on an irregular enormous cave nearby the dozen or so peach trees.

He didn't hesitate as he strode past the peach trees and into the cave.

When his two feet stepped into the cave, he clearly saw the interior.

The mountain cave astonishingly was a natural cave, covered in various forms of stalactites; furthermore, the area was so large that it surpassed his expectations.

Aside from a small pool in the center of the cave, a few short shrubs grew everywhere in the cave.

Within the shrubs, a few fresh patches of dirt had been overturned; clearly, someone had dug something up here.

Not only was it like that but some areas on the walls of the cave had been smashed in, indicating that someone had also pried a few important objects.

Apparently he really had arrived one step too late and had just missed out on the valuable objects that were swept away by someone else.

Liu Ming let out a bitter laugh but didn't lose hope as he meticulously searched through the stone cave; however, his search didn't bear fruit.

He even jumped into the pond in the middle of the cave to search. Nevertheless, aside from a few small ores, he didn't find anything else.

Helplessly, he could only leave the cave in a foul mood. He then decided to go to other areas to search for Spirit Medicines.

This place had been plundered so cleanly that it was most likely Yang Qian or that Brother Yun who had been here. Perhaps, the two of them had rushed here at the very start. He also didn't know what kind or how many treasures had been stored in the monster ape's nest.

Liu Ming's thoughts quickly spun about as he walked by a peach tree. By coincidence, a small half red peach fell onto his head; it was about as large as a chicken egg.

Unconsciously, he moved his arm and grabbed the peach bringing it to his mouth. He took a small bite into it and seemed to plan on throwing it away.

However, in the next second, Liu Ming's feet suddenly stopped. The expression on his face underwent a large number of changes. At first, it showed one of extreme shock but in the next second, it changed into an expression of disbelief.

"This peach is..."

He seemed as if he still didn't believe it and muttered to himself before he suddenly took a second bite and quickly swallowed it into his stomach.

The pulp instantly transformed into fluids that flowed into his stomach. A surge of abundant Yuan Li instantly flowed all over his body.

These peaches unexpectedly were the same kind as those hundred year old, mature Spirit Grasses. They also possessed the unique ability to increase Fa Li.

Liu Ming efficiently ate the rest of the pulp in his hands and after making sure of the effect again, he was immediately extremely content.

He then moved and his figure flashed a few times in succession as he began to pick the fruit off the peach trees.

Just at this time, he discovered that although there were a dozen or so peach trees, each tree only bore seven or eight peaches.

Multiplying by the dozen or so fruit trees, he would only garner around a hundred peaches.

After picking off all the Spirit Peaches, a large pile had accumulated under his feet. Subsequently, Liu Ming let out a long sigh and reached for one peach. He then brought it in front of his eyes and meticulously examined it.

# Chapter 134: Resting Dirt

TL: It was mentioned in the past with the Spirit Farms. If you do not remember look over Chapter 29.

After examining the peach for a long time, other than the fact that the object in his hand was slightly smaller than the average peach, it really did not have any other apparent abnormal areas.

It was probably because of this reason that any previous person who visited this area would not have known that these peaches were actually spirit fruit. Otherwise there definitely would not be a single peach left on these trees.

He immediately picked up a few Spirit Peaches and shoved them into his robes before using the Sumeru Handkerchief to collect up the rest. Liu Ming then looked at a nearby peach tree and walked over as if he had thought up of something. He used his arms to hug the trunk of the spirit tree and used all of the power in his body to suddenly shake it.

With a muffled bang, the entire peach tree shook a few times but did not actually break.

Liu Ming was surprised at heart and with a sudden change in direction with his arms, he used power to change from shaking to pulling.

Although the spirit tree shook slightly and countless tree leaves fell down, the large tree still remained deeply entrenched in the ground. It seemed to not have been pulled loose at all.

Seeing this, Liu Ming did not become mad and instead became happy.

Releasing the hug and with the shake of his sleeve, a short, azure sword appeared in his hand. After turning around and walking to the center spot of the dozen or so peach trees, his wrist suddenly trembled. Many waves of azure Sword Qi cut forward in a pattern that became interwoven.

A short while later, Liu Ming used the Sword Qi to forcefully cut out a huge ditch that was thirty to forty feet deep. After seeing thick, dense roots that continued down in the dirt to an unknown depth, the happy

expression on his face became more intense.

He immediately used Sword Qi to cut into the ground without stop. He dug until there was a seventy to eighty foot deep hole through the roots. Only then did he finally find a ball of a light golden object, similar to clay, hidden in the countless, dense roots.

Seeing the light golden clay, he could not help but gaze at it with great happiness.

After sucking in a deep breath, he immediately retrieved a jade box. With the shake of his sleeve, a gentle force came from within. It completely pulled the light golden clay out of its resting place and put it steadily into the box.

Liu Ming then bent over and pulled out a root half a foot long from the nearby soil that had been previously cut. With a tremble of the wrist, he pushed it into the light golden clay.

An unbelievable scene occurred.

The moment the root made contact with the light golden clay, it stood up perfectly straight and completely turned green. Afterward, it began to germinate and bud at a speed observable with the naked eye as a thin twig slowly began to grow out of it.

“It is indeed Resting Dirt! Otherwise those normal peach trees would not mutate into heavenly or earthly-spirit tree existences. The fruit they normally bore could not possibly have the effects of increasing Fa Li. If the Resting Dirt was taken to the outside world, a bunch of Spirit Plant Masters and Alchemists would go crazy for it.” Liu Ming murmured with intense happiness, and with the movement of one hand, he pulled the root out of the golden clay. He then closed the lid of the box, putting it away with extreme care.

If it were not for him previously reading a book that had mentioned it, perhaps he would have never have thought of digging deep into the earth to look for this item. Only deep underground in an area where ten or more spirit trees grew would there be a slight chance of finding Resting Dirt.



This Resting Dirt seemed to be unremarkable in the slightest, but in the outside world, every ounce would be worth over tens of thousands of Spirit Stone. Also, it was a rare item of high demand that was of limited supply.

Although Resting Dirt had an unbelievable effect of decreasing the maturing time and increasing the medicinal effects of spirit medicine, it was also a necessary item to create a Totem grade pill cauldron. Even if a little bit of Resting Dirt were put into a normal, low level pill cauldron, one that was Practitioner Weapon grade, it would instantly become a pill cauldron that reached the upper limits of the Practitioner Weapon grade.

The meaning of a Totem level pill cauldron to an Alchemist was something every practitioner clearly understood.

For example, if there was a choice between ten Totems that were not low quality and a low level totem cauldron, any Alchemist would choose the latter without the slightest hesitation.

This was due to the fact that if an Alchemist had a Totem grade pill cauldron, that could be refined and linked with their own consciousness, the chance of success for any alchemist when making pills could increase by a quarter, or even as much as a third.

With such a great amplification effect, a Totem cauldron was a treasure that any Alchemist would dream of possessing.

Also, the Resting Dirt was abnormally heavy. The clump that Liu Ming had just put away was only the size of a fist but it was actually over three pounds.

Just looking at its value, the Resting Dirt had already exceeded all of Liu Ming's harvests from before.

However, if this item were to be seen by other people – perhaps even disciples of the same sect, such as Yang Qian – they would not be able to help but fight over it, people from other sects would be even more tempted.

Liu Ming forcefully suppressed the excitement in his heart, and with a movement of his body, he flew out of the hole like a feather, returning

above ground. However, when he looked around, he could not help but be slightly startled.

He saw that the dozen or so peach trees had all become extremely wilted and all of the leaves had fallen. He could not see the slightest color of green from any of the trees at all.

Liu Ming quickly thought of a solution before suddenly forming hand signs with two hands. A dozen or so fireballs shot out in all directions.

In that moment, all of the peach trees were enveloped by the rolling flames and turned into black ash.

Liu Ming did not stop there. The short azure sword in his hand shined once more as a series of seven or eight waves of Sword Qi cut at the huge hole in the center of the platform.

The whole terrace was immediately covered in ruthless linear ditches out of nowhere, destroying everything nearby. There was not a single trace left of how it looked originally.

Only once he was finished did Liu Ming put the short azure sword away with satisfaction. He turned around and returned to the cave. He began to meditate, refining the pure Yuan Li from the peach he had eaten earlier.

Two hours later, when Liu Ming once again opened his eyes, he displayed a serious expression on his face.

The Yuan Li within the flesh of the Spirit Peach was purer than he had originally suspected, so he was able to completely refine it in this short period of time. However, the Fa Li he had converted was not a lot, only enough to make up around a month's worth of hard training.

Luckily he had close to a hundred of these Spirit Peaches from this harvest. As long as he ate half of them, they would be enough to boost his Fa Li all the way to the peak tier of a Late Spirit Apostle.

However, if these Spirit Peaches were taken out, he would have to hand over a large portion to the sect. If this happened, his plan of increasing his Fa Li would be ruined.

It seemed that he had to find a chance to eat a large portion of these Spirit Peaches a few days before leaving the Secret Realm.

Liu Ming thought about this before he stood up to leave the cave. He continued to look for other Spirit medicines on the mountain.

.....

The Lan brother and sister opened their eyes at almost the same time. After looking each other in the eyes, they directly flew to the mountain peak without saying a word.

An hour later, the two of them stood in a spacious area, that was the highest point on the mountain peak, and looked around.

“Brother, we will rely on your sensory abilities next.” The cute girl spoke in a serious manner, directing her words to her brother.

“Don’t worry. Even if it was hiding in a place tens of thousands of feet underground, I will still be able to find it.” The male spoke with an enthusiastic glint in his eyes. Subsequently, he closed his eyes and began forming hands signs with his two hands at lightning speed. At the same time, light blue inscriptions appeared with a flash on the two sides of his face.

Between words, the male began to slowly walk around. Although his eyes were closed, he still walked around a few large trees that blocked the way, as if he could see everything normally. He walked step by step, in a certain direction.

The cute girl raised an eyebrow and followed closely without making a sound.

After the time it takes to drink a cup of tea, the male of the Sea Race suddenly stopped and called out with some excitement, “It should be around here!”

As soon as he finished speaking, he opened his eyes, but after seeing the huge object in front of him was, he could not help but be slightly stupefied.

In front of him stood a huge, grayish-white boulder that was over a hundred feet tall.

“Brother, is this really where you sensed it?” After looking at the boulder in front of her a few times, the cute girl spoke with her eyebrows knit.

“It should be correct.” The male of the Sea Race walked around the huge rock a couple of times as he spoke with a serious tone.

“Then it will be easy. Won’t it be clear if we break the rock and check if there is anything inside?” The cute girl spoke with a light laugh.

“What sister has said is reasonable. Stand back.” The male immediately nodded. After crushing a Glyph from his sleeve, a thick, blue light barrier appeared around his body. With a deep breath and his fingers apart, he pushed both of his palms into the boulder at the same time.

In the next moment, his ten fingers trembled slightly and ten weird vibration waves entered the boulder without a sound.

After a bang, the huge, grayish-white rock fell apart into a pile of loose rocks.

The male immediately flew back around a hundred feet with the sway of his body before slightly nervously looking at the loose rock at the same time as the cute girl.

However, it was empty inside, without even a trace of the shadow of the scarlet serpent.

TL: Chinese dragons look like serpents, aka snakes

With this, the Sea Race male could not help but really stare blankly.

As for the cute girl, she walked toward the pile of rocks after a flash of light appeared in her eyes. After a little inspection, she suddenly picked up an item.

It was actually a glittering scale that was the size of a hand. It flashed with a faint, red light.

“Dragon scale! Impossible, don’t tell me the thing I sensed was this

item?" Seeing this, the Sea Race male could not help but become surprised and angry at the same time.

"That is not necessarily true. The dragon aura a normal dragon scale has is next to nothing and could not draw brother here. Unless it is one of the few Inverted Scales from the neck of the scarlet dragon!" The cute girl spoke slowly.

"Inverted scale? That is even more impossible. Every Inverted Scale is an item only second in importance to the dragon's bead for a dragon; how could it just abandon it here?" The Sea Race male was extremely surprised.

"It really is like this. However, if the Scarlet Dragon was in a state where death was near, just a single Inverted Scale naturally could not be counted as anything. Brother, you should first clean up these loose rocks and see if there is anything below." The cute girl smiled a little before giving her input.

"Okay."

The Sea Race male immediately spread out his two arms and a huge force immediately erupted out of his body. It forcefully pushed most of the loose rocks away.

Below the rocks, a black hole in the dirt was revealed.

"There are indeed other mysterious mechanisms below. The Scarlet Dragon must be hiding within." Seeing this, the Sea Race male immediately spoke lowly with excitement.

"If the Scarlet Dragon is really in there, Brother must be extra careful." After a small flash of light through the cute girl's eyes, she warned him.

"I naturally know this." With the shake of his sleeve, a glistening, short blade immediately appeared in the hand of the Sea Race male. After replying seriously, he formed a hand sign with a single hand and a fire ball was first shot into the huge cave.

# Chapter 135: Monster Shadow

“Hong!”

The fireball exploded deep down in the hole. The flames rolled out and immediately illuminated everything near by.

Surprisingly, this hole was only a twisting tunnel, leading somewhere even deeper. All of the walls were made of soil.

With a leap, the Sea Race male jumped into it.

After slightly hesitating, the cute girl also followed along.

With his feet on the dirt ground of the tunnel, the Sea Race male produced a white, round pearl the size of an egg from his robes. He threw it up, and it transformed into a ball of white light. It floated above where he was and illuminated everything nearby, making everything visible.

The tunnel was circular and the air was thick with the smell of moist soil.

After taking a deep breath, he grasped the blade with one hand and carefully walked along the tunnel. The blue light barrier around him did not disappear from start to end, obviously due to the fact that he feared something would suddenly ambush him.

The two people continued to walk through the ever-twisting tunnel. After traveling down for around a hundred or so feet, the Sea Race male in front suddenly stopped. He started at a blood mark that had become slightly black. It was on the soil wall and his eyes flashed with interest when he noticed it.

“This...” The cute girl could not help but ask.

The Sea Race male did not immediately reply and instead moved his arms to grab a clump of dirt that was soaked in the black blood. He put it under his nose and sniffed gently.

“Yes, it was left behind by this Scarlet Dragon.” In the next moment, the Sea Race male spoke with great happiness.

The cute girl nodded her head and did not say anything more.

The brother threw away the soil in his hand excitedly and continued to travel with faster steps.

A little while later, a huge cavern opened up from the tunnel.

The Lan brother and sister became serious and started to walk extremely carefully.

When the Sea Race male walked into the cavern and swept his gaze over the area above him, he immediately became terror-stricken.

He saw in the area above him a scarlet red dragon that was over a hundred feet long, coiled up into a ball. He made out the huge ferocious head in the dark, which was currently staring viciously at the two of them.

“Not good. Sister, retreat quickly!”

The wrist of the Sea Race male trembled without even thinking. With a sway of the shiny blade in his hand, it immediately transformed into a glistening sword that was several feet in length. With a loud yell, he rushed at the Scarlet Dragon that was floating midair and tried to attack.

“Wait a moment before you attack, it seems like it is dead!” The moment the cute girl saw the scarlet-colored dragon, her face also became pale, but after concentrating, she immediately saw irregularities.

“Dead!” The Sea Race’s male paused after hearing this. Finally, he found that the dragon midair wasn’t even moving and its two wide eyes weren’t even blinking.

“Did this dragon already succumb to its wounds! I’ll test it!” The Lan brother became extremely shocked and surprised. With a slight pause, he flicked the blade in his hand, a cold light soared at the dragon.

“Peng!”

The cold light hit the dragon’s large body and bounced off. However, the dragon lightly floated back dozens of feet.

“That’s not right. It’s much too light for the Scarlet Dragon’s corpse!”

When the cute girl saw this, her expression changed.

The Sea Race brother also observed this odd point, and without another word, he flew into the air. Immediately, he flew before the Scarlet Dragon and after some careful examination, he yelled out.

“This is merely an empty shell that was shed. The real scarlet dragon is not here!”

The cute Lan sister heard this and thought of something. With a twist of her body, she rose up and came closer to the scarlet dragon. What she found was a thin long crack on the back of the scarlet dragon.

Then, the cute girl stepped lightly on the scarlet dragon and made it shake a little. As expected, the weight was extremely light and there was not any flesh within the light shell.

“How is this possible? Where did that scarlet dragon run to and why hasn’t my technique felt anything.” The Sea Race male stared heavily at the dragon’s shell and his face became extremely ugly.

“A dragon molting would only happen in two circumstances. One of them is the dragon gaining a huge increase in cultivation, having their body hugely increase in size. It would have to shed its old skin in order to be able to accommodate a larger body. Another circumstance is for a pure-blooded dragon to have mastered an incredibly rare innate talent called “Returning Truth.” It is said that the technique can be used when a dragon is about to die to shed its dragon shell and reconfigure its entire body for a chance of rebirth. However, the price is that the dragon’s cultivation level will rapidly drop.” The cute girl slowly explained.

“With the severe injuries of the dragon, it definitely was not the first circumstance. If we think of it like this, then the scarlet dragon we are chasing is one of the rare pure-blood dragons that used the ‘Returning Truth’ innate talent to shed its skin. Is it possible that it completely healed and still kept its old cultivation level! How can I not feel where it is!?” The Sea Race male’s face changed a couple of times and took a deep breath.

“The ‘Returning Truth’ innate talent is a talent that rarely occurs even



within the dragons. The knowledge that outsiders have is even less. All I know is that if the dragon really used this talent, it definitely doesn't have a Crystal Level cultivation. No, maybe it doesn't even have a Liquid Level cultivation. In addition, it is probably quite weak. Otherwise, it would have shown itself and killed all of us. As for why you couldn't feel it, I don't know what happened. Maybe it's an added effect of the innate 'Returning Truth' talent or maybe the dragon has a technique that can stop you from sensing him." The girl hesitated before speaking.

"So the scarlet dragon could recover its strength at any time and appear before us to kill everyone." The brother's face changed as he asked.

"Of course, we can't deny such a possibility. For insurance, we should all quickly leave. Since this place has the shell of the dragon, it might come back to check on it." The cute girl suggested with gravity.

"Okay, once I put away this dragon shell, we will leave immediately. Although we have not found the scarlet dragon, with such a large piece of dragon shell, it's enough to make up for my loss after using the Sea Dragon's essence blood. However, the shell is quite large so we need to shrink it a little. Since the Scarlet Dragon is with a fire affinity, the shell should shrink when meeting fire." The Sea Race male thought a little and then made his decision.

Then, he made a single-handed technique to allow a couple of fireballs fly out. They all hit the dragon's shell and the fireballs turned into a sea of fire that began burning the shell.

An incredible scene occurred.

After the dragon's shell was engulfed by the sea of fire, flashes of red started appearing on the dragon's shell as it became smaller.

In seconds, it was only three feet long.

"This size should be enough." The Sea Race male muttered and the shiny sword in his hand flashed. It actually cut his wrist with a slight wound and with another push of his Fa Li, a miniature sea conch that was the size of a bean was forced out.

The conch was small and extremely delicately crafted. In addition, it emitted a white light around it.

The Sea Race male grabbed the conch and pushed his Fa Li within it. Immediately, it expanded to the size of a chicken egg while silver inscriptions floated on it.

“Thankfully, when we left our clan, both of us were gifted with a Sumeru Conch. Otherwise, we wouldn’t be able to sneak this past those human geezers.” The Sea Race male suddenly picked up the conch and smiled.

“The Sumeru Conch is a unique object that is born within the deep sea and not refined by a person. Even within our Sea Race, it is incredibly rare. If it weren’t for us taking this important mission, the elders of the clan would not have broken the rules to give them to us. Although the Crystal Level human elders have a lot of talents and techniques, they still can’t find the conch. Unfortunately, the space within is a little small. Once the dragon shell is placed within, there won’t be much more space.” The cute girl smiled and spoke.

At this time, a white frost shot out from the conch and covered the shrunken dragon shell. With a blur, the shell disappeared.

“Alright, let’s go!” The Sea Race male weighed the conch in his hand and showed an expression of content.

The cute girl made a slight smile and right when she wanted to reply to her brother, her expression changed drastically. Immediately, she turned around and yelled out, “Who’s hiding there, get out of there!”

As soon as her voice fell, the girl raised her hands and dozens of white lines shot out. It was in fact a Water Arrow Technique that was to Complete Spell Mastery.

“Pu, pu!” The white lines flashed and disappeared within the entrance. However, everything was quiet and nothing happened.

“Sister, what happened!”

The Sea Race male’s expression became solemn and hurriedly shoved

the conch within his sleeve. He immediately rushed to her sister's side and with his shiny blade, he also looked toward the entrance.

"I felt like there was someone over there. However, when I turned around, the person disappeared." The cute girl said with a hard expression.

"What... Not good, he's here!" The Sea Race male's brow creased, but after he glanced around the cavern, his eyes suddenly focused on a certain spot.

The cute girl became shocked and looked to where her brother was looking at. As expected, she saw a dark shadow that was currently silently standing in a dark corner of the cavern.

However, due to the dark light, the two of them couldn't make out the features of the person.

"Who are you and when did you come in? Did you hear what we said?" The Sea Race male quickly regained his composure. Staring at the black shadow, he asked with a hint of killing intent.

However, the black shadow stayed where it was without any intention of answering.

When the cute girl beside him saw this, her brows furrowed as she shook her sleeve. Immediately, a couple of shiny beads came flying out and after a twist, they all let out piercing white light.

In moments, the entire dark cavern lit up as if it had been exposed to sunlight and exposed the face of the black shadow to the Lan brother and sister.

"It's you!"

When he saw the face of the black shadow, the Sea Race male's could not help but yell out in surprise.

The black shadow slowly tilted its head to better reveal an abnormally white and young face before he smiled at the Lan brother and sister.

# Chapter 136: Half Dragon

“Brother, you know him?” The cute girl suddenly asked.

“This person is one of the ten Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples. Because of the Demon Qi on him, I had an impression of him.” The Sea Race male regained his composure and said.

The black shadow was in fact “Shi Chuan” that had not appeared before anyone since he entered the secret realm.

However, at this time, his face was much paler. At the same time, his gaze looking at the Lan brother and sister was full of strange glee.

“So it’s a Barbarian Ghost Sect disciple. How did he get in here? Did he track us!? Whatever, it doesn’t matter if he followed us or accidentally stumbled here, we can’t let him leave.” The cute girl looked at the silent Shi Chuan as she said with anger.

“Even if you didn’t say that sister, I wouldn’t let him live.” The Sea Race male laughed and suddenly waved the shiny blade in his hand. Immediately, a thirty to forty foot blade light shot out and with a flash, it appeared before Shi Chuan at an inconceivable speed. It was about to slice Shi Chuan in half!

“Peng!”

Shi Chuan’s smile didn’t change. With a movement of his arm, he actually used a single hand to catch and crush the blade light shooting at him.

This scene shocked the Lan brother and sister.

At this time, the smile Shi Chuan remained on his face as he opened his palm. With difficulty, he opened his mouth.

“Bring... it...”

“Bring what?” The Sea Race male’s face was dark as he asked.

“What...You... Just took....” Shi Chuan continued to say with difficulty.

“You’re talking about that dragon shell!” The Sea Race male’s eyes

flashed with killing intent.

“If not... I’ll eat... you!” Shi Chuan’s voice was void of emotion, but the smile on his face slowly faded.

“Eat us! What do you take us brother and sister for! Do you really think that with the small amount of ability that you have shown, you can act in this manner!” The Sea Race male immediately became enraged and patted the pouch on his waist. With the sound of water, a stream of blue ocean water gushed out and immediately clustered with waves around the male.

The moment the sea water appeared, the Sea Race male made a single-handed technique to allow blue Spirit Inscriptions to appear on his skin. At the same time, his legs touched the seawater and turned blurry before they changed into a light green fish tail.

“Brother, be careful. This person seems a little different!” The cute girl also patted a pouch at her waist to summon a large amount of water and reveal her true form. With a wince of her brows, she carefully whispered to her brother.

“Relax, even if the human Spirit Apostle has some techniques, when I show my true form, killing him is as easy as me just lifting an arm!” The Sea Race male made a vicious smile and suddenly, he stuck the shiny blade in the water before him. Suddenly, he opened his arms and made a hugging motion toward Shi Chuan.

Sounds of “weng” started appearing around Shi Chuan as numerous flows of great strength appeared out of nowhere. At the same time, the force pushed to the middle and was about to squeeze Shi Chuan until he exploded.

However, faced with such a great force, Shi Chuan’s face didn’t even change. With a “pu” sound, scarlet flames suddenly appeared on his body. In addition, the black hair on his head turned scarlet red and was like seedlings of fire. His whole aura suddenly became strange.

When the Sea Race male saw this scene, he suddenly became shocked. With urgency, he pushed the Fa Li in his body and started chanting.

The space around Shi Chuan immediately sounded with noise and some places even started twisting and becoming blurry.

Shi Chuan, who was covered in fire, ignored this. Instead, his eyes became long and thin. Inside them, one could faintly see scarlet lights flashing about.

“If you don’t... give it, then I’ll... eat!” Shi Chuan muttered a few words before the fire on him suddenly surged. Immediately, he disappeared from the giant forces with a blur.

The Sea Race male felt a red wave suddenly engulf him. Immediately afterward, heat materialized in his chest as a scarlet red, scaled arm pierced through his chest. The dark blue light cover around the Sea Race male seemed to be made out of paper and wasn’t able to defend against the scales at all.

“Ah!”

The Sea Race male gave a horrible shriek and felt as if all the strength in his body had disappeared. In the next instant, he saw that Shi Chuan, who had become a half dragon, half human monster, had suddenly appeared before him.

The face Shi Chuan wore was still human and within his scarlet hair grew a pair of dragon horns that were a couple inches tall. In addition, most of his body floated out a layer of scarlet scales while the two hands of his became sharp dragon claws.

“No, you... you are that Scarlet Dragon. How did you become like that...” The nearby cute girl was about to move over and help her brother, but after closely examining Shi Chuan’s appearance, she was immediately shocked and took two steps back with a shout. Then, she gnashed her teeth and suddenly turned around, turning into a ball of white light that shot toward the entrance.

Obviously, the girl knew that with her brother taking such a fatal attack, he had no chance of survival. With herself, she had no chance of being the opponent of the half dragon, half human monster.

The monster that Shi Chuan had transformed into had no emotion on his face. The arm that he had stuck into the Sea Race male's body just simply shook. With a "peng" sound, a fire wave appeared. Instantly, it swept over the body of the male and turned it into a charred black corpse. Immediately afterward, it shook its body and disappeared into a flash of light red.

The cute girl flashed around a couple of time and was about to jump into the tunnel when suddenly, an explosion sounded by her ear and a faint shadow appeared before her. Like a ghost, Shi Chuan's body appeared before her and blocked the exit.

Immediately, the cute girl's face turned incredibly pale. However, her body only trembled as she flew back by a hundred feet. Immediately afterward, a flurry of Glyphs were crushed within her sleeve. Layer after layer of colorful light covers floated from her body and the sea water behind her started to crazily spin around the girl.

"What you want is on my brother. You have also seen that me and my brother are not human, can you let us leave!" The cute girl stared at Shi Chuan as her voice slightly trembled.

"Those who... enter here... die!" A cold glint appeared in Shi Chuan's long and thin eyes as he spoke without emotion.

Hearing this, the cute girl lost her final vestiges of believing that she would be lucky. With a gnash of her teeth, she no longer wasted any words. A long roar came out of her mouth and two light blue Glyphs came shooting out of her sleeve. Then, she made techniques with both of her hands.

"Peng, peng!"

The moment the two Glyphs flew out, they turned into two balls of blue light that exploded. From within, two light blue water serpents came flying out and viciously pounced toward Shi Chuan.

At the same time, the seawater around the girl shot out in white lines toward Shi Chuan.

Faced with such a vicious attack, Shi Chuan's face did not change. He slowly opened his mouth and emitted a roar that was nothing resembling a human. The rolling flames on his body turned into a dragon head that was the size of a house. Its mouth opened and chomped down on the two water serpents that were rushing at it.

As for the white lines that shot out, after the dragon head blew out a light red breeze, the white lines shattered inch by inch.

When the cute girl saw this, her heart dropped.

Now, Shi Chuan gave a deep smile and suddenly took large strides toward the girl.

With the time it took to drink a cup of tea, two charred corpses that were each missing a part of them lay in the cavern. In addition, everything on them was gone. The half dragon monster that Shi Chuan had transformed into also had disappeared.

These two Sea Race disciples were sent by the Sea Race to human sects under painstaking measures. Unfortunately, they died without company in this cavern without a name.

Such an ending was something that the brother and sister had never imagined.

.....

As for the cavern that Lei Zhen had died in, the heart like thing that had countless silver Spirit Inscriptions had expanded to the size of a washing bowl. When it slightly pulsed, many silver threads would fly out. The dense lines had stuffed every inch in the cavern.

If someone followed the silver threads far into the ground, they could find after every certain distance, each silver line would split into another few silver threads. In addition, many of the lines kept plunging down for a long ways.

.....

In a long cave far within the giant mountain, an ugly faced Hall of Blood



disciple was excitedly picking many colorful strange Spirit Flowers on two sides of a cave.

He grabbed onto a Spirit Flower and tried to pull up the flower by the roots, but rangely, he was unable to completely pull it out.

The Hall of Blood disciple gave a small gasp and added some strength within his pull before finally pulling the roots of the flower out of the wall. However, when his gaze focused, he was suddenly stunned.

What he saw was that there was a light silver line attached to the Spirit Flower's roots that went into the wall behind it.

“Is this another Spirit Object!”

The Hall of Blood disciple was first stunned before he immediately became excited and exclaimed to himself in his mind.

When he was about to the follow the silver line to continue exploring, suddenly “chi chi” sounds were made from the wall. Dozens of silver threads shot out without even the slightest warning.

Under such a close distance, the Hall of Blood disciple did not even have time to set up any defenses. With a blood curling scream, the silver threads passed through the body of disciple. In a few breaths, all the flesh and blood on him had been sucked dry by the silver threads. Immediately, he was a dry corpse that did not have any life within it.

After all of the silver threads trembled, they all soundlessly returned back into the rock wall.

In an underground cavern that wasn't too far away, multiple forty to fifty foot large, yellow serpents were also in the form of dried corpses as they lay in their nests.

The same scene was occurring throughout the mountain.

# Chapter 137: Sudden Change

On a huge boulder at the top of a mountain, the young girl from the Heaven Moon Sect gently slid her snow-white sword into its scabbard. Taking out a pill, she popped it into her mouth, and immediately sat cross-legged as she began to meditate in order to recover and stabilize her breath.

Not far from the huge boulder, on the ground underneath, lay the cut-in-half corpse of a thirty-foot-long Iron Feathered Hawk. With only half of its iron feathers left, blood poured out endlessly in a “gu gu” sound from the various wounds along its body.

Sometime later, when the young girl from the Heavenly Moon Sect slightly recovered the color in her face, she heard a deafening sound coming from below the mountain peak as she saw a cloud of blood fog rushing up to her.

“Peng!”

A quite worn-out Xue Ci emerged quickly from the blood fog. He tumbled and almost falling onto the ground close to the huge boulder.

The girl from the Heaven Moon sect opened her beautiful eyes from her deep meditation, quickly scanned the man in the blood robes, and softly spoke:

“Looking at you, you probably finished off the other Iron Feathered Hawk right?”

“Yes I did. If I hadn’t, I would not be able to come back alive.” Standing stably now, Xue Ci replied fiercely to the girl from the Heaven Moon sect as he stared intensely at her.

From his tone it seemed that the girl had given him quite a big hardship to endure.

“Hmph! If I hadn’t initially deeply wounded that Iron Feathered Hawk, I wouldn’t have let you lure it away. It is absurd that you really think that you alone are capable of defeating a Spirit Bird whose strength matches

that of a Peak Spirit Apostle!" The girl from the Heaven Moon Sect snorted as she countered his response.

"Yet even if you decided to use me as bait, wouldn't it be better if you told me beforehand?" Xue Ci angrily questioned her.

"Tell you? If I really told you the plan, would you still obediently lure that monster away? I'm afraid to say that if I told you, it is highly likely that you would be hiding on the side and watching delightfully as I get attacked by two iron feathered hawks." Without reserve, the girl from the Heaven Moon Sect responded.

"These are merely your speculations. How would you know that I would do such a thing at that moment?!" Xue Ci asked, becoming even more enraged.

"So what if it's my speculation! Don't tell me that you want to fight me now!" The girl from the Heaven Moon Sect narrowed her eyes and replied icily.

The man in the red robes suddenly became a greenish pale as he heard these words. Staring dead straight at the girl for almost an eternity, he took a deep breath.

"Okay then..... I'll let this pass. Let's talk after we share these Iron Feathered Hawk spirit eggs."

"You could've said that earlier. Let's go!" The girl from the Heaven Moon Sect smiled coldly, made a one handed sign and flew towards to a distant enormous tree that was more than four hundred feet tall.

On that enormous tree were two impressively built massive bird nests, each with diameters of tens of feet. The two nests hugged each other tightly and were built from strands of dried up branches.

Seeing this, Xue Ci covered himself in a cloud of blood fog and swiftly followed.

In one bird's nest, there laid two watermelon sized light grey eggs, the other only had one egg.

“Perfect! There really are three eggs. This saves me some trouble.” Seeing such circumstances, the girl from the Heaven Moon Sect muttered some words and took out her Sumeru Handkerchief. Shrinking the two Spirit Eggs and wrapping them in the handkerchief, she floated away without paying any attention to Xue Ci.

As Xue Ci icily stared at the back of the leaving young girl, he did not have any incentive to say anything to stop her. Only when her figure disappeared in the distance did he finally snort in bitter resentment and took the leftover Iron Feathered Hawk egg.

A period of time later, standing on a grey cloud flying down, the girl from the Heaven Moon Sect suddenly faintly muttered:

“Are you sure that this guy is very dangerous? Leaving him will cost me greatly.”

“The Hall of Blood is the second strongest sect after the Heavenly Moon Sect. Additionally, Xue Ci is also the greatest senior in his generation at the Hall of Blood; his real strength is far more than what you see on the outside. If it weren’t for the formidable power of your Sword Person as One, I’m afraid that he might dispute your intentions.”

As the voice faded, the pouch on the girl’s waist wiggled slightly and a green light whirled and shot through, revealing a brightly-coloured parrot. Perching on the girl’s shoulders, it again spouted more words of wisdom arrogantly:

“However, you were still able to obtain these two Iron Feathered Hawk eggs, which is quite the harvest. Under my help, it won’t be long until we breed and raise them into Spirit Birds. With their help along with the coordination of your Sword Person as One, I believe that you’ll face little to no adversaries in the entire Yunchuan Continent. As for my capabilities, breeding two iron hawks is already my limit; even if we obtained one more, it would not be useful to us. Under such circumstances, it is not worth it to take more risks.

“Okay, I’ll leave the Spirit Eggs to you. I know that you won’t let me down.” Listening to the words from her companion, the girl from the

Heavenly Moon Sect nodded her head and continued to urge the grey cloud she stood on to fly down towards a nearby cliff.

Surprisingly, on that cliff growing was an oddly-looking dark green tree, with countless rows of grape like berries hidden underneath.

Flying near the tree, the young girl outstretched her lily-white hands in an attempt to pick one bunch of the berries.

Yet just at this moment, a “chi chi” sound rang through the air as densely packed silver lines shot without warning from the rock wall on the side.

Stunned, the young girl from the Heavenly Moon Sect froze in shock. Yet the snow-white sword behind her back shot out from its scabbard in a brisk cry. Emitting an icy white light, the edges of the sword had also enlarged several feet.

“Peng!”

The collision from the icy white light and the silver threads knocked back the young girl the Heavenly Moon Sect many feet.

Letting out an enraged scream, the girl called the snow-white sword back into her hands.

At the same time, a deafening sound boomed from the stone wall as more silver threads sprayed through.

Not saying anything further, the girl from the Heavenly Moon Sect waved her longsword in the air, emitting thick icy cold lights that transformed into four to five layers of protection screens before her.

A series of muffled sounds rang through the air as each layer of protection screen was broken through, emitting a force that caused the girl to step back.

In a blink of an eye, the girl took many steps back as all her protection screens were broken through.

Seeing such circumstances, the girl raised her eyebrows, levelled her longsword before her body and took a deep breath. She planned to put to

use the true power of her sword techniques to deal with these silver threads.

Yet at this moment, in an ear-splitting “peng”, the stone wall broke into pieces, releasing thousands of silver threads that shot through. In a violent dance, the threads shot at the girl from the Heavenly Moon Sect in a densely packed silver frenzy.

For a moment, as far as the eye could see were flashes and flickers of silver. It was like being in a rainstorm of silver threads.

“This isn’t good. Let’s run. This is not something you can handle!” The colorful parrot shouted and wildly beat its wings as it saw this situation.

“I know!” Turning pale the young girl responded. Energy surged through her body, becoming a beam of dense blade light that shot behind the young girl. In a few flashes, she had escaped hundreds of feet away.

Chasing forty or fifty feet, the silver threads ensued but eventually lost momentum and were recalled.

At this time, the young girl from the Heavenly Moon Sect looked back at the cliff, her face lingering with unprecedented fear.

Yet in the next moment, a continuous beastly howl suddenly filled the air – its origin seemed to be that nearby cliff.

Subsequently, everywhere she could see with her own eyes, she witnessed all sizes of monster beasts emerge frantically from countless hidden caves. From pythons of many tens of feet to monster rats no bigger than a fist, all were eager to rush out of their respective caves.

At the moment of monster frenzy, the countless silver threads that were shot through the caves penetrated most of the bodies of the monster beasts. Some of the pierced monsters twitched slightly before they were turned into shrivelled up corpses.

The rest of the monster beasts did not care about anything and madly rushed down the mountain. Yet they didn’t get far as they were penetrated and killed by silver threads shot from nearby rocks next to them.

Only those monster beasts who were capable of flying successfully escaped the mountain. Seeing the chaos underneath, many frantically flew even further, expressing their fear in odd bird like shrieks.

The girl from the Heavenly Moon Sect kept a cool head. Yet after seeing the massacre underneath her, she couldn't help but feel startled.

Just when she decided to turn her head to the parrot and ask a question, the entire mountain groaned and seemed to tremble ever so slightly. In a rumbling boom, the entire mountain started to disintegrate. Countless sizes of rocks tumbled down in an earth-shattering chaos as even more silver threads were shot from the five mountain tops, dancing violently in the air.

At this time, the girl did not feel the urge to ask the parrot anything anymore. Without hesitation, she turned and hurriedly flew to away from the entire mountain.

On the other mountain peaks in the distance, same scenes were also enacted. Countless monsters rushed from their peaks in a chaotic frenzy, trying to escape the entire mountain in all directions.

Over in the heart of the secret realm, the enormous mountain with various peaks suddenly became alive.

Covered in a green colored layer, Liu Ming was thinking of escaping through the air as his speed was many times faster than that of those with the normal Soaring Sky Technique.

Yet all around him were surprisingly dozens of fierce-looking unknown bird-like monsters, who also had intentions of escaping through the air.

Usually, these monster beasts would pounce on this closeby "food" without hesitation. However in this case, they did not even bother turning their heads in interest as all were frantically beating their wings.

In one breath, Liu Ming flew several kilometers away. As he felt more relaxed after covering much distance, he stopped for a moment and looked back at the mountain behind him.

Not long ago, he had just discovered a precious ore. Upon finding the

ore, he ran into a pangolin monster beast. Between the exchanges, a barrage of silver threads shot at them from all directions.

The pangolin monster did not stand a chance as it was penetrated quickly in thousands of places by the silver threads. Soon enough the monster had its blood and flesh sucked out and transformed into a shriveled up corpse.

Fortunately, Liu Ming had activated the Blood Vine Technique immediately and instantly received protection from his glyph armor. Thanks to this, the silver threads were blocked and the moment before the mountain collapsed, he used the Godly Transportation Talisman to escape.



# Chapter 138: Sky Upholding Demonic Hand

At this moment, he turned around and looked backwards. His expression became extremely serious.

This was due to the fact that the huge mountain faraway continued to rumble without stopping and layers of soil and rocks rolled off from the peak of the mountain.

With the blink of an eye, the entire mountain became half as big as it was before. Who knew how many Spirit Trees and Spirit Grasses were swallowed into the soil and rocks. Looking at the waste, Liu Ming could not help but feel a lot of pity.

“Sou!”

Not far away, a glittering light was shot out and after a blur, it actually transformed into a good looking female in the uniform of the Heavenly Moon Sect.

The female carried a snow white longsword on her back and stopped mid air not far away from Liu Ming. She swept her gaze over Liu Ming coldly, before also turning around and looking at the huge mountain far away.

Seeing this girl, Liu Ming could not help but slightly squint his eyes.

With no particular reason, this female gave him a weird feeling of extreme danger and that it was better to avoid her from far away.

Liu Ming quickly thought a little and could not help but try guess the identity of the female.

The Heavenly Moon Sect was renowned to be the number one sect in the Kingdom of Xuan. On the way to Fujiao Island, the Barbarian Ghost Sect leader naturally gave them an overview of the genius disciples on this sect.

However, there was not a particular person that matched well with the

appearance of the female. Perhaps the female was like him, one of the newly recruited Heavenly Moon Sect disciples.

However, looking at the age of the person, it seemed to not fit at all!

Liu Ming guessed the other person's age and had a few thoughts of doubt at heart.

What he naturally did not know was that when the other person was still young, her talent of possessing the Sword Communication Spirit Body was discovered by the higher levels of authority in the Heavenly Moon Sect and was accepted by the sect without hesitation. She was groomed with the utmost care and with a large amount of resources. However, this matter was always concealed by the Heavenly Moon Sect up until the recent years when there was no way to continue hiding it, where they finally revealed some rumors to outsiders.

Otherwise, no matter how high the talent this female had, there was no way for her to be able to successfully cultivate Sword Person as One, a remarkable ability, as a Spirit Apostle.

However, at this moment, the rumbling of the faraway mountain finally stopped with a crack, and revealed the true form of what was hiding in it originally. Surprisingly, it was a huge black hand that held up the sky and threads of silver constantly flashed on it without stopping, as if the hand had hair.

Seeing such a surprising scene, not only did Liu Ming feel cold at heart, even the female from the Heavenly Moon Sect became dumbstruck.

A muffled bang could be heard from the faraway giant hand.

Hearing this, Liu Ming's heart actually also beat with it and at the same time, all of the blood in his body paused, as if it had completely stopped flowing.

His expression changed greatly and without saying anything, he turned around. He activated the green light with all his strength, flying at the world of frost not far away.

Almost at the same time, the expression of the female from the

Heavenly Moon Sect also became pale and fled in the same direction.

As for the muffled sound from the giant mountain, it continued to be emitted consecutively and became faster and faster, stronger and stronger. Every sound seemed to have an unbelievable amount of power and after hearing it, people's hearts could not help but start beating faster while their breaths becoming ragged.

To those monster birds with low levels of cultivation, these muffled sound had an even more surprising effect. After hearing the sounds, many monsters become powerless and their heads became droopy, before they fell to the ground, unable to move.

When the monsters with higher levels of cultivation heard the muffled sounds, although they did not lose their ability to move, they became extremely panic-stricken and fled in all directions as if their lives depended on it. They would not even look back.

Although the oldest monsters had only lived for several hundred of years, their fear of the giant hand was engraved in their blood from tens of thousands of years ago. A few monsters with higher intelligence even vaguely knew from the inheritance from generation to generation, that the giant hand would hibernate for an extremely long amount of time, before appearing again to slaughter all of them.

Also, the stronger the monsters were, the harder it was to escape from the killing of the sky upholding giant hand. On the other hand, if the existences with weaker strength hid away secretly, perhaps they could escape with their lives intact.

Since it was like this, the monsters with the strongest strength naturally became even more frightened.

As for the disciples of various sects that had entered the range of the giant hand, they were suddenly ambushed by the silver threads and were put into a disastrous and deadly situation. There were almost ten or so people that were not able to defend in time, whom which transformed into dry corpses.

As for the other people with strong cultivations or abnormal sensory

abilities, they all became caught with the other monsters, all running away with their lives in fright.

Some disciples with comparatively greater speeds had already even dived head first into the world of frost, or even the area of magma.

With a flash, Liu Ming and the female from the Heavenly Moon Sect entered the world that was snowing as the sky was covered in goose feathers, with one in front and one behind. At that moment, the sky upholding giant hand behind them swayed a little and actually slowly emerged out of the ground with the ground rumbling, finally revealing the bottom half of it.

Surprisingly, the sky upholding giant hand was cut off at the wrist, and in the center of the palm, there was a silver heart embedded in it. It beat slowly with a rhythm and a surprising “badump badump” sound could be heard from it.

As it beat, the fingers of the sky upholding giant hand slowly began to move, sometimes shaking slightly without stopping, sometimes bending and at other times twisting and turning...

In the same time period, the five fingers actually did actions different from each other, as if they were five completely independent bodies.

“Pu!”

After beating quickly a few times, the silver heart in the center suddenly released a fog that was as dark as ink and at the same time, thick, black scales emerged, quickly covering up the whole hand. From far away, it seemed very sinister.

In the moment where the silver heart suddenly released the black fog, Liu Ming, who was currently trudging through the goose feather-like snow and fleeing in the opposite direction, suddenly felt something in his Dantian suddenly jump. Immediately, he used his mental power to look into his body after a change in expression.

As a result, in the next moment, his expression became extremely ugly.

He only saw that, inside his Dantian, the mysterious bubble currently

moved slightly without stopping and gave off a vague, weird feeling, as if it was currently thirsting for something.

Liu Ming did not have the time to carefully figure out the weird feeling the mysterious bubble gave out and could only secretly swear, before pulling out a Godly Transporting Glyph and stick it on himself.

A dozen or so inscription lit up and the green light around Liu Ming immediately became thicker by one to two level. At the same time, the Fa Li in his body exploded crazily and his whole body was enveloped by a black air bubble. He actually rushed through the sky and flew several tens of feet above the ground.

Seeing this, the female from the Heavenly Moon Sect was slightly startled but after thinking quickly, she also reluctantly pulled out a Glyph from her body. She then crushed it and rays of white light flowed out from within, condensing wildly onto her back.

In the next moment, the female actually had an additional pair of white wings that were tens of feet long on her back. With a light flap, she shot forwards covered in white light. Her speed actually seemed to be slightly faster than Liu Ming who was in front by a portion.

“Not good, this is..... Demonic Gas. Such strong Demonic Gas ..... This is an Ancient Demon’s Giant Palm. As for this place, it is not a natural secret realm and is rather a place from ancient times that was made by an ancient being to seal a limb of a giant demon.” The person who said this was actually the black faced young man, who was trembled slightly. Beside him stood Yang Qian.

With the strength of the two, they naturally escaped the attacks of the silver threads when the mountain first appeared and fled to this area.

However, when the black faced young man saw the sinister giant hand from far away, his whole face became extremely pale, as if he had seen a ghost. Inside his hand, he seemed to carry a weird round disc thing, which had a needle that spun crazily without stopping on it.

“What ancient giant demon, is it the owner of this giant hand?” Yang Qian, who was on the side was completely confused and asked quickly.

“Don’t speak useless words, quickly run! If that giant hand is really left over from an ancient giant demon, perhaps even our martial ancestors would not be able to withstand a blow. If we do not quickly escape from the secret realm, death will be the only path left.” The black faced young man spoke with great hurry, before putting the round disc away. He immediately released a huge tiger puppet and pulled Yang Qian onto it, before turning around and rushing straight at the world of frost.

“What is an ancient giant demon? You say that even our martial ancestors are not their enemies, is that true?” Although Yang Qian has a few thoughts of doubt, he did not deny it due to his trust of the black faced young man. However, he formed a hand seal with one hand and released layers of rolling black air to protect him from behind, before asking as he could not help it.

“For matters regarding the ancient giant demons, I only read a tiny bit in an ancient book and cannot confirm that this palm is an ancient giant demon. However, all you need to know is that the eighty to ninety percent of the human race in the Yunchuan continent was once swallowed by an ancient giant demon.” The black faced young man had a face full of anxiety and only after quickly replying with a few words, he crazily activated the giant tiger puppet to sprint towards the snow and ice.

“What, eighty to ninety percent of the humans of the whole continent were eaten by an ancient giant demon! You must be joking.” Hearing what was said, Yang Qian was completely shocked, and seemed to be unable to take it in at all.

“This matter definitely cannot be fake. Even the current Sea Race and other special races were only the servants and slaves of that ancient giant demon. Anyways, it is not too late to discuss the other matters after we survive.” The black faced young man gave a bitter smile, and did not continue to answer the question.

Hearing what was said, Yang Qian’s expression constantly changed for a while.

.....

One covered in rolling grey air and one covered in blood fog, Feng Chan and Gao Chong currently flew for their lives in a field of burning hot lava.

Behind them, there was a suddenly sky shattering sound. After being startly, they could not help but turn around to look at the same time.

What they saw was that not far away, there was a scarlet red ball of light, which shot towards them like a crossbow bolt. Its speed was extremely surprising.

“It actually is him, Shi Chuan!”

After seeing the person in the scarlet light clearly, Feng Chan immediately spoke with a peculiar expression.

Hearing what was said, Gao Chong’s expression also slightly changed.

Seeing the ball of light that was transformed by Shi Chuan chase over, the two glanced at each other. Feng Chan suddenly moved and actually immediately blocked the path which Shi Chuan was about to shoot past. He carried an evil smile and spoke loudly:

“Junior Shi Chuan, wait, I have matters to discuss with you.”

# Chapter 139: Nightmare

Shi Chuan, who was in the ball of scarlet light, did not seem to hear his words, and shot toward Feng Chan without slowing down at all.

“Shi Chuan, have you heard what I said!”

Feng Chan was surprised and although he dodged to one side, he controlled the gray air around him with great anger. At the same time, one of his arms, which seemed slightly shriveled, grabbed at Shi Chuan’s shoulder with lightning speed.

“Peng!”

Feng Chan had grabbed Shi Chuan’s shoulder and forcefully stopped him. After a flash of cold light in his eyes, he used strength in his five fingers at the same time and decided to let Shi Chuan suffer from some pain.

However, a surprising situation emerged instead.

Feng Chan’s five fingers clearly dug several inches into Shi Chuan’s shoulder like metal hooks, but Shi Chuan just turned his expressionless face to look at him. Afterward, his normal looking eyes suddenly flashed and became extremely thin and long. He spat out words blankly, “Go……. die.”

As soon as he finished speaking, one of Shi Chuan’s arm became a blur and the palm, which was covered in scarlet red scales, pierced through Feng Chan’s chest. In his hand was a fresh, red heart that was still beating.

Feng Chan’s eyes expanded. He saw the hand that had pierced through his chest with his lowered head. His lips moved as if he wanted to say something but no sound came out.

His cultivation into an iron corpse body was actually completely unable to withstand the heart piercing attack of “Shi Chuan.”

A malevolent expression flashed across the face of “Shi Chuan,” and with the movement of his other hand, he placed his five icy-cold fingers



on Feng Chan's head before suddenly bringing the fingers together.

With a bang, Feng Chan's head exploded open like a watermelon. Since "Shi Chuan" was so close to him, a large portion of the brain matter that scattered in all directions landed on his body.

"Shi Chuan" withdrew his two hands and casually threw the corpse down. With his mouth open, he ate the heart in his hand before sticking out a long, purplish-red tongue. He licked up all of the white liquids on his fingers of his other hand. Afterward, he looked to the other person who was nearby with no expression.

Gao Chong was already scared dumbstruck by what he saw unfolding before him.

When Feng Chan and him looked at each other before, they originally wanted to take advantage of Shi Chuan, since he was by himself, and extort some things from him.

After all, a tenth of all the resources obtained could be kept after leaving the secret realm. As for the two of them, who wasted some time in vain, they were not able obtain much Spirit Medicine, so they naturally wanted to make up for the deficiency with Shi Chuan.

However, who would have thought that this great senior of the Nine Infants faction, who should have been easy to bully, actually used such a cruel killing technique to kill Feng Chan.

Knowing Feng Chan's strength, his death was mainly due to the fact that he was not on guard, however, the strength of the opponent was also obvious.

At the very least, Gao Chong knew that even if he used the power of Symbol Qi, he definitely would not be able to easily defeat Feng Chan's Iron Corpse Body in such a short time.

However, when his gaze met the long, purplish-red tongue and the hand covered in scales, his face suddenly turned pale. With a turn of his body, he rushed away, covered in fog of blood.

Up to this point, how could he not understand that the "Shi Chuan" in

front of him was not the original Shi Chuan, and was perhaps transformed into by some abnormal object. When he realized that he was in danger, he immediately began to flee without even saying a word.

Gao Chong highly regarded himself as an exceptionally talented disciple with the Earth Spiritual Pulse, so he would do anything to not fall dead in an insignificant secret realm.

After seeing what happened, “Shi Chuan” opened his mouth a little, which actually split open all the way to where his ears were. Inside, two rows of abnormally sharp teeth could be vaguely seen, and with the shake of his shoulder, he seemed to decide to chase after Gao Chong.

However, at this time, a huge, world-shaking sound could be heard from far behind, and the ground shook and rumbled without stop. Out of nowhere, the ground split open into countless deep cracks, which spat out pillars of scarlet red fire.

As for the sky-upholding demonic hand that was behind, it separated its fingers and suddenly slapped down from high above, causing the countless monsters nearby that could not move to be squashed into mince meat. Fresh blood immediately rolled from the giant hand with “gu gu” sounds.

With another “chi chi” sound, the silver threads once again shot down densely, immediately stabbing into the blood matter below.

Seeing this, a light of terror flashed across his eyes and “Shi Chuan” moved his body, transforming into a ball of red light. He continued to fly forward, as if he had completely given up on the idea of killing Gao Chong.

When Gao Chong saw what happened, a big burden was naturally lifted from his shoulders. However, after turning around to look at the huge, black hand far away, he once again began flying. Under the terrifying pressure, his heart immediately trembled as he also circulated his Fa Li crazily, running away for his life.

However, as he traveled on, he naturally avoided the “Shi Chuan” from before by a large distance.

Liu Ming followed the path recorded on the compass-like object in his hand. After rushing through the world of frost, he returned to the ravine, which was covered with stone pillars.

Only at this time did he relax slightly. He also turned around and looked back, only to see the huge black hand slap down unhurriedly. Countless monsters were immediately flattened into mince meat.

The giant hand was a frightening size. After a dozen or so slaps, it had completely flattened all of the trees and terrain that stuck out. It also left behind basins that were over a hundred feet wide in areas that it hit harder.

Under the constant movement of the giant hand, these basins continued to grow larger, spreading to nearby areas.

The sky-upholding giant hand seemed to want to kill all of the monsters and would not rest before then.

Seeing this, Liu Ming's heart grew slightly cold and immediately shook his sleeve without any further hesitation. A black rope rolled out and curled around the stone pillar that was closest to him. At this moment, on another section of the ravine, the female from the Heavenly Moon Sect took a deep breath and suddenly pulled out the snow white longsword from her back. Subsequently, Sword Qi rushed into the air and she transformed into a ray of cold Sword Qi, flying in the opposite direction of the valley.

After a few flashes, the sword qi disappeared, and surprisingly, the female from the Heavenly Moon Sect appeared on the other side of the valley.

Her face was extremely pale as she indistinctly looked back at Liu Ming. She then formed a hand seal with one hand and summoned a gray cloud to silently fly away.

“So this is the special ability of Sword Cultivators. It indeed is outstanding!” Liu Ming looked at the huge force of gravity on his body, and after using some strength to climb to the top of a stone pillar, he saw the back of the female from the Heavenly Moon Sect from far away. He

could not help but become extremely jealous.

However, after the time it took to eat a meal, he finally jumped to the other side of the valley with his body covered in sweat.

Luckily his Fa Li and strength had increased by a lot when compared to before, otherwise he would not have been able to move so quickly.

Once Liu Ming left the cage of the terrifying gravity, he stood firmly on the ground and could not help but be relieved. Taking advantage of the fact that the effects of the Godly Transport Glyph had not completely disappeared yet, he immediately transformed into a ball of blue light, shooting toward the dense forest far away.

However, the mysterious bubble in Liu Ming's Dantian started flashing more and more often from inside, an abnormal feeling of extreme thirst could be felt as it became stronger and stronger.

Although Liu Ming was very unsettled at heart, he would not dare to stop now to think. He could only wait until he found a secret and safe place to resolve this matter.

However, when he entered the dense forest with a flash, he suddenly stopped on a big tree branch as the green light died away. When he was thinking of circulating his Fa Li again to continue on, something that no one would ever think of, suddenly happened!

The mysterious bubble in his Dantian burst open with a flash.

Liu Ming only felt a series of pain in his Dantian before his two eyes turned blank. He fell head first off the tree branch. With a bang, he crashed into the thick layer of leaves underneath and was unconscious.

In the next moment, strands of black air emerged from Liu Ming's skin. They rolled and condensed, transforming into lines of unknown, black inscriptions that spun crazily around Liu Ming.

In the flashes of black light, there was an ancient Glyph formation of several tens of feet wide.

The black Glyph formation flashed a few times and the black gas in the

center condensed, turning into a sparkling bubble the size of a fist. Inside, there was some silver light that could vaguely be seen.

Almost the same moment the silver light appeared, the sky-upholding demonic hand that was incredibly far away, which was currently crushing large areas of monsters, suddenly and completely stopped mid-air.

The faint silver heart that was in the center of the giant hand flashed crazily and started to emit a bright light. Silver threads spread out from the top of it and beat even crazier.

After two loud “pengs,” the silver heart suddenly transformed into a ball of silver light and exploded.

The sky-upholding giant hand fell apart as if it had lost its controller and transformed into rolling black gas. Afterward, it flowed crazily in Liu Ming’s direction, hiding the skies and covering the earth.

Liu Ming felt like he had a really, really long dream, and in the dream, it was as if he had returned to the grayish mysterious space. However, at the same time, his body was covered in countless black snakes, entrapping him so that he could not even move an inch. As for the space around him, it constantly flashed with countless blurry black shadows without stop.

These black shadows only flashed visibly and invisibly nearby while others constantly beat with an extremely weird language by his ear. However, he was not able to understand any of the meaning of the constantly changing language, making him feel extremely worried at heart.

In these black shadows, there was a tall and large black shadow which had its head down. It stood quietly in a corner silently without moving from start to end while the other shadows completely avoided it from afar, nobody acknowledged it.

After an unknown amount of time, the tall, black shadow suddenly raised its head, and walked slowly to Liu Ming.

Seeing this, the other black shadows gave way to one side and all

transformed into clouds of fog before disappearing.

The big and tall shadow walked with a few steps to an area near Liu Ming and leaned over, as if it was examining Liu Ming.

Liu Ming could even feel the hot air the other person breathed out but the face of the shadow was still a blur. Even if he used his eyes to look at it as if his life depended on it, he could not see the appearance of the other person clearly. He could not help but feel absolutely terrified at heart.

At this moment, there was a sudden clap of thunder in the empty space, and a lightning bolt appeared nearby with a flash.

Subsequently, with the small amount of light, Liu Ming finally saw the appearance of the black shadow clearly. He immediately cried out involuntarily.

“Impossible, how is it you!”

# Chapter 140: Xue Nu

The appearance of the person was actually completely the same as Liu Ming!

Liu Ming looked at his other self. It was like he was looking in a mirror. The only difference was that the other person had his eyes closed and was expressionless.

What made him even more distracted was that the words cried out from the group of shadows before treated the other person as an existence that they were extremely familiar with.

At this moment, the opposing “Liu Ming” suddenly opened its two eyes. Its pupils were actually dazzling silver light, which were harsh on the real Liu Ming’s eyes.

Liu Ming was surprised and could not help but close his eyes. With this, he was scared to awake from the dream.

It was pitch black around him and he could smell moist soil through his nose.

He quickly thought a little before suddenly realizing that he had been buried alive underground.

If it were not for the Dark Bone Method he cultivated which released strands of black gas to protect his body, perhaps he really would have suffocated without knowing at all.

“Peng!”

With a deep shout, Liu Ming rolled around in the soil and immediately appeared from several tens of feet underground to the surface. Surprisingly, it was extremely bright outside and he did not know how much time had passed.

He quickly checked his surroundings before seeing that it was indeed on the edge of the dense forest where he had fainted. The only thing he did not know was how he ended up so deep underground.

Liu Ming's expression changed several times before suddenly thinking of something and formed a hand seal with one hand. He swept his mental strength across his Spirit Sea and only saw that it was extremely empty. The mysterious bubble which had exploded did not appear again.

After slightly activating the Dark Bone Method and circulating his Fa Li once, everything was the same as before. There were no changes from before.

Liu Ming's brows were instead tightly knit.

Could it be that the previous dream really was just a dream? However, everything felt real inside the dream and the absolutely horrifying feeling the other "Liu Ming" gave him still made his heart feel cold.

After thinking a little, he only felt that his mind was in a mess and could not find any hints. He immediately shook his head and pushed everything to the back of his mind. He moved his body and flew onto a huge tree like a feather. He looked toward the faraway area.

However, his pupils suddenly constricted from what lay before him!

Far away, in the center of the secret realm, the huge basin still remained but the sky-upholding giant hand had completely disappeared.

The amount of time he was unconscious for hopefully did not exceed the time limit of staying in the secret realm.

After thinking like this, Liu Ming really became worried and immediately ignored other matters to think about this. With a movement of his body, he flew toward the dense forest.

Several hours later, Liu Ming, who was currently traversing the dense forest, heard a vague bang and immediately showed a happy expression. He changed the direction he was traveling in and turned to the area the sound came from.

After a short while, he arrived atop a big tree at the edge of a spacious area with the sway of his body.

Not far in front of him, there was surprisingly a male and a female, who



were currently in an intense battle.

The male wore the uniform from the Hall of Blood and was covered in Blood Qi. He swung the blood red, long blade in his hand and a cold, blood red light shot forth toward the opponent like a poisonous snake. However, his eyes were closed, and he did not even look at his opponent.

The female's face was extremely delicate and her body floated up and down like a fairy. However, purple light constantly poured out of her eyes and in one hand, she held a small bronze bell, several inches tall. From time to time, she would wave it.

Surprisingly, it was Jia Lan.

The expression of the male from the Hall of Blood was vicious. His eyes seemed to be tightly closed but with every swing of his sword, it was as if he could clearly see where Jia Lan had dodged to. He forced her to be greatly disadvantaged. She was not able to stop in a certain area for longer than a little bit of time.

Luckily the small bell in the hands of the young lady seemed to have an unbelievable effect. With every shake, it would give out crisp sound, causing the actions of the male from the Hall of Blood to pause, allowing Jia Lan to take advantage of the situation and use two or three techniques to attack.

However, although it was like this, the attacks from the male from the Hall of Blood became faster and faster. The waves of blood-colored Blade Qi gave off a concentrated bloody smell, as if it had completely wrapped up the young lady. Meanwhile, Jia Lan's face became extremely pale, as if she had used too much Fa Li. It was obvious that she was somewhat unable to hold her ground anymore.

"Senior Jia Lan, why don't you let junior help you!" At this moment, Liu Ming floated out of the tree and spoke while smiling slightly at Jia Lan.

"Hmph, another Barbarian Ghost Sect disciple! Okay, you are in good luck this time. Don't meet me by yourself next time!" After seeing Liu Ming appear, the expression of the vicious male changed. He immediately withdrew the blood blade in his hand before immediately shooting back,

leaving the battle. However, just when he entered the dense forest, he spoke viciously before disappearing with a flash.

“So it was Junior Bai. I am in debt to you this time.” Seeing Liu Ming appear, Jia Lan was at first startled before revealing a slightly happy expression. She withdrew the purple light in her eyes, and with a blur, she returned to the appearance of a delicate and pretty young lady.

“Who is that person? How did he stop you!?” Although this was not the first time Liu Ming saw the young lady changing appearances, he still could not help but secretly be in shock after seeing what had happened. However, he asked a question with a serious tone of voice.

“That person is Xue Nu, who is ranked third in the rankings of the Hall of Blood. He cultivates a special method, which actually is not affected by my nightmare eye techniques. The reason he stopped me naturally was for the spirit medicines on me. Could it be that junior has not met any people from other sects in the past two days?” Jia Lan explained a little before asking with some confusion.

“Not to hide anything from senior, I happened to have some accidents and fainted in an area for a period of time. I only just woke up. However, it seems that I have not been unconscious for too long.” Hearing what was said, Liu Ming revealed an expression as if he was thinking.

“So it turns out to be like that! Relax junior, there are still a dozen or so days left in the time limit of one and a half months. However, it is extremely dangerous currently near the entrance of the secret realm. Many disciples of the other sects have set up ambushes there, all ready to steal the resources of other people. No, I should say that this whole area has become extremely dangerous, otherwise I would not have been discovered and forced to act immediately. Perhaps waiting until the final few days, when all of the people have to gather here, is the real time of fighting for our lives.” Jia Lan replied with a bitter smile.

“So it turns out to be like so. However, does senior know where the giant hand in the center of the secret realm has gone? When I woke up, it was completely gone!” After thinking a bit, Liu Ming could not bear it any

longer and asked about the matter he cared most about.

“That giant hand only appeared for a few hours and disappeared two days ago by itself. During that time.....” Hearing what was asked, Jia Lan explained to Liu Ming how the sky-upholding giant hand fell apart by itself. She continued with a serious expression, saying that transformed into endless black gas, which rolled into the dense forest, before disappearing abnormally again.

“What, the black air the giant hand transformed into suddenly disappeared at the edge of the forest.” Liu Ming was surprised.

“Correct, when the black gas hid the skies and covered the earth, I thought that everybody was running away at that time. However, who would have thought that when the surprising black air rushed into the dense forest, it suddenly all disappeared. This is an extremely strange occurrence, and if it weren’t for the fact that this was the best place to hide in the secret realm, I definitely would not have been willing to stay here any longer.” Jia Lan spoke while her brows were knit tightly.

“That giant hand has not appeared since. It seems that it maybe really has disappeared. After all, there is not a lot of time until we must leave the secret realm. If we are able to leave safely, even if any weird matters occur in here, they will have no relation to us.” Liu Ming spoke after thinking a little.

“I also think like that. What I want to know is that what will Junior Bai do afterward. Will you find a good place to hide and wait for the suitable opportunity to leave the secret realm or continue to look for some spirit objects in the forest?” Jia Lan nodded her head before suddenly asking in such a fashion.

“My harvests from the previous few days were very good, so I don’t want to take anymore risks. I have decided to hide away for a few days alone before deciding anything else.” Liu Ming’s eyes flashed slightly before replying like this.

“I understand what Junior Bai is saying. I have decided to go to a few far away areas to see if I can obtain any harvests as well as conveniently

avoid this period of intense battles.” Jia Lan nodded her head and seemed to completely agree.

In the next period of time, the two continued to discuss a little more before saying farewells and separating.

None of the two actually mentioned a word of working together.

Half a day later, Liu Ming found a huge tree hole that was covered by dense bushes and immediately crawled into it with delight. He felt that it was clean and spacious inside. He patted the leather pouch on his waist without hesitating at all.

With a ray of black light, the White Bone Scorpion appeared in rolling purple gas.

“Go. Guard outside. Once someone gets near, immediately wake me!” Liu Ming formed a hand seal with one hand, and used the Spirit Communication Technique to communicate with the conscious of the bone scorpion as he immediately gave out orders.

The White Bone Scorpion replied with a few sounds of “gu gu,” before immediately disappearing into the ground with a roll, not to be seen again.

Only at this moment did Liu Ming finally relax. He used one hand to grab in his sleeve. He pulled out a peach that was still slightly green and after examining it a little, he bluntly took a big bite of it.

In the remaining few days of time, he ate a large quantity of these spirit peaches, before refining them. With that, he pushed his cultivation level toward a Peak Spirit Apostle.

With this, he no longer needed to worry over matters regarding Fa Li increasing pills after leaving the secret realm. He only needed to concentrate on breaking through to the Spirit Master level.

After feeling the pure Yuan Li that rolled out in his stomach, he immediately closed his eyes, and quickly became fixed in meditation, not worrying about anything else.

.....

At this point in time, the Hall of Blood disciple “Xue Nu,” who had left Liu Ming and Jia Lan, immediately hid himself away in the lush twigs and leaves in a big tree, and meditated with his eyes tightly shut.

Although he had the upperhand in the battle with Jia Lan from before, he also used a lot of Fa Li. He decided to first recover the Fa Li, before deciding what to do afterward.

After an unknown amount of time, Xue Nu seemed to sense something, and suddenly opened his eyes without warning.

As a result, what he immediately saw was that on the floor only inches away from him, was a young male. He had a head full of scarlet hair and two weird dragon horns grew out of his head. He squatted silently below and stared at him with no expression.

It was “Shi Chuan.”

“Who are you!”

Xue Nu naturally became extremely startled and yelled angrily. With the shake of his sleeve, a small, blood red knife appeared in his hand out of nowhere.

The opposing “Shi Chuan” did not wait for the Hall of Blood disciple to do anything and instead opened his mouth. A purplish-red shadow flashed out.

# Chapter 141: Great Improvement in Cultivation

“Peng!”

Although Xue Nu was a skilled person, at such a close distance, he could not even summon the blood fog that was his main defensive ability in time. His neck was pierced by the purplish-red tongue. His throat was severed, so he could not even cry out in pain. He could only forcefully throw the small, blood-colored blade in his hand at his opponent before falling out of the tree powerlessly.

“Dang!”

“Shi Chuan” had only used one finger to knock the small blade away. Afterward, a vicious smile flashed across his face, and with the sudden movement of his body, he transformed into a ball of red light that rushed at Xue Nu, who was falling down.

After the time it took to drink a cup of tea, there was an additional corpse that ripped in half and a small portion of it had bite wounds. At the same time, all the items on it had been taken away.

Four hours later, when a female from the Fusion Sect walked past there, she discovered the bloody scene there. Her expression immediately changed dramatically and she immediately left the area.

.....

Half a day later, in a marshy area inside the dense forest, a disciple with a tough and stocky build of the Nine Enlightenment Sect currently controlled a huge bird puppet, attacking a completely blood red monster that looked like a fox. Just when he was about to go up and retrieve his spoils of war happily, he suddenly felt a hot wave behind him. Following that, he felt pain in his chest as his vision turned black. He didn't know anything else anymore.

A day later, in another area in the dense forest, a young man from the Firestorm Way, who carried an azure gourd in his hand, released a green

tornado at a male disciple of the Heavenly Moon Sect. The attack forced him to constantly retreat with no way of approaching close.

Just when the young man of the Firestorm Way laughed out crazily and arrogantly, a shadow of a person in the nearby forest suddenly moved. It actually shot toward the two as a faint red shadow with a flash.

The young man from the Firestorm Way could be counted as a person with extremely rich combat experience. His expression immediately changed, and suddenly switched the direction of the azure gourd in his hand almost without even thinking, ready to fight the approaching faint red shadow.

“Pu!”

The crazy wind also suddenly began blowing in that direction and with the shake of his sleeve, there was a flash of azure light. A long, clear azure chain wrapped around the faint red shadow. With a sudden, tight pull, it caught him tightly.

“Hmph, you actually are brave enough to ambush me. You really think that I haven’t prepared beforehand for matters like this.... Wait, what monster are you!” The disciple of the Firestorm Way originally spoke arrogantly, but after properly seeing the appearance of the faint red shadow that was caught in the long azure chains, he could not help but become greatly surprised.

Caught in the locks of azure chains was a half human, half dragon monster that was covered in scarlet red scales and had a head full of long, scarlet red hair.

The monster lowered its head to look at the long, azure chain on its body. It suddenly struggled with power in its two arms after grinning. Burning red flames immediately appeared on its body and instantly transformed the long, azure chain into fog.

Seeing this, the young man of the Firestorm Way was immediately scared witless and suddenly channeled his power into the azure gourd. Over a dozen azure Wind Blades shot forth with a flash. At the same time, he formed a hand seal with one hand, immediately shooting

backward.

However, the half human, half dragon monster only moved its shoulder slightly and its whole body suddenly disappeared from where it was with a blur. All of the wind blades hit nothing after a flash.

Almost at the same time, there was a movement in the space in front of the young man from the Firestorm Way. The half human, half dragon monster appeared in front of him like a demon.

The young man from the Firestorm Way was greatly startled and tried to think of what to do. However, it was already too late.

He only saw the monster grin slightly and its body rushed forward like lightning. It hugged the young man with its two arms, which were like metal hoops. With a tilt of its head, it bit a large portion of the opponent in its embrace at an unbelievable angle. It then used its mouthful of sharp teeth to suddenly tear its opponent apart.

“No.....”

The young man could only give out half a mournful cry, since half of his neck had already disappeared. Fresh blood flowed out crazily with gurgling sounds. One half of his neck entered the stomach of the monster while the other half sprayed blood in all directions.

The body of the young man only twitched a few times in the arms of the half dragon monster before not moving anymore.

Only at this time did the half dragon monster relax its mouth and stare coldly at the other male disciples from the Heavenly Moon Sect with a face full of fresh blood.

The expression of the male from the Heavenly Moon Sect had already changed greatly and was absolutely stupefied. After seeing the ruthless monster look at himself, his heart was immediately frightened to the point where it shivered uncontrollably. With a sudden turn of his body, he ran wildly in the direction behind him for his life without saying anything.

The half dragon monster only stared coldly at the male disciple from



the Heavenly Moon Sect as he fled and actually did not chase. It instead lowered its head and continued to crazily suck the fresh blood of the corpse.

After an unknown length of time, when it released its hands, the corpse fell softly to the floor. Afterward, it suddenly raised its head and started roaring out weirdly at the sky with a sliver of pain in its expression.

The strength of the roar was abnormal. It spread unbelievable far and all of the people and beasts in around a diameter of several hundred kilometers could hear it clearly.

There were several disciples from different sects that were currently in the area. After hearing the frightening roar, their expressions could not help but change.

After hearing it, the male disciple from the Heavenly Moon Sect, who was currently fleeing, wished he could grow another pair of legs to flee to a distant land, away from the roar.

“Pu!”

The purplish-red dragon tail grew longer from the buttocks of the half man, half dragon monster. It swung with the wind toward the nearby ground.

After a series of tremors, a ditch of several tens of feet immediately appeared out of nowhere on the ground.

If the monster from before still looked half human, then one could only see twenty to thirty percent of Shi Chuan's shadow within this new monster.

In the next moment, the monster stopped its roar. With a sudden sway of its body, it transformed into a scarlet red shadow, disappearing into the dense forest.

Looking in the direction it rushed off in, it was the direction the male disciple of the Heavenly Moon Sect had fled in.

After another two or three days, the news regarding a monster, that was

human-and-dragon-like, killing everything spread to the disciples of various sect quickly through various channels.

There was not even half the original number of remaining disciples of various sects. However, these disciples were naturally people of great strength and caution.

Not even a day or two after hearing the news, they immediately formed alliances, both big and small, and were afraid to move separately.

As for the small amount of remaining people who stayed alone, they had all become extremely cautious. mostly hiding away somewhere secretly and would not casually walk around outside.

With this, the monster could not find a suitable target to attack and actually started fighting various monsters in the dense forest.

With that, the ripped and dry carcasses of various monsters could be found everywhere in the dense forest.

The disciples of various sects naturally became even more frightened and extremely cautious around the monster.

After refining the final sliver of pure Yuan Qi in his body, Liu Ming immediately focused his attention and felt the completely uncongested Fa Li in the meridians of his entire body.

The power of the Fa Li seemed to slightly exceed the capacity his body could hold, causing his various meridians slight stabs of pain.

This was due to the fact that he had eaten half of the Spirit Peaches, and once he pushed his cultivation to perfection, he realized that the medicinal powers of the remaining half of the Spirit Peaches began to decrease rapidly. He made up his mind to spend another three or four days to eat another twenty or so Spirit Peaches.

As for the remaining Spirit Peaches, they had all withered into wood origin. They were impossible to consume, so he had to throw them all away.

The amount of newly gained Fa Li was large, and by just looking at its

quality, it far exceeded the Fa Li from consuming pills.

After all, Fa Li increasing Spirit Fruit and Grasses as well as the flesh and blood of monsters, were completely different. Each and every one of them were literally born in the essence of the earth and the heavens, so the purity of Yuan Li they held would greatly exceed the expectations of people. Once transformed into Fa Li, the impurities from them could literally be ignored.

Since these types of Fa Li increasing Spirit Materials had such great effect without any consequences, they were collected by cultivators in the outside world.

Now, in the outside world, an extremely small amount of them existed, so once one was discovered, normal cultivators would not be able to consume them. Rather, they would give it to an alchemist as material to create other, even more valuable pills.

When this happened, the effects of increasing Fa Li were actually less important.

Although a Fa Li increasing Spirit Grass could save a cultivator many months of hard cultivation, a valuable pill with different uses could sometimes help one break through a bottleneck or save one's life.

After feeling his body which was bursting with Fa Li again, Liu Ming calculated the time left. The time limit of one and a half months was only a few days away, so he should move himself closer to the entrance of the secret realm.

Liu Ming thought like this and immediately stood up without thinking any further. He walked out of the tree hole with large steps. After looking around his nearby surroundings, he immediately formed a hand seal with one hand.

“Peng!”

The White Bone Scorpion appeared out of the soil underneath his feet. It intimately touched the edge of Liu Ming's clothes with its front claws.

Liu Ming smiled a little, and bent over to touch the front claw of the

bone scorpion before patting the leather pouch on his waist with one hand. A ray of light shot out and shrank the White Bone Scorpion, sucking it back in again.

Afterward, he pulled out a compass shaped item from his chest. After looking carefully at the route directed on it, he put it away. Stomping the ground, he landed on a branch of the huge tree, and with a shake of his body, he leaped away to somewhere far away, as light as a feather.

Six hours later, Liu Ming, who was currently jumping around in the branches, suddenly gave out a soft “hmm?” sound and stopped his advance. He swept his gaze around before landing softly on the ground from a branch with a movement.

He saw that not far away from his two feet was a huge monster carcass that was over twenty feet tall.

Its fur was luscious and its four limbs were extremely thick. It was actually a huge brown bear, which currently lay on the ground with its face down. It was covered in drops of blood, and seemed as if it had been dead for a long time.

Liu Ming walked around the brown bear carcass twice and looked at the surrounding trees, which all seemed to have been pushed down with great strength. There were also a series of messy footprints nearby. Liu Ming raised his leg.

With a “peng,” he kicked the carcass of the huge bear over which revealed the huge, blurry injury of flesh and blood at its neck, as well as its fierce expression right before it had died.

Liu Ming could not help but knit his brows. However, after a flash in his eyes, he bent over and picked up an item from one of the big, thick claws of the huge bear.

Surprisingly, it was a faint, purplish-red scale!

# Chapter 142: Battling the Dragon (1/3)

“Dragon scale!”

Liu Ming scanned it with his mental power and immediately yelled out with a shiver at heart.

The current him had already personally seen this Scarlet Dragon before, so it could be said that he had some impression of it. This was why he could recognize it with a single glance.

“However, the aura of this dragon scale has some differences compared to my memory. It has become much weaker and cannot be compared to when I saw it before.”

Liu Ming sensed carefully again and a few thoughts of doubt appeared in his heart.

The aura weakening was easy to explain. After all, it was heavily injured but there was something a little too familiar within the aura. What was with that?

However, before Liu Ming could think anymore, his expression suddenly changed and his body suddenly flew forward at an unbelievable angle.

“Sou!”

A dragon claw that was covered in purplish-red scales attacked wildly from behind, flashing through where Liu Ming’s chest had been before.

Liu Ming’s posture did not change, but with a sway of the whole body, he actually slid away by over a hundred feet away with surprising speed. Only after this did he stand up straight again and look at the other side with anger and surprise.

He only saw that where he was standing before, there was surprisingly an extra half dragon monster. It had a head full of scarlet hair and was covered with purple scales with a dragon’s tail on its back. It currently stared at him with its monster eyes coldly.

However, looking at the shred of emotion in its eyes, the monster

obviously was surprised that its attack had actually failed.

“Scarlet Dragon! No... hmm, Senior Shi!” Seeing the half dragon monster, Liu Ming was naturally greatly surprised, but after carefully looking at the somewhat familiar appearance in the monster’s face, he cried out involuntarily.

However, the opposing half dragon monster obviously did not have the idea of reminiscing about the past with Liu Ming, and with a sudden movement of its body, it disappeared from where it was before with a blur.

Liu Ming was a person that had extremely rich battle experience, so after seeing what had happened, he admittedly felt gloomy at heart. However, with a flash of his hand, an azure short sword appeared. At the same time, his body spun around, chopping wildly with the sword in all directions.

Several waves of azure Sword Qi immediately rushed out in the surroundings.

“Pu!”

Faint red shadows appeared in an area thirty feet away. Raising its dragon claw, it destroyed the Sword Qi flying toward it with a swing. After an ominous flash in its eyes, it suddenly stomped and rushed to an area close to Liu Ming with a sway. It spread its two arms, as if it was about to hug Liu Ming.

“Leave!”

Liu Ming definitely would not let the monster in front of him get close, so with an angry yell, a black chain immediately shot out from his sleeve, causing the Scarlet Dragon which was rushing up to stop slightly. After a blur with the azure short sword in his hand, he shot forward three waves of Sword Qi at an unbelievable speed in one breath.

After three “peng” noises, the three waves of Sword Qi all firmly hit the body of the monster at such a close distance.

However, what Liu Ming saw next almost made his eyes pop out.

Although the Shi Chuan looking monster took three consecutive steps away due to the Sword Qi slashes, only three faint, white marks appeared on the scales on its chest with no blood at all.

Not only did nothing happen, but Liu Ming's three slashes seemed to anger this half dragon monster. With a deep roar, scarlet red flames appeared on its body, and with a twisting action, the flames transformed into a wall of fire, shooting forward.

At the same time, the monster swayed its body again and disappeared in the fire light with a blur.

Liu Ming's pupils constricted and even though he seemed to have done nothing, his body slid back again. At the same time, the azure short sword in his hand suddenly disappeared before being followed by two loud sounds of "chi." Over a dozen Wind Blades flew in all directions with a flash.

A muffled "peng" sounded!

One of the Wind Blades broke apart and the half dragon monster immediately appeared with a flash once again. In this period of delay, the surging fire wall appeared near Liu Ming in a flash. It seemed that with one more spin, it would swallow Liu Ming inside.

However, at this moment, Liu Ming shook his wrist and the bronze bracelet on it began humming loudly. An extremely distinct tiger head appeared and rushed out with a wave of white sound waves. It pierced through the wall of fire, creating a big hole.

With his current cultivation level, he could completely use all of the power of the Tiger's Bite Bracelet. With a twist of his body, he transformed into a shadow and flew through the hole. With another flash, he appeared in an area over a hundred feet away from the half dragon monster like demon.

This time, Liu Ming did not wait for the half dragon to attack again and patted the leather pouch on his waist as if he was facing a tough opponent. A ray of black light shot out and the White Bone Scorpion appeared on the ground with a flash out of nowhere, blocking in front of

him.

He then formed a hand seal with one hand and countless green lines flashed wildly on the surface of his body. His face twitched a little and it actually transformed into a fleshy, jade green vine armor, protecting the top half of his body from danger. Subsequently, azure lights flashed in front of him and densely packed wind blades appeared. With the shake of his sleeve, they transformed into a dozen or so green lights, shooting at the half dragon.

Liu Ming then brought his hands together and separated them. A huge wind blade vaguely appeared and trembled slightly as it grew larger.

The monster had failed twice in a row to kill him. It originally was already very angry. Seeing the opponent actually attack itself before it could, it became even more furious at heart. After a twist of the body, it shot forward in a series of shadows.

After a series of messy clanks, the Wind Blades that were blocking in front of the monster were broken apart by a series of blurs from its claws. Its body stopped a little before deciding to once again rush at Liu Ming.

However, at this moment, a glimmer of excitement flashed across Liu Ming's eyes. With the shake of the wrist, the huge wind blade shot forward with an explosive sound.

The half dragon monster only saw a flash of azure light in front of itself before the giant Wind Blade had appeared very close to itself at an astonishing speed. Even with its intelligence, it would not be able to dodge in time. It could only helplessly move its two arms, crossing them and blocking in front of its chest.

“Hong!”

The body of the half dragon monster shook as it took seven to eight consecutive steps back before standing firm again. Drops of ink green blood flowed out.

The two arms the dragon had used to block each had a narrow, long cut, but after a flash of red light, they quickly shrank and healed up. Almost



like the dragon had never been injured in the first place.

Seeing this, Liu Ming could not help but be extremely startled.

The monster was actually able to block the huge wind blade with its bare hands; it seemed like normal attacks could not injure it at all.

At this moment, the half dragon monster was completely angered, and with a sudden blur of its body, it became three clones that were exactly the same. With another movement, they transformed into three scarlet red shadows, rushing at Liu Ming.

Liu Ming did not even think and raised one hand. Three wind blades shot out with a flash.

With three muffled “pu” sounds, all three wind blades hit the scarlet shadows, but were all reflected at the same time.

With this, Liu Ming could not help but be slightly startled.

During this period of delay, the three scarlet shadows had already reached an area not far away with a blur. However, they suddenly paused and each opened their mouth, spitting out three purplish-red fireballs.

At the start, the fireballs were only the size of a fist, but after flying through the air for a foot, they gave off a “teng” sound and transformed to the size of a car tire. Although they have not hit Liu Ming yet, the hot temperature could be felt from afar.

Liu Ming focused his attention and the azure short sword in his hand suddenly flashed. With a slight swing, it shot forward six waves of Sword Qi in a breath.

After a few “hong” noises, the six waves of Sword Qi all arrived in front of the three huge fireballs. After a slight pause, they all disappeared like mud in water.

The three purplish-red fireball continued to rush forward in a very threatening manner.

Seeing that the situation was not good, Liu Ming immediately moved his body and shot off to one side with a blur.

Since he had no way of stopping it, he naturally could not stay where he was and forcefully withstand the attacks.

As for the White Bone Scorpion that was in front of him, it entered the ground before him.

However, what happened next made Liu Ming extremely surprised.

The three giant fireballs gave a rumble and actually changed direction, continuing to chase him.

With this, Liu Ming's expression changed dramatically.

Only now did he realize that although the three blurry scarlet shadows stood where they were, without moving, they all had an arm raised, constantly pointing at something mid air. It was as if they controlled the three huge fireballs.

Liu Ming gave a deep grunt and twisted his waist. He then firmly stepped on the ground with one foot, suddenly changing the direction he was advancing in, shooting toward the three scarlet shadows.

The three fireballs naturally made a turn and continued to follow him closely.

“Want to... Die.”

Seeing this, not only did the three scarlet shadows not dodge, they opened their mouths at the same time and released an extremely hard to understand sound. Subsequently, they lowered their arms and then opened their mouths again. Three narrow and long purple shadows shot out with a flash. They hurled at Liu Ming's neck from different directions.

As for the speed, even Liu Ming could not imagine it.

Liu Ming was greatly surprised and shaking his head crazily, he managed to dodge two of the shadows with great difficulty. As for the other one, it hit the layer of jade green vines that protected Liu Ming's neck with a flash. Surprisingly, it was a narrow, purplish-red tongue that was unbelievably long.

“Pu!”

Although the vines blocked a large portion of the power of the tongue, it still pierced through it in a blink. Just when it was about to pierce through Liu Ming's throat, a layer of faint yellow inscriptions suddenly flashed and blocked it.

Liu Ming had immediately activated the Practitioner armor that he carried on him. Taking advantage of the opportunity, his arm grabbed the long, purplish-red tongue with a blur. However, he immediately felt pain in his palm and fresh blood flowed without stop.

The long, purplish-red tongue was actually covered in countless flesh spikes. Without preparations, he could not protect himself in time. It pierced through his hand, making it bleed. Looking at the center of his palm, where the small holes were, they all started to darken and purple blood started flowing. Surprisingly, the flesh spikes were extremely poisonous.

Although it was like this, Liu Ming did not even blink and did not try taking his hand back. Instead, with a movement of the short sword in his other hand, an azure light flashed pass and cut off the long, purple tongue.

From the three scarlet shadows, the middle one immediately gave out a shrill cry. The two shadows next to him transformed into rays of red light with a blur and scattered apart.

# Chapter 143: Battling the Dragon (Middle)

However, at this moment, the three purplish-red fireball behind him exploded as if they had lost control. A rolling sea of fire spread out in all directions.

A stern expression flashed across Liu Ming's face and he completely ignored the flames behind him. Instead, he leaped before the half dragon monster. With a movement of the short sword in his hand, six or seven azure Sword Qis flew out. At the same time, the black, long chain shot out from his sleeve with a loud sound.

Although the half dragon monster felt extreme pain in its mouth, after seeing what had happened, it immediately moved its shoulder. It seemed to want to evade Liu Ming's attack with speed.

However, just at this moment, there were two "pu" sounds from below its feet. Two giant claws appeared with lightning speed to clamp onto the two small legs of the dragon, much to its surprise. Afterward, there was a loud sound and a dozen or so black lines shot out from the ground, piercing one of its thighs with a flash.

Seeing this, the half dragon monster was naturally started, but as it was extremely confident in its own body defence, it completely ignored the dozen or so black lines. It only suddenly raised a leg and forcefully pulled the White Bone Scorpion out of the soil before raising its other leg and stomping at the White Bone Scorpion.

Just at this moment, there were a dozen or so muffled "peng" sounds, and the black lines all hit the thigh of the monster forcefully. However, they were all reflected and only left behind a dozen or so shallow holes.

The half dragon monster only felt a slight pain in its leg before it stopped caring and stomped the White Bone Scorpion forcefully into the ground. This caused the scorpion to cry out wildly. It was unable to escape from under the foot of the dragon for a while.

At this moment, Liu Ming's attacks followed the monster closely.

However, the monster only placed its arms in front of its body horizontally and decided to forcefully block the attacks.

In the end, after a few flashed, the several waves of Sword Qi all transformed into balls of azure light, slashing the two arms of the monster.

With the shake of its body, it took several steps back consecutively. Its arms also could not help but open up a little.

In that moment, the black chain shot forward with a blur, like a poisonous snake, shooting at the monster's chest and smashing forcefully into it.

The monster was not even scared of the Sword Qi released by the totem, so how could it be scared of the attack from a mere Soul Shackling Chain.

The chain shot forward with a flash, but the monster only moved lazily. It only puffed out its chest and wanted to reflect the black chain away with that.

Seeing this, a slightly weird expression appeared on Liu Ming's face, and with a sudden movement of his body, he actually shot back. At the same time, he used the other hand to pat his chest and a light shield appeared out of nowhere in front of his body, protecting him the moment he entered the sea of flames.

Under such a weird situation, Liu Ming did not wait for the monster to think after being startled. The black chain in front shook slightly, and with a blur, three black round beads shot out from it, all landing on the chest of the monster with a flash.

The half dragon monster was surprised and was not able to retreat because of its foolhardy approach from before.

The three round beads only spun a little before they all exploded with a flash.

Without any warning, three red balls of light appeared. After a flash, they fused into one, transforming into a scarlet red blazing sun. It expanded and swallowed the half dragon monster in a blink.

At this moment, a loud rumbling sound echoed out of the blazing sun!

Waves of red shockwaves spread out in all direction, forcefully flattening everything they passed nearby. At the same time, the unbelievably high temperature caused all of the vegetation nearby to instantly turn into ash.

Under the shockwaves, the sea of flames near Liu Ming was immediately extinguished.

Liu Ming, who was hiding behind a light shield, could only pour his Fa Li wildly into the black light shield in front of him.

However, with this, he only held the light shield for a few breaths of time before a crisp crack sound could be heard. On the surface of the shield, a faint white crack appeared. With a single glance, it did not seem to be able to hold up any longer.

Luckily, after releasing its power, the blazing sun had no way of maintaining its energy, so after a few crazy flashes, it suddenly disappeared.

The only thing that was left was a blurry body that was burned black, giving off the nice vague fragrance of cooked meat.

The half dragon monster seemed to be have been cooked by the blazing sun from before.

Seeing this, Liu Ming relaxed a little at heart.

The three black round beads shot from the Soul Shackling Chain were the Scarlet Flame Beads Zhu Chi had given to him before to use in times for him to protect his life.

He had to rack his brain to form a plan that put the three Scarlet Flame Beads into the Soul Shackling Chain and attack the monster when it was unaware. In the end, he had succeeded in the ambush.

The attack from every bead was equivalent to the power of an attack from a Spirit Master, so with the three beads together, the power could be imagined.

Although the half dragon monster had surprising defenses, there was no way it could withstand it.

Although it was like this, Liu Ming did not have the idea of relaxing now and immediately spun the azure short sword around in his hand. It transformed into a round, azure moon, which shot forward, and with a sharp sound, it suddenly sliced toward the burned black monster far away.

Since the half dragon monster was so scary, unless it was cut in half, he could not relax by the slightest bit.

However, in the next moment, his foresight was actually real!

“Peng!”

From the body of the burned black monster, which seemed to not move at all, a silver chain suddenly shot out and with a forceful strike, it deflected the azure full moon.

“Demon Subduing Chain!”

Seeing clearly what the silver chain really was, Liu Ming’s expression immediately became one of surprise.

However, at this moment, the burned black monster suddenly raised its head and gave out a long, shrill roar.

The silver chain immediately started dancing about crazily with a blur and solidly protected the monster.

Subsequently, the monster moved its limbs. Its cooked flesh and burned meat cracked open at every inch, revealing pure white skin.

After a while, the monster stood there completely naked. Except for a pair of red horns and the purplish-red tail on its back, it had no differences in its other areas when compared to an average human. The scales on its face had disappeared and it looked completely like Shi Chuan.

“Senior Shi Chuan!”

Liu Ming’s expression changed several times before yelling out

seriously.

However, when “Shi Chuan” raised his head to look at Liu Ming, his pupils suddenly elongated once again inside his originally normal-looking eyes. After a fierce smile, scarlet red scales once again started to appear on the surface of its body, forming brand new purplish-red scales.

In a moment, he once again transformed into the half dragon monster.

Liu Ming gasped and finally confirmed that the monster in front of him was transformed from Shi Chuan. No, what he should have said was that a part of the body was Shi Chuan but his soul had already ceased to exist; otherwise, he would have reacted from the call before.

The weird dragon was able to recover in a moment even after suffering such heavy injuries, which was very troublesome for Liu Ming.

After all, the attack from the three Scarlet Flame Beads from before basically could be counted as his strongest attack. If even that was impossible to kill the opponent, then perhaps there were not many other tactics Liu Ming could use to win.

Liu Ming thought gloomily at heart, but his hand did not stop moving at all as it controlled the azure full moon to circle and constantly attack the monster crazily.

However, the Demon Subduing Chain was really mysterious and actually solidly protected the half dragon monster like a silver python, blocking all of the attacks from the Azure Moon Sword.

Seeing this, Liu Ming looked at the silver chain protection and then looked at the half dragon, who stood where it was, not moving an inch. Liu Ming quickly thought a little and his heart suddenly skipped a beat.

“Hehe, although you reformed your body, it is still weak, so you cannot move at all right now.”

Liu Ming suddenly yelled out gleefully and immediately focused his attention, he quickly formed hand seals with his two hands. The azure full moon immediately rushed into the sky with a clear sound and three layers of inscriptions flashed on its surface. It started spinning around



crazily high up in the sky.

Cold, azure light immediately scattered from the full moon and began to expand crazily in size.

Seeing this, the half dragon monster below revealed a shred of fear in its eyes. After a hum from the silver chain that orbited it, the chain grew longer inch by inch, while releasing more silver light at the same time.

“Peng!”

The White Bone Scorpion suddenly jumped out of the ground and rushed directly at the half dragon monster. When it was still mid-air, it suddenly spat out a cloud of purple fog, and with a movement of the stinger behind it, a dozen or so black lines shot forward crazily.

However, in the next moment, the silver chain suddenly transformed into a layer of silver light, blocking the attacks of the scorpion. No matter whether it was the purple fog or the stinger attack, the chain had forcefully blocked all of them. Subsequently, a shadow of the chain shot out of the layer of silver light like lightning. It struck the White Bone Scorpion and forcefully whipped it out of the air.

The bone scorpion flipped several times mid-air before landing heavily on the ground. Shaking its head, its body trembled and it was not able to stand up again immediately.

It was understandable why it was like this!

Previously, the White Bone Scorpion had been firmly stomped on by the half dragon monster. After that, it had been slightly hit again by the shockwaves of the Scarlet Flame Beads. After the current attack, it indeed was not lightly injured.

During this period of time, the floating azure full moon had transformed to the size of a tire and the cold light it radiated downward even made the half dragon monster reveal a shred of anxiety.

At this moment, Liu Ming's eyes flashed a little and immediately changed hand signs. Rays of blue light appeared in front of him and with them, there was an increase in cold air. A glistening icicle quickly

appeared in front of him. At the start, it was only one foot long, but after the time of a few breaths, it had expanded to a length of seven to eight feet and it continued to grow.

The fierce expression of the monster changed and suddenly gave out a low roar. Lowering its two hands, its ten fingers actually moved slightly, slowly forming fists.

Seeing this, Liu Ming's pupils restricted slightly and yelled loudly without hesitation. He pointed at the empty space with one finger and the azure full moon fell down with a long sound. At the same time, his other hand suddenly slapped the huge icicle in front of him.

There was an immediate flash of cold light and the icicle, that was several feet long, transformed into a blurry blue light as it shot forward.

At the same time, the White Bone Scorpion, who had originally been laying on the ground suddenly used its tail to hit the ground forcefully, once again transforming into a shadow that rushed at the half dragon monster.

Seeing this, the half dragon monster instead revealed an ominous glint in its expression. With a powerful roar, all of the scarlet hair on its head stood on end while a huge, scarlet red dragon head appeared with a flash behind the body of the half dragon.

# Chapter 144: Battling the Serpent (3/3)

The giant dragon head suddenly opened its big mouth and rushed at the White Bone Scorpion. It then immediately spat out a sound wave.

As soon as the White Bone Scorpion came into contact with it, its body froze a little mid-air before being forcefully knocked back by the huge power.

As for the long, dancing silver chain around the monster, it suddenly became a blur. The shadows of the chains intersected to form a huge silver net, receiving the azure full moon.

The azure full moon entered the giant net in a threatening manner and immediately started spinning crazily as it released the unpleasant sounds of metal hitting metal.

At this moment, the far away blue light flashed and the huge icicle arrived close to the monster.

The giant dragon head gave off a low roar and spat out a scarlet red, rolling fire pillar that smacked into the huge icicle.

When the scarlet red fire pillar and icicle hit each other, they immediately released a sharp, crackling sound. When the blue light and red flames converged and condensed, a white tornado that shot into the air was formed. The tornado emitted both cold and hot air, which intertwined within.

At this moment, under the crazy spinning of the azure round moon, the silver net mid-air seemed to be unable to hold on anymore. With countless flashes of cold air, the huge silver net began to shake crazily without stop. Some areas had even begun to dim.

Seeing this, the pupils of the half dragon monster constricted slightly. However, the dragon head behind it suddenly let out a long roar, and with a blur of its body, it transformed into a huge creature over a hundred feet long. It suddenly opened its huge mouth and ate both the azure moon and silver net.

Seeing this, Liu Ming was naturally startled, but after immediately recovering, he formed a single-handed hand seal and spit out the word, “explode.”

“Hong!”

The azure full moon suddenly exploded in the mouth of the dragon head, and with a flash of cold light, hundreds of waves of azure Sword Qis shot out.

The huge, silver net and the huge dragon head immediately began flashing crazily without stop. After a while, the Sword Qis pierced hundreds of holes through them with muffled sounds.

There was a portion of Sword Qi that immediately flashed and chopped toward the half dragon monster below.

Just at this moment, a harsh light flashed across the eyes of the monster, and with a sudden blur of its two arms, it formed countless claw shadows that shot into the sky.

It had finally recovered its ability to move!

A series of consecutive explosions sounded!

A large portion of the Sword Qis were destroyed by the scarlet red claw shadows. Even though a few waves had landed on the body of the half dragon monster, the monster withstood the attacks like nothing.

Seeing that, Liu Ming could not help but slightly change his expression.

Only now did the half dragon creature turn its head and grinned hideously at Liu Ming. With the swing of its two feet, it seemed to want to walk over.

However, something that had greatly exceeded its expectations occurred.

When the half dragon creature had just taken a step, its two legs suddenly gave way and it fell over.

If it were not for its fast reaction to use an arm to immediately brace itself, perhaps it really would have fallen down. It had a layer of black air

around its face.

At this moment, the dozen or so abnormally small holes on the thigh of the monster had completely turned purplish-black.

The deadly poison of the stinger of the White Bone Scorpion finally began to act.

This was due to the fact that the body of the half dragon had a high immunity to poison. If it was someone else who was poisoned, it would have begun to act much earlier.

Seeing this, Liu Ming naturally became happy. He used one hand to point at the empty air in front of him without saying another word before forming a hand sign with one hand.

“Peng!”

The left over half of the huge icicle exploded in the white, hot and cold tornado, and with it came a sudden increase in frosty air. There was a flash of blue in the center of the tornado and a small icicle of half a foot shot out like lightning. With a flash, it arrived near the half dragon monster.

This attack had clearly exceeded the expectations of the monster, but with a deep roar, the other arm of the monster became a blur and it grabbed the icicle that was only several inches away. Using power in its fingers, it crushed the icicle into pieces.

However, at this moment, the front part of the icicle gave out a “sou” sound and from within, a jade green light flashed out. After the flash had died down, it pierced a hole between the eyebrows of the monster. It rotated in mid-air after it had shot through the monster. It then entered through one ear like lightning and shot out from the other ear.

The half dragon monster gave out a miserable shriek and the ferocious expression on its face immediately froze. Following that, its body softened and fell to the ground with a plop.

From between its eyebrows and its ears, black blood flowed out with a gurgling sound.

High up in the air, there was a humming sound and the huge, silver light died down, transforming back into a chain as it fell down.

As for the huge dragon head, it gave off a mournful cry before also transforming into red light and disappearing.

Under Liu Ming's quick control from far away, the azure short sword immediately began spinning again. It transformed into the azure moon and chopped forward once again.

With a flash of cold light, the half dragon monster on the ground was cut into two pieces by the cold light. This time, it seemed to be dead to the point where it could not be dead anymore.

TL: No way of coming back alive

Only now did Liu Ming exhale deeply. With one hand, he beckoned from afar. The azure full moon once again transformed into a short sword and shot over. As for the other side, there was a flash of jade light in the air and a thin, jade green needle shot over in the same manner.

It was the Jade Shadow Needle!

In the previous battle, not only did Liu Ming use a rare mother-son Icicle Technique, when he hit the giant icicle to seemingly propel it forward, he had secretly pushed the Jade Shadow Needle into the son icicle.

TL: Mother-son means two things that are exact replicas except in size. Usually, the son part is hidden within the mother part.

Only then could he grasp the opportunity to pierce holes one after another in the body of the half dragon monster.

Otherwise, even if the Jade Shadow Needle was powerful, if it had attacked areas of the monster that were covered in scales, it could only lightly graze the monster at most and would definitely not have been able to kill it.

Seeing that the monster had really lost its life, Liu Ming naturally could relax properly. He put the two totems away at the same time before

sitting down on the ground. He quickly pulled out a medicinal pill, and after eating it, he began meditating cross-legged.

In this intense battle, not only did it force him to use his all of his hidden cards, he also used eighty to ninety-percent of all the Fa Li within him.

This was also the result of him reaching the stage of a Peak Spirit Apostle. If he had met the half dragon monster slightly earlier, perhaps the battle would have only reached half way before Liu Ming would have used up all of his Fa Li. He would have only have been able to helplessly wait for death.

The time it takes to eat a meal later.

When Liu Ming's complexion became slightly better, he immediately stopped circulating the method without delay and walked toward the body corpse of the half dragon.

He could not stay here for long. If someone else came over and saw the corpse of the half dragon, it would most likely bring trouble.

With his current weakened state, he could not withstand another high intensity battle.

With two "gu" cries from within the ground, the White Bone Scorpion crawled out of the ground dispiritedly. Its whole body was covered in cuts and injuries and the green flames in its eyes had dimmed. It seemed as though it did not even have the power to walk over.

Liu Ming smiled bitterly and he patted the leather pouch on his waist with one hand. A black light immediately shot out and shrank the White Bone Scorpion, sucking it back into the pouch.

As a ghost, normal pills had no effect on the White Bone Scorpion whatsoever. Luckily, there was a great deal of miasma in the Soul Cultivation Pouch. As long as it stayed in the Soul Cultivation Pouch, the miasma would slowly nourish the White Bone Scorpion, allowing it to slowly recover.

Afterward, he took another few steps to arrive beside the corpse of the

half dragon. He first picked up the Demon Subduing Chain that lay quietly to one side and examined it with a few glances.

The totem had been chopped by the full power of the Azure Moon Sword, but its silver surface remained smooth and shiny without a single mark of the sword.

Liu Ming immediately felt excitement at heart and put the item away.

This totem was personally gifted to Shi Chuan by Gui Ru Quan. Although there was a large chance that he had to hand it up when he returned, he would definitely receive other rewards.

Afterward, there was a flash in Liu Ming's eyes as he looked at the bare looking corpse of the half dragon. He knit his brows slightly.

The clothes of the monster had already been burned to a crisp. As for the other items such as the Sumeru Handkerchief, it most likely had already been burned to ashes by the power of the three Scarlet Flame Beads.

However, after looking over the corpse again, he realized something else.

Liu Ming thought a little and suddenly bent over. With one hand, he grabbed one of the arms of the monster and quickly felt around.

When his finger suddenly touched something that protruded slightly, Liu Ming's face immediately flushed with happiness. With the shake of his sleeve, the azure short sword appeared, cutting down at the protrusion.

“Pu!”

Black blood squirted out.

Liu Ming cut off one of the arms of the monster. After a few quick cuts, he used the tip of his sword to softly dig out a sparkling winkle conch the size of a soybean. It shined with a faint, white light.

It was one of the treasures of the Sea Race, the “Sumeru Conch.”

This item was a naturally-occurring space object. When the scarlet



dragon had killed the Lan brother and sister, it naturally would not let this go by, so it took it. It had also pressed it into the flesh of its arms like the Lan brother.

Under normal circumstances, this was covered by scales and clothes, so it naturally would not be discovered by anybody.

However, in the previous battle, the scales and clothes of the monster were all burned to ashes. Liu Ming had good eyes and saw the slight, abnormal protrusion in the monster's arm.

Now, he had used the short sword to cut it open and indeed discovered the Sumeru Conch.

Although Liu Ming did not know what the conch in his hand was, the scarlet dragon had hidden it away prudently. Therefore, its worth naturally would not be low.

Liu Ming played around with it in his hand and examined it several times, but did not discover anything weird. He swung it around gently. It was like a feather, almost weightless. He could not help but slightly squint his eyes.

After thinking for a little more, Liu Ming suddenly placed the conch by his ear. The result was that he immediately revealed an expression with a hint of surprise.

He could actually hear the abnormally clear sounds of waves inside the conch. They grew louder and louder one after another, becoming more and more urgent one after another, as if he was currently in raging waves.

In the next moment, he pulled the conch away. After playing with it a bit more, he circulated the Fa Li in him and poured it little by little into the conch.

After a short while, the conch immediately began to grow larger with wild flashes. Dense, silver inscriptions began to appear on its surface.

Seeing this, Liu Ming was naturally surprised at heart. However, he did not stop the Fa Li at all. He also took this opportunity to scan the inside of the conch with his mental strength.

# Chapter 145: Escape

In the end, he actually discovered a simple formula that was imprinted on the inner wall of the conch's opening.

Liu Ming was surprised. After a moment of deliberation, he decided to silently use the hand sign that he had read about once.

“Pu!” A stream of white clouds spiralled out from the conch.

A pile of objects appeared on the ground out of thin air .

They were ten or more boxes of different sizes, three Totems, and a piece of unscathed Scarlet Dragon Shell that did not seem to be longer than a few feet.

Liu Ming, at first, stared blankly, after which, he became overjoyed.

He hastily inserted Fa Li into the conch and used his Mental Strength to lock onto the short shiny blade that was on the ground.

The conch slightly shuddered, and when the white light flashed again, the short shiny blade disappeared into thin air.

“It really is a Space Object! I never thought that this Scarlet Dragon would actually carry this kind of treasure with him. It is a worthy for a Crystal Level Demonic Beast who has lived for who knows how many years.” Liu Ming murmured with a face filled with excitement.

He naturally did not know that this Sumeru Conch was also pilfered by the Scarlet Dragon from the Sea Race siblings. The dragon never thought that his spoils would profit Liu Ming today.

He once again silently recited the incantation, injecting his Mental Strength to probe the Sumeru Conch. Only then could he clearly see that there was a space which was not more than ten feet in length and height. It was not very large.

Even so, Liu Ming was overjoyed.

After all, the conch was different than the Sumeru Handkerchief in that the things stored within held no weight once stored.

Moreover, under the current circumstances, this Sumeru Conch would be of immense use to him.

Liu Ming tried to probe the short shiny blade from before and it was once again spat out into his hands. After using his fingers to touch it briefly, he realized that the blade was a low grade Totem that had six levels of restrictions on it.

His eyes flashed toward the two other Totems on the ground as he stored away the shiny blade in his hands. He gestured toward them with one of his bare hands, beckoning them into his grasp.

A thin, long knife the color of blood and a pale blue token covered in intricate patterns, pressed into its surface, went to Liu Ming.

These two objects both emitted a faint exquisite glow. It was obvious that they were also Totems.

When he slightly injected his Fa Li into both objects respectively, a surprise occurred!

The long blood-red blade was of the lowest kind of Low Grade Totems that only had a single level of restriction on it. Yet, that token revealed an eighteen level restriction with a “pop” sound. Surprisingly, it was a Medium Grade Totem that was only a small step away from a High Grade Totem.

Liu Ming was secretly surprised, despite how violently he directed his Fa Li into the token, it only became increasingly dazzling without showing any other functionalities.

Although it seemed as though that Totem was extraordinary, he would probably need a special method to activate it.

Liu Ming’s heart was filled with regret. Shaking his head, he stored these two Totems in the Sumeru Conch.

For now, he was content to have one Totem of each type of Totems.

The short shiny blade and long blood-colored knife still did not possess as many restriction levels as the Cyan Moon Sword. He naturally would

not have plans to switch it out.

However, he looked at the Sumeru Conch in his hands and after deliberating for a moment, his sleeve shook again, taking out the Demon Subduing Chain. With a shake, he also stored it inside the Sumeru Conch.

Now that he had a space item, which could store objects, he naturally dispelled the thought of giving it back to the sect.

After all, this Demon Subduing Chain was different from the other sword-type Totems. It was still extremely useful for Liu Ming.

Not only that, Liu Ming turned his hand and took out the Sumeru Handkerchief. Taking out the box which held the Golden Resting Dirt, he similarly stuffed it inside the conch.

As for the other objects, he had no intention of touching them.

In the following time, Liu Ming simply picked up a Jade Box from the ground. After opening it, a small flower which was a few inches tall diffused its polished scent of energy.

“Silver Night Grass!”

With one look at the Spirit Grass, Liu Ming recognized its origin. It was an extremely rare Spirit Grass that was used as supporting material. It was needed when refining many different kinds of Medical Pills.

Following that, he opened the rest of the boxes. The value of the Spirit Objects contained within were also not below that of the Silver Night Grass.

The Scarlet Dragon naturally seized the most valuable Spirit Objects from the bodies of the disciples of each Sect that it murdered. His spoils even included a Golden Ginseng which was as thick as the arm of a person.

This was a true Thousand Year Spirit Grass. Even a Liquid Level or Spirit Master would immediately experience a surge in strength when consumed.

With immense joy, Liu Ming naturally used the Sumeru Conch to store

this Thousand Year Spirit Grass and other useful Spirit Medicines that he had chosen. As for the rest of the boxes, he used the Sumeru Handkerchief to shrink them into a bundle.

As for that Serpent Dragon Shell, he circled it multiple times and used his finger to knock on it several times. In the end, he confirmed that it was left behind by that Scarlet Dragon.

He naturally planned to leave it for his personal use, using the Sumeru Conch to store it too.

At this time, Liu Ming once again glanced at the corpse of the Monster. He thought back to the scene where Shi Chuan personally went to receive him and a few other new disciples in his mind, he could not help but sigh lightly.

He also did not know what this “Senior Shi” encountered in the Secret Realm which lead to his fate of being possessed by this Scarlet Dragon.

The Fa Li of this half Serpent Dragon was only at the Spirit Apostle stage. Half of its flesh was also from Shi Chuan, as such, the flesh would naturally have no special effects.

Thus, without hesitation, Liu Ming made a one-handed Sign and launched multiple Crimson Fireballs at it. They turned into rolling flames that swallowed the Serpent Dragon’s corpse.

The Monster’s corpse quickly became charred and seemed as though it was going to turn into ashes in a matter of time under the flame.

However, at this time the flame suddenly spiralled and fiercely surged into a certain spot on the Monster’s corpse. After a series of mad flashes, there was not a single lick of flame left.

Seeing such a scenario, Liu Ming was naturally surprised and quickly retreated a few steps back. A cyan light flashed in his hands and the cyan short sword appeared out of thin air near his fingertips.

“It cannot be that this Scarlet Dragon has yet to be killed!” He could not help but suddenly think in such a manner.

“Peng!”

The half-charred corpse of the Serpent Dragon ballooned somewhere and something actually flew out of it.

A closer look made Liu Ming speechless.

“Flying Head!”

This object had unkempt hair, black lips, and crimson eyes while it was baring its sharp fangs.

This was the powerful demon rumored to be second to only the Nine Infant in the Nine Infants Faction.

For reasons unbeknown to him, this Demon had been hiding itself in the body of the Monster the whole time. Only after the death of the host body did it fly out slowly.

As for the former flame, it was evident that it was sucked away by this Demon.

Seeing this Demon now, Liu Ming was secretly complaining. His heart was anxious in a way that would not be inferior to the Half Dragon reviving.

He had already personally observed this Flying Head’s power at the arena the other day.

What more was that he only had twenty-to-thirty-percent of his Fa Li left. Irrespective of whether it was mentally or physically, he was exhausted. He already knew the outcome of facing this demon now.

The plus was that even though the Flying Head flew out, it did not immediately dash toward Liu Ming. Instead, it slowly dropped down, opening its mouth wide and taking a large bite out of the Monster’s Corpse. It looked as though it was famished.

Seeing that, Liu Ming’s heart was slightly at ease. The upper half of his body had yet to move but the lower half of his body had already soundlessly slid backward. At the same time, the Sumeru Conch in his hands slightly came loose. A long silver chain that looped several times

suddenly appeared on one of his arms.

This Demon Subduing Chain was used to restrain this Demon. Even though he was still unfamiliar with its method of use, he might be able to scare the Flying Head by taking it out.

However, in the next moment, Liu Ming regretted his actions!

When the long silver chain appeared, the Flying Head, that was initially quietly biting the corpse, suddenly stopped feasting and turned toward Liu Ming, glaring at him vehemently.

Liu Ming's expression changed. He no longer hesitated as he moved his body, transforming into a shadow as he shot back in flight.

The Flying Head let out a sharp shrill yell. Immediately, it transformed into black gas and gave chase.

The cyan short sword in Liu Ming's hand flipped backward and three streams of cyan Sword Qi spiralled outwards.

"Pu! Pu! Pu!" The three streams of Sword Qis cut through the black gas. It disappeared without a single trace, seeming to leave the Demon unharmed.

There came a "chi chi" sound from within the black gas. It was the dense black hair from the Flying Head, and shot out at such a speed that only after a blur did it circle behind Liu Ming.

Liu Ming was astonished. Suddenly, his sleeve shook and a pale green Glyph shot out.

It was the Glyph that he had taken from the female disciple of the Firestorm Way that had ambushed him. Although he did not know its specific power, under the circumstances where he had insufficient Fa Li, he could only tentatively use it as a counterattack.

It crashed into the dense long hair with a buzz. The moment it was ripped open, it suddenly burst with a flash.

There was a huge bang.

A clot of explosive force which contained two different attributes of

wind and fire scattered out. The violent wind and flames intertwined, forming a Firestorm Pillar which spiralled wildly toward the sky.

The Flying Head was abnormally ferocious but when facing the current situation, it could only retract its hair. The transformed black gas suddenly changed direction and bypassed the Firestorm Pillar by looping around it.

It was this moment of hesitation that Liu Ming used to escape dozens of feet away, plunging into trees of different sizes.

The Flying Head let out an elated shriek. The speed of the transformed black gas suddenly increased as though it had no intention of giving up as it followed in hot pursuit.

The both of them, with one in front and the other behind, ran a few miles in a single breath.

Liu Ming was exceptionally light, supported by the Lighten Technique. When both his legs exerted a little strength, he could jump a few feet away.

As for the Flying Head, it seemed as though it was no longer a physical entity when it was wrapped within the black gas. It did not have to dodge or avoid the trees. When it charged in a tumbling motion, it could directly pass through the trees.

The distance between the two did not increase; conversely, it narrowed further.

Suddenly, the black gas behind duly rung out and burst open. The Flying Head which was originally supposed to be hidden within disappeared without a trace in an instant!

Liu Ming's heart sank. His footsteps suddenly stopped atop the branch of a certain large tree. Inhaling deeply, traces of green glows appeared once more and a new pair of vines cover the upper half of his body.



# Chapter 146: Subduing the Demon

A lot of his Mental Strength had been consumed from the huge battle before and the skirmish earlier, causing his head to ache slightly in pain. However, Liu Ming still forced his Mental Strength to constantly scan nearby.

With his previous negligence, he did not know what type of magic power the Flying Head had used to become invisible but it was definitely still nearby. This could not be false.

Under these circumstances, he naturally could not continue to flee recklessly. Otherwise, if he ran into a trap set up by the opponent, perhaps he would not even have the chance to make a comeback.

Liu Ming currently wished that there would be disciples of other sects that would hurry over. As long as they could help delay the flying head just by a little, he could run away.

However, this wish clearly did not happen.

Not to mention people appearing, at the current moment, there were not even the sounds of birds or beasts, only the sound of a soft breeze blowing through the trees.

Liu Ming suddenly stopped and his body immediately flew up into the sky.

At the same time, hundreds of black hairs shot out from the trunk of the big tree he was on without any warning, piercing through where he was standing moments ago.

However, just when Liu Ming shot into the sky, there was a sudden weird laugh from above him and a cloud of black gas appeared. After rolling and condensing, it transformed into a fierce flying head. It opened an area on its face and a huge, pitch black mouth immediately appeared out of nowhere, biting down hard while screaming.

Liu Ming was surprised and without any further hesitation, he raised an arm, immediately shooting out several fireballs.

However, after a few “pu pu” sounds, the fireballs landed on the big mouth but did not explode at all. Instead they became dim and dispersed.

However, in this period of delay, Liu Ming twisted his body and he shot downward.

“Peng!”

After standing firmly on the ground, Liu Ming’s expression became serious. With a flash of cyan light in his hand, the short sword immediately disappeared.

At the same time, the silver chain on his arm moved and transformed into loops of chain shadows, circling and dancing around his body.

Since the Cyan Moon Sword could not handle this flying head, he might as well put it away. After all, looking at his current Fa Li and mental strength condition, he could only control one Totem.

Although this Demon Subduing Chain had not been refined and controlling it was extremely strenuous, he could only gamble with it.

At this moment, the flying head came down with its giant mouth. At the same time, there was a flash of black light near a big tree and a strand of long hair shot toward it. After a flash, it enveloped the flying head, which disappeared.

Liu Ming focused his attention and with two hands, a huge, scarlet-red fireball appeared out of nowhere. At the same time, there was a crisp sound from the silver chains on him as it transformed into countless chain shadows, rushing at the huge mouth in the air.

However, the flying head that was mid-air gave out a series of weird laughs. After an immediate blur, it actually transformed into two, which then transformed into four, which then transformed into eight. In the blink of an eye, almost a hundred of these head clones, that were completely the same, appeared.

After a series of crazy movements, the silver chain pierced through and destroyed a dozen or so heads, but there were even more heads that covered the sky and flew around Liu Ming. They also flashed and made

even more clones of heads appear.

Liu Ming became slightly pale and before he could even think of how to break through them, all of the heads suddenly tilted. There was a huge sound capable of shattering the sky!

Countless black hairs transformed into a dense black light, shooting at him from all directions.

Liu Ming gave a cold snort and suddenly threw the huge fireball in his hand toward the sky. He then formed a hand seal with one hand and the silver chain began dancing around crazily as a blur, forming a faint silver wall all around him.

In the next moment, the silver wall shook before sounds of explosions, like rain hitting banana leaves, were emitted from a certain direction.

Liu Ming's body shook slightly, and he could not help but take half a step back. His eyes flashed and suddenly stared in a certain direction at the shadow of a head. At the same time, he spat out the word "go".

The huge fireball in the air let out an immediate rumble and shot toward that shadow of a head.

Seeing this, the male head instead revealed a fierce expression and with a poof, it surprisingly transformed into a cloud of black gas, disappearing mid-air.

At the same time, the other flying head shadows that flew around covering the air all disappeared with a flash.

A clever light flashed across Liu Ming's eyes, and with one finger, he pointed at the giant fireball. He then said the word "explode" before suddenly shaking the silver chain, which transformed into a ray of silver light that shot out.

"Hong!"

The huge fireball in the air immediately exploded and transformed into several tens of smaller fireballs the size of eggs. They shot out densely, covering everything with a circumference of over a hundred feet.

“Peng!”

A fireball seemed to burst apart somewhere mid-air, causing the flying head to stumble and reveal itself.

Just at this moment, there was a flash of silver light!

The Demon Subduing Chain had arrived nearby as if it had been waiting. With a blur, it transformed into countless shadows which fell down. It caught the Flying Head in a sturdy manner.

Seeing this, Liu Ming was extremely exalted and with a sudden yank of the other side of the chain, the Demon Subduing Chain immediately shook and pulled the entrapped Flying Head in front of him.

Subsequently, he twisted and turned his hand without any hesitation. Three yellow Glyphs appeared between his fingers. With a shake of the hand, they were slapped onto the forehead of the male Flying Head like lightning.

At this moment, something unbelievable actually happened!

When the Flying Head, which seemed to be unable to move, saw the Glyphs that were about to be put on its forehead, it actually grinned and gave out a weird laugh. The layers of silver chains transformed into black gas with a muffled sound, and with another blur, they rushed toward Liu Ming. They submerged into Liu Ming's body with a flash.

The vine armor on Liu Ming's body seemed to be unable to stop the demon at all!

The scene happened as quick as lightning and Liu Ming could not even react. When he moved his body again, he immediately turned pale after focusing and realizing what had happened.

A few rumors of demons loving to eat spirits immediately flashed through his head.

Although it was like this, Liu Ming could not just wait helplessly for death. Suddenly clenching his teeth, he formed a hand seal with one hand extremely quickly, and was about to use Fa Li to forcefully push the

Flying Head out of his body.

However, at this moment, it suddenly felt hot in his Spirit Sea and following the heat, there was a “pu” sound as a ball of black gas flew out of his body. After rolling and condensing, it once again transformed into the male Flying Head.

However, the current Flying Head had an extremely frightened expression and stared blankly at Liu Ming’s eyes. It then began to shiver and fell to the ground with a sudden “pu” sound, causing its face to be buried in the soil. It let out a hissing sound from its mouth, and was not brave enough to even raise its head.

Seeing this, Liu Ming naturally was startled.

However, after quickly thinking, he suddenly shook his sleeve and three yellow Glyphs shot out with a flash.

As a result, under his serious gaze, the three Glyphs immediately exploded and transformed into three nets made of light with three bangs, catching the Flying Head below.

As for the Flying Head, its face remained facing downward and continued to shiver. It did not have the idea of avoiding at all.

With this, Liu Ming relaxed a little at heart. At the same time, he was also extremely puzzled.

However, Liu Ming naturally could not miss such a good opportunity. After his face changed expression several times, he suddenly stuck a finger into his mouth and bit into it. He then began chanting.

Although Liu Ming had never cultivated any methods relating to it, the Nine Infants faction was known for their ability of subduing demons. As a disciple of the faction, he knew some simple techniques of restricting and subduing demons. He had read about it in a lot of books and memorized quite a few.

He used the bitten finger to constantly draw mid-air and inscriptions formed from Essence Blood immediately appeared in mid-air. With an activation of Fa Li, it began to spin, forming a small Glyph formation out

of blood.

Liu Ming gave a deep grunt and formed hand seals with his two hands. He activated them at the same time, and the blood-colored Glyph formation immediately started flying slowly toward the Flying Head.

The Flying Head seemed to feel the glyph formation fly over and finally raised its face out of the soil. However, it remained where it was without moving at all, displaying a terrified expression.

The blood-colored Glyph formation flashed and disappeared into the forehead of the Flying Head.

Following its disappearance, the Flying Head gave off a sorrowful cry and revealed a pained expression. Afterward, rays of blood-colored light shot out from its forehead and a faint-red, unknown inscription appeared.

At the same time, Liu Ming felt a series of shivers in his consciousness and actually seemed to be slightly able to communicate with the consciousness of the demon.

Liu Ming was exalted as he knew his technique had succeeded.

The Secret Technique he casted just then was not very complex, however, it had one of the most stable effects on restricting demons. Once the technique succeeded, even if there was an existence like the Nine Infants, only the owner could control it.

However, the prerequisite of using the technique was that it required the person who casted it to complete it in one go and without any resistance from the demon. Otherwise, there was almost no chance of succeeding.

He only risked trying the technique after seeing the behavior of the Flying Head earlier, since it was so strange. Who would have thought he would actually succeed in subduing this demon. Otherwise, he would have taken advantage of when the Glyph was still in effect to flee as far as he could.

Liu Ming tested the ability of communicating with the Flying Head a few times with an expression full of happiness. He could clearly feel the

relation of the restricting imprint on the Flying Head. Only after confirming that there indeed were no problems did he form a hand seal with one hand and point at the empty air.

A muffled sound occurred!

The three light nets disappeared with a flash. The Flying Head blinked a few times before flying into the air meekly and slowly.

Liu Ming tested the control of the Flying Head by making it fly up and down a few times as well as getting it to fly around him a few times. Only after seeing that there were no faults did he truly relax.

He did not dare to continue to remain where he was. He immediately left the area with the Flying Head with a movement of his body.

.....

Half a day later, when Liu Ming, who was meditating in a tree hole, opened his eyes again, the Fa Li consumed from the battles earlier was just about completely recovered.

As for the Flying Head, ever since he started meditating, it always guarded the entrance of the tree hole quietly and did not seem to move at all.

Seeing this, Liu Ming felt great satisfaction at heart.

However, Liu Ming was still happy from the bottom of his heart for actually subduing the demon by himself.

It was a pity that he did not cultivate any Secret Techniques like the Spirit Communication Technique, which specialized in communicating with consciousness of demons, so other than feeling that the demon greatly revered him and that he could order it around for easy tasks, he had no way of understanding the reasons for its actions.

It seemed that only after returning to the sect, finding, and cultivating a communication Secret Technique could he find the true reason.

Liu Ming looked and examined the meek Flying Head while thinking in such a manner.

# Chapter 147: Return

However, this Flying Head was also something that belonged to Shi Chuan, so he could not casually reveal it in front of people after leaving.

Liu Ming thought like this, before using his consciousness to communicate with the Flying Head. He gave a few simple instructions and slapped the leather pouch on his waist with one hand.

A ray of black light immediately shot out, which sucked the Flying Head in.

Although the Cultivating Soul Pouch was specially made to hold ghosts under normal situations, it could hold the Flying Head inside temporarily.

This matter would be easily handled after he left and found a special pouch made specifically for cultivating demons.

Liu Ming continued to rest in the tree hole for a little longer. After feeling that his body had no other problems, he stood up without any hesitation and walked out.

There were only a few days left until the deadline where the secret realm would close, so he did not dare to waste any time and climbed up the tree with his body as light as a feather. He then shot off into the distance like a crossbow bolt.

As he did not need to pay attention to any Spirit Objects while he returned, his speed was naturally completely different than before.

Of course, in order to pay attention to potential ambushes, he naturally did not put everything into traveling.

Like this, he only spent around a day's worth of time crossing a large portion of the forest. There were actually no problems at all during the journey and matters such as people ambushing or obstructing never occurred.

At first, Liu Ming thought it was a little weird, but after thinking carefully, he understood this situation.



It was very different now compared to the past two days. Seeing that the deadline was approaching, perhaps eighty-to-ninety-percent of all the remaining disciples had already gathered near the entrance of the secret realm.

Under normal circumstances, there would not be any more people ambushing him.

What he did not know was how the situation was over there. Would the disciples of different sects fight against each other or maintain peace and balance with fear?

When Liu Ming was thinking about this, there was sudden, huge rumble from a certain area. It was as if there was something huge currently approaching very fast.

Liu Ming was slightly startled and naturally stopped on a tree branch. He looked in the direction where the sound came from with his eyes squinted.

He watched as a big tree on that side was suddenly pushed over, and from behind it a huge, black ape puppet thirty feet tall rushed out from behind it. After a few movements, it suddenly stopped below the big tree Liu Ming was on.

Afterward, there was a sound of surprise that came from within the body of the huge ape!

“Junior Bai, it’s you, it is such a coincidence!”

“So it is Brother Tie!” Liu Ming looked at the huge puppet that was somewhat familiar and suddenly replied with a laugh.

At this moment, the belly of the giant ape puppet suddenly revealed a square window with a flash, and a round, male face appeared from within.

It was that Nine Enlightenment Sect disciple, Tie Yue, that Liu Ming had met first on the day he entered the center area of the secret realm.

“Haha, I just knew that with Junior Bai’s intellect, nothing would go

wrong for you in the center area of the secret realm. You are indeed safe and sound. Seeing that Junior Bai has also decided to go to the exit, why don't we travel together? Who knows, perhaps if something happens in the next part of the journey, we will be able to help each other a little." Tie Yue suddenly focused his attention and spoke.

"Okay! Since our sects have already formed an alliance, traveling together is naturally safer." Only with a quick thought, Liu Ming agreed with a sentence without any hesitation.

"Fantastic. Since I have Junior Bai as company, I do not need to always hide in the body of this big fellow to travel." Hearing what was said, the round-faced young man was extremely happy, and immediately opened a tunnel in the belly of the puppet with some unknown action and slid out from within.

"What? Did Brother Tie always use this puppet to travel before?" Hearing what was said, Liu Ming could not help but be slightly startled.

It must be known that even though Liu Ming had not learned any Puppet Techniques before, he still knew that always controlling a puppet would constantly consume Fa Li and mental strength, let alone controlling this huge puppet.

"It indeed was like that. Ever since I was ambushed by a disciple from the Hall of Blood in the forest, I could only feel slightly safer when I am inside this guy. However, this fellow is too cumbersome and after traveling for this long, I almost cannot stand it anymore." Tie Yue sighed and spoke with an expression of helplessness.

"So it is like this. Looking at the power of Brother Tie's mental strength, perhaps you are ranked among the best in your generation at your sect."

"Hehe, I only have my current mental strength due to a few fortuitous encounters in the past. However, if we talk about ranks, I am only third in the Spirit Apostles at the Nine Enlightenment Sect.

"Third? Then the people in front are..." Hearing what was said, Liu Ming was somewhat moved.

Liu Ming had the talent of doing two things at the same time, so his mental strength was naturally almost twice as strong as a normal Spirit Apostle's. However, if compared to the other person beside him, perhaps it was not as strong. And now he was hearing that there were actually two other people from the Nine Enlightenment Sect that had a mental strength above him, it naturally caused Liu Ming to shiver at heart.

"One of the two naturally is Senior Yun. When Senior Yun chose his Cultivation Method years ago, other than his main Cultivation Method, he also cultivated a high level method from our sect that could increase Mental Strength at the same time. Every time a layer is cultivated successfully, it greatly increases Mental Strength. However, the pity is that the conditions to cultivate it are extremely harsh. Out of all the people in our sect, there are only perhaps two or three people that fit the conditions to cultivate it. As for the other person, his status is a little special, so I cannot tell you." Tie Yue explained both of them.

"I have met Senior Yun in the center of the secret realm. However, I could not tell that his mental strength was also that strong." Liu Ming knit his brows slightly.

"Senior Yun prefers Body Cultivation techniques. Any person that sees the way he fights will subconsciously neglect the power of his Mental Strength." Tie Yue replied with a smile.

"So it is like that." Liu Ming nodded, and obviously believed his explanation.

At this moment, Tie Yue formed a hand sign with one hand and the huge ape puppet transform into a black round ball before it was put away. Afterward, he released a graceful looking praying mantis puppet and sat on it with a sway.

Looking at the familiar looking praying mantis puppet a few times, Liu Ming spoke with Tie Yue a few more times, before continuing along the journey.

Liu Ming remained in the trees and advanced by leaping around like a ghost while Tie Yue sprinted across the ground.

.....

A day later, in the underground cavern outside the secret realm, six Crystal Level Cultivators continued to sit on the stone pillars, all silently powering the items in front of them that maintained the stability of the secret realm entrance.

However, a few dozen or so Liquid Level echelons of each sect were slightly nervous and looked toward the slightly flickering ball of white light, floating in mid-air, from time to time.

Calculating the time, today was about the final day of the established deadline. However, until now, no disciples had come out, naturally causing a large portion of the people in the cavern to be unsettled.

After another while, the white ball of light that originally seemed calm suddenly began to flash crazily, and at the same time, a vague, oppressed rumbling sound could be heard from within.

“Someone is coming out!” Someone spoke with joy and all of the glances of the people shifted with a “shua” sound. They all stared at the white ball of light without wavering.

A few crystal level experts who were originally close-eyed immediately opened their eyes.

A five-colored light shot out and the shadows of six people appeared nearby at the same time.

With everybody’s gaze sweeping across, they realized that the six people were the disciples that had entered the secret realm before. It seemed that there was also one person from each sect.

All of the people could not help but begin changing expressions.

“Huiniang, what has happened? Did all the people gather on the other side? Around how many are there?” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader could not help but take a step forward and hurriedly ask a female in the group.

“Sect Leader Martial Uncle, all the people have indeed gathered

together. There are still around twenty-five to twenty-six people.” Qian Huiniang hurriedly bowed and replied.

“Twenty or so people, it looks like there is only a small half of people that survived. This is a natural secret realm, how can there still be so many people that have fallen.” Hearing what was said, the Sect Leader of the Firestorm Way could not help but change slightly in expression.

“This secret realm does not seem to be a totally natural secret realm. Inside, we suffered from a few accidents.” Qian Huiniang paused a little, before replying honestly.

“Accident?”

These words caused the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader and the other people to knit their brows slightly.

However, in the next moment, the high echelons of the other sects, straightforwardly called all their disciples to them and asked a few concerning questions to their respective disciples.

The results were naturally good and bad.

When the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader learned about the matter that Lei Zhen, Feng Chan, and some other people were missing, his expression naturally became a little gloomy. However, after hearing that Gao Chong was alright and that half of the people had survived, his expression became slightly happy again.

At this moment, the white ball of light that was mid-air began rumbling again. Surprisingly, there were other disciples that were sent through again.

When Liu Ming opened his eyes and became clear-headed again through the dizziness, he discovered that he once again appeared in the huge cavern where he had started off.

As for the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader and the other high echelons of each sect, they all gathered in front to receive the incoming disciples of each sect. At the same time, they had extremely serious expressions.

Liu Ming hesitated a little, before walking toward the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader with big steps.

Two days ago, when Tie Yue and he had arrived near the entrance of the secret realm, the situation there was actually peaceful beyond their expectations.

The disciples of a few sects had actually arrived a day or two earlier and all gathered and banded together, all stationed close to the entrance of the secret realm at the same time.

With this, under the fear of the disciples of each sect, they had made it so that no one could fight near the entrance, otherwise everybody else would attack together to maintain the temporary peace.

Just like this, Liu Ming and Tie Yue returned to their own people with great ease and after waiting for the final day, when no one else arrived, everyone decided to send a single disciple from each sect back at the same time just like at the start.

The whole process was actually abnormally smooth, without any problems at all.

At this moment, after walking out, Liu Ming bowed individually to the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader and Spirit Master Zhang before respectfully standing to one side.

On the side, Yang Qian, Qian Huiniang were already standing there.

“Very good, you have done well. For you to be able to return from the secret realm safely already can be considered as doing great merit for our sect. This time, our sect has five people that have survived and should be stronger than the other sects by a lot.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader nodded at Liu Ming before revealing a smile and speaking to everybody.

# Chapter 148: Ancient Giant Demon

Qian Hui Niang and the others naturally replied with words of humbleness!

Just at this time, a noise transmitted from the secret realm's entrance and finally, the last few people appeared in the cave in a flash.

Among them was a lofty youth who was wearing Barbarian Ghost Sect apparel. It astonishingly was Gao Chong.

Once Liu Ming saw him, a glint of coldness flashed across his eyes.

As for the Barbarian Ghost Sect leader, when he saw Gao Chong, the last thread of worry in his heart was finally relieved. He instantly beckoned him over.

"This disciple greets Master and Martial Uncle Zhang!" Gao Chong walked over in a few steps and immediately bowed his body, paying his respects.

"Stand up. Nothing happening to you has let me be at ease." The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader gestured with his hands and was extremely excited as he spoke.

"This is mostly due to Master's education, otherwise I'm afraid this disciple truly would have been unable to return alive." Gao Chong said in an exceptionally reverent manner.

After listening to this clever speech, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader was very satisfied and let him stand whereby he brought him to the side to speak some more.

Gao Chong immediately stood among the other disciples.

Seeing this, Liu Ming intentionally looked at the opposing party.

However, the current Gao Chong had his head down and it seemed as if he hadn't seen Liu Ming.

Liu Ming's eyebrows slightly creased and he expressionlessly retracted his gaze.

Earlier when he was at the exit of the secret realm, Gao Chong had already gathered with the others a day prior to him.

Nonetheless, when he saw Liu Ming appear in front of him safe and sound, his expression was obviously extremely ugly.

However, when Liu Ming appeared, they were in the presence of others. Even if the two of them wanted to get rid of the other by one-hundred-twenty-percent, they could not start fighting the other.

In each of their hearts, they naturally let out sighs of pity that they hadn't met in the secret realm, since it wouldn't have mattered if either of them had disappeared from the world; the sect's Elders wouldn't have bothered investigating.

Once they exited the secret realm, no matter who it was that wanted to get rid of the other, it was most likely going to be an extremely troublesome task.

At this time, Spirit Master Zhang was extremely concerned and asked how the others perished.

However, once Yang Qian, Jia Lan, and the other disciples heard the question, they looked at each other and didn't know how to reply.

Liu Ming's expression didn't change and he didn't have any intention of speaking.

It ended up being Gao Chong who hesitated a while before speaking of Feng Chan being slaughtered by a monster which strikingly resembled 'Shi Chuan'.

"What? You said that Feng Chan was killed by a monster in one strike; moreover, this monster was extremely similar in appearance to Shi Chuan. Are you sure you clearly saw that the monster was actually Shi Chuan?" The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader's eyebrows creased.

"Reporting back to Master, this disciple isn't clear about this matter. Perhaps this monster was Senior Shi Chuan, but its strength was extremely strong. Its attacks were also as fast as lightning; it truthfully was not a strength that Senior Shi could possess. Perhaps it wasn't Shi



Chuan but its facial features and build were extremely similar to the former Senior Shi Chuan.” Gao Chong hesitated before replying.

“Junior Zhang, what do you make of this matter?” The Barbarian Ghost Sect leader turned his head and asked Spirit Master Zhang a question.

“According to what Martial Nephew Gao said, there should be two possibilities. One is that Martial Nephew Feng’s murderer was a monster extremely capable at the Transformation Technique. Moreover, the missing Martial Nephew Shi may have already lost his life under this monster’s hands; therefore, it was able to transform into Martial Nephew Shi Chuan’s appearance. The second possibility is that Martial Nephew Shi Chuan encountered something when he entered the secret realm, causing his strength to undergo large improvements but also causing him to lose control over his state of mind. This would cause him to attack his fellow sect members in such a crazy way. I believe that the latter is the most probable. Don’t forget that Martial Nephew Shi had a Flying Head on his body. This demon head may have lost control and devoured him, causing him to lose his conscious.” Spirit Master Zhang muttered to himself for a while before speaking in a heavy manner.

“Yes, there could only be these two possibilities. I originally did not endorse Junior Brother Gui’s decision to give the Flying Head to a Spirit Apostle disciple to use. Even if Deep Sea Coldlight Iron was used to forge a Demon Subduing Chain as an aid, it was still slightly too much to handle.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader nodded his head and was rather gloomy as he spoke.

“Whatever, no matter how Shi Chuan and Feng Chan were murdered, we are already certain that they are no longer with us. As for Duan Can Zu, Shou Lie, and Lei Zhen, although we don’t know whether they perished, it’s impossible for nothing to have happened to them. We also don’t know if they can walk out of the secret realm in the remaining time.” Spirit Master Zhang was somewhat regretful as he spoke.

“That’s true. Especially Martial Nephew Lei; he has a Nine Lightning Spirit Pulse Body and is Junior Lei’s nephew by blood. This time, if he truly did perish inside, I don’t know how I can repay him when I return.”

The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader let out a sigh as he spoke.

“Sect Leader doesn’t need to mind this matter too much. No matter which way we look at it, us being able to have half of our disciples exit the secret realm is already not a bad conclusion. As for the rankings of this trial, perhaps we will be able to acquire a pretty good achievement.” Spirit Master Zhang condoled.

“I hope this is the case. Currently, there’s still half a day before the secret realm’s entrance closes. You guys should find a nearby place to have a good rest. When the secret realm closes, each sect will inspect the profits of the secret realm this time.” The Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader nodded his head and straightened his expression as he spoke to the other disciples.

Liu Ming and the others naturally bowed and uttered words of affirmation before finding their own respective places to sit down.

Yang Qian was called out by the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader and they found another area with Spirit Master Zhang where they held another detailed inquiry about what happened in the secret realm.

This time, the three of them used a Hidden Message Technique to talk and the others were naturally unable to hear anything. They could only see the eyes on Yang Qian’s mask continuously swivel while the Barbarian Ghost Sect leader and Spirit Master Zhang’s expressions gradually became abnormally heavy!

After a while, the Barbarian Ghost Sect leader waved his hand and let Yang Qian leave first before having a close discussion with Spirit Master Zhang.

However, this time, the two of them only spoke a few sentences before ending.

Subsequently, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader moved his body and walked to the stone platform where Martial Ancestor Yan resided. There, in front of him, he spoke a few sentences in a low voice.

After the gray-robed old man finished listening, his face underwent a

sudden slight change.

The same situation seemed to occur in the other sects.

So much so that in front of Fusion Sect's Xuan was a male Fusion Sect disciple who had also entered the secret realm earlier and was now reporting something in a hasty manner.

After this Fusion Sect Crystal Level man finished listening, his face suddenly turned extremely ugly.

His gaze flashed around before he suddenly opened his mouth, "Fellow Fellows, you probably heard that an unexpected ancient giant demon hand appeared in the secret realm. If I guessed correctly, this wasn't a Natural Secret Realm but rather an ancient almighty ancestor who specially sealed a disintegrated ancient demon's body in this space. Although according to logic this large demon hand cannot leave this space, in order to ensure this, I propose that we immediately close the secret realm's entrance right now. Otherwise, if by any chance some mistake occurs, it will not only be one sect or one kingdom that bears the consequence; instead, the entire Yun Chuan Continent will experience a large calamity."

Murong Xuan's voice wasn't loud, but it was clearly transmitted into everyone's ears.

When the higher levels of each sect heard this, most of their expressions changed.

As for most of the normal disciples, they were baffled. They clearly had no idea what the Ancient Giant Demon was.

Liu Ming's heart faintly shook and he couldn't help but involuntarily engrave the three words "Ancient Giant Demon" into his memory.

"There might... there might be disciples inside who have yet to come out. After all, we agreed to a half month period of time and there currently still is half a day left." Spirit Master Ling Yu's eyebrows creased as he replied.

"Fellow Ling Yu, between a few mere Spirit Apostle Disciples and that

Ancient Giant Demon, who is more important? Is there any need to say anything else? Moreover, our sect's most outstanding Lan siblings have also not come out. I also have to make a sacrifice. Fellow Leng Yue, what do you think?" Murong Xuan harrumphed before speaking. He then asked a question to Spirit Master Leng Yue.

"Since this situation has involved the Ancient Giant Demon's seal, it's not bad to be overly cautious. Even if there are disciples that have yet to exit, I'm sure they'll also understand our way of handling the situation. I also approve of immediately shutting the entrance!" Spirit Master Leng Yue's eyes squinted, but she unexpectedly coldly gave her endorsement.

The remaining four people looked at each other. Among them, the blood-robed male and Chi Yang nodded their heads in consent; although the other two didn't say anything, they clearly tacitly agreed.

Seeing this, Murong Xuan's expression relaxed. Without saying anything else, he performed a hand sign with one hand while thrusting the other hand into the large golden cauldron beneath him.

"Weng weng!"

In a flash, the enormous cauldron immediately became tiny. In another flash, it had become a few centimeters large and proceeded to shoot into Murong Xuan's sleeve where it disappeared without a trace.

Martial Aunt Leng Yue and the other five to the side stopped the Fa Li in their body. Instantly, the disks in front all shattered into fine pieces, stopping the Fa Li support for the secret realm entrance.

Since this was the case, the secret realm's entrance in the air violently flashed a few times before disappearing amid successive spatial ripples and a rumbling noise.

Upon seeing this, Liu Ming's heart slightly froze.

Fortunately he had arrived at the exit a day earlier, otherwise if he had tried to wait until the last moment, he would have truly been trapped inside alive. It seemed that in the future, he had to take anybody's promise with a grain of salt. He definitely could not believe everything to

be true.

The disciples of each sect also revealed their own expressions.

“Okay. Since the secret realm entrance has been shut, we can now let the juniors take out their profits and efficiently determine the ranking of the trial this time.” After Martial Aunt Leng Yue saw that the secret realm’s entrance no longer existed, she nonchalantly spoke.

“Hehe, our Fusion Sect has no need to participate in this ranking process. I have other things to do so I will leave with my sect first.” Murong Xuan’s gaze slightly flashed, he suddenly stood up and spoke.

“Wait a minute! Fellow Murong has no need to be in such a rush. Although your sect doesn’t have to participate in our Great Xuan Kingdom’s trial ranking, why can’t you share with us the profits of your sect?” Ling Yu’s eyebrows creased before he immediately called out to stop them.

“Fellow Ling Yu, what do you mean by this? The strength needed to use this has already been used. Could it be that even with Fellow’s status, you still want to go back on our promise?!” After hearing him, Murong Xuan’s expression turned dark.

“Fellow Murong is mistaken. Although our sects cannot compare with Fusion Sect, we’re still unlikely to break any promises. However, doesn’t Fellow feel that at the very least we should clarify into which sect’s hands the Scarlet Dragon ended up. It won’t be too late to leave after that.” Martial Aunt Leng Yue insipidly interrupted.

# Chapter 149: The Profits of Each Sect

“It turns out that you Fellows suspect that my sect’s disciples obtained that Scarlet Dragon! What an enormous joke! There’s no need to speak; I already asked and found that the Scarlet Dragon didn’t end up in my Sect’s hands. Even if it actually ended up in our hands, could it be that you Fellows have an objection?” Murong Xuan gave a grunt and spoke in a blunt manner.

“If that Scarlet Dragon truly did fall into your sect’s disciple’s hands, the few of us would naturally give our congratulations. However, that Crystal Level Scarlet Dragon Blood is of paramount importance to us. No matter which sect obtains it, us old geezers are willing to use an item of equal value to exchange for a bit of it.” Martial Aunt Leng Yue’s gaze flashed before she spoke with a calm expression.

“Hehe, in this way, if the Scarlet Dragon fell into the hands of one of our various sect’s disciples, I would also be able to exchange something for a bit of pure blood then.” When Murong Xuan heard this, he rubbed his chin and let out a laugh.

When the other people heard this, their expressions slightly changed.

Chi Yang exposed a pensive expression, but didn’t object in any way.

“That is only natural. However, these few disciples of your sect must be personally checked by me.” Martial Aunt Leng Yue, Ling Yu and the others silently transmitted messages to discuss a while; ultimately they nodded their heads in a rather serious manner.

“Okay, then we’ll do as said.” Murong Xuan unreservedly agreed to it.

In this way, in the ensuing period of time, the higher ups of the various sects began to bring the disciples that exited the secret realm to a nearby stone platform where the Crystal Level Cultivators resided.

“Each sect should check for their harvests from the secret realm individually. Xiu Niang, our Heavenly Moon Sect will go first so as to avoid people maudlinly wasting time.” Martial Aunt Leng Yue’s gaze

swept over the remaining six disciples from her sect and her expression immediately loosened as she spoke.

Heavenly Moon Sect was the only sect with more disciples that returned alive than Barbarian Ghost Sect, proving its worth as Great Xuan Kingdom's number one sect. The sect truly did have the strength to be above the other sects.

As for the other few sects, the Fusion Sect's disciple number was the same as Barbarian Ghost Sects: five people. Nine Enlightenment Sect had four disciples and Blood River Hall and Firestorm Way each had three disciples that exited the secret realm.

There was a reason for this!

Hall of Blood and Firestorm Way primarily cultivated attacking methods while their survival abilities were somewhat lacking. Furthermore, adding on the unlucky moment when the enormous hand covered the sky, these two sects lost the most disciples.

In this manner, their numbers were naturally lower.

The higher ups of these two sects had a wretched expressions written all over their faces. They clearly were extremely disappointed with their sect's disciples.

"Yes, Martial Ancestor!"

Xiu Niang, the person Martial Aunt Leng Yue spoke of, astonishingly was a courageous and vibrant female with the surname of Zhang.

Subsequently, she walked a few steps to an empty spot in front of Martial Aunt Leng Yue and fished out a finely wrapped Sumeru Handkerchief from her sleeve. She then muttered an incantation and lightly shook the contents onto ground.

"Pu!"

Immediately, a large pile of jade boxes and a few ores, all of different sizes, appeared on the ground; however, the most conspicuous item astonishingly were two massive Spirit Eggs that rolled to the side.

“Hmm, what kind of Demon Bird eggs are these?” Martial Aunt Leng Yue was somewhat taken aback when she saw these eggs.

“Martial Ancestor, these are Iron Feathered Hawk Spirit Eggs. I spent a considerable amount of effort to get ahold of these.” Zhang Xiu Niang bowed and responded.

“Iron Feathered Hawks – those are Spirit Birds with potential to cultivate to the Liquid Level. You did extremely well. These two Spirit Eggs will be gifted to you to breed. I will instruct the sect to help you as much as they can in breeding them.” Martial Aunt Leng Yue’s expression revealed a trace of excitement as she spoke.

When the others saw this, their expressions were each their own.

“Fellow Leng Yue, you’re showing such profound love for this disciple. Could it be that she is the disciple with a Sword Communication Spirit Body?” Chi Yang’s eyes narrowed as he stared at Zhang Xiu Niang before suddenly letting out a laugh and asking a question.

“That’s correct. Xiu Niang, this child, not only possesses a Sword Communication Spirit Body, but also has incomparable talent on the path of Sword Cultivation. She perhaps may not even be inferior to Junior Tian Mei at the time. Showing a bit of love to such a disciple is only normal.” When Martial Aunt Leng Yue heard him, she replied in an insipid manner.

“What? You’re saying that this girl could become someone who stands next to us in the future?” The Crystal Level Cultivator from Hall of Blood was somewhat shocked.

Although he knew of the Sword Communication Spirit Body, he didn’t imagine that someone like Martial Aunt Leng Yue would place such importance on a Spirit Apostle disciple.

“All of us went through a myriad of sufferings before we were able to enter the Crystal Realm. Reaching this level is so difficult that if we even failed to pass one of the challenges, we would have perished many years ago. I can only say that this child has a sliver of hope.” Martial Aunt Leng Yue raised her eyebrows as she spoke.



“This already is an inconceivable evaluation. It seems that your sect truly is a galaxy of talent. Our sects are far from being comparable.” Ling Yu let out a word of praise.

“You guys must be joking. Other things ignored, among these disciples standing here, I’m afraid that I see a plethora with talent not under Xiu Niang’s. For example, Barbarian Ghost Sect’s disciple with an Earth Spirit Pulse. His cultivation speed is extremely quick and perhaps is advancing even quicker than we had been when we were at his level. Besides this, in the future, entering the Liquid Level should be a cinch.” Martial Aunt Leng Yue nonchalantly glanced at Gao Chong in the Barbarian Ghost Sect area.

It was clear that Gao Chong, who possessed an Earth Spirit Pulse, had also already entered the eyes of the other sect’s higher ups.

“Gao Chong is at most only a little bit faster at cultivating than normal disciples. If it were to only be about fighting ability, how can he compare with your sect’s Sword Cultivators that are at his level.” When Martial Ancestor Yan heard this, he hastily yawned as he quickly replied.

When Martial Aunt Leng Yue heard this, she let out a faint smile and didn’t reply.

However, when the other Crystal Level Cultivators heard this, most of them glanced at Gao Chong.

At this time, the other Heavenly Moon Sect disciples all came forward and retrieved their harvests. Each of their piles was clearly smaller than Zhang Xiu Niang’s.

At this moment, the various sects dispatched a Liquid Level echelon to begin checking through the Spirit Medicines in the jade boxes. They followed some kind of criterion to convert the worth of the Spirit Objects into Spirit Stones.

Ultimately, the harvests of the six Heavenly Moon Sect disciples were converted into Spirit Stones, which ended up astonishingly reaching one million eight hundred thousand Spirit Stones. Those two Spirit Eggs alone were converted into four hundred thousands Spirit Stones.

One must know that a Liquid Level existence naturally had absolute core power within a sect.

Furthermore, a Spirit Bird's life expectancy was something a normal cultivator couldn't compare with. If they were to be bred well, there was a good chance they could protect the sect for a thousand years.

Moreover, once a Spirit Bird reached adulthood, its flying speed was not something a normal Spirit Ship could compare with; it would complete missions that many cultivators were unable to.

Therefore, Monster Bird Spirit Eggs could be said to never appear on the Great Xuan Kingdom's market. A price of four hundred thousand Spirit Stones probably was estimating the worth of the eggs to be a little low.

If not for this, Zhang Xiu Niang wouldn't have dared to take a risk and work with Xue Ci to kill those Monster Birds even with the knowledge that the Iron Feathered Hawks weren't easy to deal with.

When the other sect disciples heard the final Spirit Stone conversion number, a large number of people sucked a breath of air.

Such a large number was enough to completely pay for two to three years of Heavenly Moon Sect's expenses.

Moreover, some of these Spirit Grasses and Spirit Medicines were so invaluable that they couldn't even be bought.

However, when the few Crystal Level Cultivators heard this number, most of them creased their eyebrows.

This number, compared to previous harvests from secret realms, actually wasn't enough to make them happy.

When Martial Aunt Leng Yue saw this, her gaze was even more sharp. She spoke to Zhang Xiu Niang, Liu Ming, and the other disciples:

“What, none of you saw that Scarlet Dragon?”

“Martial Aunt Leng Yue, we don't know where that Scarlet Dragon hid itself. Although I put an extra care into finding it, I was unable to find its traces.” After a few Heavenly Moon Sect disciples looked at each other,

Zhang Xiu Niang instantly stepped forward and represented the others as she reverently replied.

“Whatever, since you were unable to find it, then it means it wasn’t part of your luck. Take out the rest of the items. Fellows, if you’re not satisfied, you can use Mental Strength to check if they still have Sumeru Handkerchiefs or Storage Glyph type items.” she listened to her reply, and although Martial Aunt Leng Yue was somewhat disappointed, she didn’t show it. Instead, she slowly looked over Zhang Hui Niang and the other disciples once before closing her eyes and speaking in a nonchalant manner.

Hearing this, Murong Xuan and the other Crystal Level Cultivators didn’t hold back and actually used their mental strength to sweep through Zhang Hui Niang and the others’ bodies. Subsequently, they all nodded their heads and didn’t say anything else.

Following Ling Yu’s gesture, the next group to show their profits was Nine Enlightenment Sect’s four disciples.

The Spirit Medicines and Spirit Grasses revealed by the first three people were clearly much inferior to what Heavenly Moon Sect’s disciples had obtained. They were thus naturally unable to even compare to Zhang Xiu Niang.

However, when a Hall of Blood Liquid Level echelon confusedly took a light yellow gourd from Senior Yun, he pulled the cork and sniffed the inside. His face suddenly changed.

“This is Spirit Wine; moreover, its quality isn’t inferior to Natural Spirit Wine! Martial Nephew Yun, where did you obtain this?” The Blood River Hall middle-aged man hastily asked.

When the other people heard this, they went into an uproar. The echelons of various sects who were in charge of investigating the profits proceeded to circle around and also examine the calabash Spirit Wine in shock. “Various Spirit Masters, this was plundered from a Monster Ape’s nest. It was probably brewed by them.” The black-faced youth displayed a calm expression and bowed his body as he replied.

“No wonder. Monster Apes truly like brewing certain types of Spirit Wine to drink. This Spirit Wine is exceptionally pure and drinking it will not only recover one’s Fa Li at lightning speed but it also has an inconceivable improvement effect on one’s body. It’s something that cannot be compared with normal Spirit Wines that can be bought in the market. As for its price....” The Hall of Blood’s Liquid Level middle-aged man gave praise before proceeding to discuss with the others in a low voice. He then gave it an exorbitant price of one hundred fifty thousand Spirit Stones.

One must know that this sort of Spirit Wine, that could instantly recover a large amount of Fa Li still had enormous use to a Liquid Level Cultivator.

After all, no matter who encountered an strong enemy, it was normal for this person to deplete Fa Li; moreover, perishing because of carelessness was something that no one wanted.

If one were to possess this gourd of Spirit Wine, it was the equivalent of having another life. Furthermore, this Spirit Wine also had other effects.

Therefore, a price of one hundred fifty thousand Spirit Stones could be considered fair.

However, when the nearby Liu Ming heard this, he came to a sudden realization.

# Chapter 150: Ranking

It turned out that the person who raided the Monster Ape's nest before he did that day was this Senior from the Nine Enlightenment Sect.

As a result of this, all the harvest from the four disciples of the Nine Enlightenment Sect were eventually worthy a million Spirit Stones.

This number made Master Ling Yu scoff with an expression that showed obvious dissatisfaction.

However, after the following Hall and Blood and the following few disciples from the Firestorm Way took out their harvest for checking, Ling Yu's expression softened considerably.

It was because the harvest of resources of these two sects was not comparable to that of the Nine Enlightenment Sect.

Among them, the Firestorm Way had the least with only a harvest of seven hundred thousand Spirit Stones worth of resources. Due to Xue Ci from Blood River Hall also taking out an Iron Feathered Hawk Spirit Egg, the harvest rose to around nine hundred thousand Spirit Stones in an instant.

Both the faces of the strong Crystal Level Cultivator from the Hall of Blood and Chi Yang naturally turned sour.

Thus, in the blink of an eye, only the Fusion Sect and the Barbarian Ghost Sect were left.

Seeing this, Martial Ancestor Yan lightly coughed. Immediately, the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader understood and let Liu Ming, Yang Qian, and the five other disciples move forward.

Liu Ming himself had already previously tried to use his Mental Strength to scan the Sumeru Mollusc and realized that it was completely useless. He had also learned from that half Serpent Dragon monster to hide the conch it in the flesh of his arm. Even with this knowledge, going to face the Crystal Level's live inspection caused a slight nervousness to remain in his heart but on the surface, his expression was not disturbed

in the slightest. Only when he came forward to personally take out the Sumeru Handkerchief did he slightly tremble.

A big pile of things that was significantly a lot more than Yang Qian and company's immediately appeared on the ground.

This attracted a confused cry from the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader. Even Martial Ancestor Yan could not help but do a double take in Liu Ming's direction.

The person whose amount of resources was second to Liu Ming's was Yang Qian. In addition, there was also a light yellow gourd atop his pile of items.

The harvest of the others were obviously much less than the two of them.

Seeing this, Gao Chong naturally felt greatly depressed.

If he had not joined hands with Feng Chan and company to fight that Lion Tiger Beast and wasted so many days because of that, his harvest would not be this little.

One of the echelons from the Blood River Hall that had already checked over some of the spoils immediately went forward in Yang Qian's direction to inspect the contents of that light-yellow gourd. After which, he exclaimed,

"This is also a gourd of Spirit Wine and its quality is similar to that of the previous one. They probably originate from the same place."

"That is correct, these Spirit Wines certainly are the ones that I and Brother Yun found together in the Monster Ape's nest, dividing them equally in half." Yang Qian replied respectfully.

"Eh, since it is this way, these Spirit Wines need not be appraised and can be counted as one hundred fifty thousand Spirit Stones. Do you other Fellows have any opinions on this?" This Liquid Level Cultivator asked the others after a moment's worth of consideration.

A few others obviously nodded their head in approval.

So following that, a handful of people started inspecting the pile of resources on the ground.

Due to the fact that there were not many resources, Gao Chong and the other two disciples had their harvest inspected and accounted for first. The total was less than two hundred thousand Spirit Stones and could not compare to the harvest of the other Sect's disciples that went before them.

What was most shocking was that the Water Yuan Lotus that Jia Lan had obtained from killing the three monster beasts in the secret realm had yet to appear amid these items.

It is unknown as to whether she had directly swallowed it in consumption or had used other methods to store it away.

“Three hundred and fifty thousand Spirit Stones”

“Three hundred and eighty thousand Spirit Stones”

Yang Qian and Liu Ming's harvest were also converted into Spirit Stones and checked out. The result was that Liu Ming actually had thirty thousand Spirit Stones more than Yang Qian who possessed a calabash of Spirit Wine.

This result obviously stunned the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader and a handful of others around him.

Totalling the harvest of the five disciples from the Barbarian Ghost Sect, it turned out that they collected far less than the Heavenly Moon Sect but were still ranked above the Nine Enlightenment Sect.

It was no wonder!

There was not one item that was not a rare Spirit Object from the ten or so jade boxes that Liu Ming had harvested from the half Serpent Dragon monster. Even though each object by itself was incomparable to that gourd of Spirit Wine, but if seven or eight items were added together, it was valued higher than the Spirit Wine.

Spirit Master Zhang, who had come to participate in the checking, also

went forward to inspect Liu Ming's harvest again. Finally, with a hint of excitement, he nodded in the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader's direction to indicate that the calculation were accurate.

Seeing this, the Barbarian Ghost Sect was naturally overjoyed.

Martial Ancestor Yan heard this and directed a question to the Barbarian Ghost Sect with a smile.

"What is this child's name and which faction does he belong to? His current performance in the Secret Realm is not too bad. When we return, he must be greatly commended."

"Martial Uncle. This child's name is Bai Chong Tian. He just became Junior Zhong of the Nine Infants Mountain's personal disciple. This child's extraordinary performance this time was certainly out of my expectation. After we return, the Sect is sure to heftily reward him." When the Barbarian Ghost Sect Leader saw that his own Martial Uncle showed an interest in Liu Ming, he immediately toned down and replied hastily.

At the same time, he made a quick decision in his heart to instruct his disciple, Gao Chong, to not pester that Outer Sect disciple called Mu Ming Zhu anymore in the future. It was not a big deal to switch a Human Cauldron's partner.

Martial Ancestor Yan listened and nodded approvingly, not saying anything more.

As for Gao Chong who had heard the number of Liu Ming's harvest, the color of his face slightly turned green.

It was very clear in his heart that even though he was heavily doted on by the Barbarian Ghost Sect leader, his intentions of relying on the Sect's influence to coerce the other party were unlikely to ever come true based on Liu Ming's current established achievements.

Of course, if he were able to advance to the level of Spirit Master, everything would naturally be different.

After such consideration. Gao Chong bitterly decided to leave no stone



unturned when he went back to advance to the level of Spirit Master before deciding anything.

At this time, Martial Ancestor Yan, as per procedure, also allowed the few other strong Crystal Level members to use their Perceptions to sweep through the bodies of Liu Ming and a few other disciples to see if they had anything hidden in their possession.

Even though Liu Ming had a few disposable Storage Glyphs on him before, he had naturally taken them out beforehand and let the others inspect that they were empty inside.

When there were stifles of Perceptions brushing over his body, his heartbeat could not help but race faster.

Fortunately, under the enormous spiritual pressure of these Crystal Level's Perception, the other disciples also did not perform exceptionally well. If he behaved as he normally would have, it would actually appear to be quite strange.

When all of the Perceptions were pulled back and the other strong Crystal Level members had yet to express a hint of irregularity, only then could Liu Ming be at ease.

"Since we few Sects also did not manage to obtain that Scarlet Dragon! Fellow Murong, have the disciples from your Fusion Sect really not seen it before?" That strong Crystal Level Cultivator from the Hall of Blood could not help but direct his question to Murong Xuan.

"Hmph, if the Scarlet Dragon was not seen by your Sect, would that mean the disciple from our Sect must have seen it? Or is it that our Fellow Xue Ling think that the disciples from our Sect would fool me!" Murong Xuan listened and replied, rolling both his eyes.

"Hoho, why must two Fellows argue? We will all know the outcome in a small little while! Brother Murong, let your Sect reveal their harvest too." Chi Yang said in a laughing manner to smooth things over.

"The lot of you reveal your items. Do not leave a single item behind. We do not need to provoke any kind of misunderstanding." Murong Xuan

displayed a somber expression, yet when he turned around to speak to the Fusion Sect disciples, he spoke his words with a low shout.

The five disciples from the Fusion Sect heard this and naturally agreed respectfully. Moving forward a few steps, they all took out their Sumeru Handkerchief one by one.

After a meal's worth of effort, Ling Yu, Chi Yang and company had a ghastly expression on their faces.

The harvest of the Fusion Sect disciples were also large enough to be above a million Spirit Stones but within them, they did not have half a hint of the Scarlet Dragon.

From the time that the disciples from each Sect emerged from the secret realm, these few strong Crystal Level Cultivators noticed that there was indeed not a single disciple that had secretly conducted any actions of transferring their harvests.

After all, this cave was of normal size and any strong Crystal Level Cultivator's Perception could cover every inch of the cave.

Yet, with that Scarlet Dragon's queer scent, he was afraid that even if it was a scale that was taken out of the Sumeru space, he was unable to completely conceal it from them.

"Ke, it seems that our Sect really does not have any luck. No one actually bumped into that Scarlet Dragon. This is really a miscalculated event." Master Ling Yu sighed and said.

"It might not be that they did not bump into it. If they had bumped into that Serpent Dragon, they might have died to his hands." Murong Xuan said with a sneer.

"What is the use of saying all this now? Hehe, after all, no one could get that Scarlet Dragon. This is actually for the better. It means that our luck has not come." Martial Aunt Leng Yue said with an expressionless face.

The others could only remain speechless.

"That is right. The ranking for this trial is out. You Fellows do not have

any opinions on this, right?” Martial Ancestor Yan’s gaze flashed a few times, after which he asked this slowly.

“Hehe. It seems that Fellow Yan is very pleased with his Sect’s ranking in this trial. After all, I said earlier that the victory of this trial is determined by the harvest. Naturally there is no reason to regret. What do the other Fellows think?” Martial Aunt Leng Yue laughed mischievously, directing her question at the others.

To this Martial Aunt Leng Yue, the Hall of Blood’s abilities had developed tremendously in these few years and were already recognized as a threat by the Heavenly Moon Sect. Naturally, they were willing to suppress the other.

“Anyways, the trial is only to determine the ranking for these few years. Next time, we Hall of Blood will definitely regain our original ranking.” Although Xue Ling was gloomy, it was obvious that this result was accepted.

Even though the Hall of Blood was only second to the Heavenly Moon Sect, it did not try to go back on his promise. Ling Yu and the others naturally would not regret promises either now that the Hall of Blood had spoken.

Thus, Martial Aunt Leng Yue immediately announced the results of this trial. As for the change in the controls of some resources due to the change in rankings, it was naturally not something these strong Crystal Level Cultivators had to worry about.

Naturally, there were echelons from each Sect that were going to find a different time to privately discuss business in greater detail.

After half a day, from the middle of the Suppressing Dragon Lake came a piercing sound. A large Bone Boat took flight, shooting off in the direction of the Barbarian Ghost Sect, carrying Liu Ming and a bunch of people along with it.

....

After half a month, the whole Barbarian Ghost Sect was in an uproar.

Almost all of the disciples knew that a disciple from their Sect had revealed his abilities in this Life and Death Trial and even managed to bring the entire sect to second-place in the sect rankings.

All the disciples who participated in Trial had suddenly become well known within the Sect.

However, the individual that was discussed the most was not the Inner Sect Senior Brother, Yang Qian, but rather the newly-emerged Core Disciple, Liu Ming.

# Chapter 151: Reward

Everything was completely exposed in regard to the Life and Death Trial that happened in the secret realm.

Liu Ming, as a newcomer among the ten disciples, had obtained much in the secret realm, actually achieving more than the veteran disciple, Yang Qian. This naturally attracted the envious gaze of many.

However, Liu Ming, who came back with the Sect Leader of the Barbarian Ghost Sect, went to the Nine Infants Mountain. Other than going to visit Gui Ru Yuan and company once, he immediately returned to his residence and enclosed himself inside.

This naturally and greatly disappointed those who wished to establish a relationship with him.

Today, Liu Ming was sitting cross-legged inside the house. Both his hands were continuously making incantation gestures, quickly refining the coiled silver chain on his arm. At the same time, the black gas around him tumbled, as if there were black-colored tentacles dancing madly.

After an unknown period of time, he exhaled deeply. Dispelling the hand sign, the black gas surrounding him was inhaled back into his body. Following that, he tapped the silver chain with one hand, and layers of inscriptions immediately appeared out of nowhere. Surprisingly, there were seventeen layers.

Seeing this, a hint of a smile could not help but surface on Liu Ming's face.

Although this Demon Subduing Chain was only a Middle Tier Totem, the inscriptions were obviously different from other Totems he had seen before. They seemed to be more complex and mysterious while the whole chain was extremely tough. Even if the Cyan Moon Sword were to cut it from above, it would be unable to leave any sword marks on it. There even seemed to be a hint of a strange chill emitted from it.

It seemed the chain was not simply just a Middle Tier Totem, if not,

how would it control the Flying Head.

When Liu Ming thought about the incident with the Demon, his expression slightly faltered.

After he returned to the Sect, he went to the Spirit Spell Pavilion on that mountain and specifically looked for a few books regarding Demons, researching them anew.

Once he finished reading, he understood how lucky he was that day for defeating the Flying Head.

In the history of the Nine Infants, there were people that attempted to tame the Flying Head while they were Spirit Apostles. However, the outcome was always the same; all of them died from having their blood sucked dry.

The reason why Shi Chuan was initially able to control that Demon was in fact due to Gui Ru Yuan and his fellows help in suppressing it. Plus the Demon Subduing Chain which was specifically created with restraining abilities for Demonic Beings. In essence, Shi Chuan did not truly defeat the Flying Head.

Based on the records, a so-called Demon was a being of extreme evil that came into emergence from the negative energy originating from the likes of Miasma and other energy similar to that. Originally, it would not have a physical form. It would resemble Demonic Souls before subsequently changing through the means of swallowing one another and other methods. They would slowly be able to become powerful enough to manifest a physical form.

Due to the fact that a Demon's growth was unstable, it was only natural that its appearance was strange, taking any shape and size. However, there were certain types of Demons that were more common, even frequently appearing in the Human Realm. Therefore, they were given names and based on the relative strength of the Cultivators, they would also be divided into Nine Tiers.

First Tier Demons had the strength similar to that of an Beginning Spirit Apostle.

Second Tier Demons possessed the strength of an Middle Spirit Apostle.

Third Tier Demons possessed the perfect strength of an Late Spirit Apostle.

Fourth Tier Demons had the strength of a Liquid Level Beginning Spirit Master.

Fifth Tier Demons had the strength similar to that of a Liquid Level Middle Spirit Master.

And so on. The Ninth Tier Demons could fight on par with peak Crystal Level existences and would not end up in a disadvantaged situation at all.

When the strength of these Demons immensely increased, it could be further advanced to a higher tier but when that time came, its name and form would naturally be different.

Based on the descriptions in the Book, the Flying Head was among the Fourth Tier Demons. Rumor had it that in the Barbarian Ghost Sect, the Nine Infants was a Seventh Tier Demon evolving from the evolved form of the Flying Head.

When Liu Ming saw the records in the books, he naturally felt aghast and confused.

Even though the Flying Head's performance in the secret realm was extremely impressive, no matter how well it performed, it did not possess the strength of a Liquid Level Spirit Master.

There was a huge disparity of two tiers between the Flying Head and the Nine Infants. However, the former could actually evolve into an existence as terrifying as the latter.

However, before he was able to refine the necessary Secret Techniques to be able to completely communicate with the Flying Heads, he was unable to make sense of all of this.

Liu Ming naturally would not idiotically ask these type of questions directly to Gui Ru Quan and company.

Otherwise, once they knew that the Flying Head and Demon Subduing

Chain had fallen into his hands, they would most likely want them back.

To him, these two objects could greatly enhance his strength. Great strength was life's fundamental guarantee. Naturally, he would not think to return it.

Once Liu Ming's thoughts reached this point, his mind unconsciously recapped the situation where he was summoned by Gui Ru Yuan and his two juniors.

When these three people learned that Shi Chuan failed to leave the secret realm, yet found out that Liu Ming was able to shine in the Life and Death Trial, with his last harvest even beating Yang Qian by a mile, their expressions could be said to have been abnormally complex. However, on the whole, it was natural that their joy dominated a large part of their expressions.

After all, with Liu Ming's performance this time, it was more than enough to let the Nine Infants faction emerge from the depths of the Sect.

The three of them rewarded Liu Ming with a few encouraging words. In addition, they gave Medicinal Pills for his extremely encouraging performance. They also implied that they would help him ask the Sect for a tenth of the harvest that he was rightfully supposed to receive and that Liu Ming wouldn't need to worry about such matters.

Originally, in the cave at the secret realm's entrance, the disciples handed over their resources along with the Sumeru Handkerchief initially granted to them. Everything was kept by the Sect Leader of the Barbarian Ghost Sect. The agreement to share the rewards equally by a tenth was naturally uniformly imparted after a round of discussion back at the Sect.

Liu Ming heard this and naturally thanked them endlessly.

However, with regards to the Secret Technique of communicating with the hearts of Demonic beings, he certainly discovered many techniques but most of them required Gui Ru Quan and the others to personally impart their knowledge for him to learn.

As a result, he could only focus his attention on the Secret Technique



called “Demonic Heart Method”.

This Secret Technique was considered a method to communicate with Demons but it could also be considered as a type of Mental Strength Secret Technique. Once used, not only does it enable one to communicate with Demonic Beings but also enables one to protect their conscious to a certain degree, allowing one to withstand mental attacks to a level.

A normal person was naturally not eligible to study this kind of Secret Technique, one that perfectly encompassed these two areas. They had to spend a set amount of Contribution Points in the Scripture Pavilion in order to receive the technique.

Liu Ming current Contribution Points were at zero and as such, this matter was naturally hidden.

These few days, Liu Ming could only wait for the Sect’s reward to be sent down. At the same time, he busied himself with refining the Demon Subduing Chain.

Normal Spirit Apostles, since they were not Spirit Masters, were unable to condense their Perception. As such, they could only operate one Totem at a time.

TL: Think of Perception as ESP with more uses

However, due to Liu Ming’s talent in multitasking, he could operate two Totems effortlessly at the same time.

As a result, when he was facing opponents, he could operate both the Cyan Moon Sword and Demon Subduing Chain at the same time. Presumably, with these two Totems, those below the level of Spirit Master, who could be considered his opponent, would be extremely rare.

As for the Jade Shadow Needle, due to the fact that its restriction layer count was so low, in normal circumstances, it could only be used as a killer ace. When facing an enemy head on, the effects it would have were not great.

While Liu Ming was contemplating, a delightful sweet female voice came from outside of the house,

“Is Disciple Bai here? Master Gui is summoning you to the mountain. It seems that the reward from the Sect has arrived.”

Liu Ming noticed that the voice sounded familiar. After a moment of consideration, realization dawned on him and he quickly replied, “Is that Senior Gu outside? I’ll come immediately.”

His tone dropped, and with a flick of his arm, the silver chain wrapped around him unraveled like a Spirit Snake, disappearing into his sleeves.

At this moment, he got up and pushed the door open to walk outside.

Liu Ming saw a beautiful and voluptuous woman standing in the outer courtyard. It was Gu Mei Shan, the woman of the Nine Infants Faction who attracted people’s attention.

“Junior Bai, I have yet to congratulate you. Hoho, Junior, this time it can be considered that you have established a great achievement for both the Sect and us, the Nine Infants. Your future is undoubtedly promising.”

“Perhaps, Master Gui will immediately promote you to the position of the top Senior.” Once the lady saw Liu Ming walk out, she immediately chuckled and spoke with praise. Her expression was still one of endearment.

Liu Ming was at first slightly startled, but he immediately recovered and smiled, politely replying.

“Senior is joking now. I am only lucky this time to be able to provide some contribution. How can I dare to be on par with the esteemed Senior Brothers and Sisters?”

“Junior Bai, the words that you have spoken are not truthful. You are young, yet when dealing with people, you are like a seventy or eighty year old man. Would you not say that this is too boring?” Gui Mei Shan replied, blinking with a look of some disapproval on her face.

Liu Ming smiled and didn’t continue saying anything.

Gu Mei Shan couldn’t do anything about his silence. Under such circumstances, she shot Liu Ming a glance before she took off first, flying

toward the peak of the mountain.

Liu Ming made a hand sign and followed close behind.

A tea's worth of time later, he appeared in the large temple on the peak of Nine Infants Mountain.

There, besides Gui Ruquan, Spirit Master Zhong, and Zhu Chi, Spirit Master Zhang from Poisonous Spirit Faction was also seated there.

"Master and Martial Uncles!" Liu Ming first directed his bow toward Spirit Master Zhong and followed through with paying his respects to the others.

"Cong Tian, get up. This time I've summoned you because the rewards that the few of you received have arrived. What more is that Martial Uncle Zhang has personally delivered them." Spirit Master Zhong looked at Liu Ming with a kind glance.

It was no wonder since it was not long ago that Liu Ming had been accepted as her Personal Disciple. Yet, he had already accomplished such a great achievement for the Sect and the Nine Infants, greatly raising her reputation.

Spirit Master Zhong was immensely pleased, causing her to unconsciously be a little more warm-hearted toward Liu Ming.

"This time, the disciples from our Sect that participated in the Secret Realm trial increased the face of our Barbarian Ghost Sect. Presumably, the Sect Leader will not be too stingy with his reward, right?" Gui Ru Yuan said with a smile, directing his words at the middle-aged Spirit Master.

"Senior Gui is joking now. Disciple Bai was nominated by Martial Uncle Yan as the disciple that should be greatly rewarded. How could the Sect Leader not add to the reward? Do not worry. As far as I know, Disciple Bai's reward is plentiful. I am afraid that it is in no way inferior to Martial Nephew Yang's." The middle-aged Spirit Master replied in a positive manner.

"If it is like this, let me first extend my gratitude to the Sect Leader on

behalf of Cong Tian.” When Spirit Master Zhong heard this, her face lit up.

“Hehe! Nevertheless, words of thanks still should be said after Martial Nephew Bai has seen the reward. To say it after is not too late either.” The middle-aged Spirit Master responded with a chuckle.

# Chapter 152: Wall of Shadows and Nihou

The middle-aged Spirit Master flipped one hand and pulled out two jade boxes the size of a fist, giving them to Liu Ming with a smile.

Liu Ming said his thanks and immediately received the jade boxes with some anticipation. He opened the lids as soon as possible.

Inside the jade box was a jade bottle that was as black as ink, and in the other one, there was a faint silver Token, with the word “spirit” engraved upon it.

“This is...” Liu Ming could not help but reveal an expression with some doubt.

Seeing it, Gui Ruquan instead smiled lightly and began to explain,

“Martial Nephew Bai, these two items are objects you need for breaking through to the realm of Spirit Master. If you were to use Contribution Points to exchange for them, it would be a matter you would not even think about unless you had tens of thousands of Contribution Points. Inside the black jade bottle is Pure Aura Qi. This object is absolutely necessary if you want to condense the Aura into Cultivation Qi to create your own qi that protects your body and allows you to become a Spirit Master. As for the Token, it is the object of authentication for entering our Sect’s Spirit Pool. Since it is a silver Token, it means you can enter for the time of a month.”

“So it is like this. Many thanks to Martial Uncle Zhang!” Hearing what was said, Liu Ming was extremely happy and carefully put the two items away.

“Junior Zhang, these items are all rewards our sect has given from previous Life and Death Trials. It doesn’t really match the “heavily rewarded” spoke of earlier.” At this time, Zhu Chi also joined the conversation with a smile.

“Junior Zhu, don’t worry. Other than these items, there are naturally other rewards. Martial Nephew Bai, as for the other rewards, the sect has

specially rewarded you three thousand Contribution Points and a chance to enter the Ancestor Hall to spend a night to comprehend the Wall of Shadows.” The middle-aged Spirit Master spoke again without hurry.

“What? A chance to spend a night to comprehend the Wall of Shadows!” With this, Gui Ruquan and the other two were all greatly surprised while Liu Ming’s Teacher, Spirit Master Zhong, even cried out involuntarily.

“Senior Gui, you also know, the power of the Wall of Shadows left behind by the Six Yin Ancestor all those years ago is low. If it were not for the fact that Martial Nephew Bai and Martial Nephew Yang managed to bring extremely great merit for the sect, Martial Ancestor Yan definitely would not have allowed the Sect Leader to use two chances at the wall.” The Spirit Master Zhang also spoke with a little jealousy.

Liu Ming, on one side, was extremely confused and did not know what this so called Wall of Shadows was at all.

However, since the Spirit Master Zhong did not even talk about the three thousand Contribution Points mentioned before, the wall was obviously worth far more than that.

“It looks like this time, the Sect Leader really has heavily rewarded the two of them. That Wall of Shadows is controlled personally by Martial Ancestor Yan, and according to the rules, only when disciples break through to become a Spirit Master, can they be allowed to comprehend it for a night. As for the matters regarding the Wall of Shadows, Junior should personally tell Martial Nephew Bai later. Don’t waste this chance for nothing!” Only after the surprised expression on Gui Ruquan’s face dissolved did he speak to Spirit Master Zhong with a serious face.

“That is obvious. I will explain the matter regarding the Wall of Shadows. Cong Tian, come to where I live tonight. I have other things to talk to you about. Now take your Identification Slit and let Martial Uncle Zhang transfer three thousand Contribution Points to you.” Spirit Master Zhong nodded her head seriously before instructing Liu Ming in such a way.

Hearing her, Liu Ming nodded his head, and took off the nameplate around his neck to pass to Spirit Master Zhang.

The middle-aged Spirit Master pulled out a short, golden stick from his chest. After pointing it at the slit a few times, he returned it to Liu Ming. He then said, "Those items from before are all rewarded to you from the sect. As for the reward of every sect for this Life and Death Trial, it is one-tenth of all the resources you have brought out from the secret realm. Now, the sect has two options for you. One is that no matter what spirit items you have brought out, you keep one-tenth of each object. If some objects cannot be separated, they will be broken into Spirit Stones of the same value. The other choice is, the resources are given to you as Spirit Stones, with the price slightly above the current market price. My personal suggestion is that Martial Nephew Bai should choose the latter. After all, most of the spirit medicines and resources from within the secret realm are items that the sect urgently needs. Only with the power of the sect can they be put to their real use. On the other hand, if these Spirit Items are in your possession, it might cause some unthinkable problems!"

"Hmph, there are still people within the sect that want to rob my disciple?" Hearing what was said, Spirit Master Zhong immediately gave a cold snort.

"Hehe, this might not be true. However, if they are people not in our sect, it cannot be determined so easily. Also, Martial Nephew Yang and the few others all chose the Spirit Stones. If Martial Nephew Bai chooses the Spirit Medicines all by himself, perhaps that is not too good." The middle-aged Spirit Master replied with a cold laugh.

"Whatever, since Junior Zhang has spoken like this, we should let Martial Nephew Bai also choose the spirit stones!" Gui Ruquan creased his brow a little and spoke with resolution.

"Since Senior has spoken like that, I have no opinion. Cong Tian, what do you think?" Spirit Master Zhong sighed before asking Liu Ming a question.

“I will naturally listen to everything teacher orders!” Liu Ming replied without any hesitation.

“Keke, very well. Here is forty-two thousand Spirit Stones that have already been converted. Martial Nephew Bai, please take them.” Hearing his response, the middle-aged Spirit Master’s expression changed. From his bosom, he pulled out a cloth bag and threw it across to Liu Ming.

Liu Ming raised his hand to catch the bag. After examining it a few times, he saw that there were twenty middle tier Spirit Stones. In addition, there were surprisingly four bluish-white Spirit Stones that were like jade. Their surfaces were extremely smooth and released a surprising aura that far exceeded a middle tier spirit stone’s aura.

“These are high tier Spirit Stones!”

It was Liu Ming’s first time seeing Spirit Stones at such a level, therefore, he could not help but brighten up. He gave the cloth bag a few extra glances before putting it away in the same manner as before.

“Good, the current matters have been completed then. I will take my leave first.” At this moment, the middle-aged Spirit Master stood up and said his farewell with a smile on his face.

Gui Ruquan and the other two naturally all stood up to see him off.

However, when they turned around again, Liu Ming took his leave discreetly.

After waiting for Liu Ming’s shadow to disappear from the area near the entrance, Zhu Chi retracted his gaze and suddenly gave out a sigh.

“Such a pity. If we could use Spirit Stones to exchange for the Spirit Medicines from Martial Nephew Bai, I myself could also use Spirit Stones. Why should we have to hand it all over to the sect? I have seen the Spirit Medicines that Martial Nephew Bai brought out from the secret realm this time. Within them, there are many Spirit Medicines that are of great use to us. Even if he only received one-tenth, who knows, we might have the chance to borrow their power to break through our current bottleneck.



“Forget about it. The Spirit Medicines Martial Nephew Bai brought back this time are indeed extremely precious. Martial Ancestor Yan and Senior Sect Leader would not allow them to be kept within their respective factions. However, on the other hand, if our sect really does use these resources, we will not necessarily miss the chance to gain some of these benefits.” Gui Ruquan heard this and shook his head.

“I hope so. However, now our Nine Infants Faction can be ranked in the top five factions because of Martial Nephew Bai’s performance. With this, for several years in the future, our faction will receive at least twice as many resources from the sect. We can relax a lot. However, the pity is that Martial Nephew Shi did not survive in the secret realm, otherwise our faction may have been ranked even higher.

“They were participating in the Life and Death Trials. Having people die is an extremely common matter. We can only say that Shi Chuan did not have enough luck. However, this time, we have also lost the Flying Head. This is a little unfortunate for Junior Zhong. The Flying Head was originally supposed to be given to Junior to use after it recovered its vigor.” Hearing what was said, Gui Ruquan’s expression became gloomier, and he spoke to Spirit Master Zhong in a somewhat apologetic manner.

“No problem. It is just, the Flying Head had been heavily injured years ago, and after being sealed for so many years, its strength has already fallen to below the Liquid Level. Waiting for it to recover its strength is a matter that would take an unknown amount of time. Otherwise, we would not dare risk it and give it to Martial Nephew Shi to use.” Spirit Master Zhong instead replied without a care.

“Even if the strength of the Flying Head fell even more, it is a Demon of the fourth tier. It also has the potential to become a Nine Infant, so how can you speak in such an uncaring manner. How about this, Junior Zhu Chi and I will go try to release the seal of that Nihou later. Although its strength is not as great as the Flying Head, it is still a Demon of the fourth tier. However, it may take some time to remove the seal, and when it will be tamed, Junior will experience great risks.” Gui Ruquan hesitated

a little and spoke to Spirit Master Zhong with such words.

TL: Nihou is another type of demon and has not deteriorated as much as the Flying Head

“What, senior is willing to give that demon to me!” Hearing what was said, Spirit Master Zhong was slightly startled.

“This is not the question of willing or not willing. Now that our faction has come out of a low state with great effort, the three of us, the seniors, definitely need to quickly increase our strength. Only by taking such measures can we maintain our current rank. The people in our sect that can control a demon of the fourth tier, other than me, is only you, Junior. The reason why I was not willing to give that Nihou to you before was because I feared that your cultivation was not high enough and you would be injured.” Gui Ruiquan explained with a cold smile.

“Relax senior, although I cannot say that I have one-hundred-percent confidence in subduing that Nihou with my current strength, it is still above seventy-percent.” Spirit Master Zhong replied with a light laugh.

“Junior having such confidence is naturally the best. Anyway, matters regarding Martial Nephew Bai will be handled by Junior. Although we do not like his chances of becoming a Spirit Master, he has brought great merit to our sect and faction, so Junior should encourage him a little more.” Zhu Chi chimed in while standing to one side.

“Senior Zhu does not need to say that. I know to do that myself.” Spirit Master Zhong replied without hesitation.

At night, Liu Ming once again left his sleeping quarters and returned to the area near the peak. He arrived in front of a building which had an elegant feel.

Before he managed to knock on the door, Spirit Master Zhong sent out a soft message.

“Have you arrived Cong Tian? You can come right in. I have already removed the restrictions on the door.”

“Yes, teacher!” Hearing what was said, Liu Ming’s heart shivered a little.

He replied respectfully and pushed open the door to walk in.

He saw, in the hall of the first floor, Spirit Master Zhong sitting in a chair with a book covered in white in her hand. It seemed like she had been waiting already.

Message from author (and me!): Demon's Diary (Mo Tian Ji) has finally entered the second book. Liu Ming will also returned to the world of mortals again and begin searching the mysteries around his identity.

# Chapter 153: Pure Aura Qi

Liu Ming stepped forward with respect before indifferently standing to the side.

“Very good, you came somewhat early. The reason why I called you here, aside from talking about the Walls of Shadows, was to discuss entering the Spirit Master realm. We have all discerned that you should have obtained something good from the Secret Realm as your cultivation has drastically increased since you entered the Secret Realm. It’s so noticeable that you are having Fa Li fluctuations. They are being dispelled because you cannot control the Fa Li well.” Spirit Master Zhong warmly explained.

“Teacher is all knowing. I truly did eat a bunch of Spirit Fruits in the Secret Realm, and my Fa Li has already increased to the peak of the Spirit Apostle realm. However, when I removed these Spirit Fruits, their effectiveness continuously leaked out and I was unable to bring them out of the secret realm.” Liu Ming hastily replied.

“There’s no need to explain this! Whatever benefit you obtained in the secret realm was due to your own destiny. Us elders and the sect will not question you. This is a tacit agreement between every sect. After all, there was an extremely high probability of you perishing in the Life and Death Trials. However, with your current situation, it’s best to wait a while and consolidate your new Fa Li before trying to break into the Spirit Master Realm.” Spirit Master Zhong waved her hands as she gave her reply.

“Many thanks for Teacher’s pointers, I know what to do.” Liu Ming’s heart relaxed and he spoke respectfully.

“Okay, I will discuss the matter of breaking into the Spirit Master realm a little bit later with you. Right now, I’ll talk about comprehending the Walls of Shadows. Before this, have you ever heard of this treasure?” Spirit Master Zhong composedly asked.

“Teacher, this is truly the first time disciple has heard of such an item existing in the sect.” Liu Ming blinked his eyes before replying.

“Yes, this is quite normal. Aside from us elders, only a handful of disciples that are not greater than ten within the sect, know about the Walls of Shadows existence. Moreover, before being told of its existence, everyone is prohibited from speaking about it. In order for me to give you a detailed explanation of the Walls of Shadows, you also cannot tell anyone else about this. Otherwise, there will be sect punishments.” Spirit Master Zhong said with a serious expression.

“Yes, I understand.” After hearing her, Liu Ming’s heart shivered.

“Okay, master will first talk about the Walls of Shadows’ history. This object was originally an unknown strange stone in the deep sea. Later, it was salvaged from the sea floor by the Sea Race before eventually falling into Six Yin Sect Founder’s hands that year. It is said that Sect Founder went into seclusion for a few years before finally comprehending the function and history of this object. He then searched out and found the most famous Formation Master on Yun Chuan Continent at that time. He then had him engrave a set of mysterious restrictions on it. Next, he left this wall in his normal cultivation room, no longer showing it to anyone else. This lasted until a few hundred years ago when Six Yin Sect Founder’s life was about to end and he finally gathered his sect’s disciples in front of him. In front of everyone, he illustrated his own history and the true usage of the Walls of Shadows Remnants.” Spirit Master Zhong suddenly stopped here.

“Sect Founder’s history and the true usage of the Wall of Shadows?” Liu Ming revealed an expression of suspicion.

“That’s right; according to what Sect Founder said, he had actually come from another continent’s large sect. Due to a special circumstance, he began wandering Yun Chuan Continent and didn’t return to his original sect. Without any better options, he started a sect, which is our Barbarian Ghost Sect. Sect Founder was limited by his sect’s oath and couldn’t pass on his true teaching to his sect’s disciples. What he passed down instead, were methods that he learned. However, when Sect Founder’s life was about to actually end, he was not willing to bury his teachings with him. They ultimately became part of the Walls of Shadows. He used the Walls

of Shadows to place a special restriction and leave a few Secret Method inheritances on it. In the future, if a disciple had the chance, he or she could comprehend some things from this wall by oneself. In this way, Sect Founder didn't technically break the oath he made before. You should now understand the value of the Walls of Shadows, right?" Spirit Master Zhong seriously questioned.

"Sect Founder originally was from another continent! Nonetheless, Teacher should have comprehended the Walls of Shadows before. What can be obtained from it?" Liu Ming was shocked for a long while before he finally opened his mouth and asked a question.

"According to the sect's rules, this Wall of Shadows can only be controlled by the person with the highest cultivation within the sect; moreover, a provision was laid down by Sect Founder which stated: aside from disciples who reached the Spirit Master realm or completed great merit for the sect, no one else has the right to comprehend this wall."

"This was because the Walls of Shadows has a finite amount of uses. Each time it is expedited to be seen by others, it will use up a portion of the energy inside it. When all of its energy has been depleted, that day will be the day when this treasure falls apart. After so many years, the remaining energy inside isn't too much. As for when it will fall apart, only the heavens know. Perhaps after you and Yang Qian view it, there may be a large chance that it will no longer exist in the next second. The year when I became a Spirit Master, I really did view this wall for one night; however, aside from a few indistinct shadows that flashed on the wall and feeling quite refreshed the morning after, I didn't obtain anything. When Martial Uncle Zhu looked at it that year, he had pretty much the same outcome. Actually, when your Martial Uncle Gui looked at it, he gained some insight and managed to resolve a large cultivation problem. As for others, they all achieved virtually the same results. A large portion of them were like your teacher and managed to see only a few indescribable shadows. A small portion of them were able to receive a few words. From this, they were able to resolve large cultivation problems. There have only been three to four people that have been able to find complete

Cultivation Methods or Secret Techniques from the Walls of Shadows. The Secret Techniques or Cultivation Methods they received are all included among the sect's most paramount Secret Techniques. With each generation, there are only a few people who can cultivate these techniques. Even the sect's so called Greatest Three Secret Techniques cannot compare with these. Therefore, what you obtain from the Walls of Shadows Remnants will completely depend on your own luck and destiny." Spirit Master Zhong spoke prudently with Liu Ming.

Liu Ming was naturally somewhat baffled after listening. However, after thinking awhile, he couldn't help but ask, "Since there have been this many elders who have looked at the Walls of Shadows and further obtained something, there must be some sort of rule for things to look for."

"This is what I'll advise you on now. Having so many people look at it before, the rules are out of the question. However, there really are a few publicly known methods to those viewing the Walls of Shadows in order to give them a better chance at comprehending things. Remember these methods well: first, before looking at the Walls of Shadows, one must be at peak mental condition. If his or her heart is somewhat pure, he or she can even take a bath and not eat for three days prior to the viewing. The second..." Spirit Master Zhong's firm words gave Liu Ming an understanding of methods and rumors to tackling the Walls of Shadows.

".... Finally, if you truly do obtain a Cultivation Method or Secret Method from the Wall of Shadows, there's no need for you to let the sect know about it before you have finished cultivating it." Spirit Master Zhong finally came to a stop, letting Liu Ming think about what was just said.

"Why is this?" He asked in an astonished manner.

"Because previously there have been people that looked at the Walls of Shadows and went somewhat insane, obtaining useless methods that couldn't be cultivated. Therefore, no matter what kind of comprehensions you gain at the Wall of Shadows, there won't be anyone who immediately questions you closely. When you can confirm that it is of some value, you can exchange it with the sect. Of course, as an equal exchange, you can

learn another Wall of Shadows' Secret Technique from the sect." Spirit Master Zhong explained it like this.

"So it was like this. Thank you for your guidance." After listening, Liu Ming suddenly understood a bit.

"Okay, I will speak about the matter regarding the Wall of Shadows up to here. Right now, I should talk to you about breaking through to the Spirit Master realm. How much do you know about liquefying True Yuan and condensing Aura into Cultivation Qi?" Spirit Master Zhong nodded her head before changing the topic with a question.

"With regard to liquefying True Yuan, I have read a bit about it in a few ancient books. It seems to be completely liquefying the gaseous True Yuan in one's Spirit Sea. From here, the amount of Fa Li that can be held will increase by over ten times and thereby allowing one to become a Spirit Master. As for condensing Aura into Cultivation Qi, this is a method of liquefying one's True Yuan. Only by dissolving Pure Aura Qi into one's True Yuan can one change the gaseous state of True Yuan into a liquid form; from here, Cultivation Qi will naturally come to fruition. Cultivation Qi is the most distinct indicator of a Liquid Level cultivator." Liu Ming pondered a while before saying most of what he knew.

"Yes, although you didn't say much, it was all extremely insightful. It's clear to see that you spent quite the effort beforehand; however, you should know what Pure Aura Qi is and that it can be divided into many different kinds." After hearing him, Spirit Master Zhong showed a slight smile on her face as she spoke.

"This... I truly am not too clear on this matter." Liu Ming hesitated before replying truthfully.

"Pure Aura Qi actually should be called Earthly Aura Qi. Its origin is a unique Aura Qi that was born in the ground and it possesses myriads of inconceivable, unique effects. It can also be divided into hundreds of thousands of different kinds. Dissolving True Yuan to compress Fa Li is the only common use of all these types of Pure Aura Qi. Therefore, the final Cultivation Qi you condense will be different depending on the Pure



Aura Qi you dissolve. There are a few Cultivation Qis that when condensed, possess defensive abilities that are stronger than normal Cultivation Qis. There are some Cultivation Qis that, from the day they were born, possess the ability to corrode other Cultivation Qis. There are even some Cultivation Qis that act as great amplifiers to certain attributes of methods. As far as I know, there even exists a Cultivation Qi that defies natural order. It is able to slowly and voluntarily purify Fa Li, so it has inconceivable effects on helping cultivation.” Spirit Master Zhong was extremely serious as she spoke.

Liu Ming was naturally dumbstruck as he listened.

“Although there are many different kinds of Pure Aura Qis, there are actually an extremely few number of Pure Aura Qis that can be found in the world; moreover, once they have been used, a few thousands of years have to pass before a new Pure Aura Qi is born. Pure Aura Qis that have extremely strong effects in the Cultivation Qi state are even more rare. Places where Pure Aura Qi can be born are normally called Aura Pits. When us sects choose where to set up, most of the time we will choose to build it on a Aura Pit in order to guarantee the sect’s long term flourishing.” Spirit Master Zhong explained in an informative manner.

# Chapter 154: Demonic Heart Method

“From the way you are speaking, there should also be a Aura Pit under the Barbarian Ghost Sect. Then the Pure Aura Qi Spirit Master Zhang left is...” After listening to her, Liu Ming realized something.

“Correct. It is because of the huge Aura Pit that our Barbarian Ghost Sect was picked to be built here. The Pure Aura Qi the sect gave to you before was taken from this Aura Pit. However, this Pure Aura Qi is the most common type of Yinwu Pure Aura Qi. After it has been refined into Cultivation Qi, it is only slightly denser than normal, and other than the ability to use slightly cold energy to injure your opponent, it does not have a wide range of a uses. However, even if that is the case, after so many years, there is not much Pure Aura Qi left in the Aura Pit at our sect. Now, only disciples that are especially outstanding, by reaching the peak tier of Spirit Apostle, can have their faction ask the sect for a serving of Pure Aura Qi for them. As for the other people, they can only use a huge amount of Contribution Points to exchange for their own Pure Aura Qi from the sect before receiving a chance to attempt to break through to become a Spirit Master. Only because the Life and Death Trials this time were extremely tough, did the sect decide to make it a reward for a few of you.” Spirit Master Zhong replied with a slight smile.

“With such an explanation from teacher, I finally understand. From what teacher has said, if I find other Pure Aura Qi from somewhere else outside, I can refine a Cultivation Qi that is even better for protecting my body?” Liu Ming thought quickly and asked such a question.

“That is naturally allowed. However, this is very unlikely to happen. Do you know how many Spirit Stones this portion of Yinwu Pure Fiendish Qi can be sold for outside?” Spirit Master Zhong at first nodded her head before shaking it.

“Please tell me teacher!” Liu Ming was stumped and asked.

“You would need thirty thousand spirit stones, and it is impossible to buy under normal circumstances. Pure Aura Qis that are slightly better

are commonly sold at a price that is several times higher. After all, there are too many Cultivators that need Pure Aura Qi. Also, if you fail in attempting to break through to Spirit Master, you will need to find a new portion of Pure Aura Qi to attempt to break through next time.

Additionally, when people attempt to break through to Spirit Master, if they can use an extra portion of two of Pure Aura Qi, their chances of success will also increase. The demand of this item can be imagined because of such a factor.” Spirit Master Zhong explained in such a way.

“Thirty thousand Spirit Stones.” Liu Ming did not even pay attention to the words spoken after the thirty thousand Spirit Stone price was mentioned. By that time, he had already forced a smile to appear on his face.

All of the Spirit Stones he gained from the Life and Death Trials while risking his life was just enough to buy one portion of Yinwu Pure Aura Qi. Looking at his own talent, he did not believe that he would be able to break through to Spirit Master with one attempt.

“This price is already cheap. After all, who knows how many Loose Cultivators, not in sects, and older disciples of various sects are willing to fight for a chance to break through to the realm of a Spirit Master. Anyway, I will stop explaining the matters regarding the Pure Aura Qi. Now, I will explain a few other matters that you must pay attention to when you attempt to break through to the realm of a Spirit Master. First of all, cultivators under the age of thirty have the highest chance of breaking through to become a Spirit Master. Once you have exceeded that age, one cannot say that you have no chance to become a Spirit Master successfully, but the situations in your Spirit Sea, meridians, and other places inside the body will be extremely different from before. Therefore, the likelihood of succeeding becomes extremely low. Also, whether you can condense the true yuan into liquid has a huge correlation to the purity of your Fa Li. If your Fa Li is at a certain level of purity, combining your true yuan with your Pure Aura Qi is naturally easier for you than other people. This is also the reason why your Martial Uncle Gui and I requested you to avoid using Fa Li increasing pills and other such

medicines as much as possible, and instead take one step at a time to steadily cultivate your Fa Li. A few special Spirit Medicines or Spirit Fruits, objects that are transformed from heavenly and earthly essence, give extremely pure Fa Li when taken and do not cause great problems. No matter if it is other pills or the flesh of monsters, they will all cause you great troubles in breaking through the bottleneck later. When that happens, it will be too late for regrets. If you spend a large portion of time to increase the purity of Fa Li, the time spent can easily exceed the thirty year old limit.” Spirit Master Zhong spoke with some depth to him.

TL: The levels of cultivation are Spirit Apostle then Spirit Master Liquid Level. Think of it like the change of state. True yuan is a gas gathered at the Spirit Apostle stage before being condensed into a Liquid to reach Liquid Level.

Hearing his teacher’s explanation, Liu Ming could not help but reveal a slightly awkward expression.

It was obvious that this teacher still believed that the reason why he could cultivate at such a speed was due to consuming Fa Li increasing pills.

“Also, even if you have not become a Spirit Master by the age of thirty, don’t be too depressed. I can think of thousands of Spirit Apostle disciples in our sect, but there are only thirty or so people that have become a Spirit Master. This is enough to show how hard it is to break through. It is almost one in a hundred. Even if you are a genius disciple like Yang Qian or Gao Chong, they are not a hundred-percent confident in becoming a Spirit Master, and only have a slightly better chance than other people. It is not like it has not happened in the history of our sect, where many genius disciples, that all the elders in the sect are optimistic about, do not even reach Liquid Level at all and can only spend their final years as a Spirit Apostle. Our sect has even once had a Crystal Level elder before, who had a fortuitous encounter at thirty years old, breaking through into the Liquid Level realm. Afterward, his cultivation level increased greatly, actually becoming an ancestor like Martial Ancestor Yan in the end.” Spirit Master Zhong spoke a few sentences to Liu Ming to

comfort him.

“Many thanks for what teacher has said. I will definitely remember it!” Liu Ming replied respectfully.

“Very good. Other than those two important conditions, there are a few other areas that you cannot ignore to break through to Liquid Level. For example, when you attempt to break through to Spirit Master, there must be no disturbances. At the same time, the thicker the heavenly and earthly Yuan Qi in the location you attempt to break through, the better your breakthrough will go...” After nodding her head, Spirit Master Zhong explained a few other unignorable problems to Liu Ming in detail.

Liu Ming naturally paid attention and memorized them.

An hour later, only after Spirit Master Zhong had explained everything to Liu Ming, did she allow him to leave.

On the morning of the second day, Liu Ming left where he lived and went to the Scripture Pavilion to use almost a thousand of his newly gained Contribution Points to exchange for the “Demonic Heart Method.” He then went to the Gray Market to buy a pouch for demons that was of average quality from another disciple.

This pouch could naturally not be compared to the Cultivating Soul Pouch, but at least it was better than having the Flying Head and the White Bone Scorpion squished together everyday.

The following month, Liu Ming did not go anywhere at all and spent all the time practicing his newly gained technique.

After all, the situation created when he subdued the Flying Head from before was just too abnormal. Every day Liu Ming could not find out the reason would be another day where he could not really relax.

Although the Contribution Points needed to exchange for the Demonic Heart Method was a lot, it was actually an extremely easy method for him to cultivate.

Liu Ming cultivated to Initial Spell Mastery in such a short period of time, which was enough to communicate with the consciousness of the

Demon according to what was written down.

As a result, on the morning of this day, he made sure his mental strength was in good condition. He then slapped the newly bought leather pouch with one hand and a cloud of black air immediately emerged out of it. After rolling and condensing, it transformed into the Flying Head.

The Flying Head originally had an extremely frightening expression, but after moving its eyes and seeing Liu Ming, it immediately became extremely calm. With a slight movement, it flew up close to Liu Ming in a well-behaved manner and lay on the ground without moving.

Liu Ming squinted his eyes a little before quickly forming hand signs with his two hands without saying anything further. Black gas immediately rolled out of his body, and at the same time, technique seals shot out from his fingers, all disappearing into the male head with a flash.

At this moment, Liu Ming raised his hand and moved it away. The black air wrapped around the Flying Head, and with a blur, Liu Ming pressed his hand onto the top of its head, causing it to slowly close its eyes.

In the next moment, the blood-colored inscription on the Flying Head's forehead began to flash crazily and its eyes became blank.

Exactly the time it takes to drink a cup of tea later, Liu Ming suddenly opened his eyes and removed his hand from the top of the Flying Head.

"What is this? What do you mean there is another extremely strong owner inside the body of the owner?"

Liu Ming mumbled while staring at the Flying Head. However, he had an extremely unsettled and bewildered expression.

His casting of the technique before should have been extremely successful, but from the results of the communication of consciousness, he only received half an answer that was relevant to what he had asked. Other than the fact that he had felt that the Demon was wholeheartedly respectful of him.

Liu Ming thought for a while with his brows tightly furrowed and once

again cast the technique to communicate with the consciousness of the Flying Head. He was slightly unwilling to accept the answer.

However, he received the same answer.

Luckily the two times when he had cast the technique, he came to understand why this demon of the fourth tier had such a low strength.

The demon was actually heavily injured in the past years and was always sealed. It had only recently regained its freedom, which was why it had become so weak.

However, Liu Ming was extremely happy with its unfortunate situation.

As long as the Demon could recover its former strength, he would immediately have an additional Liquid Level helper.

It was a pity that he never obtained the method to recover all of the Demon's injuries in those communications.

Sleeping for a long time could help its recovery become slightly better. It had also named a few weird names which Liu Ming never even heard of, so it was needless to mention that they would not be of help.

It seemed like this matter could only be discussed in the future when there was a special encounter or chance.

Liu Ming thought like this, and with another hand sign formed with one hand, he pointed at the Flying Head.

With a "peng" sound, the demon transformed into a cloud of black gas again, disappearing into the leather pouch.

In the remaining time, Liu Ming thought hard about what the meaning of the sentence the Flying Head had said actually meant.

The pity was that this matter really had no start or finish. After thinking for a while, there was no end result, and he could only throw it to the back of his mind with a cold smile.

Afterward, he thought a little more. He then pulled out a silver Token and a black jade bottle from his sleeve.

These two objects naturally were the objects of authentication for entering the Spirit Pool within the sect and the portion of Yinwu Pure Aura Qi that had been rewarded to him.

Liu Ming played around with the two items in his hands separately before falling into deep thought.

According to what he had originally thought, as long as his cultivation level reached the peak of the Spirit Apostle realm, he would naturally immediately attempt to break through to the Spirit Master realm. After all, the earlier he could become a Spirit Master, the earlier he could really stand up in this world of cultivation.

However, after hearing what Spirit Master Zhong had said, Liu Ming could not help but begin hesitating in his heart!



# Chapter 155: Dragon Scale Armor

He knew very clearly himself that although his Fa Li was much more pure than an average disciple's, according to the fact that he was a Three Spiritual Pulse disciple who cultivated this Dark Bone Method of unknown origin, perhaps he did not have too big of a chance in successfully breaking through to a Spirit Master.

However, according to the areas his teacher had told him in the end to be aware of for breaking through to Spirit Master, one of the areas mentioned was that every time there was a failure in breaking through, the Spirit Sea would be heavily injured. Even if one could have more Pure Aura Qi, he would not have the chance to attempt to break through again in seven or eight years.

With this, he became even more hesitant at heart.

After all, according to the few methods that could increase the chance of breaking through to Spirit Master from what Spirit Master Zhong had said, he could not be counted as especially prepared.

Even if he really could break through in his first try with luck, the Yinwu Pure Aura Qi provided by the sect was just too ordinary and if he really had used it to form Cultivation Qi, it would definitely greatly affect his future strength.

However, on the other hand, he had greatly offended Gao Chong, who was an Earth Spirit Pulse Disciple. If Gao Chong became a Spirit Master especially early then perhaps his future days at the Barbarian Ghost Sect would be too good.

For official matters, Gui Ruquan, Spirit Master Zhong and the other people would definitely shelter him but Gao Chong only needed to do some actions secretly and that would be enough to cause Liu Ming to find it extremely difficult to cope.

However, if Liu Ming tried to tackle becoming a Spirit Master too hastily, once he failed, his situation would be much worse than right now.

Liu Ming played with the thing in his hand as he quickly thought of everything and carefully weighed the consequences.

If he had enough time, he could definitely prepare one or two more portions of Pure Aura Qi. Then, he could use much of his wealth to buy a couple of pills that help break bottlenecks. Or, he could risk it and wait a couple of years for the mysterious bubble to purify his Fa Li by a lot again.

With the fact that he had Fa Li that was much more than a normal Peak Spirit Apostle, he could probably withstand the extraction from the mysterious bubble. Then with another Fa Li purification, the purity of his Fa Li could jump up. It could at least make the success of his breakthrough rise by at least ten to twenty percent. With a couple years, he had enough time to find other and more suitable Pure Aura Qi.

If Gao Chong became a Spirit Master first, Liu Ming could be able to take a patrol or guard mission that took a couple of years and gave him a chance to leave the sect.

Missions like these were quite simple but gave an incredible amount of Contribution Points. The only trouble was that during the timer period that Liu Ming was away from the sect, the resources that he would have access to and the Yuan Qi needed to train would be incomparable to when he was in the sect. This would greatly affect his cultivation. Thus, those disciples that wanted to become a Spirit Master under the age of thirty were not willing to take such missions.

However, this all was not a factor for Liu Ming.

His Fa Li was already at the peak Spirit Apostle level and he didn't need to cultivate again to increase his Fa Li. Thus, no more how bad the cultivation environment was, he didn't need to care.

Instead, he could use this time to slowly purify the Fa Li in his body. Then, when the mysterious bubble exploded, the purity of the Fa Li would be at a purity that was impossible to believe. From there, breaking through to the Spirit Master would be much more probable.

Liu Ming thought left and right and finally came out with that solution.

With a gnash of his teeth, he decided to pursue it.

“If I really have a couple of years, perhaps I can go look at that secret. With my current ability, although it wouldn’t be without worries, it should be more than enough to explore that place while staying alive. In addition, its time for me to end the business with Bai Clan and Uncle Qian...” Liu Ming muttered to himself as a flash of cold light appeared on his face.

With Liu Ming’s status as someone who just made a large contribution to the sect, his act of impersonating the Bai Clan person would not be punished too hard. However, he couldn’t delay in confessing to his crime since once time went on, his contribution to the sect would also be forgotten.

After Liu Ming closely thought about his plan, he felt that there were no problems. With that, he let out a light breath and suddenly patted a protruding spot on his arm.

“Pu!” A wound opened up and from within came a milky white mini conch.

It was the Sumeru Conch.

Liu Ming took the object and placed it at the center of his palm to look at it closely. Suddenly, he smiled and said to himself:

“Sumeru Conch. I never knew that this would actually be a treasure of the Sea Race. I wonder how it went to the hands of that Scarlet Dragon. Whatever, no matter what happens, it has profited me.

Liu Ming had investigated the origins of the object by flipping through many ancient records and finally understood the origins of this object. With that, he was naturally overjoyed.

Next, Liu Ming took out a Glyph from his body and with a wave, it turned into a thin white light barrier that covered everything within a dozen feet from Liu ming.

Then, Liu Ming made a technique and expanded the Sumeru Conch. With a flash of the silver inscriptions on the conch and a white light, a

jade box and the well-preserved dragon shell that was a couple feet long began floating in front of Liu Ming!

With a wave of his hand, the jade box shakily landed in the hands of Liu Ming.

Liu Ming then opened the lid of the jade box to show a light gold piece of dirt, it was the gold Resting Dirt that he had found.

and carefully examined it. Then, he put it back as if he had thought of something.

Liu Ming then carefully took out the dirt from the jade box and after a close examination, he seemed to have thought of something as he put it back.

The gold Resting Dirt was worth more than a couple hundred thousand Spirit Stones. It could have been said that the worth of this object was only second to the Scarlet Dragon shell.

However, Liu Ming did not know what to do with it.

After all, if such a treasure was sold with through some regular market or store, it would naturally be impossible.

He did hear someone say that there would be some markets that did some auctions periodically and normally, these auctions had good reputations and would not inquire about the identity of the seller. If Liu Ming really wanted to exchange the Resting Dirt for Spirit Stones, this was definitely not a bad choice.

In addition, if there was no way else, Liu Ming could think of taking this object to the rumored Sea Race Market. If he was lucky, he would be able to exchange it for something that he needed.

Liu Ming thought like this and the Sumeru Conch flashed in white light as it once again stored the jade box. Liu Ming then turned his gaze to the Scarlet Dragon shell.

With a grab of his hand, the shell lightly flew over and landed in his hands.

Liu Ming's finger started to move and slowly slid across the shell. With this, he clearly felt the toughness within each scale.

In terms of value, the gold Resting Dirt was chump change compared to the shell.

A complete Crystal Level Serpent Dragon shell; it could be said that there wouldn't be a second one of these in the entire Yun Chuan Continent.

What was unfortunate was that this could not see the light of the day. If this shell was auctioned off here or even sold at the Sea Race's Market, the Barbarian Ghost Sect along with the other large Sects of the country would all suspect every one of the disciples that participated in the Secret Realm. In addition, they would be furious and immediately start searching for answers.

With this, when the Crystal Level Cultivators decided to use some techniques that could draw one's soul out, he could not guarantee that he could still keep the secret.

As for the Crystal Level Cultivators, although the Scarlet Dragon Shell was quite precious, what they looked more closely at was the Essence Blood of the dragon that could help them increase their Fa Li and break through bottlenecks. However, Liu Ming had no such things and once the cultivators found out that Liu Ming had the shell, they would definitely think that Liu Ming had other parts of the dragon. At that time, he would be stuck between a rock and a hard place without being able to explain anything.

Liu Ming thought of these possibilities and even though he was quite strong willed, his heart could not help but feel a chill. For every day that he did not have the power to contend with the Crystal Level monsters, he could not take the shell out to show anyone.

In addition, the Scarlet Dragon shell was an incredible treasure; even without special refining, the defense that came with it was almost unreal. Normal Spirit Masters couldn't even pierce through it.

If Liu Ming didn't take advantage of having such a great treasure, it

would be a big regret.

Liu Ming thought about it some more and kept looking over the dragon shell in his hands. Suddenly, his eyes lit up as he stared at the individual small scales that were sparkling red.

Although he couldn't take out the entire dragon shell, he could definitely take advantage of the scales.

Without hesitation, Liu Ming twisted his wrist and the Cyan Moon Sword appeared. Immediately, he flicked it at one of the scales on the shell.

“Pu!”

A scale that was the size of a grain jumped off of the shell and the moment it came off, red light flashed as the scale expanded to the size ten times large and was now the size of a thumbnail.

Seeing this situation, Liu Ming became excited. With flashes of his short sword, he flicked off more than thirty scales from the shell before stopping.

Then, Liu Ming took one of the scarlet scales and with a light flick of his finger, the sword in his hand sliced down at the scale.

“Dang!”

With a flash of cold light, the Cyan Moon Sword actually bounced off of the scale and was not able to cut it open at all.

Liu Ming became much more excited with this discovery.

Liu Ming then put away the short sword and took off his clothes. Then, he took off the Glyph armor that had already served its use and was no longer useful. Then, he measured the scale at his chest and placed it onto his skin. With that, he furrowed his brows, obviously not too comfortable.

However, Liu Ming obviously disregarded this. Thinking, he stood back up again and started searching through the wood chest that was in the corner of the room. He actually found an incredibly soft hide of an unknown animal.

Liu Ming placed the hide over him and stuck the scale on the hide. After shaking around somewhat, he showed a satisfied expression.

Liu Ming then found a thin animal tendon from the chest and took out the green short sword again. He then started slashing at the hide with great proficiency.

# Chapter 156: Marriage

In a couple of moments, the hide was cut into a simple shape. Then, Liu Ming placed away the sword as he grabbed the hide up. With his other hand, he took the animal tendon and slightly shook it.

“Sou!”

The front end of the tendon trembled as it became completely straight. Then, a slight black gas twirled around it before the tendon immediately started to weave through the edges of the hide like a snake.

With a couple of breaths, Liu Ming pinched the remaining animal tendon off. When he grabbed onto one corner of the hide and shook the entire thing. Surprisingly, the hide transformed into a crude hide armor.

Although the hide armor’s shape was quite odd, it protected the heart along with a couple of vitals.

Liu Ming then wore the armor tight on his skin. After trying it, he showed an expression of content.

This kind of a simple hide armor creation was something that he had learned while surviving for many years on Savage Island. He was surprised that despite not using it for years, he could still pick it back up..

Then, Liu Ming tugged the hide off of him and with a beckon, he grabbed another scale. His other sleeve suddenly waved as a green light shot out. After circling around Liu Ming once, it then obediently fell into his hands.

It was the Jade Shadow Needle.

Liu Ming’s finger moved as he tightened his grip onto the needle. After taking a deep breath, he stabbed the needle at a scarlet scale in his other hand.

An ear piercing sound was emitted from the scale!

All that Liu Ming was able to see were green flashes that sparked from between the needle and the scale. It was as if the needle was stabbing



steel.

In the time it took for to drink a cup of tea, with a “pu” sound, the Jade Shadow Needle finally pierced through the scale.

Liu Ming cracked open his mouth and shook his slightly sore finger. Then, he threaded the animal tendon through a hole in the scale and started to sew the scale onto the hide.

Moments later, the scale was tightly attached to the animal hide.

Liu Ming used his finger to lightly tug the scale and when the scale showed no sign of falling off the hide, he showed a satisfied expression.

Like this, with the remaining time, Liu Ming used the Jade Shadow Needle to pierce through all of the scarlet scales.

Even though these scales were the weakest on the entire dragon shell, Liu Ming still took quite a bit of effort to pierce through every single one of them.

A couple of hours later, when Liu Ming sewed the final scale onto the animal hide, a crude and simple scaled armor was before him.

This hide armor was slightly different from other armors in that the density of scales was greater in regions around vitals. In other places, there were only a couple of scales.

It wasn't that Liu Ming was not willing to use extra dragon scales but rather because if there were too many scales on the hide armor, it would definitely affect the mobility of Liu Ming.

After all, this wasn't a true armor that was refined by a blacksmith and the scales on the hide had not been specially treated which meant that they were rigid rather than flexible.

However, even like this, Liu Ming was very satisfied.

He believed that this armor was essentially another life for him. Even when he met a strong opponent that he couldn't defeat, with the armor, he did not have to fear losing his life.

However, the aura of the dragon had yet to be cleansed. Otherwise, once

Liu Ming wore the armor out, a lot of people could sense the aura and immediately hone in onto him.

Thankfully, Liu Ming knew a Spirit Liquid that specialized in eliminating the aura of monsters.

The formula of the Spirit Liquid was also extremely simple. All Liu Ming had to do was find a couple of medicinal herbs and mix them together to create the liquid. It was so simple that some people even sold completed versions of the liquid in the Grey Market.

It looked like Liu Ming had to run to the Grey Market tomorrow.

Liu Ming thought like this as he first stored the hide armor and the Scarlet Dragon shell back into the Sumeru Conch. With another flick of his sleeve, the light barrier that surrounded him started to shatter into pieces. Then, Liu Ming simply closed his eyes and went back to cultivation.

....

In the morning of the next day, Liu Ming had already gone to the Grey Market and in his hands was a completed Spirit Liquid.

Liu Ming had quite great luck and as soon as he got to the market, he found a disciple selling the Spirit Liquid.

However, right when he excitedly flew towards the Nine Infant Mountain to go back to his dwelling, another grey cloud flew up and came straight for him.

Shocked. Liu Ming paused and focused his gaze on the grey cloud flying at him.

In moments, he showed a face of understanding.

“Junior Bai, it has been a long time. You are truly a busy person now. For us to go the Nine Infant Mountain to meet you is quite difficult seeing how your faction’s disciples all stopped us from doing so. “ The person incoming shook a couple of times before flying near Liu Ming. With a smile, the person said with some blame.

It was actually Mu Xianyun!

“Senior Mu must be joking. I only recently got back and had some things to take care of which was why I told my seniors that if someone came looking for me, they should tell them to check back at another time.” Liu Ming cupped his hand and said with an apologetic tone.

“So it’s like that. No wonder. Junior took the entire sect by surprise this time and definitely gained some benefits from the Secret Realm which would naturally mean that you are busier now. However, this time, I have quite urgent matters that I must tell Junior. Do you have some time right now?” When Mu Yunxian heard this, her expression was quite complex as she looked at Liu Ming and slowly said.

“Senior, why are you acting so foreignly. How about this, this place is a little too obvious. Why don’t we go down and discuss this.” Liu Ming slightly smiled and made a response without the slightest hesitation.

Mu Yunxian naturally had no objections and thus, both of their clouds landed among a rocky region below.

“Junior Bai, did you know that Mingzhu had been taken to the Mu Clan a couple days ago by my brother?” The moment Mu Yunxian opened her mouth, she gave a big shock to Liu Ming.

“What do you mean by this senior?” Liu Ming’s smile faded as he asked.

“Looks like junior really is unaware of this matter. Did you know that after Gao Chong came back from the Secret Realm to the sect, he has been in secluded cultivation. It is rumored that he is making preparations for breaking through to the Spirit Master level. Ever since he went into cultivation, the Sect Leader did not allow Mingzhu into the Blood Control Mountain. In addition, he sent word to the Mu Clan saying that Mu Mingzhu’s servitude to the sect has been released.” Mu Yunxian said with an odd glint in her eyes.

Liu Ming did not respond after hearing these words. Instead, her brow furrowed.

“Junior, relax. Even if Gao Chong really wants to go to the Spirit Master

level, he won't be able to be ready so quickly. I estimate that it will be three months to half a year before he can truly start trying. In addition, the whole process of transforming True Yuan into liquid will take at least a year." Mu Yunxian smiled as she said.

"I naturally understand this argument. However, this time, Senior Mu trying to find me wasn't only because of this matter right." Liu Ming said calmly.

"Of course not. Even if I didn't say those things, I believe that Liu Ming would have figured out soon enough. What I wanted to talk to you about is that after the Bai Clan knew that you gained a spot among the top ten Core Disciples in the sect, they contacted the Mu Clan to set a time for the marriage between you and Mingzhu. It will be in half a year." Mu Yunxian said with a bitter smile.

"What, set a date. Did your Mu Clan accept?" This time, Liu Ming's face really changed.

"Originally, my brother was quite hesitant. However, once he heard you entering the Life and Death Trials, he immediately agreed and the two clans used the quickest speed possible to send out wedding invitations to friendly clans. Truth to be told, once you became the top ten disciples in the sect, I thought that your Bai Clan would reject the marriage. After all, with your status in the sect, Mingzhu is a couple levels away from you. Bai Clan could definitely find another female disciple that has a Spiritual Pulse as their daughter-in-law. However, your clan seemed ever more hurried than our Mu Clan with how they set a wedding date. Junior Bai, is there something that I don't know?" Mu Yunxian's face was slightly strange as she asked.

"Something hidden! Of course there is something, however, it is not too convenient for me to tell senior. For now, looking at the situation, it seems like I have to go back to the Bai Clan." After hearing what Mu Yunxian said, Liu Ming could neither cry or laugh in his heart. He could only keep a calm expression on his face as he calmly replied.

"Since junior has trouble telling me, then I won't be forcing it. However,

I want to ask junior one thing, will you really marry Mingzhu as your wife?" Mu Yunxian was silent for a moment before asking with some seriousness.

"Probably not. After all, the person Mingzhu wants to ask is not me and I similarly don't have many feelings towards Mingzhu." Liu Ming winced his eyes before lightly replying.

"I understand. That's a pity, I originally really looked forward to you and Mingzhu's marriage. However, for the marriage, I really can't say much to the Mu Clan side. You will have to deal with this yourself Junior Bai." Mu Yunxian didn't seem too surprised after hearing Liu Ming's words and instead lightly sighed.

"Alright, since Senior can understand my situation, that is for the best. In addition, I may possibly leave the sect for quite a while very soon. Senior Mu should take care of herself. The time is not early and I'll be heading back." Liu Ming saw how calm the girl was and was quite surprised. He nodded before saying words of leave.

Mu Yunxian naturally did not obstruct him and watched Liu Ming summon a grey cloud to fly towards the Nine Infant Mountain.

At this time, Mu Yunxian also flew into the sky and headed in the opposite direction.

This time, she only flew a small distance before landing inside an area of small forests.

"Yunxian, how is it? Did Junior Bai agree to marry to Mingzhu." A youth with a grim face walked out of the forest and showed a lot of concern on his face.

It was Du Hai from the Baleful Yin Faction.

"As expected, Junior Bai would not marry Mingzhu." Mu Yunxian gave a bitter smile as she replied.

"What, now that Bai Chongtian thinks that his status is greater than before, he actually dares to do something like going back on the marriage agreement!" Du Hai heard this and immediately showed some anger.

“This is something that we can’t blame Junior Bai for. The marriage was originally added onto them by our two clans and he had never said something like marrying Mingzhu. Imagine if it was you, you probably wouldn’t want to marry a girl that had someone else in her heart. In addition, this girl’s status and your don’t even match up.” Mu Yunxian shook her head and replied.

# Chapter 157: Leaving Sect Mission

“Even if that is the case, this marriage was also agreed to by the other party’s father. Whatever the circumstances, the Bai Clan also has to take responsibility before resolving the matter.” Du Hai replied with a scoff.

“Based on Junior Bai’s current position in the sect, I am afraid that the whole Bai Clan is going to rely on him. As for whether this engagement is going to be broken off, it all falls on his word in the end. Moreover, speaking of this matter, I am actually the one who is greatly indebted to Junior Bai. After all, if I had not forcefully dragged him into Ming Zhu’s matters, he would not have been forced to leave the sect and prepare to temporarily avoid Gao Chong.” Mu Yunxian replied with a bitter smile on her face.

“What? Junior Bai wants to leave the sect?” This time, it was Du Hai’s turn to be shocked.

“That is correct. This small junior of ours is actually a smart person. Liu Ming knew that he was definitely unable to fight against Gao Chong once the latter had advanced into Spirit Master. Only then did he prepare to distance himself from this place.” Mu Yunxian said with some hint of seriousness in her tone.

“That is also true, but as a result of that, Junior Bai might have to neglect his cultivation for awhile. He should have just achieved the later stage of Spirit Apostle not long ago. For him to cultivate to the stage where he could break through the Peak Spirit Apostle, I fear that it would only be possible in many years’ time.” Du Hai slowly spoke after the color of his face changed multiple times.

“Yes, I also think so. However, even if Junior Bai has cultivated enough, based on the qualifications of the Three Spiritual Pulse, the probability of becoming a Spirit Master is still extremely uncertain. If he has failed to break through to the level of Spirit Master, Junior Bai cannot possibly be wandering outside his whole life and never return to the sect from then on. When it comes to that time, it will really be the worst of his times.”

Mu Yunxian sighed.

“The state that Junior Bai is in definitely is not as optimistic as I thought it would be now that I’ve heard your words. No wonder you are not bothered about him breaking off the engagement. But this way, it would not have any effect on Mingzhu, right? If Junior Bai breaks off the engagement, will Gao Chong look for Mingzhu once he comes out of training?” Du Hai nodded and asked a question.

“You do not have to worry about this. Even if she does not get married to Junior Bai when she returns to the Bai Clan this time, I will urge Brother to immediately find another marriage partner for her, so that she can be married off in the fastest time possible.

“Then after Gao Chong becomes a Spirit Master, unless he really has no sense of shame, he would not do something like stealing the wife of others.” Mu Yunxian suddenly said with a sneer after hearing what Du Hai had to say.

“So this is the idea that you have come up with. This is not all too bad. However, that Gao Chong going into secluded cultivation this time, are the chance of him breaking through to the level of Spirit Master really that great? Everyone even thinks that after he is done with the cultivation, he will definitely advance into the realm of Liquid Level.” After Du Hai slightly pondered for a while, he suddenly retorted with a question.

“Disciples such as you and I cannot comprehend the frightful talent of the Earth Spiritual Pulse. But since the higher ups in the sect believe that it is so, most people would not doubt its authenticity. There should be at least more than a seventy or eighty percent chance in his breakthrough.” After thinking about it, Mu Yunxian replied in this manner.

“Seventy or eighty percent chance that he can become an advanced Liquid Level Spirit Master! Tsk tsk, if you and I are also able progress up to this point, our life expectancy will also immediately be greatly increased.” A color of envy could not help but to flash across Du Hai’s face.



“Based on your qualifications, there might be a shred of possibility in the future. In my case, however, I have been stuck as a Middle Spirit Apostle for many years and there surely is no hope for me in this life.” Mu Yunxian listened, but her face turned gloomy.

Seeing this, Du Hai immediately regretted his words and quickly rushed forward to put his arm over Yunxian’s shoulder while streams of comforting words came out of his mouth. Only then did Mu Yunxian feel a little better.

The duo continued to discuss a few things, and then proceeded to take flight, flying away from the forest.

.....

Once Liu Ming returned to the Nine Infants Mountain, he landed in the area of his dwelling and entered his room, tearing open a Glyph.

A light immediately flashed and a layer of separating light barrier appeared once again.

Liu Ming sat down within the light barrier and started to quietly consider the contents of what Mu Yunxian had previously told him.

Once the Bai Clan knew that Liu Ming had already become one of the top ten disciples of the Barbarian Ghost Sect, they even dared to establish the marriage between Liu Ming and Mu Mingzhu without even greeting them. If it was not because both the head of the Bai Clan and that daughter of the head had a problem in their heads, thinking that they could tie the knot between him and the Bai Clan, then it would have to be that something had happened to the Bai Clan that he did not know about, forcing the Bai Clan to do such reckless things under the circumstances.

Comparing both scenarios, he felt that the probability of the latter happening was slightly greater.

However, the matter was still quite simple. He believed that he could resolve any problem with any clan with his current abilities. He had already decided that he would completely resolve the matter with the Bai Clan after he left the sect this time, and the other party had merely given

him a formidable excuse.

Liu Ming had already devised a strategy and placed that matter at the back of his mind. Using one of his hands to reach into his sleeves, he took out a small bottle that was a few inches tall. He then stood up and went to the nearby corner to find a rather large wooden basin, pointing at the inside of the basin with a one-handed sign.

As small dots of blue light appeared in the basin, water balls poured out of thin air, turning into half a basin's worth of clear water.

Only now did Liu Ming remove the bottle cap and pour out a small ball of grey liquid from within. The moment it came in contact with the clear water inside the basin, a pungent smell was discharged and at the same time, the clear water turned strangely cloudy.

Seeing this, Liu Ming's face conversely revealed a pleased expression.

Only now did Liu Ming pat his arm, once again taking out the Sumeru Conch. He then recited an incantation, directing his Fa Li into it.

After a moment, the Sumeru Conch flashed with a white light and that dragon scaled hide armor immediately spiralled out, falling into the basin.

Liu Ming moved both his hands and shoved the hide armor deep into the turbid liquid. After that, he retracted his arm, closed his eyes and began cultivating at the side.

After six whole hours, Liu Ming opened his eyes and took the hide armor out of the wooden basin with one hand. His other hand made a hand seal and clumps of water appeared in the air, washing the hide armor clean of any impurities.

A strange scene appeared!

Following the disappearance of that pungent smell, the scales on the hide armor with the Scarlet Dragon's aura actually disappeared without a trace, as if it was being washed away.

Under these kind of circumstances, even if there were people who had

personally seen the hide armor, they would not be able to link this somewhat ugly and simple armor with dragon scales from the Scarlet Dragon.

Liu Ming was naturally ecstatic. After he directed a portion of Fa Li into the hide armor, steaming hot gas emitted from the hide armor and it actually dried the armor that was originally wet.

Liu Ming then shamelessly removed a few outer layers of clothing and stuck the hide armour onto his body. After that, he put his clothes on again and stood up, moving his limbs. Once he felt that there was nothing hindering his movement, he was immensely pleased with the result.

.....

On the second day, Liu Ming went to the Duty Hall and spent a few Contribution Points to request to head out for a period of time. He then immediately left the sect quietly, heading for the nearest Wei Zhou Market.

Time passed from one day to the next in this manner.

After a month, Liu Ming once again returned to the sect after being worn out from his journey. The two unusable Totems in the Sumeru Conch had already been turned into a few tens of thousands of Spirit Stones, only leaving behind that light blue token of unknown usage.

Meanwhile, the leather pouch at his waist that had been initially used to temporarily store the Flying Head had also been exchanged for an abnormally exquisite black coloured leather pouch. On the whole, it appeared that there was a hint of black gas emitting from it, indicating that it was obviously not a treasure that lower in grade compared to the Cultivating Soul Pouch.

There were even more Glyphs, Pills and other consumables in his arms and even in the Sumeru Conch. These items had cost him nearly more than ten thousand Spirit Stones.

This time, when Liu Ming returned to his residence, he first rested for

multiple days and after which he only went to the Duty Hall on a morning.

Liu Ming stood under the crystal mission monument located in the large hall on the second floor. He seemed to be undecided, as his gaze constantly scanned the bottom ten or so missions that seemed to have been there for a long time.

Even though he had purposely picked a very early time, there were still seven or eight disciples that had come to receive their missions. In fact, it was obvious that some people had recognised Liu Ming. This amazed them and they could not help but whisper to their nearby companions.

Soon after, all the disciples knew of Liu Ming's identity. They looked at him with envious and awestruck expressions, as well as different kinds of gazes which all gathered towards his body.

Liu Ming naturally felt these searing gazes. He suddenly turned around and with a precise glow in his eyes, he swept a glance over all of the disciple.

Once these disciples came in contact with Liu Ming's gaze, they suddenly felt a slight chill run down their spines. This greatly shocked them, and one by one, they averted their gazes.

Only then did Liu Ming once again turn his head around, still standing in front of the Crystal Monument as he pondered in silence.

Among the long-term missions that required him to leave the sect that were being offered out, he could only consider three of them.

One was that the Barbarian Ghost Sect had recently received a Spirit Stone mine from the Hall of Blood and needed a few inner sect disciples to guard it for a few years.

The other was that there was a temple on the border between the Kingdom of Xuan and the Black Water Country. The temple master was quickly approaching his life expectancy, and a new disciple needed to go over to take over the role of as the master of the temple.

The last mission was in the capital of the Da Xuan Country. A

supervising disciple representing the Barbarian Ghost Sect had suddenly disappeared and cut off all contact with the sect. Therefore they needed a new supervising disciple to take care of these duties and find the former's whereabouts at the same time.

Among these three missions, the first mission was unquestionably the easiest.

Since the Hall of Blood had taken the initiative to hand over that Spirit Stone mine, they would naturally not send their men over to create a disturbance before the next competition. If he was to hold the position of a guard for the mine, the four years would pass by peacefully. But this way, his plans of handling his own matters and accumulating Pure Aura Qi would mostly be crushed to smithereens.

Any Spirit Apostle disciple could assume this position.

However, the second mission was considered to be somewhat risky.

After all, the various sects in the Kingdom of Xuan and the sects in the Black Water Country had always been hostile to one another for a long time. Even though a large scale battle had yet to break out between both parties, the cultivators from both countries battling each other at the border was a common occurrence.

However, with risk came reward. If Liu Ming could become the temple master of the temple, he could be considered quite high ranked. As long as he carried the name of the Barbarian Ghost Sect, not only would he have a considerable amount of underlings, even dominating that section of the country would not be a difficult mission. If he had really secured the position of temple master, even Gao Chong would not be able to openly confront him for a long period of time, even if he had become a Spirit Master.

Naturally, this position was very popular and the expectations towards the disciple who held the post was also extremely high. Not only did it seem to accept only a Late Spirit Apostle, but the disciple was also required to pay an enormous amount of Spirit Stones to the sect every year. Failure to do so would mean that the disciple would be unable to

keep their position, on top of having to face severe punishment from the sect.

Finally coming to the last mission.....

Once Liu Ming's gaze fell on said mission, there was a thoughtful expression on his face.

# Chapter 158: Supervising Disciple

The risk with the last mission was the largest.

This was because Xuanjing was a place where every kind of person was present. In addition, the various sects had an agreement with the royal family of the Da Xuan Country where no sect would control Xuanjing, the capital of the Da Xuan Country. As well as another agreement that stated, any cultivators above the Liquid Level were not allowed to step within the city.

In order to ensure that these rules were enforced, each sect would leave a supervising disciple that would keep other sects in check and find out if any of the rules were broken.

With these rules, Xuanjing became the perfect place for Loose Practitioners and cultivators from other sects. Even some Demonic Cultivators and cultivators that had run away from their sects would change their identity to enter Xuanjing. In addition, they would form groups and conceal themselves within the city.

Thus, the supervising disciples of the sects were seen as a threat to them and would frequently experience things such as assassinations or mob attacks. They were so bad at one point that quite a few of the supervising disciples of the sects died in just a single year.

Things like this caused the sects to be extremely angry and join together to comb through the entire city of Xuanjing quite a few times. Although they were able to kill all of the Demonic Cultivators and killers, the supervising disciples did not dare to flagrantly appear within Xuanjing. They also changed their identities and concealed themselves within Xuanjing.

By taking precautions, the supervising disciple of each sect naturally insured their life.

However, even like this, the supervising disciples of Xuanjing were still in a very dangerous position. It was natural for a disciple to die every one or two years, and there were very few people that could last all four years

of the position to return to the sect unharmed.

Of course, with such a dangerous mission, the rewards from the sect were also quite plentiful. As long as one finished his or her four year tenure, one would get over ten thousand Contribution Points, enough to exchange for a portion of Pure Aura Qi.

Furthermore, a requirement for this position was that the disciple had to have a cultivation of at least a Middle Spirit Apostle.

After all, the main purpose of the supervising disciple was not to fight with others, and instead was meant to observe the movements in Xuanjing.

The main reason that Liu Ming was tempted by this mission was because the location of the mission actually corresponded with the secret place that he needed to explore. Also, once he entered Xuanjing as a supervising disciple, not only would he have freedom of movement, but all sect influences on him would disappear so he would have absolute secrecy in what he did.

Although Xuanjing was full of Demonic Cultivators, the most famous illegal market and some extremely private auctions of the entire Da Xuan Country were situated within the city because of people like that. There would often be treasures that would make the hearts of Spirit Masters beat faster. There might even be the Pure Aura Qi that Liu Ming coveted.

As for the danger of being the supervising disciple, Liu Ming trusted that as long as he changed his identity again and was slightly more careful, he would not be in danger of becoming the target of others...

Plus, as long as his opponent wasn't a Spirit Master, there weren't many cultivators that could defeat him with his current strength.

As for the first and second mission, the restrictions on them were slightly too large and would hinder his future plans.

Liu Ming quickly thought through things and weighed the pros and cons of the missions before finally deciding. He immediately walked to the stone desk to accept the mission.



“What, Junior Bai wants to take the four year Xuanjing supervising disciple mission!” The Enforcer behind the stone desk knew Liu Ming, and after hearing what Liu Ming wanted, his mouth opened wide. At the same time, his face was full of shock.

“What, can I not meet the requirements?” Liu Ming smiled as he asked.

“It’s not that. However, with Junior Bai’s current status, why would you need to take such a mission? Although Junior is powerful, if you really go to Xuanjing, it will still be extremely dangerous.” The middle-aged Enforcer could not help but remind Liu Ming.

“The danger of this mission has been outlined on the mission monument. It is alright, I think that I can handle these things.” Liu Ming would not back down because of such words, and he insisted with light words.

“If Junior Bai really wants to pick this mission, I naturally cannot stop you from doing so. However, the position of supervising disciple is not a normal position. Once Junior takes this mission, you must also go meet Martial Uncle Lei from the Heaven’s Secret Faction. Martial Uncle Lei is the person who specializes in being responsible for the supervising disciples in each region. If he feels that you are not fit, then Junior will still not be able to take this mission. In addition, information about the previous supervising disciple and the token that represents your status will be given to you by Martial Uncle Lei.” The middle-aged Enforcer said this and took Liu Ming’s nameplate. He then tapped it lightly a couple of times with a short stick and handed it back to Liu Ming.

“Thank you Senior for your reminder. I’ll go to Martial Uncle Lei right now.” Liu Ming took back his nameplate and thanked the Enforcer.

In the following time, Liu Ming left the Duty Hall, and summoned a gray cloud to rush to Heaven’s Secret Mountain.

In a little while, Liu Ming appeared at the bottom of Heaven’s Secret Mountain and was stopped by two disciples that were patrolling the mountain.

“Junior Bai wants to meet Martial Uncle Lei?” The two disciples were

both Spirit Apostles with not bad cultivations that obviously participated in the Large Competition. Immediately, they recognized Liu Ming, and after hearing the request, they showed a difficult expression.

“What, is Master Lei not on the mountain?” Liu Ming asked with confusion.

“That’s not it. Recently, Master Lei has not been in a good mood and would not easily entertain guests.” A Heaven’s Secret disciple paused for a second before he responded.

“Oh, if that’s the case, could I trouble you two seniors to go tell Master Lei. Just say that I have recently taken the supervising disciple mission, which is why I’ve come to meet Master Lei.” Liu Ming’s heart slightly dropped after hearing that and was still extremely courteous in his words.

“Hehe, if it was someone else, we would not dare to take the risk of offending Master Lei. However, Junior Bai has made a large contribution to the sect and Master Lei might make an exception.” The two Heaven’s Secret disciples looked at each other and one of the disciples immediately smiled as he replied.

Hearing this, Liu Ming voiced his thanks.

Thus, a Heaven’s Secret disciple flew to the peak of the mountain while the other started chatting with Liu Ming about what happened in the Secret Realm.

Liu Ming naturally gave half-truths as to the things that he had found in the Secret Realm and left the Heaven’s Secret disciple quite interested.

In the end, the disciple that flew up the mountain came back down after the time it took to drink a cup of tea and replied with a smile toward Liu Ming, “Junior Bai has quite large face. When Master Lei heard that it was Junior coming, he quickly accepted.”

Hearing this, Liu Ming was extremely happy.

In the following time, Liu Ming followed this Heaven’s Secret disciple and flew to the mountain top.

Heaven's Secret Mountain was much steeper compared to the Nine Infant Mountain with many areas full of steep cliffs. Normal paths didn't work and Outer Sect disciples could only scale the mountain with ropes.

Liu Ming curiously watched these Outer Sect disciples before looking to the peak of the mountain.

In moments, he and the Heaven's Secret disciple landed before a silver hall at the peak of the mountain.

Directly above the door of the hall was a large plaque which had the golden ancient words of "Heaven's Secret."

Beyond the silver hall, there were quite a few towers of varying size that were vaguely visible.

"Master Lei is already inside. All Junior Bai needs to do is enter. I still need to patrol the mountain and won't be accompanying you." At this point, the Heaven's Secret disciple turned around as he spoke with a smile.

"Thank you very much. Senior can go back to your work." Liu Ming slightly bowed and once again thanked the disciple that brought him.

As the Heaven's Secret disciple went back down the mountain, Liu Ming tidied himself and walked through the doorway with a calm expression.

The entire hall was fifty to sixty feet wide, and at the end of it was a chair. A man wearing a colorful robe currently had his back to Liu Ming and was watching a huge silver sword that was used for decoration purposes. His unmoving body actually gave people a feeling of a strong and solid mountain.

"Disciple Bai Chongtian greets Martial Uncle Lei." Liu Ming walked close and made a deep bow as he greeted his Martial Uncle.

However, the colorful-robed person simply kept watching the huge sword on the wall as if he didn't hear anything.

Liu Ming secretly opened his mouth as he maintained his bow with a respectful expression kept on his face.

Time slowly passed by and the two of them stayed still as if they were statues. The whole hall kept quiet also.

In the time it took to eat a meal, the colorful-robed male's shoulders lightly twitched as he finally turned around. It was that "Martial Uncle Lei."

However, after Spirit Master Lei took a couple of glances at Liu Ming, he sat down and lightly said, "Not bad, no wonder you are one of the disciples that was able to rise above within the trials. As expected, your state of mind is quite good. However, with only a good state of mind, it probably wasn't enough to walk out of the Secret Realm."

"Martial Uncle Lei is correct. My luck was also quite good to have been able to safely leave the Secret Realm." When Liu Ming heard Martial Uncle Lei's tone being faintly ill-willed, his heart skipped a beat. However, he still kept a reverent attitude.

"Your luck is quite good! Are you saying that my nephew Lei Zhen's luck is not good? That's the reason why he was not able to walk out of the Secret Realm?" When Spirit Master Lei heard this, his face immediately darkened.

"Of course not, I would never dare to think that way." Liu Ming sighed in his heart. On the surface he kept his humble demeanor.

"Hmph, if it was only strength, then my nephew's lightning attribute cultivation method does not lose to any of the top ten disciples. However, the five people that walked out of the Secret Realm did not include him. I'm very curious, as the Nine Infant Mountain's disciple who has the highest praises in the sect, how much strength do you have?" Spirit Master Lei narrowed his eyes as he coldly said.

"Martial Uncle Lei's meaning is..." Liu Ming slightly furrowed his brow as he carefully asked.

"It's very simple. My mood during these past few days has been quite bad, and I need to find someone to test my attacks. I don't care why you have come to find me. If you cannot take my next attack, run back to wherever you came from!" Spirit Master Lei displayed a violent expression

on his face as he roared out.

When Liu Ming heard this, his face immediately changed. After a couple of seconds, he gave a bitter smile as he said, “Martial Uncle must be joking with me. With Martial Uncle’s cultivation, I could never take a single hit.”

# Chapter 159: The Third Month

“Relax. I will definitely not use Fa Li that is in the realm of a Spirit Master for this attack. If you are not willing to accept it, I will not force you to either. You can leave now and I will take it as if you had never come to find me.” Spirit Master Lei listened and spoke in a cold manner.

Once Liu Ming heard these words being spoken, his heart went cold. He naturally understood that by saying “had never come to find me,” the other party was obviously not going to agree to any further requests.

Thus, his mind quickly spun a few times in thought, and in the end, he slowly straightened his body while speaking in an extremely serious manner, “Since Martial Uncle must test this disciple’s abilities, then this Martial Nephew only dares to request for Martial Uncle to make his move.”

“Heh, very good. This is the right way to go. If you manage to receive my attack without any problems, I will first agree to it regardless of what the task is that you have come to find me for.” Spirit Master Lei said with a sinister laugh. His arm moved and a finger suddenly slowly moved toward Liu Ming.

Watching him closely, Liu Ming did not dare neglect any of his movements and quickly formed a one-handed technique. Countless black gas surged out of his body, forming countless tentacles that were wildly dancing about. At the same time, he used his other hand to pat his chest and three black dots of light appeared in a flash, forming a black light shield in front of him.

It was during this time that the faint lightning on Spirit Master Lei’s finger flashed and what seemed like a thin electrical thread shot out from the tip of his finger. In the next moment, a lightning sound rumbled out and it turned into a huge Lightning Python the thickness of a bowl, heading straight for Liu Ming.

The Lightning Python had yet to actually attack but there was already a burnt smell in the air.

Without any further thought, a green light appeared in Liu Ming's hand. The Cyan Moon Sword appeared in an instant and wildly hacked out three Sword Qis in a blur.

Liu Ming's other hand cut through the emptiness and six green wind blades simultaneously appeared. They flashed again and produced "chi chi" sounds as they shot out.

After a few dull sounds, multiple wind blades sliced the Lightning Python's body. Other than making the Lightning Python freeze for a moment, the wind blades shattered amid a crackling sound.

At this moment, three misty green Sword Qis combined into one and struck the Lightning Python's body.

After a loud rumbling sound, both of them burst apart in the empty sky at the same time.

The green Sword Qi intertwined with the silver lightning arc in an instant. After the thunderous sound rang out, the lightning arc tore the green Sword Qi to shreds amid the frenzied flashings of light. The remainder of the lightning flashed again, cutting at the black light shield in front of Liu Ming.

The color in Liu Ming's face changed. Raising his arm, he spread his fingers out and pressed the shield of light. At the same time, the Fa Li in his body madly surged out.

Even so, the black shield of light could only be sustained for two breaths, after which it shattered open with a crisp sound.

However, it was during this time that the remainder of the lightning arc became the thickness of a thumb, whereas the protective black gas on Liu Ming's body, that was once tentacles, had turned into wildly dancing ghosts all of a sudden.

When the sound of lightning once again rang out, the remaining lightning arc and all of the tentacles were destroyed as they simultaneously fell to pieces.

Liu Ming could not help but pale significantly. It was obvious that the

series of actions had consumed most of his Fa Li. Even so, he had finally managed to receive this attack from Spirit Master Lei.

“Not bad. As expected, you have some skills. No wonder you dared to incur the wrath of Gao Chong for a woman. It counts as a pass this time. Speak, what is it you have come to see me about?” Spirit Master Lei watched the scene before him and his expression gradually softened. There was even some hint of a praise within his words.

“Many thanks to Martial Uncle Lei. I have come forward this time because I have accepted Xuanjing’s supervising disciple post. Hence, I have specially come forward to pay my respects to Martial Uncle.” Liu Ming heard this and his heart relaxed. Even so, he dared not be discourteous and replied respectfully.

“Xuanjing’s supervising disciple? That position is extremely difficult and hard to execute. Seeing as you accepted this mission, it means that you have no intentions of breaking through to the realm of a Spirit Master any time soon. If that is the case, leaving the Sect is a wise move. If not, once Gao Chong has successfully broke through the Liquid Level, your days in the sect will indeed not be pleasant ones.” Spirit Master Lei listened to what Liu Ming had to say. Not only was he actually not too surprised by it, he instead nodded his head and replied as such.

“Then Martial Uncle Lei has agreed to this my request!?” Liu Ming naturally asked gleefully.

“Since you were able to receive this attack of mine, it was enough to believe you can fend for yourself for more than a few years in Xuanjing as long as you are careful. However, if you really want me to agree to your request, you must also agree to a condition of mine.” Spirit Master Lei pondered for a while before responding.

“Please state it, Martial Uncle. If it is something that I am able to do, I will definitely do my best.” Liu Ming paused for a moment and quickly replied after a change of mind.

“It is very simple. Once you go to Xuanjing, I need you to do me a small favor. In my former years, before I had become a Spirit Master, I owed an



old friend a great favor. That old friend has long since passed on but his descendants have moved to Xuanjing and have met with some trouble lately. They have asked for assistance with something bringing a keepsake that I left with them when they helped me. I am sure that you are clear about the agreement that our Sect made with Xuanjing many years ago. As a higher up in our Sect, I am unable to break the rules and personally go to Xuanjing. In addition, the few disciples by my side are either preoccupied with other businesses or have not cultivated to a high enough level, hence I equally do not feel safe sending them to Xuanjing. Therefore, you could help me resolve the trouble faced by the descendants of my old friend if you assume the role of supervising disciple in Xuanjing.” Spirit Master Lei slowly said.

“I see. Martial Uncle need not worry. If it is within my capabilities, I will definitely help Martial Uncle repay this favor.” After Liu Ming heard this, he pondered the request for a second, and without further consideration, he made a promise.

“Very well. I am also very optimistic about your abilities. This is the Xuanjing’s supervising disciple’s token and a few pieces of information regarding this post. Yes, even the information about the previous supervising disciple that went missing is contained within. You should have a good look at it once you get back. Moreover, once you have received the token, you must rush to Xuanjing within three months to assume the post. If you do not, you will be heavily punished by the Sect.” Spirit Master Lei nodded his head and took out a white square jade token as well as a jade slit from his sleeve, handing them over to Liu Ming.

“Yes, I will definitely rush to Xuanjing within three months.” Liu Ming received both items and replied with a serious look on his face.

“There is nothing else. You can head down first. I still want to be left alone.” Spirit Master Lei finished talking and leaned against the back of the chair, once again closing his eyes as he ignored Liu Ming.

Even though Liu Ming thought it was slightly strange. After bowing, he respectfully left the big silver hall.

“Senior Lei, are you really planning to hand Xuanjing’s supervising disciple post to Martial Nephew Bai? If Gao Chong becomes a Spirit Master, it is uncertain as to whether he might hold a grudge against Senior because of this.” A silhouette swayed from a pillar in the corner and a graceful figure actually walked out of it.

That figure was the Spirit Master Lin Caiyu from the Dancing Ghost Faction that had the beauteous appearance of a twenty-year-old.

“Junior Lin, I know that you wish to recommend a disciple to assume this role, but Xuanjing’s previous supervising disciple is also considered to be capable among all the disciples. But he actually disappeared without a trace, we can only see that the waters in Xuanjing are deepening. Does Junior really think that the disciple that you recommend will be more suitable than Martial Nephew Bai?” Spirit Master Lei opened both his eyes and glanced at the beauteous woman, only replying to the first part of the question.

“That is also true. The disciple of mine is also approaching thirty years of age, and decided to go to Xuanjing in order to fight to obtain a portion of Pure Aura Qi. Since Senior Lei had fixed his mind on Martial Nephew Bai, please think as if I had not mentioned such a thing. Rather, it is Senior who has been cooped up in this mountain because of the matter with this child, Lei Zhen, even not attending the Sect Leader’s regular meetings. This is probably not too good!” Lin Caiyu said with a small smile.

“Hmph, it seems that recommending a disciple is secondary to Junior Lin. The truth is that you have received orders from the Sect Leader to help me.” Spirit Master Lei lightly spoke with a grumpy voice.

“Our relationship within the Sect is the friendliest. If the Sect Leader does not make me do it, who else would they get to do it?” Lin Caiyu asked without feeling mistaken in the least.

“Then Junior Lin should reply to the Senior that there is nothing wrong with me at all. Even though Lei Zhen’s fall has made my mood sour, it has not lead me to put off proper matters with regards to the Sect. After

all, if I was really unwilling to do it in the first place, I could have come forward and prevented Lei Zhen from entering that Secret Realm. Since I have lost the bet, I naturally have to bear responsibility for the outcome that occurred because of it. The Lei clan will definitely not languish because of one genius disciple's fall." Spirit Master Lei said indifferently.

"Good, Senior's words will do. I will first reply like that to the Sect Leader." Lin Caiyu heard this and her face brightened up.

"That is right, how did the the Sect Leader treat the matter between his proudly placed disciple and Martial Nephew Bai?"

Seeing as the lady was about to leave, Spirit Master Lei opened his mouth and asked this one question.

"The Sect Leader has actually raised this matter with me once before because Senior Gui, Senior Zhong, and company have been dragged into this matter. It is not right for the Sect to interfere directly with this matter, hence they could only send the female disciple who brought about this conflict between the two back to her clan. The remaining matters can only be resolved by their own accordance." Lin Caiyu's pigmented eyebrows frowned as she replied.

"Hmph, it seems that no matter how much Martial Nephew Bai has contributed to the Sect, the Sect Leader still choose to favor his own disciple. What is this "let things flow by their own accordance?" If Gao Chong becomes Spirit Master in the future, Marital Nephew Bai simply will not have the power to oppose him." Spirit Master Lei listened and said with a hmph.

"Ahem, this matter is quite difficult for Sect Leader. After all, the chances of Gao Chong becoming one of us are quite high with his qualifications, to the point where there is a shred of possibility that he might become a Crystal Level cultivator. Even though Martial Nephew Bai has established great success for the Sect and the Sect has already rewarded him handsomely, the fact that he only has a Three Spiritual Pulse means that his talent is a little too low. Even if he does have the Heavenly Spirit Body of Intelligence, if he does not become a Spirit

Master, there is no future for him in the end. The Sect Leader cannot suppress a disciple that has the capability of becoming the sect's powerhouse in the future just because of a Spirit Apostle. Therefore, what the Sect Leader is doing now is already the limit of what he can do. Letting Martial Nephew Bai leave the Sect now might also be a good thing. Perhaps, after Gao Chong advances into Spirit Master, this resentment between the both of them will be quickly stashed to the back of his mind." Spirit Master Lin explained with a stern look on her face.

"If you are talking about the Gao Chong from three years ago, I might not have believed it. Based on his current temper... Hehe, forget it. I similarly do not wish to get too deeply involved in this matter. However, if Gao Chong really holds some sort of grudge against me because of the small matter with the supervising disciple, does Junior think that such a small thing would bother me!" Spirit Master Lei sneered and replied.

# Chapter 160: Observing the Wall

“With senior’s status in the sect, Gao Chong would still have to be obedient before you even if he becomes a Spirit Master. However, the reason for Gao Chong’s drastic attitude change was due to two things. One was himself and the other was because he cultivates the cultivation method of the Sect Leader. Although the method is quite intricate and can allow one to have a great foundation at the Spirit Apostle level, it has a very violent effect on one’s temper. One can only wait until the Spirit Master realm where one passes the human cauldron stage before their temper slowly recovers, and the new human cauldron is being picked out by the Sect Leader right now.” Lin Caiyu smiled as she explained a couple of things.

“Junior, you do not have to explain any more. How Gao Chong turns out to be in the future does not have that great of a relation to me. Even if he really cultivates to the strength of a Crystal Level in the future, that would be the time that I would most likely not exist. It is getting late and Junior Lin should really be heading downhill. I really do need to be properly left alone.” Spirit Master Lei waved his hand and spoke indifferently.

Hearing his response, Lin Caiyu could only laugh bitterly as she took her leave.

Liu Ming who had returned to his residence was playing with the square jade supervising token in his hands.

The token had delicate Spirit Inscriptions at the edges of it and the word “supervising” was printed on one of its faces. The other face had “Barbarian Ghost Sect” printed on it, and when Fa Li was inserted into it, there would be six different colors of restrictions that would float up.

The object was actually a Low Tier Totem.

However, there was a hint of a contemplating look that appeared on his face after Liu Ming saw the vision presented by the object in his hands.

This token looked extremely similar to the light blue token that he had

obtained from that half Serpent Dragon. The only difference was that their grades were nothing like one another.

Liu Ming concluded that the light blue token was an item that was usually used to represent some sort of identification. However, why would such an object appear on that half Serpent Dragon monster?

Even though Liu Ming was ever so cunning, he did not think that there would be those from the Sea Race appearing in the secret realm. In addition, he wouldn't think that the light blue token of theirs would coincidentally fall in the half Serpent Dragon's hands after they had been killed by it.

After he played with said token for a while, Liu Ming took out the jade slit and stuck it on his forehead. He started to use his Mental Strength to have a look at what was stored inside the jade slit.

Fifteen minutes later, Liu Ming removed the jade slit from his forehead and on his face was an exceptionally serious expression.

"I would have never thought that Xuanjing would actually be this complicated. Even the figures of foreign races have appeared within the city before. However, since I have already made my preparations, there is naturally no reason why I should cower when the time comes."

Liu Ming muttered a few sentences before proceeding to ponder silently for a long time. After pondering, he put away both the token and the jade slit. He made a hand seal with both his hands and closed his eyes, regulating his breathing.

Three days later, before the mountain valley located behind the main peak of the Barbarian Ghost Sect that was marked as a prohibited area, Liu Ming stood with his hands behind his back at the entrance with a serious expression on his face. There was a five-foot-long Snow-White Leopard lying on a haystack not far away, curled into a ball as it snored loudly, deep in sleep.

After an unknown period of time, there was the sound of footsteps coming from within the mountain valley. A yellow-gowned boy who did not seem to be older than eleven or twelve years old walked out.

He walked in front of Liu Ming while smiling and saying, "Senior Bai, Martial Uncle has given you permission to enter the valley tonight to comprehend the Walls of Shadows. However, you must wait outside the mountain valley during the day. When it is night, I will guide you to the where the Walls of Shadows is located so that you can observe it."

"Many thanks. I will be waiting nearby during this time." Liu Ming listened with glee, and after he thanked the boy, he found a big tree near the mountain valley and sat cross-legged beneath it.

Since he had already decided that he was not going to return to the Barbarian Ghost Sect for many years, it was naturally impossible for him to forgo the opportunity to comprehend the Walls of Shadows. Therefore, after many days of recuperating and building up his energy, he went to the prohibited area where Martial Ancestor Yan was at to request for a night of comprehending the Walls of Shadows.

However, the only pity was that Liu Ming had originally wanted to conveniently pay his respects to this Martial Ancestor Yan, but he seemed to have no intention of seeing a Spirit Apostle disciple alone and had only sent this boy who was guarding the valley to agree to Liu Ming's request.

At this moment, the yellow-robed boy sat down beside that Snow-White Leopard and pressed himself against the furry body of that beast. Not long after, he actually fell sound asleep.

Liu Ming was secretly amazed by what he saw.

That Leopard gave Liu Ming a kind of extremely dangerous oppressive feeling while this yellow-robed boy's cultivation level did not seem to be that high. The fact that the duo could actually interact in such an intimate level was really unbelievable.

However, Liu Ming quickly gathered his thoughts and closed his eyes as he started cultivating.

Time slowly passed and when the sky was finally about to darken, the boy who had slept soundly for a whole day finally turned his body and climbed up from the Leopard's body. After drowsily stretching himself, he grinned and waved to Liu Ming, "Senior Bai, it is almost time. I will now

guide you to where the Walls of Shadows is located.

However, Senior must stick close to me when returning to the valley. If you do not and if by chance you touched the restriction that Martial Ancestor has personally set up, there would be great trouble in store.”

“Naturally. Junior should feel free to lead the way.” Liu Ming listened and immediately opened his eyes, standing up as he replied.

Even though the boy before his eyes seemed to be young, there was an extremely abnormal feeling coming from him. As a result, Liu Ming did not dare to slight him.

Soon after, the boy brought Liu Ming along a white pebbled path to the mountain alley, but he left that Snow-White Leopard outside the valley to keep watch.

All that could be vaguely seen from both sides of the path was gray-colored fog. Within that fog, there were many things that resembled trees and mountains. If one were to look close and hard, they would feel that these things were a patch of black and could not be clearly seen at all.

Liu Ming followed the boy as they seemed to pass through a pond and a jungle. After turning and twisting many times, they finally arrived in front of a cliff that was as straight as a pencil.

At the lowest point of the cliff, there was a green-colored stone door that was wrapped in a faint white light.

The boy raised his hand and retrieved a token from his arms. After lightly swinging it in the direction of the stone door, a silver light shot out, and with a flash, the light merged with the stone door.

After a moment, a white light on the surface of the stone door suddenly appeared as the door hummed loudly. After flashing madly a few times, the light disappeared into thin air with a “pu” sound.

“Senior, please remember that you only have one night’s worth of time. When the restriction on the stone door disappears once again tomorrow morning, you must come out.”



Also, the Martial Ancestor has already activated the Walls of Shadows. You can immediately observe it once you enter, but please remember that the Walls of Shadows is the Sect's treasure and you absolutely cannot use your hands to touch it. If you do not keep your hands off and if by chance they are damaged in the slightest, you will be severely punished by the Sect." The boy's expression changed and he spoke with an immeasurably serious expression on his face.

"Relax, Junior. How could I dare to violate the rules?" Liu Ming solemnly replied.

The boy listened and nodded with a pleased expression. He walked one step forward and slowly pushed the stone door open. He then turned around and directed a "please" in Liu Ming's direction.

After Liu Ming took a deep breath, he strode through the stone door.

When he entered within, the stone door automatically closed behind him. At the same time, a light flashed across its surface. When the white light disappeared, the stone door was restored to its original state.

After Liu Ming shook his head, he carefully sized up everything in his surroundings.

He was suddenly in a stone house that was more than three hundred feet wide. The floor and four walls were made out of white rocks that seemed to be immeasurably solid. Other than a blue crystal wall that resembled a screen located in the middle of the room and a light yellow futon that was left in the corner, there was nothing else in the room.

Liu Ming's expression faltered as he headed straight for the crystal wall at once, slowly circling it multiple times.

This crystal wall was not too big for it was not over twenty to thirty feet wide and was only around a foot thick. However, once Liu Ming glanced at it with both his eyes, he suddenly felt that his vision was filled with a light blue light. When he wanted to look at the wall in greater detail, he immediately felt a strange dizzy feeling.

Liu Ming was slightly surprised and quickly shut his eyes to cut off eye-

contact. Only after he felt slightly better did he reopen his eyes.

Learning his lesson, Liu Ming did not dare to look at this Walls of Shadows again. Instead, he walked with a few steps to the front of the stone wall nearby and continuously sized it up.

There were many strange scratch marks that differed in depth on this wall. Not only that, there were some that were straight while others were curved. There were even some strange symbols that resembled words, yet were not words. They seemed to cover the whole stone wall.

Liu Ming frowned and stroked a few of these incisions and symbols with his finger. Only after that did his gaze sweep across the other three stone walls.

Only then could he clearly see that the other stone walls also had strange incisions on them, all of which looked the same.

These incisions were naturally left behind by those from the Barbarian Ghost Sect that had come to comprehend the Walls of Shadows in the past. Most of them were left by the predecessors when they suddenly understood something from the crystal wall, and because they were afraid that they were going to instantly forget it, they conveniently carved these incisions and symbols nearby.

This was also the most important thing that Martial Aunt Zhong had repeatedly warned Liu Ming about when bringing up matters regarding the Walls of Shadows.

Liu Ming also helped himself to these carvings and spent an exhausting hour hurriedly remembering the things that were carved into each and every stone wall. He then closed his eyes to consolidate it to memory before walking to the corner to grab the futon. After that, Liu Ming threw it in front of the crystal wall that was a few feet away and stepped forward in an unhurried manner, sitting down cross-legged on the futon.

At that moment, he followed according to how he usually cultivated. He placed both his hands on his knees and raised his Fa Li to his eyes, slowly infusing them with it. He then widened both his eyes as he stared endlessly at the crystal wall, never taking his eyes off of it...

After a meal's worth of time, both his cheeks had turned a crimson red and beads of sweat started rolling from his forehead even though Liu Ming's eyes still flashed with an energetic glow. There was even steaming hot gas emerging from his back.

Suddenly, Liu Ming let out a low cry and the energetic glow in his eyes faded as he quickly closed his eyelids. Only then did the expression on his face relax and he spat out a long breath, murmuring, "What an impressive Walls of Shadows, it actually possesses the effects to charm. If it were not for the fact that my Mental Strength is sufficiently strong, I would have sunk deep within its illusions and would have been unable to pull myself out. Other than that, what exactly is the meaning represented by those blurry shadows?"

# Chapter 161: Ball of Light

Although Liu Ming had only looked at the crystal wall for a short amount of time, he managed to see blurry silhouettes that Spirit Master Zhong had mentioned.

However, these silhouettes only appeared after Liu Ming fell victim to the charming power emanating from the crystal wall. This caused him to be unsure of whether these scenes actually came from the crystal wall or were just illusions formed in his own mind.

According to what Spirit Master Zhong had said, these blurry shadows were indeed an existence that was neither real nor fake. There once were some people who had comprehended a few things from these silhouettes, but there were even more people who ended up diving in too deep, wasting a night of comprehension. As to how the shadows could be inferred, it was naturally up to the person's own choice.

However, this Walls of Shadows was indeed extremely mysterious, and even with his level of mental strength, he could not stare at it for too long. Otherwise, he would actually fall into the illusion or become unable to hold back the evading sleepiness and fall asleep without knowing.

It was his great Mental Strength which allowed him to escape before.

Liu Ming thought silently for a little bit. Only after feeling his mental power had recovered to a certain extent did he form another hand sign with one hand. He then poured his Fa Li into his eyes to look at the crystal wall again.

Like this, time passed bit by bit.

A large portion of the night passed and Liu Ming did not know how many times he had tried to comprehend the wall. However, other than seeing the blurry shadows at the start, he still did not receive any harvests. He had also tried to study the blurry shadows closely, but they were too hazy and could not be seen clearly. He also could not understand their connection with the marks on the surrounding stone walls.

After looking at the Walls of Shadows so many times, his Mental Strength was almost depleted too. Although he really could do nothing about it, he did not really feel depressed.

After all, who knew how many Barbarian Ghost Sect Spirit Masters had attempted to comprehend the Wall of Shadows here and still received nothing. Those who had really comprehended a full set of cultivation methods or secret techniques were even rarer. For him, a Spirit Apostle, to return with nothing was an extremely ordinary thing.

Liu Ming thought like this and immediately stopped forcing himself. He stood up again and walked around the crystal wall.

If it were not for the special warning from the child telling him that he was not allowed to touch the object and him worrying about any other restrictions on it, he really wanted to use his finger to poke at the object and see if there would be any reactions.

In the end, he shook his head and returned to sit down at the futon. He simply closed his eyes and began to circulate the Dark Bone Method to start cultivating.

Since the Walls of Shadows was not destined for him, he decided not to demand insistently and rather take advantage of the time to properly cultivate for a while.

Threads of black air immediately emerged from his body and transformed into tentacles, dancing crazily around his body.

As the circulation of the Dark Bone Method became faster and faster, the black air around his body churned out quicker. As more of the black gas appeared, the black tentacles also began to become thicker.

However, what Liu Ming, who currently had his eyes closed, did not realize was that the blue crystal wall that originally seemed peaceful actually began to flash slightly without a sound the moment the black air appeared out of his body.

At the start, it was extremely slow, but as more and more black air appeared around Liu Ming, the flashing on the wall also began to increase

in frequency.

When the end of the largest and thickest tentacle on his body was wriggling only a few dozen feet away from the wall, there was a sudden flash of blue light from the crystal wall. From within, a ray of blue light suddenly shot out, and with a flash, it crashed into the black tentacle.

The light only flashed and the front part of the tentacle disappeared with a tremble. Afterward, the blue light shook again and transformed into a blue wire net, covering Liu Ming with lightning speed.

The moment the black tentacle disappeared, Liu Ming naturally opened his eyes in surprise.

The result was that he only witnessed the blue light in front of him flicker as all of the black air and tentacles on his body completely disappeared. Like ice melting, it disappeared with a flash of blue light.

For every cloud of black air that the blue air swallowed, it would glow brighter as if the black air was an object of great nourishment to it.

Seeing this, Liu Ming paled with great surprise. He wanted to change his hand sign to something that he could use to defend himself, but it was completely too late.

As the last layer of black air on his body disappeared with a flash, all of the blue light entered his body silently. It quickly condensed in his Spirit Sea, transforming into a ball of blue light the size of a bean. With a blur, it began to spin quickly...

Liu Ming, at this moment, felt his whole body become numb, and could no longer control his Fa Li or body at all, to the point where he could not even move a finger. At the same time, a chilly air appeared in his consciousness and a book with a black cover suddenly appeared. With a blur, it began to slowly open and flip through its pages, however, the words in it were extremely blurry.

"I triggered something in the Walls of Shadows and it seems like it is also a whole cultivation method!" Only at this moment did Liu Ming realize what was occurring right now, and immediately became happy

and astonished. He instantly stopped thinking about other matters and just wanted to read clearly what was in the book as if his life depended on it. However, no matter how much power he used, the words in the book remained blurry. He was unable to see what was written clearly at all.

“Not good, this type of situation seems to be due to the fact that I don’t have enough Fa Li! No wonder the Six Yin Martial Ancestor left a message for the Spirit Apostles who broke through to the Liquid Level to be allowed the chance to view the Walls of Shadows for a night.” Only under great worry did Liu Ming realize that it was actually like this.

Even though it was like that, he could not do anything with the situation in front of him. After the book in his consciousness flipped past the final page, it gave a “peng” sound and disintegrated into blue light.

At the same time, the ball of blue light in his Spirit Sea stopped spinning with a tremble. With a blur, it flew out of his body and shot straight toward the crystal wall.

Liu Ming could only smile bitterly at heart. Just when he believed that he had missed a fortuitous encounter, his Spirit Sea suddenly became extremely hot and the mysterious bubble actually appeared without a trace. It flashed slowly, with glittering light.

The next moment, Liu Ming felt all of his surroundings suddenly become extremely silent. At the same time, all of the scenery became extremely slow. The ball of blue light, which had originally shot out to return to where it came from, slowed to the speed of a snail. He noticed the ball of blue light in front of him was surprisingly comprised of countless inscriptions that had been shrunk numerous times.

Liu Ming could clearly see every line of inscriptions.

Such a weird situation naturally caused Liu Ming to become overwhelmed with surprised. He wanted to blink or open his mouth to say something, but suddenly realized that his own movements had also been slowed down an unknown number of times in the same way.

With a blink, his eyelids only closed ten-to-twenty-percent for quite a while.

This caused him to gasp at heart. Thinking quickly, he understood his situation slightly.

This type of situation was obviously not that his surroundings had become extremely slow, but rather his five senses had become countless times as fast as normal. Only this reason could cause such a weird scene to appear.

At this moment, he used his Perception to sweep around. He immediately discovered the mysterious bubble that was currently flashing slightly in his Spirit Sea. Only with this did he gain some understanding.

Without a doubt, for such an unbelievable thing to occur, it was definitely the doing of this mysterious bubble. Liu Ming just did not know when or why it suddenly appeared.

Just when Liu Ming was filled with doubt, the bubble in his Spirit Sea suddenly trembled. Densely packed silver threads suddenly shot out from within, and with a flash, they wrapped around the ball of blue light and suddenly tugged it back.

Although the ball of blue light struggled for its life as if it were alive, it obviously could not combat the power of the silver threads, and was pulled little by little toward Liu Ming.

Just when Liu Ming was dumbstruck, there was a sudden wave of humming from within the Walls of Shadows.

Following that, the crystal wall released a large amount of blue light and another dozen or so balls of blue light appeared from within. With a flash, they all expelled blue threads, wrapping around their buddy who was caught, using their power to pull it toward the crystal wall.

The silver threads on the other side remained stretched out and did not move in the slightest. The ball of blue light that was caught gave out a series of extreme trembles and actually stopped where it was mid-air without moving for a while.

However, Liu Ming felt his Spirit Sea immediately become hotter by a



few levels. The glittering light on the surface of the mysterious bubble grew slightly brighter and suddenly expelled even more silver threads.

After a blur, these silver threads shot into the crystal wall, wrapping around the dozen or so balls of blue light one by one.

Afterward, the mysterious bubble rotated once and pulled all of the balls of light from the crystal wall, tugging them forcefully toward Liu Ming.

It seemed that even after working together, the power of the balls of light were not enough to fight with the power of the mysterious bubble, and were actually pulled toward Liu Ming's body inch by inch. After another series of blurs, they all entered Liu Ming's Spirit Sea as if they had immediately fused together.

The next moment, Liu Ming's head felt heavy and his eyes darkened. He actually appeared in a glittering room formed with blue light.

No matter where he looked, the surrounding walls, flooring, or roofing, it was made out of the exact same material as that of the Walls of Shadows.

As for the corners of the room, there were stone tables. Every stone table was covered in a blue light screen, and inside each of them, there were different looking books.

Within one of them was a book with a light black cover. It was the exact book he had seen in his consciousness.

However, all of this was no longer important to Liu Ming.

This was because in the center of the room, in an area less than ten feet away from him, there was actually a man in his thirties in green robes standing there.

The person's face was pale without a beard. On his back was a sword in a scabbard and he was currently looking at Liu Ming with an extremely weird expression.

"You are..." Liu Ming naturally stepped back two steps with a sway and

asked with extreme surprise. At the same time, he felt a somewhat familiar feeling from this green-robed person as if he had seen him somewhere before.

“You are a disciple of the Barbarian Ghost Sect? How can you only have a cultivation level of a Spirit Apostle!” The green-robed person replied with a question.

“Correct, I indeed am a disciple of the Barbarian Ghost Sect. Elder, you are... You are the Six Yin Martial Ancestor!” Liu Ming replied slowly. After thinking quickly, he suddenly thought of one of the portraits that was hung high up in the Ancestral Hall.

# Chapter 162: The Great Symbol Sword Technique and the Dragon Tiger Hell Method

Although the portrait of the Six Yin Martial Ancestor was taken from the back, he was dressed exactly like the person in front of him.

How could that be possible!? The Six Yin Martial Ancestor was the founder of the Barbarian Ghost Sect and had already passed away several thousand years ago. How could he suddenly appear in this weird place!?

“You are indeed very smart to actually be able to recognize me with a single glance. However, I am not the Six Yin Martial Ancestor himself. I am only a sliver of consciousness left behind all those years ago before I died.” Hearing what was said, the middle-aged man in a robe revealed a slightly surprised expression, but still smiled as he spoke.

“So it is like such. However, the name of Six Yin Martial Ancestor is not necessarily incorrect. However, do you know what this place is? Perhaps it is inside the Walls of Shadows?” Liu Ming was somewhat surprised and asked again with some weariness.

“This is not in some Walls of Shadows, but rather inside a fake Consciousness Room for me transformed from a small portion of mental strength from Six Yin when he fell years ago. As for how you entered, I am unsure. After all, I am only a sliver of consciousness left behind by Six Yin years ago and have no way of knowing everything that has occurred outside. Only when I feel a few disciples nearby, that are deemed capable of inheriting the legacy of Six Yin, do I give them some small benefits. As for you, who is a mere Spirit Apostle, to be able to enter this area is just a little too weird. Tell me exactly what happened outside a moment ago.” The middle-aged man in a robe stared at Liu Ming with his eyes shining and spoke slowly.

Hearing what was said, Liu Ming’s heart skipped a beat.

He naturally could not reveal the matter regarding the mysterious

bubble to the sliver of Six Yin's consciousness in front of him, but using some other excuse to hide it was perhaps also impossible. After all, he did not know what this "Consciousness Room" was at all.

"Elder..."

Liu Ming's eyes flashed slightly a few times. Just when he wanted to say something, the whole room suddenly trembled and the crystal walls in all directions let out a crisp "ga beng" sound at the same time. Afterward, dense cracks appeared out of nowhere from above as if the whole crystal room was about to break apart.

"Impossible, this Consciousness Room is actually about to collapse." Seeing this scene, the middle-aged man in a robe, who was originally calm, immediately exclaimed as if he could not believe what was happening.

"What, this place is about to collapse." Hearing what was said, Liu Ming was also scared witless.

"How is this possible, it is the power of the consciousness! Although this Consciousness Room was not created with all of my mental strength years ago, its strength is at a level where even an expert of the Golden Pill Level would not be able to crush it just through the strength of their conscious." The middle-aged man in a robe stared at the threads of gray air that leaked in from the cracks and his face immediately became extremely pale.

Liu Ming stared at the gray air that leaked in with an extremely weird facial expression.

"The aura released by this gray air is on such a familiar level. It seems like it really is the aura from the grayish room inside the mysterious bubble. Perhaps this is..."

"It seems like this time I cannot escape from my doom. Oh well, I have stayed here for thousands of years after all. The energy of the Walls of Shadows was almost consumed anyway, so I would cease to exist in the same manner just a little later. Right now is just a little earlier. However, it means that you really do have the destiny of meeting me since you are

able to enter this place, and perhaps you can even leave here alive. Here, I have an item to give to you. It is a Sword Spirit Embryo that I once spent half of my life refining, yet still did not refine completely. Promise me that if you have the chance, you will give this item to a descendant of mine on the Midheaven Continent. Remember, this item has been refined by my essence blood and only those who have my blood can continue the refinement and use it. The sect I originate from is the Supreme Purity Sect that is located in the eastern part of the Midheaven Continent. As a reward for helping me, I will pass the flying sword secret technique that is related to that Spirit Sword Embryo. You must know that even in my original sect, this Flying Sword Secret Technique was a forbidden technique, so you must remember to not show it to people rashly.” Seeing the surrounding crystal walls falling apart piece by piece, the middle-aged man in a robe calmed down, and quickly told Liu Ming a bunch of things. Afterward, he suddenly closed his mouth and spat out a light-yellow, small sword made of light before suddenly grabbing it and pressing it to Liu Ming’s chest. He then waved one hand at a golden book that was on a stone stand in one of the corners of the room.

With a “pu,” the green light barrier on the stone stand broke open and the golden book immediately transformed into a golden rainbow that shot over. After a flashing action, it stopped quietly near Liu Ming.

Liu Ming naturally caught the golden book without even thinking. However, after a blur, it actually burrowed into his hand without warning and disappeared.

He was first startled but then immediately spoke quickly as if he had thought of something, “Elder, what junior cultivates is the Dark Bone Method. Perhaps the latter part of the method may be here...”

“What? You cultivate the Dark Bone Method? No wonder that method flew out by itself before. The Dark Bone Method was an ancient ghost cultivation method that I accidentally found. I only received the first half of it years ago. You will need to rely on your luck to find the latter part. However, according to what I know, it seems that there are already people who have found traces of the latter part in the Midheaven Continent.

Whatever, since it is like this, I will also gift you this cultivation method. After you reach Liquid Level, you can change your cultivation method to this one.” The middle-aged man in a robe hesitated slightly before speaking with a sigh. He once again waved his hand at another stone stand that had a black book, the one Liu Ming had seen before.

The green light barrier immediately broke in the same manner and the black book also shot out. After a flash, it also disappeared into Liu Ming’s body.

The body of the middle-aged man in a robe, who had done such things began to blur, as if taking out a book from that light barrier was an extremely burdensome matter.

Seeing this, Liu Ming naturally hurried to say his thanks.

The middle-aged man in a robe waved his hand at Liu Ming. Just when he wanted to say something he had thought of, the surrounding crystal walls finally cracked and broke apart inch by inch with a loud sound. The rolling gray air immediately rushed to the center like huge waves, submerging both Liu Ming and the middle-aged man in a robe.

Liu Ming felt his heart suddenly skip a beat and his consciousness blurred again. Surprisingly he discovered that he had once again appeared in front of that blue Walls of Shadows, and even had a single hand sign formed, as if he was about to make a hand sign to defend himself.

“This is...”

Although this situation was somewhat familiar, Liu Ming still could not help but suspect whether everything that had happened before was real or an illusion.

He swept his gaze across the Walls of Shadows and only saw that the wall still radiated blue light. He could not tell any differences when compared to before at all.

Liu Ming sucked in a deep breath and shot his consciousness into his body to have a look. His expression immediately changed several times.

He saw, in his Spirit Sea, the mysterious bubble continue to flash slightly and there was actually an extra tiny small sword that was faintly yellow. However, it seemed to greatly fear the mysterious bubble and only floated in the Spirit Sea, unwilling to approach the mysterious bubble by the slightest.

Liu Ming suddenly closed his eyes and swept across his own sea of consciousness. Two balls of blue light immediately appeared out of nowhere and using his mental strength to touch them, the two balls of light spun a little. They then transformed into two books, one gold and one black.

“Great Symbol Sword Technique”

“Dragon Tiger Hell Method”

Although it was Liu Ming’s first time hearing the names of these two cultivation methods and techniques, it was obvious that these were no small matter.

He became happy at heart and immediately pointed his mental strength at the golden book, reading it page after page.

At the same time, in an extremely well hidden secret room on the other side of the valley, Martial Ancestor Yan, who was originally cultivating with his eyes closed, suddenly opened them for some apparent reason. At the same time, he revealed an expression with a sliver of doubt.

He immediately flipped a hand and an light blue formation disc suddenly appeared in his hand. Patting it with one hand, layers and layers of restrictions immediately appeared. After another blur, it transformed into the scene where Liu Ming sat quietly cross-legged in front of the crystal wall.

Martial Ancestor Yan looked at the scene of Liu Ming and the crystal wall several times carefully before patting it with one hand again, causing the blue formation disc to return to how it was before.

“Weird, what was that sudden outflow of blood pressure in my heart about. Perhaps I have been overly worried with my cultivation lately and

my mind was not stable.” He mumbled a few words before shaking his head and putting the formation disc away. He closed his eyes and began to cultivate again.

....

The morning of the second day, Liu Ming, who was currently sitting in front of the crystal wall, opened his eyes and immediately stood up when the boy pushed open the stone door on time.

“Senior Bai, your time is up. You must immediately leave the valley.” The child in a yellow shirt walked in before speaking to Liu Ming with a smile.

“Many thanks to the warning from Junior. I also felt that the time was about up and wanted to leave.” Liu Ming also spoke while speaking.

“Oh, looking at how Junior Bai is like, perhaps you have some harvests from the Walls of Shadows?” Seeing this, the boy could not help but brighten up and ask.

“There are some harvests, but it is just solving a hard problem that I had thought a lot about. Also, I do not know whether it really is effective or not, so I still need to return to confirm it by trying it out personally.” Liu Ming replied with an ambiguous answer.

“Hehe, it can be considered good as long as Senior was able to gain something. There are many Martial Uncle who have entered for a night and did not gain anything.” The boy in a yellow shirt replied with a laugh.

“Keke, I also believe that it is like that.” Liu Ming also laughed plainly.

As a result, in the remaining time, Liu Ming followed the boy as he lead the way, walking out of the valley.

.....

Once the boy lead Liu Ming out, he returned back to the valley and once again arrived at the stone hut. He walked around the Walls of Shadows several times and used his hand to touch and check it in an exaggerated manner. Only after discovering that there seemed to be no problems did



he leave the hut again shaking his head.

Two days later, Liu Ming appeared in the great hall on the peak of Nine Infants Mountain. He stood in front of Spirit Master Zhong, Gui Ruquan, and Zhu Chi with his hands together.

“Since you have already made a personal decision that you must leave the sect for several years, the three of us will not stop you. However, the fact that you chose to not attempt to break through to Spirit Master right now is indeed a sensible act. We believe that after a period of training, you definitely will have a better chance than now if you attempt to break through to Liquid Level again years later.” Gui Ruquan spoke slowly to Liu Ming.

# Chapter 163: Fantasy of a Thousand Faces and Interchangeable Bone Technique

“I believe so, therefore, I don’t plan on being impetuous!” Liu Ming deferentially replied.

“However, Xuanjing can be considered an extremely dangerous area for you. Before leaving, I will confer three Scarlet Flame Beads to you in case you encounter a strong enemy in the future.” Zhu Chi hesitated before speaking. He shook his sleeve, and from within, a small bottle flew out.

Liu Ming grabbed the small bottle and delightedly spoke a word of thanks.

Last time, the three Scarlet Flame Beads helped him heavily wound the half Dragon Monster. With another three of these, they truly did suddenly increase his confidence.

“Since your Martial Uncle Zhu has gifted you something, I cannot let you walk away empty-handed. How about this, I purchased an expensive treasure back in the day that helps one alter his or her face. It should be very useful for your travels in Xuanjing.” Martial Aunt Zhong let out a light laugh and felt out a flimsy mask-like object from her bosom. She then presented it to Liu Ming.

“Thank you master. This is...” Liu Ming respectfully received the item, but after meticulously examining it, he couldn’t help but stare blankly.

“Haha, I can’t believe Junior Sister unexpectedly gave this ‘Fantasy of a Thousand Faces’ to Martial Nephew Bai. This is an unusual treasure. As long as one puts it on his or her face and they use a bit of Fa Li, one can change one’s face to his or her heart’s content. Moreover, the expression can change without constraint; there isn’t even the slightest difference from a normal person’s face. The only downside is that the price of this mask is dozens of Spirit Stones and it is only a one-time use object. Once it is used, it will only last for four to five years.” Seeing the object, Gui Ruquan revealed a face riddled with surprise as he spoke.

"I can easily hide my identity with this item." Hearing him, Liu Ming was very moved and deeply bowed to his master.

"Since you are my disciple, I cannot be too petty. Senior Gui, Senior Zhu and I have already given our gifts. Surely you aren't stingy enough to not give anything." Master Zhong shot a glance at the scholar before suddenly letting out a smile and speaking.

"Hehe, there's no need for Junior to say such a thing. As a Martial Uncle, I also cannot present nothing. However, Martial Nephew Bai shouldn't lack a normal practitioner weapon type item. How about this... I have a self-created 'Interchangeable Bone Technique.' It's a small technique that can change one's skeletal structure for a fixed period of time. If it's cultivated and used with the Fantasy of a Thousand Faces, I'm sure that hiding your identity will become even more flawless. Are you willing to cultivate it?" Gui Ruquan smiled at Liu Ming.

"Thank you Martial Uncle for your gift. I naturally would like to learn it!" After listening to his words, Liu Ming was delighted and bowed his body as he replied.

"Good, the technique is recorded on this page. Take it and memorize it before destroying it." Gui Ruquan nodded his head and fetched a light-yellow page filled with writing. He handed it over.

Liu Ming hastily stepped forward and received the page.

"Another thing, I also have a high level detoxification pill. As long as you don't encounter one of those legendary absolute poisons, I'm sure it is enough to shield you from most poisons." Gui Ruquan flipped over a hand and produced a small, dark-green bottle. He then tossed it at Liu Ming.

Liu Ming respectfully grabbed the small bottle and continued to speak words of thanks.

In the remaining time, Gui Ruquan and Zhu Chi spoke to Liu Ming before leaving first.

In an instant, only Liu Ming and Master Zhong remained in the large hall.

“Congtian, earlier you said that you wanted to tell me something alone. What is it? Why wait until you are about to leave?” Once Martial Aunt Zhong saw that the other two had left, her expression turned serious as she asked Liu Ming a question.

“Truthfully, I want to speak about a matter regarding the origin of my identity...” Liu Ming hesitated before slowly speaking.

“Origin of your identity... What does this mean?” After hearing him, Martial Aunt Zhong’s face was full of astonishment.

“Truthfully, I am not a Bai Clan disciple. My actual name isn’t ‘Bai Congtian,’ it’s Liu Ming. This matter stems from when I was born...” Liu Ming’s expression turned heavy as he began to narrate his story.

After a while, Liu Ming revealed a trace of relaxation as he flew from the mountain top. Martial Aunt Zhong, who was still sitting on the chair in the large hall had a bitter smile etched all over her face.

“I really did not think that this child had this sort of a complicated history. This affair isn’t large or small; it seems that as a master, I must use a bit of my prestige to make this large affair into a small one. It’s a good thing that this child has just recently done great merit for our sect. Moreover, he was forced to leave the sect, so I don’t think those fellows can grasp tightly onto the matter.” Martial Aunt muttered to herself before sinking into silence. She then stood up and walked out of the large hall.

Currently, Liu Ming had already returned to his dwelling. After doing a bit of cleaning, he nimbly left Nine Infants Mountain.

.....

Six hours later, Liu Ming was sitting on a gray cloud, flying fifty kilometers away from Barbarian Ghost Sect’s main gate.

Presently, his hand was clasped around a map and he was meticulously studying it. A while later, he finally muttered to himself, “I must take a slightly longer detour to go to the Bai Clan; however, as long as I can quickly resolve this matter, I can go to Uncle Qian’s hometown and

complete this matter. Next, I can go to Xuanjing and not even be late.”

After speaking, Liu Ming retracted the map and retrieved a compass-like object. He then compared the map to the compass and nodded his head before putting it away. He then grabbed the ‘Interchangeable Bone Technique’ page that Gui Ruquan gifted him, and put it in front of him where he began reading it.

This technique didn’t bring any useful amplifications aside from easily changing the length of one’s bones. Therefore, the entire technique wasn’t complicated.

With Liu Ming’s intelligence, it didn’t even take half a day before he had completely comprehended the technique.

Subsequently, he put away the page, formed his two hands into hand seals and followed the incantation to abruptly expedite Fa Li. Instantly, his Spirit Sea began to spin around. A warm flow suddenly and rapidly rushed forth. It spread over every part of his body.

In the next instant, Liu Ming let out a low yell and a firecracker-like sound immediately rang out. His shoulders flashed and his body astonishingly grew a head taller. His figure instantly turned rather tall and sturdy.

Liu Ming stood on the gray cloud and examined his own body. He moved his arms and legs, and after feeling that they weren’t uncomfortable, he performed another hand technique. An identical explosive noise resounded and his body shrunk by a large margin – his body had become a lot smaller and skinnier.

A trace of excitement appeared on Liu Ming’s face, and after he returned his body to normal, he looked over the page twice more. He then slapped it with his two hands.

“Pu!” The page suddenly caught ablaze and transformed into ashes.

Subsequently, Liu Ming calmed his mind and swept through his Spirit Sea.

He saw that the mysterious bubble was astonishingly flashing in his

Spirit Sea without stop!

Liu Ming's eyebrows slightly creased.

Ever since this bubble had appeared a few days ago, it hadn't mysteriously disappeared like before. It also didn't begin devouring his Fa Li; instead, it continued to incessantly flash in his Spirit Sea.

This naturally caused him to feel uneasy.

When he returned to his dwelling, he had tried to use his Fa Li and mental strength to touch the bubble; however, it was to no avail.

When he thought of that day when the Consciousness Room constructed by Six Yin Master's mental strength was devoured by the gray space, his heart was even more bewildered. He truly had no idea what kind of history the mysterious bubble and the hazy gray space had. They unexpectedly were able to do such things.

However, he hadn't solved the problem in the past few years, so he clearly could not understand the situation in the present short period of time.

Thus, Liu Ming shook his head and rested his eyes on the quiet, unmoving, small, light-yellow sword in his Spirit Sea.

Having taken the past few days to study it, he understood that this so-called 'Sword Spirit Embryo' wasn't an actual object. Instead, it was a collection of some sort of energy; moreover, it was like Six Yin Martial Ancestor had said, he would be unable to force it out or expedite it.

Fortunately, this object didn't pose any threat to him so it was better to leave it in his body for now.

He had hastily looked through these two ancient books, Great Symbol Sword Technique and Dragon Tiger Hell Method.

Nevertheless, the things written down within the two books were too profound and definitely not something that he could comprehend in a mere few days.

However, the Great Symbol Sword Technique seemed to be the written

account of some sort of flying sword technique – this was true.

The Dragon Tiger Hell Method seemed to be an extremely tyrannical body cultivating method. It seemed to faintly resemble the Dark Bone Method and seemed to also be able to restrain ghosts.

Unfortunately, according to what was written down, one had to have advanced to the Spirit Master Realm from the Liquid Level before cultivating and comprehending it.

It was the Great Symbol Sword Method that had no restrictions. After thoroughly comprehending it, Liu Ming would be able to choose and cultivate a bit of its foundations.

However, this step had to wait until he reached Xuanjing. He needed to be completely undisturbed before proceeding.

What he had to do right now was hastily go to the Bai Clan and completely resolve the issues regarding his identity and his marriage with Mu Mingzhu.

He had already explained the matter of him impersonating someone else to Master Zhong before he left. His master had also agreed to help him resolve this matter.

In this way, he had already assumed an invincible position; going to the Bai Clan to resolve the related issues would naturally be success after these perfect conditions.

With his current identity and strength, the Bai Clan with a mere Spirit Apostle had no way of dealing with him.

Liu Ming thought like this in his heart and instantly expedited his technique. The gray cloud underneath him instantly sped up and rushed into the distance.

The sky had begun turning black when night arrived. Even though Liu Ming was very audacious, he wasn't willing to take a risk and continue his journey.

He immediately found a mountain top on a mountain ridge in the

wilderness and descended. Subsequently, he then created a simple cave and sat inside, preparing to continue his journey on the morning of the second day.

However, when midnight arrived, the seated Liu Ming suddenly felt the mysterious bubble in his Spirit Sea heat up. Subsequently, a tremendous mental strength rushed forth and instantly arrived at his head without even the slightest warning.



# Chapter 164: Bai Clan

Liu Ming was naturally alarmed, and before he had time to react, this mental strength violently rushed into Liu Ming's sea of conscious, causing his mental strength to swell at a frightening speed.

"This is..."

Almost instantly, Liu Ming recalled his past absorption of Fa Li and contemplated the extraction of Fa Li.

This scene seemed familiar, but it wasn't a feedback of Fa Li this time and rather an infusion of mental strength.

A quick spin of Liu Ming's mind gave him the answer to why such a thing happened. He suddenly recalled the Consciousness Room and the scene of Six Yin Master's mental strength being forcibly crushed and devoured by the ash-gray room. In a flash, Liu Ming understood everything.

However, these thoughts were merely a flash of passed matters. Because of the violent surge of mental strength, he was unable to analyze deeply and was forced to cast techniques with all his might. As he chanted the words to his newly learned Demonic Heart Method, he tried strenuously to protect what little consciousness he had left in his mind. Without his efforts, this towering, enormous mental strength would have broken through and collapsed him.

Yet the more he maintained his consciousness, the more he sensed his mental strength furiously expanding in multitudes. In a small period of time, his mental strength shockingly doubled and tripled in size.

Even seeing such an enormous amplification of his mental strength, he still used his Demonic Heart Method to protect his state of mind. Liu Ming's body trembled ever so slightly as he let his head endure the pressure of the force. With his face pale and ghastly, veins popped out from the sides of his forehead with faint signs of black blood trickling down his face.

In a moment of desperation, Liu Ming used his talent of doing two things at once. With two consciousnesses, he concurrently expedited his Demonic Heart Method to barely shield the impact of the enormous current of mental strength.

A moment later, Liu Ming let out a huge shout, causing the entire cave to buzz and shake. Then, he fell to his back and unexpectedly fainted.

After an unknown amount of time, Liu Ming finally slowly regained his consciousness, tasting something faintly acidic in his mouth.

The moment that he opened his eyes, he was shocked to see that all he saw took on an insipid curtain of blood red.

Alarmed as he was, it immediately became clear to him what had happened. Weaving signs with one hand, a huge ball of clear water suddenly appeared above Liu Ming. Pointing his finger down, a waterfall of water gushed down in an instant.

Raising his head, the water rinsed out all the blood within Liu Ming's eyes. Using one hand to weave signs again, hot steam rolled from Liu Ming's body, drying his clothes. As he let out a long sigh, he used his fingers to massage the two sides of his faintly aching temple.

The scene before him was still quite frightening!

If it weren't for his efforts to strenuously sustain his mental strength before he passed out, which caused flow of mental strength to finally stopping, Liu Ming's head possibly could have forcibly exploded under the pressure.

Liu Ming felt that the size of his sea of consciousness had probably tripled or quadrupled in size from the mental strength. The enormous amount of mental strength seemed to flood every inch of his consciousness; each small movement he made caused his whole head to ache dully.

It looked like in order to control this current of mental strength with ease, a short period of time was not sufficient to learn to do so.

The amount of frightening mental strength he possessed was perhaps

not too inferior to that of a Spirit Master.

Liu Ming thought of this and suddenly remembered something. He immediately had his mind sink down toward the inside of his body as he scanned his Spirit Sea.

Sure enough, the mysterious air bubble had vanished once again.

Bringing his mind back, Liu Ming stroked his chin with the palm of his hand, letting a thoughtful expression escape his features.

His original guess was probably correct and the strong Mental Strength feedback was probably from the Consciousness Room of the Six Yin Master.

Yet this type of feedback occurred only after many days which was much different to the purification of Fa Li.

He made a mental note to be very careful if he were to run into such a situation again.

This time he was lucky that the force did not make his head explode. If he were to run into this situation again, perhaps he would not be so fortunate.

Anyhow, if this method were made use of and done well, it would increase Liu Ming's mental strength by unimaginable magnitudes. He couldn't help but feel his heart beating faster as he thought of this attraction to such a method.

However, when Liu Ming recalled the previous situation where mental strength flooded the entirety of his head, he felt a chill seep through his heart and quickly let that thought go.

Additionally, he didn't even know if he would come across another so-called Consciousness Room. Even if he really had the chance, if he did not have a fail-safe plan, he was afraid to say that it would result in nothing more than suicide.

In the time that followed, Liu Ming examined parts of his body in search of wounds. Seeing no signs of other wounds, he relaxed a bit and

started chanting words and making one-handed signs.

.....

The Fenyun State was one of the seventy-two states in the Da Xuan Country with Lushui city being one of the three biggest cities within Fenyun. In the Da Xuan Country, Lushui was said to be a meeting area for well-known practitioners.

Built along a river, the city possessed large patches of land suitable for growing rice crops just outside its walls. It also controlled a nearby region where considerably valuable metals could be mined from ore veins. All of this let the city of Lushui flourish and prosper. It was unknown how many powers of different sizes inhabited this city.

Yet one of the oldest practitioner clans in Lushui, the Bai Clan, became increasingly active in the recent month. Not only did the famous eldest daughter of the Bai House return, the clan also opened its doors to recruit practitioners. It also started to expand at a frightening speed, tearing down quite a number of opposing forces.

In the eyes of the perspicacious, the last time the Bai Clan had expanded in power was years ago when a descendent of the Bai Clan, Bai Congtian became a disciple of the Barbarian Ghost Sect. This allowed the Bai Clan to jump from being a third-rate clan to suddenly become one of the most respected practitioner clans within the city of Lushui. Yet this time Bai Clan tried expanding without any signs of having the power to do so while some of the biggest practitioner clans within the city of Lushui did not try to restrain such actions. It was as if the Bai Clan did not violate their radii of power, the other clans would turn a blind eye to its advances.

Not after long, there was news of Bai Clan's young master: Bai Congtian. He was to marry the widely-known daughter of the Mu Clan many months later. Rumors that the Bai Clan's young master was ranked in the top ten rankings of the Barbarian Ghost Sect gradually imbued themselves in the world of practitioners and practitioner clans.

As a result, other practitioners and small clans suddenly realized the

meaning of the Bai Clan's moves. In a flurry, they rushed to attach themselves or become guests of the Bai Clan. In one single night, the Bai Clan had enough power to keep the other practitioner clans under its control since it now occupied almost half of the city of Lushui.

At this time, the Bai House could be said to be the culmination of Lushui.

Yet at this day, before the now enormous Bai Clan, a youth in a green robe suddenly appeared. He tilted his head back to read the horizontal board that was suspended from the top of the main gate. After faintly sweeping his eyes to the burly looking guard in front, he walked without hesitation in the direction of the main gate.

"This is the Bai Clan. Who are you to dare enter?"

Before the door were four guards. Naturally it was impossible to let this stranger enter in this fashion. At once, all four guards abruptly blocked the gate, refusing to let this stranger through. The one in charge was obviously the tall fat man of dark complexity. Glaring down at the youth with his beady little eyes, he let go a low growl.

If it had not been for his ability to read people, he would have already called out the others to pile the rude youth. Yet in a quick glance, he was certain that this youth before him was no ordinary being.

This youth was naturally Liu Ming who had just hastily arrived. Seeing this scene before him, he did not speak but tossed a light-yellow piece of jade into the man's hand. Without showing any emotion, he spoke, "Give this to the master of the clan. Just tell him that I'm here."

In those days, this piece of jade was the exact pendant that Bai Congtian had. At that time, he took it with him while keeping under cover in the Barbarian Ghost Sect. Now, the pendant was again put to use.

"I'm here?' What does that mean? Are you playing with me!" With his reflexes the chubby, dark-skinned man caught the jade pendant. Yet after hearing Liu Ming's unmannerly request, his face turned bright red.

Knowing of the huge increase of power for the Bai Clan during the past

two months, it was common knowledge that these guards naturally were not people one wanted to provoke. To think that the boy who had just come out of nowhere was so ill-mannered filled the man's heart with anger.

Hearing his disgusted response, Liu Ming stared icily at the fat, dark man and suddenly took a step back.

"What do you think you're doing? Do you really think if you step back that I won't... Okay. Sir, please wait a moment. I will pass along your jade pendant to the House." Just as the fat, dark man was viciously responding, his eyes wandered to the ground where Liu Ming once stood. His face suddenly became a few complexities paler.

Feeling quite bewildered by their leader's change in tone, the other three guards turned their gazes to the ground. In the same manner, they jumped in astonishment.

The once smooth limestone on the ground now had two deep footprints engraved in it. The footprints looked about one-inch deep and were as pristine cuts as one could get – almost like a stonemason had cut them with utmost care.

Being guards of the Bai Clan, it was natural that they come into contact with some practitioners over the years. Seeing that the youth before them was no ordinary being, all of them now became respectful toward the boy.

Observing the fat dark man taking the jade pendant in hand and running inside, Liu Ming waited quietly before the main gate.

It didn't take long. In fact, it was the time it took to make a cup of tea!

Suddenly drums started playing within the Bai Clan which were followed by beautiful music. From the main house marched two columns of servants with an elderly man of snow-white hair walking from the back. Scanning forward, he immediately spotted Liu Ming, who was standing straight as a ramrod. With a smile hanging from his face, he hastily hurried over and bowed to show his respects.

"Young Master Congtian, you are finally back. Old Master and Young

Miss were talking about you recently, saying that there was a possibility for your return to the Bai Clan. I, myself, did not expect to meet young master today. If Old Master and Young Miss knew, who knows how overjoyed they will be?”

“Who are you? You know me?” Liu Ming’s eyes flashed as he slowly asked.

“Young master must be joking. I was your old slave Bai Pan! I watched young master as you grew up.” The old man remained smiling as he replied.

# Chapter 165: Secret Discussion

“Bai Pan?” Liu Ming looked at the elder who did not have a single expression on his face. Immediately, he nodded and without further words, he walked through the doorway.

With Liu Ming’s current cultivation, he was able to see that the elder in front of him was a practitioner that was quite powerful. However, with Liu Ming’s cultivation, he need not pay any heed to the other person’s power.

Bai Pan quickly walked in front to show the way. At the same time, he respectfully said in a hurried manner, “Old Master and Young Miss are outside of the city and talking about a couple of things. However, I have already had people leave through the back door to notify them of the news of the young master’s return. I believe that Old Master and Young Miss will be back by tomorrow. For now, I’ll first have young master living at his old residence.”

“Not within the city! Then who is in charge of things at the Bai Clan right now?” Liu Ming asked.

“Young master, right now, it’s the second Old Master that is within the clan. The third Old Master has been in secluded cultivation for the past few days.” Bai Pan responded honestly.

“Okay, no matter who is in charge in the clan, I hope that I can meet someone that can truly take care of things around here. Or else... Hmph, looking at you, you seem to know my true identity, so I won’t have to talk more useless words.” Liu Ming gaze coldly swept over the elder, and with a slight grunt, he talked to Bai Pan.

“Young master must be joking, how could I know anything. However, be at ease young master, I believe that Old Master and Young Miss will be here personally to meet young master Congtian tomorrow.” The elder’s face slightly changed after hearing his words, but he immediately gave a smile as he responded.

Liu Ming’s face did not reveal any emotions as he followed the elder



around. Soon after, he arrived at an exceptionally quiet courtyard.

At this moment, before the courtyard were two beautiful maids that were wearing yellow and red clothing. They both seemed to be about fifteen to sixteen and as soon as they saw the elder come over, they immediately came over and gave their respects, "Greetings to the great butler!"

"Mei Zhu, Mei Lan, quickly come and meet young master Congtian. In the future, you two will be in charge of young master's clothing, food, residence, and travel. If there are any slights to young master, you both will be punished! Young master Congtian, are you satisfied with these two? If they aren't to your satisfaction, I can immediately change them to two new people." Bai Pan first let the two of them stand up before asking Liu Ming with a face full of smiles.

"They are fine!" Liu Ming's gaze swept across the two and responded without emotion.

"Okay, then young master can go in and rest. I will first take my leave. If you need anything, feel free to order the two of them to get it." Bai Pan respectfully said.

Liu Ming nodded and bluntly walked into the courtyard. Under the directions of the elder, the two girls immediately followed behind Liu Ming.

Bai Pan watched as the door of the courtyard closed and his smile slowly faded. With knit eyebrows, he paused where he was before turning around and leaving.

However, before he walked a decent distance, a shadow flashed behind a large tree in a nearby road. A middle-aged man that seemed quite shrewd appeared and after a few steps, he respectfully said, "Great Butler, I have already set up all of the people. As long as this person leaves the courtyard, we will immediately know."

"What do you mean by this person. He's young master Congtain. Before Old Master and Young Miss personally change their pronunciations, he is our Bai Clan's true young master without a doubt. In addition, tell your

people to retreat. Who do you think young master Congtian is? A couple of normal people would not be able to hide in front of him. Although you are also a butler within the clan and luckily know of this matter, you definitely can not decide on what to do on your own.” Bai Pan looked at the middle-aged man and coldly chastised.

“Yes, I’ll immediately have them retreat.” Hearing this, the middle-aged man gave a shiver and quickly bowed as he walked away.

The elder then gave a few words of instruction before walking away with his two hands behind his back.

The middle-aged man then straightened himself and used a gaze that had some envy to look at the elder’s back. With a hmph, he walked to a small path.

Moments later, the elder passed through a couple of courtyards and lines of guards before arriving at a seemingly ordinary room. Walking forward, he gave a slight knock on the door.

“Bai Pan, is that you? Come in.” A male’s voice suddenly sounded from within the room.

“Yes, Old Master.” The elder gave a reply before slowly pushing the door open to enter.

In the small space, there were already two males and a woman waiting inside.

The two men’s faces were quite similar, but one had a face that emitted a sense of books and papers and was about fifty years old. The other male was only about forty years old and had a savage aura about him. In addition, he kept a long blade that was three feet in length at his waist. The woman was quite old and seemed over sixty years old with a face full of wrinkles. However, she held a bronze walking stick and had the appearance of being quite alert and attentive.

“Greetings to Old Elder, Old Master and second Old Master!” Bai Pan walked up a couple of steps and gave the three a respectful bow.

“Butler Bai, you aren’t an outsider. At this point, why take so many

courtesies, Has that person already been situated? What did he tell you?" The man with an aura of books waved his hand and quickly asked.

"Old Master, that person has already been situated in young master Bai's original residence and I have already directed Mei Zhu and Mei Lan over to take care of him. As for the words, besides saying that Old Master and Young Miss needed to meet him tomorrow, he did not say anything else." Bai Pan respectfully replied.

The man with the aura of books was obviously the current clan head of Bai Clan, "Bai Xinliu."

"Did he only mention these things and not talk about the marriage between Mu Clan?" The other man with a savage aura had his eyes flash.

"Second Old Master, no." The elder replied without any thought.

The savage aura man was the second Old Master of the Bai Clan.

"Then how is his expression and the like, are there any abnormal signs." The old woman slowly asked.

"Old Elder, the person seemed quite calm and I couldn't see what he was thinking." Bai Pan replied with a bitter smile.

"Oh, if that's the case, then we can say that this young man has a strong temperament at such a young age. He won't be easy to fool." When the man with the aura of books heard this, his brows creased.

"This person was able to use one of our Bai Clan's places to enter the Barbarian Ghost Sect as an inner disciple. Now, he has even become one of the top ten Core Disciples. There is no way he is someone ordinary. I just don't know if our original conditions will be enough to persuade him." The savage man let out a small breath as he spoke.

"If we can't persuade him with that then we'll just have to add a couple extra things. Our Bai Clan has waited so many years to finally grab ahold of this opportunity. We definitely cannot allow ourselves to be reduced to our original state." The old woman gave a 'hmph' as she replied.

"Mother, this person is a Spirit Apostle with sizable status within one of

the top sects in the country. Under this absolute strength, we practitioners would have trouble talking to him directly. Thus, I decided to not meet him and instead told people to notify Yan Er. Although Yan Er is only a normal disciple within the Heavenly Moon Sect, the influence that the Heavenly Moon Sect has is much greater than the Barbarian Ghost Sect. Thus, with Yan Er, we can start discussions with that person.” Bai Xinliu slowly explained.

“Did Yan Er go to meet people! It is merely a messenger from the Mu Clan, why did we need Yan Er to personally go meet him?” The savage man asked with some dissatisfaction.

“Second Brother, you don’t understand. This time, the messenger from the Mu Clan was no ordinary practitioner. Rather, he’s a Spirit Apostle that is under the Nine Enchantment Sect. Thus, our Bai Clan could not slight him and had to have Yan Er personally go meet him.” The old woman gave the savage man a glance before calmly replying.

“That’s why. I don’t know. Can Yan Er hurry back by tomorrow?” The man with a savage aura showed a face of understanding as he quickly asked another question.

“Relax, I heard from Yan Er yesterday. She was accompanying the messenger from Mu Clan to explore the surroundings with flying cranes. As long as she gets the message from us, I believe that she will be able to quickly come back.” Bai Xinliu said with confidence.

“That’s the best. However, at that time, won’t the messenger from Mu Clan also come to the Bai Clan? If he meets that person, wouldn’t that cause some problems?” The man with a savage aura still had doubt in his heart.

“There is nothing to be worried about. Although we did not predict that the messenger would reach the Bai Clan so soon, just keeping the messenger at bay for a couple of days can be easily done. After all, the alliance marriage between the Bai and Mu Clan is something that benefits both parties. Otherwise, the Mu Clan would not send a Spirit Apostle. Even without the marriage, this alliance would not crumble

easily. However, the most important thing right now is that our Bai Clan only has a single Spirit Apostle, Yan Er, holding up everything. Although we have the heart, we don't have the means to expand. Thus, no matter what we do, we must be able to use the name of one of the top ten Core Disciples of the Barbarian Ghost Sect to be able to maintain our current status." The old woman said with a serious tone.

"If that's the case, then the rise or fall of the Bai Clan will reside with our discussions with that person tomorrow." Hearing this, the man with the savage aura couldn't help but start bitterly smiling.

"There's no way around that. If Congtain was able to become one of the top ten Core Disciples of the Barbarian Ghost Sect, that would be great. At least, he would be able to ensure our prosperity for at least a hundred years." The old woman said slowly with an expression of extreme regret on her face.

"Hmph, don't talk of that useless cripple. He actually died to some thief as a practitioner. Even if he participated in the Opening Spirit Ceremony, he probably would have died within in it." Bai Xinliu said with some anger.

"However, if we want that person to become one with the Bai Clan, that isn't impossible." The man with the savage aura stroked his chin as he suddenly popped up with those words.

"Second brother, you mean..." When Bai Xinliu heard this, he could not help but still.

"If it were not for the fact that our Bai Clan needed Yan Er's status as a Spirit Apostle to maintain our status, keeping her from marrying, she should have been married to someone by now at her age." The man with the savage aura said with a smile.

"What? Second Brother, you want to use Yan Er to win over that person. No way!" Hearing this, Bai Xinliu roared with anger as he declined the suggestion.

# Chapter 166: Bai Yaner

“Why is that not possible? That Liu brat is one of the top ten disciples of the Barbarian Ghost Sect. No matter his strength or status, it’s more than enough to be paired with Yan Er. If he does not think that the Mu Clan practitioner is good enough because of her status, I believe that that brat would be moved with Yan Er’s beauty and status as a Spirit Apostle. More importantly, didn’t we inquire into his background? He has no relation to any practitioner clan and is only a exile that escaped from Savage Island. If big brother can really recruit him as a son-in-law into our Bai Clan, then would we not have any fear of him not working for our Bai Clan?” The second brother of the Bai Clan said with some excitement.

Hearing up to this point, the old woman didn’t say anything, but her face showed a sliver of anticipation.

“Mother, second brother, don’t forget that we promised Yan Er that as long as she became a Spirit Apostle, we would not interfere with her marriage and not force anything on her.” Seeing her reaction, Bai Xinliu made a bitter smile as he replied.

“Senior brother, this is a completely different time from then. If we aren’t able to make that brat change his mind, then the whole entire Bai Clan would be beat until its original state. In fact, under the wrath of so many people, our Bai Clan might be destroyed. After all, the expansion before has stepped on the profits of too many factions.” The man with a savage aura said with some urgency.

Bai Xinliu could not help but have his face change multiple times after hearing those words. He was at a loss for words for the next few moments.

“Yes, Second Brother’s words do have some credibility. However, we really cannot force anything onto her like a marriage because Yan Er has her status as a Spirit Apostle. How about this, we can discuss this matter with her. If Yan Er does not disagree, then we can have the best of both

worlds where we won't have to do anything that we wouldn't like." The old woman finally made her decision as she spoke.

"Okay, since mother has said that, we can talk to her about it once Yan Er comes back." With the old woman also in agreement, Bai Xinliu could only gnash his teeth and respond in such a manner.

In the other courtyard, Liu Ming was currently sitting on the bed as he silently cultivated with closed eyes. It was as if he did not care for what happened tomorrow.

....

The morning of the next day, Liu Ming, who was still sitting down, had his face slightly twitch and he immediately opened both of his eyes. He gave a slight glance toward his roof before he regained his composure as he began cultivating again.

At the same time, a few hundred feet above the Bai Clan, a male and a female were each standing on a gray cloud side by side. Their four eyes looked down at the courtyard where Liu Ming was sitting in.

"The entire Bai Clan only has one person with the aura of a Spirit Apostle. Looks like your brother really has returned to the clan." The young man was exceptionally handsome and had a long blue robe on. Suddenly, he turned his head and smiled toward the slim figure that had a green cloak around her.

"Yes, when I left the clan a couple of days ago, this courtyard was still empty. Looks like it is true that Congtian is within there. In a couple of days, I'll introduce brother to you." The green-cloaked lady let out a pleasant laugh as she replied.

"Okay, the main reason as to why I came was because I wanted to see you, Yan Er, again. At the same time, I am also curious about what my younger sister's future husband looks like. Ever since my younger sister was imprisoned in our clan, she did not say a good word about your brother. However, my young aunt's letters held nothing but praise for your brother. Also, being able to become one of the top ten disciples of the Barbarian Ghost Sect is definitely something your brother is better at

than others.” The blue-robed man smiled as he spoke.

“Speaking about this, I must thank Brother Mu. If it weren’t for the fact that Brother Mu Ling brought back the news that my brother became one of the top ten disciples of the Barbarian Ghost Sect, it is very likely that the Bai Clan could not take advantage of this chance to expand our sphere of influence.” The cloaked lady responded softly.

The blue-robed man was the messenger from the Mu Clan who was also a Spirit Apostle under the Nine Enchantment Sect. In addition, from the tone, he seemed to also be the older brother of Mu Mingzhu.

As for the cloaked lady, it was Bai Yaner from the Heavenly Moon Sect.

“Hehe, for us Practitioner Clans to know what is occurring within the sects is quite hard. It is quite common for us to have to wait a couple months to half a year before we know what is going on. My young aunt had to use a special method to send information for the Mu Clan to know what happened in Barbarian Ghost Sect. However, even if I didn’t tell you, your brother would have brought the news to the Bai Clan slightly later. Thus, it was not that big of a deal. In addition, my sister is about to marry your brother, and at that time, the Mu and Bai Clan will almost be one.” Mu Ling said with a smile.

“I would naturally want our two clans, one east and one west, to finalize this alliance. Thus, no matter what faction wants to fight us, they would need to be much more cautious. Time was not enough this time and I won’t be able to accompany you on a tour outside the Lushui city. If we find an opportunity next time, I will definitely accompany Brother Mu Ling. Now, let’s first go down. I’ll first arrange for Brother Mu’s residence and in these two days, we might have to closely talk about the kinks of the alliance of the two clans.” Bai Yaner smiled as she slowly descended to the Bai Clan.

The blue-robed young man stared at Bai Yaner’s back with some infatuation and also landed below.

In a quarter of an hour, Bai Yaner appeared within the main hall where the Bai Clan welcomed their guests. The Bai Clan clan head, second



brother of the clan, and the old woman were all sitting squarely on chairs and discussing something.

“Yan Er, you have finally come back! I thought that you would take longer.” When Bai Xinliu saw his own daughter, he was quite happy as he hurriedly said.

“Hello grandmother, father, and second uncle!” Bai Yaner bowed slightly to the three of them before taking off the cloak on her face.

This girl was at most in her twenties with fair skin and a face like a peach tree blossom. Her pair of eyes were vibrant and always moving. Between her brows, a sense of an enchanting aura emanated as she seemed to be so beautiful that she couldn't be looked at.

TL: Don't ask me what a peach tree blossom face looks like

“Quickly stand up, you must have been exhausted this time. That's right, did the messenger from the Mu Clan come with you?” The old woman seemed to be quite caring of Bai Yaner and quickly let her stand. Then, the old woman asked her a question in a timid manner.

“Grandmother can relax, I have already arranged everything. In addition, we have taken the whole day to travel and he should already be asleep by now.” Bai Yaner gave a small smile as she answered.

“That's good. Before we talk things through with that brat, we definitely can not let the two of them meet.” When the old woman heard this, she let out a sigh of relief.

“However, our time isn't too long. We must rope in that person in the least amount of time possible. At the very least, we can't allow him to publicize his identity or else the trouble that our Bai Clan will receive will be very great. However, why did that Liu brat come here so suddenly? Wasn't the custom that the new top ten disciples of each sect would stay within the sect to use the resources that the sect awards for a couple of months!?” The man with the savage aura worriedly wondered.

“According to common sense, that is what should have happened. After all, they should be preparing for the Life and Death Trials to take place

one year later. However, something might have happened within the Barbarian Ghost Sect that we do not know about.” Bai Yaner’s eyes flashed as she slowly replied.

“What could have happened. Will it effect our plan?” The Bai Clan Head’s face changed as he asked.

“That’s hard to say. After all, the news that we received last time was only that this person became one of the top ten Core Disciples in the Barbarian Ghost Sect after the Large Competition and the news was even given to us by the Mu Clan. However, father, you need not worry. We have learned our lesson and placed people around the Barbarian Ghost Sect. As soon as any information leaks out, they will use birds to convey it back. Right now, what we need to do is discuss how we are going to rope in this person.” Bai Yaner said unhurriedly.

“Yes, that is correct. However, Yan Er, you are also an Spirit Apostle. Do you think that the conditions that we set out earlier will be enough to influence this brat?” The old woman kept a serious face as she asked after some hesitation.

“If it was before, that was more than enough. However, this person has become one of the top ten disciples which complicates matters. If he were to speak of the fact that he impersonated Bai Congtian to the higher echelons of the sect with his current status, he would most likely be punished very slightly and we will no longer be able to threaten him with that. However, what is more likely is that after that person had a huge gain in strength, he would not want to have any more connections with the Bai Clan and would want to cut ties with us in one fell swoop. If that’s the case, then the conditions that we put out earlier are a little too shallow.” Bai Yaner sighed as she spoke.

“However, the conditions that we discussed earlier are the maximum that the Bai Clan can take out. After all, our Bai Clan was only a third-rate Practitioner Clan and doesn’t have too many accumulated resources.” The second brother of the Bai Clan said with some anxiousness.

“The person we are dealing with is one of the top ten disciples of the

Barbarian Ghost Sect. Compared to what the sect gave him, I doubt that the resources the Bai Clan is able to offer will be in his sights.” Bai Yaner shook her head as she replied with a serious expression.

“If that’s the case, Yan Er, do you think it’s possible to re-rope this person into our Bai Clan with another method?” The old woman’s brows were knit for a while before she suddenly asked.

“Oh, grandmother is saying...” Bai Yaner blinked before letting out a few words.

“Yan Er, I will not lie to you. Yesterday, me, your father, and your second uncle discussed a little and thought that there might be some other method to tempt this brat. However, this matter regards you so as your grandmother, I’d like to ask you one thing:

If I betrothed you to that person, are you willing to do so?” The old woman waved the bronze walking staff in her hand as a glint appeared in her eyes.

“Oh, grandmother and father want to have this person as a son-in-law? As for this matter, I cannot give a reply so soon and will have to see the person first before making my decision.” When Bai Yaner heard this, she actually did not become enraged and rather seemed to fall into deep thought before she earnestly replied.

“Hehe, of course. Yan Er should meet this person and test him before having your father and second uncle come out to discuss the details. I am an old geezer with many years behind so I won’t be showing my face.” After seeing that Bai Yaner did not refuse immediately, the wrinkled face of the old woman could not help but show a smile.

# Chapter 167: Transaction

Liu Ming suddenly heard a flurry of footsteps outside of his door. Immediately, he stopped cultivating and all the black gas around him retreated back within his body. At the same time, he emotionlessly asked, "Who is outside?"

"Young master, the time is not early. Do you need me to go to the kitchen and bring something over?" A timid young girl's voice came from outside the door. It sounded like one of the two maids assigned to him yesterday.

"No need, I won't be eating anything these few days." Liu Ming replied without any hesitation.

Liu Ming had just eaten a Pill of Fastening yesterday and would naturally not eat anything from a foreign environment.

"Yes, then I'll be taking my leave." The maid outside the door seemed quite scared and immediately left with soft footsteps.

However, after Liu Ming closed his eyes again for a short while, unrestrained footsteps sounded outside the door. At the same time, a foreign and sweet female voice rang out, "Brother Liu, I am Bai Yaner. Could I meet fellow?"

"Young Miss Bai! Please enter." When Liu Ming heard this, his expression changed. He immediately opened his eyes and spoke.

Thus, the door to the room was pushed open and from outside walked a beautiful girl with a graceful figure.

This girl currently wore a green-colored dress, and as soon as she saw Liu Ming, she suddenly revealed a sweet smile, "Brother Liu does indeed look like Congtian. No wonder the Guan and Gu practitioners forged the wild dream of letting fellow take over as my younger brother and join the Opening Spirit Ceremony."

"Really? Even though I have never seen your brother, Young Miss Bai's words must be true. The current appearance that I have is my own

without any disguise. However, I have heard quite a bit from Practitioner Guan about Young Miss Bai's achievements." Liu Ming winced his eyes and unhurriedly stepped off of the bed. With a slight cup of his hand, he respectfully replied.

In his mind, this girl's appearance was quite shocking.

"Oh, Brother Liu must have heard quite a bit. There is only me as a Spirit Apostle and sometimes, I had to do things that would show my face." When Bai Yaner heard this, her face could not help but display some awkward expressions.

"Really? If Young Miss Bai does not like doing things like that, you could definitely participate less with clan matters. With your status as a Spirit Apostle of the Heavenly Moon Sect, can the Bai Clan really force you to do anything?" When Liu Ming heard this, he held some doubt as he asked a question.

"Brother Liu must be joking. Unless we are like fellow who is alone, us clan disciples cannot give up on our clans and ignore matters such as these. However, for Brother Liu to suddenly come to our Bai Clan, they must be quite important matters." Bai Yaner made a slight smile and seemed to carelessly ask Liu Ming a question.

"My identity has to have been carefully investigated by the Bai Clan. However, these are all small matters. The reason I have come here is because of the matter with Mu Mingzhu. I have heard that the Bai Clan has even decided on the date of the marriage and is preparing to start mass sending invitations. Is that true?" Liu Ming asked two sentences before his face darkened.

"That is indeed something that has happened. Are there any problems? I have personally seen Mu Mingzhu and she is indeed pretty. Since Brother Liu and her have already agreed to make the engagement, all you would need to do is take her as your wife on the marriage date and everything would be good." Bai Yaner smiled as she responded.

"Hmph, I have already seen what that Mu Mingzhu looks like in the sect. However, I don't remember agreeing to this engagement, let alone

taking this marriage date. If the Bai Clan really wants to marry this girl in order to ally with the Mu Clan, the Bai Clan can find another Bai Chongtian and not involve me in this.” Liu Ming said without courtesy.

“Brother Liu, you must be joking. Mu Mingzhu is about to marry Brother Liu, so how can anyone else replace you? Although this marriage did not have your approval, you never disagreed to it either. Now that you want to go back on it, our Bai Clan will be in a very tough spot.” Bai Yaner blinked as she replied.

“Fellow Bai, you have no need to use sharp words. Do you know how many problems this marriage between Mu Clan has brought me!? Because the Bai Clan saw profits to ally itself with the Mu Clan, I had to offend someone in the sect that I didn’t need to. Now, I have no choice but to leave the sect and avoid the opposite party for a while.” Liu Ming gave a grunt as he responded.

“What? This marriage has made fellow offend someone who could make you leave the sect. Brother Liu, are you talking about Gao Chong, the Earth Spiritual Pulse disciple.” When Bai Yaner heard Liu Ming’s words, she seemed to have thought of something as her face changed.

“Young Miss Bai only needs to know this. Maybe Gao Chong does not care about the Bai Clan. However, he has his gaze fixed on me and I don’t know how long I will be carrying the blame for this. Thus, no matter what angle I see this from, I can think of myself as having repaid my debt to the Bai Clan. I don’t have time to waste on this and I’ll get straight to the point. The reason for me coming to the Bai Clan was because I first want to remove this marriage between me and Mu Mingzhu. Second, I will be restoring my original identity and from now on won’t have any more relationships with the Bai Clan. As for the profits the Bai Clan has gained earlier using the name of Bai Chongtian, I won’t look over them. That will also be counted as a form of repayment for the position in the Opening Spirit Ceremony. That’s right, the Bai Clan should not try to use my name to do anything more in the future. I have already talked about everything related to my identity with the sect. Once, I return to the sect, the name of Bai Congtian will eternally disappear within the Barbarian

Ghost Sect.” Liu Ming spoke harshly.

When Bai Yaner heard these words of Liu Ming, the last traces of her smile finally disappeared. After her eyes flashed a couple of times, she formed her reply.

“Brother Liu, please calm down. Everything can be discussed. The Bai Clan never thought about telling the upper echelons of the sect about your identity. If Brother Liu is not satisfied with the marriage between Mu Mingzhu, I can go to our Clan Head and have this engagement pushed off. However, Brother Liu cutting all ties with the Bai Clan is a little too harsh. I do not like to reveal this to Brother Liu but this is now a crucial point in the expansion of the Bai Clan, and if we lose Brother Liu’s title of being one of the top ten Core Disciples of the Barbarian Ghost Sect, the results of the Bai Clan hurriedly expanding will collapse on us. Our expansion will become a great threat to us.” Bai Yaner’s face changed and seemed much more pitiful as she talked.

“What does this have to do with me? I think that I have already said that from now on, I am myself and the Bai Clan is the Bai Clan. We won’t be interfering with each other. There are countless Practitioner Clans within the Da Xuan Country. Would I be lending a helping hand to every one of them when they are in times of trouble?” Liu Ming crossed his arms in front of his chest as his face became expressionless.

Seeing this, Bai Yaner was at a loss for words.

Although her cultivation was not too strong, only at a Beginning Spirit Apostle, she relied on her beautiful face to have a bit of fame among the Spirit Apostles in the Heavenly Moon Sect. Even some of the males that were outside of the sect were engrossed with her. However, she did not believe that the person who replaced her younger brother would be absolutely unfazed by the pitiful expression of hers. It was as if he had a heart of steel and organs of rock.

Toward this person, who didn’t even flinch at her face, Bai Yaner’s thoughts turned as she could not help but think of someone else.

That person was also impassive to her tenderness and instead focused

his entire mind on cultivation.

Thinking of this, Bai Yaner's expression became slightly strange. However, she quickly stilled herself and said something that made Liu Ming pause.

"Brother Liu, if you really want to cut all ties with the Bai Clan, then I don't have much to say. However, would it be possible for our Bai Clan and Brother Liu to make a new deal to gain the support of your name?"

"A new deal, what can your Bai Clan take out?" As if he had already expected it, Liu Ming didn't show any strange emotions and instead lightly asked back.

"Yes, this matter is quite important. How about this, Brother Liu, please wait for a moment. I'll go bring my father and second uncle over and have them personally discuss a deal with Brother Liu. How does that sound?" Bai Yaner spoke with a serious expression.

"Alright, I'll listen before deciding." Liu Ming raised his brows and replied nonchalantly.

Bai Yaner gave a slight smile before taking her leave.

In the time it took to have a meal, footsteps outside of Liu Ming's door sounded again. This time, Bai Yaner brought the Bai Clan's Clan Head and Second Brother Bai before Liu Ming.

"Mister Liu, I am quite ashamed. I did not realize that the marriage with the Mu Clan would cause so many problems. To have resentments in your heart is normal. Second Brother, first bring that thing out. It will be our Bai Clan's apology." When the Bai Clan's Clan Head saw Liu Ming, he put his attitude very low, and with an ashamed face, he ordered his brother to do something.

When Second Brother Bai heard this, he immediately took out an intricate jade box.

"I have already said so earlier. The connection between me and the Bai Clan are completely done. Without any achievement, I wouldn't be taking anything from the Bai Clan. Fellow Bai said that the Bai Clan wanted to



make another deal with me, why don't you talk about that..." Liu Ming gave an emotionless glance to the jade box as he shook his hand.

When the Bai Clan's Clan Head saw his reaction, the smile on his face stilled. The Second Brother of the Bai Clan displayed a slightly ugly expression.

However, Bai Yaner's eyes flashed and she revealed a smile as she said, "Father, I have already said that Liu Ming does not like doing roundabout things. Why don't you talk about the deal? That might leave Brother Liu with a better impression of the Bai Clan."

"Hehe, that would be my fault. If that's the case, I will be forthcoming. Earlier, my daughter should have already talked about the current situation of the Bai Clan where we can neither go forward nor backward. Thus, we would hope that you could still use the name of Bai Congtian and not be in a hurry to restore your true name. As for the price of this, our Bai Clan will be giving a heavy gift to Mister Liu. These are the details, is mister satisfied with it!" Bai Xinliu gave a forced smile and took out a piece of paper before handing it over with both hands.

# Chapter 168: Seventh Blue Pure Aura

Liu Ming took the list with a single hand without any politeness. After a quick glance at the list, he gave a slight smile as he said, "This is what your Bai Clan is willing to offer? Everything on here added up is merely a couple thousand Spirit Stones. Do you really think that I would take trouble onto myself for this measly amount of Spirit Stones?"

"I know that these resources are a little scarce for Mister Liu. However, our Bai Clan really can't compare to other large clans and can only gather so much in such a short time. However, the Bai Clan can promise Mister Liu that as long as you can wait half a year, we can give another portion that is equal to what's on the list." Bai Xinliu took a deep breath and spoke in a strong tone.

"What, Big Brother, how can you do that!" Second Brother Bai, who was to the side, immediately exclaimed in surprise.

"If the Bai Clan can't maintain its current status, even if we had an infinite amount of resources, they'd be useless." The Bai Clan's Clan Head shook his head as he solemnly explained.

"Sorry, if you can only offer that, I really don't have interest in making this deal." Before the brothers of the Bai Clan could argue further, Liu Ming shook his head.

Hearing his words, the two brothers of the Bai Clan's faces changed.

"Brother Liu, aren't you taking things too far? If we add these two portions of resources together, they are over ten thousand Spirit Stones and we Bai Clan are only asking to use your name. You won't have any losses." Bai Yaner finally spoke up from the side.

"If you will really be just borrowing my name then the resources that amount to over ten thousand Spirit Stones are indeed enough. However, I don't believe that the Bai Clan won't pull in my name in the future once they hit a rough patch. In addition, after I agree to this deal, I'll stay 'Bai Chongtian' and if any of the other Practitioner Clans want to edge off the Bai Clan, they would first target me before they start fighting the Bai

Clan. That isn't a simple borrowing of my name." When Liu Ming heard this, he gave a response that was biting.

When the Clan Head and the Second Brother of the Bai Clan heard this, they could only look at each other.

Although both of them had fully known what Liu Ming had just said, now that it was out in the open, they could not help but reveal awkward expressions.

When Bai Yaner heard Liu Ming's words, her face also started changing.

Liu Ming simply stood in the same spot and gave the three time to think.

"Yaner, you..."

"Alright, second uncle, I know what you mean. However, this condition most likely will be useless."

The Second Brother of the Bai Clan looked at Bai Yaner before wanting to say something. Before he could get anywhere, he was cut off by the girl.

"If you don't try, how do you know that Mister Liu is not willing." Unwilling to give up, the Second Brother of the Bai Clan muttered.

Although Liu Ming kept a still face when he heard this, he could not help but start becoming more curious about what they were talking about.

"Alright, Fellow Liu, what if I add myself onto the resources that we have stated before? If I marry you, will that be enough for you to help our Bai Clan through this hardship?" Bai Yaner sighed as she nonchalantly spoke to Liu Ming.

"Fellow Bai must be joking." When Liu Ming heard this, he was stunned.

"Although I, Bai Yaner, am only a Beginning Spirit Apostle, inside the Bai Clan, my word is absolute. If you are willing to take me, I would also be willing to marry you." Bai Yaner gave a charming smile to Liu Ming

before speaking unhurriedly.

“Miss Bai is indeed incredibly beautiful and few men can say no to you. However, I have already decided to put my heart in cultivation and hope to one day advance to the stage of Spirit Master. Thus, for now, I don’t have any plans for marriage.” Liu Ming thought about it for a second and then looked at the beautiful face of Bai Yaner before replying with a hint of regret.

Hearing Liu Ming put things that way, Bai Yaner merely smiled and did not speak any more.

The Bai Clan brothers to the side became enormously disappointed, but they could not think of anything else that they could offer to the young man before them to change his mind.

Seeing this situation, Liu Ming did not want to wait anymore and said, “If the Bai Clan can only take out so much, then I can’t stay. I still have other things that I must attend to and will be taking my leave first.”

Once he finished, he cupped his hands toward Bai Yaner and started taking large strides to the door.

When the Bai Clan brothers saw this, their faces changed drastically for the worse.

Bai Yaner also furrowed her brow.

At this time, a slightly hoarse voice came from outside of the door.

“Looks like ordinary conditions aren’t enough to keep Mister Liu on the side of the Bai Clan. However, since Mister has great aspirations and wants to become a Spirit Master, I have something that might be to your satisfaction.”

Once the voice fell, a figure flashed in the doorway and an old woman with a bronze walking staff soundlessly appeared there.

“Mother!”

“Grandmother!”

When the two brothers and Bai Yaner saw this, they immediately went forward to pay their respects.

“So it was Elder Lady Bai! Elder stayed outside for quite a while now and I had thought that you wouldn’t show yourself.” Liu Ming did not seem surprised at this and instead cupped his hands toward the old woman.

“So Mister Liu knew that I was outside. Tsk tsk, mister is truly worthy of being one of the top ten core disciples of the Barbarian Ghost Sect. I have practiced a Hiding Secret Technique and most Spirit Apostles would not be able to discover me.” When the old woman heard Liu Ming’s words, a flash of surprise showed on her face.

Liu Ming gave a small smile as he said nothing.

With his mental strength that did not lose to a Spirit Master, no matter how intricate the old woman’s secret technique was, she would not be able to hide under the power of his mental strength.

“You three leave for now. I will be talking to Mister Liu alone for a second.” Seeing this, the old woman did not inquire further and instead ordered the two brothers and Bai Yaner out.

“Yes mother.” The two brothers of the Bai Clan quickly gave their consent.

“Grandmother, even I can’t stay?” Bai Yaner asked with some confusion.

“What I am about to talk to Mister Liu about is something that will have no benefit if you hear it. It’s better if you don’t hear it.” The old woman hesitated for a moment before speaking in such a manner.

Although Bai Yaner felt that it was a little strange, she could only agree and leave.

Once the room’s door was closed, there was only Liu Ming and the old lady from the Bai Clan left.

“Old lady, you can say whatever it is that you wanted to say now.” Liu Ming stared at the old woman as he slowly said.

“Why so hasty, Mister Liu? I have something here that you should first

take a look at.” The old woman gave a slight smile before fishing out a light blue bottle from her sleeve. With an unwilling look at the bottle, she gave it to Liu Ming.

Liu Ming was not afraid of any tricks that could have been done with the bottle, and after taking the bottle, he gave it a small shake. Then, he opened the lid and took a peek. After seeing what was inside, Liu Ming could not help but say, “Pure Aura Qi, how can the Bai Clan have something like this? However, it seems that the amount is a bit low and is only a third of the normal portion.” Liu Ming was truly surprised.

“Hehe, Mister Liu is truly quite well knowledgeable. What’s within this bottle is not only Pure Aura Qi but rather the Seventh Blue Pure Aura which is quite famous within all of the Pure Aura Qis. It was discovered by our ancestors by accident and all we have is this one-third of a portion” The old woman said seriously.

“If it really is the Seventh Blue Pure Aura, that is indeed quite rare. However, with only a one-third portion, what use do I have in having it.” Liu Ming stared at the small bottle for a while before creasing his brows and asking.

“Please relax Mister Liu, this one-third of a portion for the Seventh Blue Pure Aura is merely an advance for Mister Liu. If mister is willing to promise to look after the Bai Clan for the next few years, I am willing to reveal the Aura Pit in which my ancestor found this Pure Aura Qi. From what my ancestor left in his will, the Aura Pit was extremely small and remote, but had enough Seventh Blue Pure Aura to make another portion of the Pure Aura Qi.” The old woman said without haste.

“Hmph, if that was really the case, wouldn’t your Bai Clan have taken away all of the Pure Aura Qi?” Liu Ming’s mind turned before he said with a grunt.

“As for this point, Mister Liu does not know that the Aura Pit is not only hard to find but its location is also extremely dangerous. My ancestor was a Late Spirit Apostle and had found the pit by accident. After risking his life, he was able to take away this small fraction of a portion of Pure Aura

Qi. Although our Bai Clan sent out quite a few Spirit Apostles to take the remaining Pure Aura Qi, they died before they even reached the Aura Pit. This reason is why the prosperous Bai Clan was left without Spirit Apostles and declined until the state you see it today. In the future, we did not dare to send people to find that Aura Pit. This can be considered the Bai Clan's largest secret." The old woman gave a bitter smile as she said.

"Looks like that place is extremely danger. Then, old lady's meaning is..." When Liu Ming heard this, his eyes flashed as he asked.

"It's quite simple. As long as Mister Liu can promise the wellbeing of the Bai Clan for the next five years, I will immediately give the map to the Aura Pit to you. However, I must say that the surroundings around the Aura Pit are extremely dangerous and even if Mister Liu goes, I cannot ensure that no harm will befall you. So, this deal is entirely up to Mister Liu. The Bai Clan really doesn't have anything else and as long as Mister Liu agrees, all of the resources from before are still in this deal." The old woman said without hesitation.

"Hehe, dangerous. As long as the Bai Clan ancestor that took the Seventh Blue Pure Aura was truly a Late Spirit Apostle, I will have no fears. Alright, I agree to this deal. However, I can only be Bai Chongtian for another four years and not a day more." Liu Ming looked at the old woman before glancing at the light blue bottle in his hands and replied after giving a cold sneer.

"Four years, that should be barely enough for our Bai Clan to stand among the first rate Practitioner Clans. Alright, then it's a deal." The old woman said after gnashing her teeth in decision. She then shakily extended out a dried and skinny hand.

Liu Ming was at first stunned by her movement, but immediately realized what this meant with a smile. He also extended out a hand to clap with the other hand.

TL: This is not an error - people used to clap hands instead of shaking hands

# Chapter 169: Temple

Half a day later, Liu Ming quietly left the Bai Clan. As soon as he left Lushui city, he immediately summoned a gray cloud to fly in a certain direction.

As for his marriage with the Mu Clan, he had left it for the Bai Clan to handle; this was also part of the deal.

As for the Mu Clan messenger, Liu Ming had no interest in meeting him and naturally would not want to waste time on such a thing.

After all, he had something that he had to do.

After seven to eight days, Liu Ming left the state of Fengtian and his whereabouts became hazy.

.....

Two months later, on a government road that was a couple hundred miles away from Xuanjing, the capital of Da Xuan Country, thirty or so black-armored cavalymen were protecting three horse drawn carriages as they slowly inched forward.

TL: Government road/path are roads/paths that are built by the government. In the old days, most roads were actually just people walking a certain path over and over again while a government road had specifications on the width etc. so that carriages and horses (most importantly, troops) could travel the road easily.

Every single one of the black-armored cavalymen wore thick armor and they all were equipped with spears and blades. With their murderous appearance, it wasn't hard to distinguish them as the famous Black Tiger Guards of the Da Xuan Country.

One of the armored guards wore a light red tassel stuck to his helmet and a faint green huge bow behind his back. He was the Lieutenant that was in charge of these Black Tiger Guards.

The group was not more than thirty people because of rules. However, since the Black Tiger Guards were stationed at important points around



each state and were the eyes of the government, even a simple Lieutenant was a decently ranked official position.

Now, these Black Tiger Guards had been deployed with their Lieutenant to protect a couple of carriage. It could be seen how important the people within the carriage were because of them.

“Sir, the sky is about to turn dark. Let’s find a place to rest before picking up the pace tomorrow to arrive at Xuanjing.” One of the sturdier Black Tiger Guards at the front suddenly turned his horse as he arrived before the Lieutenant and spoke softly.

“Yes, I know. However, the closest inn to here is at least thirty to forty miles away. Why don’t you take two people and hurry ahead to see if there are any places suitable for us to stop.” The Lieutenant said with a cold voice. No one could see his face clearly because of the cold, black helmet that he wore.

“Yes. Ox, Third Tie (all nicknames), you two come with me and scout ahead.” The sturdy man immediately replied before yelling at two of the Black Tiger Guards within the group.

Immediately, two men rushed out of the crowd and the three cavalymen rushed ahead.

“Lieutenant Du, is something amiss?” In the carriage that was at the front, a female voice that sounded quite magnetic came out.

“Lady Mi, you have nothing to worry about. I have merely sent a couple of my men to find a place to rest up ahead.” The Lieutenant that wore the black helmet turned his head after hearing her question.

“Oh, it's good that there’s not a problem. We have really relied on Lieutenant Du and your men during this journey. As soon as we get to Xuanjing I will definitely heavily reward everyone.” The woman in the carriage seemed to relax as she spoke with a grateful tone.

“Thank you for lady’s generous offer. We are only serving orders by the general!” The Lieutenant gave a slight bow and seemed unwilling to say more.

The woman in the carriage also smiled before also not talking.

After the group went forward for another fifteen minutes, the cllop of a horse going fast once again sounded. It was the sturdy man coming back.

When he arrived before the group, he pulled his reins and slowed his steed.

“Lieutenant, five miles from here on the government road is a temple that was abandoned. Ox and Third Tie are currently there cleaning up things.” The sturdy man came to the lieutenant before respectfully starting to speak.

Thus, the group moved quicker and started running alongside the sturdy man.

In a quarter of an hour, the entire group arrived at a dirt-yellow temple that was about a mile off of the government path.

Outside of the temple were two horses from the Black Tiger Guard along with a small black horse carriage with two green-colored donkeys tied to a stake. The two donkeys were even leisurely eating at the grass near them.

Flashes of fire light came from the dirt temple and one could faintly hear voices.

“What is this?” When Lieutenant Du saw this, he immediately questioned the sturdy man besides him.

“Lieutenant, when we found this place, there were already two people at here. However, I have already asked the two and found out that the two are going to Xuanjing. One of them is a scholar without the strength to even catch a chicken and the other is only a young girl.” The sturdy man quickly took a step forward and explained

“Really? This matter is quite important, let’s first look at these two before deciding.” Lieutenant Du seemed to not be too comfortable and replied in an emotionless manner. He immediately dismounted and started walking toward the temple.

There were two bonfires already lit within the temple, one big and one small.

Next to the larger bonfire were the two armored guards where one was short and the other was tall. The smaller bonfire had a scholar with a green robe and a weak young girl that was seven or eight years old.

The young girl had a pretty face but also had a yellow and skinny appearance with half of her body lying on the scholar. She seemed quite attached to the young scholar.

The scholar was twenty-seven or twenty-eight years old and had an ordinary appearance. He was currently absorbed in an unknown thick book while facing the bonfire.

When the two guards next to the bonfire saw Lieutenant Du walk in, they immediately stood up with shock and quickly came over to pay their respects.

“It’s fine.”

“What is your name? Do you have any road recommendations? Where are you going and where are you from?” The Lieutenant looked at the scholar for a couple of seconds before asking coldly.

TL: Road recommendation is something that people had to have when traveling in the old days

“Ah, it’s actually a soldier. I am Qian Ming and am going to Xuanjing with my nephew to find relatives. As for my road recommendation, please wait for a second...” When the scholar heard the question from Lieutenant Du, he seemed to awaken from the world of his book and subconsciously answered. Then, he started searching about him and finally took out a crumpled piece of paper to pass over.

One of the guards quickly walked up and took the paper before handing it to Lieutenant Du.

Lieutenant Du looked at the piece of paper with a couple of glances

before nodding and giving it back to the guard to return back to the scholar. Without another word, he turned and left the temple.

Moments later, the voices of people and horses sounded outside of the temple before a dozen guards rushed in to clean the temple. They then found stacks of firewood and started another few bonfires.

At this time, a fragrant wind rose as a beautiful young woman around thirty years old entered the temple. With one hand, she held a seven to eight year old boy. Behind them was a rough-handed servant woman and a young, pretty maid that was not more than fifteen or sixteen.

Once the beautiful woman and boy walked into the temple, the servant woman immediately spread out a snow-white fur around the bonfire. Afterward, she placed two low, wooden stools for the woman and boy to sit upon. Then, the pretty maid placed an incense cauldron and stuck a incense stick in it before lighting it.

With that, a faint sandalwood scent spread inside the temple.

When the other guards entered the temple, Lieutenant Du gave them an order. Thus, five or six men guarded the door while the other guards took off their armor and placed down their weapons. It seemed like they were preparing for a nice rest.

When Lieutenant Du took off her helmet and armor, the lieutenant turned out to actually be a pretty girl that had a long and handsome appearance.

However, there was a light red scar on the forehead of the girl which hurt her appearance to a certain degree. At the same time, her face was extremely cold without any smiles. In addition, she placed her light green bow and a barrel of black arrows behind her. She then sat across from the beautiful woman and boy and spoke of nothing else.

At this time, the other guards started taking out things that looked like rice balls and started silently eating.

The Black Tiger Guard was indeed worthy of being the elite soldiers of the Da Xuan Country with their well-trained manners.

The servant woman by the beautiful woman's side left the temple. She then took a bamboo basket out of the carriage. She pulled out some intricate dishes out for the beautiful woman and the boy from within.

"Lieutenant Du, we still have a lot of food. Why don't you come eat with us?" The beautiful woman found an intricate dessert from the basket and fed it to the boy next to her. Then, she looked at the lieutenant across from her, who wasn't moving, and asked a question.

"Thank you Lady Mi, but I learned some fastening techniques so I don't have to eat for two to three days without any problems." The vigorous lieutenant looked at the beautiful woman for a quick second before indifferently shaking her head.

"If that's the case, then I won't force lieutenant to do so." When the beautiful woman heard the lieutenants response, she was not angry that she was denied, and instead made a small smile before continuing to feed the boy.

However, once the boy ate another few bites, he shook his head and no longer ate. Instead, his eyes curiously turned to the scholar and the young girl next to the other bonfire.

The young girl had taken out a slightly yellow steamed roll that was quite warm and was currently biting it mouthful after mouthful. She seemed extremely intent on swallowing the roll.

"Slow down, don't choke." The scholar still had his book in his hands, but after seeing the girl make a lot of effort to swallow, he made a smile. At the same time, his arm moved as he took out a leather pouch that was slightly warm and passed it to the girl.

"Thank you Brother Ming."

The girl obediently took the pouch and drank two sips while her face was full of smiles.

At the same time, a light scent floated out of the leather pouch. It was not as dense as the sandalwood scent which meant that no one noticed it. However, the beautiful woman, who was trying to feed the boy more food,

seemed to have smelled the light scent. Her face immediately changed and she looked at the girl's pouch with some confusion on her face.

"This sir, what is in this pouch..." Lady Mu's eyes flashed a couple of times before giving a small cough and starting to speak to the young scholar.

Suddenly, at this time, a piercing scream came out of the temple before the sound of air splitting also sounded. The Black Tiger Guards that were outside of the temple gave awful screams as they were suddenly pierced by dozens of arrows that came shooting through the black night.

All of the resting Black Tiger Guards immediately became alarmed, and without time to put on their armor, they grabbed the weapons near them and stood in guarded positions.

Some of the guards also fetched a couple of thick leather shields. After a couple of human figure flashes, they stood in front of Lady Mu and the boy.

# Chapter 170: Intense battle in the temple

The young scholar at the side of the other fire seemed to be shocked by this sudden change, but still kept the book in his hands as he looked toward the temple door.

The little girl at his side was not afraid. Her two small hands held tightly onto the shirt of the young scholar while her huge eyes watched the Black Tiger Guards, constantly blinking; no fear could be seen in her eyes.

The moment the handsome woman saw the change, she said nothing and immediately grabbed the huge bow beside her. As soon as she had the bow firmly in her hand, she placed three dark arrows upon it. Afterward, she stared outside the temple with an expressionless face.

Besides the sudden arrows shot from before, the outside of the temple was entirely quiet without any people visible.

When the handsome woman saw this, her brows slowly straightened as the huge bow in her hands suddenly moved. "Chi chi!" Three black arrows shot out as blurs toward the roof of the temple. With a flash, they pierced through.

Immediately, three screams rang out as things rolled off the roof. Moments later, three corpses with their faces covered by black cloth appeared in front of the doorway of the temple.

At the this time, the lieutenant grabbed toward the quiver near her. With a shake of the huge bow in her hand, another three arrows appeared nocked before being shot out.

This time, the target was toward a particular section of the temple's walls.

The arrows buried into the wall with a flash and another few screams rang out.

"Not good, this stupid woman's arrows are strong. Fight your way in and kill them all." A voice that was filled with anger sounded behind another

wall of the temple.

When Lieutenant Du heard this, she immediately shot three more arrows that turned into black lines.

However this time, some “dong dong” sounds rang out after the three arrows shot into the wall. It was as if the arrows had been blocked by something.

With another “hong, hong” sound, the two walls of the temple suddenly broke apart. From within these two openings came almost a hundred black-masked men. Immediately, they fought with the Black Tiger Guards, who were already on their guard.

Lieutenant Du didn't use the huge bow to shoot. She, instead, nocked three arrows before looking at the door to the temple with a cold gaze.

“Hehe, I have heard that among the Black Tiger Guards of the southern sea, there was a female lieutenant that was known for her archery skills and she has even killed a practitioner. I never would have thought that I would meet her today. However, do you think your godly arrows will be able to take us down?” A wild laughing sounded outside the temple and three men walked out from the night without any guard.

The three were vicious, black-clothed men not too unlike the other black-masked men already fighting.

When Lieutenant Du saw this, her face became cold as the huge bow in her hand started to buzz. The arrows within the quiver started to jump up by themselves and shoot forward like rain.

Although the three of them seemed quite powerful, they were scared when they saw this many arrows shooting at them. Quickly, they each took out yellow leather shields and a white light faintly shone from them. These were actually low tier practitioner weapons!

The next moment, explosions like rain splatters came from the three shields.

Even though these three were low tier practitioners, they all felt their giant shields shake as they were forced back under the constant stream of



arrows Although they had heard about her fame before, they had thought that the handsome woman was still merely a mortal. However, they did not believe that even with practitioner weapons, the three of them, who were together, would still be forced into such a tough position.

However, the arrows next to the handsome woman quickly ran out.because of the quick flurry of attacks

The three practitioners felt their shields lighten as if their opponent's attack had finally stopped. All three showed expressions of glee.

However, at this time, a sharp, breaking sound came from behind them and three black arrows that were at most five to six inches long suddenly shot over. With a flash, the heads of the three men were pierced through.

The three practitioners actually died because of their carelessness!

The Black Tiger Guard that was currently fighting let out a cheer as they saw this.

Although the black-masked men had the advantage of numbers, they started to show signs of fear and allowed themselves to lose the upper hand.

Lady Mi, who was currently protected by a couple of Black Tiger Guards, had a slightly pale face, but she also let out a smile.

“Hmph, what three useless fellows! Looks like I’ll have to take things into my hands.”

At this time, an old voice suddenly sounded above the temple. With a large sound, the ceiling of the temple suddenly exploded while countless broken rocks rained down like pouring rain, covering Lady Mi and the boy.

The Black Tiger Guards with shields immediately gathered around the two and raised their shields to the sky in order to block most of the falling broken rock.

At this time, a shadow flashed down from the ceiling. At the same time, the shadow patted each of the shields.

With “peng, peng” sounds, the Black Tiger Guards were knocked away

with their shields and started screaming.

At this time, the shadow gave a spin mid-air and shot down toward Lady Mi.

When Lieutenant Du saw this, her face changed. The huge bow in her hand moved. She wanted to block this attack but it was obviously too late.

Although a fear flashed in Lady Mi's eyes, she still tightly held onto the boy and did not even try to avoid the attack.

"Hong!"

The shadow twitched and then flew back with a flip. After stepping back a couple of steps, he finally stopped, allowing his appearance as an eagle-nosed old man with a gray robe to be easily seen.

The old man stared at the person that stood before Lady Mi with a face full of shock.

The person who had suddenly attacked was actually the thick-handed woman who seemed like the maid of the two.

"Who are you? To actually be a maid while you are a middle tier practitioner. Aren't you afraid of being a disgrace?" The eagle-nosed old man gave a low roar.

"Hmph, if you, as a middle tier practitioner, can be an assassin, why can't I be a maid? With me here today, don't you dare even touch a hair of lady and young master." The well-built woman took out a silver, short trident and replied with a cold grunt.

When the eagle-nosed old man heard her response, his face was extremely dark. However, he glanced at everyone within the temple and let out a wild string of laughter.

"Hehe, all of the cards from the opponent have been revealed. You all don't need to hide any more. Quickly take care of them."

"What, you still have people?" The well-built woman asked with some panic.

Lady Mi also showed true fear in her eyes.

When Lieutenant Du heard this, her pupils also dilated. Her hands tightly gripped the huge bow and did not easily shoot the three black, small arrows nocked.

The Black Tiger Guards, currently fighting with the black-masked men, also felt something amiss and crowded together to stop fighting with the masked men.

The black-masked men were originally at a disadvantage. They were more than happy to stop fighting. They only slowly encircled everyone.

At this time, the two sides of the walls of the temple, that were still fine, both exploded to make holes in the walls. From within each of the holes walked out strange people.

One of the people was only three feet tall. His head was extremely big while his two eyes were extremely narrow. It was actually a midget with a very fierce appearance.

The other person wore a big red cloak and had makeup smeared on his face. However, he had a huge beard and seemed to be neither a male or a female.

“Ru Sha, Zu Du, how can it be you two? Weren’t the two of you incarcerated in the prison of the Law Enforcement Board by Silver Scale Guards!” When the well-built woman saw the two new people, her face immediately changed.

“Hehe, our master is extremely powerful beyond the imagination of you people. Letting us two go was a very simple matter.” The person who was neither male nor female gave a laugh and replied with a sharp voice.

“Zhu Lao Da, why are you wasting words with him? Since we have appeared, everyone here cannot live. Tsk tsk, no bad, there are actually two cute prey. Those two small fellows are mine. Don’t you guys dare fight for them with me. Dammit, I can’t hold it in anymore. I must first ‘love’ one of them.” The midget looked at the boy next to Lady Mi and the young girl next to the scholar before a fierce expression appeared on his face. Suddenly, he turned into a shadow as he pounced toward the young girl not too far away.

His movements were so quick that with just a flash, he neared the young girl. His two fingers moved and were about to dig out the eyeballs of the young girl.

“Ahem, I didn’t want to make trouble, but why does trouble always find me? What a weird situation!” The young scholar, who seemed to have been shocked senseless, saw this and actually sighed. His arm then seemed to move.

“Peng!”

The midget gave out a horrible shriek as his body shot backward several times quicker than before. With a muffled sound, he solidly knocked into the temple’s already crumpled walls. In fact, he was already dead by the time he hit them, and slid down the wall while blood was pouring out of him. Then, no other sound came out from him.

This scene caused everyone to be stunned.

“You... Who are you? Do you know who we work for?” The eagle-nosed old man seemed to recover his senses and questioned with anger and surprise.

“Whoever you work for, I have no interest in knowing. Therefore, you can rest assured in leaving.” The scholar looked at the eagle-nosed old man before replying. Then, he moved his arm and with a “sou” sound, a green light flashed and disappeared.

The next moment, the eagle-nosed old man felt his neck grow cold as his head fell off. His corpse without a head shook a couple of seconds before falling with a “putong.”

At this time, a blood column a couple feet tall shot out from the neck of his corpse.

“Spirit Apostle, you are a Spirit Apostle!” The remaining practitioner that was neither a male nor female saw this and screamed out with surprise. Afterward, he turned into a blur of a red shadow that shot back.

# Chapter 171: Qian Ruping

However, the sharp sound of wind breaking rang out and three small black arrows shot forward with piercing shrills.

It was actually Lieutenant Du who had shot the three arrows on her huge bow.

The practitioner that was neither male or female became enraged. Although the practitioner was still mid-air, his sleeve shook and a soft sword that was like a snake shot out. With a wave, it turned into three sword shadows that flew toward the three small arrows.

“Hong!”

The three small arrows exploded like ceramics when they came into contact with the sword shadows. At the same time, black liquid splashed out from the arrows.

The practitioner that was neither male nor female could be considered to have plenty of combat experience, but he couldn't react in time from such a sudden change. He was immediately splashed by that black-colored liquid.

With one flip of his body, he landed on the ground. Quickly, he moved his sleeve below his nose and smelled a fishy smell. He could not help but scream with anger and surprise, “What did you hide within the arrow?”

“There is no need to ask, you will soon know. I don't want to waste words with a dead person.” Lieutenant Du placed her huge bow down and replied without an expression.

“Ah... Even if I die, I will first kill you.” The practitioner that was neither male nor female screamed as his skin started eroding away. With another scream, the soft sword in his hand twitched and was thrown toward Lieutenant Du.

With a flash of silver light, the soft sword became a streak that flew above the head of the woman and violently cut down.

Lieutenant Du was quite shocked and did not think that her opponent

would possess such powers. She could only desperately push the huge bow up and try to use it to block the streak of light.

However, the lieutenant seemed to underestimate the power of a dying middle tier practitioner. Although the huge bow in her hand was not something ordinary, it couldn't compare to a practitioner weapon.

With a "peng," the huge bow's thick bowstring was cut apart. After another cold flash, the streak of light seemed about to cut the lieutenant in two.

However, a "sou" sound came through and a green light flashed from the other side to intercept the streak of light.

"Dang!"

The green light dispersed into dots of spirit light and the streak of light fell back, changing back into a soft sword that lay on the ground.

Lieutenant Du paused before she turned her head to look at the young scholar.

All she saw was the young scholar slowly put his hand down. Obviously, it was him who had saved her.

Lieutenant Du thought about this and nodded to the scholar without saying any words of thanks. Instead she roared to the Black Tiger Guards, "What are you all waiting for, take these bandits down!"

The other Black Tiger Guards were originally in a daze with the series of events, but after hearing her words, they immediately snapped out of it. With a shout, they charged those wearing black masks with momentum that was greater than ever.

On the other hand, now that all of the practitioners on the masked men's side had died, they began to hurriedly fall back. Some even turned tail and ran without hesitation.

A mixed battle ensued and a small portion of the men were killed at the scene while most were able to run away.

Throughout this process, Lieutenant Du and the well-built maid stayed

by the side of Lady Mi and the boy. However, they had no intention of fighting and were obviously still wary of other people that might still be waiting in ambush.

However, their worry was unnecessary.

Even when the Black Tiger Guards defeated the final black-masked man that couldn't run away in time, no one else appeared.

Seeing this, the maid gave a long sigh and suddenly looked toward the young scholar. Afterward, she whispered into the ear of Lady Mi.

Lady Mi nodded with a flash in her eyes. She pulled the boy by her side until he started walking toward the young scholar with the accompaniment of the maid.

Lieutenant Du had already begun instructing the Black Tiger Guards to clear the scene and started interrogating two black-masked men that they had captured.

"Thank you for saving us, otherwise, my son and I would have had a hard time staying alive." Lady Mi got close to the scholar and bowed as she respectfully thanked him.

"That's right, if it weren't for fellow reaching out, my lady probably would not have been able to make it to Xuanjing alive." The maid also paid her respects.

"There is no need to thank me, I didn't attack to save you. It is only that they attacked me first." The young scholar used a wood stick in his hand to poke at the bonfire before him as he answered back without any emotions. This attitude was completely different from before.

"Immortal Master must be joking. We are alive because of Immortal Master, that is without a doubt. Could I ask what Immortal Master's name is? Will you be going to Xuanjing?" Lady Mi displayed a smile as she asked.

"I am only a Spirit Apostle and cannot bear the title of Immortal Master. You can call me Mister Qian and I do indeed need to go to Xuanjing to perform some matters." The young scholar replied lightly.

“So it’s Mister Qian, my family name is Mi and my husband has some influence in Xuanjing. However, we offended some small people while leaving and have been the target of multiple assassination attempts. If sir is willing to escort us until we get to Xuanjing, I will definitely have a huge reward prepared.” Lady Mi spoke with a pleading tone.

“Escort you? I don’t have an interest. The only reason for me going to Xuanjing is to find medicine for my niece . I don’t want to be involved in some mess.” When the young scholar heard this, he immediately declined without thinking.

These words made the smile on Lady Mi’s face change.

However, the maid beside Lady Mi spoke without skipping a beat.

“If Mister Qian is really going to Xuanjing to find some Spirit Medicine, my lady will be able to help. Mister might not know but my lady’s husband is the owner of the famous Hundred Spirit House and the Hundred Spirit House is a shop that collects all kinds of Spirit Medicines and ores. Even in other states, there are branches of the Hundred Spirit House, so if mister can’t find what you are looking for in the store, my lady can ask other stores to help you find what you need.”

“Oh, I have heard of the Hundred Spirit House before. Are you really the wife of the owner of the Hundred Spirit House?” When the young scholar heard this, his expression changed as he re-appraised Lady Mi, trying to determine if the maid’s words were true or not.

“If mister can escort me and my son safely to Xuanjing, no matter what you need, I will personally find it.” At this time, Lady Mi knew that she had to make some promises so she gnashed her teeth as she offered.

“If that’s the case... Alright, I’ll believe you for once! However, I must say that once we get to Xuanjing and lady is not able to make true of the promise, don’t blame me for being merciless.” The young scholar thought about it for a while before he finally nodded.

“Hehe, fellow, rest assured. As long as you aren’t trying to find the true Spirit Objects that are only in legends, normal Spirit Medicine is no problem.” The maid quickly smiled as she replied.



“Hmph, the Spirit Medicine I’m looking for might not be extremely expensive, but it is very rare and few people have uses for it. Thus, it’s very hard to find.” The young scholar seemed to hear the hidden meaning within the maid’s words and gave a grunt.

“Then there’s no problem. That’s right, Could I know what sickness your niece has taken? I am quite proficient in medicine and can help take a look.” Hearing this, the maid let out a sigh of relief, and after looking at the skinny and yellow-skinned young girl next to the scholar, she could not help but speak again.

“There is no need. If fellow is really proficient in medicine, then you should probably first get rid of the poison within your young master.” The young scholar shook his head as he replied.

“What, young master has been poisoned!”

“No way, how could my son have been poisoned!”

The maid and Lady Mi shouted out in surprise after hearing the scholar’s words.

“Hehe, if you two don’t believe me, feel free to take a look at yourself. There’s some dark air between his brows which shows that he’s had this poison in him for at least a month.” The scholar looked at the boy before replying emotionlessly.

Hearing the scholar say such words with such affirmation, Lady Mi and the maid looked at each other and believed that the scholar was not lying.

Lady Mi quickly excused herself and brought the maid back as she quickly walked toward the boy.

The maid then talked to the young servant. Afterward, the latter ran out of the temple.

Moments later, the young servant brought back a bulging bag.

The maid quickly took the bag. After quickly digging through it, she took out a box of silver needles and a couple of glyphs.

Under Lady Mi’s concerned eyes, the maid quickly put one of the glyphs

on the boy and stuck a couple of silver needles onto the elbow of the boy.

“Brother Ming, did he really get poisoned?”

At this time, the young girl next to the young scholar couldn't help but raise her head and ask.

“Yes, he is indeed poisoned. In addition, it is a very troublesome, strange poison. If it weren't for me, they would not have been able to find out until the day before the poison exploded.” The scholar gave a small smile and he patted the hand of the young girl with pity.

The scholar that seemed to be about twenty-seven or twenty-eight was obviously made up by Liu Ming.

As for the young girl, Liu Ming went to a small city within another state after he left the Fengtian State. There, he found the only successor to Uncle Qian, the granddaughter of Uncle Qian.

On Savage Island, Uncle Qian was a half teacher, half father figure to Liu Ming. The only dying will of his was for Liu Ming to take care of his descendents if Liu Ming got the chance to do so.

However, once Liu Ming left Savage Island, he was chased by the authorities. After that, he cultivated within the Barbarian Ghost Sect as a Spirit Apostle. Only now did he get the chance to go to Uncle Qian's hometown in order to find his descendents.

After looking around, he found out that Uncle Qian left a single son before getting forced to Savage Island. This son made a family, but a couple years later, the son and his wife both died to a pandemic. They left behind one young daughter who was three to four years old called Qian Ruping.

The girl who didn't have her father or her mother was taken advantage of by her relatives to the point where she was even kicked out of her own house, ending up as a beggar on the streets.

# Chapter 172: Removing the Poison

Liu Ming finally found the small girl in a dilapidated wooden house in the city. The girl looked to be suffering a serious illness as she lay there before death's grasp.

If it weren't for the occasional care and attention that the kind beggars nearby gave to the small girl, Liu Ming was afraid to say that this young girl, Uncle Qian's granddaughter, would have had her life quickly slip away.

Alarmed by this sight, Liu Ming rushed to her rescue. He naturally did all he could to save her. However, he soon discovered the illness that clung to this girl was an odd and rare condition. In fact, few in the world had witnessed or heard of its existence. The illness was incessantly feasting on the girl's strength and life. It was as if as she contracted tuberculosis.

Fortunately, Liu Ming's experiences with the prisoners on Savage Island taught him how to treat hard cases with home remedies. Additionally, he had brought Spirit Medicine along which could temporarily reverse the illness, and at the same time, barely keep the illness from worsening. Yet, in order to completely bring the illness under control, he needed an extremely rare Spirit Medicine to do so.

He waited for Qian Ruping's physical state to stabilize a bit as a result. That night, Liu Ming burned to dust the homes of those who had seized the property of Uncle Qian's son, setting all of their property ablaze. Later in the morning, he rewarded the kind beggars that had taken considerable care of the girl with some silver and gold. Carrying the girl on his back, Liu Ming left her hometown, heading straight to Xuanjing.

Though the Spirit Medicine he sought was rare, there was a good possibility of finding it due to the sheer size of Xuanjing.

Besides, it wasn't too long before his allotted time ran out. It wouldn't be easy to continue to roam about outside of Xuanjing.

During the journey to Xuanjing, Liu Ming had used his Transformation

Technique to change his facial appearance. Under the effects of his Bone Transformation Technique, he was now two inches shorter, shrinking his taller than average figure to that of a normal person.

What would happen after curing Qian Ruping of her odd illness was something, Liu Ming would consider later.

At the very least, the girl would have to stay with him for the duration he was in Xuanjing.

Being saved by Liu Ming from death's grasp, the young girl, Qian Ruping, suddenly became exceedingly attached to her newly appeared "Brother Ming." In the first few days, the attachment became so strong that she grasped onto Liu Ming's shirt tightly before falling asleep. Protruding her lips outward, she took on an pitiful look as if she was scared that this "Brother Ming" would abandon her.

Naturally, Liu Ming took pity on this feeble-looking girl as she was related to Uncle Qian. During the journey, he agreed to many of her small requests, even showing off some basic spells from time to time. As a result, the whole journey was filled with incessant laughter.

In order to take care of Qian Ruping, it was natural that Liu Ming would not be able to use his flying technique. Instead, he rented a carriage for the journey and started driving the cart with the young girl inside to Xuanjing.

What Liu Ming did not anticipate in this temple, not far from Xuanjing, was that he would meet the Black Tiger Guards. The guards who had chased him into a tight corner where he was eventually forced to slaughter the guards chasing him.

Yet, it was just like what he had once said: If that midget didn't put his hands on Qian Ruping, he wouldn't have felt the urge to lend his hand to rescue them.

After all, this kind of matter was definitely linked to the powers within Xuanjing.

However, before investigating the situation in Xuanjing, Liu Ming did

not want to reveal his true identity as a Spirit Apostle.

Of course, now faced with such circumstances, everything naturally changed.

As he had already undertaken such a task, Liu Ming decided to simply ask for help from this Lady Mi by using the identity of a loose practitioner to blend into the city of Xuanjing.

According to his knowledge, many loose practitioners appeared within Xuanjing every year, making his disguise unnoticeable to the unpracticed eye.

The odd poison the young boy had contracted was not simply some dark air accumulated between his brows. Only by using his powerful mental strength to scan the body of the boy, did Liu Ming discover the abnormality that lingered within.

In order to stay within his disguise, he spoke of a fake symptom.

At this time, the maid pulled the silver needle out from the boy's upper arm. The bottom half of the silver needle was stained black.

Surprised by this, Lady Mi cried out in alarm.

The maid then hastily fastened the rest of the glyphs onto the young boy's body.

In a cup of tea's time, the maid decided to pull out another silver needle. Seeing the black stain same as before, she grimaced as if in pain.

Lady Mi, however, looked terrified. After quickly exchanging some words with the maid, she took out a small, delicate-looking bottle. Carefully pouring out a dark-green pellet, she inserted the medicine into the boy's mouth.

After a short period of time, the maid pulled out yet another stained, silver needle, causing both women to become very anxious.

After talking in hushed tones to each other, they brought young boy to where Liu Ming was standing.

"Mister Qian, my child indeed does have an odd poison inside his body.

The maid and I have tried our hardest, but there seems to be no way of getting rid of this poison. If mister could see this poison, I think it is certain that you can remove the poison. Please save my child's life!" As Lady Mi walked near Liu Ming, she pulled the young boy over in an attempt to pay respects to Liu Ming.

Seeing this, Liu Ming scrunched his eyebrows, and a gust of invisible strength rushed out with only a shake with his wrists.

The kneeling Lady Mi suddenly felt a huge force pull on her body, and became unable to keep on kneeling down.

"No need to be so polite lady. Even though this poison is strong, it will not spread in a short period of time. Although it is in my capabilities to cure the poison, it is not something that can be done in one day. I must use acupuncture and let some of the poisoned blood flow out before I can pull out the rest of the poison. After all, your son has had this poison for some time!" Liu Ming replied in a calm and unhurried tone.

"It doesn't matter. As long as there are signs of improvement, it does not scare me to wait longer. Mister, can you start drawing out the poison?" Having heard what Liu Ming said, Lady Mi replied in delight without much thought.

"How about this? I'll give it a try, but I do not wish to let others watch as I carry out my work. So, I will ask Lady and the others to leave for a bit." Liu Ming calmly spoke as he shot his gaze over the boy.

"Leave?! Mister, how do you want us to leave?" The maid did not feel surprised and instead carefully tried to clarify what Liu Ming said.

"Hmm. You don't actually need to go anywhere. I can separate you with my spell." As he muttered to himself, Liu Ming smiled as he replied. Shaking his wrists once again, a black cloud emerged in a flash, cloaking the young boy in its curtain.

The young boy who previously had his eyes wide in wonder suddenly fell into a deep slumber. As his body collapsed, an invisible force wrapped around him and brought him to float in mid-air.

Watching the scene before her unfold, the unprepared Lady Mi revealed a look of astonishment. Anxious and frightened, she was about to say something when the maid abruptly tugged at her sleeve. Changing her tone of voice just in time, she spoke, "This being the case, I thank Mister Qian for your generosity. I'll just wait here then."

Liu Ming nodded and turned to the young girl beside him. After giving her some orders, he weaved a sign with one hand and moved the young boy to a corner of the temple.

As his shadow flashed through the air, he appeared like a ghost at that corner of the temple. Weaving another sign with his other hand, clouds of black gas emerged from his body. After congealing for a while, the clouds transformed into layers and layers of black fog that covered up everything within a few feet to Liu Ming.

As a result, they looked at each other in dismay. Lady Mi and the maid could only wait as they were told to.

At this time, Lieutenant Du had finally finished interrogating the captives and walked over in big strides.

"Lady Mi, I have finished the interrogation. These people are only bandits from a nearby village. They were taken under the control of those practitioners a few days ago and were forced to attack us. Yet they do not have knowledge of who we are or any clue of the origin of those practitioners." Lieutenant Du spoke icily as she informed Lady Mi.

"Lieutenant Du, this is nothing to be baffled about. Our Hundred Spirit House only has a few competitors in the business. Besides them, who else would hire people to go after us? Anyway, I did not consider the fact that they would strike so close to Xuanjing. If I did, I wouldn't have sent the Ba brother to Xuanjing with a letter two days ago." Hearing the report, Lady Mi clenched her teeth as she replied as her eyes flashed with anger.

"If this is the case, then I won't keep the two captives anymore. In order to prevent the unexpected, I will split my people in two shifts to guard us against any unexpected threats!" Having heard what Lady Mi said, Lieutenant Du outlined her preparations.

“Sounds good. I’ll leave everything to you. It’s been an exhausting night for you, sister. Go ahead and get some rest.” With half her mind still lingering on her ill son, Lady Mi still managed to disguise a smile as she spoke.

Lieutenant Du nodded, glanced to the black fog that covered the corner of the temple and walked silently to sit next to the bonfire.

A quarter of an hour later, the previously dense fog finally dispersed after the sound of a long inhale.

In his hands, Liu Ming carried the body of the young boy. His face failed to conceal a hint of weariness that blatantly appeared on it.

On the ground nearby was a pool of black poisoned blood that emitted a foul smell, almost enough to make one vomit.

“Mister Qian, my boy...” Lady Mi rushed over and gently lifted the young boy into her arms. Seeing that he was still in a deep slumber, she couldn’t refrain from voicing her concerns.

“Don’t worry. I have removed part of the poison already. The poison will not spread in at least a few days.” Liu Ming faintly smiled as he gave her the good news.

The maid also walked over. She carefully poked a silver needle into the boy’s elbow and pulled it out. She couldn’t help but feel relieved to see only a faint layer of black where the needle went in.

Lady Mi also saw this and felt relieved as well. At once, she rushed to thank Liu Ming.

“We were fortunate this time that we met mister. Had we not, I’m afraid to say that my son would’ve died even if we had repelled those assassins. After we arrive in Xuanjing, I will definitely prepare other gifts in addition to the Spirit Medicine to fully express my thanks.”

“I don’t care much for other gifts but the Spirit Medicine for my nephew is something I need to get hold of as soon as possible. By the way, your son’s body is weak after releasing a lot of blood. After he wakes up, there’s no harm to add some supplements to his food. Of course, don’t



give him too much at once as there is a possibility of his body not being able to take in so much. Also, I will have to draw out the poison once every three days. It should take about a month to completely release all of the poison.” Shaking his head slightly, Liu Ming answered nonchalantly.

“Alright. Mister, trust me. Just wait until we arrive in Xuanjing. I will personally order someone to find that Spirit Medicine as soon as possible. For my son’s poison however, I will still need mister to aid me in releasing the poison.” Without much thought, Lady Mi replied.

# Chapter 173: Entering Xuanjing

This time, Liu Ming simply nodded without saying anything else.

Lady Mi and Aunt Hong brought the boy to their original bonfire and began preparing some supplements for the boy, who had lost a lot of blood.

....

The morning of the second day, the Black Tiger Guards once again escorted the carriages toward Xuanjing. Among the carriages was a smaller carriage with a donkey pulling it. Compared to the other carriages, this carriage did not fit in at all.

After the fight last night, seven to eight of the Black Tiger Guards had died while most other guards were wounded. However, the corpses were burned in the night and the wounded merely had their wounds dressed before donning their armor again. Besides having a paler face, one could not tell that these guards were wounded.

The huge bow behind Lieutenant Du also gained a new bowstring. She traveled next to the carriage of Lady Mi, wearing her armor.

Like this, the group traveled farther and farther on the government path. Soon, they had put the temple behind them.

.....

Inside a lavishly decorated hall in Xuanjing, a person in a colorful robe, no older than thirty with a scholarly face, had just finished looking at a secret letter sent from outside of Xuanjing. With a sudden change in his expression, he slammed the table next to him.

“How dare they! To actually try to assassinate my wife and son so close to Xuanjing. Do they really think that, I, Qian Chao won’t retaliate? Come in!” The man who just finished reading the letter gave a loud shout.

“Owner, what do you have to order!?”

A sturdy man immediately walked in from outside of the door. After

entering, he immediately gave a respectful bow.

“Immediately send the Ba Brothers out to personally escort my lady to Xuanjing. In addition, send someone to the Third Marquis saying that I want to borrow his Ghost Shadow Guards to investigate a matter.” The colorfully robed person commanded without hesitation.

“Yes, I will handle those things.” The sturdy man quickly answered as he respectfully backed out.

“Hmph, I, Qian Chao, only have this one son. No matter who wants to touch him, I won’t forgive them.” The colorfully robed man gave a grunt as he spoke to himself.

.....

At the same time, in a secret room, also in Xuanjing, a fat person with silk and satin clothing was also in a fit of rage.

“Useless! A bunch of idiots. Three middle tier practitioners with so many people attacking at once and they still didn’t complete the job. Instead they were completely wiped out by them. Those three practitioners were borrowed from master after quite a bit of effort. Now they’ve all died in this. How will I go back to master? Scram, I don’t want to see you again!”

The fat person was actually over seven feet tall and the fat on his body made him seem like a big ball. At this moment, both of his eyes were completely open as he scolded a skinny man that seemed like a butler.

The butler-looking man had a face full of fear and did not dare speak up to justify himself. However, when he heard the final sentence of the fat person, he gave a sigh inwardly and immediately backed out of the secret room.

“Brother Mu, you are really too lax with your subordinates. If someone by me made such a big mistake, he would have already been fed to the dogs.” In a corner of the secret room was a blurry shadow that was seated on a chair.

“Hmph, this butler has followed me for quite long. In addition, he is a

distant relative of my wife. Even though he messed up this time, I can't punish him too hard." The fat person let out the air in his chest as he responded with some reluctance.

"How you treat your subordinates is not my concern. However, now that the matter has failed and even the three practitioners have died because of it, I won't be able to report back to master easily." The blurry shadow gave a sigh as he replied.

"These words can be used to trick others, but why use them on me? Although the three middle tier practitioners are hard to come by in Xuanjing, they are merely normal guards by the side of master. If master really wants people of that strength, they would be extremely easy to find. As long as you put in a good word for me, I won't treat you too shabbily." When the fat person heard these words, he rolled his eyes.

Afterward, he took out a full pouch with some heartache and threw it to the corner.

"Hehe, I knew that Brother Mu would not be stingy. Alright, you can leave this matter with me. However, you should be careful. With this move of yours, you can be considered to have officially dropped all appearances with the Hundred Spirit House. That person also has quite some influence within Xuanjing and will soon track the matter down to you." The blurry shadow caught the bag and after a slight check, he gave a satisfied tone as he spoke.

"Even without your warning, I know that. However, our two houses have fought in the dark for who knows how many times. As long as I don't leave Xuanjing, there is nothing that he can do." The fat person with the surname of Mu said without worry.

"Alright, as long as Brother Mu knows. I'll first go back and report to master." The blurry shadow nodded as he made a single-handed technique. With a flicker of his shadow, he actually disappeared into the wall behind him.

This person was actually a Spirit Apostle!

After the blurry shadow left, the fat person paced around the secret

room a couple of times. Suddenly, he grabbed one of the tea cups on the table and smashed it against the ground. At the same time, he said hatefully, "Qian Chao, all of the humiliations that you have given me earlier, I definitely won't forget them. This time, you can be considered lucky, but next time, I, Mu Yingcheng, will definitely not miss."

.....

Three days later, the envoy, which Liu Ming was part of, arrived before the huge city gates, which were abuzz with people. Above the huge city gates, that were hundreds of feet tall, there were two words, Xuan Jing, painted in silver.

The line to enter the city was over a mile long, and was still growing with many people joining at the back.

At the city gates were nearly a hundred guards in white armor. They would immediately question and search people as they walked up.

On the city's tall and wide walls, one could faintly see more guards holding weapons. In addition, there were many huge crossbows, over a couple of yards long, lined up. Faintly, one could see thick, black crossbow bolts on these crossbows that emitted blue glows. Obviously, they weren't normal crossbow bolts.

Although the distance was quite far, Liu Ming could still easily see every detail of the huge crossbows and their bolts.

The huge crossbows were nothing out of the ordinary, maybe slightly larger than normal ones. However, the crossbow bolts had colorful Spirit Inscriptions on them and were in fact one time use Glyph Arrows.

Seeing this, Liu Ming was quite shocked.

From what he could see, there were at least dozens of these huge crossbows. If they all were shot at one person, even a Late Spirit Apostle would perish.

Among the guards at the city gate, under Liu Ming's Mental Strength, he found that quite a few of them were emitting a practitioner like aura.

Xuanjing was truly worth of being the capital of Da Xuan Country with its security. Even the city guards had a strength that was much stronger than the normal person. Normal Spirit Apostles would probably quietly enter and not cause a fuss.

As Liu Ming was pondering the security, the envoy of Black Tiger Guards finally reached the city gate.

Lieutenant Du urged her horse forward and threw a token at one of the guards while saying in one sentence, "Nanhai State Black Tiger Guard, escort mission back to Xuanjing on the orders of governor. Check the token if you would like."

"So it's a lieutenant of the Black Tiger Guard and the token is correct. Then we won't need to search you." The white armored guard checked over the token before throwing it back while replying with a deep voice.

With this, the envoy of carriages slowly entered the gates.

.....

Four hours later, Liu Ming was within a hall in Xuanjing. Qian Ruping was seated beside him in a chair of smaller size.

In the middle, the scholarly faced colorful robe person was currently thanking Liu Ming, "For my wife and child to arrive safely, Mister Qian really had a great hand. Mister, you can rest assured. I've already told someone to go look for the Ice Silver Grass that you need in our shop. If we have any, we will immediately send it to mister."

"Ah, if I can find the Ice Silver Grass that easily, then its for the best. Although I have controlled my nephew's sickness, I cannot wait for too long." Liu Ming nodded as he answered without a change in his expression.

"Husband, besides the Ice Silver Grass, the Qian Family has to also thank Mister Qian. After all, Hu Er's (the name of her son) poison was found by Mister Qian and delayed." Lady Mi was seated across from Liu Ming. She also chipped in with a smile.

"Yes, that is the case. I know that Mister Qian is a Spirit Apostle and

isn't in need of normal objects. How about this, in about a month, our Hundred Spirit House will be presenting an auction. If mister takes a fancy to any one of the items on the auction, I will only take half of the original price no matter what the price was. However, we entreat mister to keep removing Hu Er's poison." Qian Chao was silent for a moment before he responded.

"Since I have stuck my hands in this matter, there is no way I am going to stop halfway. Owner Qian, don't worry, as long as I can get the chance to remove the poison within your son's body a couple of times, he shouldn't have any worries after that." Liu Ming nodded as he replied without spirit.

Hearing this, the colorfully robed person became quite excited and quickly gave his thanks.

"That's right, from what I heard from my wife was that the purpose of mister's visit to Xuanjing, besides trying to find a medicine for your nephew's sickness, was to find relatives. Since Xuanjing is so large, finding someone won't be easy. How about first staying at my house? Although my house is not one of those lavish mansions or deep courtyards, finding a place for mister and your nephew is a small matter." The colorfully robed person changed the topic and spoke with enthusiasm.

TL: House is used loosely here to mean a "maze of houses". Ex: <http://a1.att.hudong.com/21/31/01300000241358127797318982310.jpg>

"Temporarily staying at your house! Alright, then I'll be disturbing you both for a while." Liu Ming's eyes flashed as he spoke without any courtesies.

When the colorfully robed person heard this, he became even more excited. After talking for a couple more sentences, he ordered a middle-aged maid in to lead Liu Ming and the young girl to the wing where guests could stay.

"Wife, how did you meet this person? Say everything and try not to miss any detail." When Liu Ming's figure disappeared out of the hall, the smile

on the face of the colorfully robed person disappeared as he asked Lady Mi with a serious expression visible on his face.



# Chapter 174: Elder Mian

“Is something amiss with Mister Qian that you have seen?” When Lady Mi heard this, she was quite surprised.

“It’s not that. It’s just that this person took action at such a time, and it’s a busy time for the Hundred Spirit House right now. I can’t help but be more careful.” The colorfully robed man shook his head.

“So it’s like that. If that’s the case, there shouldn’t be any problems with Mister Qian. After all, if he had been sent by opponents of the Hundred Spirit House, no one within the temple would have been able to stop him as a Spirit Apostle. As soon as he captured me and my son, you would be in a very disadvantaged position. I think that this person is most likely a Loose Practitioner, and we can pull him in as a guest to have the strength of Hundred Spirit House increase. Although there are many Spirit Apostles within the Hundred Spirit House, they are mostly in branches in other states. The strength we have in Xuanjing on the other hand isn’t too strong.” Lady Mi gave a smile as she replied.

“Yes, that is a possible reason, however, we should take some time to inspect him. Let’s go, we should go check on the situation of Hu Er. Elder Mian should be done with his diagnosis.” The colorfully robed man still retained a bit of caution in his words as he changed the topic to their son.

“Elder Mian is the person with the best medical skill in Hundred Spirit House. If he can cure our son, it would be for the best.” When Lady Mi heard this, she gave a nod.

With this, the two people stood up and walked out by a side door, heading beyond the room.

Moments later, the two people appeared within an extremely quiet room that faintly emitted a smell of medicine.

The boy called Qian Hu was currently asleep on a bed. Beside him was an old man with a black robe and a benign face. The old man was currently pulling on his beard in thought.

The maid who was called Aunt Hong was also in the room with an expression of reverence.

“Elder Mian, how is the poison within Hu Er’s body. It’s not too bad right?” As soon as the colorfully robed man saw the old man, he immediately asked a question with some respect.

“Owner Qian, I am very ashamed! The poison in your son’s body is quite strange and I’m afraid that I am helpless against it.” The black-robed old man stood up as he shook his head.

“What? How is that possible? Elder Mian’s medical skills are among the top ten within Xuanjing.” Hearing this, the colorfully robed man exclaimed in surprise.

“If we were talking about medical skills, I can be quite confident in saying that I do indeed possess quite some skill. However, detoxification and medical skills are two separate matters. There are countless rare and strange poisons in the world. One of such poisons appearing which I can’t cure is nothing special. However, I did inspect your son and his poison seemed to have been released slightly by someone. If that person can do the same thing a couple more times, your son should have no worries.” The black-robed old man thought for a moment before replying.

“If that’s the case then there is no problem. The person that removed the poison is going to be living in the Qian House for quite some time. However, for my son’s care after he recovers, I’ll have to bother Elder Mian on that.” After hearing the second part of Elder Mian’s response, Lady Mi gave a sigh as she replied.

“Oh, you can relax about that. Since I am here, I naturally cannot do nothing. I’ll write up a prescription for recovery. That’s right, I heard that the person who did the detoxification is a Spirit Apostle. Is it possible for me to meet him. I am very interested in such detoxification techniques and would like to see if we can exchange medical experiences.” Elder Mian gave a small smile as he spoke up again.

“That is naturally not a problem. Aunt Hong, could you lead Elder Mian to meet Mister Qian.” The colorfully robed person’s heart relaxed as he

gave an order.

“Yes.”

Aunt Hong naturally agreed.

“There’s no rush! I’ll first make the prescription and then go meet Mister Qian.” When Elder Mian heard this, he responded unhurriedly. Afterward, he sat down beside the table and took out a writing brush from the brush pot.

TL:

[http://www.asianbrushpainter.com/media/catalog/product/cache/1/thum  
memory-of-wei-jin-3\\_27.jpg](http://www.asianbrushpainter.com/media/catalog/product/cache/1/thumbnail-memory-of-wei-jin-3_27.jpg)

Aunt Hong quickly walked forward and helped pull out a piece of paper as she started to grind the ink.

.....

Liu Ming made a couple of rounds around the wide room. Suddenly, he took out a couple of colorful Formation Flags and carefully placed them into each of the corners of the room. Afterward, he made a single-handed hand sign.

All of the Formation Flags gave a buzz and disappeared into balls of mist.

Seeing this, Liu Ming’s face showed a smile.

These Formation Flags were bought from the market and required quite a bit of Liu Ming’s Spirit Stones. In addition, they only had the effect of isolating and warning those within the formation. However, they were useful when one was constantly moving around.

With this formation set up, Liu Ming did not need to fear someone else listening in on his conversations or someone setting up an attack from afar.

Although this wasn’t the first time that Qian Ruping had seen Liu Ming cast spells, she could not help but open her eyes wide, while watching the marvelous scene as her mouth slightly opened.

“Brother Ming, what was that? Was that also a spell that you talked about?” The young girl could help it no longer and asked questions.

“This isn’t a spell, it’s a formation.” Hearing this, Liu Ming smiled and explained.

He had already inspected Qian Ruping’s body and found that she had a Spiritual Pulse. Although he was unable to determine what quality her Spiritual Pulse was, he taught her the most basic condensing Yuan Qi methods and wasn’t afraid to cast spells before her.

Now that Qian Ruping had heard the word of formation, she immediately became interested and started questioning Liu Ming.

However, her questions were incredibly naive. They left Liu Ming with bitter smiles and he didn’t know how to answer.

At this time, an old voice sounded outside of the door, “Fellow Qian, are you in the room? I am Mian Songshan and would like to talk with you in the room.”

“Fellow Mian, please come in.”

When Liu Ming heard this, his eyes flashed, and after a slight hesitation, he agreed. Quickly walking forward, he opened the door.

He saw Elder Mian and Aunt Hong outside of his door.

“Mister Qian, Elder Mian is a senior G

guest of the Hundred Spirit House. When he heard that mister was also a Spirit Apostle, he came to visit mister.” Seeing Liu Ming’s confusion, Aunt Hong quickly explained the situation.

“So it’s like that. Since I’ve recently come to Xuanjing, I also want to meet more people on the same path as me.” Liu Ming smiled when he heard this and moved aside.

“I did not think that Fellow Qian was so young. It has really been out of my expectation. Then, I won’t be too courteous.” When Elder Mian saw how young Liu Ming was, he showed a surprised expression. However, he quickly hid it as he replied.

Immediately afterward, the black-robed old man moved and walked into the room.

Aunt Hong gave a word of apology as she took her leave.

“This should be your nephew. She really does have a sickness on her. I know quite a bit of medical knowledge and if fellow does not mind, I can help take a look at her pulse.” Once Elder Mian entered the room, he naturally saw Qian Ruping who was staring at him with curiosity in her face. With a twist of his mind, he quickly made a suggestion.

“Oh, if Fellow Mian is willing to lend a hand then it is Ruping’s luck. Ruping, sit tight and let Brother Mian take your pulse. “ Although Liu Ming did not know what Elder Mian’s intention by doing so was, he still agreed after a slight pause.

When the young girl heard this, she obediently sat down on a nearby chair.

Elder Mian beckoned with one hand and a chair was sucked to his side. Immediately sitting down beside the young girl, one of Elder Mian’s hand was stroking his beard as his other hand started feeling the young girl’s pulse.

Time went by slowly and the black-robed old man slowly became serious.

After an unknown amount of time, Elder Mian let out a deep breath as he said serious, “So it’s actually the Burning Blood Sickness, a rare syndrome that is only in legends. It’s really due to fellows controlling of the sickness to this stage that there is a chance for a cure. Is it that the Ice Silver Grass that fellow is trying to find to be ingested a part of the cure?”

“Brother Mian is truly extraordinary, to actually be able to guess my treatment method so soon.” When Liu Ming heard this, his expression changed.

“Fellow, please don’t blame me but earlier when I saw how young Fellow Qian was, I was doubting fellow’s medical and detoxification

skills. I naturally have no such reservations now. Besides cultivation, I am also quite engrossed in the art of medicine and my reason for coming over this time is to hopefully be able to exchange experience with fellow.” The black-robed old man stood up and cupped his hands toward Liu Ming.

“Hehe, Brother Mian is overestimating me. My medical skills are indeed not too deep and I’ve only learned a couple of cures to strange and rare illnesses from masters at the art. If fellow doesn’t mind my lack of knowledge, I have no reason to disagree.” When Liu Ming heard this, he gave a laugh as he replied.

The black-robed old man was overjoyed with his response and began discussing problems in the art of medicine.

The young girl, under instruction from Liu Ming, returned to an inside room to rest.

Liu Ming and the old man had just started talking for a short time when Liu Ming realized that the Elder Mian before him was truly talented with his medicinal skills. He made some concepts that Liu Ming had barely grasped easy to understand with his eloquent way of speaking.

This made Liu Ming quite excited as he started a wholehearted discussion of his medicinal knowledge.

The Elder Mian was also encouraged by Liu Ming’s unique take on medicine and cures to rare illnesses.

The two talked for almost an entire day!

When the sky started turning dark, Elder Mian reluctantly took his leave.

As soon as the night passed, the black-robed old man had once again appeared before Liu Ming with smiles.

Seeing this, Liu Ming was at a loss for words and could only prop himself up to start discussing with Elder Mian.

This situation continued for three days.

On the third day, Liu Ming and Elder Mian had just finished discussing

a medicine problem while Liu Ming suddenly asked the old man, “Brother Mian, I have only recently arrived at Xuanjing and may live here for a while. Could I ask if Xuanjing is peaceful right now and if there are any things that I need to be aware of?”

When Elder Mian heard this, his face slightly changed as his hand instinctively stroked his beard. After pondering for a moment, he slowly said, “Me and Brother Qian can be considered to be good friends even after such a short period of time. I can’t say too much about anything else, but I do have a piece of advice; when brother finishes his matter in Xuanjing, he should quickly leave!”

# Chapter 175: Black Spirit Group

“Since Brother Mian isn’t willing to speak of it, you must have your own difficulties. However, fellow’s good intentions are not lost on me. The reason for me coming to Xuanjing, besides finding Spirit Medicine to cure my nephew, is to resolve some personal matters, so I won’t be able to leave soon. In addition, I can’t stay too long at the Qian House. Does fellow have a suggestion on a place for Loose Cultivators like me to live at?” Liu Ming gave a slight smile as he disregarded the old man’s tone.

“Since Brother Qian has something that needs to be done here in Xuanjing, I won’t impress my will. In fact, the situation in Xuanjing is slightly strange and I have promised someone else to not leak information about Xuanjing. However, if brother really wants to understand the situation within Xuanjing, all you need to do is simply spend a couple Spirit Stones and you should be able to get what you need from various places. As for where you will stay, I have two suggestions. From what I see, Owner Qian wants to recruit you and the Hundred Spirit House does have some influence within Xuanjing. If brother is willing to become a guest of the Hundred Spirit House, you can move near my place. Me and another two guests are currently residing there and once you’re there, I can introduce them to you. Of course, if you have no intentions of joining the Hundred Spirit House, you can go over to the Immortal Dawn Mountain and rent a dwelling. The Immortal Dawn Mountain is owned by the government and has a nice environment with lots of Yuan Qi. In addition, they don’t allow anyone to fight so it can be considered a very stable area. The only problem is that the prices for the dwellings there are quite high and Loose Cultivators like me can’t afford to stay there for too long. As for places where the price is cheaper, there are a few other places. However, most of them have a large faction backing them so they’re much more chaotic. The Yuan Qi there also can’t compare to the Immortal Dawn Mountain. For example, the Virtuous South Pavilion is supported secretly by the First Prince and the Lucky Cloud Courtyard has the Black Spirit Group behind it.” Elder Mian explained to Liu Ming in detail.



TL: Dwelling = somewhat like a cave but a lot better

“Black Spirit Group?”

When Liu Ming heard these words, his expression changed.

Before he left, the Lei Spirit Master had given him a lot of material and in there was much information about the Black Spirit Group.

This group appeared about thirty years ago and its members were very mysterious.

In the legends, the people running the group were all Demon Cultivators with strong strengths. Normally, they would appear in masks and didn't know each other. Instead they used nicknames for each other.

When this group first appeared in Xuanjing, they were naturally pushed out by various factions. The first group to go against them was the “Blood Lin Pavilion” that was one of the top five underground factions within Xuanjing. The Spirit Apostles within the pavilion were killed in the matter of one night by very vicious means. Immediately, all of the other factions within Xuanjing were shocked and stopped trying to push out the Black Spirit Group.

Once the Black Spirit Group took over all of the Blood Lin Pavilion's resources, they seemed to be content and did not expand any further.

With this, the factions that were planning on joining hands let out a huge sigh, silently accepting the place of the Black Spirit Group within Xuanjing.

With the strange appearance of the Black Spirit Group, many of the Supervising Disciples within Xuanjing wanted to figure out the exact origin of the group.

Unfortunately, the group's members appeared at random and rarely showed their face before others. Thus, no one was able to find out much, let alone find out who the founder of the group was.

Now that Elder Mian had talked about this group, Liu Ming's heart naturally could not help but move.

“Brother Qian has heard of the Black Spirit Group’s name? Oh, that’s not too weird! For us Loose Cultivators, the Black Spirit Group is one of the three factions that we absolutely cannot offend. After all, most of the members are quite secretive and Demon Cultivators that specialize in assassinations. If we do offend these people, we might not even know how we died.” When the black-robed elder heard this, he could not help but smile.

“Oh, besides the Black Spirit Group, what other two factions can we not offend?” Liu Ming asked back with curiosity.

“It is obviously the government and the five sects. If you offend other large factions, you can just escape Xuanjing through the night and they can’t do much against us, Loose Cultivators. However, if you offend the government and the five large sects, even if you leave Xuanjing, you might not escape their attacks within Da Xuan Country. As for the five sects, they are the true masters of this country. As for the supervising disciples that are in Xuanjing, they are all extremely mysterious figures that normal people can’t see. Although the government is a faction that the five sects have created and no Spirit Masters are allowed within, the Silver Scale Tier Practitioners within the government number in the tens of thousands. As for the Gold Spirit Tier Spirit Apostles, there are over a hundred. The government could easily wipe out all of the factions within Xuanjing with a single sentence. The only reason that there are so many factions within Xuanjing is because the government allows it.” Elder Mian said with some hidden meaning.

“Thank you Brother Mian for your warning, I think I understand it somewhat.” Liu Ming nodded and seemed to be thinking something.

In the remaining time, the two of them talked about some things before Elder Mian stood up to say his farewell.

However, after the old man left the room, he immediately headed to the main hall of the Qian House.

Over there, Qian Chao, the owner of the Hundred Spirit House and Lady Mi were talking about something. On his face was slight anger but once

he saw the black-robed old man, he immediately started revealing a smile.

“Elder Mian, you have finally arrived. Have you found out the intention of Mister Qian on whether he would like to become a guest of our Hundred Spirit House?”

“I am very ashamed. I will have to disappoint owner. The meaning within Fellow Qian’s words did not reveal the intention of joining the Hundred Spirit House. However, he seems to want to stay in Xuanjing and won’t be leaving in the short term.”

“That’s unfortunate but it’s not a big deal. As long as Mister Qian does not immediately leave Xuanjing, we still have a chance to recruit him to Hundred Spirit House. Unfortunately, we don’t have that Ice Silver Grass and need to find it in other stores. We might have to take a bit more time.” Lady Mi first creased her brows before relaxing them after hearing his words.

“I’ve already put someone on the matter about the Ice Silver Grass and as long as Xuanjing has this Spirit Medicine, we will be able to find it. The most important part is that the Shadow Guards of the Third Marquis have helped us find the culprits behind the attack on you and Hu Er. As expected, it was directed by the Gathering Wealth Building’s Fatty Mu.” The colorfully robed person spoke with a grunt.

“Gathering Wealth Building is our opponent in terms of business and the Ninth Prince behind them is against the Third Marquis behind us. To be able to do something like that is not anything special.” When Elder Mian heard this, he stroked his beard as he chimed in.

“I have already ordered someone to keep an eye on Fatty Mu, but he has been quite alert, not leaving his house for days. However, I have already ordered our state branches to start attacking the businesses of the Gathering Wealth Building. We definitely cannot let this go so easily or else how would our Hundred Spirit House stand within Xuanjing?” The colorfully robed man responded with a serious expression.

“Husband, please don’t be mad. Besides our revenge on the Gathering

Wealth Building, what is most important right now is the success of the auction. Don't forget that we paid a huge sum of money for the right to host this auction and we definitely cannot fail. However, until now, we haven't found anything worthy of being the last item to auction." Lady Mi said with some agony.

Hearing the pretty lady's words, the anger on the colorfully robed man's face disappeared. However, after a slight pause, he said with confidence, "Relax, I received the news yesterday that the final item has been found in a branch office. In addition, it is currently being escorted to Xuanjing with the other items and definitely will make it for the auction."

"What? We've already found it? That's great. However, won't the Gathering Wealth Building attack again?" Lady Mi heard this and was excited for a moment before asking with some caution.

"You don't need to worry about the envoy. Not only have I sent two Guests outside of Xuanjing to protect it, the Third Marquis has also sent out a team of Shadow Guards. There is no chance of any problems." The colorfully robed man spoke confidently.

"The Third Marquis' Shadow Guards are indeed truly strong people, and with two fellows, there really is no need to worry." When Elder Mian heard up to this point, he also nodded.

"Yes, however, the security for this auction is extremely important and I have to discuss a couple more things with you. For the restrictions near the auction site..." The colorfully robed man's expression relaxed as he discussed details about the auction with the black-robed man.

.....

At the same time, Liu Ming left the girl in the room and headed to the back door of the Qian House.

The two guards at the back door of the Qian House recognized Liu Ming and did not dare stop him. Instead, they quickly opened the door to allow Liu Ming to pass.

The moment Liu Ming left the back door of the Qian House, he

immediately looked left and right before following a small path. Then, he traveled toward a large road and quickly mixed into the crowd.

Before arriving at Xuanjing, Liu Ming had already memorized all the main paths within Xuanjing. Thus, he did not feel foreign walking down the roads.

With left and right turns, he passed through many streets. Finally, he arrived before a silent alley and disappeared within it.

Not long later, a gray-robed person with a normal looking face casually appeared at the entrance of the alley. His gaze seemed to pass over the alley and his face suddenly changed.

The alley, which was a dead end, was completely empty without any shadow within.

The gray-robed man became quite anxious as he rushed into the alley, hoping to find a clue.

However, at this moment, a gust of wind sprung up behind him. His vision was lost and he landed on the ground with a pain on his neck.

# Chapter 176: Small Clear Temple

At this time, a light flashed as Liu Ming appeared at a spot behind the gray-robed person, that seemed void of any presence. With a flash of his eyes, he muttered to himself, "To actually not be able to see through such a simple illusion. Looks like he is merely a normal person."

Immediately after making his observation, he grabbed at the air in front of him. The originally motionless man immediately flew up and landed in Liu Ming's hand. Afterward, Liu Ming's other hand searched the man but came up empty-handed.

Liu Ming's brows creased together before he opened his mouth, releasing a breath of black gas on the face of the man.

The originally knocked out gray-robed man seemed to slowly wake up. However, the moment he opened his eyes, he met another pair of eyes that emitted a white light.

Immediately, the conscious of the man sunk as his two eyes became lifeless. At the same time, a voice which seemed to come from far away sounded in his ear, "Who are you? Who set you to follow me out of the Qian House..."

After the time it took to drink a cup of tea, Liu Ming's hand loosened as the gray-robed man fell to the ground unconscious.

"Gathering Wealth Building! Looks like they are the opponents of the Hundred Spirit House. However, it does not make much of a difference to me and I don't have to worry about this matter." Liu Ming muttered as if he had thought of something. The white light in his eyes was also gone and his eyes were back to normal.

What he had done, just a few moments ago, was not some soul-searching technique. He instead merely relied on his strong Mental Strength as a hypnotizing method.

Although this method would have no effect on Spirit Apostles, against normal people or low level practitioners, it would be quite effective.

At this time, Liu Ming made a one-handed technique and firework like sounds came from within his body. His body stretched to be taller than before by at least two heads while the rest of his body became quite well-built.

Immediately those changes, his hands rubbed his face and his face changed into that of a burly man.

Liu Ming slapped his elbow and the Sumeru Conch appeared. Putting a slight bit of Fa Li within the conch, a black robe appeared with a flash.

Taking off the green robe on him, Liu Ming shoved the robe into the conch and he immediately put on the black robe. Afterward, he walked onto the street with large strides.

After two hours, a normal looking carriage ran out of the east gate of Xuanjing and quickly arrived before a small mountain outside the city.

The moment the carriage stopped, the door to the carriage opened up.

The black-robed man, that Liu Ming had transformed into, jumped down from the carriage. After turning his head and throwing a silver at the coachman, he walked along a small path up the mountain.

After the time it took to eat a meal, he arrived before a small and quiet Taoist temple.

The Taoist temple took up no more than an acre with its door completely shut. In addition, there was a blood red wall that surrounded the temple. Looking from afar, it seemed like there were five or six houses in the temple.

Liu Ming looked up and saw three words, "Small Clear Temple" above. Immediately, he gave a slight smile and walked before the temple, giving a couple of knocks on the bronze handle.

"Who is it? If it is someone trying to give incense and answer some dreams, our temple doesn't take any visitors for the time being. The temple owner is currently in secluded cultivation and cannot welcome any guests." The door didn't open but a crisp boy's voice sounded behind it.

When Liu Ming heard this, his expression didn't change as he expressionlessly said, "I am a distant relative of the temple owner and am coming on some business."

"What? A relative of the temple owner? Then please wait." The boy seemed quite surprised.

A jogging noise sounded as the door slowly opened. From within walked out a twelve to thirteen year old boy. He had a confused expression on his face as he looked at Liu Ming.

"I have a token right here. If you bring it to your temple owner, he will naturally know who I am." Liu Ming looked at the temple boy before taking out a half jade ornament and passed it over.

"Please wait for a moment, I'll be back soon!" The temple boy paused for a second before taking the jade ornament as the door closed back up.

When Liu Ming saw this, his eyes winced but he kept quiet. He stayed in the same spot without moving.

.....

After a short period of time, the door was once again opened. The temple boy appeared again and bowed before saying with an apologetic tone, "Please come in. The temple owner has already left cultivation and waiting in the wing of the temple."

Liu Ming's eyes scanned over the temple boy as he walked forward.

Thus, he walked into the temple following the temple boy. After passing through the main hall, he came to a courtyard. The courtyard seemed to be a quiet wing of the temple.

"You can enter alone. The temple owner is inside." The temple boy walked to the wing of the temple and moved aside as he spoke respectfully.

"Alright, didn't you forget something?" Liu Ming nodded and walked forward. However, before entering, his feet paused and he asked the temple boy a question.



“Ah, that’s right. This is the token from before. Please take it!” The temple boy first stilled after hearing Liu Ming’s words but immediately realized something. He quickly took the jade ornament from his pocket and gave it to Liu Ming.

Liu Ming nodded and his arm moved. A “kacha” noise sounded!

Liu Ming’s arm suddenly extended by a huge margin and grabbed the temple boy’s neck. With a shake, Liu Ming broke the neck of the boy.

The temple boy immediately died before even making a noise!

Liu Ming’s five fingers loosened as the temple boy’s body lifelessly slid to the ground.

At almost the same time, countless small holes suddenly opened from the two side walls of the temple. Immediately after they opened, an air piercing sound came out. Countless arrows shot out and turned into many cold streaks of light that shot toward Liu Ming.

Liu Ming’s brow twitched and he flashed the Cyan Moon Sword that he had ready. With a slight shake, waves of sword shadows appeared which covered Liu Ming’s body.

Once these arrows hit the sword shadows, they all exploded apart and turned into balls of scarlet flames.

However, in the next moment, Liu Ming, within the sword shadows, gave a roar and the Sword Qi around him surged to engulf and extinguish the flames around him.

Immediately afterward, a cold light appeared within the sword shadows and a couple lines of cyan Sword Qi shot out from within. They slammed into the walls on the both sides of Liu Ming.

“Not good, run quickly!”

Immediately, many voices sounded behind the walls.

With a flash of green light, the Sword Qi disappeared within the walls.

Afterward, violent screams sounded as seven to eight white-robed people came jumping out of the walls which had now crumbled in half.

The two walls were empty on the inside and were made to be able to hide people within them.

Each of these white-robed men held a faint yellow crossbow, but in the next moment, they all were cut in two.

Liu Ming had just released a couple of Sword Qis to not only cut through the wall but to also kill all of the white-robed men within.

At this time, Liu Ming stamped his foot and rose into the sky.

At the same time, the ground below Liu Ming's feet opened up and a pair of steel claws appeared. They barely missed Liu Ming's feet.

Liu Ming's Cyan Moon Sword slashed down and a foot long Sword Qi came out.

"Sou!"

The ground beneath opened up and a yellow-colored figure shot out from the ground, trying to escape to the side.

Liu Ming's expression didn't change. He suddenly pointed a finger at the Sword Qi below him.

The cyan Sword Qi suddenly changed direction mid-air, and followed the yellow-colored figure. In an instant, it engulfed the figure within cold light.

It was actually Liu Ming using his immense Mental Strength to forcefully change the direction of the Sword Qi.

After a scream, the yellow-colored figure turned into a rain of blood.

However, Liu Ming did not seem to pay attention to what happened and instead held his sword as he remained floating mid-air. He turned his head and emotionlessly said to the wing of the temple, "To actually hide so long and not come out. Do you really think that I will let you live."

"Fellow really does have an impressive amount of power. It seems that you should be the Supervising Disciple of Barbarian Ghost Sect. I know that I am not your enemy and would like to ask, what conditions are there for my life?" A hoarse voice sounded from within the wing of the temple.

“Hehe, since you know that I am the new Supervising Disciples, how dare you ambush me? Looks like my sect’s previous Supervising Disciple disappearing was most likely due to you guys. Do you think I would let you go?” Liu Ming replied with a laugh.

“Looks like it’s either my life or yours. I still have one question that I hope fellow can answer. I personally think that all of the ambushes were done perfectly, so how did fellow find out about them?” The hoarse voice paused before slowly beginning again.

“Hmph, did you think that I would talk about these kind of things? If you aren’t willing to come out, then don’t blame me for not being nice.” Liu Ming gave a cold grunt. He did not want to waste words with the person within the house. With a single-handed technique, green Wind Blades started to appear before him. Seven to eight green lights shot out with a shake of his sleeve.

“Peng, peng!” The Wind Blades that had shot into the house seemed to have been blocked off by something.

Seeing this, Liu Ming’s gaze stilled.

His current strength paired with his perfect Wind Blade Technique, meant that the strength contained within each Wind Blade was much stronger than anything a normal Spirit Apostle could summon. Even a Middle Tier Spirit Apostle would not take the attack lightly...

Thus, the enemy within the house was at least a Late Spirit Apostle.

Liu Ming’s mind thought like this but the movements in his hand did not stop. With a change of technique, many scarlet fireballs appeared. Under the roar of Liu Ming, all of the fireballs shot down.

Before these fireballs truly landed, a hot gust arrived.

“Hong!”

A figure shot out from the roof of the house. After a twist, it began fleeing toward the mountain peak.

However, Liu Ming seemed ready for such a reaction and after a sweep

of his sleeve, a silver chain shot out like a snake. With one flick, it turned into countless chain images as it pushed down on the figure.

# Chapter 177: Black Shadow

The figure raised one of his hands and a blood red streak flew out, piercing toward the chain images.

“Da lang!”

The powerful blood streak made contact with the chain images, but did not break through. Instead, the chain images gave off a huge silver light and bounced the blood streak off.

The figure was shocked but immediately made a hand sign. With a “peng,” his body turned into seven to eight blood figures that shot out in all directions.

Seeing this, a hint of ridicule floated onto Liu Ming’s mouth.

This person was looking to die by using his illusion techniques against Liu Ming’s strong Mental Strength.

With another wave of his sleeve, the chain images all condensed into a single net that went after one blood figure.

The blood figure was shocked and suddenly yelled out, “Fellow, don’t force me to have to take you down with me.”

When Liu Ming heard this, he replied with a cold sneer. Without talking anymore, he urged the silver chain on. Suddenly, the huge silver net gave off a buzzing sound. It tightened with a flash of silver light.

The blood figure gave an angry roar as he spit out a purple-red bead. It became as big as a bowl with a breeze and went straight for the silver net. At the same time, he waved his hand and threw out a light-green, small shield. With a blur, it became a thick light barrier that protected the figure within.

In the next moment, the purple-red bead hit the huge net. It turned into rolling purple flame that exploded apart with a loud sound.

In the huge net, one could faintly see a huge purple fire lotus appearing from within. With just a twist, more purple flames came pouring out

from the net and lit up half the sky.

Liu Ming watched this scene unfold and became a little more cautious. His opponent was indeed worthy of being a Late Spirit Apostle with one or two aces up his sleeve. However, if he thought that this bit of fire could break the Suppressing Demon Chains so he could escape, he was in for a surprise.

Not only did the silver chain have other special abilities, in terms of toughness, it could match a high tier Totem!

However, with the huge commotion that his opponent had created, other cultivators would definitely come over to check everything out. Thus, Liu Ming could not waste anymore time.

Right after Liu Ming decided on a plan within his mind, he flicked his wrist. Immediately, the Fa Li within him started pouring into the Suppressing Demon Chains.

In the next moment, the huge net that was made from the silver chain gave a buzzing sound as countless silver inscriptions started to appear on it. After they appeared, the net tightened.

The purple fire lotus was wrapped tightly by the chains, and it disappeared into mere sparks after the net tightened.

The blood figure that was hiding beneath the purple fire lotus became alarmed upon seeing this. He was about to twist his body and escape but it was too late.

One of the chain images flashed down and knocked into the figure without warning. The attack was so forceful that it forced the figure to fall forward as the bloody light around was dispersed to show the figure's original appearance.

It was actually a fifty year old white-robed old man with constantly moving eyes, showing his deceitful nature.

The chain images from all angles flashed before wrapping around the old man.

Liu Ming then pulled heavily on the chain to get the old man near him. However, just as he was about to say something, he saw strange Spirit Inscriptions appear on the face of old man. Alarmed, Liu Ming punched the wrapped old man away by dozens of feet.

“Hong!”

The old man’s body exploded into many pieces under the restriction from the silver chain. The blood mist that his body transformed into covered an area thirty to forty feet wide.

If it weren’t for the fast reaction of Liu Ming, he probably would have ended up within the mist.

Although he did not know what strength the blood mist had, he could imagine that it wasn’t something simple.

After the old man exploded himself, the items on him were destroyed, so even if Liu Ming wanted to find out more clues, he had no leads.

As Liu Ming’s heart was slightly annoyed, his expression changed as he looked in a direction.

From the direction of Xuanjing, there was the sound of breaking wind and there faintly seemed to be someone flying over.

Without another word, Liu Ming made a hand sign and flew behind the small mountain. After flying for about a dozen miles, he stopped at another mountain peak and followed the mountain path down.

As he walked, he thought about what had just happened.

In the sect information, the Small Clear Temple was a secret base that could communicate with the sect. All of the members of the temple were all Outer Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples and were there to help the Supervising Disciple as well as to pass information back to the sect.

Under normal circumstances, even if the Supervising Disciple met trouble, this location would be safe.

Originally, Liu Ming wanted to use the Small Clear Temple to report back to the sect that he had arrived in Xuanjing as well as find out more

information about the disappearance of the last Supervising Disciple. However, he did not think that this place had been wiped out and set up as a trap.

If it were any other Middle Spirit Apostle to Late Spirit Apostle Supervising Disciple, not Liu Ming, they probably would have fallen to the ambush. After all, the trap consisted of many practitioners with Glyph Arrows and a Middle Spirit Apostle and Late Spirit Apostle at the same time.

As for how Liu Ming found out that it was a trap, it all started with the jade ornament.

According to the sect rules, if a new Supervising Disciple appeared, the person currently in charge of the temple would have to take out the other half of the jade ornament. If they fit perfectly together, the two of them would meet.

At that time, the temple people would also inspect the sect token that represented the status of the Supervising Disciple. Only then did they finish all of the procedures mandated.

However, the temple boy took the jade ornament, and when the door again, the temple boy didn't have the other part to the jade ornament. This made Liu Ming quite suspicious.

When he was brought to the yard, Liu Ming noticed the people in the walls and the person below him due to his outstanding Mental Strength. Then, he could attack freely without any hesitation.

However, the fact that no Spirit Masters were allowed in Xuanjing meant that a Late Spirit Apostle was an extremely strong being. The people behind the ambush not only dared to attack Barbarian Ghost Sect disciples, but were also easily commanding a Late Spirit Apostles as one of their underlings. From this it could be seen how strong they were.

What made Liu Ming shocked was the fact that after being caught, the white-robed old man blew himself up without hesitation.

This was a Late Spirit Apostle. All cultivators that got to such a level



should in theory be very cherishing of their lives and would not easily do something suicidal.

With this, it could be seen how strange and terrifying this faction was.

Looks like Liu Ming's actions in the future would have to be more careful. Before he found out the exact details of the faction, he couldn't let his identity be exposed.

Liu Ming quickly made this decision in his mind.

.....

At the same time, in an abnormal dark hall within Xuanjing, three black shadows were sitting by a table.

Among them, one of the shadows was quite big and tall. The shadow was currently stroking a split blood-red, wooden token. The shadow was using a strange voice as he slowly said, "The ninth emissary has been forced to self explode. Looks like the Supervising Disciple that the Barbarian Ghost Sect sent out this time is quite strong. If we had known this, we would have sent more emissaries."

"According to the past strengths of the Xuanjing Supervising Disciples of the five sects, one emissary with so many people would be more than enough. In addition, some of the factions have started to become suspicious of us. The others are also on missions. The reason why we have sent number nine over was as a precaution. According to what we've seen before, once a Supervising Disciple of the five sects disappears, it would take at least half a year before someone else is sent over. Who would have guessed that he would have come so fast!" The other shadow said coldly.

"Whatever, even if the Supervising Disciple of the Barbarian Ghost Sect has come early, number nine revealed his appearance before he exploded. All we need to do now is be a little more careful and he won't be able to find anything. Instead, we need to be vigilant about the other sects Supervising Disciples. We have already confirmed the identities of the Nine Enchantment Sect's, Firestorm Way's, and Hall of Blood's supervising Disciples. However, we don't know the identity of the

Heavenly Moon Sect's Supervising Disciple. I don't want things to get to a critical point and the disciple pops up to mess everything up. Number three, how are things on your side. Can we push up the schedule? The time remaining for us is not too much; we need to finish within half a year." The tall shadow was silent for a moment before speaking.

"Relax, my progress definitely has no problems. For this, we have prepared dozens of years and we can't fail now at the final step. However, number one, your identity is extremely important to cover us. No one has discovered that you are a fake right?" The final shadow spoke with confidence as he asked a question back.

"During these years, anyone who has discovered a problem with my identity has been killed and everyone in the house are my people. There are no problems." The tall shadow replied without hesitation.

"Alright, that's for the best. However, now that number nine is gone, let's find a clever subordinate and open the Essence Blood Pool to raise his cultivation become a Late Spirit Apostle to replace number nine. That's right, do not forget to plant a restriction within his body and conscious in order to ensure that he doesn't spill our secrets. Hehe, besides us three, the others are mere tools and we cannot let them have a chance to betray us." The final shadow spoke coldly.

"Even without you saying so, I understand this. However, there isn't much Essence Blood within the Essence Blood Pool and we need to store a bit more." The second shadow replied.

"The Essence Blood is an easy matter. During this time, there have been some Loose Cultivators entering Xuanjing. All we need to do is pick a couple of the ones without backgrounds to capture. I can handle this." The last shadow informed without hesitation.

# Chapter 178: The Spy and the Immortal

## Dawn Mountain

“No. It is different now than compared to the past few years. The larger factions have already begun to pay attention to us. If any other Loose Cultivators disappear, perhaps they really will raise their alert levels. It is better for me to use my real identity to attract a group of Loose Cultivators before causing them to disappear without anyone knowing.” The tall shadow shook his head as he rejected the idea.

“Since there is an even more secure way of resolving this matter, I naturally do not mind. Also, there shouldn’t be any problems with the government, right? How come I hear rumors that there are a few Gold Spirit Tier guests that have also begun to investigate our matters.” The last black shadow spoke seriously after nodding his head.

“Gold Spirit Tier guests, this really is somewhat troublesome. As soon as we touch a single one of those guests of the government, it is like provoking the whole hornet’s nest. Rather than working for the government, the truth is that the Gold Spirit Tier guests belong specifically to the people of the imperial family. However, if the people within the imperial family really paid attention to us, I would hear some rumors. It should just be the personal actions of those guests as of right now. How about this, I’ll find other people to see what they have right now when I get back. Before this, do not provoke those Gold Spirit Tier guests. The imperial family is not the same as the five great sects which are thousands of kilometers away; if they hear anything about our plans, they will take action immediately and be very happy about taking over our operation. As for the strength of the imperial family of the Da Xuan Country, perhaps they have already secretly raised their own Spirit Master and are just unwilling to reveal him.” The tall shadow spoke in such a way.

“What, the imperial family already has a Spirit Master? Where did you get this information from?” Hearing what was said, the second shadow

seemed to be in great shock.

“I do not have solid evidence for this just yet, so it is only a guess.” The tall shadow replied while shaking his head.

“Even if it is true, those Spirit Masters of the imperial family are not worth being scared over. Otherwise, as soon as one Spirit Master leaves behind a mark, perhaps the first thing the five great sects would do is exterminate the entire imperial family. How about this, when I return, I will let my underlings avoid the Gold Spirit Tier guests to the best of their ability for now. Luckily, we only need to endure this for half the year and everything will be resolved.” The last shadow stayed silent for a little before speaking with a sneer.

“Yes, we can only do this first.” The second shadow sighed and spoke.

The three shadows continued to talk, during the remaining time, before they all stood up and left the hall one by one.

.....

When Liu Ming returned to Xuanjing again, it was already the afternoon.

As for the current him, he had already transformed into a middle-aged cultivator with a long beard. He walked on one of the streets in Xuanjing as if he was just looking around.

Suddenly, with a movement of his body, he turned into a seemingly normal alleyway.

The alleyway could not be considered long. There were seven or eight stores that had different signs lined up.

After taking a few steps, Liu Ming stopped in front of a coffin store, which had a white banner hanging in front of it, and walked in unhurriedly.

“Customer, are you looking to order a coffin?”

A middle-aged, hunchbacked male was currently painting black paint on a new coffin. Seeing that Liu Ming walked in, he immediately put down

what he was doing and walked over. He asked with a slight cough.

Liu Ming glanced at the hunchback a few times and did not say anything. He instead pulled out a silver token from within his sleeve and swiped it in front of him.

Seeing the medallion, the hunchback, who was originally calm, suddenly changed his expression. With a sudden movement of his body, he quickly closed the doors of the shop.

Afterward, he returned to where he had been before, in front of Liu Ming. With a flash, he also produced a black metal token on him.

Looking at just the size and shape by ignoring the color, it was actually extremely similar to the silver token in Liu Ming's hands.

Liu Ming raised a brow, and with a flick of his wrist, he tossed the silver medallion across.

Seeing this, the hunchback also threw the black metal token seriously.

Liu Ming caught the metal token, glancing over it indifferently before he channeled Fa Li into it.

A layer of black inscriptions immediately appeared after a flash on the metal token. They revealed a few more weird black inscriptions.

Only after looking carefully at the runes did Liu Ming nod and withdraw his Fa Li. The glow around the black metal token dispersed and returned to how it was before.

At this moment, that hunchback took out a small bottle. He poured and rubbed some unknown liquid onto the silver token. Only after looking at the item in his hand for a while did he relax a lot and toss the silver token back.

"The identity of the emissary has been verified. As a reserve spy, I thought that I would not come in contact with anybody from the sect at all for my whole life."

"I am the new Supervising Disciple for Xuanjing. Do you know about the manner regarding the previous Supervising Disciple's disappearance?" Liu

Ming also returned the black metal token back to the other person and asked without changing his expression.

“There is no need for sir to probe me! As a spy for the sect, my Fa Li has already been crippled, so I do not investigate anything normally or get close to any spirit apostles. I can only live in Xuanjing like a normal person. My only use is that in times of need, I can provide sir with a channel to communicate with the sect. Since sir has found me, it seems that the other communication channel does not exist anymore.” The hunchback spoke slowly.

“Very good, you actually have kept to your part very well. Otherwise, perhaps you wouldn’t live until now.” Hearing what was said, Liu Ming was not angered and instead nodded and praised him.

“Come with me emissary. The formation for communicating with the sect is buried deep under and is inspected once every two years. However, the last time it was used was twenty years ago.” The hunchback breathed in deeply and spoke.

Liu Ming nodded and followed him to the back of the store.

After walking through a small yard, he walked into a normal looking side room.

The room was not big, and other than a bed, a table, and two chairs, there was no other furniture.

The hunchback walked to the bed with a few steps and suddenly used his two hand to powerfully pull some sort of mechanism under the bed.

The wooden bed immediately gave off a “ga beng” sound and split in two to open up. It revealed a dark tunnel and a flight of simple stone stairs that seemed to lead straight down.

The hunchback pulled out a torch and waved it in the wind to light itself. He then followed the stairs down.

Liu Ming’s expression changed slightly before following the hunchback down as well.

Not long after the two walked in, the wooden bed which was originally split once again gave out a mechanical sound and actually joined together by itself.

The two continued to walk down around another three hundred feet before finally arriving in an enormous underground stone room.

In this stone room, which was only a hundred or so feet in length, there was a huge formation that was already set up on the ground. The grooves outside of the formation had already been filled with pieces of white spirit stones.

In the center of the formation, there was a round stone platform ten feet tall. It was covered in numerous spirit inscriptions; surprisingly, it was also a small scale formation.

“This is the Communication Formation. Even though the distance apart is great, it is enough to immediately send information back to the sect. However, the amount of space crystals expended is also extremely shocking. If the circumstances allow it, it is best to shorten the message transferred as much as possible. The emissary must have learned how to use it, so I will not continue to ramble on.” The hunchback spoke from outside the formation.

“Yes, before I came, I indeed learned some ways to use it.” Liu Ming looked at the stone platform and furrowed his brows slightly. Afterward, he replied emotionlessly.

“Since it is like this, I will go out first and guard. After the emissary has finished using it, you can just come up. There is no need to worry about the fluctuations of the formation being detected. This stone room is carved out of a special material. It is enough to absorb the fluctuations.” The hunchback nodded and explained the situation before minding his own business. He returned to the top of the stone steps.

Only after walking around the formation a few times did Liu Ming form a one-handed seal. Many rays of green light shot out and disappeared into the formation with a flash.

That moment, the entire formation began to hum loudly, and the

surrounding spirit inscriptions began to flash....

Two hours later, Liu Ming left the coffin shop and walked out of the alleyway. He appeared on the street again.

In the remaining time, he strolled casually around the nearby streets.

Just before the sky grew dark, he once again entered a desolate alley. However, when he walked out from the other end, he had turned into the appearance of the young, twenty-seven or twenty-eight year old scholar again. He walked slowly in the direction of the Qian house.

.....

The morning of the next day, Liu Ming, who had rested for a night, once again left the Qian house from the back door.

This time, he beckoned a carriage on the street. After instructing the coachman, he traveled toward the Immortal Dawn Mountain.

The Immortal Dawn Mountain was different than the other small mountains outside of Xuanjing. Xuanjing itself had a portion of buildings that were built on the mountains and the entire Immortal Dawn Mountain belonged to the government. Not only were a large number of government soldiers garrisoned there year around, it was even a location where Yuan Qi was densest, which was directly given to those Gold Spirit Tier guests that the government had.

The dwellings that were rented out were the locations on the Immortal Dawn Mountain where the Yuan Qi was the least dense.

Even like this, the rent for the dwellings was frighteningly expensive. It was enough for the average Loose Cultivators to feel constant pain. As such, the renting business was not doing very well. There really were not many Loose Cultivators living on the Immortal Dawn Mountain.

When Liu Ming arrived in a hall on the Immortal Dawn Mountain and said that he wanted to rent an intermediate level dwelling for a long time, the middle-aged manager who stood in front of him could not help but beam with joy.



He immediately opened a map in front of Liu Ming, which showed the locations for the various dwellings, allowing him to pick his own dwelling.

Looking at the map, Liu Ming casually asked about a few places that interested him. After a series of nods or shakes, he finally chose a remote location with a small river that just happened to pass outside of the dwelling.

With the manager leading the way, Liu Ming personally went to the dwelling and checked it. Feeling rather satisfied, he immediately paid a year's rent of several thousand Spirit Stones. Only after that did the beaming manager hand over the token for the dwelling in his hand.

Almost all of these dwellings had a few simple formations cast outside. If someone did not have a token and charged in recklessly, they would alert the patrolling soldiers lower on the mountain. Compared other places, the Immortal Dawn Mountain could be considered an extremely safe place.

Liu Ming, who left the Immortal Dawn Mountain, did not immediately return to the Qian house, and instead continued to roam around Xuanjing for most of the day.

At night, when he returned to the Qian house again, there was actually somebody waiting within his residence.

# Chapter 179: Virtuous Lord

“It is so late, why is Owner Qian here. Perhaps you have some urgent matters?” Seeing the person within the residence, he immediately asked with surprise.

This person was the owner of the Qian house, Qian Chao.

“Mister Qian, the reason why I am here is actually to tell you some good news. The people underneath me have finally bought a stalk of the Ice Silver Grass that mister wanted from another store. However, it would be best for mister to see it personally and see if it is really of use.” Qian Chao immediately stood up and spoke with smiles.

“If your words are true, then I will really have to have a look.” Hearing what was said, Liu Ming was naturally very happy.

Only then did Qian Chao pull out a wooden box from his sleeve and pass it over with a smile.

Liu Ming received the wooden box and opened it. From within, a faint silver Spirit Grass with three leaves could be seen. It seemed to give off a slight cold air.

Seeing this, a few serious expressions flashed across Liu Ming’s face. With a flash in his hand, a silver needle of several inches appeared.

Liu Ming used one hand to hold the wooden box and two fingers of his other hand to hold the silver needle. He stabbed into one of the the leaves of the spirit grass...

Hiss.

The moment the silver needle pierced through the light silver leaf, a cold feeling immediately traveled through the needle and to his fingers.

After a blur of his fingers, Liu Ming pulled the silver needle back out of the spirit grass and swept his gaze in front of him.

The front half of the silver needle was surprisingly covered in a layer of frost.

“Not bad, this is at least an Ice Silver Grass with fifty years of aging. It is enough to treat my niece. This time, I have really troubled Owner Qian. I will be impolite and take it.” After observing the situation on the needle carefully, Liu Ming relaxed and spoke. At the same time, the needle between his fingers disappeared with a flash.

“Hehe, as long as this Spirit Grass is useful, it’s great. This item was the reward the madam promised you when you saved her. I only found it now, so I still need to apologize to mister.” Qian Chao spoke with a laugh.

“Owner Qian is too polite. What I did before was just a convenient matter in the passing..” Liu Ming replied modestly. After putting the lid back onto the box, he put the Ice Silver Grass away carefully.

“Actually, I have another reason for coming this time. I don’t know whether I should mention it or not.” Seeing Liu Ming put the wooden box away, Qian Chao could not help but have his smile grow wider.

“Oh, there is no harm if Owner Qian says what he wants.” Hearing what was said, Liu Ming quickly thought a little and spoke without his expression changing at all.

“From the madam, I heard that Mister Qian also knows a few things about our Hundred Spirit House. However, I wonder how mister feels about them?” Qian Chao suddenly became serious, and asked a question.

“What Owner Qian is saying is...” Liu Ming squinted his eyes and asked a question.

“Not hiding anything from mister, I learned from Elder Mian that not only is Mister Qian’s Fa Li impressive, even his medical knowledge is not below the elder. Mister is a man with such talents, the Hundred Spirit House seeks these talented people. So the reason why I have personally came over this time was to formally invite mister to become a guest of the Hundred Spirit House. All of the costs and expenditures can be compared to the highest treatment.” Qian Chao spoke the truth directly and frankly.

“Join the Hundred Spirit House? Perhaps I will be disappointing Owner Qian, I still do not have this idea.” Hearing what was said, Liu Ming

furrowed his brows and replied.

“Why is that? Mister wants to spend a long time living in Xuanjing, perhaps joining one of the factions within Xuanjing is going to occur sooner or later since you are a Loose Cultivator. I am not boasting, even if the treatment of Hundred Spirit House to their guests is not the best within the entire Xuanjing, we are ranked at least in the top five. As long as mister joins the Hundred Spirit House, not only will you receive a decent amount of Spirit Stones as an offering, but our house can also help you collect any pulls or weaponry if you lack any. Also, our constraints of the guests can be considered very loose. If the guest feels that the mission he has received is too dangerous and may die, he has the power to deny it. I will not make any guest do something that is absolutely impossible. After all, looking at my personality, the reason a power like us requires guests is mainly used to scare people. The occasions of actually having guests personally act are actually not frequent.” Qian Chao did not feel surprised at all and instead spoke with a smile.

“Since Owner Qian is so sincere, I will not hide anything anymore and say everything I want to say. Regarding the treatment of the Hundred Spirit House to its guests, I have also heard a little from fellow Mian; it is indeed not bad. The reason why I am unwilling to agree, is that the Hundred Spirit House has just provoked a powerful enemy, otherwise, the lady and the young master would not be attacked near Xuanjing. The reason I came to Xuanjing this time was to manage some private affairs. I do not want to be purposely involved in trouble, so I can avoid wasting a large portion of my energy.” Liu Ming replied slowly.

“So it is like that. It seems that it is because Mister Qian still does not really like the situation of our Hundred Spirit House as of right now. If that is true, then Mister Qian will not have to worry too much. I have already found out who is behind all of the enemies against the Hundred Spirit House recently; it is all due to the Gathering Wealth Building who are against us. As the old saying says it well: two of a trade are enemies. Also, if you put our businesses together, perhaps it is enough to be responsible for around twenty to thirty percent of all the cultivation

resources in Xuanjing, so we naturally fight a lot. I myself also have a deep grudge with the manager of the Gathering Wealth Building, Mu Yingcheng. However, even though it is like this, we two businesses were unable to get rid of each other in so many years. It is true that one of the reasons is because our powers are almost equal, but the main reason is still that our two businesses have other backings that will not allow either business to fail. So mister does not need to worry about the problems the Hundred Spirit House encounters at all. As long as we wait for the great auction next month to begin successfully, our house will have the power to suppress the Gathering Wealth Building. I believe that the opposition will not come provoke us in the next few years.” Qian Chao began to explain in detail in a flash.

“There are backings? For such a powerful force to still have a backing, I think that person must have a powerful background. I wonder if Owner Qian is willing to tell me a little?” After hearing what was said, Liu Ming asked with some surprise.

“That naturally is not a problem. Actually, for a force in Xuanjing to survive, it must have some backing. Otherwise how could it really stand firm in Xuanjing. Since the Hundred Spirit House and the Gathering Wealth Building are opponents, the backings behind us are something everyone knows, so there is no need to hide them. The person backing our Hundred Spirit House is actually the younger brother of the current emperor, the ‘Third Marquis.’ A third of all of our profits must be handed over to the Third Marquis. As for the Gathering Wealth Building, their backing is the current day Ninth Prince. However, they are different than our house; on the surface, it is the manager Mu Yingcheng managing everything but he is actually just a servant of the Ninth Prince. The entire Gathering Wealth Building is actually just the Ninth Prince’s private property. So no matter how hard we two businesses fight, we will never destroy each other. Even our backings would not let such a matter happen.” Qian Chao explained seriously.

“The Third Marquis, perhaps you are talking about that third marquis who helped the current day emperor ascend to the throne and is known as

the Virtuous Lord?” Liu Ming’s heart suddenly skipped a beat. However, he asked without revealing anything on his face.

“Oh, who would have thought that Mister Qian has also heard of what the Third Marquis was known as years ago. Then this should be easier to handle; it is indeed this Virtuous Lord. Has mister Qian changed his mind and become willing to become a guest of our House?” Qian Chao asked with some surprise.

“Since the troubles that the Hundred Spirit House are facing against are temporary and you also have the backing of the Third Marquis, the Virtuous Lord, if I still say that I decline, perhaps I really will make Owner Qian unhappy. I can agree to join the Hundred Spirit House. However, before I do there are two conditions that I hope Owner Qian will agree to.” Liu Ming whispered to himself silently a little before focusing his attention and speaking softly.

“Feel free to speak of any conditions Mister Qian has.” Hearing what was said, Qian Chao was delighted and hurriedly asked.

“First, I can only join the Hundred Spirit House as a guest for the period of time I am at Xuanjing. If I leave Xuanjing one day, my identity as a guest will naturally become invalid. However, Owner Qian does not need to worry, I will be in Xuanjing for at least two to three years, possibly even five to six years. Secondly, for the payment as a guest of the Hundred Spirit House, other than Spirit Stone offerings every month, I also want to learn some alchemy. So, I hope you can recommend me to an Alchemist for me to learn some alchemy. Of course, I also understand that real masters of alchemy do not normally accept disciples, so all I want is the recommendation of the Hundred Spirit House. I personally have ways of persuading the alchemist. However, the alchemists recommended by the house must have great attainment in alchemy and can create pills that can be used by Spirit Masters or above.” Liu Ming spoke slowly.

“What? Mister Qian wants to learn alchemy?” Liu Ming’s word made Qian Chao greatly surprised.

“What? Am I not allowed to learn?” Hearing such, Liu Ming raised both

of his eyebrows.

“That naturally is untrue. It is just that even though I am not a Spirit Apostle, I know that alchemy is almost the hardest skill a cultivator can learn. As for the cultivators that are really willing to spend time in practicing such a skill, there are almost none. However, if mister is really interested in alchemy, our Hundred Spirit House really does have some connections with a few alchemists and can recommend you. However, for an alchemist who can create pills that are for Spirit Master or above, they are rare even in the various great sects. As for inside Xuanjing, perhaps there is only one person with such skill. However, this alchemist has an extremely weird temperament. Even though our House has done business with him several times, such as helping auction his pills, we really do not have too big of an assurance that he will be willing to teach mister the art of alchemy.” Qian Chao replied after hesitating a little.

“That does not matter. As long as Owner Qian can let me meet him once, that will suffice. I will handle the matter of learning alchemy myself.” Liu Ming instead beamed after hearing what was said.

“Good, if it is like that, I am able to agree with the two conditions Mister has stated.” This time, Qian Chao only thought for a moment before agreeing with his teeth clenched.

“Then Qian Ming pays his respects to the Owner.” Liu Ming smiled a little, and bowed to Qian Chao.

# Chapter 180: Yuan Spirit Flying Sword

“Haha, Mister Qian need not be so polite. Tomorrow, I will have someone send over a guest token and as for your residence...” Qian Chao said with excitement.

“The matter of residence doesn’t need to trouble owner. I like peace and serenity and have already rented a place a cave at the Immortal Dawn Mountain. Once the auction ends, I will take out the poison within your son and move over.” Liu Ming replied without hesitation.

“If that’s the case then mister will need quite a bit of Spirit Stones per month. How about this, the Spirit Stones given to mister per month will increase by ten-percent.” Qian Chao was first surprised before he replied as such.

“Then I’ll thank owner for your generosity.” Hearing this, Liu Ming gave his thanks.

Afterward, this owner of the Hundred Spirit House chatted with Liu Ming for a couple of minutes before taking his leave.

Liu Ming followed the owner to the door before returning to his room with a thoughtful expression on his face.

In the remaining time, Liu Ming immediately used the Ice Silver Grass to make the medicine for Qian Ruping. Then, he began using other methods to completely get rid of the sickness.

At the same time, Qian Chao returned to the main hall.

There, Elder Mian was seated and currently tasting some tea.

“Owner, you’re back. Looking at the happiness on your face, was the talk successful? Will Mister Qian be joining the Hundred Spirit House?” The black-robed man looked at Qian Chao’s expression and gave a slight smile.

“Hehe, Elder Mian has always been able to discern everything even if I try to hide it. With the talk, Mister Qian agreed. However, he had two terms and now I am going to have to use a huge favor to someone.” Qian



Chao said smiling.

“Oh, waste a big favor! Owner is saying...” Elder Mian said with some surprise.

“The first term that Mister Qian made was not too bad but the second term he wanted to have Master Fan teach him alchemy.” The happiness on Qian Chao’s face simmered as he spoke with some seriousness.

“Alchemy, Master Fan! Is owner talking about Master Fan Baizi?” Hearing this, Elder Mian’s face slightly changed.

“Right, besides Master Fan Baizi, is there anyone else in Xuanjing worthy of the name of Master?” Qian Chao replied without hesitation.

“However, Master Fan Baizi doesn’t take visitors normally. How is it possible for him to teach Fellow Qian the art of alchemy?” Elder Mian was quite surprised.

“I naturally know that. However, Mister Qian merely wants a recommendation and seems to have his own plans to convince the master.” Qian Chao sighed as he replied.

“A recommendation is possible with owner’s relationship with Master Fan. So that’s why owner was talking about using up a favor. However, the actions of Fellow Qian might be wasted.” When Elder Mian heard this, he replied with a sudden realization.

“As long as this Mister Qian is like you and also a Late Spirit Apostle, such a price is more than fair. However, this Mister Qian looks really young. Does he really have that astounding of a cultivation?” Qian Chao nodded before showing some worry on his face.

“What? Does owner not trust in my judgement? Hehe, although this Fellow Qian has never stated anything but from what Aunt Hong said and my personal observations during the past few days, I can say confidently that his cultivation is definitely above mine. Even if owner paid a larger price, as long as you can recruit him to the Hundred Spirit House, it would be worth it.” Elder Mian smiled as he replied.

“With Elder Mian’s words, I can relax. A Late Spirit Apostle guest is a

huge help to the Hundred Spirit House right now. Even if we merely use some rumors, Elder Mian will be able to use the opportunity to attend to some other matters.” Qian Chao’s expression relaxed as he responded.

“That’s right, have you found anything about the origin of Fellow Qian? For him to be a Late Spirit Apostle at such a young age, he should be quite a famous Loose Cultivator.” Elder Mian thought of something else as he asked.

“I have naturally already sent someone to find out information. However, they haven’t found anything yet. From what I think, Mister Qian might not be someone from this country and instead a cultivator from another country. Otherwise, how else could there be no information about him.” Qian Chao’s expression became serious once again.

“That’s hard to say. Most Loose Cultivators aren’t able to join sects, and thus use the path of Bitter Cultivation in isolation from the outside world. As long as there are enough resources, it is not strange for them to cultivate for over a hundred years without coming out. However, from the manner of this Fellow Qian, he doesn’t seem like someone who has been secluded. Rather, it is more probable that he is a cultivator from another country. With his cultivation at such a young age, he might even be a sect disciple of another country.” Elder Qian said with some thought.

“What? Does Elder Mian think that Mister Qian is a cultivator from another country that betrayed his sect?” When Qian Chao heard these words, his face changed drastically.

“Hehe, Owner Qian does not need to worry. Even if he really is a cultivator from another country that betrayed his sect, this is the capital of Da Xuan Country so what fear is there. In addition, there are other cultivators from other countries that are serving as guests for other factions.” Elder Mian gave a laugh as he replied.

“That’s true. As long as this person doesn’t have any ill will toward our Hundred Spirit House, I don’t need to worry about anything. Three or four out of ten of cultivators within Xuanjing have some problem with their identity.” Qian Chao spoke his thoughts out loud before also smiling.

Elder Mian held his beard in his hand as he made a small smile.

.....

In the next five to six days, Liu Ming left during the day and randomly wandered the streets of Xuanjing. In addition, he bought some information about Xuanjing from some hidden factions in the city and finally got a basic understanding of the current situation.

On the night of the final day, Liu Ming pulled out the final silver needle from Qian Ruping and looked at the smiling, round, healthy face with a small smile. He softly covered the girl with the bedding next to him and left the side of the bed to enter the adjacent room.

In this room, he climbed up to his bed and calmly sat down. He thought about what he had done during the past few days.

After a couple days of work, Qian Ruping's strange sickness was finally completely cured. As long as she took care of herself in the future, she could live like a normal person.

At this time, he could finally focus his mind on his real missions in Xuanjing.

Liu Ming entering Xuanjing to find out what had happened to the previous Supervising Disciple was secondary to his missions of waiting for his Fa Li to purify, find enough Pure Aura Qi, and also discover the truth behind the secret that his father left.

The first two points were definitely things that took a lot of time and effort; therefore, they could not be completed quickly.

The third point related to a specific place – the “House of the Third Marquis.”

According to his father's last words, he had left Liu Ming a thing in an extremely secret position within the house of the Third Marquis. His father could only enter the house before he could find out the truth about the secret he had uncovered.

Liu Ming had originally wanted to wait until he had lived within

Xuanjing for a while before finding a way to sneak into the house. However, he had never thought that the Hundred Spirit House, a group he had randomly linked up with, would be related to the House of the Third Marquis.

Otherwise, he might not have agreed to be a guest of the Hundred Spirit House.

After all, with his strength, he could successfully become a part of any faction. There was no need for him to choose so quickly.

However, he could naturally not let this chance pass by.

Liu Ming knew that as long as he was slightly patient, he could easily get into the house of the Third Marquis through his relationship with the Hundred Spirit House. This was much safer and more stable than trying to sneak into the house by force.

Liu Ming thought like this as a slight smile appeared on his face. His two eyes closed for a second as a faint gold light ball appeared within his conscious. With a slight touch of his Mental Strength, the light ball turned into a faint-gold book that opened up slowly page by page.

It was the Great Symbol Sword Technique from the Six Yin Master!

This sword technique was extremely dense and hard to understand. Even with Liu Ming's intelligence, he could only learn about ten-percent to twenty-percent of the entire technique.

What Liu Ming had learned turned out to be the most basic portion of the technique. In fact, it was simply a method of drawing in the Gold-Attributed Spirit Air around one's body, and how to begin cultivating one's own Sword Spirit Embryo.

Liu Ming finally understood what a Sword Spirit Embryo meant. It was an important prerequisite to refining a Yuan Spirit Flying Sword.

According to the sword technique, there were two types of true Flying Swords.

One of them was a normal sword type Totem that was refined to be able

to be used with one's thought.

The power of these Flying Swords were not too different from normal totems, and if they were destroyed, there wouldn't be too much of an impact to the owner of the Flying Sword.

However, high level Sword Cultivators would look upon these Flying Swords with disdain.

One would need to use their own essence blood to cultivate the other type known as the Sword Spirit Embryo. Then, one would pour that into a pre-refined Flying Sword body and combine the two. From there, one could refine the legendary Yuan Spirit Flying Sword.

Because this kind of Flying Sword had one's own essence blood poured into it, the power in it was abnormally strong. In addition, they were like an extension of one's arm and could kill an enemy from hundreds of miles away. This was a true Flying Sword and something that countless Sword Cultivators longed for.

Of course, once these Yuan Spirit Flying Sword were destroyed, their owners would be greatly hurt. Some were even refined in such a way that the owner would die if his or her sword was destroyed.

Thus, the material that these high level Sword Cultivators procured for their Yuan Spirit Flying Swords were not materials used to forge normal totems.

# Chapter 181: Chen House

Most Spirit Materials that were used to make normal sword and blade type Totems were not even considered by Sword Cultivators.

Even the piece of Deep Sea Cold Steel Gui Ruquan had, could barely be considered as a material for refining a Yuan Spirit Flying Sword. For some higher level Sword Cultivators, it was not even close to being good enough.

However, there were much too few suitable Flying Sword raw materials in this world and a Sword Cultivator's main strength was in their swords.

Thus, when some Sword Cultivators had no success in finding a suitable material, they would have to use some normal materials to refine their Yuan Spirit Flying Sword. However, they would be very cautious when using their Flying Sword to attack opponents.

Some Sword Cultivators were too concerned about their own safety and actually gave up on the idea of refining a Yuan Spirit Flying Sword. Instead, they would merely refine some sword type Totems that were a bit better than the rest.

Although their Flying Sword's power would decrease greatly, at least they didn't need to worry about their sword breaking and them dying with the sword.

With Liu Ming's cultivation, he had no need to consider the refining of his Yuan Spirit Flying Sword, but he could take the chance to first cultivate his own Sword Spirit Embryo.

Liu Ming had been extremely interested in the legendary path of the Sword Cultivator. Now that he had this Great Symbol Sword Technique, he would naturally not ignore it

According to what the Great Symbol Sword Technique said, the Sword Spirit Embryo was only composed of energy; therefore, it had lower strength compared to a Yuan Spirit Flying Sword and would weaken by quite a bit after leaving one's body, but if one used the embryo, it still had

the power to cut through gold and jade. It was not something that a normal Totem could defend against.

Of course, nurturing this kind of Sword Spirit Embryo took a lot of work.

Normally speaking, a Sword Spirit Embryo, that can be put into the body of a Flying Sword, would take at least ten years to a max of thirty to forty years before the embryo is ready. The specific time it took depended on how much time the owner cultivated it and the talent of the owner.

In addition, once the Sword Spirit Embryo was at the point where it was able to be placed within a Flying Sword, it could also still stay within the owner's body and its strength would keep growing without a limit.

Thus, for high level Sword Cultivators that could not find suitable material for making a Flying Sword, their Sword Spirit Embryo's strengths were terrifying.

When Liu Ming read these words, he finally got a grasp on how powerful the small, light-yellow sword in his body was. He couldn't help but let out a slight gasp at the sword.

With the shocking cultivation of the Six Yin Master and the fact that he had been nurturing the sword until his death, the Sword Spirit Embryo could probably utterly destroy anyone within the Da Xuan Country.

Unfortunately, according to the sword technique, there were only two possibilities of using a Sword Spirit Embryo.

The first was someone who had the same bloodline and could use the strength of their bloodline to use the sword. The other was someone using a Mental Strength that was far above the sword's owner to forcefully use the Sword Spirit Embryo.

For the first possibility, besides the descendants of Six Yin Master and himself, others had no chance of using it. The latter possibility would need a Mental Strength that was stronger than the Six Yin Master. No matter how one looked at it that was impossible.

Although Liu Ming was quite interested in the Sword Spirit Embryo from Six Yin Master, he could only give up his thoughts and instead focus

on cultivating his own Sword Spirit Embryo.

According to what the Great Symbol Sword Technique said, depending on how the Sword Spirit Embryo was cultivated, the resulting Sword Spirit Embryo would be distinct. In addition, the materials used to create each Flying Sword would, more often than not, be different as well, so the resulting Flying Swords would be extremely unique.

The Great Symbol Sword Technique was indeed a top tier sword technique and according to its method of cultivating a Sword Spirit Embryo, one would create a Great Symbol Sword Embryo. It's strength was quite impressive and much stronger than a normal sword embryo.

Unfortunately, the first step of cultivating the sword embryo for the technique was actually to collect Great Tungsten Steel which Liu Ming had never even heard before. Then, one would have to absorb the metal attribute within the steel before being able to advance further.

Liu Ming had asked Qian Chao about this steel before, but the owner of the Hundred Spirit House had also not heard of this material. However, he agreed to help Liu Ming find out whether the material was sold within Xuanjing or not. Liu Ming had no hopes about hearing about the material in the short term.

Thankfully, he hadn't completely understood the method to cultivate the sword embryo so he wasn't in too big of a hurry.

Liu Ming thought like this as he kept his eyes closed and continued to try to understand the technique.

A night's time slowly passed by.

.....

On the morning of the second day, Liu Ming examined Qian Ruping to confirm that her body really had no problems before telling her to cultivate by herself within the room. Then, he left the Qian House.

This time, he planned to visit the famous underground market of Xuanjing.



This market was quite different from other markets. Without the supervision of the biggest sects within the country, there were no rules or order to this market. However, because of the lack of rules and order, there were often some rare items that didn't show up in other markets that would appear in this market. Even factions such as the Hundred Spirit House and the Gathering Wealth Building had shops set up within the market.

However, before he visited the market, Liu Ming passed by an alley while riding in a carriage. His gaze suddenly moved toward a point where a strange sign was. Upon seeing the sign, Liu Ming's eyes narrowed.

One hour later, Liu Ming had changed into the appearance of a middle-aged daoist. Without any hurry, he entered an alley that he had been to before and made his way straight for the coffin shop.

Once the owner of the shop saw the disguised Liu Ming walk in, he didn't feel any surprise, and instead closed the door to the shop with ease. Without another word, he led Liu Ming to the room in the back!

Moments later, Liu Ming was alone in the room that was dozens of feet underground. In addition, he was in the middle of a larger formation with a serious face as his hands were placed on a formation on a stone table. Instantly, both formations became active.

A multitude of color showed up on the stone table before Liu Ming withdrew his hands. With his brows furrowed, he said to himself, "East Wind Street, Censor Chen. What is Martial Uncle Lei thinking. Couldn't he have given me this information when I left and not waited until I contacted him to do so. Looks like I'll have to visit the market later and first finish what Martial Uncle Lei instructed."

TL: A censor is the person who makes sure that no corruption or anything of that kind is happening within the government. So he has a lot of power

He gave a single-handed technique and lightly touched the stone table.

Immediately, the two formations made a "gacha" sound and stopped running.

Liu Ming then turned around and left the room.

Two hours later, a carriage rolled along a road that was abnormally wide and in front of a mansion with red walls and glazed bricks. Finally, it stopped before an alley.

The door to the carriage opened and Liu Ming who had returned to his appearance of a scholar, walked out. His eyes studied the alley before he entered it.

This alley was abnormally long, and it only had four to five doors on either side. Before each of the doors were rock lions or tigers that were of varying sizes.

From this, it could be seen that the people living here were either extremely wealthy or noble. In addition, one could faintly hear sounds of maids and servants talking within these mansions.

Liu Ming quickly walked past a couple of the houses and arrived at the deepest part of the alley. Finally standing before the last door, he looked at the plaque that was hung above the door.

The words "Chen House" were written on the plaque in silver powder.

This Chen House was much more barren than the first few houses. Not only was the ground before the house full of dust, there was also no sounds coming from behind the closed doors.

Liu Ming observed all of this. He then walked forward to knock on the bronze doors without hesitation.

"Dong, dong." A couple of muffled sounds rang from the door.

Much later, the inside of the door was as quiet as before without anyone opening the door.

Liu Ming's eyes flashed as he considered whether he should just enter with a technique. Suddenly, a door to the side opened and a servant-looking man poked his head out.

However, when he saw Liu Ming standing before the Chen House turn toward him, he immediately tried to close the door. Unfortunately, it was

too late.

The man felt as if a shadow flashed in front of him before Liu Ming appeared like a ghost before him. In addition, Liu Ming's hand grabbed the door. The door that was already half-closed did not budge another inch.

"What are you doing. This is the House of Mister Wang, and there isn't anyone that can be so presumptuous here." The servant was alarmed as he screamed out.

"I don't care about some Mister Wang or Mister Li, all I want to ask is one thing. Why is the house over there empty, and where have the people within the house gone to?" Liu Ming asked without an expression. At the same time, he squeezed his hand holding the door.

"Kacha!"

The door that looked abnormally solid had a chunk of it immediately torn off.

When the servant-looking man saw this, he immediately removed his hand from the door as he gave a smile, "I didn't realize that you were a great practitioner. The Chen House has been taken back by the government ever since Censor Chen was incarcerated. His family is currently living in a rented house about two streets to the west. If mister wants to find them, that should be where you go to look."

"Do you know the exact whereabouts of the rental house?" When Liu Ming heard this, he asked back faintly.

"I don't really know. However, the Chen House has an old servant that will go to the rice shop at the end of this alley everyday at noon to buy some food. If mister waits near the rice shop, you should be able to find him." The servant quickly revealed everything that he knew.

Liu Ming nodded and he appeared dozens of feet away with a twist. He then turned around and walked to the entrance of the alley.

The servant let out a breath and he quickly closed the door. When he turned around, he found that not far behind him stood a middle-aged man

in a green robe. The face of this man showed quite a bit of authority.

“Ah, master?” The servant quickly went over to pay his respects.

“What happened? Why did I hear voices at the door? Were you talking to anyone?” The middle-aged man spoke in an annoyed tone.

“Master, it’s like this. The Chen House had a visitor...” The servant quickly explained everything that had happened to his master.

“Practitioner! Are you sure that he is a practitioner?” After hearing everything, the green-robed man’s expression started to change rapidly.

“Master, if it wasn’t a practitioner, how would our door be reduced to this state?” The servant pointed to the spot where the door was broken and quickly replied.

# Chapter 182: Prison Breakout

The green-robed man looked at the portion of the door that had been broken off. His face could not help but change. However, he immediately shook his head and muttered to himself, "I had originally thought that Censor Chen would be doomed since he didn't have anyone behind him. However, looking at things now, that doesn't seem like the case. Ah Fu, go close the door. I will not be receiving any guests for the next half month."

TL: Ah Fu is the name of the servant

"Yes, master!" The servant lowered his head as he replied.

The green-robed man left satisfied.

.....

In the time it took to eat a meal, Liu Ming appeared before a rice shop at the end of an alley. He raised his head to look at the plaque of the shop and to gauge the weather before entering without hesitation.

When he left the shop, he had now gained the knowledge of where the Chen family was renting their house at.

A small while later, Liu Ming stopped in front of a house that was quite beat down. He went up to knock without hesitation.

Moments later, the door opened and from within walked out an old man in a gray cloth robe.

"Who are you?" When the old man saw that he didn't recognize Liu Ming, he immediately showed signs of caution as he asked.

"Is the family of Censor Chen within?" Liu Ming asked without changing his expression.

"What Censor Chen or Censor Li? You have found the wrong place. I don't know." The old man's face darkened when he heard this and he closed the door without hesitation. He actually wanted to close the door on Liu Ming's face!

However, Liu Ming was not an ordinary person, and with a flash, he

used his body to stop the old man's actions.

Seeing this, the old man became enraged, and with a sweep of his arm, he furiously punched Liu Ming's shoulder. One could hear a "hu hu" sound from the punch, and one could see that it made a commotion, so the power behind the punch was not bad.

However, Liu Ming gave a slight smile and didn't try to dodge the old man's fist.

In the end, there was only a muffled sound as the old man felt his fist shake. A surge of power emanated out of the scholar as the old man's body trembled. The old man actually had to back up a couple of steps involuntarily.

At this moment, Liu Ming moved his body into the house. With a sweep of his gaze, he saw a middle-aged woman that had a pretty face hugging a small boy who was five or six years old.

This woman was definitely Lady Chen without question.

Liu Ming realized this with a turn of his mind.

"Thief, how dare you!?" The cloth-robed man finally regained his footing, and he became enraged when he saw Liu Ming's actions. With a yell, he suddenly grabbed the pitch-black steel rod next to him and seemed to be ready to risk his life.

"Uncle Lin, please wait. First hear what he has to say." Just at this time, the pretty lady suddenly opened her mouth.

When the old man heard this, he hesitated for a second before stopping with reluctance. However, he still held the steel rod as he stood before the lady.

Liu Ming gave a smile as he took out an emerald-green jade slip and showed it to the lady.

"This is... Uncle Lin, can you bring that item over here and let me closely examine it." When Lady Chen saw the jade slip clearly, her expression immediately became agitated as she quickly spoke out with a

trembling voice.

When the old man heard this, he felt slightly strange, but regardless, he obeyed orders and took the jade slip from Liu Ming. Turning around, he handed it to the lady.

Lady Chen looked at the jade slip for a couple of times before taking out another emerald jade slit. Placing the two together, she saw that the two were an exact match of each other.

“Hello immortal. I hope that immortal sir can save my husband. Bao Er, quickly kowtow to the immortal sir.” Lady Chen had no other worries as she quickly pulled her son down to kneel with her. In addition, she started having the boy kowtow to Liu Ming.

Liu Ming first paused before shaking his head and waving his sleeve. Immediately, an invisible force shot out while he emotionlessly said, “First stand up before talking. I am no immortal. I have only come here at the request of someone else. As long as it’s within my abilities, I will try to accomplish it and help the Chen family. You can call me Mister Qian.”

“Yes, Mister Qian.” The lady felt a lifting force before her and could not stay low anymore. With surprise and happiness in her heart, she became more respectful as she replied and pulled up the young boy.

When Uncle Lin saw this, he realized that Liu Ming was a friend and not a foe. Quickly, he threw away the rod in his hands and stood to the side awkwardly without knowing what to say.

“Since the token is not wrong, lady should have no doubt about my identity. However, I would like to know how Censor Chen mentioned me.” Liu Ming made a sign for Uncle Lin to close the door as he began asking for some information.

“Before my husband was incarcerated, he seemed to have guessed that he would be accused. Thus, he gave this jade slip to me ahead of time. He told me that if something really happened to him, there would be an Immortal Lei that his ancestor knew who would save the Chen House.” Lady Chen said easily.

“Yes, your husband is correct. The Immortal Lei that he is talking about is my Martial Uncle. Can you talk about why Censor Chen was incarcerated?” Liu Ming nodded and displayed a serious expression as he asked a question.

“Yes, Mister Qian. The course of events happened like this – my husband gave some words to the emperor as the censor...” Lady Chen became serious as she started to recount the events leading up to the arrest.

Liu Ming listened with rapt attention as a thoughtful expression remained on his face.

“... like this, three months ago, a bunch of detectives suddenly barged in and arrested my husband. After another two months, we were kicked out of the Chen House. These days, if it weren’t for Uncle Lin helping us, my son and I might not have even gotten this temporary residence.” Lady Chen finally finished the last sentence of her story with her face full of sadness and pain.

After hearing everything, Liu Ming stroked his chin. He waited for a moment before slowly saying, “If that’s the case, your husband gave his recommendation that the Government Guests would have their pay reduced. After that was declined, he was politically attacked by his opponents to the point where he lost his position and was also arrested.”

“Yes, Mister Qian! That’s how it was.” Lady Chen quickly replied.

“Hehe, how should I talk about what Censor Chen did? To have the balls to actually recommend such a thing. He wasn’t attacked by opponents but rather the whole of the Government Guests. With their influence, wouldn’t it be simple to take down a mere censor.” Liu Ming laughed as he spoke.

“But, from what I heard from my husband, before he gave his recommendation, he had asked the emperor on his opinion and the emperor implicitly agreed. However, for some reason, in the end, my husband offended the entire government.” Lady Chen sighed as she replied.



“It isn’t that simple. With the number of government guests, even the imperial family wouldn’t dare to truly offend them. The real result of Censor Chen was for him to take the blame.” Liu Ming sneered as he spoke.

“I’m not too sure about the matters of the government. Maybe that is so. Is there a way to save my husband?” Lady Chen gave a bitter smile before she asked with some hope.

“This will depend on how Lady Chen wants to solve things. If it’s only getting Censor Chen out, it is a simple matter. However, if you want him to keep his old position and stay in Xuanjing, that won’t be too easy.” Liu Ming said with a light smile.

“As long as you can save my husband, it doesn’t matter if he stays an official, fearful every day. As for staying in Xuanjing, that’s something even less important. As long as our family is together, we can find a small place to live the rest of our lives.” When Lady Chen heard this, she spoke without any hesitation.

“Alright, if lady thinks like that, then everything will be easy. Can you describe the appearance of Censor Chen? After that, go ahead and quickly organize things to leave Xuanjing. Wait for me about ten miles out of the west gate off the government path and on the morning of the second day, I will naturally bring your husband to meet with you. That’s right, tell me where they are holding your husband.” After Liu Ming heard, he replied calmly.

For Liu Ming, rescuing an incarcerated official from a mortal prison was a simple matter.

He had learned that there were special prisons in Xuanjing that specifically incarcerated practitioners to even Spirit Apostles. However, those prisons never held any mortals.

For prisons that were of that level, there probably were some special formations set up. If Liu Ming wanted to bust into them, it wouldn’t be easy.

If not for the fact that his position as the sect Supervising Disciple

came with a lot of danger, all he had to do was simply give his Supervising Disciple Token to someone. He could easily take the inmate out of the prison without having to take any actions.

Lady Chen and Uncle Lin heard the hidden meaning behind Liu Ming's words and were both shocked.

Lady Chen's face changed quite a few times before gnashing her teeth and accepting the situation. After talking about the location of the prison, she then started describing the specific appearance of Censor Chen.

After hearing everything, Liu Ming felt that there were no other problems. With a movement of his arm, he took a leather pouch from his waist and immediately handed it over:

"Lady, you can first temporarily take this with you. After you leave Xuanjing, if you meet any trouble, you only need to pat the pouch three times with strength. It will save you from any trouble."

Within the leather pouch was the Flying Head.

The Flying Head's intelligence was much higher than the White Bone Scorpion and Liu Ming had already given it some instructions.

Even though Lady Chen did not know what was within that leather pouch, she knew that it was something useful from Liu Ming. Immediately, she gave her thanks as she took the leather pouch and carefully put it away.

In the remaining time, Liu Ming spoke a couple more words with Lady Cheng before silently leaving.

Liu Ming had no intention of returning to the Qian House. He instead went straight to the prison that Lady Chen had described.

.....

Once Lady Chen finished packing everything, she rented a carriage and had Uncle Lin brought them to Xuanjing's west gate.

.....

During the midnight hour, a shadow silently passed by sentry after

sentry in a building that was extremely guarded. The shadow slowly made his way to the center of the building.

Suddenly, the shadow paused in front of seven to eight guards that had blades sheathed on their waists. Beyond these guards was a thick steel door and besides a small barred window, there were no other openings.

The sleeve of the shadow moved as several silver streaks flashed out. The fleeting sparks buried themselves into the guards.

# Chapter 183: Mister Sun

These guards felt their bodies become numb as they stood stiffly in the same spot without being able to move.

At this time, the shadow appeared before the guards with a slight muffle. His entire body had faint black gas circling him. With one movement, he took a scarlet keychain from the waist of one of the guards.

Then, the shadow seemed to sway in the wind before the door behind the guards opened and the shadow disappeared within.

Beyond the steel door, there was actually a narrow and long staircase that led down. In addition, the air was abnormally stuffy as if a breeze had not graced this place in a very long time.

The shadow saw everything but did not act at all. With a flash, he started to follow the stairs down. Then, turning a corner, he disappeared.

Moments later, a couple of screams came from the depth of the stairs. Then, no other sound came out.

At the same time, the shadow was still wrapped in black gas as he walked before row after row of cells that were over a hundred feet underground. Beyond the thick and dark looking metal bars of the cells, one could see that most of the cells were empty with only a couple of the cells having someone within the cells.

When the people within the cells saw such a strange person walk in and incapacitate the surrounding guards immediately, they immediately became alarmed.

However, those that were within these cells were no ordinary citizens and most of them kept their calm with no screams or shouts.

The shadow that had intruded into the prison was obviously Liu Ming who had used quite a few spells.

Although this prison could be considered as well guarded, it was like a wall of paper when compared with Liu Ming, a late Spirit Apostle.

However, Liu Ming did not want to alarm other cultivators and used a Concealment Glyph which meant that he was merely a shadow in the eyes of mortals. With that, he could walk in without any worries.

After passing through over a dozen cells, Liu Ming finally stopped at a certain corner and looked at a man that had a prison uniform on. With a smile he asked:

“Are you Censor Chen!”

“Who are you and how do you know me?” The man in the prison uniform on this person was quite clean and the person had a scholarly face. Hearing what Liu Ming said, he was immediately alarmed and asked back with suspicion.

“Hehe, weren’t you the one who sent a message to Martial Uncle Lei? Otherwise, I wouldn’t be here right now.” Liu Ming gave a smile as his mouth slightly moved. Although no sound came out, Liu Ming’s voice sounded next to the man’s ears.

“What! So my grandfather’s token that he left was actually real and you were sent by Immortal Lei! Is my wife and son okay?” Censor Chen could no longer keep his calm from earlier as he said with hope and excitement.

“Relax, your wife and son are all fine. They have left Xuanjing ahead of you. When I bring you out in a second, you will be reunited with your family.” Liu Ming replied without hurry.

“What, leave Xuanjing? Is your immortal unable to help me save my position even with your power? Once I escape, won’t I be an escapee.” After hearing everything, Censor Chen became a little hesitant.

Hearing such an answer, Liu Ming’s brows ceased as he emotionlessly sent his voice across:

“I have another mission for coming to Xuanjing and thus, it is not a good time for me to talk to anyone within the government. If you really value your position then you can first hide out this first wave and then have Martial Uncle Lei ask the government for your position back. Maybe you might even be able to go higher. However, if you don’t want to go

now, I won't force anything on you but your life will be in your hands and of no consequence to me."

"Sir Immortal, please don't blame me. I was slightly confused for a second there. I have offended many people and it would be impossible for me work as I had before. I will go with Sir Immortal to meet my wife. This position is not necessary." When Censor Chen heard this, he was in a big fright and quickly changed his idea.

"Very well, that is a smart decision. Censor Chen, take a few steps back first." Liu Ming nodded with satisfaction before ordering the censor. Suddenly, he took a step forward and with "pu, pu" sounds, he actually had grabbed the dark steel bars.

Seeing this, Censor Chen quickly made space.

In the next moment, Liu Ming's hands turned red as surging scarlet flames came out.

The steel bars that seemed extremely sturdy actually were melted into liquid in just a moment's time, making a hole with the bars that a person could pass through.

"Thank you Sir Immortal!"

Censor Chen was overjoyed and quickly climbed out of his cell.

"Follow me and I will lead you out of this place." Liu Ming spoke a sentence and was about to lead the way to the entrance.

At this time, in an cell not too far away, the prisoner within suddenly jumped to his cell's bars and hurriedly yelled out:

"Brother Chen, I am Old Sun. Don't hurry in leaving, can you have Sir Immortal also bring me out. If I can get out, I will be willing to pay a huge reward." This prisoner had messy hair and from voice alone, he seemed to be not so young.

"This..." When Censor Chen heard this, he could not help but pause.

"Who is he, are you close with him?" Liu Ming looked at the prisoner after hearing what was said before calmly asking Censor Chen.

"I am not too close with him but once I was forced in here, we had quite a few exchanges due to the circumstances down here. Mister Sun is an official within the imperial family's general management and can be considered to be a member of the imperial family. One year ago, he somehow offended the emperor and has been locked up here since." Censor Chen quickly reacted and told Liu Ming all that he knew.

"If it's someone that you are not too close with, then I won't bother. Just saving you will not make the Gold Spirit Guests for the government come after me who is at the same level as them. However, if I bring one extra person, the result is more debatable." Liu Ming replied without hesitation.

"Yes, I will listen to Sir Immortal." Censor Chen naturally had no emotions in any particular decision.

Thus, the two of them turned around and were about to leave the prison.

"Sir Immortal, please wait! I know a huge secret and this secret not only involves the current government, it is vital enough to decide the fate of Da Xuan Country. Even Immortals like you won't be able to ignore it." When Mister Sun saw that they were about to leave him, he yelled out in agony.

"What, what do you mean by those words? You must know that if you dare to lie to me, I have ways to make you wish that you had died." When Liu Ming heard this, his heart skipped a beat and with a blur of his body, he appeared before the cell of the Mister Sun. Staring into the eyes of Mister Sun, Liu Ming slowly spoke.

"Sir Immortal, since I dare to say such words, I naturally have proof." Although Mister Sun became scared while under the cold stare of Liu Ming, he still clenched his teeth and replied.

"Good, remember what you have said and I will trust you for this once." Liu Ming stared at Mister Sun for another moment before nodding and speaking with an icy tone.

Immediately afterwards, a green light flashed in his hands and a short sword appeared. With only a few swings, it cut the bars before him into several pieces.

Seeing this, Mister Sun quickly gave his thanks and crawled out.

“Other people have heard what you said earlier. Since it is like that, we cannot leave so easily. I will manage those people.” After finishing such actions, Liu Ming looked towards the other four to five people within the prison as a cold glint flashed in his eyes.

“Sir Immortal, are you trying to....” Thinking that he understood the hidden meaning of Liu Ming’s words, Censor Chen and Mister Sun who had just been saved, both changed expressions.

The other prisoners within the prison were still in shock from Mister Sun’s words and when they heard what Liu Ming said, their faces turned pale.

“Relax, although I am not a mortal, I would not do something like killing everyone within the government prison. I would only be looking for trouble with that. I plan to use a small spell to make them forget what they saw.” Liu Ming laughed as he replied.

“I understand, thank you Immortal for your kind heart.” Censor Chen let out a breath as he quickly bowed to Liu Ming.

Liu Ming waved his hand and made large strides towards one of the cells within someone within it. With just a twist of his body, he entered the cell as if he had no bones.

The old man sitting within the cell immediately stood up in shock and took two steps back.

“You have heard what I said outside. Will you assist me in my spell or would you rather I help you get rid of your worries with just a sword strike?” Liu Ming spoke to the old man without respect.

“Although I am quite old, I still have many things that I would like to attend to. Since I have heard something that I shouldn’t have, could Sir Immortal cast your spell.” The old man finally calmed down and gave a bitter smile as he replied.

Liu Ming nodded and with a shake of his sleeve, a light yellow candle shot out. With a blur, it stuck itself in the ground. Immediately



afterwards, a small spark showed on the end and the candle lighted itself.

Within moments, a sandalwood scent permeated around the entire prison.

“Peng, peng!”

Whether it was Censor Chen standing outside of the cell or the old man or the others within various cells, they all fell down knocked out.

Seeing this, Liu Ming smiled. He let the black gas that surrounded him dissipate as he sat down and with a beckon, he actually called the old man's body near him and had the old man sit directly across from him. With a silver flash in Liu Ming's hands, a couple of needles stuck themselves into the old man.

The old man's body stiffened as he actually stood up by himself while unconscious. At the same time, the old man's eyes opened, showing a pair of eyes without vigor.

At this time, Liu Ming started chanting and a crystal light started to flash within his eyes. At the same time, he held a silver needle in each hand as he started stabbing them to various points on the old man's head.

.....

After the time it took to eat a meal, Liu Ming was once again covered in a black gas as he walked up the stairs. A few feet behind him, two huge hands made of black gas were holding the unconscious Censor Chen and Mister Sun mid air.

# Chapter 184: Gold Spirit Guests

When Liu Ming's body came out of the steel doors to the prison, he glanced around and was quite stunned at what he saw.

The guards that should have been frozen in place were actually gone and replacing them was a strong man wearing yellow animal skin and a red faced old man with long eyes.

One of the two had a dark and thin whip tied to his waist while the other had a light yellow sword on his back. However, both of them looked at Liu Ming with interest as he walked out.

“Gold Spirit Guests?”

Although Liu Ming was quite shocked, he showed no large emotions and asked calmly.

“That's right, us two are Gold Spirit Guest. We were patrolling here today and managed to bump into Fellow. This really is a matter that makes one's head hurt! Could I ask the relation between these two and Fellow are?” The red faced old man gave a sigh as he swept his gaze over to the two people behind Liu Ming.

“It is not much, the ancestors of these two have helped an ancestor of mine. I'm here to repay that debt.” Liu Ming replied emotionlessly.

“Oh, there is something so coincidental! These two both have a relation to Fellow and were both arrested into the same prison at the same time while waiting for Fellow to save them?” When the animal skinned man heard this, he rolled his eyes and replied sarcastically.

“Yes, the matter is so coincidental!” Liu Ming said back without any concern.

“Hmph, if you didn't meet us two, then even if you emptied the entire prison, it would not affect us in the least bit. However, since we have met you, we can let you take one of the two since you are one of us but the other person must stay.” The red faced old man said with a serious expression.

“No way, I will be taking both of them and not leaving behind either of them.” Liu Ming rejected the proposal without hesitation

“Looks like Fellow is extremely confident in your abilities and is planning on taking a fight. I will first state that since we are Gold Spirit Guests of the government, we will naturally team up in a fight.” The red faced old man said with a dark face.

The animal skinned man gave a cruel laugh as he grabbed the whip at his waist and with a single shake, the ship actually started to move on its own. It was actually a live long black snake.

The head of the snake was incredibly flat and one could see that it held a deadly poison.

“Hehe, there is no need to fight.” When Liu Ming heard the speech of the old man, he gave a snicker as he took a large step forward. With a “pu” sound, a huge aura burst out from Liu Ming.

The space around Liu Ming started buzzing as a black violent gust appeared out of nowhere. Spinning around Liu Ming, the gust turned into a tornado that stretched up to the sky.

When the red faced old man and the animal skinned man saw this, their expressions turned ugly and before they could even speak, a huge pressure smashed against them.

The two of them involuntarily back up a couple of steps and made a space in between them.

Liu Ming’s body moved as he brought Censor Chen and Mister Sun to rush through the space between the two Spirit Apostles. In the blink of an eye, he had disappeared out of a door.

The animal skinned man tightly held his black snake as his face was full of fear. Likewise, he made no motion to stop Liu Ming.

The red faced old man had an expression of anxiety and waited until Liu Ming left his sight before he spat out the words “Late Spirit Apostle!”.

“Looks like he indeed is a Late Spirit Apostle and may even be a Late

Spirit Apostle at Perfection. Otherwise, us two Beginning Spirit Apostles would not have been so useless.” The animal skinned man gave out a sigh and with a flick of his wrist, he tied the black snake back to his waist.

“Yes, that is indeed possible. No wonder he dared to ignore us like that. This person is on the same level as some of the old monsters within the imperial family. No matter what, he is not someone that we can offend. However, since it is like that, we have an answer for this matter and as long as we report this back, we will not be punished too much.” The red faced old man replied with an helpless face.

“We can only do that. However, the atmosphere in Xuanjing is turning stranger and stranger. First, the higher level Gold Spirit Guests and the old monsters of the imperial family all declared that they would go into secluded cultivation and ignore all matters of the outside world. Then, during the two years since, the number of cultivators that have entered Xuanjing are many times what they were before and many of them are entering with sneaky intentions. From what I know, there are quite a few cultivators that are like the one we met today at the Perfection level Spirit Apostle, As for those that we don’t know with hidden cultivations, who knows how many there are.” The animal skinned man’s eyes flashed as he suddenly asked with a whisper.

“Hmph, do you need to say that? Most of our brothers have seen that something is amiss. However, for us cannon fodder, what qualifications do we have to talk about such things. In addition, when we entered within the Gold Spirit Guests, we signed a blood contract. Every day before the deadline of the contract means that we will not be able to do things that we want. Even if something big happens, we will have to move as one with the government.” When the red faced old man heard this, his face darkened.

“If only it was this simple. The key thing is that the government is also acting strangely and even though many of the imperial family know what is going on, they don’t explain anything to us guests. Although I have signed the Blood Contract, I don’t want to be cannon fooder that doesn’t know what is going on.” The animal skinned man said with anger.

“Brother, is that what you really think?” The red faced man’s face changed colors and suddenly asked.

“Of course, although I don’t have much cultivation and am only a Beginning Spirit Apostle. However, as a Loose Cultivator, it took me many hardships to cultivate to the point where I am now so how can I just simply be used as cannon fodder.” When the animal skinned man heard what his partner said, he immediately patted his chest and reassured.

“Since Brother Zhuan said that truthfully, I will give you an address and you will go there three days later. There, I will introduce you to some people who are like minded.” The red faced old man said with resolution.

“Alright, I will definitely be there!” When the animal skinned man heard this, he was extremely happy.

Although the red faced old man was like him in terms of cultivation, the red faced old man had an incredible network among the Gold Spirit Guests. If he said that he was going to introduce some people to the animal skinned man, it definitely were people that would be strong.

“Although that person has left, we have to go inside and check if anyone else is missing.” The red faced old man looked at the steps beyond the steel door and said something else.

“Of course. Let’s hope that he only saved these two and didn’t kill the rest.” The animal skinned man quickly agreed after hearing the red faced old man.

As the two of them entered the steel door, they found a couple of prisoners that were unconscious. Naturally, they quickly casted spells to wake those prisoners.

However, the prisoners that just woke up did not remember what happened before they were knocked unconscious.

But with the sandalwood scent in the prison and the red dots on the the heads of these people, The red faced old man and the animal skinned man looked at each other and guessed what had happened. With this knowledge, they could only bitterly laugh.

The method to wipe memories that the other person knew not only involved cultivation techniques but also included other methods such as medicinal ingredients and used some mortal secret techniques. The complexity of this was beyond their imaginations.

.....

A couple of hours later.

Below a small hill beside the government path, a green carriage was quietly stopped there. An old man was seated steadily at the front of the car and looked towards Xuanjing constantly as his face showed anxiety. It was as if he was waiting for someone.

“Uncle Lin, is there still no news of Sir Immortal?” Lady Chen’s anticipating voice suddenly emitted out of the carriage.

“Lady, please relax. Immortal Sir has incredible powers so how could a simple prison stop him. It is only day break now and I believe that not long later, master should be back to meet lady.” When Uncle Lin heard this, he immediately respectfully replied.

“One can only hope. Uncle Lin, only you stayed with us through this ordeal of the Chen House. When me and my husband come back together and settle down, we will definitely have you enjoy the rest of your years.” When Lady Chen heard these words, she reminiscently replied.

“Lady, you are being too courteous. If not for grand master’s helping hand, my life would have been gone dozens of years ago.” Uncle Lin replied in surprise.

“Those are two different things. Uncle Lin, based on how you have served the Chen House for all these years, the debt that you owe to us has long been paid off. The favor that you have done us this time will definitely be repaid by me and my husband.” Lady Chen disagreed.

“Lady, actually... Huh, there’s a carriage coming and it seems like master is directing.” When Uncle Lin heard this, he was about to say something when he suddenly saw a carriage fly down the government and the person directing the carriage looked like a familiar silhouette.

Immediately, he yelled out in joy and surprise.

“What, is it really my husband? Are you sure!” The front curtain to the carriage was immediately pulled up and Lady Chen led the small boy as she walked out. She then stared at the government path in excitement.

“Hehe, Lady Chen, be at ease. It is your husband.”

At this time, a clear male voice came from the sky.

Uncle Lin and Lady Chen were both shocked as they looked upwards to find a black cloud slowly descending. Above the cloud was a young scholar, Liu Ming.

.....

In about fifteen minutes, Liu Ming stood at the peak of the hill as he held the token that Lady Chen had just returned to him. He then looked at the carriage that was turning into a black dot on the government path and could not help but smile.

He had already given word to Martial Uncle Lei and soon after Censor Chen and his family left Xuanjing, there would be someone who would take care of the other things.

With this, he had finally resolved the matter that Martial Uncle Lei had given him. As a result, he even felt his heart become slightly lighter.

“Mister Sun, now would be a good time to talk about the huge secret that you have said.” Liu Ming’s gaze withdrew from the path and turned to a man of around fifty years beside him.

# Chapter 185: Secret

“Since Mister Qian has already saved me from that prison, the secret that has been hidden deep within my heart shall naturally come out. However, after I reveal this secret, I dare not stay in Xuanjing. Thus, I hope that Sir Immortal can also bring my family out of Xuanjing like Sir Immortal did for Censor Chen’s family. From there I will bring my family out of the country and never set foot within Xuanjing again.” Mister Sun respectfully spoke.

“Alright, as long as your secret is large enough, this requirement is not too harsh.” Liu Ming heard these words and nodded without saying anything else.

“Alright, with Mister Qian’s words, I don’t have anything to worry about. The secret of mine is that the current emperor is not the same one that entered the throne twenty years ago. He is instead a demon that transformed into the emperor.” Mister Sun’s heart relaxed as he finally said the secret that he had kept in heart for an unknown amount of time.

“What, the emperor today is a fake and instead transformed from a demon?” Although Liu Ming had begun guessing at the secret within Mister Sun’s heart, he was still stunned at those words.

“That’s right. Please don’t think that I am making this up. I knew of this secret about seven months ago. Sir should know that I am the general manager of the imperial family and take care of the emperor’s food along with keeping records on his body. This is to prevent the emperor from dying without leaving a will behind...”

“The records for the earlier years were alright since the emperor was in his prime and having no illnesses then was a natural thing. However, seven years ago, the emperor became bedridden for three days. And I received the record about ten plus days late. At the time, I didn’t think too much about it and thought that it was delayed because of the illness. However, when I flipped open the record that night, I found a secret page sent by Lady Li who was the most loved wife of the emperor.”



“In the page, this Lady Li said that the emperor was living in her room when he became sick. As a result she saw the emperor transform from a normal person to a half demon, half person being. She was scarred by that image that she actually fell unconscious. When she woke up, she was being watched by a group of guards and with great difficulty did she have one of the guards send out a page requesting help. Because the page wasn’t too large and the Lady Li wrote it quite quickly, there wasn’t much material on the page. However, she asked for me to give that page to the oldest Immortal Sirs within the Imperial Family and in case I didn’t believe her, she actually had the guard that she had convinced to send the page also bury a couple of scales that the monster dropped within a certain area in the imperial city. I was to get them when I went into the imperial city and give it to the Immortal Sirs to check if they were valid.” Mister Sun’s eyes started showing fear at this point in time.

Although Liu Ming’s face looked the same, he was extremely shocked within his heart.

“When I finished reading that page, I was naturally extremely shocked. However, I could not completely trust something like this. In the end, before I could find out a way to enter within the imperial city, news came that Lady Li had died of sickness. At that time, I realized that Lady Li’s message was likely true. After living in fear for the next couple of days, I finally found an excuse to enter the city and actually found two green scales at the spot where Lady Li talked about. Once I got the scales, I immediately hired a beggar that had no knowledge of the affair and had him deliver one of the scales and a mail that I used my left hand and a different tone to write, into one of the Imperial Family Immortals’ house. However, one day later, I heard that the house of this Immortal was massacred that night with no survivors. At the time, the entire government was in a huge uproar and immediately cleaned out all of the large factions within Xuanjing. In addition, countless officials had their heads cut off. Later, the government let out news that Guests of the government cleared out a couple of Demonic Cultivators from other lands and learned that they were behind the massacre. However, after then, I did not dare tell anyone else. The other scale was also hidden in a secret

within my house and never shown to anyone else. Otherwise, if it weren't for the fact that I was incarcerated this time and was afraid that a government Guest would use some hypnotic methods to find out this secret, I would have probably left it within my heart." Mister Sun finally said everything in his mind in one go.

"If that's the case, then you still have the demon scale within your house." Liu Ming heard to this point and showed a pondering expression.

"That is true. Otherwise, there would be no proof of my words. I also didn't dare make such a promise to mister while within the prison. How about this, I will bring Sir Immortal and we can get the scale and also bring my family out." Mister Sun gave a slight thought before replying.

"Alright, then let's do that. That's right, since you say that the emperor is from a demon, then if you compared the emperor before you got the message and after, what differences can you see?" Liu Ming suddenly asked as if he had thought of something.

"This... I really haven't seen anything strange. If there is something different then it's that the emperor seems to have met with his advisors and officials less these couple of years. In addition, he has become more and more lax about controlling his sons and brothers that have stayed in Xuanjing. However, he has only slowly changed so if it wasn't for the fact that I knew of this secret, I would not have noticed." Mister Sun stayed silent before responding.

"Alright, I understand. Let us first return to Xuanjing and in order to not alarm anyone, both of our appearances should be changed." Liu Ming gave a quick thought before nodding his head.

Immediately afterwards, he wiped his face and after a flash of white light, he turned from a twenty to thirty young scholar to an elegant middle aged man.

Then, Liu Ming took out one black and one yellow robe from his sleeve and he wore the black one on himself before he threw the other one at the Mister Sun.

Mister Sun immediately seemed to wake up and quickly changed his

clothing.

At this time, Liu Ming took a white pill and rubbed it between his hands. With another movement, he patted the white powder onto Mister Sun's face.

Immediately, Mister Sun's white and smooth skin became much darker and rougher.

Liu Ming nodded and suddenly a green streak flashed in his hand.

Mister Sun felt a cold gust pass below his chin and his beard was soundlessly cut. This made him look younger by at least ten years.

"Alright, that's enough." Liu Ming showed an expression of content and began walking towards the carriage that was left at the bottom of the hill.

Mister Sun rubbed his chin which had become smooth and with a small smile, quickly followed Liu Ming.

.....

During the afternoon, Liu Ming who had transformed into a middle aged man and Mister Sun had shown themselves before a normal looking house within Xuanjing.

They had actually gotten here about two hours ago but the Mister Sun was something who was extremely cunning and patient, forcing himself to sit within a teahouse for two hours while checking if anything was amiss around his house. When he discovered, he finally brought Liu Ming to appear before his house.

After "peng, peng" sounds, the originally tightly close door opened up and showed a young servant that poked his head out.

"Who are you looking... Ah, it's master!" The servant originally wanted to ask something but after taking a closer look at Mister Sun, he could not help but yell out in surprise.

"Be quiet, are my wives in the house?" Mister Sun stared at the young servant as he asked.

“Master, both ladies are within the house and were just talking about master’s situation.” The young servant quickly moved aside as he replied with respect.

“Alright, as long as they are here, it is good. Go and hire two carriages, I will need them later.” Mister Sun ordered without thinking.

“Yes, I’ll go do that now.” The young servant heard this and immediately hurried out of the door.

As for Mister Sun, he brought Liu Ming into the deeper parts of the house.

Moments later, the entire house was in an uproar.

Four hours later, three carriages left through the east gate of Xuanjing and sprinted along a government path.

Liu Ming who had recovered his appearance as a scholar was seated within the carriage at the front. In his hands was a small, thumb sized green scale while his face was extremely downcast.

Mister Sun was seated directly across from Liu Ming and had a face full of respect.

“When I send you guys to ten miles out of Xuanjing, you should be safe and I will be returning. After all, Gold Spirit Guests have an unwritten rule of not leaving Xuanjing beyond ten miles unless specially directed to.” Liu Ming’s finger moved and the green scale disappeared with a blur. At the same time, Liu Ming quickly explained to Mister Sun.

“I have also heard of such a rumor. Thank you sir for what you did. Otherwise, I don’t even know what kind of state my family would have fallen into.” Hearing this, Mister Sun immediately gave his thanks.

“That was nothing, I am simply making a transaction with you. However, if you really want to leave this place, there will be one more obstacle that you will need to clear.” Liu Ming sighed as he said.

“What do you mean by that?” Hearing this, Mister Sun was extremely stunned.

“There has been someone who has been following us in the air ever since we left Xuanjing. If I’m not guessing wrongly, it should be a truly strong person within the Gold Spirit Guests.” Liu Ming replied with a calm expression.

“What should we do?” Hearing this, Mister Sun’s face changed drastically.

“Relax, since I promised you that I would guard you until you left Xuanjing, I will not go back on my words. As long as I make that person leave, you will have no trouble.” Liu Ming replied ambivalently. With a movement, he actually lept out of the carriage window. Afterwards, black gas rose up from his feet and carried him into the sky.

Moments later, Liu Ming was floating hundreds of feet in the air as he coldly looked at a man with blue hair and a purple beard.

# Chapter 186: Qiu Longzhi

“You are also a Gold Spirit Guest?” Liu Ming finally opened his mouth to ask.

“That’s right. I am Qiu Longzhi and one of the four commanders of the Gold Spirit Guests. I received a report yesterday from my two subordinates about a fellow appearing in Xuanjing with a cultivation of a Perfect Spirit Apostle. My hands are quite itchy. Thus, I would like to spar with fellow.” The blue-haired, purple-bearded man smiled as he dissolved his originally cold expression “Oh, so you have not come for Mister Sun’s family?” When he heard this, Liu Ming’s expression slightly changed.

“Hehe, I have already checked the identity of the two that you have stolen and they are merely some small characters within the government. How would they be enough for me to come personally? Fellow relax, since these two people have some relation to you, I can promise that no one will find trouble with their families as long as they don’t appear within Xuanjing again.” Qiu Longzhi replied with a strange laugh.

“Looks like Fellow Qiu really did come for me. Since that is the case, why don’t we go over there so that we don’t ruin the government path.” Liu Ming glanced at Mister Sun’s carriage below him before making a suggestion.

“Of course, please Fellow!” Qiu Longzhi did not hesitate as he directed the gray cloud under his feet to a clearing in a small forest.

Liu Ming gave a couple words of instruction while still remaining in the air before he also maneuvered his cloud over.

Moments later, the two people faced each other in the small forest clearing.

Reaching this stage, Qiu Longzhi spoke soft words,

“Please be careful, although my own strength is quite normal, I am skillful in the art of Poisonous Insects. As long as Fellow can defend against my Poisonous Insects, I will concede this match.”

As soon as his voice fell, he started putting on a glove on each hand before moving one of his hands to a leather pouch at his waist. Then, he raised his hand up.

Suddenly, buzzing sounds reverberated as hundreds of emerald-green flying insects started to circle the man.

Liu Ming's eyes winced as he closely examined these flying insects. Each of them were like dragonflies but enlarged multiple times. In addition, they had grown two pairs of small fangs from their mouths and a black poisonous stinger from their tails. These two changes made their appearance abnormally fierce.

Qiu Longzhi gave a low growl and pointed at Liu Ming. Immediately, almost half of the insects surrounding him turned into a green cloud that rushed at Liu Ming.

Liu Ming raised his eyebrow, and with a single-handed technique, dots of red light started to appear before him. They instantly conglomerated into three scarlet fireballs. With a flick of his sleeve, all three fireballs flew toward the insect cloud.

“Hong, hong, hong!”

The three fireballs accurately hit the insect cloud and exploded into burning flames that engulfed the entire insect cloud.

However, Liu Ming's expression didn't relax by any amount. Instead, he changed his hand technique as seven to eight Wind Blades appeared.

It was because Qiu Longzhi didn't show even the slightest worry. A corner of his mouth even revealed the hint of a smirk.

As expected, the cloud of fire emitted a loud noise and the cloud of insects all rushed out as one. Aside from some having blackened bodies, they all looked surprisingly undamaged.

Liu Ming had already anticipated this happening in his heart, but seeing it now, his pupils couldn't help but constrict. Channeling the spell in his hand, the wind blades became a flurry of green lights as they flashed forth.

“Peng, peng” sounds were emitted one after another. The wind blades became a series of green lights as they slashed the cloud of insects.

Other than a few that couldn't evade in time, the rest of the insects dispersed, evading the attack. They continued to soar toward Liu Ming.

Noticing this, Liu Ming's face darkened. Suddenly waving his sleeves, a cyan short sword appeared in his hand. After slightly waving it, a stunning myriad of sword shadows appeared in the air.

“Totem! Come back! We are only sparring. Fellow actually took out his totem. These insects are not bad but how can they withstand the attack of a totem. I need to change my insects as well.” After feeling the terrifying power within the sword shadows, Qiu Longzhi was unable to keep calm. He shouted loudly while making more hand signs.

Those dragonfly-like insects immediately turned around and flew back the way they came.

At the same time, Qiu Longzhi took something else from a leather bag. He hurled it in Liu Ming's direction.

Shockingly, it was a shiny black beetle that was as big as a fist. Vibrating its blurry wings on its back, it turned to a black light as it sped toward Liu Ming.

Liu Ming bluntly tightened his grip on the cyan moon sword. The cyan sword shadows rose in power and the beetle was instantly swallowed within those shadows.

Immediately a sharp cry was heard!

Flash after flash of cold light slashed across the black beetle but aside from knocking it around and some white marks appearing on its hard shell, the beetle remained undamaged.

“Ha Ha, how is this mutated Iron Insect? Its body has long reached the state of being unpierceable by swords and impervious to fire and water. Normal totems have no way of harming it.” Seeing this, Qiu Longzhi wildly laughed.



“Is that so? If it can’t be slashed, then let’s try trapping it.” Hearing this, Liu Ming’s eyes revealed a cold glint. With a sudden shake of his arm, a hand covered in black mist instantaneously entered the sword shadow and grabbed ahold of the black beetle.

In shock, the black beetle bit down with its pincers toward the back of Liu Ming’s hand.

However, at this time, a blue light shone out of Liu Ming’s hand. The light caught the beetle with a “chi-la” as layer after layer of frost appeared on the surface of the beetle. The beetle was instantly sealed in a huge chunk of ice.

Liu Ming’s wrist flicked, hurling the chunk of ice. Waving his cyan moon sword with his other hand, he slashed at it.

“Fellow please have mercy! I concede this match. My Iron Insect isn’t afraid of anything, but it’s only worry is ice elemental attacks. It’s current defense stat is not even ten-percent of what it was before. It won’t be able to withstand Fellow’s sword.” Seeing this scene, Qiu Longzhi was shocked and yelled.

Hearing this, Liu Ming laughed as his sword twisted. The blade flipped to the flat side before continuing its motion.

“Smack!”

The ice cube flew forward.

Seeing this, Qiu Longzhi relaxed in his heart. Lifting his hand, he caught the chunk of ice. He then made symbols with his hands and sparks of flames appeared. They surrounded the ice cube and melted it.

“Fellow is quite strong to be able to find this insect’s weakness in such a short amount of time. Fellow’s technique should originate from the Icicle Technique, right? In addition, it has been perfected to Initial Spell Mastery, right? Otherwise, my insect wouldn’t have been trapped this fast.” Qiu Longzhi praised as he channeled his spell.

“Fellow Qiu has a good eye. The technique I used indeed originates from the Icicle Technique. Fellow should have other insects as well. Want to

keep sparring?” Liu Ming didn’t deny anything as he answered.

“There’s no need to. Although I have other insects, they can’t be used to spar. Tsk tsk, from our spar just now, I can confirm fellow isn’t any simple Late Spirit Apostle. There is no more point in sparring. If with such power, if fellow wants to join the government, a position of commander will definitely be yours. So, does fellow have interest?” Qiu Longzhi asked Liu Ming as he saved his beetle from the ice cube.

Joining the Gold Spirit Guests? I’m afraid I can’t, I am already a guest at the Hundred Spirit House.” Liu Ming paused but quickly replied as he shook his head.

“Fellow is actually a guest of the Hundred Spirit House, which is backed by the Third Marquis. Pe Pe, such a pity. I won’t dare to try and take people from the Third Marquis. I won’t strain myself. Ah, yes, I still don’t know fellow’s name. Not too long in the future, there will be a secret exchange happening in Xuanjing. Everyone attending has a big name and I believe many good items will appear. Is fellow interested?” Qiu Longzhi revealed a face of pity, but then asked another question.

“My name is Qian Ming. I am really interested in the secret exchange gathering. Though, I am curious; when it will start?” Hearing his words, Liu Ming’s heart wavered.

“It should start in two months. Since most of these fellows aren’t people from Xuanjing, they need time to arrive from other places.” Qiu Longzhi answered after hearing Liu Ming voice with interest.

“Alright, I will be there at that time.” Liu Ming replied without thinking.

“Very well, I will introduce you and have them send you an invitation.” Qiu Longzhi happily responded.

Liu Ming naturally gave his thanks.

After that, they spoke a few more words before Liu Ming said his farewells and flew back to the carriages.

Moments later, the three carriages that were paused on the government path started to move forward again.

Qiu Longzhi remained above the forest, watching the carriages while deep in thought.

“Big Boss Qiu, are you sure we aren’t going to attack? We have already set up two formation flags. If we lure him down and gang up on him, he won’t be able to escape even if he grew wings.”

Within the forest, the voice of a confused man was suddenly heard.

Right after, green lights flashed from a few trees nearby. Two shadows flew out. After a few blurs, they stopped next to Qiu Longzhi in a ghostly fashion.

“My two brothers, I told you to set up the formation in case something went wrong. No one can say that they can take down someone of his caliber down with complete confidence.”

“If he runs away, I’m afraid we will be in deep trouble for the future. The important thing is, why should I be the bad guy and offend such a person?” Qiu Longzhi replied.

The two men that appeared had withered faces and wore black cloaks with disheveled looks. Sharp claws adorned their hands, giving off an impression of living ghosts.

“But, before, when boss and the other commanders were discussing...” One of the cloaked men started speaking with hesitation.

# Chapter 187: Xuan Zhi and Empress Dong

“Hmph, those three bastards, only the gods know what the old monsters from the Imperial family gave them, making them go into secluded cultivation at once. They stay inside the system but instead what to stick their noses in matters outside, how can there be such an easy thing in this world. The things I have previously discussed with them, you need not pay heed. As the situation in Xuan city becomes murkier, we cannot afford to make another strong enemy; if we can create relations with him, we might find a big use for him in the future.” Qiu Longzhi sniffed.

“So boss was thinking like this! But this man’s past is a mystery, he is also a guest on the Third Marquis’ side. There won’t be any problems right?” The other cloaked man asked, showing hints of uncertainty.

“He is only a guest of the Hundred Spirit house and the Hundred Spirit House and the Third Marquis are also working under the premise of business partners. Thus, he can’t be counted as an underling of the Third Marquis. Later, send a man to investigate whether Hundred Spirit House really has a new guest called Qian Ming.” Qiu Longzhi ordered briefly.

“Understood, I shall investigate immediately.” The black cloaked man answered.

“Speaking of the Third Marquis, I’ve thought of something. Not long ago we sent spies into the in house. What is their situation? Any news?” Qiu Longzhi inquired.

“Boss, the spy we sent hasn’t contacted us in half a month. Judging by the situation of the other spies we sent before, he has been compromised and killed.” One of the cloaked men heard and reported with a grimace.

“Hmph, the Third Marquis really is a cautious man. We’ve sent seven to eight spies, yet even our best could only last for half a year and after which he disappeared without a trace.” Hearing this, Qiu Longzhi face instantly darkened.

“Boss, the Third Marquis has been laying low these past years, he doesn’t even show his face around court much. Why do we need to pay so

much attention to him? It is known that he had helped the current Emperor to his throne from the past years and if someone were to snitch on us for this, although we won't be too hurt, we won't end up in a good spot either." The other cloaked man asked.

"Hmm, I was contemplating on telling you guys later but since you've both asked, I should explain. The reason why I'm so worried about this marquis is because I received information saying that this Third Marquis could be part of the Black Spirit Group, which is one of the strongest powers in Xuanjing. Heck, he might even be the person behind the Black Spirit Group." After thinking a while, Qiu Longzhi revealed a shocking revelation.

"What? The person behind the Black Spirit Group is the Third Marquis?!"

"Correct, if that wasn't the case, then I would be an idiot to continue sending men in to die. Gathering information is actually not that important. They are only there to remind the Third Marquis that people are watching him and thus preventing him from acting carelessly and by that, forcing the Black Spirit Group to stay quiet. You two should find another spy that is willing to die and send him into the Third Marquis' place again after a few days." Qiu Longzi laughed and said.

Overcoming their shock, the two cloaked men bowed as they acknowledged the order.

Since Qiu Longzi didn't want to stay any longer, he let the two men retrieve their flag formation and took them along as he flew towards the direction of Xuanjing.

Two hours later, another black cloud appeared above the forest. Standing above the cloud was actually Liu Ming.

Him being here alone made it obvious that he came back after sending off the few carriages.

He circled above as he scanned the forest below with his strong Mental Strength. Feeling the residual energy waves of formations, he laughed out coldly as he flew off.

.....

Meanwhile, in a prestigiously decorated palace underneath Xuanjing's, there was a middle aged man adorned in a golden robe rolling on the ground. His normally intimidating face had various rice sized cyan scales pop up as his hair also became blue like the ocean while his pupils gained a silver hue.

“Peng!”

A huge turquoise colored fish tail suddenly flailed out of his robe, slapping hard onto the ground. The extraordinarily hard stone floor was instantly demolished to dust.

The man however, looked as if he was in extreme agony, as he dragged his two hands along the ground. Looking carefully, one could notice his hands left blood-stained scratch marks all around him.

Time passed by as the man continued to struggle, suddenly his body gave a huge twitch. Afterwards, the man became more relaxed as he took heavy breaths while staying still on the floor.

“Hehe, to half bred Sea Race like you, the pain of body transformation would only get worst as you transform more. If you knew this was going to happen, why would you still act this way.” The door to the secret room flung open as a haughty woman dressed in a silk robe. walked in.

“I am the current emperor; even if I don't consume Sea Race medicine, I shall still overcome this suffering. Else wouldn't I really become your puppet.” The middle aged man took a deep breath as his tail became legs again. Struggling to stand up, he replied with an icy cold tone.

“A petty human kingdom is nothing compared to the endless boundaries of the sea, in which the sea race reside in. A child like you, who has never been to our kingdom, knows nothing about how big the world truly is. If it wasn't for the fact that we have big plans in store, with my high social standing in my clan, I wouldn't even bother coming here to be a bride for a lowly human and give birth to you. Stopping your medication this time was only a small warning, try not to do anything stupid again.” The middle aged woman shook her head as she slowly sat down in a chair

inside the room.

The man wearing the exquisite robe is actually the emperor in name of Da Xuan Country, emperor Xuan Zhi

The middle aged beauty is, surprisingly, the emperor's mother, Xuan Kingdom's empress Dong

But when these two met, there was no feeling of family, on the contrary, a weird tension filled the air.

“What exactly are your plans! To have already start setting it up decades ago... I've already agreed to comply to your demands, shouldn't it be about time you told me your plans.” Xuan Zhi hesitated, then opened his mouth to ask.

“Our plans! That isn't something you can learn of yet. Right now, you should try your hardest to swap Da Xuan Country's important government members with our people. You have to make sure, if anything big happens, Da Xuan Country will not fall into turmoil. Neither will masses of mortals escape the kingdom.” Empress Dong looked at her son and replied briefly.

“Hmph, all these years, at least a third of the royal court follows you. Is that still not enough?!” Xuan Zhi retorted.

“Obviously, it isn't enough! At least half of the government members should be from the list I gave you. I know that in these years, although you've been obeying to me at the surface, I know you still have a rebellious heart. Else you wouldn't have contacted the supervising disciple from the Barbarian Ghost Sect. If it wasn't for me pulling some strings, making your third brother thinking the disciple was coming for him and manipulating him into killing the disciple for me, our plan might have been ruined.” The empress gave a cold laugh and said.

“Even I didn't expect third brother to be so reckless, to lay his hands on people from the Barbarian Ghost Sect. Is he not even afraid of the consequences when they find out? Even I can't help him then.” Xuan Zhi remarked.

“Child, even now you’re trying to be smart with me; think about who raised you up. Don’t tell me you don’t know that your third brother isn’t doing things by himself anymore.” The empress laughed as she heard Xuan Zhi’s comment.

“So you found out. Then you clearly know what actions the Black Spirit Group are taking.” Xuan Zhi finally dropped his poker face and said.

“Of course I’d know. If someone else is willing to spend human resources and money to do hard labor for me, I couldn’t be happier about it.” The empress stated as a matter of fact.

“Then let me ask another question, how are my uncles faring. Ever since they were tricked into secluded cultivation by you, even I couldn’t see them again.” Xuan Zhi stayed silent, then sighed as he asked.

“Be relieved, your uncles still have great use to me so I won’t take their lives. However with their current situation, I’m afraid it isn’t any better than yours. In time, the decision of standing on the Sea Race’s side won’t be their decision.” Empress Dong smirked.

“The same as me... What do you mean?” Xuan Zhi shivered slightly.

“It’s nothing, you will learn about it in due time. But contacting the Barbarian Ghost Sect’s disciple was the last straw. If something like this happens again, not only will you not get anymore medication, I’m afraid we might even have to make you disappear and replace a puppet on the throne of this kingdom. I can’t even tell if you’re smart or playing stupid. With your identity as a half Sea Race, even if the human cultivators can banish us from this land, do you believe the humans would continue to let you be King? You would probably spend the rest of your life locked up, much less rewarded. When we Sea Race fully take control of this kingdom, we would still need someone to manage this land, making a half blood like you the perfect candidate. Compare this and being controlled by the five great sects, what is the difference? I’ve said all I have to said, this is the last warning I’m giving you and don’t blame me for not taking into account our familial relationship.” The empress’ gaze turned sharp, as she threw a glass bottle on the floor and left the room.



# Chapter 188: Fan Baizi

Xuan Zhi saw the bottle and twisted his face, but after a while, sighed as he picked it up and consumed a blue pill from the bottle.

His original extremely pale face, immediately gained some color as the scales on his body disappeared and his hair returned to being black. It was as if nothing ever happened.

“I originally wanted to attract the people from the sect, so that I could lurk under their radars, seeing if there were any chances I could use. Looks like there is no more hope besides following the Sea Race. I only hope it will turn out as she said.” Xuan Zhi lifted his now normal hands and after staring in front of him, he spoke to himself feebly.

This emperor of the Xuan Kingdom, then opened the door to the secret basement before slowly limping out.

.....

That night, Liu Ming sat with his legs crossed on the wooden bed in his residence, playing with the cyan scale in his hands. His face had a thoughtful expression.

With his experience, it was natural that he couldn't observe anything special from the scale, but it was obvious that it wouldn't belong to someone normal.

It looks like what Mister Sun said was true.

The current emperor that the five sects had propped up was actually not a human. This was a huge joke and enough to make the faces of the sects fall to the ground.

However, because of this, he couldn't simply send this information back to the sect.

After all, the only evidence that he had was the scale that was in his hand. If there was anything wrong or some mistake, his blame would be quite great.

In addition, with Gao Chong about to become a true Spirit Master, he could not leave such an obvious mistake out in the open.

Liu Ming thought it over before deciding to temporarily keep the information on hold. Until he found another piece of obvious evidence that could confirm the information. Then, he would send the information at that time.

However, there might have been some kind of connection with the ambush that was laid on him in the Small Clear Temple and the previous Supervising Disciple's disappearance.

Liu Ming put away the scale and started thinking about the connection between those kind of things.

....

In the following few days, Liu Ming used almost all of his time in the underground marketplace of Xuanjing and bought some pills and Glyphs that he thought were somewhat useful. However, he didn't find anything of much value.

This wasn't strange.

With Liu Ming's experience and wealth, there weren't many things that Liu Ming would find useful.

However, this day, Liu Ming had just returned from the marketplace and about to go back to his house when he was stopped by Qian Chao who left the main hall. With a smile, Qian Chao asked;

TL: This following chapter is going to be confusing since the fake name of Liu Ming starts with Qian and the owner has the name of Qian Chao

"Mister Qian, you have finally come back. I have some good news, would you be interested?"

"Since it is good news, why would not be interested." Liu Ming replied with a smile.

"Hehe, this good news is that Master Fan Baizi is finally willing to meet

us. This time, Master Fan has refined a new type of pill and plans to sell it at our auction. Thus, he was willing to see you. Does mister have time right now? This piece of information came a bit late and it would be best if we left right now to go see Master Fan in case anything unforeseen happens. As long as we have Master Fan's new pill, I believe that the auction will have a much higher chance of proceeding successfully." Qian Chao said excitedly.

"Now? Is anyone else coming besides Mister Qian?" Liu Ming first paused before opening his mouth and asking.

"No, it will only be the two of us. Elder Mian is responsible for matters regarding the auction so he will be near the warehouse and unable to leave." Qian Chao replied without thinking.

"Alright, if that's the case, let's go." Liu Ming thought about it for a second before nodding.

Qian Chao was surprised as he hurried to order a servant to prepare a carriage, and walked with Liu Ming out.

.....

After two hours, Liu Ming and Qian Chao appeared on a mountainous road.

"This Master Fan actually lives on Immortal Dawn Mountain, such a coincidence." Liu Ming smiled gently as he took in the surroundings.

"With Master Fan's alchemy skills, he naturally wouldn't put himself under the control of various powers. Furthermore, Immortal Dawn Mountain has dense Yuan Qi, while also being secluded which makes this a good place to refine pills." Although Qian Chao is an ordinary mortal with no Spiritual Pulse, but his movements showed no sign of fatigue when walking next to Liu Ming.

"Such is true. With the rarity of Alchemists, if they were in dangerous areas, it wouldn't be surprising if they were kidnapped and forced to refine pills. But this alchemist, Fan Baizi, living on Immortal Dawn Mountain.... Doesn't this mean the Imperial Court is reaping some sort of

benefit?” Liu Ming replied.

“Haha, Mister Qian really is an understanding person. Of course, for sheltering Master Fan under their wing, Master Fan has to refine a set number of medical pills for the imperial court. Furthermore, if Golden Spirit Guests were to buy medical pills from Master Fan, they can also get a ten percent discount.” Qian Chao laughed out and answered.

Liu Ming nodded as he showed an expression of understanding.

After the time that it takes to eat a meal, the two finally arrived under a cliff. On the cliff, a huge green marble door could be seen; the sides of the door had statues of black iron lions, each towering over ten feet tall.

Not far away from the door was a huge wooden pavilion. Inside a dozen people sat and rested.

Liu Ming swepted his eyes around. He was able to tell that most of these people were Spirit Apostles but there were also a few mortals.

“These people are.....” Liu Ming asked subconsciously.

“No need to pay them attention. These people are either here to learn Master Fan’s Alchemy skill or ask the master to make certain medical pills. Under normal circumstances, Master Fan wouldn’t even bother noticing them.” Qian Chao answered, being accustomed to this scene.

After which, he brought Liu Ming along the cliff towards the stone door and rolled back his sleeves as he knocked loudly on the door.

Moments later, the stone doors opened. Within, a young boy, with red lips and white teeth along with a pigtail on his head, walked out.

“You two are?” The young boy glanced at the two as he asked.

“I am Qian Chao of the Hundred Spirit House, I have already booked an appointment with Master Fan.” Qian Chao replied with a smile.

“So it’s Owner Qian, Master has already given his orders. If Owner Qian were to appear, there is no need to notify him and they can enter to the lobby immediately.” The boy showed a smile as he turned around and lead the way.

Owner Qian, seeing this situation, gave thanks as he followed Liu Ming inside.

The people outside in the wooden pavilion immediately started a commotion after witnessing this scene.

This Master of Alchemy, Fan Baizi, was known throughout the whole of Xuan City for having a weird temperament.

The people in the queue have waited for a long time. The longest, already half a month. The shortest, have also already waited for 2 to 3 days. But it was the first time someone was able to walk in full of swagger after conversing merely a few sentences, making people shocked and awed.

Immediately, Liu Ming and Qian Chao walked into a lobby under the guidance of the young boy.

The lobby was no bigger than a hundred feet wide. Each corner rested unknown exotic flowers, in the middle laid an ebony table and a few chairs, showing a simplistic look.

“May you two sirs wait for a while; master is still refining pills and only after can he come see you.” The boy brought the two to some chairs and said respectfully as he served some tea.

“No worries, the master’s pill refinement comes first. The two of us can wait.” Qian Chao replied.

The boy nodded his head as he left.

Liu Ming and Owner Qian drank tea as they started some small talk.

“Mister Han, did you perhaps met Commander Qiu from the Golden Spirit House a few days ago?” After a while, Qian Chao asked suddenly.

“Hmm, we have indeed met. How does owner know about this?” Liu Ming was surprised, but after a thought he asked back.

“It’s nothing, just few days ago someone came by to ask about Mister Qian and it looked as if they were under the order of commander Qiu.” Qian Chao smiled and said.

“Hehe, it looks like this commander Qiu is one caring fellow.” Liu Ming heard and snickered.

“I heard Elder Mian said this Qiu Longzi and another three commanders are all Perfect Late Spirit Apostles. He is said to be one of the strongest cultivators in Xuanjing. Mister Han didn’t offend him unknowingly right?” Qian Chao asked, probingly.

“Owner should be at ease, I only sparred with Commander Qiu for a few bouts when we met, which was what caused the attention.” Liu Ming answered casually.

“Spar!”

Qian Chao, the Hundred Spirit House owner, was startled when he heard this.

Although he knew that Liu Ming could have been a Late Spirit Apostle, he never thought Liu Ming could be compared with a Perfect Spirit Apostle like Qiu Longzi.

With a face full of shock, he moved his mouth and was about to ask something else when suddenly, a hoarse voice came from the side doors to the lobby.

“I am also curious about the final results of Fellow’s spar with Fellow Qiu. Qiu Longzi is well versed in the arts of Insects with the Insects in his possession to not be trifled with.”

As the voice died down, an elderly man with white hair and rosy cheeks, dressed in a white robe, walked out of the side door. His face wore an expression of interest.

“Master Fan, your medical pull have been refined.” The moment Qian Chao saw the elder, he immediately stood up and greeted him cheerfully.

Liu Ming’s eyes flashed, as he stood up and covered his fist:

“I am a guest of the Hundred Spirit House, Qian Ming. Hello, Fellow Fan.”

“You two, please sit, no need to show such courtesy. So this is Fellow

Qian, Owner Qian, you have really accepted a extraordinary guest.” Fan Baizi waved his hand and waited for the two to sit before saying with a smile.

“Mister Qian indeed has skill. Even though you saved my wife and son, even I couldn't phantom that Mister Qian's abilities have reached such a level.” Qian Chao grimaced as he answered.

“Of course. With Qiu Longzi's identity, if it isn't people with similar cultivation levels, it would be very hard to spar with other people. It looks like Fellow Qian is also a Perfect Late Spirit Apostle.” Fan Baizi said thoughtfully as he stroked his beard looking at Liu Ming.

# Chapter 189: Blood Boil Pill

“It looks like I cannot conceal my cultivation level to Master Fan.” After being slightly shocked, Liu Ming admitted it calmly.

As he finished his sentence, not only was Fan Baizi fazed, but even Qian Chao was surprised.

For the Hundred Spirit House to suddenly gain an extra Perfection Spirit Apostle as a guest was like a bout of good luck to him.

“Tsk tsk, I would never imagine that Fellow Qian would reach such a cultivation level while being so young. Even if you are compared to the core disciples of the five sects, you aren’t far behind. I say it isn’t impossible for you to break through to Spirit Master Level.” Fan Baizi commented in amazement.

“Master Fan is overpraising me. If I really had a chance to charge through to the Spirit Master Level, I would already be hiding somewhere and get ready for it. To be honest, the main reason I’ve come to Xuanjing is to find a suitable Pure Aura Qi. Another reason is to purchase some auxiliary pills, which could increase my chance at breaking through to the Spirit Master Level.” Liu Ming sighed.

“Haha, Fellow Qian at least still has a chance at Spirit Master, just this alone can already make many envious. As for Pure Aura Qi and auxiliary pills for breaking through the Spirit Master realm. Although they are rare, it is possible to obtain such things in Xuanjing. Especially since Fellow Han is a guest of the Hundred Spirit House. Why not try your luck at the auction?” Fan Baizi laughed out and spoke with intent.

“What, the auction this time around actually has Pure Aura Qi?” Liu Ming turned around and asked Qian Chao as his heart wavered.

“Master Fan is correct, for this auction, the Hundred Spirit House has indeed gathered multiple Pure Aura Qis and the most precious one is also the final item on auction. It is on its way to Xuanjing as we speak.” Qian Chao grimaced as he replied.



“Very good, it looks like I will be joining the auction. Owner has previously promised that I could purchase an item on auction for half its price, does it still hold true?” Liu Ming smiled.

“How could I break my promise?! No matter what item Fellow Qian wants to auction, They can all be purchased at half price.” Although Qian Chao felt hurt by the amount of profit he would lose, but after thinking about getting closer to Liu Ming, he answered immediately.

“Very well, then I shall give my thanks to owner.” Liu Ming naturally gave thanks.

Fan Baizi sat on the side, and smiled as he witnessed this scene.

“Ah, that’s right! Master Fan! Your message this time around mentioned the creation of a brand new high tier pill that you were willing to put on auction. As I don’t know what kind of pill it is, could you tell me the its name as well as its special properties, so that I may prepare it for auctioning.” Qian Chao finally looked at Fan Baizi seriously and mentioned.

“This pill, the Blood Boil Pill, is what I want to auction.” The white robed elder seemed as if he was waiting for Qian Chao to ask as he took his time to retrieve a small jade bottle. Turning it upside down, a blood red pill fell out.

Qian Chao focused as he stood up and walked towards the blood red pill and grabbed it. He inspected it closely before then placing it under his nose and smelled it gently.

It had no smell at all!

This Hundred Spirit House Owner couldn’t help but wrinkle his brows.

Proudly, Fan Baizi announced:

“This Blood Boil Pill was created in accordance to an ancient recipe. Not only did it require an enormous amount of Spirit Grass, but only three were made after the refinement process. I also believe that within the whole of Xuanjing, only I can refine it. It can invigorate the essence blood within the user, letting their power grow up to 140% of their original

strength.”

“What?! This pill can allow one to raise their strength to 140% of their original power?! How long can it be maintained? What negative effects does it have?” Qian Chao was shocked but he still asked the most important questions.

“Hehe, this is dependant on the body strength of the consumer, as different cultivators have different types of bodies, the blood boil effect will also greatly differ. But I can confirm that it will at least last for fifteen minutes without question. As for negative effects, of course there are some; the essence blood in the consumer is greatly damaged, resulting in a long term state of lethargic after consumption. For those too weak, they may even faint immediately. Of course as long as one takes care of themselves and let their essence blood return to its normal healthy state, these symptoms will disappear.” Fan Baizi answered as he did not attempt to hide the pill’s weaknesses.

“If the pill really is what Master says it is, the negative effects don’t account to much. As customs, I shall have to test the pill before auction. I hope Master doesn’t mind?” Qian Chao showed an expression of excitement.

To him, if the effects of the Blood Boil Pill were true, the price of the pill would be exorbitantly high, enough to be one of the final items of the auction.

“No matter, I also know about the auction’s rules. Owner Qian may bring this Blood Boil Pill back to examine. But for this type of pills, even I have only refined three so even one is exceedingly rare. Examine it all you want, but do not harm its medical effects.” Fan Baizi answered after being deep in thought.

“You have my gratitude Master Fan and you won’t need to worry! The Hundred Spirit House have examined many different pills and their effects before, I will only take a tiny bit off its surface to examine, I wouldn’t harm the pill at all.” Fan Baizi was pleased.

“Very well, I have my trust in the Hundred Spirit House. Then we shall

do what you said.” Fan Baizi replied.

Qian Chao naturally gave his thanks, as he took care to place the Blood Boil Pill back inside its bottle.

“If the two of you have no other things, then this old man shall accompany you two no more. I shall prepare to go back and refine some more pills.” Fan Baizi sipped some tea which was placed on a nearby table, as his expressions grew colder.

The rumors that said that Master Fan’s temperament being strange were indeed true.

Hearing this, Qian Chao looked at Liu Ming unconsciously.

Liu Ming gave a smile, as he cupped his hands towards the white robed elder and said:

“Fellow Fan, I have accompanied Owner Qian here with another request, I was hoping you could listen.”

“Oh, a request? If it were other people, I would naturally be too lazy to care, but Fellow Qian is a Perfection Spirit Apostle, naturally is different. I shall listen.” Fan Baizi heard and was slightly puzzled.

“Owner Qian, may you leave for a bit. I wish to speak to Master Fan in private for this matter.” Liu Ming turned around and said to Qian Chao.

“Hehe, this naturally isn’t a problem. How about this, I shall go back to the original lobby and wait there, Mister Qian can come there to find me once you’re done.” Qian Chao answered unhesitantly.

Fan Baizi didn’t show discontentment, and after giving some orders, he summoned the young boy that was waiting outside. The young boy then led Qian Chao out of the hall.

“Alright, fellow can say what is on his mind directly to me. I hope that Fellow Qian’s matter won’t waste my time.” Fan Baizi waited until Qian Chao and the boy’s figures disappeared before he winced his eyes and spoke to Liu Ming.

“I have something. Does Master Fan recognize what it is?” With a smile,

Liu Ming took out a small thing that was the size of a fingernail and handed it over.

“I’ll take a look.... Huh, this is...” Fan Baizi originally took the thing nonchalantly. However, when his hand slightly dipped, he began to take things more seriously. When he finally started speaking, his voice held a hint of a tremor.

This thing was actually a light gold colored clay. It was actually a small part of the Resting Dirt that he had obtained in the Life and Death Trials.

“Looks like master has recognized this object. You’re right, this object is the Resting Dirt that is quite important to alchemists. Does Fellow Fan need to closely examine it and verify it?” Seeing this, Liu Ming kept his poker face as he asked.

“I don’t need to do so. I have once obtained about six grams of Gold Essence Resting Dirt but it was much smaller than yours while the color of it was much inferior. This is indeed the Gold Essence Resting Dirt. Fellow Qian, say what you want. As long as you give me the two ounces of Gold Essence Resting Dirt, no matter if it is pills or anything else, I will answer without hesitation.” Bai Fanzi pinched the incredibly soft clay in his hand before saying without any hesitation.

At this moment, this Master Alchemist that was renowned throughout Xuanjing was looking at Liu Ming with a heated gaze.

“My request is very simple. I would like for Fellow Fan to teach me the Art of Alchemy.” Liu Ming eyes flashed as he responded.

“What, you want to learn Alchemy! Fellow Han is also an alchemist?” Fan Baizi was instantly shocked.

“Although I have read through some alchemical books, I have never touched true alchemy.” Liu Ming answered blatantly.

“Then Fellow should already know that the Art of Alchemy is extremely deep and complicated. If one doesn’t have talent, even if one uses his or her entire life, he or her will still be unable to accomplish much.” When the white robed elder heard this, his face turned somewhat ugly.

“I have been in the cultivation world for quite a while so how would I not know of such things. However, because of various reasons, I must learn the art of alchemy. Hopefully, fellow can grant my request.” Liu Ming sighed and said.

“Hmph, does Fellow know how high my talent in the Art of Alchemy is and how many years it took me to get to this point? No matter the reason, I would like to ask for Fellow Qian to stop this thought. I see that your talent in cultivation is not bad to be able to get to this point while so young. Why must you learn alchemy. With the time investment, you might end up not achieving anything and regretting this decision in the future.” Fan Baizi’s tone turned serious for the first time as he spoke to Liu Ming.

# Chapter 190: Trouble

"Thanks to Fellow Han's good intentions, but I have decided on this matter," Liu Ming unhurriedly replied.

"Since you really want to learn alchemy with me, it is not impossible. But I will require you to follow three rules of mine!" Fan Baizi coldly said, furrowing his brows for a moment after glancing at the unprovoked Liu Ming.

"Fellow, do not hesitate to tell me, I shall lend an ear." Liu Ming responded composedly.

"First, even though, I, Fan Baizi am not the greatest alchemist in the Da Xuan Kingdom, I believe I am not inferior to the alchemy masters specially trained by the five sects. So if you want to learn alchemy from me, this Gold Essence Resting Dirt is not enough." Fan Baizi stared intently at Liu Ming.

"Since one piece is not enough, then what if I add this piece? This combined is all that I have." Liu Ming raised the tip of his brow, flicked his sleeve, and suddenly a smaller piece of Gold Essence Resting Dirt flew out.

"You really had more golden Resting Dirt! These two added together is about five ounces. This is barely enough for the cost of learning alchemy. Second, the art of alchemy is profoundly incomparable and your status is special. Even though you are learning alchemy techniques from me, you are still a friend of the same generation as mine. I will only guide you for three years, how much you learn is all up to your talent." Fan Baizi said seriously.

"I originally meant to only learn for a couple of years so three years of time is enough. However, I have one request, Fellow Fan must use a Heart Oath to swear that you won't leave any tricks hidden when teaching me." Liu Ming's eyes flashed as he replied seriously.

"Fine, no problem. I have a reputation, I will not do any dishonorable acts in that aspect. Third, learning alchemy is an extremely material-

consuming activity, while you are learning alchemy here, the required things are provided but they have to be paid for in Spirit Stones at market price. One word of advice, to become a real alchemist, immense practice is absolutely necessary, even to the extent in some respects that it is more important than natural talent. Even if you had exceptional natural talent in alchemy, it will only allow you to waste fewer pill materials in the end.

Therefore, the amount of Spirit Stones will be extremely high. It's best to be mentally prepared. If you feel like there is no problem with the aforementioned three rules, from this day, you can come here for five days a month. I will specially take out half a day each day to instruct you in alchemy." Fan Baizi said with a straight face.

"Only five days a month, is this not too few." Hearing this, Liu Ming hesitated momentarily for the first time.

"I usually have to study alchemy and refine pills, being able to take out the five days is already my limit. If you do not agree, I have no choices." Fan Baizi said, shaking his head.

"Okay, five days it is. Then Fellow Fan and I have settled on this." After his expressions had changed a bit, Liu Ming spat out his reply in one breath.

"Very good. As long as you have natural talent in alchemy and financial resources to support your training, with these three years, I believe that it is enough to get the basics of alchemy." At that moment, Fan Baizi finally leaked a smile as he put away the Gold Essence Resting Dirt with a wave of his hand.

For the rest of the time, the white-robed old man naturally did not bother with Liu Ming as he warned Liu Ming with a few sentences to not reveal the matter about the Golden Essence Resting Dirt and let him leave.

After the time it takes to eat a meal, Liu Ming and Qian Chao exited Fan Baizi's cave entrance; they directly ignored everyone's look from the wood pavilion as they went down the mountain.

Of course, before that, this Hundred Spirit House owner was quite

stunned when he heard that Fan Baizi actually accepted Liu Ming's request to teach him alchemy. After a good while, the gaze he gave Liu Ming became strange.

Like this, the two returned to the Qian House. As soon as they arrived, Qian Chao gathered all of the alchemists immediately and started examining the Blood Boil Pill that he brought back.

When Liu Ming returned to his house, he immediately began secluding cultivation.

In the next two days, he did not leave his house and seemed as if he would keep cultivating until the auction started.

However, on the third day, Elder Mian and Qian Chao came to his house with serious faces.

"What, the carriage team escorting the items for the auction is stuck about a hundred miles away?" Liu Ming asked back with shock.

"Among the group that is escorting the auction items, there is not only a team of Shadow Guards from the Third Marquis, there are also two guests from the branch Hundred Spirit House and also two more guests that I sent out to help the escorting. With four Spirit Apostles, I thought that there would be no trouble but I could not have thought that the opposition would actually find a stronger team and has forced my team to be stranded. Right now, they are utilizing a flag formation that was meant to be one of the auction items to barely defend against attacks of the other party. If it weren't for one of the guests having nurtured a Spirit Bee that sneaked out to give us news, we would not even know that they were stranded. There is no doubt that this is an action of the Gathering Wealth Building's Owner Mu." Elder Mian said with a dark face.

"Then owner would like to...." Liu Ming's eyes flashed as he asked Qian Chao.

"In case the Gathering Wealth Building is trying to divert our strengths, Elder Main must stay here to look after the warehouse. However, I have sent people to the Third Marquis' House to borrow two personal bodyguards and a team of guards. I'm worried that this strength is not



enough so I would love for sir to also go with them. No matter what method sir uses, as long as you can ensure the auction items, you will have done a great service to our house.” Qian Chao said preparedly.

“No problem as a guest of the Hundred Spirit House, I cannot stand by at such a time. When do I leave?” Liu Ming gave it a quick thought before he answered.

“It will take some time for the Third Marquis’ men to move but we don’t have that time to waste. Could Mister Qian leave first? The personal bodyguards and Shadow Guards will be right after you.” Qian Chao said with some anxiety.

“Alright, I’ll leave now.” Hearing this, Liu Ming nodded.

Seeing this, Qian Chao and Elder Mian were both overjoyed. Suddenly, a shadow flashed past and a small figure threw itself onto Liu Ming as it hugged the leg of Liu Ming.

“Uncle Ming!”

This was Qian Ruping who had a worried expression on her face.

“Relax, this is only a small matter. I’ll be right back. Be obedient and wait for me here.” Seeing this, Liu Ming patted the girl and smiled.

Perhaps it was due to the trust in Liu Ming but Qian Ruping bit her lip as she loosened her arms with reluctance.

“Nephew Ruping, be assured. Mister Qian is incredibly powerful and there will be others helping him this time. There definitely won’t be any problems.” Seeing this, Qian Chao quickly smiled as he said.

However, when Qian Ruping heard these words which basically had the same meaning as what Liu Ming had said, she instead looked the other way, ignoring Qian Chao.

Qian Chao could only smile awkwardly as he did not speak anymore.

With a laugh, Liu Ming gave a few words of instruction to the girl before asking about the location at which the carriage team was stuck at. Then, he left the house.

Fifteen minutes later, Liu Ming was seated on a black cloud and flying along some government path that led out of Xuanjing.

Although he had urged his Fa Li to the max, the speed of the black cloud was still much too slow for him.

Liu Ming sighed in his heart as he realized that he should really buy a Flying Totem or practice a Flying Technique that was a bit faster.

As he thought this, he grabbed a Glyph from and instantly, it turned into green dots that disappeared into the black cloud underneath him.

“Pu!”

The originally slow black cloud instantly raised its speed and shot forward.

With the use of this, Liu Ming felt a pang of pain and thought to himself that he would definitely ask Qian Chao for the price of this Godly Speed Glyph back.

After about an hour, he finally saw a couple of carriages that were full of items lying strewn on the government path. The goods that were spilling out were merely normal things such as porcelain and cloth. The horses for the carriages were cut in half and laid bleeding on the path too.

Seeing this, Liu Ming's eyes focused as he made a single-handed sign and the black cloud under him immediately shot towards one side of the government path.

Liu Ming had only flown for barely a mile when a noise sounded among a rock pile below him. From within the pile, a red and yellow streak that were both about a foot long flew out and went straight for Liu Ming.

Liu Ming gave a cold snort as he waved his sleeve and a short cyan sword flashed before giving two slashes downwards.

“Pu, pu.” Two cyan Sword Qis came flying out and met the two streaks.

With a sound of an explosion, the two cyan Sword Qis were extinguished.

As for the two streaks, they tumbled backward and showed their true form. They were actually a red fork and yellow short blade.

“Not good, this person is high-level Spirit Apostle and he also has a Totem.”

There was a scream from the rock pile and shadows flashed. One gray and one white cloud flew into the sky and started running into different directions. They didn't even care about their two Practitioner Weapons.

“Hmph, since you've come here, then don't leave.”

Seeing this, a killing intent surfaced on Liu Ming's face. With a flick of the Cyan Moon Sword, he sent out three cyan Sword Qis. At the same time, he made a hand sign with the other hand. When he waved his hand, five cyan Wind Blades flashed as they were shot out.

The two lost the color in their faces as one immediately took out a small shield to throw behind him as the other immediately crushed a Glyph, allowing white light to flood through his fingers.

The small shield grew into a shield that was about three feet tall while the white light formed a light cover that protected the person that used the Glyph.

In the next moment, the cyan Wind Blades all smashed against the shield.

With a crisp sound, the shield was sliced into a dozen pieces. The owner of the shield also gave a shout and was split into pieces by the Wind Blades.

At this time, the three cyan Sword Qis slashed onto the light cover and bursted the cover. A cold light immediately engulfed the person that was casting the Glyph.

# Credits

Translator: [Gravity Tales](#)

Novel Updates: [Link](#)

Epub: [Shyboy](#) / [dotNOVEL](#)